

Rightly Dividing (RD) Bible
Isaiah to Revelation
Book 2 of 2

Book (chapter-section, time) year page

Table of Contents

Major Prophets

Isaiah (66-138, 3.75 hr, Judah) 2019 3
Jeremiah (52-132, 4 hr, Judah) 2020 64
Lamentations (5-12, 20 min) 2020 137
Ezekiel (48-128, 3.75 hr, Exile) 2021 145
Daniel (12-52, 1.25 hr, Exile) 2022 198

Minor Prophets

Hosea (14-27, 30 min, Israel) 2020 221
Joel (3-9, 12 min, Judah) 2017 232
Amos (9-19, 25 min, Israel) 2017 237
Obadiah (1-3, 4 min, Edom) 2020 248
Jonah (4-8, 8 min, Assyria) 2023 253
Micah (7-17, 25 min, Judah) 2023 256
Nahum (3-4, 10 min, Assyria) 2022 263
Habakkuk (3-12, 10 min, Judah) 2023 267
Zephaniah (3-7, 10 min, Judah) 2023 271

Minor Prophets (post exile)

Haggai (2-5, 8 min) 2022 278
Zechariah (14-33, 40 min) 2022 284
Malachi (4-10, 11 min) 2022 299

Gospels

Matthew (28-166, 2.4 hr) 2022 324
Mark (16-103, 1.5 hr) 2020 380
Luke (24-153, 2.6 hr) 2017 410
John (21-112, 2 hr) 2021 461

History of the Early Church

Acts (28-122, 2.25 hr) 2021 510

Paul's Letters

Romans (16-63, 1 hr) 2018 568
1 Corinthians (16-50, 1 hr) 2018 605
2 Corinthians (13-31, 40 min) 2018 628
Galatians (6-16, 20 min) 2020 644
Ephesians (6-14, 20 min) 2020 652
Philippians (4-12, 14 min) 2018 660
Colossians (4-16, 13 min) 2020 669
1 Thessalonians (5-17, 12 min) 2021 674
2 Thessalonians (3-9, 7 min) 2021 680
1 Timothy (6-14, 16 min) 2022 686

2 Timothy (4-14, 11 min) 2022 693
Titus (3-8, 7 min) 2022 698
Philemon (1-4, 3 min) 2022 702
Hebrews (13-37, 45 min) 2021 705

General Letters

James (5-12, 16 min) 2019 728
1 Peter (5-12, 6 min) 2018 735
2 Peter (3-10, 10 min) 2018 741
1 John (5-16, 20 min) 2020 746
2 John (1-4, 2 min) 2020 755
3 John (1-4, 2 min) 2020 757
Jude (1-4, 4 min) 2020 759

Prophecy

Revelation (22-53, 1.25 hr) 2019 764

Rightly Dividing (RD) Bible Use 795

Notes from the editor

This is a hyperlinked Bible in Microsoft Word concerted to PDF. It is the 4th draft by William Heath begun in 1985 with the teaching on The Judgment Seat of Christ. I was saved on July 7, 1976 in Puerto Rico while serving in the U.S. Navy.

My purpose over the years are revealed in the title changes from Quiet Time (QT Bible) to Discipleship Bible (DB) to Rightly Dividing Bible. Of course, as we rightly divide the Holy Scriptures; prayer, discipleship, and obedience to the glory of God follow.

William Heath

Rightly Dividing (RD) Bible

Genesis to Song of Songs

Book 1 of 2

Endnote: I must end with the thought that as we approach the return of our Lord Jesus Christ and I am raptured before the 7 year tribulation period of Daniel 9:24-27, or I am absent from the body and present with the Lord Jesus Christ.

In either case, I pray you may be sure of your personal salvation by repentance and belief that Jesus Christ died for your sins and was raised from the dead.

I hope for one more update and final print for distribution in the days God has appointed.

Isaiah (66-138, 3.75 hr, Judah) 2019

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25
26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 39
40 41 42 43 44 45 46 47 48 49 50 51 52 53 54 55 56 57 58 59 60 61 62 63 64 65 66

12 Realizations that Prepare us to Meet the Messiah

Purpose: Prophecies of reproof (1-39) and hope (40-66) for Judah & Jerusalem

Key Passage: Isaiah 6:1-8

God's Names: The Holy One of Israel, 25x (6x in rest of the Old Testament)
The Holy One, 6x (Referring to Jesus Christ in the New Testament)

How God Prepares Me to Meet the Messiah:

Scripture

- 1) Come now, and let us reason together, says the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool. 1:18
- 2) Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. 7:14
- 3) For to us a child is born, to us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. 9:6
- 4) Thou wilt keep [him] in perfect peace, [whose] mind is stayed [on thee]: because he trusts in thee. 26:3
- 5) Precept [must be] upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, [and] there a little: 28:10
- 6) And a highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The Way of Holiness 35:8
- 7) But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew [their] strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; [and] they shall walk, and not faint. 40:31
- 8) Fear not; for I am with you: be not dismayed; for I am your God: I will strengthen you; yes, I will help you; yes, I will uphold you with the right hand of my righteousness. 41:10
- 9) All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned everyone to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. 53:6
- 10) So shall my word be that goes forth out of my mouth: it shall not return to me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper [in the thing] whereto I sent it. 55:11
- 11) Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid [his] face from you, that he will not hear. 59:1-2
- 12) But we are all as an unclean [thing], and all our righteousness is as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. 64:6

Notes:

The Calling of Isaiah. Introduction of 6:1a, "In the year that King Uzziah died" After 52 years of reigning, leprosy caused the death of Uzziah in 739 B.C. (2 Chronicles 26:16-23). Isaiah 6 after 1 to 5 authenticate what he has already written by describing how he was called.

Location of Isaiah's calling. Isaiah was inspired by the Holy Spirit to write (2 Peter 1:20-21) in this peculiar method. Not in chronological order, but presenting that Isaiah was called to deliver both messages which align with the book of Isaiah's great division of chapter 1-39 about holiness, sin, and judgment, chapter 40-66 about glory, comfort, and hope.

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES Comments *
Isaiah 1:15	Supplication		Hands full of blood		Judah & Jerusalem Prayers not heard
Isaiah 12:1-6	Thanksgiving & Praise	Messiah's prophecy		Future hope	Isaiah 11
Isaiah 26:9	Supplication	Proverbs 6		Our Soul Our Spirit	Desires God at night Seek God early
Isaiah 37:15-20	Supplication	Protection from Assyrians		After reading a letter	Hezekiah
Isaiah 38:1-22	Supplication	Add 15 yrs. life	Sickness onto death		Hezekiah healed on the 3 rd day
Isaiah 44:17	Supplication	Fall down & pray to idols	God shut their eyes & hearts		Prayer not heard Jacob's Trouble
Isaiah 56:4-7	Supplication	Worship God		Eunuch Stranger	House of Prayer
Isaiah 58:1-14	Supplication	Repair Breach	Wrong Fast	Right Fast	Fasting
Isaiah 59:1-2	Supplication	Fall down & pray to idols	God shut their eyes & hearts		Prayer not heard Jacob's Trouble
Isaiah 62:6-7	Supplication	Give Him no Rest		Daily- Continual	Watchman

Biblical Mathematics Chart

The divine balance of God's holiness and love deserves the believers understanding. We must practice the divine balance for spiritual health and growth, preparing for Christ's Judgment Seat. Jesus knew the glory set before Him. This strengthened him to endure the shame and suffering of the Cross (Hebrews 12:1-3). Paul knew of the same glory and desired to be absent from the body and present with the Lord. However he realized that it was needful that he stay for others.

	Bible		Isaiah	
1	66 books – 2 divisions		66 chapters – 2 divisions	
2	Old Testament–39 books	New Testament–27 books	God – 39 chapters	Jesus Christ – 27 chapters
3	Christ Concealed	Christ Revealed	Few Prophecies of Christ	Many Prophecies of Christ
4	Sacrifices– Ceremonies	Suffering Servant- Lamb	Sacrifices – Ceremonies	Suffering Servant – Lamb
5	Earthly Kings	Glorious King – Throne	Earthly Kings	Glorious King – Throne
6	Law – Sin – Judgment	Grace–Comfort–Hope	Law - Sin – Judgment	Grace - Comfort – Hope
7	God is Holy	God is Love	God is Holy (darkness)	God is Love (light)
8	Israel present	Israel absent	Historical details present	Historical details absent
9			Isaiah's life prominent	Isaiah's life absent
			Focus on Assyria	Focus on Babylon

Outline I of Isaiah "Yahweh is Salvation"

Background. Isaiah's writing style is the highest level of Hebrew in vocabulary and literary devices in the Old Testament. He is the connector between Moses (1500 BC) and Jesus Christ for the nation Israel, who wrote more than any other prophet about the 1st and 2nd coming of the Messiah. His contacts include access to the king and high priest. He had 2 sons and was sawn in half by King Manasseh. The Dead Sea Scrolls (1947) contain the complete scroll of Isaiah and validates the total accuracy of the Hebrew Masoretic Text that the KJV Bible uses.

Southern Kingdom (Judah - Jerusalem)

Northern Kingdom (Israel - Samaria)

792-740 King Uzziah (chapters 1-6)

760-750

Prophet Amos

753-715

Prophet Hosea

742-687 Prophet Micah to Judah & Israel

740-689 **Prophet Isaiah**

740-735 King Jotham (chapters 1-6)

735-715 King Ahaz (chapters 7-14)

722 Northern kingdom of Israel falls to Assyria

715-697 King Hezekiah (chapters 15-39)

697-642 King Manasseh (chapters 40-66)

Isaiah's 2 sons: Shear-jashub "a remnant will return" 7:3, Maher-shalal-hash-baz "hastening to the spoil" 8:3

New Testament Connection: John 12:38 (Isaiah 53:1), 39, 40 (Isaiah 6:10)

Quoted directly 65x, by name 20x. In Isaiah: 1st coming 50 verses, 2nd coming 300 verses.

Part 1) Holiness (disobedience & destruction or obedience & blessing)

Isaiah
1-39

1-5 Introduction (Background of the times of Isaiah's calling)

6 Isaiah's Call

7-12 Choice between trusting God or Assyria

13-23 Prophecies against foreign nations

24-27 Victory over the nations for those who trust in God

28-35 Warning against trusting Egypt

36-39 Historical interlude with Sennacherib and Hezekiah (2 Kings 18-20, 2 Chr 29-32)

Part 2) Love (comfort, hope & abundant grace)

40-66

40-48 Redemption Promised: In the past - Romans 9 (Greatness of God the Father)

49-57 Redemption Provided: Then rejected - Romans 10 (Grace of God the Son)

58-66 Redemption Realized: In the future - Romans 11 (Glory of God the Spirit)

The Wickedness of Judah (chapters 1-5)

1:1-9 Accuse

(1) ¹ The vision of Isaiah the son of Amoz, which he saw concerning Judah and Jerusalem in the days of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, [and] Hezekiah, kings of Judah. ² Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the LORD has spoken, **I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against me.** ³ **The ox knows his owner, and the donkey his master's crib: [but] Israel does not know, my people does not consider.** ⁴ Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the LORD, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel to anger, they are gone away backward. ⁵ Why should ye be stricken anymore? ye will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint. ⁶ From the sole of the foot even to the head there is no soundness in it; [but] wounds, and bruises, and putrifying sores: they have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment. ⁷ Your country is desolate, your cities are burned with fire: your land, strangers devour it in your presence, and [it is] desolate, as overthrown by strangers. ⁸ And the daughter of Zion is left as a cottage in a vineyard, as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers, as a besieged city. ⁹ Except the LORD of hosts had left to us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, [and] we should have been like to Gomorrah.

1:10-15 Warn

(2) ¹⁰ Hear the word of the LORD, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear to the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah. ¹¹ **To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices to me? says the LORD: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats.** ¹² When ye come to appear before me, who has required this at your hand, to tread my courts? ¹³ Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination to me; the new moons and sabbaths, the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with; [it is] iniquity, even the solemn meeting. ¹⁴ **Your new moons and your appointed feasts my soul hates: they are a trouble to me; I am weary to bear them.** ¹⁵ And when ye spread forth your hands, **I will hide my eyes from you:** yes, when ye make many prayers, **I will not hear:** your hands are full of blood.

1:16-20 Exhort

(3) ¹⁶ Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before my eyes; cease to do evil; ¹⁷ Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. ¹⁸ **Come now, and let us reason together, says the LORD: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool.** ¹⁹ If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land: ²⁰ But if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken [it]. ²¹ How is the faithful city become a harlot! it was full of judgment; righteousness lodged in it; but now murderers. ²² Your silver is become dross, your wine mixed with water: ²³ Your princes are rebellious, and companions of thieves: **everyone loves gifts, and follows after rewards:** they judge not the fatherless, neither does the cause of the widow come to them. ²⁴ Therefore says the Lord, the LORD of hosts, the mighty One of Israel, Ah, I will ease me of my adversaries, and avenge me of my enemies: ²⁵ And I will turn my hand upon you, and purely purge away your dross, and take away all your tin:

1:21-31 Bless

²⁶ And I will restore your judges as at the first, and your counselors as at the beginning: afterward you shall be called, The city of righteousness, the faithful city. ²⁷ Zion shall be redeemed with judgment, and her converts with righteousness. ²⁸ And the destruction of the transgressors and of the sinners [shall be] together, and they that forsake the LORD shall be consumed. ²⁹ For they shall be ashamed of the oaks which ye have desired, and ye shall be confounded for the gardens that ye have chosen. ³⁰ For ye shall be as an oak whose leaf fades, and as a garden that has no water. ³¹ And the strong shall be as tow, and the maker of it as a spark, and they shall both burn together, and none shall quench them.

Isaiah Chapter 2

The Future House of God (2:1-4, 2nd coming)

(4) ¹ The word that Isaiah the son of Amoz saw concerning Judah and Jerusalem. ² And it shall come to pass in the last days, [that] the mountain of the LORD'S house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow to it. ³ And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. ⁴ And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and **they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore.** ⁵ O house of Jacob, come ye, and let us walk in the light of the LORD.

The People's Sins

(5) ⁶ Therefore you have forsaken your people the house of Jacob, because they be replenished from the east, and are soothsayers like the Philistines, and they please themselves in the children of strangers. ⁷ Their land also is full of silver and gold, neither [is there any] end of their treasures; their land is also full of horses, neither [is there any] end of their chariots: ⁸ Their land also is full of idols; they worship the work of their own hands, that which their own fingers have made: ⁹ And the mean man bows down, and the great man humbles himself: therefore forgive them not.

Fear the Power of God's Majesty

¹⁰ Enter into the rock, and hide you in the dust, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of his majesty. ¹¹ The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day. ¹² For the day of the LORD of hosts [shall be] upon every [one that is] proud and lofty, and upon every [one that is] lifted up; and he shall be brought low: ¹³ And upon all the cedars of Lebanon, [that are] high and lifted up, and upon all the oaks of Bashan, ¹⁴ And upon all the high mountains, and upon all the hills [that are] lifted up, ¹⁵ And upon every high tower, and upon every fenced wall, ¹⁶ And upon all the ships of Tarshish, and upon all pleasant pictures. ¹⁷ And the loftiness of man shall be bowed down, and the haughtiness of men shall be made low: and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day. ¹⁸ And the idols he shall utterly abolish. ¹⁹ And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of his majesty, when he arises to shake terribly the earth. ²⁰ In that day a man shall cast his idols of silver, and his idols of gold, which they made [each one] for himself to worship, to the moles and to the bats; ²¹ To go into the clefts of the rocks, and into the tops of the ragged rocks, for fear of the LORD, and for the glory of his majesty, when he arises to shake terribly the earth. ²² Cease ye from man, whose breath is in his nostrils: for wherein is he to be accounted of?

Judah's Wicked Rulers

(6) ¹ For, behold, the Lord, the LORD of hosts, does take away from Jerusalem and from Judah the stay and the staff, the whole stay of bread, and the whole stay of water, ² The mighty man, and the man of war, the judge, and the prophet, and the prudent, and the ancient, ³ The captain of fifty, and the honorable man, and the counselor, and the cunning artificer, and the eloquent orator. ⁴ **And I will give children [to be] their princes, and babes shall rule over them.** ⁵ **And the people shall be oppressed, everyone by another, and everyone by his neighbor: the child shall behave himself proudly against the ancient, and the base against the honorable.** ⁶ When a man shall take hold of his brother of the house of his father, [saying], You have clothing, be you our ruler, and [let] this ruin [be] under your hand: ⁷ In that day shall he swear, saying, I will not be a healer; for in my house is neither bread nor clothing: make me not a ruler of the people. ⁸ For Jerusalem is ruined, and Judah is fallen: because their tongue and their doings are against the LORD, to provoke the eyes of his glory.

The Impudence of the People

⁹ The show of their countenance does witness against them; and they declare their sin as Sodom, they hide [it] not. Woe to their soul! for they have rewarded evil to themselves. ¹⁰ **Say ye to the righteous, that [it shall be] well [with him]: for they shall eat the fruit of their doings.** ¹¹ **Woe to the wicked! [it shall be] ill [with him]: for the reward of his hands shall be given him.** ¹² **[As for] my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead you cause [you] to err, and destroy the way of your paths.** ¹³ The LORD stands up to plead, and stands to judge the people. ¹⁴ The LORD will enter into judgment with the ancients of his people, and the princes thereof: **for ye have eaten up the vineyard; the spoil of the poor is in your houses.** ¹⁵ **What mean ye [that] ye beat my people to pieces, and grind the faces of the poor? says the Lord GOD of hosts.**

Judgments for the Women's Pride

(7) ¹⁶ **Moreover the LORD says, Because the daughters of Zion are haughty, and walk with stretched forth necks and ^a deceiving eyes, walking and mincing [as] they go, and making a tinkling with their feet:** ¹⁷ **Therefore the Lord will smite with a scab the crown of the head of the daughters of Zion, and the LORD will discover their secret parts.** ¹⁸ **In that day the Lord will take away the bravery of [their] tinkling ornaments [about their feet], and [their] cauls, and [their] round tires like the moon,** ¹⁹ **The chains, and the bracelets, and the mufflers,** ²⁰ **The bonnets, and the ornaments of the legs, and the headbands, and the tablets, and the earrings,** ²¹ **The rings, and nose jewels,** ²² **The changeable suits of apparel, and the mantles, and the wimples, and the crisping pins,** ²³ **The glasses, and the fine linen, and the hoods, and the vails.** ²⁴ **And it shall come to pass, [that] instead of sweet smell there shall be stink; and instead of a girdle a tore; and instead of well set hair baldness; and instead of a stomacher a girding of sackcloth; [and] burning instead of beauty.** ²⁵ **Your men shall fall by the sword, and your mighty in the war.** ²⁶ **And her gates shall lament and mourn; and she [being] desolate shall sit upon the ground.**

^a Wanton ^{KJV}

The Beautiful Branch of the Lord (4:2-16, 2nd coming)

(8) ¹ And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying, We will eat our own bread, and wear our own apparel: only let us be called by your name, to take away our reproach. ² In that day shall the branch of the LORD be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth [shall be] excellent and comely for them that are escaped of Israel. ³ And it shall come to pass, [that he that is] left in Zion, and [he that] remains in Jerusalem, shall be called holy, [even] everyone that is written among the living in Jerusalem: ⁴ When the Lord shall have washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have purged the blood of Jerusalem from the midst thereof by the spirit of judgment, and by the spirit of burning. ⁵ And the LORD will create upon every dwelling place of mount Zion, and upon her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night: for upon all the glory [shall be] a defense. ⁶ And there shall be a tabernacle for a shadow in the daytime from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from storm and from rain.

The Vineyard Changes from Natural into Wild Grapes

(9)¹ Now will I sing to my Well-beloved a song of my beloved concerning his vineyard. My Well-beloved has a vineyard in a very fruitful hill: ² And he fenced it, and gathered out the stones thereof, and planted it with the choicest vine, and built a tower in the midst of it, and also made a winepress therein: and he looked that it should bring forth grapes, and it brought forth wild grapes. ³ And now, O inhabitants of Jerusalem, and men of Judah, judge, I pray you, between me and my vineyard. ⁴ What could have been done more to my vineyard, that I have not done in it? Wherefore, when I looked that it should bring forth grapes, brought it forth wild grapes? ⁵ And now go to; I will tell you what I will do to my vineyard: I will take away the hedge thereof, and it shall be eaten up; [and] break down the wall thereof, and it shall be trodden down: ⁶ And I will lay it waste: it shall not be pruned, nor digged; but there shall come up briers and thorns: I will also command the clouds that they rain no rain upon it. ⁷ For the vineyard of the LORD of hosts is the house of Israel, and the men of Judah his pleasant plant: and he looked for judgment, but behold oppression; for righteousness, but behold a cry.

Six Sins Condemned on Judah & Jerusalem

(10)⁸ **Woe** to them that join house to house, [that] lay field to field, till [there be] no place, that they may be placed alone in the midst of the earth! ⁹ In my ears [said] the LORD of hosts, **of a truth many houses shall be desolate, [even] great and fair, without inhabitant.** ¹⁰ **Yes, ten acres of vineyard shall yield one bath, and the seed of a homer shall yield an ephah.** ¹¹ **Woe** to them that rise up early in the morning, [that] they may follow strong drink; that continue until night, [till] wine inflame them! ¹² And the harp, and the viol, the tamborine, and pipe, and wine, are in their feasts: but they regard not the work of the LORD, neither consider the operation of his hands. ¹³ Therefore my people are gone into captivity, because [they have] no knowledge: and their honorable men are famished, and their multitude dried up with thirst. ¹⁴ Therefore Shoel, and opened her mouth without measure: and their glory, and their multitude, and their pomp, and he that rejoices, shall descend into it. ¹⁵ And the mean man shall be brought down, and the mighty man shall be humbled, and the eyes of the lofty shall be humbled: ¹⁶ But the LORD of hosts shall be exalted in judgment, and God that is holy shall be sanctified in righteousness. ¹⁷ Then shall the lambs feed after their manner, and the waste places of the fat ones shall strangers eat. ¹⁸ **Woe** to them that draw iniquity with cords of vanity, and sin as it were with a cart rope: ¹⁹ That say, Let him make speed, [and] hasten his work, that we may see [it]: and let the counsel of the Holy One of Israel draw near and come, that we may know [it]! ²⁰ **Woe** to them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! ²¹ **Woe** to [them that are] wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight! ²² **Woe** to [them that are] mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink: ²³ Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!

Israel's Enemies are Coming for Judgment (Immediately Assyria, later Babylon)

(11)²⁴ Therefore as the fire devours the stubble, and the flame consumes the chaff, [so] their root shall be as rottenness, and their blossom shall go up as dust: **because they have cast away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel.** ²⁵ Therefore is the anger of the LORD kindled against his people, and he has stretched forth his hand against them, and has smitten them: and the hills did tremble, and their carcasses [were] torn in the midst of the streets. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. ²⁶ And he will lift up an ensign to the nations from far, and will hiss to them from the end of the earth: and, behold, they shall come with speed swiftly: ²⁷ None shall be weary nor stumble among them; none shall slumber nor sleep; neither shall the girdle of their loins be loosed, nor the latchet of their shoes be broken: ²⁸ Whose arrows are sharp, and all their bows bent, their horses' hoofs shall be counted like flint, and their wheels like a whirlwind: ²⁹ Their roaring [shall be] like a lion, they shall roar like young lions: yes, they shall roar, and lay hold of the prey, and shall carry [it] away safe, and none shall deliver [it]. ³⁰ And in that day they shall roar against them like the roaring of the sea: and if [one] look to the land, behold darkness [and] sorrow, and the light is darkened in the heavens thereof.

Isaiah's Vision of God's Holiness and His Personal Sin

(12) ¹ In the year that king Uzziah died I saw also the Lord sitting upon a throne, high and lifted up, and his train filled the temple. ² Above it stood the seraphims: each one had six wings; with twain he covered his face, and with twain he covered his feet, and with twain he did fly. ³ And one cried to another, and said, **Holy, holy, holy**, is the LORD of hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory. ⁴ And the posts of the door moved at the voice of him that cried, and the house was filled with smoke. ⁵ Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I [am] a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for my eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts. ⁶ Then flew one of the seraphims to me, having a live coal in his hand, [which] he had taken with the tongs from off the altar: ⁷ And he laid [it] upon my mouth, and said, Look, this has touched your lips; and your iniquity is taken away, and your sin purged.

SETTING (See note on Fire)		CALL	
6:1-4	6:5-7	6:8-10	6:11-13
Glorification	Confession	Lord's Question	Isaiah's Question
SIX WINGS	LIVE COAL	HERE AM I	HOW LONG?
Setting: Lord - Seraphim	Reaction: Woe is me, Your iniquity is taken away	Call: Lord-Who will go for us? Response: I-Here am I, send me Commission: He-Go and tell	Explanation: I-Lord, how long? He-Until
Only time Seraphim in Bible. Like angel cherubim: Ezekiel, Genesis 3:25, Hebrews 9:5.			

Isaiah's Message will be Rejected

(13) ⁸ Also I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, **Whom shall I send, and who will go for us?** Then said I, Here [am] I; send me. ⁹ And he said, **Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not.** ¹⁰ **Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.** ¹¹ Then said I, Lord, how long? **And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate,** ¹² **And the LORD have removed men far away, and [there be] a great forsaking in the midst of the land.** ¹³ **But yet in it [shall be] a tenth, and [it] shall return, and shall be eaten: as a teil tree, and as an oak, whose substance is in them, when they cast [their leaves: so] the holy seed [shall be] the substance thereof.**

Chapters 7-12: Choice between trusting God or Assyria

(14) ¹ And it came to pass in the days of Ahaz the son of Jotham, the son of Uzziah, king of Judah, [that] Rezin the king of Syria, and Pekah the son of Remaliah, king of Israel, went up toward Jerusalem to war against it, but could not prevail against it. ² And it was told the house of David, saying, Syria is confederate with Ephraim. And his heart was moved, and the heart of his people, as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind. ³ Then said the LORD to Isaiah, **Go forth now to meet Ahaz, you, and Shearjashub your son, at the end of the conduit of the upper pool in the highway of the fuller's field;** ⁴ **And say to him, Take heed, and be quiet; fear not, neither be fainthearted for the two tails of these smoking firebrands, for the fierce anger of Rezin with Syria, and of the son of Remaliah.** ⁵ **Because Syria, Ephraim, and the son of Remaliah, have taken evil counsel against you, saying,** ⁶ **Let us go up against Judah, and vex it, and let us make a breach therein for us, and set a king in the midst of it, [even] the son of Tabeal:** ⁷ **Thus says the Lord GOD, It shall not stand, neither shall it come to pass.** ⁸ **For the head of Syria is Damascus, and the head of Damascus is Rezin; and within threescore and five years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be not a people.** ⁹ **And the head of Ephraim is Samaria, and the head of Samaria is Remaliah's son. If ye will not believe, surely ye shall not be established.**

The Virgin Births Immanuel (God with us, 7:14, 1st coming)

(15) ¹⁰ Moreover the LORD spoke again to Ahaz, saying, ¹¹ **Ask you a sign of the LORD your God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above.** ¹² But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt the LORD. ¹³ And he said, Hear ye now, O house of David; [Is it] a small thing for you to weary men, but will ye weary my God also? ¹⁴ **Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a ^a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son; call his name Immanuel.** ¹⁵ Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know to refuse the evil, and choose the good. ¹⁶ For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land that you abhor shall be forsaken of both her kings.

^aAhaz had a virgin wife who would have a son named Immanuel, in the immediate context. Later this would be fulfilled when the Messiah Jesus was born. In Hebrew it is literally a woman, in the context of Ahaz's wife. Fulfilled in Mt 1:23.

Isaiah Chapter 7

(16) ¹⁷ The LORD shall bring upon you, and upon your people, and upon your father's house, days that have not come, from the day that Ephraim departed from Judah; [even] the king of Assyria. ¹⁸ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the LORD shall hiss for the fly that is in the uttermost part of the rivers of Egypt, and for the bee that is in the land of Assyria. ¹⁹ And they shall come, and shall rest all of them in the desolate valleys, and in the holes of the rocks, and upon all thorns, and upon all bushes. ²⁰ In the same day shall the Lord shave with a razor that is hired, [namely], by them beyond the river, by the king of Assyria, the head, and the hair of the feet: and it shall also consume the beard. ²¹ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] a man shall nourish a young cow, and two sheep; ²² And it shall come to pass, for the abundance of milk [that] they shall give he shall eat butter: for butter and honey shall everyone eat that is left in the land. ²³ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] every place shall be, where there were a thousand vines at a thousand silverlings, it shall [even] be for briers and thorns. ²⁴ With arrows and with bows shall [men] come thither; because all the land shall become briers and thorns. ²⁵ And [on] all hills that shall be digged with the mattock, there shall not come thither the fear of briers and thorns: but it shall be for the sending forth of oxen, and for the treading of lesser cattle.

Isaiah Chapter 8

Isaiah's Child is a Sign

(17) ¹ Moreover the LORD said to me, **Take you a great roll, and write in it with a man's pen concerning Mahershalalhashbaz.** ² And I took to me faithful witnesses to record, Uriah the priest, and Zechariah the son of Jeberechiah. ³ And I went to the prophetess; and she conceived, and bare a son. Then said the LORD unto me, **Call his name Mahershalalhashbaz.** ⁴ **For before the child shall have knowledge to cry, My father, and my mother, the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before the king of Assyria.**

Assyria Will Not Conquer Judah

(18) ⁵ The LORD spoke also to me again, saying, ⁶ **Forasmuch as this people refuses the waters of Shiloah that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah's son;** ⁷ **Now therefore, behold, the Lord brings up upon them the waters of the river, strong and many, [even] the king of Assyria, and all his glory: and he shall come up over all his channels, and go over all his banks:** ⁸ **And he shall pass through Judah; he shall overflow and go over, he shall reach [even] to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of your land, O Immanuel.** ⁹ Associate yourselves, O ye people, and ye shall be broken in pieces; and give ear, all ye of far countries: gird yourselves, and ye shall be broken in pieces; gird yourselves, and ye shall be broken in pieces. ¹⁰ Take counsel together, and it shall come to nothing; speak the word, and it shall not stand: for God is with us.

Some in Jerusalem Will Stumble

¹¹ For the LORD spoke thus to me with a strong hand, and instructed me that I should not walk in the way of this people, saying, ¹² **Say ye not, A confederacy, to all [them to] whom this people shall say, A confederacy; neither fear ye their fear, nor be afraid.** ¹³ **Sanctify the LORD of hosts himself; and [let] him [be] your fear, and [let] him [be] your dread.** ¹⁴ **And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel, for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.** ¹⁵ **And many among them shall stumble, and fall, and be broken, and be snared, and be taken.** ¹⁶ **Bind up the testimony, seal the law among my disciples.** ¹⁷ And I will wait upon the LORD, that hides his face from the house of Jacob, and I will look for him. ¹⁸ Behold, I and the children whom the LORD has given me are for signs and for wonders in Israel from the LORD of hosts, which dwells in mount Zion. ¹⁹ And when they shall say to you, Seek to them that have familiar spirits, and to wizards that peep, and that mutter: should not a people seek to their God? for the living to the dead? ²⁰ To the law and to the testimony: if they speak not according to this word, [it is] because there is no light in them. ²¹ And they shall pass through it, hardly bestead and hungry: and it shall come to pass, that when they shall be hungry, they shall fret themselves, and curse their king and their God, and look upward. ²² And they shall look to the earth; and behold trouble and darkness, dimness of anguish; and [they shall be] driven to darkness.

The Coming Prince of Peace

(19) ¹ Nevertheless the dimness [shall] not [be] such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict [her by] the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. ² The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them has the light shined. ³ You have multiplied the nation, [and] not increased the joy: they joy before you according to the joy in harvest, [and] as [men] rejoice when they divide the spoil. ⁴ For you have broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian. ⁵ For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but [this] shall be with burning [and] fuel of fire. **⁶ For to us a child is born, to us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. ⁷ Of the increase of [his] government and peace [there shall be] no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even forever.** The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.

Judgments Upon the People for Pride (Is 9:12, 17, 21; 10:4)

(20) ⁸ The Lord sent a word into Jacob, and it has lighted upon Israel. ⁹ And all the people shall know, [even] Ephraim and the inhabitant of Samaria, that say in the pride and stoutness of heart, ¹⁰ The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones: the sycamores are cut down, but we will change [them into] cedars. ¹¹ Therefore the LORD shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; ¹² The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. ¹³ For the people turns not to him that smites them, neither do they seek the LORD of hosts. ¹⁴ Therefore the LORD will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. ¹⁵ The ancient and honorable, he is the head; and the prophet that teaches lies, he is the tail. ¹⁶ For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and [they that are] led of them are destroyed. ¹⁷ Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for everyone is a hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaks folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. ¹⁸ For wickedness burns as the fire: it shall devour the briars and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up [like] the lifting up of smoke. ¹⁹ Through the wrath of the LORD of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. ²⁰ And he shall snatch on the right hand, and be hungry; and he shall eat on the left hand, and they shall not be satisfied: they shall eat every man the flesh of his own arm: ²¹ Manasseh, Ephraim; and Ephraim, Manasseh: [and] they together [shall be] against Judah. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.

Woe upon Tyrants

(21) ¹ Woe to them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness [which] they have prescribed; ² To turn aside the needy from judgment, and to take away the right from the poor of my people, that widows may be their prey, and [that] they may rob the fatherless! ³ And what will ye do in the day of visitation, and in the desolation [which] shall come from far? to whom will ye flee for help? and where will ye leave your glory? ⁴ Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.

Assyria Shall Be Broken

(22) ⁵ O Assyrian, the rod of my anger, and the staff in their hand is my indignation. ⁶ I will send him against a hypocritical nation, and against the people of my wrath will I give him a charge, to take the spoil, and to take the prey, and to tread them down like the mire of the streets. ⁷ Howbeit he means not so, neither does his heart think so; but [it is] in his heart to destroy and cut off nations not a few. ⁸ For he says, [Are] not my princes altogether kings? ⁹ [Is] not Calno as Carchemish? is not Hamath as Arpad? is not Samaria as Damascus? ¹⁰ **As my hand has found the kingdoms of the idols, and whose graven images did excel them of Jerusalem and of Samaria;** ¹¹ Shall I not, as I have done to Samaria and her idols, so do to Jerusalem and her idols? ¹² Wherefore it shall come to pass, [that] when the Lord has performed his whole work upon mount Zion and on Jerusalem, I will punish the fruit of the stout heart of the king of Assyria, and the glory of his high looks. ¹³ For he says, By the strength of my hand I have done [it], and by my wisdom; for I am prudent: and I have removed the bounds of the people, and have robbed their treasures, and I have put down the inhabitants like a valiant [man]: ¹⁴ And my hand has found as a nest the riches of the people: and as one gathers eggs [that are] left, I have gathered all the earth; and there was none that moved the wing, or opened the mouth, or peeped. ¹⁵ Shall the axe boast itself against him that hews therewith? [or] shall the saw magnify itself against him that shakes it? as if the rod should shake [itself] against them that lift it up, [or] as if the staff should lift up [itself, as if it were] no wood. ¹⁶ Therefore shall the Lord, the Lord of hosts, send among his fat ones leanness; and under his glory he shall kindle a burning like the burning of a fire. ¹⁷ And the light of Israel shall be for a fire, and his Holy One for a flame: and it shall burn and devour his thorns and his briars in one day; ¹⁸ And shall consume the glory of his forest, and of his fruitful field, both soul and body: and they shall be as when a standard-bearer faints. ¹⁹ And the rest of the trees of his forest shall be few, that a child may write them.

A Remnant Shall Be Saved

(23) ²⁰ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. ²¹ The remnant shall return, [even] the remnant of Jacob, to the mighty God. ²² For though your people Israel be as the sand of the sea, [yet] a remnant of them shall return: the consumption decreed shall overflow with righteousness. ²³ For the Lord GOD of hosts shall make a consumption, even determined, in the midst of all the land. ²⁴ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD of hosts, **O my people that dwell in Zion, be not afraid of the Assyrian: he shall smite you with a rod, and shall lift up his staff against you, after the manner of Egypt.** ²⁵ For yet a very little while, and the indignation shall cease, and my anger in their destruction. ²⁶ And the LORD of hosts shall stir up a scourge for him according to the slaughter of Midian at the rock of Oreb: and [as] his rod was upon the sea, so shall he lift it up after the manner of Egypt. ²⁷ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] his burden shall be taken away from off your shoulder, and his yoke from off your neck, and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing.

(24) ²⁸ He is come to Aiath, he is passed to Migron; at Michmash he has laid up his carriages: ²⁹ They are gone over the passage: they have taken up their lodging at Geba; Ramah is afraid; Gibeah of Saul is fled. ³⁰ Lift up your voice, O daughter of Gallim: cause it to be heard to Laish, O poor Anathoth. ³¹ Madmenah is removed; the inhabitants of Gebim gather themselves to flee. ³² As yet shall he remain at Nob that day: he shall shake his hand [against] the mount of the daughter of Zion, the hill of Jerusalem. ³³ Behold, the Lord, the LORD of hosts, shall lop the bough with terror: and the high ones of stature [shall be] hewn down, and the haughty shall be humbled. ³⁴ And he shall cut down the thickets of the forest with iron, and Lebanon shall fall by a mighty one.

The Branch Out of the Root of Jesse (Christ's 1st and 2nd Coming)

(25) ¹ And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: ² And the ^a spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD; ³ And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: ⁴ But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. ⁵ And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins.

^a The Spirit of the Lord Jesus is six-fold and are given by the baptism of the Holy Spirit to the children of God in a growing manner when they are born-again.

The Future 1000 Year Reign of Christ on Earth

(26) ⁶ The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. ⁷ And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. ⁸ And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. ⁹ They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. ¹⁰ And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. ¹¹ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea. ¹² And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. ¹³ The envy also of Ephraim shall depart, and the adversaries of Judah shall be cut off: Ephraim shall not envy Judah, and Judah shall not vex Ephraim. ¹⁴ But they shall fly upon the shoulders of the Philistines toward the west; they shall spoil them of the east together: they shall lay their hand upon Edom and Moab; and the children of Ammon shall obey them. ¹⁵ And the LORD shall utterly destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea; and with his mighty wind shall he shake his hand over the river, and shall smite it in the seven streams, and make [men] go over dryshod. ¹⁶ And there shall be a highway for the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria; like as it was to Israel in the day that he came up out of the land of Egypt.

QT Note

Q1: Who is the rod come out of Jesse and a branch grown out of his roots? (vs 1)

A: Jesus Christ with a rod of chastisement for Israel (Matthew 4:17) and branch grown out of the roots of the tree cut down is the church (Romans 11:16-24).

Q2: What is the link between the Spirit, fear of the Lord, and judgment? (vs 2-5)

A: The divine precedence tells us that the character of the Holy Spirit led Jesus to fear the Lord, causing quick understanding to execute judgment with righteousness. As the saints are filled with the Holy Spirit we are led in the same way.

Q3: Why does the wolf lie down with the lamb? (vs 6-8)

A1: This dispensation is similar to the Garden of Eden before Eve and Adam sinned.

A2: The apostle Paul says the whole earth groans waiting for this time of total peace when Christ reigns. (Romans 8:19-22)

A2: There will be no violence among living creatures as before the time of the flood of Noah. (Genesis 9:3)

Q4: 11:8, what is an adder?

A: Part of the snake family. Adder, cockatrice, viper, and asp are different dangerous snakes.

Q

Isaiah Chapter 12

A Hymn of Joyful Thanksgiving and Praise

(27) ¹ And in that day you shall say, O LORD, I will praise you: though you was angry with me, your anger is turned away, and you comforted me. ² Behold, God is my salvation; I will trust, and not be afraid: for the LORD JEHOVAH is my strength and [my] song; he also is become my salvation. ³ Therefore with joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of salvation. ⁴ And in that day shall ye say, Praise the LORD, call upon his name, declare his doings among the people, make mention that his name is exalted. ⁵ Sing to the LORD; for he has done excellent things: this is known in all the earth. ⁶ Cry out and shout, you inhabitant of Zion: for great is the Holy One of Israel in the midst of you.

Isaiah Chapter 13

Prophecies Against Foreign Nations (chapters 13-23)

Babylon Will be Punished (Isaiah 13-14, Jeremiah 50-51, Revelation 17-18)

(28) ¹ **The burden of Babylon**, which Isaiah the son of Amoz did see. ² Lift ye up a banner upon the high mountain, exalt the voice to them, shake the hand, that they may go into the gates of the nobles. ³ I have commanded my sanctified ones, I have also called my mighty ones for my anger, [even] them that rejoice in my highness. ⁴ The noise of a multitude in the mountains, like as of a great people; a tumultuous noise of the kingdoms of nations gathered together: the LORD of hosts musters the host of the battle. ⁵ They come from a far country, from the end of heaven, [even] the LORD, and the weapons of his indignation, to destroy the whole land.

(29) ⁶ Howl ye; for the day of the LORD is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty. ⁷ Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every man's heart shall melt: ⁸ And they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travails: they shall be amazed one at another; their faces [shall be as] flames. ⁹ Behold, the day of the LORD comes, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it. ¹⁰ For the stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light: the sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the moon shall not cause her light to shine. ¹¹ And I will punish the world for [their] evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogancy of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible. ¹² I will make a man more precious than fine gold; even a man than the golden wedge of Ophir. ¹³ Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth shall remove out of her place, in the wrath of the LORD of hosts, and in the day of his fierce anger. ¹⁴ And it shall be as the chased roe, and as a sheep that no man takes up: they shall every man turn to his own people, and flee everyone into his own land. ¹⁵ Every one that is found shall be thrust through; and everyone that is joined [to them] shall fall by the sword. ¹⁶ Their children also shall be dashed to pieces before their eyes; their houses shall be spoiled, and their wives ravished.

The Desolation of Babylon

(30) ¹⁷ Behold, I will stir up the Medes against them, which shall not regard silver; and [as for] gold, they shall not delight in it. ¹⁸ [Their] bows also shall dash the young men to pieces; and they shall have no pity on the fruit of the womb; their eye shall not spare children. ¹⁹ And Babylon, the glory of kingdoms, the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency, shall be as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. ²⁰ It shall never be inhabited, neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation: neither shall the Arabian pitch tent there; neither shall the shepherds make their fold there. ²¹ But wild beasts of the desert shall lie there; and their houses shall be full of doleful creatures; and owls shall dwell there, and satyrs shall dance there. ²² And the wild beasts of the islands shall cry in their desolate houses, and dragons in [their] pleasant palaces: and her time is near to come, and her days shall not be prolonged.

Isaiah Chapter 14

God Will Rescue His People from Babylon

(in the near future, and far future 1000 yr. reign of Christ)

(31)¹ For the LORD will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land: and the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob.
² And the people shall take them, and bring them to their place: and the house of Israel shall possess them in the land of the LORD for servants and handmaids: and they shall take them captives, whose captives they were; and they shall rule over their oppressors. ³ And it shall come to pass in the day that the LORD shall give you rest from your sorrow, and from your fear, and from the hard bondage wherein you were made to serve, ⁴ That you shall take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How has the oppressor ceased! the golden city ceased! ⁵ The LORD has broken the staff of the wicked, [and] the scepter of the rulers. ⁶ He who smote the people in wrath with a continual stroke, he that ruled the nations in anger, is persecuted, [and] none hinders. ⁷ The whole earth is at rest, [and] is quiet: they break forth into singing. ⁸ Yes, the fir trees rejoice at you, [and] the cedars of Lebanon, [saying], Since you are laid down, no feller is come up against us. ⁹ Shoel from beneath is moved for you to meet [you] at your coming: it stirs up the dead for you, [even] all the chief ones of the earth; it has raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. ¹⁰ All they shall speak and say to you, Are you also become weak as we? are you become like to us? ¹¹ Your pomp is brought down to Shoel, [and] the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you, and the worms cover you.

The Fall of Babylonian King Belteshazzar Compared to the Final Fall of the Devil (Lucifer)

(32)¹² How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! [how] are you cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations! ¹³ For you have said in your heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the assembly, in the sides of the north: ¹⁴ I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. ¹⁵ Yet you shall be brought down to Shoel, to the sides of the pit. ¹⁶ They that see you shall narrowly look upon you, [and] consider you, [saying, Is] this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; ¹⁷ [That] made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; [that] opened not the house of his prisoners?

QT Note

Q1: When are the 4 falls of Lucifer (The devil)?

A1: Past – The anointed cherub who is wiser than Daniel is cast down from God's heaven before Genesis 1:1 (Ezekiel 28:3 and 28:14).

A2: Future – The devil is cast down to earth during the Tribulation (Revelation 12:9 and Daniel 9:27).

A3: Future – The devil is cast down to the Bottomless Pit at the end of Tribulation (Revelation 20:1-3a).

A4: Future – The devil is cast into the lake of fire and brimstone forever (Revelation 20:10, Isaiah 14:12-17), before the Great White Throne judgment and the New Earth, New Heaven, and New Jerusalem appear (Revelation 20:11-22:5).

Q2: Where are the sides of the north? (Isaiah 14:13)

A1: The sides of the north are where God lives in the third heaven (2 Corinthians 12:2). Job 26:7 He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing.

Application: I know that political-religious Tower of Babel in Genesis 10 is the beginning of governmental controlled religion. The history of the United States of America is a witness of the blessings of God, where spiritual warfare is getting more obvious to the obedient Bible student. The good news is that political-religious Babylon will be destroyed in the future (Revelation 17-18), and the Lord Jesus Christ will return to reign on the earth.

QT hint: Daily time in prayer and Scripture protect and strengthen us against the devil who controlled us in the past. Ephesians 2:2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:

Isaiah Chapter 14

(33) ¹⁸ All the kings of the nations, [even] all of them, lie in glory, everyone in his own house. ¹⁹ But you are cast out of your grave like an abominable branch, [and as] the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcass trodden under feet. ²⁰ You shall not be joined with them in burial, because you have destroyed your land, [and] slain your people: the seed of evildoers shall never be renowned. ²¹ Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities. ²² For I will rise up against them, says the LORD of hosts, and cut off from Babylon the name, and remnant, and son, and nephew, says the LORD. ²³ I will also make it a possession for the bittern, and pools of water: and I will sweep it with the broom of destruction, says the LORD of hosts.

Assyria Will Be Punished

(34) ²⁴ The LORD of hosts has sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, [so] shall it stand: ²⁵ That I will break the Assyrian in my land, and upon my mountains tread him under foot: then shall his yoke depart from off them, and his burden depart from off their shoulders. ²⁶ This is the purpose that is purposed upon the whole earth: and this is the hand that is stretched out upon all the nations. ²⁷ For the LORD of hosts has purposed, and who shall disannul [it]? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?

The Philistines Will be Punished

²⁸ In the year that king Ahaz died was this burden. ²⁹ Rejoice not, whole Palestina, because the rod of him that smote you is broken: for out of the serpent's root shall come forth a cockatrice, and his fruit [shall be] a fiery flying serpent. ³⁰ And the firstborn of the poor shall feed, and the needy shall lie down in safety: and I will kill your root with famine, and he shall slay your remnant. ³¹ Howl, O gate; cry, O city; you, whole Palestina, are dissolved: for there shall come from the north a smoke, and none [shall be] alone in his appointed times. ³² What shall [one] then answer the messengers of the nation? That the LORD has founded Zion, and the poor of his people shall trust in it.

Isaiah Chapter 15

Moab Will Be Punished

(35) ¹ **The burden of Moab.** Because in the night Ar of Moab is laid waste, [and] brought to silence; because in the night Kir of Moab is laid waste, [and] brought to silence; ² He is gone up to Bajith, and to Dibon, the high places, to weep: Moab shall howl over Nebo, and over Medeba: on all their heads [shall be] baldness, [and] every beard cut off. ³ In their streets they shall gird themselves with sackcloth: on the tops of their houses, and in their streets, everyone shall howl, weeping abundantly. ⁴ And Heshbon shall cry, and Elealeh: their voice shall be heard [even] to Jahaz: therefore the armed soldiers of Moab shall cry out; his life shall be grievous to him. ⁵ My heart shall cry out for Moab; his fugitives [shall flee] to Zoar, a heifer of three years old: for by the mounting up of Luhith with weeping they will go up it; for in the way of Horonaim they shall raise up a cry of destruction. ⁶ For the waters of Nimrim shall be desolate: for the hay is withered away, the grass fails, there is no green thing. ⁷ Therefore the abundance they have gotten, and that which they have laid up, they will carry away to the brook of the willows. ⁸ For the cry is gone round about the borders of Moab; the howling thereof to Eglaim, and the howling thereof to Beerelim. ⁹ For the waters of Dimon shall be full of blood: for I will bring more upon Dimon, lions upon him that escapes of Moab, and upon the remnant of the land.

Judgment Upon Moab

(36) ¹ Send ye the lamb to the ruler of the land from Sela to the wilderness, to the mount of the daughter of Zion. ² For it shall be, [that], as a wandering bird cast out of the nest, [so] the daughters of Moab shall be at the fords of Arnon. ³ Take counsel, execute judgment; make your shadow as the night in the midst of the noonday; hide the outcasts; betray not him that wanders. ⁴ Let my outcasts dwell with you, Moab; be you a covert to them from the face of the spoiler: for the extortioner is at an end, the spoiler ceases, the oppressors are consumed out of the land. ⁵ And in mercy shall the throne be established: and he shall sit upon it in truth in the tabernacle of David, judging, and seeking judgment, and hasting righteousness. ⁶ We have heard of the pride of Moab; [he is] very proud: [even] of his haughtiness, and his pride, and his wrath: [but] his lies [shall] not [be] so. ⁷ Therefore shall Moab howl for Moab, everyone shall howl: for the foundations of Kirhaseseth shall ye mourn; surely [they are] stricken. ⁸ For the fields of Heshbon languish, [and] the vine of Sibmah: the lords of the heathen have broken down the principal plants thereof, they are come [even] to Jazer, they wandered [through] the wilderness: her branches are stretched out, they are gone over the sea. ⁹ Therefore I will bewail with the weeping of Jazer the vine of Sibmah: I will water you with my tears, O Heshbon, and Elealeh: for the shouting for your summer fruits and for your harvest is fallen. ¹⁰ And gladness is taken away, and joy out of the plentiful field; and in the vineyards there shall be no singing, neither shall there be shouting: the treaders shall tread out no wine in [their] presses; I have made [their vintage] shouting to cease. ¹¹ Wherefore my bowels shall sound like a harp for Moab, and my inward parts for Kirharesh. ¹² And it shall come to pass, when it is seen that Moab is weary on the high place, that he shall come to his sanctuary to pray; but he shall not prevail. ¹³ This is the word that the LORD has spoken concerning Moab since that time. ¹⁴ But now the LORD has spoken, saying, Within three years, as the years of a hireling, and the glory of Moab shall be contemned, with all that great multitude; and the remnant [shall be] very small [and] feeble.

Notes:

2 Peter 2:6-9 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed *his* righteous soul from day to day with *their* unlawful deeds;) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished. Lot not mentioned in Hebrews 11.

Genesis 19:30-38 Come, let us make our father (Lot) drink wine, and we will lie with him,

Chemosh was the national deity of the Moabites, most likely meant "destroyer," "subdue," or "fish god," Judges 11:24. See the Moabite Stone (Mesha Stele). Chemosh mentioned 12 times. Mesha is the son of Chemosh. Human sacrifice, 2 Kings 3:27, were part of the rites of Chemosh, as well as other Canaanite religious cults: Baal, Moloch, Thammuz, Baalzebub were all personifications of the sun or the sun's rays.

Balak – king of Moab (Numbers 22-24)

Duet 2:9 don't take Moab

Eglon – Moabite king (Judges 3:12-17)

Ruth – Moabite

David – ¼ Moabite, parents safe with Moabites

Isaiah Chapter 17

Syria and Israel Will Be Punished

(37) ¹ **The burden of Damascus.** Behold, Damascus is taken away from [being] a city, and it shall be a ruinous heap. ² The cities of Aroer are forsaken: they shall be for flocks, which shall lie down, and none shall make them afraid. ³ The fortress also shall cease from Ephraim, and the kingdom from Damascus, and the remnant of Syria: they shall be as the glory of the children of Israel, says the LORD of hosts. ⁴ And in that day it shall come to pass, [that] the glory of Jacob shall be made thin, and the fatness of his flesh shall grow lean. ⁵ And it shall be as when the harvestman gathers the corn, and reaps the ears with his arm; and it shall be as he that gathers ears in the valley of Rephaim. ⁶ Yet gleanings shall be left in it, as the shaking of an olive tree, two [or] three berries in the top of the uppermost bough, four [or] five in the outmost fruitful branches thereof, says the LORD God of Israel. ⁷ At that day shall a man look to his Maker, and his eyes shall have respect to the Holy One of Israel. ⁸ And he shall not look to the altars, the work of his hands, neither shall respect [that] which his fingers have made, either the groves, or the images. ⁹ In that day shall his strong cities be as a forsaken bough, and an uppermost branch, which they left because of the children of Israel: and there shall be desolation. ¹⁰ Because you have forgotten the God of your salvation, and has not been mindful of the rock of your strength, therefore shall you plant pleasant plants, and shall set it with strange slips: ¹¹ In the day shall you make your plant to grow, and in the morning shall you make your seed to flourish: [but] the harvest [shall be] a heap in the day of grief and of desperate sorrow. ¹² Woe to the multitude of many people, [which] make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, [that] make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! ¹³ The nations shall rush like the rushing of many waters: but [God] shall rebuke them, and they shall flee far off, and shall be chased as the chaff of the mountains before the wind, and like a rolling thing before the whirlwind. ¹⁴ And behold at evening-tide trouble; [and] before the morning he is not. This is the portion of them that spoil us, and the lot of them that rob us.

Isaiah Chapter 18

Ethiopia Will Be Punished

(38) ¹ Woe to the land shadowing with wings, which is beyond the rivers of Ethiopia: ² That sends ambassadors by the sea, even in vessels of bulrushes upon the waters, [saying], Go, ye swift messengers, to a nation scattered and peeled, to a people terrible from their beginning thus far; a nation meted out and trodden down, whose land the rivers have spoiled! ³ All ye inhabitants of the world, and dwellers on the earth, see ye, when he lifts up an ensign on the mountains; and when he blows a trumpet, hear ye. ⁴ For so the LORD said to me, **I will take my rest, and I will consider in my dwelling place like a clear heat upon herbs, [and] like a cloud of dew in the heat of harvest.** ⁵ For afore the harvest, when the bud is perfect, and the sour grape is ripening in the flower, he shall both cut off the sprigs with pruning hooks, and take away [and] cut down the branches. ⁶ They shall be left together to the fowls of the mountains, and to the beasts of the earth: and the fowls shall summer upon them, and all the beasts of the earth shall winter upon them. ⁷ In that time shall the present be brought to the LORD of hosts of a people scattered and peeled, and from a people terrible from their beginning thus far; a nation meted out and trodden under foot, whose land the rivers have spoiled, to the place of the name of the LORD of hosts, the mount Zion.

Egypt Will Be Punished

(39) ¹ **The burden of Egypt.** Behold, the LORD rides upon a swift cloud, and shall come into Egypt: and the idols of Egypt shall be moved at his presence, and the heart of Egypt shall melt in the midst of it. ² **And I will set the Egyptians against the Egyptians: and they shall fight everyone against his brother, and everyone against his neighbor; city against city, [and] kingdom against kingdom.** ³ **And the spirit of Egypt shall fail in the midst thereof; and I will destroy the counsel thereof: and they shall seek to the idols, and to the charmers, and to them that have familiar spirits, and to the wizards.** ⁴ **And the Egyptians will I give over into the hand of a cruel lord; and a fierce king shall rule over them, says the Lord, the LORD of hosts.** ⁵ **And the waters shall fail from the sea, and the river shall be was and dried up.** ⁶ **And they shall turn the rivers far away; [and] the brooks of defense shall be emptied and dried up: the reeds and flags shall wither.** ⁷ **The paper reeds by the brooks, by the mouth of the brooks, and everything sown by the brooks, shall wither, be driven away, and be no [more].** ⁸ **The fishers also shall mourn, and all they that cast angle into the brooks shall lament, and they that spread nets upon the waters shall languish.** ⁹ **Moreover they that work in fine flax, and they that weave networks, shall be confounded.** ¹⁰ **And they shall be broken in the purposes thereof, all that make sluices [and] ponds for fish.** ¹¹ **Surely the princes of Zoan are fools, the counsel of the wise counselors of Pharaoh is become brutish: how say ye to Pharaoh, I [am] the son of the wise, the son of ancient kings?** ¹² **Where are they? where are your wise [men]? and let them tell you now, and let them know what the LORD of hosts has purposed upon Egypt.** ¹³ **The princes of Zoan are become fools, the princes of Noph are deceived; they have also seduced Egypt, [even they that are] the stay of the tribes thereof.** ¹⁴ **The LORD has mingled a perverse spirit in the midst thereof: and they have caused Egypt to err in every work thereof, as a drunken [man] staggers in his vomit.** ¹⁵ **Neither shall there be [any] work for Egypt, which the head or tail, branch or rush, may do.** ¹⁶ **In that day shall Egypt be like to women: and it shall be afraid and fear because of the shaking of the hand of the LORD of hosts, which he shakes over it.** ¹⁷ **And the land of Judah shall be a terror to Egypt, everyone that makes mention thereof shall be afraid in himself, because of the counsel of the LORD of hosts, which he has determined against it.**

(40) ¹⁸ **In that day shall five cities in the land of Egypt speak the language of Canaan, and swear to the LORD of hosts; one shall be called, The city of destruction.** ¹⁹ **In that day shall there be an altar to the LORD in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar at the border thereof to the LORD.** ²⁰ **And it shall be for a sign and for a witness to the LORD of hosts in the land of Egypt: for they shall cry to the LORD because of the oppressors, and he shall send them a savior, and a great one, and he shall deliver them.** ²¹ **And the LORD shall be known to Egypt, and the Egyptians shall know the LORD in that day, and shall do sacrifice and oblation; yes, they shall vow a vow to the LORD, and perform [it].** ²² **And the LORD shall smite Egypt: he shall smite and heal [it]: and they shall return [even] to the LORD, and he shall be entreated of them, and shall heal them.** ²³ **In that day shall there be a highway out of Egypt to Assyria, and the Assyrian shall come into Egypt, and the Egyptian into Assyria, and the Egyptians shall serve with the Assyrians.** ²⁴ **In that day shall Israel be the third with Egypt and with Assyria, [even] a blessing in the midst of the land:** ²⁵ **Whom the LORD of hosts shall bless, saying, Blessed [be] Egypt my people, and Assyria the work of my hands, and Israel my inheritance.**

The Shame of Those Allied with Egypt

(41) ¹ **In the year that Tartan came to Ashdod, (when Sargon the king of Assyria sent him,) and fought against Ashdod, and took it;** ² **At the same time spoke the LORD by Isaiah the son of Amoz, saying, Go and loose the sackcloth from off your loins, and put off your shoe from your foot. And he did so, walking naked and barefoot.** ³ **And the LORD said, Like as my servant Isaiah has walked naked and barefoot three years [for] a sign and wonder upon Egypt and upon Ethiopia;** ⁴ **So shall the king of Assyria lead away the Egyptians prisoners, and the Ethiopians captives, young and old, naked and barefoot, even with [their] buttocks uncovered, to the shame of Egypt.** ⁵ **And they shall be afraid and ashamed of Ethiopia their expectation, and of Egypt their glory.** ⁶ **And the inhabitant of this isle shall say in that day, Behold, such is our expectation, where we flee for help to be delivered from the king of Assyria: and how shall we escape?**

Isaiah Chapter 21

The Fall of Babylon

(42) ¹ **The burden of the desert of the sea.** As whirlwinds in the south pass through; [so] it comes from the desert, from a terrible land. ² A grievous vision is declared to me; the treacherous dealer deals treacherously, and the spoiler spoils. **Go up, O Elam: besiege, O Media; all the sighing thereof I have made to cease.** ³ Therefore are my loins filled with pain: pangs have taken hold upon me, as the pangs of a woman that travails: I was bowed down at the hearing [of it]; I was dismayed at the seeing [of it]. ⁴ My heart panted, fearfulness affrighted me: the night of my pleasure has he turned into fear to me. ⁵ Prepare the table, watch in the watchtower, eat, drink: arise, ye princes, [and] anoint the shield. ⁶ For thus has the Lord said to me, **Go, set a watchman, let him declare what he sees.** ⁷ And he saw a chariot [with] a couple of horsemen, a chariot of donkeys, [and] a chariot of camels; and he listened diligently with much heed: ⁸ And he cried, A lion: My lord, I stand continually upon the watchtower in the daytime, and I am set in my ward whole nights: ⁹ And, behold, here comes a chariot of men, [with] a couple of horsemen. And he answered and said, Babylon is fallen, is fallen; and all the graven images of her gods he has broken to the ground. ¹⁰ O my threshing, and the corn of my floor: that which I have heard of the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, I have declared to you.

Someone Calling from Seir

(43) ¹¹ **The burden of Dumah.** He calls to me out of Seir, Watchman, what of the night? Watchman, what of the night? ¹² The watchman said, The morning comes, and also the night: if ye will enquire, enquire ye: return, come.

Arabia Will Be Punished

¹³ The burden upon Arabia. In the forest in Arabia shall ye lodge, O ye traveling companies of Dedanim. ¹⁴ The inhabitants of the land of Tema brought water to him that was thirsty, they prevented with their bread him that fled. ¹⁵ For they fled from the swords, from the drawn sword, and from the bent bow, and from the grievousness of war. ¹⁶ For thus has the Lord said to me, **Within a year, according to the years of a hireling, and all the glory of Kedar shall fail: ¹⁷ And the residue of the number of archers, the mighty men of the children of Kedar, shall be diminished:** for the LORD God of Israel has spoken [it].

Isaiah Chapter 22

Judah Will Be Punished

(44) ¹ **The burden of the valley of vision.** What ails you now, that you are wholly gone up to the housetops? ² You that are full of stirs, a tumultuous city, a joyous city: your slain [men are] not slain with the sword, nor dead in battle. ³ All your rulers are fled together, they are bound by the archers: all that are found in you are bound together, [which] have fled from far. ⁴ Therefore said I, Look away from me; I will weep bitterly, labor not to comfort me, because of the spoiling of the daughter of my people. ⁵ For [it is] a day of trouble, and of treading down, and of perplexity by the Lord GOD of hosts in the valley of vision, breaking down the walls, and of crying to the mountains. ⁶ And Elam bore the quiver with chariots of men [and] horsemen, and Kir uncovered the shield. ⁷ And it shall come to pass, [that] your choicest valleys shall be full of chariots, and the horsemen shall set themselves in array at the gate. ⁸ And he discovered the covering of Judah, and you did look in that day to the armor of the house of the forest. ⁹ Ye have seen also the breaches of the city of David, that they are many: and ye gathered together the waters of the lower pool. ¹⁰ And ye have numbered the houses of Jerusalem, and the houses have ye broken down to fortify the wall. ¹¹ Ye made also a ditch between the two walls for the water of the old pool: but ye have not looked to the maker thereof, neither had respect to him that fashioned it long ago. ¹² And in that day did the Lord GOD of hosts call to weeping, and to mourning, and to baldness, and to girding with sackcloth: ¹³ And behold joy and gladness, slaying oxen, and killing sheep, eating flesh, and drinking wine: let us eat and drink; for tomorrow we shall die. ¹⁴ And it was revealed in my ears by the LORD of hosts, **Surely this iniquity shall not be purged from you till ye die, says the Lord GOD of hosts.**

Isaiah Chapter 22

Shebna's Dismissal from His Position

(45) ¹⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD of hosts, **Go, get you to this treasurer, [even] to Shebna, which is over the house, [and say],** ¹⁶ **What have you here? and whom have you here, that you have hewed you out a sepulcher here, [as] he that hews him out a sepulcher on high, [and] that graveth an habitation for himself in a rock?** ¹⁷ Behold, the LORD will carry you away with a mighty captivity, and will surely cover you. ¹⁸ He will surely violently turn and toss you [like] a ball into a large country: there shall you die, and there the chariots of your glory [shall be] the shame of your lord's house. ¹⁹ And I will drive you from your station, and from your state shall he pull you down.

Eliakim, the Man of Steel, Replaces Shebna (*Hezekiah's Treasurer, a type of Christ, Rev 3:7-8*)

²⁰ And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will call **my servant Eliakim** the son of Hilkiah: ²¹ **And I will** clothe him with your robe, and **strengthen him** with your girdle, and **I will** commit your government into his hand: and he shall be a father to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and to the house of Judah. ²² And the **key of the house of David will I lay upon his shoulder; so he shall open, and none shall shut; and he shall shut, and none shall open.** ²³ And **I will** fasten him [as] a nail in a sure place; and he shall be for a glorious throne to his father's house. ²⁴ And they shall hang upon him all the glory of his father's house, the offspring and the issue, all vessels of small quantity, from the vessels of cups, even to all the vessels of flagons.

²⁵ In that day, says the LORD of hosts, shall the nail that is fastened in the sure place be removed, and be cut down, and fall; and the burden that was upon it shall be cut off: for the LORD has spoken [it].

Isaiah Chapter 23

Tyre Will Be Punished

(46) ¹ **The burden of Tyre.** Howl, ye ships of Tarshish; for it is laid waste, so that there is no house, no entering in: from the land of Chittim it is revealed to them. ² Be still, ye inhabitants of the isle; you whom the merchants of Zidon, that pass over the sea, have replenished. ³ And by great waters the seed of Sihor, the harvest of the river, is her revenue; and she is a mart of nations. ⁴ Be ashamed, O Zidon: for the sea has spoken, [even] the strength of the sea, saying, I travail not, nor bring forth children, neither do I nourish up young men, [nor] bring up virgins. ⁵ As at the report concerning Egypt, [so] they will be sorely pained at the report of Tyre. ⁶ Pass ye over to Tarshish; howl, ye inhabitants of the isle. ⁷ [Is] this your joyous [city], whose antiquity is of ancient days? her own feet shall carry her afar off to sojourn. ⁸ Who has taken this counsel against Tyre, the crowning [city], whose merchants are princes, whose traffickers are the honorable of the earth? ⁹ The LORD of hosts has purposed it, to stain the pride of all glory, [and] to bring into contempt all the honorable of the earth. ¹⁰ Pass through your land as a river, O daughter of Tarshish: there is no more strength. ¹¹ He stretched out his hand over the sea, he shook the kingdoms: the LORD has given a commandment against the merchant [city], to destroy the strong holds thereof. ¹² And he said, **You shall no more rejoice, O you oppressed virgin, daughter of Zidon: arise, pass over to Chittim; there also shall you have no rest.** ¹³ Behold the land of the Chaldeans; this people was not, [till] the Assyrian founded it for them that dwell in the wilderness: they set up the towers thereof, they raised up the palaces thereof; [and] he brought it to ruin. ¹⁴ Howl, ye ships of Tarshish: for your strength is laid waste. ¹⁵ And it shall come to pass in that day, that Tyre shall be forgotten seventy years, according to the days of one king: after the end of seventy years shall Tyre sing as a harlot. ¹⁶ Take a harp, go about the city, you harlot that has been forgotten; make sweet melody, sing many songs, that you may be remembered. ¹⁷ And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that the LORD will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to her hire, and shall commit fornication with all the kingdoms of the world upon the face of the earth. ¹⁸ And her merchandise and her hire shall be holiness to the LORD: it shall not be treasured nor laid up; for her merchandise shall be for them that dwell before the LORD, to eat sufficiently, and for durable clothing.

God's Judgments Upon the Land

(47) ¹ Behold, the LORD makes the earth empty, and makes it waste, and turns it upside down, and scatters abroad the inhabitants thereof. ² And it shall be, as with the people, so with the priest; as with the servant, so with his master; as with the maid, so with her mistress; as with the buyer, so with the seller; as with the lender, so with the borrower; as with the taker of usury, so with the giver of usury to him. ³ The land shall be utterly emptied, and utterly spoiled: for the LORD has spoken this word.

⁴ The earth mourns [and] fades away, the world languishes [and] fades away, the haughty people of the earth do languish. ⁵ The earth also is defiled under the inhabitants thereof; because they have transgressed the laws, changed the ordinance, broken the everlasting covenant. ⁶ Therefore has the curse devoured the earth, and they that dwell therein are desolate: therefore the inhabitants of the earth are burned, and few men left. ⁷ The new wine mourns, the vine languishes, all the merry-hearted do sigh. ⁸ The mirth of tamborines ceases, the noise of them that rejoice ends, the joy of the harp ceases. ⁹ They shall not drink wine with a song; strong drink shall be bitter to them that drink it. ¹⁰ The city of confusion is broken down: every house is shut up, that no man may come in. ¹¹ [There is] a crying for wine in the streets; all joy is darkened, the mirth of the land is gone. ¹² In the city is left desolation, and the gate is smitten with destruction.

A Remnant Shall Praise God and His Kingdom

(48) ¹³ When thus it shall be in the midst of the land among the people, [there shall be] as the shaking of an olive tree, [and] as the gleaning grapes when the vintage is done. ¹⁴ They shall lift up their voice, they shall sing for the majesty of the LORD, they shall cry aloud from the sea. ¹⁵ Wherefore glorify ye the LORD in the fires, [even] the name of the LORD God of Israel in the isles of the sea. ¹⁶ From the uttermost part of the earth have we heard songs, [even] glory to the righteous. But I said, My leanness, my leanness, woe to me! the treacherous dealers have dealt treacherously; yes, the treacherous dealers have dealt very treacherously. ¹⁷ Fear, and the pit, and the snare, are upon you, O inhabitant of the earth. ¹⁸ And it shall come to pass, [that] he who flees from the noise of the fear shall fall into the pit; and he that comes up out of the midst of the pit shall be taken in the snare: for the windows from on high are open, and the foundations of the earth do shake. ¹⁹ The earth is utterly broken down, the earth is clean dissolved, the earth is moved exceedingly. ²⁰ The earth shall reel to and fro like a drunkard, and shall be removed like a cottage; and the transgression thereof shall be heavy upon it; and it shall fall, and not rise again. ²¹ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the LORD shall punish the host of the high ones [that are] on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth. ²² And they shall be gathered together, [as] prisoners are gathered in the pit, and shall be shut up in the prison, and after many days they will be visited. ²³ Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, when the LORD of hosts shall reign in mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before his ancients gloriously.

(49) ¹ O LORD, you are my God; I will exalt you, I will praise your name; for you have done wonderful [things; your] counsels of old are faithfulness [and] truth. ² For you have made of a city a heap; [of] a defensed city a ruin: a palace of strangers to be no city; it shall never be built. ³ Therefore shall the strong people glorify you, the city of the terrible nations shall fear you. ⁴ For you have been a strength to the poor, a strength to the needy in his distress, a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat, when the blast of the terrible ones is as a storm [against] the wall. ⁵ You shall bring down the noise of strangers, as the heat in a dry place; [even] the heat with the shadow of a cloud: the branch of the terrible ones shall be brought low. ⁶ And in this mountain shall the LORD of hosts make to all people a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined. ⁷ And he will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering cast over all people, and the veil that is spread over all nations. ⁸ He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord GOD will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people shall he take away from off all the earth: for the LORD has spoken [it]. ⁹ And it shall be said in that day, Look, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the LORD; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation. ¹⁰ For in this mountain shall the hand of the LORD rest, and Moab shall be trodden down under him, even as straw is trodden down for the dunghill.

Isaiah Chapter 25

¹¹ And he shall spread forth his hands in the midst of them, as he that swims spreads forth [his hands] to swim: and he shall bring down their pride together with the spoils of their hands. ¹² And the fortress of the high fort of your walls shall he bring down, lay low, [and] bring to the ground, [even] to the dust.

Isaiah Chapter 26

Isaiah's Song to Instruct and Admonish Judah and the Church (Colossians 3:16)

The **Peace** of the Righteous People of God: Ro 5:1,14:17, Phil 4:17, Col 3:15 and James 3:13-17

(50) ¹ In that day shall this song be sung in the land of Judah; We have a strong city; salvation will [God] appoint [for] walls and bulwarks. ² Open ye the gates, that the righteous nation which keeps the truth may enter in. ³ Thou will keep [him] in **perfect peace**, [whose] mind is stayed [on thee]: because he trusts in thee. ⁴ Trust ye in the LORD forever: for in the LORD JEHOVAH is everlasting strength:

The **Curse** of the Land of Babylon: Revelation 17-18 (tale of 2 cities: Babylon and Jerusalem)

⁵ For he brings down them that dwell on high; **the lofty city**, he lays it low; he lays it low, [even] to the ground; he brings it [even] to the dust. ⁶ The foot shall tread it down, [even] the feet of the **poor**, [and] the steps of the **needy**.

The **Way of the Righteous People of God**: John 14:6, Psalm 42:8 and Psalm 5:1-3

⁷ The way of the just is uprightness: you, most upright, do weigh the path of the just. ⁸ Yes, in the way of your judgments, O LORD, have **we waited** for you; the **desire** of [our] soul is to your name, and to the **remembrance** of you. ⁹ **With my soul I have desired you in the night; yes, with my spirit within me will I seek you early**: for when your judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness.

The **Curse** of the People of Babylon: Revelation 17-18, Isaiah 13-23, Habakkuk

¹⁰ Let favor be showed to the wicked, [yet] will he not learn righteousness: in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the LORD. ¹¹ LORD, [when] your hand is lifted up, they will not see: [but] they shall see, and be ashamed for [their] envy at the people; yes, the fire of your enemies shall devour them.

The **Sovereign** God works in His People: Romans 9-11, John 15:5, Ephesians 1

(51) ¹² LORD, you will ordain peace for us: for **you also have worked all our works in us**.

¹³ O LORD our God, [other] lords beside you have had dominion over us: [but] by you only will we make mention of your name.

The **Curse** of the People and Land of Babylon: Revelation 17-18

¹⁴ [They are] dead, they shall not live; [they are] deceased, they shall not rise: therefore have you visited and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish.

The **Blessing** of the Land and People of God: Romans 11

¹⁵ You have increased the nation, O LORD, you have increased the nation: you are glorified: you had removed [it] far [to] all the ends of the earth.

Isaiah Chapter 26

The **Unfruitful Prayer** of the People of God: Ja 4:1-5, 6:10, Gal. 4:19 (we must fear God & hate sin)

¹⁶ LORD, in trouble have they visited you, they poured out a prayer [when] your **chastening** was upon them. ¹⁷ Like as a woman with child, [that] draws near the time of her delivery, is in pain, [and] cries out in her pangs; so have we been in your sight, O LORD. ¹⁸ We have been with child, we have been in pain, we have as it were **brought forth wind**; we have **not worked any deliverance** in the earth; **neither** have the inhabitants of the world fallen.

Note: Prayer is said only one time in the Old Testament in this sense – “lachash” whisper, in a private prayer. Why?

The **Resurrection** of the People of God: Revelation 19, 5:9-10, 14:3, 15:2-3 and Revelation 4:1

¹⁹ Your dead [men] shall live, [together with] my dead body they will arise. **Awake and sing**, ye that dwell in dust: for your dew [is as] the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast out the dead. ²⁰ Come, my people, enter you into your chambers, and shut your doors about you: hide thyself as it were for a little moment, until the indignation be overpast.

The **Curse** of the People and Land of Babylon: Revelation 6-20

²¹ For, behold, the LORD comes out of his place to punish the inhabitants of the earth for their iniquity: the earth also shall disclose her blood, and shall no more cover her slain.

Isaiah Chapter 27

God's Care for His People

(52) ¹ In that day the LORD with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. ² **In that day sing ye to her, A vineyard of red wine.** ³ **I the LORD do keep it; I will water it every moment: lest [any] hurt it, I will keep it night and day.** ⁴ **Fury is not in me: who would set the briers [and] thorns against me in battle? I would go through them, I would burn them together.** ⁵ **Or let him take hold of my strength, [that] he may make peace with me; [and] he shall make peace with me.** ⁶ He shall cause them that come of Jacob to take root: Israel shall blossom and bud, and fill the face of the world with fruit. ⁷ Has he smitten him, as he smote those that smote him? [or] is he slain according to the slaughter of them that are slain by him? ⁸ In measure, when it shoots forth, you will debate with it: he stays his rough wind in the day of the east wind. ⁹ By this therefore shall the iniquity of Jacob be purged; and this is all the fruit to take away his sin; when he makes all the stones of the altar as chalkstones that are beaten in sunder, the groves and images shall not stand up. ¹⁰ Yet the defensed city [shall be] desolate, [and] the habitation forsaken, and left like a wilderness: there shall the calf feed, and there shall he lie down, and consume the branches thereof. ¹¹ When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off: the women come, [and] set them on fire: for it is a people of no understanding: therefore he that made them will not have mercy on them, and he that formed them will show them no favor. ¹² And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the LORD shall beat off from the channel of the river to the stream of Egypt, and ye shall be gathered one by one, O ye children of Israel. ¹³ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the great trumpet shall be blown, and they shall come which were ready to perish in the land of Assyria, and the outcasts in the land of Egypt, and shall worship the LORD in the holy mount at Jerusalem.

Warning Against Trusting Egypt (chapters 28-35)

Ephraim Will Fall

(53) ¹ Woe to the crown of pride, to the drunkards of Ephraim, whose glorious beauty is a fading flower, which are on the head of the fat valleys of them that are overcome with wine! ² Behold, the Lord has a mighty and strong one, [which] as a tempest of hail [and] a destroying storm, as a flood of mighty waters overflowing, shall cast down to the earth with the hand. ³ The crown of pride, the drunkards of Ephraim, shall be trodden under feet: ⁴ And the glorious beauty, which is on the head of the fat valley, shall be a fading flower, [and] as the hasty fruit before the summer; which [when] he that looks upon it sees, while it is yet in his hand he eats it up. ⁵ In that day shall the LORD of hosts be for a crown of glory, and for a diadem of beauty, to the residue of his people, ⁶ And for a spirit of judgment to him that sits in judgment, and for strength to them that turn the battle to the gate. ⁷ But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble [in] judgment. ⁸ For all tables are full of vomit [and] filthiness, [so that there is] no place [clean]. ⁹ Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? [them that are] weaned from the milk, [and] drawn from the breasts. ¹⁰ For precept [must be] upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, [and] there a little: ¹¹ For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. ¹² To whom he said, **This is the rest [wherewith] ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear.** ¹³ But the word of the LORD was to them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, [and] there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.

A Message to Jerusalem

(54) ¹⁴ Wherefore hear the word of the LORD, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. ¹⁵ Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with Shoel are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come to us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: ¹⁶ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD, **Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner [stone], a sure foundation: he that believes shall not make haste.** ¹⁷ Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place. ¹⁸ **And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with Shoel shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it.** ¹⁹ **From the time that it goes forth it shall take you: for morning by morning shall it pass over, by day and by night: and it shall be a vexation only [to] understand the report.** ²⁰ **For the bed is shorter than that [a man] can stretch himself [on it]: and the covering narrower than that he can wrap himself [in it].** ²¹ **For the LORD shall rise up as [in] mount Perazim, he shall be angry as [in] the valley of Gibeon, that he may do his work, his strange work; and bring to pass his act, his strange act.** ²² Now therefore be ye not mockers, lest your bands be made strong: for I have heard from the Lord GOD of hosts a consumption, even determined upon the whole earth. ²³ Give ye ear, and hear my voice; hearken, and hear my speech. ²⁴ Does the plowman plow all day to sow? does he open and break the clods of his ground? ²⁵ When he has made plain the face thereof, does he not cast abroad the fitches, and scatter the cummin, and cast in the principal wheat and the appointed barley and the rye in their place? ²⁶ For his God does instruct him to discretion, [and] does teach him. ²⁷ For the fitches are not threshed with a threshing instrument, neither is a cart wheel turned about upon the cummin; but the fitches are beaten out with a staff, and the cummin with a rod. ²⁸ Bread [corn] is bruised; because he will not ever be threshing it, nor break [it with] the wheel of his cart, nor bruise it [with] his horsemen. ²⁹ This also comes forth from the LORD of hosts, [which] is wonderful in counsel, [and] excellent in working.

God's Heavy Judgment Upon Jerusalem

(55) ¹ Woe to Ariel, to Ariel, the city [where] David dwelt! add ye year to year; let them kill sacrifices. ² Yet I will distress Ariel, and there shall be heaviness and sorrow: and it shall be to me as Ariel. ³ And I will camp against you round about, and will lay siege against you with a mount, and I will raise forts against you. ⁴ And you shall be brought down, [and] shall speak out of the ground, and your speech shall be low out of the dust, and your voice shall be, as of one that has a familiar spirit, out of the ground, and your speech shall whisper out of the dust. ⁵ Moreover the multitude of your strangers shall be like small dust, and the multitude of the terrible ones [shall be] as chaff that passes away: yes, it shall be at an instant suddenly. ⁶ You shall be visited of the LORD of hosts with thunder, and with earthquake, and great noise, with storm and tempest, and the flame of devouring fire. ⁷ And the multitude of all the nations that fight against Ariel, even all that fight against her and her munition, and that distress her, shall be as a dream of a night vision. ⁸ It shall even be as when a hungry [man] dreams, and, behold, he eats; but he awakes, and his soul is empty: or as when a thirsty man dreams, and, behold, he drinks; but he awakes, and, behold, [he is] faint, and his soul has appetite: so shall the multitude of all the nations be, that fight against mount Zion.

(56) ⁹ Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink. ¹⁰ For the LORD has poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and has closed your eyes: the prophets and your rulers, the seers has he covered. ¹¹ And the vision of all is become to you as the words of a book that is sealed, which [men] deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray you: and he says, I cannot; for it is sealed: ¹² And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray you: and he says, I am not learned. ¹³ Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near [me] with their mouth, and with their lips do honor me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: ¹⁴ Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvelous work among this people, [even] a marvelous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise [men] shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent [men] shall be hid. ¹⁵ Woe to them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the LORD, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who sees us? and who knows us? ¹⁶ Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding?

(57) ¹⁷ [Is] it not yet a very little while, and Lebanon shall be turned into a fruitful field, and the fruitful field shall be esteemed as a forest? ¹⁸ And in that day shall the deaf hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness. ¹⁹ The meek also shall increase [their] joy in the LORD, and the poor among men shall rejoice in the Holy One of Israel. ²⁰ For the terrible one is brought to nothing, and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for iniquity are cut off: ²¹ That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a snare for him that reproves in the gate, and turn aside the just for a thing of nothing. ²² Therefore thus says the LORD, who redeemed Abraham, concerning the house of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now grow pale. ²³ But when he sees his children, the work of my hands, in the midst of him, they shall sanctify my name, and sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and shall fear the God of Israel. ²⁴ They also that erred in spirit shall come to understanding, and they that murmured shall learn doctrine.

Trust the Lord, Not Egypt

(58) ¹ Woe to the rebellious children, says the LORD, that take counsel, but not of me; and that cover with a covering, but not of my spirit, that they may add sin to sin: ² That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at my mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! ³ Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt [your] confusion. ⁴ For his princes were at Zoan, and his ambassadors came to Hanes. ⁵ They were all ashamed of a people [that] could not profit them, nor be a help nor profit, but a shame, and also a reproach. ⁶ The burden of the beasts of the south: into the land of trouble and anguish, from whence [come] the young and old lion, the viper and fiery flying serpent, they will carry their riches upon the shoulders of young donkeys, and their treasures upon the bunches of camels, to a people [that] shall not profit them. ⁷ For the Egyptians shall help in vain, and to no purpose: therefore I have cried concerning this, Their strength is to sit still. ⁸ Now go, write it before them in a table, and note it in a book, that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever: ⁹ That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children [that] will not hear the law of the LORD: ¹⁰ Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not to us right things, speak to us smooth things, prophesy deceits: ¹¹ Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us. ¹² Wherefore thus says the Holy One of Israel, Because ye despise this word, and trust in oppression and perverseness, and stay thereon: ¹³ Therefore this iniquity shall be to you as a breach ready to fall, swelling out in a high wall, whose breaking comes suddenly at an instant. ¹⁴ And he shall break it as the breaking of the potters' vessel that is broken in pieces; he shall not spare: so that there shall not be found in the bursting of it a sherd to take fire from the hearth, or to take water [withal] out of the pit. ¹⁵ For thus says the Lord GOD, the Holy One of Israel; **In returning and rest shall ye be saved; in quietness and in confidence shall be your strength: and ye would not.** ¹⁶ But ye said, No; for we will flee upon horses; therefore shall ye flee: and, We will ride upon the swift; therefore shall they that pursue you be swift. ¹⁷ One thousand [shall flee] at the rebuke of one; at the rebuke of five shall ye flee: till ye be left as a beacon upon the top of a mountain, and as an ensign on a hill.

The Lord Will Heal His People

(59) ¹⁸ And therefore will the LORD wait, that he may be gracious to you, and therefore will he be exalted, that he may have mercy upon you: for the LORD is a God of judgment: blessed are all they that wait for him. ¹⁹ For the people shall dwell in Zion at Jerusalem: you shall weep no more: he will be very gracious to you at the voice of your cry; when he shall hear it, he will answer you. ²⁰ And [though] the Lord give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction, yet shall not your teachers be removed into a corner anymore, but your eyes shall see your teachers: ²¹ And your ears shall hear a word behind you, saying, This is the way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left. ²² Ye shall defile also the covering of your graven images of silver, and the ornament of your molten images of gold: you shall cast them away as a menstruous cloth; you shall say to it, Get you hence. ²³ Then shall he give the rain of your seed, that you shall sow the ground withal; and bread of the increase of the earth, and it shall be fat and plenteous: in that day shall your cattle feed in large pastures. ²⁴ The oxen likewise and the young donkeys that ear the ground shall eat clean provender, which has been winnowed with the shovel and with the fan. ²⁵ And there shall be upon every high mountain, and upon every high hill, rivers [and] streams of waters in the day of the great slaughter, when the towers fall. ²⁶ Moreover the light of the moon shall be as the light of the sun, and the light of the sun shall be sevenfold, as the light of seven days, in the day that the LORD binds up the breach of his people, and heals the stroke of their wound.

Joy Over the Destruction of Assyria

(60) ²⁷ Behold, the name of the LORD comes from far, burning [with] his anger, and the burden [thereof is] heavy: his lips are full of indignation, and his tongue as a devouring fire: ²⁸ And his breath, as an overflowing stream, shall reach to the midst of the neck, to sift the nations with the sieve of vanity: and [there shall be] a bridle in the jaws of the people, causing them to err. ²⁹ Ye shall have a song, as in the night [when] a holy solemnity is kept; and gladness of heart, as when one goes with a pipe to come into the mountain of the LORD, to the mighty One of Israel. ³⁰ And the LORD shall cause his glorious voice to be heard, and shall show the lighting down of his arm, with the indignation of [his] anger, and [with] the flame of a devouring fire, [with] scattering, and tempest, and hailstones. ³¹ For through the voice of the LORD shall the Assyrian be beaten down, [which] smote with a rod. ³² And [in] every place where the grounded staff shall pass, which the LORD shall lay upon him, [it] shall be with tamborines and harps: and in battles of shaking will he fight with it. ³³ For Tophet is ordained of old; yes, for the king it is prepared; he has made [it] deep [and] large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, does kindle it.

Isaiah Chapter 31

The Lord Will Protect His People

(61) ¹ Woe to them that go down to Egypt for help; and stay on horses, and trust in chariots, because [they are] many; and in horsemen, because they are very strong; but they look not to the Holy One of Israel, neither seek the LORD! ² Yet he also is wise, and will bring evil, and will not call back his words: but will arise against the house of the evildoers, and against the help of them that work iniquity. ³ Now the Egyptians are men, and not God; and their horses flesh, and not spirit. When the LORD shall stretch out his hand, both he that helps shall fall, and he that is helped shall fall down, and they all shall fail together. ⁴ For thus has the LORD spoken to me, **Like as the lion and the young lion roaring on his prey, when a multitude of shepherds is called forth against him, [he] will not be afraid of their voice, nor abase himself for the noise of them: so shall the LORD of hosts come down to fight for mount Zion, and for the hill thereof.** ⁵ **As birds flying, so will the LORD of hosts defend Jerusalem; defending also he will deliver [it; and] passing over he will preserve it.** ⁶ **Turn ye to [him from] whom the children of Israel have deeply revolted.** ⁷ **For in that day every man shall cast away his idols of silver, and his idols of gold, which your own hands have made to you [for] a sin.** ⁸ **Then shall the Assyrian fall with the sword, not of a mighty man; and the sword, not of a mean man, shall devour him: but he shall flee from the sword, and his young men shall be discomfited.** ⁹ **And he shall pass over to his strong hold for fear, and his princes shall be afraid of the ensign,** says the LORD, whose fire is in Zion, and his furnace in Jerusalem.

Isaiah Chapter 32

The Lord Will Pour Our His Spirit

(62) ¹ Behold, a king shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment. ² And a man shall be as a hiding place from the wind, and a covert from the tempest; as rivers of water in a dry place, as the shadow of a great rock in a weary land. ³ And the eyes of them that see shall not be dim, and the ears of them that hear shall hearken. ⁴ The heart also of the rash shall understand knowledge, and the tongue of the stammerers shall be ready to speak plainly. ⁵ The vile person shall be no more called liberal, nor the churl said [to be] bountiful. ⁶ For the vile person will speak villainy, and his heart will work iniquity, to practice hypocrisy, and to utter error against the LORD, to make empty the soul of the hungry, and he will cause the drink of the thirsty to fail. ⁷ The instruments also of the churl are evil: he devises wicked devices to destroy the poor with lying words, even when the needy speaks right. ⁸ But the liberal devises liberal things; and by liberal things shall he stand.

Desolation is Foretold

(63) ⁹ Rise up, ye women that are at ease; hear my voice, ye careless daughters; give ear to my speech. ¹⁰ Many days and years shall ye be troubled, ye careless women: for the vintage shall fail, the gathering shall not come. ¹¹ Tremble, ye women that are at ease; be troubled, ye careless ones: strip you, and make you bare, and gird [sackcloth] upon [your] loins. ¹² They shall lament for the teats, for the pleasant fields, for the fruitful vine. ¹³ Upon the land of my people shall come up thorns [and] briers; yes, upon all the houses of joy [in] the joyous city: ¹⁴ Because the palaces shall be forsaken; the multitude of the city shall be left; the forts and towers shall be for dens forever, a joy of wild donkeys, a pasture of flocks; ¹⁵ Until the spirit be poured upon us from on high, and the wilderness be a fruitful field, and the fruitful field be counted for a forest. ¹⁶ Then judgment shall dwell in the wilderness, and righteousness remain in the fruitful field. ¹⁷ And the work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness quietness and assurance forever. ¹⁸ And my people shall dwell in a peaceable habitation, and in sure dwellings, and in quiet resting places; ¹⁹ When it shall hail, coming down on the forest; and the city shall be low in a low place. ²⁰ Blessed are ye that sow beside all waters, that send forth [thither] the feet of the ox and the donkey.

The Lord Will Rescue Jerusalem from Assyria

(64) ¹ Woe to you that spoil, and you was not spoiled; and deal treacherously, and they dealt not treacherously with you! when you shall cease to spoil, you shall be spoiled; [and] when you shall make an end to deal treacherously, they shall deal treacherously with you. ² O LORD, be gracious to us; we have waited for you: be you their arm every morning, our salvation also in the time of trouble. ³ At the noise of the tumult the people fled; at the lifting up of thyself the nations were scattered. ⁴ And your spoil shall be gathered [like] the gathering of the caterpillar: as the running to and fro of locusts shall he run upon them. ⁵ The LORD is exalted; for he dwells on high: he has filled Zion with judgment and righteousness. ⁶ And wisdom and knowledge shall be the stability of your times, [and] strength of salvation: the fear of the LORD is his treasure. ⁷ Behold, their valiant ones shall cry outside: the ambassadors of peace shall weep bitterly. ⁸ The highways lie waste, the wayfaring man ceases: he has broken the covenant, he has despised the cities, he regards no man. ⁹ The earth mourns [and] languishes: Lebanon is ashamed [and] hewn down: Sharon is like a wilderness; and Bashan and Carmel shake off [their fruits]. ¹⁰ **Now will I rise, says the LORD; now will I be exalted; now will I lift up myself. ¹¹ Ye shall conceive chaff, ye shall bring forth stubble: your breath, [as] fire, shall devour you. ¹² And the people shall be [as] the burnings of lime: [as] thorns cut up they will be burned in the fire. ¹³ Hear, ye [that are] far off, what I have done; and, ye [that are] near, acknowledge my might.**

The Privileges of the Godly

(65) ¹⁴ The sinners in Zion are afraid; fearfulness has surprised the hypocrites. Who among us shall dwell with the devouring fire? who among us shall dwell with everlasting burnings? ¹⁵ He that walks righteously, and speaks uprightly; he that despises the gain of oppressions, that shakes his hands from holding of bribes, that stops his ears from hearing of blood, and shuts his eyes from seeing evil; ¹⁶ He shall dwell on high: his place of defense [shall be] the munitions of rocks: bread shall be given him; his waters [shall be] sure. ¹⁷ Your eyes shall see the king in his beauty: they shall behold the land that is very far off. ¹⁸ Your heart shall meditate terror. Where is the scribe? where is the receiver? where is he that counted the towers? ¹⁹ You shall not see a fierce people, a people of a deeper speech than you can perceive; of a stammering tongue, [that you can] not understand. ²⁰ Look upon Zion, the city of our solemnities: your eyes shall see Jerusalem a quiet habitation, a tabernacle [that] shall not be taken down; not one of the stakes thereof shall ever be removed, neither shall any of the cords thereof be broken. ²¹ But there the glorious LORD [will be] to us a place of broad rivers [and] streams; wherein shall go no galley with oars, neither shall gallant ship pass thereby. ²² For the LORD is our judge, the LORD is our lawgiver, the LORD is our king; he will save us. ²³ Your tacklings are loosed; they could not well strengthen their mast, they could not spread the sail: then is the prey of a great spoil divided; the lame take the prey. ²⁴ And the inhabitant shall not say, I am sick: the people that dwell therein [shall be] forgiven [their] iniquity.

Isaiah Chapter 34

Edom Will Fall

(66) ¹ Come near, ye nations, to hear; and hearken, ye people: let the earth hear, and all that is therein; the world, and all things that come forth of it. ² For the indignation of the LORD is upon all nations, and [his] fury upon all their armies: he has utterly destroyed them, he has delivered them to the slaughter. ³ Their slain also shall be cast out, and their stink shall come up out of their carcasses, and the mountains shall be melted with their blood. ⁴ And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved, and the heavens shall be rolled together as a scroll: and all their host shall fall down, as the leaf falls off from the vine, and as a falling [fig] from the fig tree. ⁵ **For my sword shall be bathed in heaven: behold, it shall come down upon Idumea, and upon the people of my curse, to judgment.** ⁶ The sword of the LORD is filled with blood, it is made fat with fatness, [and] with the blood of lambs and goats, with the fat of the kidneys of rams: for the LORD has a sacrifice in Bozrah, and a great slaughter in the land of Idumea. ⁷ And the unicorns shall come down with them, and the bullocks with the bulls; and their land shall be soaked with blood, and their dust made fat with fatness. ⁸ For [it is] the day of the LORD'S vengeance, [and] the year of recompenses for the controversy of Zion.

(67) ⁹ And the streams thereof shall be turned into pitch, and the dust thereof into brimstone, and the land thereof shall become burning pitch. ¹⁰ It shall not be quenched night nor day; the smoke thereof shall go up forever: from generation to generation it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever. ¹¹ But the cormorant and the bittern shall possess it; the owl also and the raven shall dwell in it: and he shall stretch out upon it the line of confusion, and the stones of emptiness. ¹² They shall call the nobles thereof to the kingdom, but none [shall be] there, and all her princes shall be nothing. ¹³ And thorns shall come up in her palaces, nettles and brambles in the fortresses thereof: and it shall be a habitation of dragons, [and] a court for owls. ¹⁴ The wild beasts of the desert shall also meet with the wild beasts of the island, and the satyr shall cry to his fellow; the screech owl also shall rest there, and find for herself a place of rest. ¹⁵ There shall the great owl make her nest, and lay, and hatch, and gather under her shadow: there shall the vultures also be gathered, everyone with her mate. ¹⁶ Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it has commanded, and his spirit it has gathered them. ¹⁷ And he has cast the lot for them, and his hand has divided it to them by line: they shall possess it forever, from generation to generation they will dwell therein.

Isaiah Chapter 35

The Highway of Holiness

(68) ¹ The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose. ² It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing: the glory of Lebanon shall be given to it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the LORD, [and] the excellency of our God. ³ Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees. ⁴ Say to them [that are] of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come [with] vengeance, [even] God [with] a recompense; he will come and save you. ⁵ Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. ⁶ Then shall the lame [man] leap as a hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. ⁷ And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, [shall be] grass with reeds and rushes.

(69) ⁸ **And a highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness;** the unclean shall not pass over it; but it [shall be] for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err [therein]. ⁹ No lion shall be there, nor [any] ravenous beast shall go up there on, it shall not be found there; but the redeemed shall walk [there]: ¹⁰ And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

Sennacherib of Assyria Invades Judah (Fall of Israel 722 B.C., Lachish, 701 B.C., now at Jerusalem)

(70) ¹ Now it came to pass in the fourteenth year of king Hezekiah, [that] Sennacherib king of Assyria came up against all the defended cities of Judah, and took them. ² And the king of Assyria sent Rabshakeh from Lachish to Jerusalem to king Hezekiah with a great army. And he stood by the conduit of the upper pool in the highway of the fuller's field. ³ Then came forth to him Eliakim, Hilkiyah's son, which was over the house, and Shebna the scribe, and Joah, Asaph's son, the recorder.

Assyrian Prince Rabshakeh's Message to Hezekiah

⁴ And Rabshakeh said to them, Say ye now to Hezekiah, Thus says the great king, the king of Assyria, What confidence is this wherein you trust? ⁵ I say, [say you], (but [they are but] vain words) [I have] counsel and strength for war: now on whom do you trust, that you rebel against me? ⁶ Look, you trust in the staff of this broken reed, on Egypt; whereon if a man lean, it will go into his hand, and pierce it: so is Pharaoh king of Egypt to all that trust in him. ⁷ But if you say to me, We trust in the LORD our God: [is it] not he, whose high places and whose altars Hezekiah has taken away, and said to Judah and to Jerusalem, Ye shall worship before this altar? ⁸ Now therefore give pledges, I pray you, to my master the king of Assyria, and I will give you two thousand horses, if you be able on your part to set riders upon them. ⁹ How then will you turn away the face of one captain of the least of my master's servants, and put your trust on Egypt for chariots and for horsemen? ¹⁰ And am I now come up without the LORD against this land to destroy it? the LORD said to me, Go up against this land, and destroy it.

Eliakim, Shebna, and Joah ask Rabshakeh to Speak in Assyrian

(71) ¹¹ Then said Eliakim and Shebna and Joah to Rabshakeh, Speak, I pray you, to your servants in the Syrian language; for we understand [it]: and speak not to us in the Jews' language, in the ears of the people that are on the wall.

Rabshakeh Yells Demands in Hebrew to Scare the Men at the Wall

¹² But Rabshakeh said, Has my master sent me to your master and to you to speak these words? [has he] not [sent me] to the men that sit upon the wall, that they may eat their own dung, and drink their own piss with you? ¹³ Then Rabshakeh stood, and cried with a loud voice in the Jews' language, and said, Hear ye the words of the great king, the king of Assyria. ¹⁴ Thus says the king, Let not Hezekiah deceive you: for he shall not be able to deliver you. ¹⁵ Neither let Hezekiah make you trust in the LORD, saying, The LORD will surely deliver us: this city shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria. ¹⁶ Hearken not to Hezekiah: for thus says the king of Assyria, Make [an agreement] with me [by] a present, and come out to me: and eat ye every one of his vine, and every one of his fig tree, and drink ye everyone the waters of his own cistern; ¹⁷ Until I come and take you away to a land like your own land, a land of corn and wine, a land of bread and vineyards. ¹⁸ [Beware] lest Hezekiah persuade you, saying, The LORD will deliver us. Has any of the gods of the nations delivered his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria? ¹⁹ Where are the gods of Hamath and Arphad? where are the gods of Sepharvaim? and have they delivered Samaria out of my hand? ²⁰ Who [are they] among all the gods of these lands, that have delivered their land out of my hand, that the LORD should deliver Jerusalem out of my hand?

Eliakim, Shebna, and Joah Hold their Peace before Rabshakeh

²¹ But they held their peace, and answered him not a word: for the king's commandment was, saying, Answer him not. ²² Then came Eliakim, the son of Hilkiyah, that was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and Joah, the son of Asaph, the recorder, to Hezekiah with [their] clothes tore, and told him the words of Rabshakeh.

Q1 – How does the enemy Rabshakeh reveal his ignorance of the one and only true God?

A – He thought Hezekiah removed the high places and altars of the true God (36:7), and the LORD spoke to him (36:10).

Q2 – Why does Rabshakeh scream to the people to not follow Hezekiah in the Hebrew language? (36:12-20)

A – The enemy is using fear tactics so the people will not follow Hezekiah.

Q3 – Why did Eliakim, Shebna, and Joah hold their peace toward Rabshakeh? (36:21a)

A – Because Hezekiah, in his wisdom, told them to hold their peace before the meeting (36:21b), probably so they would not provoke premature or more severe action that may interfere or deter God's plan.

Hezekiah Asks Isaiah to Pray

(72) ¹ And it came to pass, when king Hezekiah heard [it], that he tore his clothes, and covered himself with sackcloth, and went into the house of the LORD. ² And he sent Eliakim, who was over the household, and Shebna the scribe, and the elders of the priests covered with sackcloth, to Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz. ³ And they said unto him, Thus says Hezekiah, This day is a day of trouble, and of rebuke, and of blasphemy: for the children are come to the birth, and there is not strength to bring forth. ⁴ It may be the LORD your God will hear the words of Rabshakeh, whom the king of Assyria his master has sent to reproach the living God, and will reprove the words which the LORD your God has heard: wherefore lift up [your] prayer for the remnant that is left. ⁵ So the servants of king Hezekiah came to Isaiah. ⁶ And Isaiah said to them, Thus shall ye say to your master, Thus says the LORD, **Be not afraid of the words that you have heard, wherewith the servants of the king of Assyria have blasphemed me.** ⁷ **Behold, I will send a blast upon him, and he shall hear a rumor, and return to his own land; and I will cause him to fall by the sword in his own land.**

Sennacherib Sends a Blasphemous Letter to Hezekiah

(73) ⁸ So Rabshakeh returned, and found the king of Assyria warring against Libnah: for he had heard that he was departed from Lachish. ⁹ And he heard say concerning Tirhakah king of Ethiopia, He is come forth to make war with you. And when he heard [it], he sent messengers to Hezekiah, saying, ¹⁰ Thus shall ye speak to Hezekiah king of Judah, saying, Let not your God, in whom you trust, deceive you, saying, Jerusalem shall not be given into the hand of the king of Assyria. ¹¹ Behold, you have heard what the kings of Assyria have done to all lands by destroying them utterly; and shall you be delivered? ¹² Have the gods of the nations delivered them which my fathers have destroyed, [as] Gozan, and Haran, and Rezep, and the children of Eden which [were] in Telassar? ¹³ Where is the king of Hamath, and the king of Arphad, and the king of the city of Sepharvaim, Hena, and Ivah?

Hezekiah's Prayer for Safety from King Sennacherib

(74) ¹⁴ And Hezekiah received the letter from the hand of the messengers, and read it: and Hezekiah went up to the house of the LORD, and spread it before the LORD. ¹⁵ And Hezekiah prayed to the LORD, saying, ¹⁶ O LORD of hosts, God of Israel, that dwell [between] the cherubims, you are the God, [even] you alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth: you have made heaven and earth. ¹⁷ Incline your ear, O LORD, and hear; open your eyes, O LORD, and see: and hear all the words of Sennacherib, which has sent to reproach the living God. ¹⁸ Of a truth, LORD, the kings of Assyria have laid waste all the nations, and their countries, ¹⁹ And have cast their gods into the fire: for they [were] no gods, but the work of men's hands, wood and stone: therefore they have destroyed them. ²⁰ Now therefore, O LORD our God, save us from his hand, that all the kingdoms of the earth may know that you are the LORD, [even] you only.

Isaiah's Prophecy against Sennacherib

(75) ²¹ Then Isaiah the son of Amoz sent to Hezekiah, saying, **Thus says the LORD God of Israel, Whereas you have prayed to me against Sennacherib king of Assyria:** ²² **This is the word which the LORD has spoken concerning him; The virgin, the daughter of Zion, has despised you, [and] laughed you to scorn; the daughter of Jerusalem has shaken her head at you.** ²³ **Whom have you reproached and blasphemed? and against whom have you exalted [your] voice, and lifted up your eyes on high? [even] against the Holy One of Israel.** ²⁴ **By your servants have you reproached the Lord, and has said, By the multitude of my chariots am I come up to the height of the mountains, to the sides of Lebanon; and I will cut down the tall cedars thereof, [and] the choice fir trees thereof: and I will enter into the height of his border, [and] the forest of his Carmel.** ²⁵ **I have digged, and drunk water; and with the sole of my feet I have dried up all the rivers of the besieged places.** ²⁶ **Have you not heard long ago, [how] I have done it; [and] of ancient times, that I have formed it? now I have brought it to pass, that you should be to lay waste defended cities [into] ruinous heaps.** ²⁷ **Therefore their inhabitants [were] of small power, they were dismayed and confounded: they were [as] the grass of the field, and [as] the green herb, [as] the grass on the housetops, and [as corn] blasted before it be grown up.** ²⁸ **But I know your abode, and your going out, and your coming in, and your rage against me.**

Isaiah Chapter 37

²⁹ Because your rage against me, and your tumult, is come up into my ears, therefore will I put my hook in your nose, and my bridle in your lips, and I will turn you back by the way by which you came.

³⁰ And this [shall be] a sign to you, Ye shall eat [this] year such as grows of itself; and the second year that which springs of the same: and in the third year sow ye, and reap, and plant vineyards, and eat the fruit thereof.

The Future Blessing of Jerusalem

³¹ And the remnant that is escaped of the house of Judah shall again take root downward, and bear fruit upward: ³² For out of Jerusalem shall go forth a remnant, and they that escape out of mount Zion: the zeal of the LORD of hosts shall do this.

The LORD will defend the City of Jerusalem

³³ Therefore thus says the LORD concerning the king of Assyria, He shall not come into this city, nor shoot an arrow there, nor come before it with shields, nor cast a bank against it. ³⁴ By the way that he came, by the same shall he return, and shall not come into this city, says the LORD. ³⁵ For I will defend this city to save it for my own sake, and for my servant David's sake.

The Angel of the LORD smites 186,000 Assyrian Soldiers outside Jerusalem

(76) ³⁶ Then the angel of the LORD went forth, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians a hundred and fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they [were] all dead corpses. ³⁷ So Sennacherib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nineveh.

³⁸ And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, that Adrammelech and Sharezer his sons smote him with the sword; and they escaped into the land of Armenia: and Esarhaddon his son reigned in his stead.

Isaiah Chapter 38

Hezekiah's Illness and Prayer Answered

(77) ¹ In those days was Hezekiah sick to death. And Isaiah the prophet the son of Amoz came to him, and said unto him, Thus says the LORD, **Set your house in order: for you shall die, and not live.**

² Then Hezekiah turned his face toward the wall, and prayed to the LORD, ³ And said, Remember now, O LORD, I beseech you, how I have walked before you in truth and with a perfect heart, and have done [that which is] good in your sight. And Hezekiah wept sore. ⁴ Then came the word of the LORD to Isaiah, saying, ⁵ **Go, and say to Hezekiah, Thus says the LORD, the God of David your father, I have heard your prayer, I have seen your tears: behold, I will add to your days fifteen years.** ⁶ **And I will deliver you and this city out of the hand of the king of Assyria: and I will defend this city.** ⁷ **And this [shall be] a sign to you from the LORD, that the LORD will do this thing that he has spoken;** ⁸ **Behold, I will bring again the shadow of the degrees, which is gone down in the sun dial of Ahaz, ten degrees backward.** So the sun returned ten degrees, by which degrees it was gone down.

Hezekiah Remembers his Sorrow during his Illness

(78) ⁹ The writing of Hezekiah king of Judah, when he had been sick, and was recovered of his sickness:

¹⁰ I said in the **cutting off of my days**, I shall go to the gates of Shoel: **I am deprived of the residue of my years.** ¹¹ I said, I shall not see the LORD, [even] the LORD, in the land of the living: I shall behold man no more with the inhabitants of the world. ¹² My age is departed, and is removed from me as a shepherd's tent: I have cut off like a weaver my life: he will cut me off with pining sickness: from day [even] tonight will you make an end of me. ¹³ I reckoned till morning, [that], as a lion, so will he break all my bones: from day [even] tonight will you make an end of me. ¹⁴ Like a crane [or] a swallow, so did I chatter: I did mourn as a dove: my eyes fail [with looking] upward: O LORD, I am oppressed; undertake for me. ¹⁵ **What shall I say? he has both spoken to me, and himself has done [it]: I shall go softly all my years in the bitterness of my soul.**

Isaiah Chapter 38

Hezekiah's Sins Forgiven (38:17b) and Songs to the LORD (38:19-20)

¹⁶ O Lord, by these [things men] live, and in all these [things is] the life of my spirit: so will you **recover me, and make me to live.** ¹⁷ Behold, for peace I had great bitterness: but you have in love to my soul [delivered it] from the pit of corruption: for **you have cast all my sins behind your back.**

¹⁸ For Shoel cannot praise you, death can [not] celebrate you: they that go down into the pit cannot hope for your truth. ¹⁹ The living, the living, he shall praise you, as I [do] this day: the father to the children shall make known your truth. ²⁰ The LORD [was ready] to save me: therefore we will sing my songs to the stringed instruments all the days of our life in the house of the LORD. ²¹ For Isaiah had said, Let them take a lump of figs, and lay [it] for a plaster upon the boil, and he shall recover.

²² Hezekiah also had said, What is the sign that I shall go up to the house of the LORD?

Isaiah Chapter 39

Hezekiah Shows the Babylonians His Treasures

(79) ¹ At that time Merodachbaladan, the son of Baladan, king of Babylon, sent letters and a present to Hezekiah: for he had heard that he had been sick, and was recovered. ² And Hezekiah was glad of them, and showed them the house of his precious things, the silver, and the gold, and the spices, and the precious ointment, and all the house of his armor, and all that was found in his treasures: there was nothing in his house, nor in all his dominion, that Hezekiah showed them not. ³ Then came Isaiah the prophet to king Hezekiah, and said unto him, What said these men? and from whence came they to you? And Hezekiah said, They are come from a far country to me, [even] from Babylon. ⁴ Then said he, What have they seen in your house? And Hezekiah answered, All that is in my house have they seen: there is nothing among my treasures that I have not showed them. ⁵ Then said Isaiah to Hezekiah, Hear the word of the LORD of hosts: ⁶ **Behold, the days come, that all that is in your house, and [that] which your fathers have laid up in store until this day, shall be carried to Babylon: nothing shall be left, says the LORD.** ⁷ **And of your sons that shall issue from you, which you shall beget, they will take away; and they shall be eunuchs in the palace of the king of Babylon.** ⁸ Then said Hezekiah to Isaiah, Good is the word of the LORD which you have spoken. He said moreover, For there shall be peace and truth in my days.

Isaiah Chapter 40

Comfort My People

(80) ¹ **a Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, says your God.** ² **Speak ye tenderly to Jerusalem, and cry to her, that her warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she has received of the LORD'S hand ^b double for all her sins.**

^a God the Father comforts, as well as Jesus Christ the Son in Isaiah 61:1-2 and the Holy Spirit in John 14:16-20. The character or nature of God is the same in all 3 persons of the Godhead.

^b Double may mean as the first born of God which brings double blessing or curse, depending on obedience to God's word. The heathen or unbelievers are not held to this standard. Some interpret the Hebrew to translate "paid in full".

John the Baptist's Message Obeyed by all Israel

³ The ^a voice of him that cries in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. ⁴ Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: ⁵ And the glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see [it] together: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken [it].

⁶ The voice said, Cry. And he said, What shall I cry? ^b All flesh is grass, and all the goodness thereof is as the flower of the field: ⁷ The grass withers, the flower fades: because the spirit of the LORD blows upon it: surely the people is grass. ⁸ The grass withers, the flower fades: but the word of our God shall stand forever.

^a Matthew 3:1-3 and Malachi 4:5-6

^b The Apostle Peter applies the same passage to the New Testament believers, 1 Peter 1:24-25

Isaiah Chapter 40

God's Loving Return to Jerusalem as Jesus Christ the Good Shepherd

(81) ⁹ O Zion, that brings good tidings, get you up into the high mountain; O Jerusalem, that brings good tidings, lift up your voice with strength; lift [it] up, be not afraid; say to the cities of Judah, Behold your God! ¹⁰ Behold, the Lord GOD will come with strong [hand], and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and ^a his work before him. ¹¹ He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, [and] shall gently lead those that are with young.

^a Day of the Lord or the Time of Jacob's Trouble.

Our Powerful and Personal God

God's Superiority to Nations, Idols, Rulers & Other Gods

(82) ¹² ^a Who has measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance? ¹³ Who has directed the Spirit of the LORD, or [being] his counselor has taught him? ¹⁴ With whom took he counsel, and [who] instructed him, and taught him in the path of judgment, and taught him knowledge, and showed to him the way of understanding? ¹⁵ Behold, the nations are as a drop in a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, he takes up the isles as a very little thing. ¹⁶ And Lebanon is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts thereof sufficient for a burnt offering. ¹⁷ All nations before him are as nothing; and they are counted to him less than nothing, and vanity.

^a God's superiority in quantitative exactness in creation proves science and disproves the randomness of evolution (12-14). The nations and all their power and might (15-17) are a very little thing in comparison.

Comparing Man-made Idols to God

¹⁸ To whom then will ye liken God? or what likeness will ye compare to him? ¹⁹ The workman melts a graven image, and the goldsmith spreads it over with gold, and casts silver chains. ²⁰ He that is so impoverished that he has no oblation chooses a tree [that] will not rot; he seeks to him a cunning workman to prepare a graven image, [that] shall not be moved. ²¹ Have ye not known? have ye not heard? has it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth?

God over all Creation, and Individual by Name

²² ^a [It is] he that sits upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretches out the heavens as a curtain, and spreads them out as a tent to dwell in: ²³ That brings the princes to nothing; he makes the judges of the earth as vanity. ²⁴ Yes, they shall not be planted; yes, they shall not be sown: yes, their stock shall not take root in the earth: and he shall also blow upon them, and they shall wither, and the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble. ²⁵ ^a **To whom then will ye liken me, or shall I be equal?** says the Holy One. ²⁶ Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who has created these [things], that **brings out their host by number: he calls them all by names** by the greatness of his might, for that [he is] strong in power; **not one fails.**

^a Good verse to prove that God created the earth as round when man thought it to be flat, more so to show God as the center of creation, not earth. This was around 800 BC; Galileo discovered the earth circled the sun in 1609 AD following Polish astronomer Copernicus who wrote in 1543 that the earth circles the sun. Others did not rejoice, notably the advisors of the Pope. For centuries, the Roman Church had accepted and taught Ptolemy's 1500-years-old theory that positioned a stationary earth at the center of the universe. In this system, the planets and the sun revolved around the earth - and Rome. What a glorious place to be! So, when Galileo endorsed Copernicus's sun-centered theory, the papal court cried, "Heresy." First mention in the Bible is Job 26:7, 10. Historians generally [wrongly] credit the Greeks with being the first to suggest a spherical earth. In the sixth century B.C., Pythagoras suggested a spherical earth. Later Christopher Columbus had courage the earth was not flat in the 16th century.

^b God's superiority to other gods clearly shown in the order and maintenance of the universe.

Isaiah Chapter 40

Promise: God does not Forget, but Strengthens those who Wait on Him

(83) ²⁷ Why say you, O Jacob, and speak, O Israel, My way is hid from the LORD, and my judgment is passed over from my God? ²⁸ Have you not known? have you not heard, [that] the everlasting God, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the earth, faints not, neither is weary? there is no searching of his understanding. ²⁹ He gives power to the faint; and to [them that have] no might he increases strength. ³⁰ Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: ³¹ **But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew [their] strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; [and] they shall walk, and not faint.**

Isaiah Chapter 41

God Reasons with His People

(84) ¹ Keep silence before me, O islands; and let the people renew [their] strength: let them come near; then let them speak: let us come near together to judgment. ² Who raised up the righteous [man] from the east, called him to his foot, gave the nations before him, and made [him] rule over kings? he gave them as the dust to his sword, [and] as driven stubble to his bow. ³ He pursued them, [and] passed safely; [even] by the way [that] he had not gone with his feet. ⁴ Who has worked and done [it], calling the generations from the beginning? I the LORD, the first, and with the last; I [am] he. ⁵ The isles saw [it], and feared; the ends of the earth were afraid, drew near, and came. ⁶ They helped everyone his neighbor; and [everyone] said to his brother, Be of good courage. ⁷ So the carpenter encouraged the goldsmith, [and] he that smooths [with] the hammer him that smote the anvil, saying, It is ready for the soldering: and he fastened it with nails, [that] it should not be moved. ⁸ But you, Israel, are my servant, Jacob whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham my friend. ⁹ [You] whom I have taken from the ends of the earth, and called you from the chief men thereof, and said to you, You are my servant; I have chosen you, and not cast you away.

God is with His People

¹⁰ **Fear you not; for I [am] with you: be not dismayed; for I [am] your God: I will strengthen you; yes, I will help you; yes, I will uphold you with the right hand of my righteousness.**
¹¹ Behold, all they that were incensed against you shall be ashamed and confounded: they shall be as nothing; and they that strive with you shall perish. ¹² You shall seek them, and shall not find them, [even] them that contended with you: they that war against you shall be as nothing, and as a thing of nothing. ¹³ For I the LORD your God will hold your right hand, saying to you, Fear not; I will help you. ¹⁴ Fear not, you worm Jacob, [and] ye men of Israel; I will help you, says the LORD, and your redeemer, the Holy One of Israel. ¹⁵ Behold, I will make you a new sharp threshing instrument having teeth: you shall thresh the mountains, and beat them small, and shall make the hills as chaff. ¹⁶ You shall fan them, and the wind shall carry them away, and the whirlwind shall scatter them: and you shall rejoice in the LORD, [and] shall glory in the Holy One of Israel. ¹⁷ [When] the poor and needy seek water, and there is none, [and] their tongue fails for thirst, I the LORD will hear them, I the God of Israel will not forsake them. ¹⁸ I will open rivers in high places, and fountains in the midst of the valleys: I will make the wilderness a pool of water, and the dry land springs of water. ¹⁹ I will plant in the wilderness the cedar, the shittah tree, and the myrtle, and the oil tree; I will set in the desert the fir tree, [and] the pine, and the box tree together: ²⁰ That they may see, and know, and consider, and understand together, that the hand of the LORD has done this, and the Holy One of Israel has created it.

The Worthlessness of Idols

(85) ²¹ Produce your cause, says the LORD; bring forth your strong [reasons], says the King of Jacob. ²² Let them bring them forth, and show us what shall happen: let them show the former things, what they [be], that we may consider them, and know the latter end of them; or declare us things for to come. ²³ Show the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know that ye are gods: yes, do good, or do evil, that we may be dismayed, and behold [it] together. ²⁴ Behold, ye are of nothing, and your work of nothing: an abomination [is he that] chooses you.

Isaiah Chapter 41

²⁵ I have raised up [one] from the north, and he shall come: from the rising of the sun shall he call upon my name: and he shall come upon princes as [upon] mortar, and as the potter treads clay. ²⁶ Who has declared from the beginning, that we may know? and before time, that we may say, [He is] righteous? yes, there is none that shows, yes, there is none that declares, yes, there is none that hears your words. ²⁷ The first [shall say] to Zion, Behold, behold them: and I will give to Jerusalem one that brings good tidings. ²⁸ For I beheld, and [there was] no man; even among them, and [there was] no counselor, that, when I asked of them, could answer a word. ²⁹ Behold, they are all vanity; their works are nothing: their molten images are wind and confusion.

Isaiah Chapter 42

The Work of Christ, the Servant

(86) ¹ Behold my servant, whom I uphold; my elect, [in whom] my soul delights; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles. ² He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard in the street. ³ A bruised reed shall he not break, and the smoking flax shall he not quench: he shall bring forth judgment to truth. ⁴ He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till he have set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for his law.

God's Promise to Christ

⁵ Thus says God the LORD, he that created the heavens, and stretched them out; he that spread forth the earth, and that which comes out of it; he that gives breath to the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein: ⁶ I the LORD have called you in righteousness, and will hold your hand, and will keep you, and give you for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles; ⁷ To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, [and] them that sit in darkness out of the prison house. ⁸ I [am] the LORD: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. ⁹ Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them.

A Song about the Lord

¹⁰ Sing to the LORD a new song, [and] his praise from the end of the earth, ye that go down to the sea, and all that is therein; the isles, and the inhabitants thereof. ¹¹ Let the wilderness and the cities thereof lift up [their voice], the villages [that] Kedar does inhabit: let the inhabitants of the rock sing, let them shout from the top of the mountains. ¹² Let them give glory to the LORD, and declare his praise in the islands. ¹³ The LORD shall go forth as a mighty man, he shall stir up jealousy like a man of war: he shall cry, yes, roar; he shall prevail against his enemies. ¹⁴ I have long time held my peace; I have been still, [and] refrained myself: [now] will I cry like a travailing woman; I will destroy and devour at once. ¹⁵ I will make waste mountains and hills, and dry up all their herbs; and I will make the rivers islands, and I will dry up the pools. ¹⁶ And I will bring the blind by a way [that] they knew not; I will lead them in paths [that] they have not known: I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do to them, and not forsake them. ¹⁷ They shall be turned back, they shall be greatly ashamed, that trust in graven images, that say to the molten images, Ye are our gods.

The Lord Will Bring His People Home

(87) ¹⁸ Hear, ye deaf; and look, ye blind, that ye may see. ¹⁹ Who is blind, but my servant? or deaf, as my messenger [that] I sent? who is blind as [he that is] perfect, and blind as the LORD'S servant? ²⁰ Seeing many things, but you observe not; opening the ears, but he hears not. ²¹ The LORD is well pleased for his righteousness' sake; he will magnify the law, and make [it] honorable. ²² But this is a people robbed and spoiled; [they are] all of them snared in holes, and they are hid in prison houses: they are for a prey, and none delivers; for a spoil, and none says, Restore. ²³ Who among you will give ear to this? [who] will hearken and hear for the time to come? ²⁴ Who gave Jacob for a spoil, and Israel to the robbers? did not the LORD, he against whom we have sinned? for they would not walk in his ways, neither were they obedient to his law. ²⁵ Therefore he has poured upon him the fury of his anger, and the strength of battle: and it has set him on fire round about, yet he knew not; and it burned him, yet he laid [it] not to heart.

The Lord Comforts with His Promises

(88) ¹ But now thus says the LORD that created you, O Jacob, and he that formed you, O Israel, **Fear not:** for I have redeemed you, I have called [you] by your name; you are mine. ² When you pass through the waters, I [will be] with you; and through the rivers, they shall not overflow you: when you walk through the fire, you shall not be burned; neither shall the flame kindle upon you. ³ For I [am] the LORD your God, the Holy One of Israel, your Savior: I gave Egypt [for] your ransom, Ethiopia and Seba for you. ⁴ Since you was precious in my sight, you have been honorable, and I have loved you: therefore will I give men for you, and people for your life. ⁵ Fear not: for I [am] with you: I will bring your seed from the east, and gather you from the west; ⁶ I will say to the north, Give up; and to the south, Keep not back: bring my sons from far, and my daughters from the ends of the earth; ⁷ [Even] everyone that is called by my name: for I have created him for my glory, I have formed him; yes, I have made him.

(89) ⁸ Bring forth the blind people that have eyes, and the deaf that have ears. ⁹ Let all the nations be gathered together, and let the people be assembled: who among them can declare this, and show us former things? let them bring forth their witnesses, that they may be justified: or let them hear, and say, [It is] truth. ¹⁰ Ye are my witnesses, says the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I [am] he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. ¹¹ I, [even] I, [am] the LORD; and beside me there is no savior. ¹² I have declared, and have saved, and I have showed, when [there was] no strange [god] among you: therefore ye are my witnesses, says the LORD, that I [am] God. ¹³ Yes, before the day was I [am] he; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand: I will work, and who shall let it?

The Destruction of Babylon

(90) ¹⁴ Thus says the LORD, your redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; For your sake I have sent to Babylon, and have brought down all their nobles, and the Chaldeans, whose cry is in the ships. ¹⁵ I [am] the LORD, your Holy One, the creator of Israel, your King. ¹⁶ Thus says the LORD, which makes a way in the sea, and a path in the mighty waters; ¹⁷ Which brings forth the chariot and horse, the army and the power; they shall lie down together, they shall not rise: they are extinct, they are quenched as tow.

The Lord Will Forgive

¹⁸ Remember ye not the former things, neither consider the things of old. ¹⁹ Behold, I will do a new thing; now it shall spring forth; shall ye not know it? I will even make a way in the wilderness, [and] rivers in the desert. ²⁰ The beast of the field shall honor me, the dragons and the owls: because I give waters in the wilderness, [and] rivers in the desert, to give drink to my people, my chosen. ²¹ This people I have formed for myself; they shall show forth my praise.

The Lord Reproves His People

²² But you have not called upon me, O Jacob; but you have been weary of me, O Israel. ²³ You have not brought me the small cattle of your burnt offerings; neither have you honored me with your sacrifices. I have not caused you to serve with an offering, nor wearied you with incense. ²⁴ You have bought me no sweet cane with money, neither have you filled me with the fat of your sacrifices: but you have made me to serve with your sins, you have wearied me with your iniquities. ²⁵ I, [even] I, [am] he that blots out your transgressions for my own sake, and will not remember your sins. ²⁶ Put me in remembrance: let us plead together: declare you, that you may be justified. ²⁷ Your first father has sinned, and your teachers have transgressed against me. ²⁸ Therefore I have profaned the princes of the sanctuary, and have given Jacob to the curse, and Israel to reproaches.

The Lord Will Help His People

(91) ¹ Yet now hear, O Jacob my servant; and Israel, whom I have chosen: ² Thus says the LORD that made you, and formed you from the womb, [which] will help you; Fear not, O Jacob, my servant; and you, Jesurun, whom I have chosen. ³ For I will pour water upon him that is thirsty, and floods upon the dry ground: I will pour my spirit upon your seed, and my blessing upon your offspring: ⁴ And they shall spring up [as] among the grass, as willows by the water courses. ⁵ One shall say, I [am] the LORD'S; and another shall call [himself] by the name of Jacob; and another shall subscribe [with] his hand to the LORD, and surname [himself] by the name of Israel. ⁶ Thus says the LORD the King of Israel, and his redeemer the LORD of hosts; I [am] the first, and I [am] the last; and beside me there is no God. ⁷ And who, as I, shall call, and shall declare it, and set it in order for me, since I appointed the ancient people? and the things that are coming, and shall come, let them show to them. ⁸ Fear ye not, neither be afraid: have not I told you from that time, and have declared [it]? ye are even my witnesses. Is there a God beside me? yes, there is no God; I know not [any].

(92) ⁹ They that make a graven image are all of them vanity; and their delectable things shall not profit; and they are their own witnesses; they see not, nor know; that they may be ashamed. ¹⁰ Who has formed a god, or molten a graven image [that] is profitable for nothing? ¹¹ Behold, all his fellows shall be ashamed: and the workmen, they are of men: let them all be gathered together, let them stand up; [yet] they shall fear, [and] they shall be ashamed together. ¹² The smith with the tongs both works in the coals, and fashions it with hammers, and works it with the strength of his arms: yes, he is hungry, and his strength fails: he drinks no water, and is faint. ¹³ The carpenter stretches out [his] rule; he marks it out with a line; he fits it with planes, and he marks it out with the compass, and makes it after the figure of a man, according to the beauty of a man; that it may remain in the house. ¹⁴ He hews him down cedars, and takes the cypress and the oak, which he strengthens for himself among the trees of the forest: he plants an ash, and the rain does nourish [it]. ¹⁵ Then shall it be for a man to burn: for he will take thereof, and warm himself; yes, he kindles [it], and bakes bread; yes, he makes a god, and worships [it]; he makes it a graven image, and falls down thereto. ¹⁶ He burns part thereof in the fire; with part thereof he eats flesh; he roasts roast, and is satisfied: yes, he warms [himself], and says, Aha, I am warm, I have seen the fire: ¹⁷ And the residue thereof he makes a god, [even] his graven image: he falls down to it, and worships [it], and prays to it, and says, Deliver me; for you are my god. ¹⁸ They have not known nor understood: for he has shut their eyes, that they cannot see; [and] their hearts, that they cannot understand. ¹⁹ And none considers in his heart, neither [is there] knowledge nor understanding to say, I have burned part of it in the fire; yes, also I have baked bread upon the coals thereof; I have roasted flesh, and eaten [it]: and shall I make the residue thereof an abomination? shall I fall down to the stock of a tree? ²⁰ He feeds on ashes: a deceived heart has turned him aside, that he cannot deliver his soul, nor say, [Is there] not a lie in my right hand?

A Prophecy about Cyrus

(93) ²¹ Remember these, O Jacob and Israel; for you are my servant: I have formed you; you are my servant: O Israel, you shall not be forgotten of me. ²² I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, your transgressions, and, as a cloud, your sins: return to me; for I have redeemed you. ²³ Sing, O ye heavens; for the LORD has done [it]: shout, ye lower parts of the earth: break forth into singing, ye mountains, O forest, and every tree therein: for the LORD has redeemed Jacob, and glorified himself in Israel. ²⁴ Thus says the LORD, your redeemer, and he that formed you from the womb, I [am] the LORD that makes all [things]; that stretches forth the heavens alone; that spreads abroad the earth by myself; ²⁵ That frustrates the tokens of the liars, and makes diviners mad; that turns wise [men] backward, and makes their knowledge foolish; ²⁶ That confirms the word of his servant, and performs the counsel of his messengers; that says to Jerusalem, You shall be inhabited; and to the cities of Judah, Ye shall be built, and I will raise up the decayed places thereof: ²⁷ That says to the deep, Be dry, and I will dry up your rivers:

(2nd) 705 B.C. Isaiah's Prophecy specifying Cyrus "the sun" a type of messiah (150 yrs. later)

44:28 - 45:4 ²⁸ That says of Cyrus, [He is] my shepherd, and shall perform all my pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, You shall be built; and to the temple, Your foundation shall be laid.

God Calls Cyrus

(94) ¹ Thus says the LORD to his anointed, to ^a Cyrus, whose right hand I have held, to subdue nations before him; and I will loose the loins of kings, to open before him the two leaved gates; and the gates shall not be shut; ² I will go before you, and make the crooked places straight: I will break in pieces the gates of brass, and cut in sunder the bars of iron: ³ And I will give you the treasures of darkness, and hidden riches of secret places, that you may know that I, the LORD, which call [you] by your name, [am] the God of Israel. ⁴ For Jacob my servant's sake, and Israel my elect, I have even called you by your name: I have surnamed you, though you have not known me.

^a The next prophecy in Jeremiah's 70 years is Jeremiah 25:8-14

The Lord Alone is God

⁵ I [am] the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded you, though you have not known me: ⁶ That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I [am] the LORD, and there is none else. ⁷ I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these [things]. ⁸ Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness: let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation, and let righteousness spring up together; I the LORD have created it. ⁹ Woe to him that strives with his Maker! [Let] the potsherd [strive] with the potsherds of the earth. Shall the clay say to him that fashions it, What make you? or your work, He has no hands? ¹⁰ Woe to him that says to [his] father, What beget you? or to the woman, What have you brought forth?

(95) ¹¹ Thus says the LORD, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, Ask me of things to come concerning my sons, and concerning the work of my hands command ye me. ¹² I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, [even] my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host I have commanded. ¹³ I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, says the LORD of hosts. ¹⁴ Thus says the LORD, The labor of Egypt, and merchandise of Ethiopia and of the Sabeans, men of stature, shall come over to you, and they shall be your: they shall come after you; in chains they shall come over, and they shall fall down to you, they shall make supplication to you, [saying], Surely God is in you; and there is none else, there is no God. ¹⁵ Verily you are a God that hide thyself, O God of Israel, the Savior. ¹⁶ They shall be ashamed, and also confounded, all of them: they shall go to confusion together [that are] makers of idols. ¹⁷ [But] Israel shall be saved in the LORD with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end. ¹⁸ For thus says the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he has established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I [am] the LORD; and there is none else. ¹⁹ I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth: I said not to the seed of Jacob, Seek ye me in vain: I the LORD speak righteousness, I declare things that are right.

God Shows the Worthlessness of Idols

(96) ²⁰ Assemble yourselves and come; draw near together, ye [that are] escaped of the nations: they have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray to a god [that] cannot save. ²¹ Tell ye, and bring them near; yes, let them take counsel together: who has declared this from ancient time? [who] has told it from that time? [have] not I the LORD? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Savior; there is none beside me. ²² Look to me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I [am] God, and there is none else. ²³ I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth [in] righteousness, and shall not return, That to me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. ²⁴ Surely, shall [one] say, in the LORD I have righteousness and strength: [even] to him shall [men] come; and all that are incensed against him shall be ashamed. ²⁵ In the LORD shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory.

Isaiah Chapter 46

Babylon's Idols Cannot Save Themselves

(97) ¹ Bel bows down, Nebo stoops, their idols were upon the beasts, and upon the cattle: your carriages [were] heavy loaden; [they are] a burden to the weary [beast]. ² They stoop, they bow down together; they could not deliver the burden, but themselves are gone into captivity. ³ Hearken to me, O house of Jacob, and all the remnant of the house of Israel, which are borne [by me] from the belly, which are carried from the womb: ⁴ And [even] to [your] old age I [am] he; and [even] to hoar hairs will I carry [you]: I have made, and I will bear; even I will carry, and will deliver [you]. ⁵ To whom will ye liken me, and make [me] equal, and compare me, that we may be like? ⁶ They lavish gold out of the bag, and weigh silver in the balance, [and] hire a goldsmith; and he makes it a god: they fall down, yes, they worship. ⁷ They bear him upon the shoulder, they carry him, and set him in his place, and he stands; from his place shall he not remove: yes, [one] shall cry to him, yet can he not answer, nor save him out of his trouble. ⁸ Remember this, and show yourselves men: bring [it] again to mind, O ye transgressors. ⁹ Remember the former things of old: for I [am] God, and there is none else; [I am] God, and there is none like me, ¹⁰ Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times [the things] that are not [yet] done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: ¹¹ Calling a ravenous bird from the east, the man that executes my counsel from a far country: yes, I have spoken [it], I will also bring it to pass; I have purposed [it], I will also do it. ¹² Hearken to me, ye stouthearted, that are far from righteousness: ¹³ I bring near my righteousness; it shall not be far off, and my salvation shall not tarry: and I will place salvation in Zion for Israel my glory.

Isaiah Chapter 47

God's Judgment on Babylon

(98) ¹ Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon, sit on the ground: there is no throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for you shall no more be called tender and delicate. ² Take the millstones, and grind meal: uncover your locks, make bare the leg, uncover the thigh, pass over the rivers. ³ Your nakedness shall be uncovered, yes, your shame shall be seen: I will take vengeance, and I will not meet [you as] a man. ⁴ [As for] our redeemer, the LORD of hosts is his name, the Holy One of Israel. ⁵ Sit you silent, and get you into darkness, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for you shall no more be called, The lady of kingdoms. ⁶ I was angry with my people, I have polluted my inheritance, and given them into your hand: you did show them no mercy; upon the ancient have you very heavily laid your yoke.

(99) ⁷ And you said, I shall be a lady forever: [so] that you did not lay these [things] to your heart, neither did remember the latter end of it. ⁸ Therefore hear now this, [you that are] given to pleasures, that dwell carelessly, that say in your heart, I [am], and none else beside me; I shall not sit [as] a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children: ⁹ But these two [things] shall come to you in a moment in one day, the loss of children, and widowhood: they shall come upon you in their perfection for the multitude of your sorceries, [and] for the great abundance of your enchantments. ¹⁰ For you have trusted in your wickedness: you have said, None sees me. Your wisdom and your knowledge, it has perverted you; and you have said in your heart, I [am], and none else beside me. ¹¹ Therefore shall evil come upon you; you shall not know from whence it rises: and mischief shall fall upon you; you shall not be able to put it off: and desolation shall come upon you suddenly, [which] you shall not know. ¹² Stand now with your enchantments, and with the multitude of your sorceries, wherein you have labored from your youth; if so be you shall be able to profit, if so be you may prevail. ¹³ You are wearied in the multitude of your counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save you from [these things] that shall come upon you. ¹⁴ Behold, they shall be as stubble; the fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the power of the flame: [there shall] not [be] a coal to warm at, [nor] fire to sit before it. ¹⁵ Thus they will be to you with whom you have labored, [even] your merchants, from your youth: they shall wander everyone to his quarter; none shall save you.

The Lord Will Refine and Rescue

(100) ¹ Hear ye this, O house of Jacob, which are called by the name of Israel, and are come forth out of the waters of Judah, which swear by the name of the LORD, and make mention of the God of Israel, [but] not in truth, nor in righteousness. ² For they call themselves of the holy city, and stay themselves upon the God of Israel; The LORD of hosts is his name. ³ I have declared the former things from the beginning; and they went forth out of my mouth, and I showed them; I did them suddenly, and they came to pass. ⁴ Because I knew that you are obstinate, and your neck is an iron sinew, and your brow brass; ⁵ I have even from the beginning declared [it] to you; before it came to pass I showed [it] you: lest you should say, My idol has done them, and my graven image, and my molten image, has commanded them. ⁶ You have heard, see all this; and will not ye declare [it]? I have showed you new things from this time, even hidden things, and you did not know them. ⁷ They are created now, and not from the beginning; even before the day when you heard them not; lest you should say, Behold, I knew them. ⁸ Yes, you heard not; yes, you knew not; yes, from that time [that] your ear was not opened: for I knew that you would deal very treacherously, and was called a transgressor from the womb.

God Will Save His People for His Name's Sake

(101) ⁹ For my name's sake will I defer my anger, and for my praise will I refrain for you, that I cut you not off. ¹⁰ Behold, I have refined you, but not with silver; I have chosen you in the furnace of affliction. ¹¹ For my own sake, [even] for my own sake, will I do [it]: for how should [my name] be polluted? and I will not give my glory to another. ¹² Hearken to me, O Jacob and Israel, my called; I [am] he; I [am] the first, I also [am] the last. ¹³ My hand also has laid the foundation of the earth, and my right hand has spanned the heavens: [when] I call to them, they stand up together. ¹⁴ All ye, assemble yourselves, and hear; which among them has declared these [things]? The LORD has loved him: he will do his pleasure on Babylon, and his arm [shall be on] the Chaldeans. ¹⁵ I, [even] I, have spoken; yes, I have called him: I have brought him, and he shall make his way prosperous.

God Calls His People to Listen

¹⁶ Come ye near to me, hear ye this; I have not spoken in secret from the beginning; from the time that it was, there [am] I: and now the Lord GOD, and his Spirit, has sent me. ¹⁷ Thus says the LORD, your Redeemer, the Holy One of Israel; I [am] the LORD your God which teaches you to profit, which leads you by the way [that] you should go. ¹⁸ O that you had listened to my commandments! then had your peace been as a river, and your righteousness as the waves of the sea: ¹⁹ Your seed also had been as the sand, and the offspring of your bowels like the gravel thereof; his name should not have been cut off nor destroyed from before me. ²⁰ Go ye forth of Babylon, flee ye from the Chaldeans, with a voice of singing declare ye, tell this, utter it [even] to the end of the earth; say ye, The LORD has redeemed his servant Jacob. ²¹ And they thirsted not [when] he led them through the deserts: he caused the waters to flow out of the rock for them: he clave the rock also, and the waters gushed out. ²² [There is] no peace, says the LORD, to the wicked.

The Servant, the Light to the Gentiles (2 Cor 6:2 – Is 49:8)

(102) ¹ Listen, O isles, to me; and hearken, ye people, from far; The LORD has called me from the womb; from the bowels of my mother has he made mention of my name. ² And he has made my mouth like a sharp sword; in the shadow of his hand has he hid me, and made me a polished shaft; in his quiver has he hid me; ³ And said to me, You are my servant, O Israel, in whom I will be glorified. ⁴ Then I said, I have labored in vain, I have spent my strength for nothing, and in vain: [yet] surely my judgment is with the LORD, and my work with my God. ⁵ And now, says the LORD that formed me from the womb [to be] his servant, to bring Jacob again to him, Though Israel be not gathered, yet shall I be glorious in the eyes of the LORD, and my God shall be my strength. ⁶ And he said, It is a light thing that you should be my servant to raise up the tribes of Jacob, and to restore the preserved of Israel: I will also give you for a light to the Gentiles, that you may be my salvation to the end of the earth. ⁷ Thus says the LORD, the Redeemer of Israel, [and] his Holy One, to him whom man despises, to him whom the nation abhors, to a servant of rulers, Kings shall see and arise, princes also shall worship, because of the LORD that is faithful, [and] the Holy One of Israel, and he shall choose you. ⁸ Thus says the LORD, In an acceptable time I have heard you, and in a day of salvation I have helped you: and I will preserve you, and give you for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth, to cause to inherit the desolate heritages; ⁹ That you may say to the prisoners, Go forth; to them that are in darkness, Show yourselves. They shall feed in the ways, and their pastures [shall be] in all high places. ¹⁰ They shall not hunger nor thirst; neither shall the heat nor sun smite them: for he that has mercy on them shall lead them, even by the springs of water shall he guide them. ¹¹ And I will make all my mountains a way, and my highways shall be exalted. ¹² Behold, these shall come from far: and, look, these from the north and from the west; and these from the land of Sinim.

The Lord Has Not Forgotten His People

(103) ¹³ Sing, O heavens; and be joyful, O earth; and break forth into singing, O mountains: for the LORD has comforted his people, and will have mercy upon his afflicted. ¹⁴ But Zion said, The LORD has forsaken me, and my Lord has forgotten me. ¹⁵ Can a woman forget her sucking child, that she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? yes, they may forget, yet will I not forget you. ¹⁶ Behold, I have graven you upon the palms of [my] hands; your walls are continually before me. ¹⁷ Your children shall make haste; your destroyers and they that made you waste shall go forth of you.

The Restoration of the Church

¹⁸ Lift up your eyes round about, and behold: all these gather themselves together, [and] come to you. [As] I live, says the LORD, you shall surely clothe you with them all, as with an ornament, and bind them [on you], as a bride [does]. ¹⁹ For your waste and your desolate places, and the land of your destruction, shall even now be too narrow by reason of the inhabitants, and they that swallowed you up shall be far away. ²⁰ The children which you shall have, after you have lost the other, shall say again in your ears, The place is too straight for me: give place to me that I may dwell. ²¹ Then shall you say in your heart, Who has begotten me these, seeing I have lost my children, and am desolate, a captive, and removing to and fro? and who has brought up these? Behold, I was left alone; these, where had they [been]? ²² Thus says the Lord GOD, Behold, I will lift up my hand to the Gentiles, and set up my standard to the people: and they shall bring your sons in [their] arms, and your daughters shall be carried upon [their] shoulders. ²³ And kings shall be your nursing fathers, and their queens your nursing mothers: they shall bow down to you with [their] face toward the earth, and lick up the dust of your feet; and you shall know that I [am] the LORD: for they shall not be ashamed that wait for me. ²⁴ Shall the prey be taken from the mighty, or the lawful captive delivered? ²⁵ But thus says the LORD, Even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for I will contend with him that contends with you, and I will save your children. ²⁶ And I will feed them that oppress you with their own flesh; and they shall be drunken with their own blood, as with sweet wine: and all flesh shall know that I the LORD [am] your Savior and your Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob.

Isaiah Chapter 50

Punishment Because of Sin

(104) ¹ Thus says the LORD, Where is the bill of your mother's divorcement, whom have I put away? or which of my creditors [is it] to whom have I sold you? Behold, for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves, and for your transgressions is your mother put away. ² Wherefore, when I came, [was there] no man? when I called, [was there] none to answer? Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver? behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinks, because there is no water, and dies for thirst. ³ I clothe the heavens with blackness, and I make sackcloth their covering.

The Lord's Servant Trust in the Lord's Help

⁴ The Lord GOD has given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to speak a word in season to [him that is] weary: he wakens morning by morning, he wakens my ear to hear as the learned. ⁵ The Lord GOD has opened my ear, and I was not rebellious, neither turned away back. ⁶ I gave my back to the smiters, and my cheeks to them that plucked off the hair: I hid not my face from shame and spitting. ⁷ For the Lord GOD will help me; therefore shall I not be confounded: therefore I have set my face like a flint, and I know that I shall not be ashamed. ⁸ [He is] near that justifies me; who will contend with me? let us stand together: who is my adversary? let him come near to me. ⁹ Behold, the Lord GOD will help me; who is he [that] shall condemn me? look, they all shall grow old as a garment; the moth shall eat them up. ¹⁰ Who is among you that fears the LORD, that obeys the voice of his servant, that walks [in] darkness, and has no light? let him trust in the name of the LORD, and stay upon his God. ¹¹ Behold, all ye that kindle a fire, that compass [yourselves] about with sparks: walk in the light of your fire, and in the sparks [that] ye have kindled. This shall ye have of my hand; ye shall lie down in sorrow.

Isaiah Chapter 51

The Lord Will Save His People

(105) ¹ Hearken to me, ye that follow after righteousness, ye that seek the LORD: look to the rock [whence] ye are hewn, and to the hole of the pit [whence] ye are digged. ² Look to Abraham your father, and to Sarah [that] bare you: for I called him alone, and blessed him, and increased him. ³ For the LORD shall comfort Zion: he will comfort all her waste places; and he will make her wilderness like Eden, and her desert like the garden of the LORD; joy and gladness shall be found therein, thanksgiving, and the voice of melody.

Listen to the Word of the Lord

⁴ Hearken to me, my people; and give ear to me, O my nation: for a law shall proceed from me, and I will make my judgment to rest for a light of the people. ⁵ My righteousness is near; my salvation is gone forth, and my arms shall judge the people; the isles shall wait upon me, and on my arm they will trust. ⁶ Lift up your eyes to the heavens, and look upon the earth beneath: for the heavens shall vanish away like smoke, and the earth shall grow old like a garment, and they that dwell therein shall die in like manner: but my salvation shall be forever, and my righteousness shall not be abolished. ⁷ Hearken to me, ye that know righteousness, the people in whose heart is my law; fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye afraid of their revilings. ⁸ For the moth shall eat them up like a garment, and the worm shall eat them like wool: but my righteousness shall be forever, and my salvation from generation to generation.

(106) ⁹ Awake, awake, put on strength, O arm of the LORD; awake, as in the ancient days, in the generations of old. [Are] you not it that has cut Rahab, [and] wounded the dragon? ¹⁰ [Are] you not it which has dried the sea, the waters of the great deep; that has made the depths of the sea a way for the ransomed to pass over? ¹¹ Therefore the redeemed of the LORD shall return, and come with singing to Zion; and everlasting joy [shall be] upon their head: they shall obtain gladness and joy; [and] sorrow and mourning shall flee away. ¹² I, [even] I, [am] he that comforts you: who are you, that you should be afraid of a man [that] shall die, and of the son of man [which] shall be made [as] grass; ¹³ And forget the LORD your maker, that has stretched forth the heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth; and has feared continually every day because of the fury of the oppressor, as if he were ready to destroy? and where is the fury of the oppressor? ¹⁴ The captive exile hastens that he may be loosed, and that he should not die in the pit, nor that his bread should fail. ¹⁵ But I [am] the LORD your God, that

Isaiah Chapter 51

divided the sea, whose waves roared: The LORD of hosts is his name. ¹⁶ And I have put my words in your mouth, and I have covered you in the shadow of my hand, that I may plant the heavens, and lay the foundations of the earth, and say to Zion, You are my people.

Awake, Jerusalem!

(107) ¹⁷ Awake, awake, stand up, O Jerusalem, which has drunk at the hand of the LORD the cup of his fury; you have drunken the dregs of the cup of trembling, [and] wrung them out. ¹⁸ [There is] none to guide her among all the sons [whom] she has brought forth; neither [is there any] that takes her by the hand of all the sons [that] she has brought up. ¹⁹ These two [things] are come to you; who shall be sorry for you? desolation, and destruction, and the famine, and the sword: by whom shall I comfort you?

²⁰ Your sons have fainted, they lie at the head of all the streets, as a wild bull in a net: they are full of the fury of the LORD, the rebuke of your God. ²¹ Therefore hear now this, you afflicted, and drunken, but not with wine: ²² Thus says your Lord the LORD, and your God [that] pleads the cause of his people, **Behold, I have taken out of your hand the cup of trembling, [even] the dregs of the cup of my fury; you shall no more drink it again:** ²³ **But I will put it into the hand of them that afflict you; which have said to your soul, Bow down, that we may go over: and you have laid your body as the ground, and as the street, to them that went over.**

Isaiah Chapter 52

The Lord Will Comfort His People

(108) ¹ Awake, awake; put on your strength, O Zion; put on your beautiful garments, O Jerusalem, the holy city: for henceforth there shall no more come into you the uncircumcised and the unclean.

² Shake thyself from the dust; arise, [and] sit down, O Jerusalem: loose thyself from the bands of your neck, O captive daughter of Zion. ³ **For thus says the LORD, Ye have sold yourselves for nothing; and ye shall be redeemed without money.** ⁴ **For thus says the Lord GOD, My people went down aforetime into Egypt to sojourn there; and the Assyrian oppressed them without cause.** ⁵ **Now therefore, what have I here, says the LORD, that my people is taken away for nothing? they that rule over them make them to howl, says the LORD; and my name continually every day is blasphemed.** ⁶ **Therefore my people shall know my name: therefore [they shall know] in that day that I [am] he that does speak: behold, [it is] I.**

⁷ How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that brings good tidings, that publishes peace; that brings good tidings of good, that publishes salvation; that says to Zion, Your God reigns!

⁸ Your watchmen shall lift up the voice; with the voice together they will sing: for they shall see eye to eye, when the LORD shall bring again Zion. ⁹ Break forth into joy, sing together, ye waste places of Jerusalem: for the LORD has comforted his people, he has redeemed Jerusalem. ¹⁰ The LORD has made bare his holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God. ¹¹ Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from there, touch no unclean [thing]; go ye out of the midst of her; be ye clean, that bear the vessels of the LORD. ¹² For ye shall not go out with haste, nor go by flight: for the LORD will go before you; and the God of Israel [will be] your rear guard.

EXALTED	52:13-15 Exalted	
SMITTEN	53:1-3 Life (despised)	The despised Man
	53:4-6 Suffering (wounded)	The vicarious Sufferer
	53:7-9 Death (cut off)	The atoning Lamb
REWARDED	53:10-12 (divide a portion)	

Christ's Kingdom Shall Be Exalted

(109) ¹³ **Behold, my servant shall deal prudently, he shall be exalted and extolled, and be very high.**

¹⁴ **As many were astonished at you; his visage was so marred more than any man, and his form more than the sons of men:** ¹⁵ **So shall he sprinkle many nations; the kings shall shut their mouths at him: for [that] which had not been told them they will see; and [that] which they had not heard they will consider.**

Note: Isaiah 52:13-53:12. Similar to Psalm 22, written by King David three centuries earlier.

Isaiah Chapter 53

The Suffering Servant

¹ Who has believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? ² For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he has no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. ³ He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were [our] faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

Christ's Passion Foretold

(110) ⁴ Surely he has borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. ⁵ But he was wounded for our transgressions, [he was] bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. ⁶ All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned everyone to his own way; and the LORD has laid on him the iniquity of us all. ⁷ He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he opens not his mouth. ⁸ He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. ⁹ And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither [was any] deceit in his mouth.

The Sacrifice of the Righteous Servant

(111) ¹⁰ Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he has put [him] to grief: when you shall make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see [his] seed, he shall prolong [his] days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. ¹¹ He shall see of the travail of his soul, [and] shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. ¹² Therefore will I divide him [a portion] with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he has poured out his soul to death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.

Isaiah Chapter 54

The Lord's Compassion for the Children

(112) ¹ Sing, O barren, you [that] did not bear; break forth into singing, and cry aloud, you [that] did not travail with child: for more are the children of the desolate than the children of the married wife, says the LORD. ² Enlarge the place of your tent, and let them stretch forth the curtains of your habitations: spare not, lengthen your cords, and strengthen your stakes; ³ For you shall break forth on the right hand and on the left; and your seed shall inherit the Gentiles, and make the desolate cities to be inhabited. ⁴ Fear not; for you shall not be ashamed: neither be you confounded; for you shall not be put to shame: for you shall forget the shame of your youth, and shall not remember the reproach of your widowhood anymore. ⁵ For your Maker is your husband; the LORD of hosts is his name; and your Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called.

Certain Deliverance from Affliction

⁶ For the LORD has called you as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when you was refused, says your God. ⁷ For a small moment I have forsaken you; but with great mercies will I gather you. ⁸ In a little wrath I hid my face from you for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on you, says the LORD your Redeemer. ⁹ For this [is as] the waters of Noah to me: for [as] I have sworn that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth; so I have sworn that I would not be angry with you, nor rebuke you. ¹⁰ For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from you, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, says the LORD that has mercy on you.

Isaiah Chapter 54

God Will Restore

(113) ¹¹ O you afflicted, tossed with tempest, [and] not comforted, behold, I will lay your stones with fair colors, and lay your foundations with sapphires. ¹² And I will make your windows of agates, and your gates of carbuncles, and all your borders of pleasant stones. ¹³ And all your children [shall be] taught of the LORD; and great [shall be] the peace of your children. ¹⁴ In righteousness shall you be established: you shall be far from oppression; for you shall not fear: and from terror; for it shall not come near you. ¹⁵ Behold, they shall surely gather together, [but] not by me: whosoever shall gather together against you shall fall for your sake. ¹⁶ Behold, I have created the smith that blows the coals in the fire, and that brings forth an instrument for his work; and I have created the waster to destroy. ¹⁷ No weapon that is formed against you shall prosper; and every tongue [that] shall rise against you in judgment you shall condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, says the LORD.

Isaiah Chapter 55

Come to the Waters and Drink

(114) ¹ Ho, everyone that thirsts, come ye to the waters, and he that has no money; come ye, buy, and eat; yes, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price. ² Wherefore do ye spend money for [that which is] not bread? and your labor for [that which] satisfies not? hearken diligently to me, and eat ye [that which is] good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. ³ Incline your ear, and come to me: hear, and your soul shall live; and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, [even] the sure mercies of David. ⁴ Behold, I have given him [for] a witness to the people, a leader and commander to the people. ⁵ Behold, you shall call a nation [that] you know not, and nations [that] knew not you shall run to you because of the LORD your God, and for the Holy One of Israel; for he has glorified you.

Seek the Lord

(115) ⁶ Seek ye the LORD while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near: ⁷ Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return to the LORD, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. ⁸ For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, says the LORD. ⁹ For [as] the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts. ¹⁰ For as the rain comes down, and the snow from heaven, and returns not thither, but waters the earth, and makes it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: ¹¹ So shall my word be that goes forth out of my mouth: it shall not return to me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper [in the thing] whereto I sent it. ¹² For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, and all the trees of the field shall clap [their] hands. ¹³ Instead of the thorn shall come up the fir tree, and instead of the brier shall come up the myrtle tree: and it shall be to the LORD for a name, for an everlasting sign [that] shall not be cut off.

Isaiah Chapter 56

Salvation for All People

(116) ¹ Thus says the LORD, Keep ye judgment, and do justice: for my salvation is near to come, and my righteousness to be revealed. ² Blessed is the man [that] does this, and the son of man [that] lays hold on it; that keeps the sabbath from polluting it, and keeps his hand from doing any evil. ³ Neither let the son of the stranger, that has joined himself to the LORD, speak, saying, The LORD has utterly separated me from his people: neither let the eunuch say, Behold, I [am] a dry tree. ⁴ For thus says the LORD to the eunuchs that keep my sabbaths, and choose [the things] that please me, and take hold of my covenant; ⁵ Even to them will I give in my house and within my walls a place and a name better than of sons and of daughters: I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off. ⁶ Also the sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the LORD, to serve him, and to love the name of the LORD, to be his servants, everyone that keeps the sabbath from polluting it, and takes hold of my covenant; ⁷ Even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer: their burnt offerings and their sacrifices [shall be] accepted upon my altar; for my house shall be called a house of prayer for all people. ⁸ The Lord GOD which gathers the outcasts of Israel says, Yet will I gather [others] to him, beside those that are gathered to him.

Isaiah Chapter 56

God Denounces Blind Watchmen

⁹ All ye beasts of the field, come to devour, [yes], all ye beasts in the forest. ¹⁰ His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. ¹¹ Yes, [they are] greedy dogs [which] can never have enough, and they are shepherds [that] cannot understand: they all look to their own way, everyone for his gain, from his quarter. ¹² Come ye, [say they], I will fetch wine, and we will fill ourselves with strong drink; and tomorrow shall be as this day, [and] much more abundant.

Isaiah Chapter 57

The Blessed Death of the Righteous

(117) ¹ The righteous perishes, and no man lays [it] to heart: and merciful men are taken away, none considering that the righteous is taken away from the evil [to come]. ² He shall enter into peace: they shall rest in their beds, [each one] walking [in] his uprightness.

God Reproves the People's Idolatry

³ But draw near hither, ye sons of the sorceress, the seed of the adulterer and the whore. ⁴ Against whom do ye sport yourselves? against whom make ye a wide mouth, [and] draw out the tongue? are ye not children of transgression, a seed of falsehood, ⁵ Enflaming yourselves with idols under every green tree, slaying the children in the valleys under the clefts of the rocks? ⁶ Among the smooth [stones] of the stream is your portion; they, they are your lot: even to them have you poured a drink offering, you have offered a grain offering. Should I receive comfort in these? ⁷ Upon a lofty and high mountain have you set your bed: even thither went you up to offer sacrifice. ⁸ Behind the doors also and the posts have you set up your remembrance: for you have discovered [thyself to another] than me, and are gone up; you have enlarged your bed, and made you [a covenant] with them; you loved their bed where you saw [it]. ⁹ And you went to the king with ointment, and did increase your perfumes, and did send your messengers far off, and did debase [thyself even] to Shoel. ¹⁰ You are wearied in the greatness of your way; [yet] said you not, There is no hope: you have found the life of your hand; therefore you was not grieved. ¹¹ And of whom have you been afraid or feared, that you have lied, and has not remembered me, nor laid [it] to your heart? have not I held my peace even of old, and you fear me not? ¹² I will declare your righteousness, and your works; for they shall not profit you.

God Promises Forgiveness to the Penitent

(118) ¹³ When you cry, let your companies deliver you; but the wind shall carry them all away; vanity shall take them: but he that puts his trust in me shall possess the land, and shall inherit my holy mountain; ¹⁴ And shall say, Cast ye up, cast ye up, prepare the way, take up the stumbling-block out of the way of my people. ¹⁵ For thus says the high and lofty One that inhabits eternity, whose name is Holy; I dwell in the high and holy [place], with him also [that is] of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones. ¹⁶ For I will not contend forever, neither will I be always angry: for the spirit should fail before me, and the souls [which] I have made. ¹⁷ For the iniquity of his covetousness I was angry, and smote him: I hid me, and was angry, and he went on frowardly in the way of his heart. ¹⁸ I have seen his ways, and will heal him: I will lead him also, and restore comforts to him and to his mourners. ¹⁹ I create the fruit of the lips; Peace, peace to [him that is] far off, and to [him that is] near, says the LORD; and I will heal him. ²⁰ But the wicked are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt. ²¹ [There is] no peace, says my God, to the wicked.

Isaiah Chapter 58

Isaiah Reproves Hypocrisy

(119) ¹ Cry aloud, spare not, lift up your voice like a trumpet, and show my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. ² Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God.

True Fasting

³ Wherefore have we fasted, [say they], and you see not? [wherefore] have we afflicted our soul, and you take no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labors.

⁴ Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as [ye do this] day, to make your voice to be heard on high. ⁵ Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? [is it] to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes [under him]? will you call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the LORD? ⁶ [Is] not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? ⁷ [Is it] not to deal your bread to the hungry, and that you bring the poor that are cast out to your house? when you see the naked, that you cover him; and that you hide not thyself from your own flesh?

The Rewards of Godliness

(120) ⁸ Then shall your light break forth as the morning, and your health shall spring forth speedily: and your righteousness shall go before you; the glory of the LORD shall be your rear guard.

⁹ Then shall you call, and the LORD shall answer; you shall cry, and he shall say, Here I [am]. If you take away from the midst of you the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity;

¹⁰ And [if] you draw out your soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall your light rise in obscurity, and your darkness [be] as the noonday: ¹¹ And the LORD shall guide you continually, and satisfy your soul in drought, and make fat your bones: and you shall be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. ¹² And [they that shall be] of you shall build the old waste places: you shall raise up the foundations of many generations; and you shall be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in.

Keep the Sabbath

¹³ If you turn away your foot from the sabbath, [from] doing your pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honorable; and shall honor him, not doing your own ways, nor finding your own pleasure, nor speaking [your own] words: ¹⁴ Then shall you delight thyself in the LORD; and I will cause you to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken [it].

Isaiah Chapter 59

Sin Separates from God

(121) ¹ Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: ² But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid [his] face from you, that he will not hear. ³ For your hands are defiled with blood, and your fingers with iniquity; your lips have spoken lies, your tongue has muttered perverseness. ⁴ None calls for justice, nor [any] pleads for truth: they trust in vanity, and speak lies; they conceive mischief, and bring forth iniquity. ⁵ They hatch cockatrice' eggs, and weave the spider's web: he that eats of their eggs dies, and that which is crushed breaks out into a viper. ⁶ Their webs shall not become garments, neither shall they cover themselves with their works: their works are works of iniquity, and the act of violence is in their hands. ⁷ Their feet run to evil, and they make haste to shed innocent blood: their thoughts are thoughts of iniquity; wasting and destruction are in their paths. ⁸ The way of peace they know not; and there is no judgment in their goings: they have made them crooked paths: whosoever goes therein shall not know peace. ⁹ Therefore is judgment far from us, neither does justice overtake us: we wait for light, but behold obscurity; for brightness, [but] we walk in darkness. ¹⁰ We grope for the wall like the blind, and we grope as if [we had] no eyes: we stumble at noonday as in the night; [we are] in desolate places as dead [men]. ¹¹ We roar all like bears, and mourn sore like doves: we look for judgment, but there is none; for salvation, [but] it is far off from us. ¹² For our transgressions are multiplied before you, and our sins testify against us: for our transgressions are with us; and [as for] our

Isaiah Chapter 59

iniquities, we know them; ¹³ In transgressing and lying against the LORD, and departing away from our God, speaking oppression and revolt, conceiving and uttering from the heart words of falsehood. ¹⁴ And judgment is turned away backward, and justice stands afar off: for truth is fallen in the street, and equity cannot enter. ¹⁵ Yes, truth fails; and he [that] departs from evil makes himself a prey: and the LORD saw [it], and it displeased him that [there was] no judgment.

(122) ¹⁶ And he saw that [there was] no man, and wondered that [there was] no intercessor: therefore his arm brought salvation to him; and his righteousness, it sustained him. ¹⁷ For he put on righteousness as a breastplate, and a helmet of salvation upon his head; and he put on the garments of vengeance [for] clothing, and was clad with zeal as a cloke. ¹⁸ According to [their] deeds, accordingly he will repay, fury to his adversaries, recompense to his enemies; to the islands he will repay recompense. ¹⁹ So they will fear the name of the LORD from the west, and his glory from the rising of the sun. When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the LORD shall lift up a standard against him. ²⁰ **And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and to them that turn from transgression in Jacob, says the LORD.** ²¹ **As for me, this is my covenant with them, says the LORD; My spirit that is upon you, and my words which I have put in your mouth, shall not depart out of your mouth, nor out of the mouth of your seed, nor out of the mouth of your seed's seed, says the LORD, from henceforth and forever.**

Isaiah Chapter 60

The Lord Will Be Jerusalem's Glory

(123) ¹ **Arise, shine; for your light is come, and the glory of the LORD is risen upon you.** ² **For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon you, and his glory shall be seen upon you.** ³ **And the Gentiles shall come to your light, and kings to the brightness of your rising.** ⁴ **Lift up your eyes round about, and see: all they gather themselves together, they come to you: your sons shall come from far, and your daughters shall be nursed at [your] side.** ⁵ **Then you shall see, and flow together, and your heart shall fear, and be enlarged; because the abundance of the sea shall be converted to you, the forces of the Gentiles shall come to you.** ⁶ **The multitude of camels shall cover you, the dromedaries of Midian and Ephah; all they from Sheba shall come: they shall bring gold and incense; and they shall show forth the praises of the LORD.** ⁷ **All the flocks of Kedar shall be gathered together to you, the rams of Nebaioth shall minister to you: they shall come up with acceptance on my altar, and I will glorify the house of my glory.** ⁸ **Who are these [that] fly as a cloud, and as the doves to their windows?**

(124) ⁹ **Surely the isles shall wait for me, and the ships of Tarshish first, to bring your sons from far, their silver and their gold with them, to the name of the LORD your God, and to the Holy One of Israel, because he has glorified you.** ¹⁰ **And the sons of strangers shall build up your walls, and their kings shall minister to you: for in my wrath I smote you, but in my favor I have had mercy on you.** ¹¹ **Therefore your gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day nor night; that [men] may bring to you the forces of the Gentiles, and [that] their kings [may be] brought.** ¹² **For the nation and kingdom that will not serve you shall perish; yes, [those] nations shall be utterly wasted.** ¹³ **The glory of Lebanon shall come to you, the fir tree, the pine tree, and the box together, to beautify the place of my sanctuary; and I will make the place of my feet glorious.** ¹⁴ **The sons also of them that afflicted you shall come bending to you; and all they that despised you shall bow themselves down at the soles of your feet; and they shall call you, The city of the LORD, The Zion of the Holy One of Israel.** ¹⁵ **Whereas you have been forsaken and hated, so that no man went through [you], I will make you an eternal excellency, a joy of many generations.** ¹⁶ **You shall also suck the milk of the Gentiles, and shall suck the breast of kings: and you shall know that I the LORD [am] your Savior and your Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob.** ¹⁷ **For brass I will bring gold, and for iron I will bring silver, and for wood brass, and for stones iron: I will also make your officers peace, and your exactors righteousness.** ¹⁸ **Violence shall no more be heard in your land, wasting nor destruction within your borders; but you shall call your walls Salvation, and your gates Praise.** ¹⁹ **The sun shall be no more your light by day; neither for brightness shall the moon give light to you: but the LORD shall be to you an everlasting light, and your God your glory.** ²⁰ **Your sun shall no more go forever, the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified.** ²² **A little one shall become a thousand, and a small one a strong nation: I the LORD will hasten it in his time.** **down; neither shall your moon withdraw itself: for the LORD shall be your everlasting light, and the days of your mourning shall be ended.** ²¹ **Your people also [shall be] all righteous: they shall inherit the land**

Isaiah Chapter 61

The Work of Christ

(125) ¹ The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD has anointed me to preach good tidings to the meek; he has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to [them that are] bound; ² To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; ³ To appoint to them that mourn in Zion, to give to them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

(126) ⁴ And they shall build the old wastes, they shall raise up the former desolations, and they shall repair the waste cities, the desolations of many generations. ⁵ And strangers shall stand and feed your flocks, and the sons of the alien [shall be] your plowmen and your vinedressers. ⁶ But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: [men] shall call you the Ministers of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves. ⁷ For your shame [ye shall have] double; and [for] confusion they shall rejoice in their portion: therefore in their land they shall possess the double: everlasting joy shall be to them. ⁸ **For I the LORD love judgment, I hate robbery for burnt offering; and I will direct their work in truth, and I will make an everlasting covenant with them.** ⁹ **And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed [which] the LORD has blessed.** ¹⁰ I will greatly rejoice in the LORD, my soul shall be joyful in my God; for he has clothed me with the garments of salvation, he has covered me with the robe of righteousness, as a bridegroom decks [himself] with ornaments, and as a bride adorns [herself] with her jewels. ¹¹ For as the earth brings forth her bud, and as the garden causes the things that are sown in it to spring forth; so the Lord GOD will cause righteousness and praise to spring forth before all the nations.

Isaiah Chapter 62

Jerusalem's Salvation Is Coming

(127) ¹ **For Zion's sake will I not hold my peace, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness, and the salvation thereof as a lamp [that] burns.** ² **And the Gentiles shall see your righteousness, and all kings your glory: and you shall be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name.** ³ **You shall also be a crown of glory in the hand of the LORD, and a royal diadem in the hand of your God.** ⁴ **You shall no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall your land anymore be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzibah, and your land Beulah: for the LORD delights in you, and your land shall be married.** ⁵ **For [as] a young man marries a virgin, [so] shall your sons marry you: and [as] the bridegroom rejoices over the bride, [so] shall your God rejoice over you.** ⁶ **I have set watchmen upon your walls, O Jerusalem, [which] shall never hold their peace day nor night: ye that make mention of the LORD, keep not silence,** ⁷ **And give him no rest, till he establish, and till he make Jerusalem a praise in the earth.** ⁸ **The LORD has sworn by his right hand, and by the arm of his strength, Surely I will no more give your corn [to be] meat for your enemies; and the sons of the stranger shall not drink your wine, for the which you have labored:** ⁹ **But they that have gathered it shall eat it, and praise the LORD; and they that have brought it together shall drink it in the courts of my holiness.**

The Savior is Coming

(128) ¹⁰ **Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.** ¹¹ **Behold, the LORD has proclaimed to the end of the world, Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, your salvation comes; behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.** ¹² **And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD: and you shall be called, Sought out, A city not forsaken.**

Isaiah Chapter 63

The Lord Will Be Victorious

(129) ¹ Who is this that comes from Edom, with dyed garments from Bozrah? this [that is] glorious in his apparel, traveling in the greatness of his strength? **I that speak in righteousness, mighty to save.**
² Wherefore [are you] red in your apparel, and your garments like him that treads in the winefat?
³ **I have trodden the winepress alone; and of the people [there was] none with me: for I will tread them in my anger, and trample them in my fury; and their blood shall be sprinkled upon my garments, and I will stain all my raiment.** ⁴ **For the day of vengeance is in my heart, and the year of my redeemed is come.**
⁵ **And I looked, and [there was] none to help; and I wondered that [there was] none to uphold: therefore my own arm brought salvation to me; and my fury, it upheld me.** ⁶ **And I will tread down the people in my anger, and make them drunk in my fury, and I will bring down their strength to the earth.**

The Lord's People Pray

(130) ⁷ I will mention the loving-kindness of the LORD, [and] the praises of the LORD, according to all that the LORD has bestowed on us, and the great goodness toward the house of Israel, which he has bestowed on them according to his mercies, and according to the multitude of his loving-kindness. ⁸ For he said, **Surely they are my people, children [that] will not lie: so he was their Savior.** ⁹ In all their affliction he was afflicted, and the angel of his presence saved them: in his love and in his pity he redeemed them; and he bore them, and carried them all the days of old. ¹⁰ But they rebelled, and vexed his holy Spirit: therefore he was turned to be their enemy, [and] he fought against them. ¹¹ Then he remembered the days of old, Moses, [and] his people, [saying], Where is he that brought them up out of the sea with the shepherd of his flock? where is he that put his holy Spirit within him? ¹² That led them by the right hand of Moses with his glorious arm, dividing the water before them, to make himself an everlasting name? ¹³ That led them through the deep, as a horse in the wilderness, [that] they should not stumble?
¹⁴ As a beast goes down into the valley, the Spirit of the LORD caused him to rest: so did you lead your people, to make thyself a glorious name. ¹⁵ Look down from heaven, and behold from the habitation of your holiness and of your glory: where is your zeal and your strength, the sounding of your bowels and of your mercies toward me? are they restrained? ¹⁶ Doubtless you are our father, though Abraham be ignorant of us, and Israel acknowledge us not: you, O LORD, are our father, our redeemer; your name is from everlasting. ¹⁷ O LORD, why have you made us to err from your ways, [and] hardened our heart from your fear? Return for your servants' sake, the tribes of your inheritance. ¹⁸ The people of your holiness have possessed [it] but a little while: our adversaries have trodden down your sanctuary.
¹⁹ We are [yours]: you never bare rule over them; they were not called by your name.

Chapter 64

Prayer for a Sign of God's Prayer

(131) ¹ Oh that you would rend the heavens, that you would come down, that the mountains might flow down at your presence, ² As [when] the melting fire burns, the fire causes the waters to boil, to make your name known to your adversaries, [that] the nations may tremble at your presence! ³ When you did terrible things [which] we looked not for, you came down, the mountains flowed down at your presence.
⁴ For since the beginning of the world [men] have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither has the eye seen, O God, beside you, [what] he has prepared for him that waits for him. ⁵ You meet him that rejoices and works righteousness, [those that] remember you in your ways: behold, you are angry; for we have sinned: in those is continuance, and we shall be saved. ⁶ But we are all as an unclean [thing], and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away. ⁷ And there is none that calls upon your name, that stirs up himself to take hold of you: for you have hid your face from us, and has consumed us, because of our iniquities. ⁸ But now, O LORD, you are our father; we are the clay, and you our potter; and we all are the work of your hand.
⁹ Be not angry very sore, O LORD, neither remember iniquity forever: behold, see, we beseech you, we are all your people. ¹⁰ Your holy cities are a wilderness, Zion is a wilderness, Jerusalem a desolation.
¹¹ Our holy and our beautiful house, where our fathers praised you, is burned up with fire: and all our pleasant things are laid waste. ¹² Will you refrain thyself for these [things], O LORD? will you hold your peace, and afflict us very sore?

The Calling of the Gentiles

(132) ¹ I am sought of [them that] asked not [for me]; I am found of [them that] sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, to a nation [that] was not called by my name. ² I have spread out my hands all the day to a rebellious people, which walks in a way [that was] not good, after their own thoughts; ³ A people that provokes me to anger continually to my face; that sacrifices in gardens, and burns incense upon altars of brick; ⁴ Which remain among the graves, and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable [things is in] their vessels; ⁵ Which say, Stand by thyself, come not near to me; for I am holier than you. These are a smoke in my nose, a fire that burns all the day. ⁶ Behold, [it is] written before me: I will not keep silence, but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom, ⁷ Your iniquities, and the iniquities of your fathers together, says the LORD, which have burned incense upon the mountains, and blasphemed me upon the hills: therefore will I measure their former work into their bosom.

A Remnant Shall be Saved

(133) ⁸ Thus says the LORD, As the new wine is found in the cluster, and [one] says, Destroy it not; for a blessing is in it: so will I do for my servants' sakes, that I may not destroy them all. ⁹ And I will bring forth a seed out of Jacob, and out of Judah an inheritor of my mountains: and my elect shall inherit it, and my servants shall dwell there. ¹⁰ And Sharon shall be a fold of flocks, and the valley of Achor a place for the herds to lie down in, for my people that have sought me.

Judgments of the Wicked, and Blessings on the Godly

¹¹ But ye are they that forsake the LORD, that forget my holy mountain, that prepare a table for that troop, and that furnish the drink offering to that number. ¹² Therefore will I number you to the sword, and ye shall all bow down to the slaughter: because when I called, ye did not answer; when I spoke, ye did not hear; but did evil before my eyes, and did choose [that] wherein I delighted not. ¹³ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD, Behold, my servants shall eat, but ye shall be hungry: behold, my servants shall drink, but ye shall be thirsty: behold, my servants shall rejoice, but ye shall be ashamed: ¹⁴ Behold, my servants shall sing for joy of heart, but ye shall cry for sorrow of heart, and shall howl for vexation of spirit. ¹⁵ And ye shall leave your name for a curse to my chosen: for the Lord GOD shall slay you, and call his servants by another name: ¹⁶ That he who blesses himself in the earth shall bless himself in the God of truth; and he that swears in the earth shall swear by the God of truth; because the former troubles are forgotten, and because they are hid from my eyes.

Looking Ahead to our Future

The Eternal Heaven (Revelation 21-22)

(134) ¹⁷ For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.

Blessings during the 1000 Year Reign of Christ from Jerusalem (Revelation 19-20)

(Blessed joy verses 18-19, long age vs 20, home and labor vs 21-23, immediate answers vs 24, and peace vs 25)

¹⁸ But be ye glad and rejoice forever [in that] which I create: for, behold, I create Jerusalem a rejoicing, and her people a joy. ¹⁹ And I will rejoice in Jerusalem, and joy in my people: and the voice of weeping shall be no more heard in her, nor the voice of crying. ²⁰ There shall be no more there an infant of days, nor an old man that has not filled his days: for the child shall die a hundred years old; but the sinner [being] a hundred years old shall be accursed. ²¹ And they shall build houses, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and eat the fruit of them. ²² They shall not build, and another inhabit; they shall not plant, and another eat: for as the days of a tree are the days of my people, and my elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. ²³ They shall not labor in vain, nor bring forth for trouble; for they are the seed of the blessed of the LORD, and their offspring with them. ²⁴ And it shall come to pass, that before they call, I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear. ²⁵ The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust [shall be] the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, says the LORD.

God Will Be Served Served in Humble Sincerity

(135) ¹ Thus says the LORD, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build to me? and where is the place of my rest? ² For all those [things] has my hand made, and all those [things] have been, says the LORD: but to this [man] will I look, [even] to [him that is] poor and of a contrite spirit, and trembles at my word. ³ He that kills an ox [is as if] he slew a man; he that sacrifices a lamb, [as if] he cut off a dog's neck; he that offers an oblation, [as if he offered] swine's blood; he that burns incense, [as if] he blessed an idol. Yes, they have chosen their own ways, and their soul delights in their abominations. ⁴ I also will choose their delusions, and will bring their fears upon them; because when I called, none did answer; when I spoke, they did not hear: but they did evil before my eyes, and chose [that] in which I delighted not.

God Comforts the Humble with Marvels

⁵ Hear the word of the LORD, ye that tremble at his word; Your brethren that hated you, that cast you out for my name's sake, said, Let the LORD be glorified: but he shall appear to your joy, and they shall be ashamed. ⁶ A voice of noise from the city, a voice from the temple, a voice of the LORD that renders recompense to his enemies. ⁷ Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. ⁸ Who has heard such a thing? who has seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? [or] shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children. ⁹ Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth? says the LORD: shall I cause to bring forth, and shut [the womb]? says your God.

(136) ¹⁰ Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and be glad with her, all ye that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn for her: ¹¹ That ye may suck, and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations; that ye may milk out, and be delighted with the abundance of her glory. ¹² For thus says the LORD, Behold, I will extend peace to her like a river, and the glory of the Gentiles like a flowing stream: then shall ye suck, ye shall be borne upon [her] sides, and be dandled upon [her] knees. ¹³ As one whom his mother comforts, so will I comfort you; and ye shall be comforted in Jerusalem. ¹⁴ And when ye see [this], your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall flourish like a herb: and the hand of the LORD shall be known toward his servants, and [his] indignation toward his enemies.

The New Creation

(137) ¹⁵ For, behold, the LORD will come with fire, and with his chariots like a whirlwind, to render his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire. ¹⁶ For by fire and by his sword will the LORD plead with all flesh: and the slain of the LORD shall be many. ¹⁷ They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one [tree] in the midst, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, says the LORD. ¹⁸ For I [know] their works and their thoughts: it shall come, that I will gather all nations and languages; and they shall come, and see my glory. ¹⁹ And I will set a sign among them, and I will send those that escape of them to the nations, [to] Tarshish, Pul, and Lud, that draw the bow, [to] Tubal, and Javan, [to] the isles afar off, that have not heard my fame, neither have seen my glory; and they shall declare my glory among the Gentiles. ²⁰ And they shall bring all your brethren [for] an offering to the LORD out of all nations upon horses, and in chariots, and in litters, and upon mules, and upon swift beasts, to my holy mountain Jerusalem, says the LORD, as the children of Israel bring an offering in a clean vessel into the house of the LORD.

(138) ²¹ And I will also take of them for priests [and] for Levites, says the LORD. ²² For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, says the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain. ²³ And it shall come to pass, [that] from one new moon to another, and from one sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me, says the LORD. ²⁴ And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcasses of the men that have transgressed against me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.

PROPHECIES OF JUDAH (Isaiah Chapters 1-12)						
Chapter Title (Chart 1)	Key Word/Verse	Isaiah's Time (sin)	Near Judgment/ Restoration	Christ's 1 st Coming	Christ's 2 nd Coming	Comments /Doctrines Issues
Section 1 Judah Prophecies	Prophecies concerning Judah and Jerusalem					King Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz
1 Wickedness of Judah	1:18 Come let us reason together, ...	Yes	Yes (Judah)			Accusation 2-9, Warning 10-15, Exhortation 16-20, Purification 21-31
	2:4 They shall beat their swords into plowshares	Yes			2:1-4	2:2 All nations shall flow into it
3 Judgment	3:13 The Lord stands up to plead, and stands to judge		Yes (Judah and Jerusalem)			3:12 women rule over you 3:21 nose jewels (4:1 also)
4 Zion is Holy	4:2 In that day the Branch of the Lord shall be ...				4:2-6	4:4 Purged ... by the spirit of judgment and burning
5 Judgment	5:25 His anger .. His hand is stretched out still. 9:21, 10:4	Yes	Yes (Judah)			Song of the Vineyard. 5:8-30 Seven woes. 5:2, 4 Good & wild grapes.
6 Isaiah's Calling	6:3 Holy, holy, holy	Yes				6:5 Woe is me, for I am undone. 6:8 Send me...
7 Emmanuel - A Sign	7:14 the virgin shall conceive and bear a son	Yes	7:8 Israel-Judah 65 yrs - 722 BC	7:14		King Ahaz 7:3 Isaiah's son, Shear-jashua (a remnant shall return)
8 Assyrian Invasion	8:3-4 Call his name Maher-Shalal-Hash-Baz	Yes	Yes (Judah)	8:14,15 , 17, 18		8:3 Isaiah's son (he hastened to the prey)
9 Government of God's Son	9:6 For unto us a Child is born, a Son is given	Yes	9:8-21 (Samaria & Ephraim)	9:1-2, 6	9:3-5, 7	9:2 "great light" John - Rev "bright and morning star"
10 A Remnant Return	9:20 And it shall come to pass ... remnant of Israel		10:5-19 (Assyria) 10:20-34		Yes	Romans 9:27, 11:5 Micah 2:12-13
11 Reign of Christ	11:4 He shall rule the earth, rod of His mouth			11:1-2	11:3-16	11:6 The wolf shall lie down with the lamb...
12 Hymn of Praise	12:3 Therefore with joy you will draw water from the wells of salvation.			12:3 (John 4:10,14 , 7:37)	Yes, Ultimately	Song of the Redeemed (Rev 7:16 -17,21:6 22:17)
Section 2. Foreign Prophecies Against Oracles of Judgment and Salvation.						
13 Babylon	13:9 Day of the Lord comes, Cruel, with wrath and fierce anger		Yes		Rev 17:1-19:10 Babylon	13:10 The sun will be darkened...moon will not cause light. Joel 2, Mt 24, Lu 21
14 Babylon, Assyria, and Philistia	14:10 The whole earth is at rest and quiet. They break forth into singing.		Yes		Is 4:22-23. Rev 18:2, 21	14:12-21 Compared to Lucifer's fall from heaven. Isaiah 40-46
15 Moab 16 Moab	15:1 The burden against Moab. 15x Lam 2:14, Hab 1:1, Mal 1:1		Yes			16:11 Therefore my heart shall resound like a harp for Moab, and my inner being...
17 Syria and Israel	17:1 Syria = Damascus 17:3 Israel = Ephraim		Yes			7:1-2 Both went up against Judah
18 Ethiopian	18:4 I will take my rest, and I will look		Yes		18:7	18:4 dwelling place. Like clear heat in sunshine.

19	Egypt	19:17 And the land of Judah will be a terror to Egypt.		Yes		19:17-24 In that day	19:25 Blessed is Egypt My people & Assyria the work of My hands, and Israel
20	Egypt and Ethiopian	The coming destruction by the Assyrians		Yes			20:2-4 Isaiah walked barefoot & naked 3 yrs.

Chapter Title	Key Word/Verse	Isaiah's Time (sin)	Near Judgment/Restoration	Christ's 1 st Coming	Christ's 2 nd Coming	Comments /Doctrines Issues	
21	Babylon, Edom, Arabia	21:2 Elam and Media defeated Babylon in 539		Yes		21:9 Babylon is fallen,	Edom And Arabia will be conquered.
22	Jerusalem and Shebna	22:12-13 sackcloth...joy, eat-drink-die		Yes			22:15 Shebna – evil steward. 22:22 Eliakim – David's seed
23	Tyre	23:1 The burden against Tyre.		Yes			23:1 Wail, you ships of Tarshish!
24-27 Redemption of Israel through world judgment. God is faithful and true. Wait on Him-Trust Him.							
24	Judgment on the Earth	24:1 Behold, the Lord makes the earth empty....				24:22-23 Then the moon	24:15 Therefore glorify the Lord in the dawning light,
25	Praise to God	25:1 ... I will exalt you, I will praise your name, ...				25:8 He will swallow up death	25:10-11 ... And He will spread out His hands
26	A Song of Salvation	26:3 You will keep him in perfect peace, whose mind				26:1-27:1	26:17 As a woman with child is in pain and cries out
27	The redemption of Israel	27:6 ...Israel shall blossom and bud...				27:2-13	27:13 So shall it be in that day: The great trumpet will...
Section 3 – Wanderings and Promises. Warning Against Alliance with Egypt							
28	Woe to Ephraim and Jerusalem	28:9-15 precept must be upon precept, line, ..here.. That they fall backward...		Yes	28:11 , 16		28:23-29 physical compared to spiritual – farming and understanding ...
29	Woe to Jerusalem	29:9 ...They are drunk, but not with wine...		Yes		29:17-24, 35:5	29:18 In that day the deaf shall hear the words of the ..
30	Woe for Jerusalem to look toward Egypt	30:10 Speak to us smooth things, prophesy deceits.		Judgment of Assyria (27-33)			30:18 the Lord will wait, that He may be gracious to you
31	Woe for Jerusalem to Trust in Egypt	31:3 Now the Egyptians are men, and not God.		Assyria shall fall by a sword not of man. 8-9		31:9 Whose fire is Zion	31:5 Like birds flying about, so will the Lord of Hosts defend Jerusalem. ...
32	A Reign of Righteousness	32:1 Behold a king will reign in righteousness	32:9-14 Prayer			Yes	32:15 Until the Spirit is poured upon us from on high
33	Woe to Assyria and Prayer	33:2 O Lord, be gracious unto us; we have waited...	33:7-9			Yes	33:22 For the Lord is our judge, the Lord is our law...
34	Judgment of the Nations	34:4 And all the host of heaven shall be dissolved,				Yes	34:16 Seek ye out of the book of the Lord, and read
35	The Highway of Holiness	35:8 A highway shall be there, and a way,...				Yes	Song of the Blooming Desert

Section 4 – Historical Section. Historical Interlude. King Hezekiah – Good

36 Sennacherib's Attempt to Capture Jerusalem	36:1 Now it came to pass in the fourteenth year of...	Yes				36:21 But they held their peace, ... Answer him not.
37 Godly Men Pray against Sennacherib	37:4 wherefore lift up your prayer for the remnant...	Yes				37:15 And Hezekiah prayed unto the Lord, saying...
38 Hezekiah's Life Extended 15 years	38:1 Set your house in order: for you shall die...	Yes				38:7-8 a sign... move the shadow 10 degrees backward
39 Hezekiah friendly to Babylon	39:1 Baladan, send present to Israel	Yes	39:6 all to Babylon (586 BC)			39:4 there is nothing among my treasures that I have not showed them.

Fire. Fire is used for judgment and purification. In this case it is the purification of Isaiah, who in the presence of God's holiness identified himself with all other people – sinful. (Read Numbers 31:22-23, Acts 2:3, 1 Corinthians 3:9-16 (14-15)) It is interesting that the root of the word "seraphim" is saraph, meaning "fiery."

Fire is used of judgment of those who hate God or don't look for Righteousness. (Malachi 3:2, Matthew 3:10-12) toward the leaders and those who lack knowledge, because of the leaders.

1:25 "I will turn My hand against you, And thoroughly purge away your dross, And take away all your alloy."

1:31 "The strong shall be as tinder, And the work of it as a spark; Both will burn together, And no one shall quench them."

4:4 "... purged the blood of Jerusalem from her midst, by the spirit of Judgment and by the spirit of fire."

5:24 "Therefore, as the fire devours the stubble, And the flame consumes the chaff, So their root shall be as rottenness, And their blossom will ascend like dust; because they have rejected the law of the Lord of hosts, And despised the word of the Holy One of Israel."

61 The Good News of Salvation			61:1, 2a		61:3
62 Assurance of Zion's Salvation			62:11		
63					
64					
65 The Glorious New Kingdom					
66 True Worship and False					

Chapter Title	Key Word/Verse	Near Future	Christ's 1st Coming	Christ's 2nd Coming	Comments/ Doctrines Issues
Section 1 Redemption Promised	Deliverance from Captivity				True God
40 Comfort to Babylonian Exiles	40:1 Comfort ye, comfort ye my people, says your God	Yes	40:3-5 John the Baptist	40:10 ... Behold, His reward is with Him...	40:31 They that wait on the Lord shall renew their strength; They shall mount up with wings of eagles...
41 Israel assured of God's Help					41:10 Fear thou not; for I am with you; be not dismayed; for I am your God: I will strengthen ...
42 The Servant of the Lord			42:1a, 2, 3, 6, 7		
43 The Redeemer of Israel					
44 God's Blessing on Israel					
45					
46 Dead Idols and the Living God					
47 The Humiliation of Babylon					
48 Israel Refined for God's Glory					
Section 2 Redemption Provided	Sufferings of the Servant of the Lord				Suffering Messiah
49 The Servant, the Light to the Gentiles					
50 The Servant, Israel's Hope			50:6, 7		
51 The Lord Comforts Zion					
52 God Redeems Jerusalem			52:13-15		
53 Messianic Prophecy (Chart 3)			53:1, 4, 7-8, 9, 11		Acts 8:32-33
54 A Perpetual Covenant of Peace			54:13		Song of the Restored Wife
55 An Invitation to Abundant Life			55:3		55:8-9 For my thoughts are not your thoughts, nor are your ways my ways, says the Lord....
56 Salvation for the Gentiles					
57 Healing of the Backslider	57:17 ...And he went on backsliding in the way of his heart				
Section 3 Redemption Realized	Future Glory of God's People				Reigning Lord
58 Two Kinds of Fasting					
59 Separated from God	59:1-2				59:19 When the enemy comes in like a flood, .Spirit..standard..
60 The Gentiles Bless Zion					

1. Bible Background and Comparisons. 66 books written by 40 authors over 1400 years, inspired by God.
 OT: (39) Founding-Law (5) History (12) Instruction-Poetry (5) Prophecy (17) or 12 + 5
 NT: (27) Founding-Gospels (4) History (1) Instruction-Letters (21) Prophecy (1)

2. Israel's National History with Kings

Genesis 12:1 Abraham	Camp	660 years	Family or Patriarchs
Joshua, Judges, Ruth	Commonwealth	360 years	Judges
I/II Samuel, Chronicles, Kings	Crown	460 years	Human Kings
Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther	Captivity/Return	160 years	God
	Silent Years	420 BC	
	Roman Empire	33 AD	King Came and Rejected Jesus Christ
	Until present	1999 AD	
	Future	King Returns and Reigns Jesus Christ	

3. Prophets. True and false prophets.
 A true prophet was accurate 100% of the time. The Lord Jesus Christ fulfilled the law and the prophets. 2 Peter 1:21 tells us how the prophets did not understand the times they wrote of. 1 Peter 1:10-11 tells how we can look into and understand what the prophets and angels desired to. 2 Timothy 3:16-17 tells how the OT is good for us to learn. Could go further with the doctrine of prophets, but this is appropriate for our study of Isaiah.

4. Characters. Isaiah = "The Lord is Salvation" Similar to Joshua, Elisha, and Jesus. Quoted directly in N.T over 65x, far more than any OT prophet, and mentioned by name over 20x.

5. Dates. 739-686 BC. Isaiah prophesied for 51 years. He was the son of Amoz. Contemporary of the prophets Micah (South – Judah) and Hosea (North – Israel). Killed by king Manasseh, cut in two by wooden saw (Hebrews 11:37, II Kings 21:16, Talmud-Hebrew Tradition). Isaiah mostly known for his messianic prophecies of the 1st coming of the Lord Jesus Christ as a suffering servant and lamb; "Immanuel," and his 2nd coming as a majestic, glorious King,.

6. Names for God. The Holy One of Israel. # of times (25) used in Isaiah and in other books (4). Lord (Adonai). Lord of Hosts. Mighty One of Israel. Maker.

7. Doctrines related to God's judgment of His people
 - 1:10-15 FALSE GROUP WORSHIP "assemblies, sacred meetings, feasts, spread out hands, prayers"
 - 1:23 LOVE BRIBES and REWARDS
 - 1:23 SELFISHNESS
 - 2:7-9 WORSHIP POSSESSIONS or MATERIALISM
 - 3:6 FALSE RELIGIONS "For you have forsaken Your people, the house of Jacob, Because they are filled with eastern ways; they are soothsayers (attempting to control the future through power given by evil spirits, Deuteronomy 8:9-12) like the Philistines, and "fellowship with the children of foreigners."
 - 3:12 UNBIBLICAL LEADERSHIP "As for My people, children are their oppressors, And women rule over them. O My people! Those who lead you cause you to err, and destroy the way of your paths."
 - 3:16-23 JEWELRY "perfume, charms, nose jewels, jingling anklets,..."
 - 5:11 ALCOHOL
 - 5:12 MUSIC
 - 5:13 NO KNOWLEDGE OF GOD
 - 5:14 LIES

8. Peculiar things of PURSUING GOD WITH ISAIAH
 Chapter 5 Sing a song
 7:18 whistle for flies of Egypt and bees of Assyria
 20:2-4 Three years walked barefoot and naked (shame). Jonah and Christ Three days. Esther fasted 3 days before going to the king for her people. Peter denied Lord 3 times. Elijah fell over child 3 times and brought back to life.
 34:6 Sword of the Lord mentioned only time in the Bible

9. Favorite Chapters.
 - 1 Intro and outline of book
 - 6 Calling
 - 14 Lucifer
 - 25 Psalm of praise
 - 35 Highway of holiness
 - 53 The Messiah
 - 58 Two kinds of fast
 - 66 Conclusion

10. Favorite Verses

- 1:18 Come now, and let us reason together says the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be like red crimson, they shall be as snow.
- 6:3 And one cried unto another and said, Holy, holy, holy is the Lord of Hosts: the whole earth is full of his glory.
- 6:5 Then I said, woe is me! For I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for my eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts.
- 26:3 You will keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on you: because he trusts in you.
- 28:11 For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little.
- 35:8 And a highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness: the unclean shall not pass over it: but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein.
- 40:31 But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run and not be weary: and they shall walk and not faint.
- 41:10 Fear you not; for I am with you; be not dismayed, for I am your God: I will strengthen you; yes, I will help you; yes, I will uphold you with the right hand of my righteousness.
- 52:7 How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that brings good tidings, that publishes peace; that brings good tidings of good, that publishes salvation: That says to Zion, Your God reigns.
- 53:6-7 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned everyone to his own way: and the Lord has laid on him the iniquity of us all. He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he opened not his mouth.
- 55:8-9 For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, says the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts your thoughts.
- 55:11 So shall my word be that goes forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please, and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it.
- 58:12 And they that shall be of you shall build the old waste places: you shall raise up the foundations of many generations; and you shall be called, The restorer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in.
- 59:1-2 Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.
- 59:19 So they will fear the name of the Lord from the west, and his glory from the rising of the sun. When the enemy shall come in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord shall lift up a standard against him.
- 61:1-2a The Spirit of the Lord is upon me; because the Lord has anointed me to preach good tidings onto the meek: he has sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound: To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.
- 64:6 But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousness are as filthy rags: and we all do fade as a leaf: and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.

11. New Testament References of Isaiah (65)

		<u>Isaiah</u>	
☐ Matthew	1:23 3:3 4:14-16 9:1-2 8:17 11:5 12:17-21	7:14 40:3 53:4 35:5-6 42:1-4	
☐ Mark	15:28	53:12	
☐ Luke	1:41 4:16-21 61:1-2	7:14	
☐ John	12:32 12:38-41	33:10 53:1, 6:9-10	
☐ Acts	3:17-26 8:28 28:25-27	53:7-8 6:9-10	The 2 nd message of Peter
☐ Romans	9:27 9:29 10:16 10:20	10:22-23 11:5 53:1 65:1	
☐ Revelation	22:16	9:2	

12. Acts 8:26-40

The Ethiopian was seeking God reading Isaiah 53:7-8. Acts 8:32-33 "He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and as a lamb before its shearer is silent, so He opened not His mouth. In His humiliation His justice was taken away, And who will declare His generation? For His life is taken from the earth."

13. Isaiah Road for Salvation

- Salvation (from God, by life of Jesus Christ)
 1. 7:14-15 "Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign: Behold the virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and shall call His name Immanuel."
 2. 9:2 "The people who walked in darkness have seen a great light; Those who dwelt in the shadow of death, upon them a light has shined."
 3. 9:6a "For onto us a child is born"
 4. 11:1-2 "There shall come forth a rod from the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots. The Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him, The Spirit of wisdom and understanding, The Spirit of counsel and might, The Spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord."
 5. 12:1 Anger turned away, God is my salvation
 6. 35:5-6
 7. 40:10 His reward is with him
 8. 52:7 How beautiful upon the mountain are the feet of him who publishes the truth
 9. 59:20 Redeemer
 10. 61:1-2 Preach good tidings to the meek, to proclaim salvation... liberty to the captives
- Pardon (by His Sacrificial Death and Our Repentance)
 1. 50:5-6 hid not face from shame and spitting
 2. 52:13-14 His visage was so marred
 3. 53:1-12
 4. 6:7 your sin is purged
 5. 40:2 her iniquity is pardoned
 6. 53:5 he was wounded for our transgressions
 7. 55:7 Let the wicked forsake his way, He will have mercy, abundantly pardon
- Cleansing (from our sin)
 1. 1:18 though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be white as snow
 2. 1:25 purely purge away your dross
 3. 27:9 the iniquity of Jacob be purged, take away his sin
 4. 52:15 so shall He sprinkle many nations

Peace (with God)

1. 9:6 The Prince of Peace
2. 26:12 ordain peace for us
3. 32:17 work of righteousness shall be peace
4. 53:5 chastisement of our peace was upon Him

14. Isaiah Prophecies Fulfilled at Christ's First Coming

- 7:14 Lord (Adoni) God gives house of David a sign: The virgin shall birth a Son, and call His name Emmanuel (God is with us). 7:14 – MT 1:23
- 8:14-15 Assyrian empire shall conquer Israel in 538 BC, 8:8-10
- 8:17
- 8:18
- 9:1-2
- 9:6a
- 11:1
- 12:3
- 25:8
- 28:11
- 28:16
- 29:18; 35:5
- 40:3-5
- 42:1a,2,3 42:6
- 42:7
- 42:7
- 50:6
- 50:7
- 52:13-53:10
-

- 53:4
- 53:7-8
- 53:7
- 53:7
- 53:9
- 53:11
- 54:13
- 55:3
- 61:1,2a
- 62:11

At least 50 verses. Need disciple to study and assist in teaching Isaiah for the next seven weeks. Section by section, chapter by chapter, verse by verse breakdown. Also put verses into chronological order with the life of Jesus Christ as recorded in the Gospels.

15. Isaiah's Description of Israel's Future Kingdom

1. The Lord will restore the faithful remnant of Israel to the Land to inhabit the kingdom at its beginning. 1:9, 25-27; 3:10; 4:3; 6:13; 8:10; 9:1; 10:20, 22, 25, 27; 11:11-12, 16; 14:1-2; 14:22, 16; 26:1-4; 27:12; 28:5; 35:9; 37:4, 31-32; 40:2-3; 41:9; 43:5-6; 46:3-4; 49:5,8,12,22; 51:11; 54:7-10; 55:12; 57:13,18; 60:4,9; 61:1-4,7; 65:8-10; 66:8-9,19
2. As the Lord defeats Israel's enemies. He will provide protection for His people. 4:5-6; 9:1,4; 12:1-6; 13:4; 14:2; 21:9; 26:4-5; 27:1-4; 30:30-31; 32:3; 33:16,22; 35:4; 49:8-9, 17-18; 52:6; 54:9-10; 55:10-11; 58:12; 60:10,12,18; 62:9; 66:16
3. In her kingdom, Israel will enjoy great prosperity of many kinds. 26:15,19; 27:2,13; 29:18-20; 32:22-23; 30:20; 32:3; 32:15-20; 33:6,24; 35:3,5-6,8-10; 40:11; 42:6-7,16; 43:5,6,8,10,21; 44:5,14; 46:13; 48:6; 49:10; 52:9; 54:2,3; 55:1,12; 58:9,14; 60:5,16,21; 61:4,6-10; 62:5 65:13-15,18,24; 66:21-22
4. The city of Jerusalem will rise to world preeminence in the kingdom. 2:2-4; 18:7; 25:6; 40:5,9; 49:19-21; 60:1-5,13-15,17; 62:3-4
5. Israel will be the center of world attention in the kingdom. 23:18; 54:1-3; 55:5; 56:6-8; 60:5-9; 66:18-21
6. Israel's mission in the kingdom will be to glorify the Lord. 60:21; 61:3
7. Gentiles in the kingdom will receive blessing through the channel of faithful Israel. 11:10; 19:18,24,25; 42:6; 45:22-23; 49:6; 51:5; 56:3,6-8; 60:3,7,8; 61:5; 66:19
8. Worldwide peace will prevail in the kingdom under the rule of the Prince of Peace. 2:4; 9:5-6; 11:10; 19:23; 26:12; 32:18; 54:14; 57:19; 66:12
9. Moral and spiritual conditions in the kingdom will reach their highest plane since the fall of Adam. 27:6; 28:6,17; 32:16; 42:7; 44:3; 45:8; 51:4; 61:11; 65:21-22
10. Governmental leadership in the kingdom will be superlative with the Messiah heading it up. 9:6-7; 11:2-3; 16:5; 24:23; 25:3; 32:1; 32:5; 33:22; 42:1,4; 43:15; 52:13; 53:12; 55:3-5
11. Humans will enjoy long life in the Kingdom. 65:20, 22
12. Knowledge of the Lord will be universal in the kingdom. 11:9; 19:21; 33:13; 40:5; 41:20; 45:6,14; 49:26; 52:10,13,15; 54:13; 66:23
13. The world of nature will enjoy a great renewal in the kingdom. 12:3; 30:23-26; 32:15; 35:1-4,6-7; 41:18-19; 43:19-20; 44:3,23; 55:1-2,13; 58:10-11
14. "Wild" animals will be tame in the kingdom. 11:6-9; 35:9; 65:25
15. Sorrow and mourning will not exist in the kingdom. 25:8; 60:20
16. The King will judge overt sin in the kingdom. 66:24
17. An eternal kingdom, as part of God's new creation, will follow the millennial kingdom. 24:23; 51:6; 51:16; 54:11-12; 60:11, 19; 65:17

Appx 300 verses. Look for repeats. Put in verse order to determine if correct context (does it make sense?) Need disciple to study and assist in teaching Isaiah for the next seven weeks. Section by section, chapter by chapter, verse by verse breakdown.

Jeremiah (52-132, 4 hr, Judah) 2020

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book** **Gems**

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25

26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43 44 45

Gentile nations: 46 47 48 49 50 51 Jerusalem falls to Babylon (586 BC): 52

12 Illustrations to Help us Turn Toward God

Purpose: Judgment of God's People, then other nations – with hope. 1 Peter 4:17-18

Key Words: Backsliding(s) – 13x, chapter 3 – 9x. Backward 2x. Turn or return – 90x.

Illustrations to help me turn toward God:

	<u>Scripture</u>
1) The living waters and broke cisterns	2:13
2) Breaking up the hard ground of our heart	4:3-4
3) Stand in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths (Matthew 11:28-30)	6:16
4) Running with footmen and horses	12:5
5) The repulsive yet recognizable girdle	13:1-11
6) Rejoicing in the Bible and for God in a dark world	15:15-18
7) Not wanting to speak for God, yet compelled to	20:7-9
8) Speak all the words I command you, do not diminish a word	26:2
9) The New Covenant pointing toward today and the future	31:31-34
10) Grace deserved by the faithful Rechabites	35:1-19
11) The chastisement because of God's eternal love	46:28
12) Grace extended as a sign of hope	52:31-34

Prayers of the Bible

Jeremiah has 4 themes: supplication, rising early, witnessing and Not to Pray for this people.

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Jeremiah 7:13-16, 25	Supplication			Rose early in morning	Pray not for this people
Jeremiah 11:14, 25	Supplication	Jonah 3		Cities / Nineveh	Pray not for this people
Jeremiah 12:1-5	Supplication	Petition		Footmen- Horses	Why does way of wicked prosper?
Jeremiah 14:7-10	Supplication	Pray not for their good			Pray not for this people
Jeremiah 21:12		Execute Judgment		Rising up Early	
Jeremiah 25:3-4		Preach Word		Rising up Early	
Jeremiah 26:5, 29:19		Preach Word	Not Hear Prophets	Rising up Early	
Jeremiah 31:18-22	Supplication	Turn-turned Repent-Instruct		During chastisement	The Prayer of Ephraim
Jeremiah 32:16-25	Praise	Mercy in judgment			Purchase of land
Jeremiah 32:33		Preach Word	Not Hear Prophets	Rising up Early	
Jeremiah 35:14-15		Preach Word	Not Hear Prophets	Rising up Early	
Jeremiah 37:1-10	Supplication	Protect Jerusalem			Zedekiah's request
Jeremiah 42:1-22	Supplication	Seek God's will	Unbelief		People did not believe in God's word
Jeremiah 44:4		Preach Word	Not Hear Prophets	Rising up Early	

Outline I of Jeremiah

The Story of a Difficult Assignment from God, Rejected by Man, 627-580 B.C.	<u>Chapter(s)</u>
Part One: God's Pattern of Time, Birth, and Calling	1
1:17 Arise and speak, be not dismayed at their faces	
Part Two: The Prophecies to Judah Before the Fall	2-25
Message 1: Judah Sinned Willfully	2-3:5
2:13 Two evils - forsaken living waters and hewed broken cisterns	
Message 2: Judah to be Judged	3:6-6
6:16 Stand in the paths, and see, and ask for the old paths	
Message 3: Judah's Hypocrisy in Worship	7-10
7:18 The Queen of Heaven	
Message 4: Judah's Breach of the Covenant	11-13
12:5 If you have run with the footman, 13 Parables-marred girdle/wine bottles	
Message 5: Judah's Desperate Situation	14-15
15:15 Your words were found & I did eat them; they were the joy & rejoicing	
Message 6: Jeremiah's Unmarried State	16-17
Message 7: Sign of the Potter's House	18-20
20:9 His word was in my heart as a burning fire	
Message 8: Against Judah's Kings & False Prophets	21-22
Message 9: <i>False and True Shepherds and Prophets</i>	23
23:29 word like fire and a hammer that breaks the rocks in pieces	
Message 10: <i>The Two Baskets of Figs</i>	24
Message 11: The Seventy Year Captivity	25
605 B.C. to 536 B.C. 4 th yr. of <u>Jehoiakim</u> (36:1) to decree of Cyrus (Ezra 1)	
Part Four of Seven: The Future Promises to Israel (Hope)	30-33
Restore the Land (30) Return-Trouble-Blessing-Chastisement and Hope	
Restore the People (31) Blessing-Sorrow-Prayer-New Covenant (1 st mention)	
Return the People to the Land (32) Prison-Purchase Land-Prayer-Promised Return	
Reconfirm the Covenants (33) Jerusalem-Israel-Davidic Kingdom	
Part Five of Seven: The Fall of Jerusalem	34-45
Before Jerusalem's Fall (34-38)(34) Slaves (freedom) (35) Rechabites (obedience)	
(36) Baruch (scrolls) (37) Egypt (prayer/prison) (38) Princes (dungeon)	
During Jerusalem's Fall (39) Zedekiah's son is slayed, favor returned to Gedaliah and Ebed-melech	
Part Five of Seven: The Fall of Jerusalem	34-45
Before Jerusalem's Fall (34-38)(34) Slaves (freedom) (35) Rechabites (obedience)	
(36) Baruch (scrolls) (37) Egypt (prayer/prison) (38) Princes (dungeon)	
During Jerusalem's Fall (39) Zedekiah's son is slayed, favor returned to Gedaliah and Ebed-melech.	
After Jerusalem's Fall (40-45)(40-41) Gedaliah/Johanan/Ishmael (42-43) Prayer (44-45) in Egypt	
Part Six of Seven: The Prophecies Against the Gentile Nations	(46:1-51:64)
Egypt (46), Philistia (47), Moab (48), Ammon, Edom, Damascus, Kedar, Hazor, Elam (49), Babylon (50-51)	
Part Seven: The Fall of Jerusalem to Babylon	(52:1-34)
Lamentations	

Kings of Judah: Josiah (31 yr), Jehoahaz (3 months), Jehoiakim (11 yr.), Jehoiachin (3 mo), Zedekiah (11 yr.)

Kings of Babylon: Nabopolassar, Nebuchadnezzar, Evilmerodach

Main Nations: Judah, Babylon, and Egypt

Chronological Outline	<u>Chapter</u>
1) Good King Josiah (640-649 BC 9 yrs. with Josiah, 18 yrs. total)	1-9
627 Call confirmed by vision of almond tree and boiling pot (17-20 yrs. old)	1
622 Before the Law found	2-6
609 Josiah dies in battle with Egyptian king at Megiddo	7-9
2) Wicked Kings Jehoiakim and Zedekiah (22 yrs.)	10-39
608-586 Persecution: ridiculed & rejected continually, confinement 5x, beat False prophets, priests, and pastors	26-29
Hope	30-33
586 Fall of Jerusalem (Jeremiah prophesied for 40 yrs.)	37-39, 52
3) Those left behind depart for Egypt	40-45
586 Gedaliah	40-41
Egypt	42-44
Baruch the scribe	45
4) Other Kingdoms and Kings	46-51
Against Egypt	46
Against Philistia	47
Against Moab	48
Against Ammon, Edom, Damascus, Kedar, Hazor & Edom	49
Against Babylon	50-51
561 * Jehoiachin released from prison in Babylon	52

Good King: Josiah - 31 years, 8-39 yrs. old, 640-609 BC (three sons)

Wicked kings:

Jehoahaz - 3 months, 23, prisoner to Egypt (Shallum in Jeremiah 22:11)	10-39
Jehoiakim - 11 years, 25-37 yrs. old, died in Jerusalem (Eliakim)	609-598 BC *
Jeconiah - 3 months, 8, prisoner to Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar (Jehoiachin or Coniah)	
Zedekiah - 11 years, 21-31 yrs. old, prisoner to Babylon by Nebuchadnezzar, Uncle (Mattaniah) Jeremiah 24:17, 586 BC, 11 th yr., 4 th month, 9 th day	597-586 BC

Contemporaries: Jeremiah lives 100 years after the prophet Isaiah and Micah. His contemporaries are Zephaniah and Habakkuk during the end of the kingdom of Judah. Before and/or during captivity Ezekiel and Daniel know Jeremiah.

Key prophetic verse: Daniel 9:2 In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem. Last mention of Jeremiah in the Hebrew Bible.

New Testament: Some thought Jesus was Jeremias in Matthew 16:14, Jeremy in Matthew 2:17, 27:9
Problem of order: His writings are sometimes out of order chronologically due to being burnt and rewritten, then occurring over a period of 42 years. Lamentations is written after Jeremiah.

Jeremiah Chapter 1

God's Pattern of Time (1-3), Birth (4-5), and Calling (6-10)

(1) ¹ The words of Jeremiah the son of Hilkiah, of the priests that [were] in Anathoth in the land of Benjamin: ² To whom the word of the LORD came in the days of Josiah the son of Amon king of Judah, in the thirteenth year of his reign. ³ It came also in the days of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah, to the end of the eleventh year of Zedekiah the son of Josiah king of Judah, to the carrying away of Jerusalem captive in the fifth month. ⁴ Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁵ **Before I formed you in the belly I knew you; and before you came forth out of the womb I sanctified you, [and] I ordained you a prophet to the nations.** ⁶ Then said I, Ah, Lord GOD! behold, I cannot speak: for I [am] a ^a youth. ⁷ But the LORD said to me, **Say not, I [am] a child: for you shall go to all that I shall send you, and whatsoever I command you thou shall speak.** ⁸ **Be not afraid of their faces: for I [am] with you to deliver you, says the LORD.** ⁹ Then the LORD put forth his hand, and touched my mouth. And the LORD said to me, **Behold, I have put my words in your mouth.** ¹⁰ **See, I have this day set you over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy, and to throw down, to build, and to plant.**

^a 17 to 20 yrs. old

Jeremiah's First Two Visions

(2) ¹¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, **Jeremiah, what see you?** And I said, I see a rod of an almond tree. ¹² Then said the LORD unto me, **You have well seen: for I will hasten my word to perform it.** ¹³ And the word of the LORD came to me the second time, saying, **What see you?** And I said, **I see a boiling pot; and the face thereof is toward the north.** ¹⁴ Then the LORD said to me, **Out of the north an evil shall break forth upon all the inhabitants of the land.** ¹⁵ **For, look, I will call all the families of the kingdoms of the north, says the LORD; and they shall come, and they shall set everyone his throne at the entering of the gates of Jerusalem, and against all the walls thereof round about, and against all the cities of Judah.** ¹⁶ **And I will utter my judgments against them concerning all their wickedness, who have forsaken me, and have burned incense to other gods, and worshipped the works of their own hands.** ¹⁷ **You therefore gird up your loins, and arise, and speak to them all that I command you: be not dismayed at their faces, lest I confound you before them.** ¹⁸ **For, behold, I have made you this day a defensed city, and an iron pillar, and brazen walls against the whole land, against the kings of Judah, against the princes thereof, against the priests thereof, and against the people of the land.** ¹⁹ **And they shall fight against you; but they shall not prevail against you; for I [am] with you, says the LORD, to deliver you.**



Complexity

Q1: Why is the time in years important for Jeremiah's birth and calling?

A1: Because God has a time for raising up leaders for His glory.

Q2: Why does God know Jeremiah while being formed in his mother's belly?

A1: Because God knows all babies from the moment of conception.

Q3: Why is speaking about God a vital part of Jeremiah's calling?

A1: Because many will cause us to fear speaking the truth as God sees it.

Application: I know that God has a time, knows us, and helps us, the same as he did for Jeremiah. As I deny self and take up my cross to follow Christ daily - I am confident that he has a time, a person, and calling for each of His children.

QT Encouragement: Daily time each morning in the Scripture and prayer leads us into great confidence to love God as He first loved us through the Lord Jesus Christ. As we are strong, we can encourage those who are weak, or younger in the Lord's service.

New Testament Application: Christ followers have better things today than Jeremiah had before. (1Peter 1:10 of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace [that should come] unto you: 1:11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. 1:12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.)

The Dusk of the Evening is Upon Us

1. THE GOOD TIMES (2:1-3)

(3) ¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Go and cry in the ears of Jerusalem, saying, Thus says the LORD; I remember you, the kindness of your youth, the love of your espousals, when you went after me in the wilderness, in a land [that was] not sown. ³ Israel was holiness to the LORD, [and] the firstfruits of his increase: all that devour him shall offend; evil shall come upon them, says the LORD.

(espousals: bridehood, marriage, betroth – contract for future marriage. Hosea)

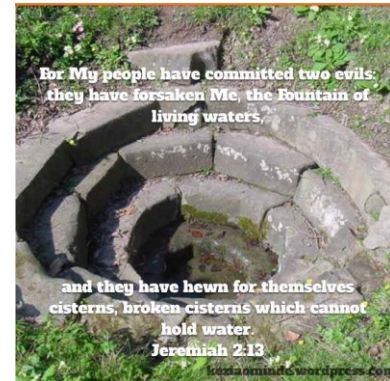
2. REMEMBER YOUR PAST (2:4-8)

⁴ Hear ye the word of the LORD, O house of Jacob, and all the families of the house of Israel:

⁵ Thus says the LORD, What iniquity have your fathers found in me, that they are gone far from me, and have walked after vanity, and are become vain? ⁶ Neither said they, "Where is the LORD that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, that led us through the wilderness, through a land of deserts and of pits, through a land of drought, and of the shadow of death, through a land that no man passed through, and where no man dwelt?" ⁷ And I brought you into a plentiful country, to eat the fruit and the goodness thereof; but when ye entered, ye defiled my land, and made my heritage an abomination. ⁸ The priests said not, "Where is the LORD?" and they that handle the law knew me not: the pastors also transgressed against me, and the prophets prophesied by Baal, and walked after things that do not profit.

3. EVALUATE TODAY (2:9-13)

(4) ⁹ Wherefore I will yet plead with you, says the LORD, and with your children's children will I plead. ¹⁰ For pass over the isles of Chittim, and see; and send unto Kedar, and consider diligently, and see if there be such a thing. ¹¹ Has a nation changed their gods, which are yet no gods? but my people have changed their glory for that which does not profit. ¹² Be astonished, O ye heavens, at this, and be horribly afraid, be ye very desolate, says the LORD. ¹³ For my people have committed two evils; they have forsaken me the fountain of living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water.



(John 7:38, Revelation 22:17, The same God and ways – different dispensation)

4. REMEMBER YOUR HERITAGE (2:14-19)

¹⁴ Is Israel a servant? is he a homeborn slave? why is he spoiled? ¹⁵ The young lions roared upon him, and yelled, and they made his land waste: his cities are burned without inhabitant. ¹⁶ Also the children of Noph and Tahapanes have broken the crown of your head. ¹⁷ Have you not procured this unto yourself, in that you have forsaken the LORD your God, when he led you by the way? ¹⁸ And now what have you to do in the way of Egypt, to drink the waters of Sihor? or what have you to do in the way of Assyria, to drink the waters of the river? ¹⁹ Your own wickedness shall correct you, and your backslidings shall reprove you: know therefore and see that it is an evil thing and bitter, that you have forsaken the LORD your God, and that my fear is not in you, says the Lord GOD of hosts.

Q1 - (2:13) What is the difference between living water and cistern water?

A1 - The living water is a natural source of fresh running water. There is no works system to enjoy the refreshing living water, it is a gift of God for our salvation, and moreso continued as we grow in Christ by faith through the Holy Spirit and obedience to the Scriptures. The is the works of the believer (Rev 2-3).

A2 - God's people may backslide and go after other God's and the world's philosophies and tradition of religious works (broken cisterns), or drink of the strange waters of non-biblical beliefs and practices (rivers of Sihor or Euphrates)..

Q2 - (2:13-18) Do we have a choice of which waters we drink from?

A1 - Yes, believers have a choice from which of the four waters we drink from? The same spiritual laws for God's people apply today in the New Testament.

A2 - No, unbelievers may drink from the waters of broken cisterns, the waters of Sihor (Nile in lower Egypt), or the waters of the river (Euphrates in Assyria), but not the living waters.

Jeremiah Chapter 2

Application: I must mix the living waters with other sources of water, and help other believers to drink more and more of the living waters as we grow in Christ. The fear of the Lord in his holiness and justice helps me stay away from making my own cistern or drinking strange waters.

QT Encouragement: Daily time in the Scriptures and prayer helps us learn the difference between the different sources of water we can drink from, then chose more and more from the living waters.

5. SPIRITUAL ADULTERY REVEALED (2:20-25)

(5) ²⁰ For of old time I have broken your yoke, and burst your bands; and you said, I will not transgress; when upon every high hill and under every green tree you wander, playing the harlot. ²¹ Yet I had planted you a noble vine, wholly a right seed: how then are you turned into the degenerate plant of a strange vine unto me? ²² For though you wash you with detergent, and take you much soap, yet your iniquity is marked before me, says the Lord GOD. ²³ How can you say, "I am not polluted, I have not gone after Baalim?" see your way in the valley, know what you have done: you are a swift dromedary traversing her ways; ²⁴ A wild donkey used to the wilderness, that snuffs up the wind at her pleasure; in her occasion who can turn her away? all they that seek her will not weary themselves; in her month they shall find her. ²⁵ Withhold your foot from being unshod, and your throat from thirst: but *you said*, "There is no hope: no; for I have loved strangers, and after them will I go."

a. PRAYERS NOT HEARD (2:26-30)

²⁶ As the thief is ashamed when he is found, so is the house of Israel ashamed; they, their kings, their princes, and their priests, and their prophets, ²⁷ Saying to a stock, "You are my father; and to a stone, You have brought me forth: for they have turned their back unto me, and not their face: but in the time of their trouble they will say, Arise, and save us. ²⁸ But where are your gods that you have made you? let them arise, if they can save you in the time of your trouble: for according to the number of your cities are your gods, O Judah. ²⁹ Wherefore will ye plead with me? All of you have transgressed against me, says the LORD. ³⁰ In vain I have disciplined your children; they received no correction: your own sword hath devoured your prophets, like a destroying lion.

b. FORGETTING GOD'S WORKS (2:31-37)

(6) ³¹ O generation, see ye the word of the LORD. Have I been a wilderness unto Israel? a land of darkness? wherefore *say my people*, "We are lords; we will come no more unto you?" ³² Can a maid forget her ornaments, or a bride her attire? yet my people have forgotten me days without number. ³³ Why trim you your way to seek love? therefore you have taught the wicked ones your ways. ³⁴ Also in your skirts is found the blood of the souls of the poor innocents: I have not found it by secret search, but upon all these. ³⁵ Yet *you say*, "Because I am innocent, surely his anger shall turn from me." Behold, I will plead with you, because you say, I have not sinned. ³⁶ Why do you wander around so much to change your way? You shall be ashamed of Egypt, as you was ashamed of Assyria. ³⁷ Yes, you shall go forth from him, and your hands upon your head: for the LORD has rejected your confidences, and you shall not prosper in them.

Jeremiah Chapter 3

CROSSING THE LINE (6:1-5)

(7) ¹ They say, If a man divorces his wife, and she go from him, and become another man's, shall he return unto her again? shall not that land be greatly polluted? but you have played the harlot with many lovers; yet return again to me, says the LORD. ² Lift up your eyes unto the high places, and see where you have not been lien with. In the ways have you sat for them, as the Arabian in the wilderness; and you have polluted the land with your whoredoms and with your wickedness. ³ Therefore the showers have been withheld, and there has been no latter rain; and you have a whore's forehead, you refused to be ashamed. ⁴ Will you not from this time cry unto me, "My father, you art the guide of my youth? ⁵ Will he reserve his anger forever? will he keep it to the end?" Behold, you have spoken and done evil things as you could.

Jeremiah Chapter 3

Call to Repentance (3:6-4:4)

Key verse: 4:3

⁶ The LORD said to me in the days of Josiah the king, Have you seen that which backsliding Israel has done? she is gone up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there has played the harlot. ⁷ And I said after she had done all these things, "Turn to me." But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah saw it. ⁸ And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also. ⁹ And it came to pass through the lightness of her whoredom, that she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with wood. ¹⁰ And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah has ^a not turned to me with her whole heart, but feignedly, says the LORD. ¹¹ And the LORD said to me, The backsliding Israel has justified herself more than treacherous Judah.

^a 2 Timothy 2:19-20.

(8) ¹² Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, you backsliding Israel, says the LORD; and I will not cause my anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, says the LORD, and I will not keep anger forever. ¹³ Only acknowledge your iniquity, that you have transgressed against the LORD your God, and have scattered your ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, says the LORD. ¹⁴ Turn, O backsliding children, says the LORD; for I am married to you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: ¹⁵ And I will give you pastors according to my heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.

The Millennial Reign of Christ on Earth

¹⁶ And it shall come to pass, when ye be multiplied and increased in the land, in those days, says the LORD, they shall say no more, The ark of the covenant of the LORD: neither shall it come to mind: neither shall they remember it; neither shall they visit it; neither shall that be done anymore. ¹⁷ At that time they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all the nations shall be gathered to it, to the name of the LORD, to Jerusalem: neither shall they walk anymore after the imagination of their evil heart. ¹⁸ In those days the house of Judah shall walk with the house of Israel, and they shall come together out of the land of the north to the land that I have given for an inheritance to your fathers. ¹⁹ But I said, How shall I put you among the children, and give you a pleasant land, a goodly heritage of the hosts of nations? and I said, You shall call me, My father; and shall not turn away from me.

Return, Ye Backsliding Children

(9) ²⁰ Surely as a wife treacherously departs from her husband, so have ye dealt treacherously with me, O house of Israel, says the LORD. ²¹ A voice was heard upon the high places, weeping and supplications of the children of Israel: for they have perverted their way, and they have forgotten the LORD their God. ²² Return, ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings. Behold, we come to you; for you are the LORD our God. ²³ Truly in vain is salvation hoped for from the hills, and from the multitude of mountains: truly in the LORD our God is the salvation of Israel. ²⁴ For shame has devoured the labor of our fathers from our youth; their flocks and their herds, their sons and their daughters. ²⁵ We lie down in our shame, and our confusion covers us: for ^a we have sinned against the LORD our God, we and our fathers, from our youth even to this day, and have not obeyed the voice of the LORD our God.

^a Jeremiah identifies with the peoples sin, as Moses and Paul did. Also as David did for his personal sins, Psalm 51.

(10)¹ If you will return, O Israel, says the LORD, return to Me: and if you will put away your abominations out of my sight, then shall you not remove. ² And you shall swear, The LORD lives, in truth, in judgment, and in righteousness; and the nations shall bless themselves in him, and in him they will glory. ³ For thus says the LORD to the men of Judah and Jerusalem, Break up your fallow ground, and sow not among thorns. ⁴ Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: lest my fury come forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings.

Imminent Danger (4:5-4:18) Daniel

Key verse: 4:18

⁵ Declare ye in Judah, and publish in Jerusalem; and say, Blow ye the trumpet in the land: cry, gather together, and say, Assemble yourselves, and let us go into the defended cities. ⁶ Set up the standard toward Zion: retire, stay not: for I will bring evil from the north, and a great destruction. ⁷ The lion is come up from his thicket, and the destroyer of the Gentiles is on his way; he is gone forth from his place to make your land desolate; and your cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant. ⁸ For this gird you with sackcloth, lament and howl: for the fierce anger of the LORD is not turned back from us. ⁹ And it shall come to pass at that day, says the LORD, that the heart of the king shall perish, and the heart of the princes; and the priests shall be astonished, and the prophets shall wonder. ¹⁰ Then said I, Ah, Lord GOD! surely you have greatly deceived this people and Jerusalem, saying, Ye shall have peace; whereas the sword reaches to the soul. ¹¹ At that time shall it be said to this people and to Jerusalem, A dry wind of the high places in the wilderness toward the daughter of my people, not to fan, nor to cleanse, ¹² Even a full wind from those places shall come to me: now also will I give sentence against them. ¹³ Behold, he shall come up as clouds, and his chariots shall be as a whirlwind: his horses are swifter than eagles. Woe to us! for we are spoiled. ¹⁴ O Jerusalem, wash your heart from wickedness, that you may be saved. How long shall your vain thoughts lodge within you? ¹⁵ For a voice declares from Dan, and publishes affliction from mount Ephraim. ¹⁶ Make ye mention to the nations; behold, publish against Jerusalem, that watchers come from a far country, and give out their voice against the cities of Judah. ¹⁷ As keepers of a field, are they against her round about; because she has been rebellious against me, says the LORD. ¹⁸ Your way and your doings have procured these things to you; this is your wickedness, because it is bitter, because it reaches to your heart.

Sorrow for Doomed Nation (4:19-31)

Key verse: 4:22

(11)¹⁹ My bowels, my bowels! I am pained at my very heart; my heart makes a noise in me; I cannot hold my peace, because you have heard, O my soul, the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war. ²⁰ Destruction upon destruction is cried; for the whole land is spoiled: suddenly are my tents spoiled, and my curtains in a moment. ²¹ How long shall I see the banner, and hear the sound of the trumpet? ²² For my people is foolish, they have not known me; they are senseless children, and they have no understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do good they have no knowledge. ²³ I beheld the earth, and, look, it was without form, and void; and the heavens, and they had no light. ²⁴ I beheld the mountains, and, look, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly. ²⁵ I beheld, and, look, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled. ²⁶ I beheld, and, look, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger. ²⁷ For thus has the LORD said, The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end. ²⁸ For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it. ²⁹ The whole city shall flee for the noise of the horsemen and bowmen; they shall go into thickets, and climb up upon the rocks: every city shall be forsaken, and not a man dwell therein. ³⁰ And when you are spoiled, what will you do? Though you clothe yourself with crimson, though you adorn yourself with ornaments of gold, though you tore your face (enlargen your eyes) with painting, in vain shall you make yourself fair; your lovers will despise you, they will seek your life. ³¹ For I have heard a voice as of a woman in travail, and the anguish as of her that brings forth her first child, the voice of the daughter of Zion, that bewails herself, that spreads her hands, saying, Woe is me now! for my soul is wearied because of murderers.

God's Justice (5:1-31)

(12) ¹ **Run ye to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem, and see now, and know, and seek in the broad places thereof, if ye can find a man, if there be any that executes judgment, that seeks the truth; and I will pardon it.** ² **And though they say, The LORD lives; surely they swear falsely.** ³ O LORD, are not your eyes upon the truth? you have stricken them, but they have not grieved; you have consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return. ⁴ Therefore I said, Surely these are poor; they are foolish: for they know not the way of the LORD, nor the judgment of their God. ⁵ I will get me to the great men, and will speak to them; for they have known the way of the LORD, and the judgment of their God: but these have altogether broken the yoke, and burst the bonds. ⁶ Wherefore a lion out of the forest shall slay them, and a wolf of the evenings shall spoil them, a leopard shall watch over their cities: everyone that goes out there shall be torn in pieces: because their transgressions are many, and their backslidings are increased. ⁷ **How shall I pardon you for this? your children have forsaken me, and sworn by them that are no gods: when I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses.** ⁸ **They were as fed horses in the morning: everyone neighed after his neighbor's wife.** ⁹ **Shall I not visit for these things? says the LORD: and shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?**

(13) ¹⁰ **Go ye up upon her walls, and destroy; but make not a full end: take away her battlements; for they are not the LORD'S.** ¹¹ **For the house of Israel and the house of Judah have dealt very treacherously against me, says the LORD.** ¹² **They have falsely represented the LORD, and said, It is not he; neither shall evil come upon us; neither shall we see sword nor famine:** ¹³ **And the prophets shall become wind, and the word is not in them: thus shall it be done to them.** ¹⁴ **Wherefore thus says the LORD God of hosts, Because ye speak this word, behold, I will make my words in your mouth fire, and this people wood, and it shall devour them.** ¹⁵ **Look, I will bring a nation upon you from far, O house of Israel, says the LORD: it is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language you know not, neither understand what they say.** ¹⁶ **Their quiver is as an open sepulcher, they are all mighty men.** ¹⁷ **And they shall eat up your harvest, and your bread, which your sons and your daughters should eat: they shall eat up your flocks and your herds: they shall eat up your vines and your fig trees: they shall impoverish your fenced cities, wherein you trusted, with the sword.** ¹⁸ **Nevertheless in those days, says the LORD, I will not make a full end with you.** ¹⁹ **And it shall come to pass, when ye shall say, Wherefore does the LORD our God all these things to us? then shall you answer them, Like as ye have forsaken me, and served strange gods in your land, so shall ye serve strangers in a land that is not yours.**

(14) ²⁰ **Declare this in the house of Jacob, and publish it in Judah, saying,** ²¹ **Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not:** ²² **Fear ye not me? says the LORD: will ye not tremble at my presence, which have placed the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it?** ²³ **But this people has a revolting and a rebellious heart; they are revolted and gone.** ²⁴ **Neither say they in their heart, Let us now fear the LORD our God, that gives rain, both the former and the latter, in his season: he reserves to us the appointed weeks of the harvest.** ²⁵ **Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withheld good things from you.** ²⁶ **For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that sets snares; they set a trap, they catch men.** ²⁷ **As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich.** ²⁸ **They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge.** ²⁹ **Shall I not visit for these things? says the LORD: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?** ³⁰ **A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land;** ³¹ **The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof?**

(15)¹ O ye children of Benjamin, gather yourselves to flee out of the midst of Jerusalem, and blow the trumpet in Tekoa, and set up a sign of fire in Bethhaccerem: for evil appears out of the north, and great destruction. ² I have likened the daughter of Zion to a comely and delicate woman. ³ The shepherds with their flocks shall come to her; they shall pitch their tents against her round about; they shall feed everyone in his place. ⁴ Prepare ye war against her; arise, and let us go up at noon. Woe to us! for the day goes away, for the shadows of the evening are stretched out. ⁵ Arise, and let us go by night, and let us destroy her palaces. ⁶ For thus has the LORD of hosts said, Hew ye down trees, and cast a mount against Jerusalem: this is the city to be visited; she is wholly oppression in the midst of her. ⁷ As a fountain casts out her waters, so she casts out her wickedness: violence and spoil is heard in her; before me continually is grief and wounds. ⁸ Be you instructed, O Jerusalem, lest my soul depart from you; lest I make you desolate, a land not inhabited.

(16)⁹ Thus says the LORD of hosts, They shall thoroughly glean the remnant of Israel as a vine: turn back your hand as a grape gatherer into the baskets. ¹⁰ To whom shall I speak, and give warning, that they may hear? behold, their ear is uncircumcised, and they cannot hearken: behold, the word of the LORD is to them a reproach; they have no delight in it. ¹¹ Therefore I am full of the fury of the LORD; I am weary with holding in: I will pour it out upon the children abroad, and upon the assembly of young men together: for even the husband with the wife shall be taken, the aged with him that is full of days. ¹² And their houses shall be turned to others, with their fields and wives together: for I will stretch out my hand upon the inhabitants of the land, says the LORD. ¹³ For from the least of them even to the greatest of them everyone is given to covetousness; and from the prophet even to the priest everyone deals falsely. ¹⁴ They have healed also the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace. ¹⁵ Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? nay, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore they shall fall among them that fall: at the time that I visit them they shall be cast down, says the LORD. ¹⁶ Thus says the LORD, Stand ye in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk therein, and ye shall find rest for your souls. But they said, We will not walk therein. ¹⁷ Also I set watchmen over you, saying, Harken to the sound of the trumpet. But they said, We will not hearken.

(17)¹⁸ Therefore hear, ye nations, and know, O assembly, what is among them. ¹⁹ Hear, O earth: behold, I will bring evil upon this people, even the fruit of their thoughts, because they have not listened to my words, nor to my law, but rejected it. ²⁰ To what purpose comes there to me incense from Sheba, and the sweet cane from a far country? your burnt offerings are not acceptable, nor your sacrifices sweet to me. ²¹ Therefore thus says the LORD, Behold, I will lay stumbling blocks before this people, and the fathers and the sons together shall fall upon them; the neighbor and his friend shall perish. ²² Thus says the LORD, Behold, a people comes from the north country, and a great nation shall be raised from the sides of the earth. ²³ They shall lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel, and have no mercy; their voice roars like the sea; and they ride upon horses, set in array as men for war against you, O daughter of Zion. ²⁴ We have heard the fame thereof: our hands grow feeble: anguish has taken hold of us, and pain, as of a woman in travail. ²⁵ Go not forth into the field, nor walk by the way; for the sword of the enemy and fear is on every side.

(18)²⁶ O daughter of my people, gird you with sackcloth, and wallow yourself in ashes: make mourning, as for an only son, most bitter lamentation: for the spoiler shall suddenly come upon us. ²⁷ I have set you for a tower and a fortress among my people, that you may know and try their way. ²⁸ They are all grievous revolvers, walking with slanders: they are brass and iron; they are all corrupters. ²⁹ The bellows are burned, the lead is consumed of the fire; the founder melts in vain: for the wicked are not plucked away. ³⁰ Reprobate silver shall men call them, because the LORD has rejected them.

Trusting in Lying Words

(19) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ² Stand in the gate of the LORD'S house, and proclaim there this word, and say, Hear the word of the LORD, all [ye of] Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship the LORD. ³ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, Amend your ways and your doings, and I will cause you to dwell in this place. ⁴ Trust ye not in lying words, saying, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, are these. ⁵ For if ye thoroughly amend your ways and your doings; if ye thoroughly execute judgment between a man and his neighbor; ⁶ [If] ye oppress not the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, and shed not innocent blood in this place, neither walk after other gods to your hurt: ⁷ Then will I cause you to dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers, for ever and ever.

(20) ⁸ Behold, ye trust in lying words, that cannot profit. ⁹ Will ye steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense to Baal, and walk after other gods whom ye know not; ¹⁰ And come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my name, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations? ¹¹ Is this house, which is called by my name, become a den of robbers in your eyes? Behold, even I have seen [it], says the LORD. ¹² But go ye now to my place which was in Shiloh, where I set my name at the first, and see what I did to it for the wickedness of my people Israel. ¹³ And now, because ye have done all these works, says the LORD, and I spoke to you, rising up early and speaking, but ye heard not; and I called you, but ye answered not; ¹⁴ Therefore will I do to [this] house, which is called by my name, wherein ye trust, and to the place which I gave to you and to your fathers, as I have done to Shiloh. ¹⁵ And I will cast you out of my sight, as I have cast out all your brethren, [even] the whole seed of Ephraim. ¹⁶ Therefore pray not you for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me: for I will not hear you.

(21) ¹⁷ See you not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem?
¹⁸ The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead [their] dough, to make cakes to the **queen of heaven**, and to pour out drink offerings to other gods, that they may provoke me to anger. ¹⁹ Do they provoke me to anger? says the LORD: [do they] not [provoke] themselves to the confusion of their own faces? ²⁰ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, my anger and my fury shall be poured out upon this place, upon man, and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched. ²¹ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Put your burnt offerings to your sacrifices, and eat flesh. ²² For I spoke not to your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning burnt offerings or sacrifices: ²³ But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well to you. ²⁴ But they listened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels [and] in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward. ²⁵ Since the day that your fathers came forth out of the land of Egypt to this day I have even sent to you all my servants the prophets, daily rising up early and sending them: ²⁶ Yet they listened not to me, nor inclined their ear, but hardened their neck: they did worse than their fathers. ²⁷ Therefore you shall speak all these words to them; but they will not hearken to you: you shall also call to them; but they will not answer you. ²⁸ But you shall say to them, This is a nation that obeys not the voice of the LORD their God, nor receives correction: truth is perished, and is cut off from their mouth.

(22) ²⁹ Cut off your hair, [O Jerusalem], and cast [it] away, and take up a lamentation on high places; for the LORD has rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath. ³⁰ For the children of Judah have done evil in my sight, says the LORD: they have set their abominations in the house which is called by my name, to pollute it. ³¹ And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart. ³² Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Tophet, till there be no place. ³³ And the carcasses of this people shall be meat for the fowls of the heaven, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall fray them away. ³⁴ Then will I cause to cease from the cities of Judah, and from the streets of Jerusalem, the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride: for the land shall be desolate.

Jeremiah Chapter 8

(23) ¹ At that time, says the LORD, they shall bring out the bones of the kings of Judah, and the bones of his princes, and the bones of the priests, and the bones of the prophets, and the bones of the inhabitants of Jerusalem, out of their graves: ² And they shall spread them before the sun, and the moon, and all the host of heaven, whom they have loved, and whom they have served, and after whom they have walked, and whom they have sought, and whom they have worshipped: they shall not be gathered, nor be buried; they shall be for dung upon the face of the earth. ³ And death shall be chosen rather than life by all the residue of them that remain of this evil family, which remain in all the places where I have driven them, says the LORD of hosts.

The Perils of False Teaching

⁴ Moreover you shall say to them, Thus says the LORD; Shall they fall, and not arise? shall he turn away, and not return? ⁵ Why [then] is this people of Jerusalem slidden back by a perpetual backsliding? they hold fast deceit, they refuse to return. ⁶ I listened and heard, [but] they spoke not aright: no man repented him of his wickedness, saying, What have I done? everyone turned to his course, as the horse rushes into the battle. ⁷ Yes, the stork in the heaven knows her appointed times; and the turtle and the crane and the swallow observe the time of their coming; but my people know not the judgment of the LORD. ⁸ How do ye say, We are wise, and the law of the LORD is with us? Look, certainly in vain made he [it]; the pen of the scribes is in vain. ⁹ The wise [men] are ashamed, they are dismayed and taken: look, they have rejected the word of the LORD; and what wisdom is in them? ¹⁰ Therefore will I give their wives to others, [and] their fields to them that shall inherit them: for everyone from the least even to the great is given to covetousness, from the prophet even to the priest everyone deals falsely. ¹¹ For they have healed the hurt of the daughter of my people slightly, saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace. ¹² Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? no, they were not at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore they will fall among them that fall: in the time of their visitation they shall be cast down, says the LORD.

(24) ¹³ I will surely consume them, says the LORD: [there shall be] no grapes on the vine, nor figs on the fig tree, and the leaf shall fade; and [the things that] I have given them shall pass away from them. ¹⁴ Why do we sit still? assemble yourselves, and let us enter into the defended cities, and let us be silent there: for the LORD our God has put us to silence, and given us water of gall to drink, because we have sinned against the LORD. ¹⁵ We looked for peace, but no good [came; and] for a time of health, and behold trouble! ¹⁶ The snorting of his horses was heard from Dan: the whole land trembled at the sound of the neighing of his strong ones; for they are come, and have devoured the land, and all that is in it; the city, and those that dwell therein. ¹⁷ For, behold, I will send serpents, cockatrices, among you, which [will] not [be] charmed, and they shall bite you, says the LORD.

Prophet Mourns for People

¹⁸ [When] I would comfort myself against sorrow, my heart is faint in me. ¹⁹ Behold the voice of the cry of the daughter of my people because of them that dwell in a far country: [Is] not the LORD in Zion? is not her king in her? **Why have they provoked me to anger with their graven images, [and] with strange vanities?** ²⁰ The harvest is past, the summer is ended, and we are not saved. ²¹ For the hurt of the daughter of my people am I hurt; I am black; astonishment has taken hold on me. ²² [Is there] no balm in Gilead; [is there] no physician there? why then is not the health of the daughter of my people recovered?

(25) ¹ Oh that my head were waters, and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people! ² Oh that I had in the wilderness a lodging place of wayfaring men; that I might leave my people, and go from them! for they [be] all adulterers, an assembly of treacherous men. ³ And they bend their languages [like] their bow [for] lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not me, says the LORD.

⁴ Take ye heed every one of his neighbor, and trust ye not in any brother: for every brother will utterly supplant, and every neighbor will walk with slanders. ⁵ And they will deceive everyone his neighbor, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, [and] weary themselves to commit iniquity. ⁶ Your habitation is in the midst of deceit; through deceit they refuse to know me, says the LORD. ⁷ Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, Behold, I will melt them, and try them; for how shall I do for the daughter of my people? ⁸ Their tongue [is as] an arrow shot out; it speaks deceit: [one] speaks peaceably to his neighbor with his mouth, but in heart he lays his wait.

(26) ⁹ Shall I not visit them for these [things]? says the LORD: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? ¹⁰ For the mountains will I take up a weeping and wailing, and for the habitations of the wilderness a lamentation, because they are burned up, so that none can pass through them; neither can [men] hear the voice of the cattle; both the fowl of the heavens and the beast are fled; they are gone. ¹¹ And I will make Jerusalem heaps, [and] a den of dragons; and I will make the cities of Judah desolate, without an inhabitant. ¹² Who is the wise man, that may understand this? and [who is he] to whom the mouth of the LORD has spoken, that he may declare it, for what the land perishes [and] is burned up like a wilderness, that none passes through? ¹³ And the LORD says, Because they have forsaken my law which I set before them, and have not obeyed my voice, neither walked therein; ¹⁴ But have walked after the imagination of their own heart, and after Baalim, which their fathers taught them: ¹⁵ Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will feed them, [even] this people, with wormwood, and give them water of gall to drink. ¹⁶ I will scatter them also among the heathen, whom neither they nor their fathers have known: and I will send a sword after them, till I have consumed them.

People Mourn in Judgment

(27) ¹⁷ Thus says the LORD of hosts, Consider ye, and call for the mourning women, that they may come; and send for cunning [women], that they may come: ¹⁸ And let them make haste, and take up a wailing for us, that our eyes may run down with tears, and our eyelids gush out with waters. ¹⁹ For a voice of wailing is heard out of Zion, How are we spoiled! we are greatly confounded, because we have forsaken the land, because our dwellings have cast [us] out. ²⁰ Yet hear the word of the LORD, O ye women, and let your ear receive the word of his mouth, and teach your daughters wailing, and everyone her neighbor lamentation. ²¹ For death is come up into our windows, [and] is entered into our palaces, to cut off the children from without, [and] the young men from the streets. ²² Speak, Thus says the LORD, Even the carcasses of men shall fall as dung upon the open field, and as the handful after the harvestman, and none shall gather them.

(28) ²³ Thus says the LORD, Let not the wise [man] glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty [man] glory in his might, let not the rich [man] glory in his riches: ²⁴ But let him that glories glory in this, that he understands and knows me, that I [am] the LORD which exercise loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these [things] I delight, says the LORD. ²⁵ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will punish all [them which are] circumcised with the uncircumcised; ²⁶ Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all [that are] in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all [these] nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart.

Q1 - How is man in Jeremiah 9:23 the same as man in the New Testament?

A1 - Not many wise, mighty, or rich are called (1 Corinthians 1:26).

A2 - Both the kingdom of Judah and the local congregation of Corinth are backslidden.

Q2 - How is God in Jeremiah 9:24 the same as God in the New Testament?

A1 - He exercises loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth.

A2 - The order of loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness is for Christ followers today.

Encouragement: Beginning each day in prayer and the Scriptures leads us understand and know the Lord in this morally dark world. ² Peter 1:19 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; where ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts:

Idols and the True God

(29) ¹ Hear ye the word which the LORD speaks to you, O house of Israel: ² Thus says the LORD, **Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them.** ³ For the customs of the people are vain: for [one] cuts a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. ⁴ They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not. ⁵ They are upright as the palm tree, but speak not: they must needs be borne, because they cannot go. **Be not afraid of them; for they cannot do evil, neither also [is it] in them to do good.** ⁶ Forasmuch as there is none like to you, O LORD; you are great, and your name is great in might. ⁷ Who would not fear you, O King of nations? for to you does it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise [men] of the nations, and in all their kingdoms, there is none like to you. ⁸ But they are altogether brutish and foolish: the stock is a doctrine of vanities. ⁹ Silver spread into plates is brought from Tarshish, and gold from Uphaz, the work of the workman, and of the hands of the founder: blue and purple is their clothing: they are all the work of cunning [men]. ¹⁰ But the LORD is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation. ¹¹ Thus shall ye say to them, The gods that have not made the heavens and the earth, [even] they shall perish from the earth, and from under these heavens. ¹² He has made the earth by his power, he has established the world by his wisdom, and has stretched out the heavens by his discretion. ¹³ When he utters his voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens, and he causes the vapors to ascend from the ends of the earth; he makes lightnings with rain, and brings forth the wind out of his treasures. ¹⁴ Every man is brutish in [his] knowledge: every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. ¹⁵ They are vanity, [and] the work of errors: in the time of their visitation they shall perish. ¹⁶ The portion of Jacob is not like them: for he is the former of all [things]; and Israel is the rod of his inheritance: The LORD of hosts is his name.

(30) ¹⁷ Gather up your wares out of the land, O inhabitant of the fortress. ¹⁸ For thus says the LORD, **Behold, I will sling out the inhabitants of the land at this once, and will distress them, that they may find [it so].** ¹⁹ Woe is me for my hurt! my wound is grievous: but I said, Truly this is a grief, and I must bear it. ²⁰ My tabernacle is spoiled, and all my cords are broken: my children are gone forth of me, and they are not: there is none to stretch forth my tent anymore, and to set up my curtains. ²¹ For the shepherds are become brutish, and have not sought the LORD: therefore they shall not prosper, and all their flocks shall be scattered. ²² Behold, the noise of the report is come, and a great commotion out of the north country, to make the cities of Judah desolate, [and] a den of dragons. ²³ O LORD, I know that the way of man is not in himself: [it is] not in man that walks to direct his steps. ²⁴ O LORD, correct me, but with judgment; not in your anger, lest you bring me to nothing. ²⁵ Pour out your fury upon the heathen that know you not, and upon the families that call not on your name: for they have eaten up Jacob, and devoured him, and consumed him, and have made his habitation desolate.

A Broken Covenant

(31) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ² Hear ye the words of this covenant, and speak to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem; ³ And say you to them, Thus says the LORD God of Israel; Cursed [be] the man that obeys not the words of this covenant, ⁴ Which I commanded your fathers in the day [that] I brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, from the iron furnace, saying, Obey my voice, and do them, according to all which I command you: so shall ye be my people, and I will be your God: ⁵ That I may perform the oath which I have sworn to your fathers, to give them a land flowing with milk and honey, as [it is] this day. Then answered I, and said, So be it, O LORD. ⁶ Then the LORD said to me, Proclaim all these words in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, saying, Hear ye the words of this covenant, and do them. ⁷ For I earnestly protested to your fathers in the day [that] I brought them up out of the land of Egypt, [even] to this day, rising early and protesting, saying, Obey my voice. ⁸ Yet they obeyed not, nor inclined their ear, but walked everyone in the imagination of their evil heart: therefore I will bring upon them all the words of this covenant, which I commanded them to do; but they did them not. ⁹ And the LORD said to me, A conspiracy is found among the men of Judah, and among the inhabitants of Jerusalem. ¹⁰ They are turned back to the iniquities of their forefathers, which refused to hear my words; and they went after other gods to serve them: the house of Israel and the house of Judah have broken my covenant which I made with their fathers.

Pray Not for this People

(32) ¹¹ Therefore thus says the LORD, Behold, I will bring evil upon them, which they shall not be able to escape; and though they shall cry to me, I will not hearken to them. ¹² Then shall the cities of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem go, and cry to the gods to whom they offer incense: but they shall not save them at all in the time of their trouble. ¹³ For [according to] the number of your cities were your gods, O Judah; and [according to] the number of the streets of Jerusalem have ye set up altars to [that] shameful thing, [even] altars to burn incense to Baal. ¹⁴ Therefore pray not you for this people, neither lift up a cry or prayer for them: for I will not hear them in the time that they cry to me for their trouble. ¹⁵ What has my beloved to do in my house, [seeing] she has worked lewdness with many, and the holy flesh is passed from you? when you do evil, then you rejoice. ¹⁶ The LORD called your name, A green olive tree, fair, [and] of goodly fruit: with the noise of a great tumult he has kindled fire upon it, and the branches of it are broken. ¹⁷ For the LORD of hosts, that planted you, has pronounced evil against you, for the evil of the house of Israel and of the house of Judah, which they have done against themselves to provoke me to anger in offering incense to Baal.

Jeremiah's Life Threatened

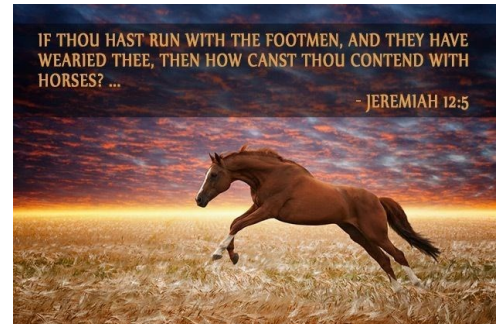
(33) ¹⁸ And the LORD has given me knowledge [of it], and I know [it]: then you showed me their doings. ¹⁹ But I was like a lamb [or] an ox [that] is brought to the slaughter; and I knew not that they had devised devices against me, [saying], Let us destroy the tree with the fruit thereof, and let us cut him off from the land of the living, that his name may be no more remembered. ²⁰ But, O LORD of hosts, that judges righteously, that try the reins and the heart, let me see your vengeance on them: for to you I have revealed my cause. ²¹ Therefore thus says the LORD of the men of Anathoth, that seek your life, saying, Prophecy not in the name of the LORD, that you die not by our hand: ²² Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, Behold, I will punish them: the young men shall die by the sword; their sons and their daughters shall die by famine: ²³ And there shall be no remnant of them: for I will bring evil upon the men of Anathoth, [even] the year of their visitation.

Jeremiah's Question

(34) ¹ Righteous are you, O LORD, when I plead with you: yet let me talk with you of [your] judgments: Wherefore does the way of the wicked prosper? [wherefore] are all they happy that deal very treacherously? ² You have planted them, yes, they have taken root: they grow, yes, they bring forth fruit: you are near in their mouth, and far from their reins. ³ But you, O LORD, know me: you have seen me, and tried my heart toward you: pull them out like sheep for the slaughter, and prepare them for the day of slaughter. ⁴ How long shall the land mourn, and the herbs of every field wither, for the wickedness of them that dwell therein? the beasts are consumed, and the birds; because they said, He shall not see our last end.

The Lord's Answer

⁵ If you have run with the footmen, and they have wearied you, then how can you contend with horses? and [if] in the land of peace, [wherein] you trusted, [they wearied you], then how will you do in the swelling of Jordan? ⁶ For even your brethren, and the house of your father, even they have dealt treacherously with you; yes, they have called a multitude after you: believe them not, though they speak fair words to you.



(35) ⁷ I have forsaken my house, I have left my heritage; I have given the dearly beloved of my soul into the hand of her enemies. ⁸ My heritage is to me as a lion in the forest; it cries out against me: therefore I have hated it. ⁹ My heritage is to me [as] a speckled bird, the birds round about are against her; come ye, assemble all the beasts of the field, come to devour. ¹⁰ Many pastors have destroyed my vineyard, they have trodden my portion under foot, they have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness. ¹¹ They have made it desolate, [and being] desolate it mourns to me; the whole land is made desolate, because no man lays [it] to heart. ¹² The spoilers are come upon all high places through the wilderness: for the sword of the LORD shall devour from the [one] end of the land even to the [other] end of the land: no flesh shall have peace. ¹³ They have sown wheat, but shall reap thorns: they have put themselves to pain, [but] shall not profit: and they shall be ashamed of your revenues because of the fierce anger of the LORD.

Promise to Gentile Nations

(36) ¹⁴ Thus says the LORD against all my evil neighbors, that touch the inheritance which I have caused my people Israel to inherit; Behold, I will pluck them out of their land, and pluck out the house of Judah from among them. ¹⁵ And it shall come to pass, after that I have plucked them out I will return, and have compassion on them, and will bring them again, every man to his heritage, and every man to his land. ¹⁶ And it shall come to pass, if they will diligently learn the ways of my people, to swear by my name, The LORD lives; as they taught my people to swear by Baal; then they will be built in the midst of my people. ¹⁷ But if they will not obey, I will utterly pluck up and destroy that nation, says the LORD.

Illustration of the Soiled Linen Girdle

(37) ¹ Thus says the LORD unto me, **Go and get you a linen girdle, and put it upon your loins, and put it not in water.** ² So I got a girdle according to the word of the LORD, and put [it] on my loins. ³ And the word of the LORD came to me the second time, saying, ⁴ **Take the girdle that you have got, which is upon your loins, and arise, go to Euphrates, and hide it there in a hole of the rock.** ⁵ So I went, and hid it by Euphrates, as the LORD commanded me. ⁶ And it came to pass after many days, that the LORD said to me, **Arise, go to Euphrates, and take the girdle from there, which I commanded you to hide there.** ⁷ Then I went to Euphrates, and digged, and took the girdle from the place where I had hid it: and, behold, the girdle was marred, it was profitable for nothing. ⁸ Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁹ **Thus says the LORD, After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem.** ¹⁰ **This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing.** ¹¹ **For as the girdle cleaves to the loins of a man, so I have caused to cleave to me the whole house of Israel and the whole house of Judah, says the LORD; that they might be to me for a people, and for a name, and for a praise, and for a glory: but they would not hear.**

Illustration of the Wine Bottles

(38) ¹² **Therefore you shall speak to them this word; Thus says the LORD God of Israel, Every bottle shall be filled with wine: and they shall say to you, Do we not certainly know that every bottle shall be filled with wine?** ¹³ **Then shall you say to them, Thus says the LORD, Behold, I will fill all the inhabitants of this land, even the kings that sit upon David's throne, and the priests, and the prophets, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, with drunkenness.** ¹⁴ **And I will dash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, says the LORD: I will not pity, nor spare, nor have mercy, but destroy them.** ¹⁵ **Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud:** for the LORD has spoken. ¹⁶ **Give glory to the LORD your God, before he cause darkness, and before your feet stumble upon the dark mountains, and, while ye look for light, he turn it into the shadow of death, [and] make [it] gross darkness.** ¹⁷ **But if ye will not hear it, my soul shall weep in secret places for [your] pride; and my eye shall weep sore, and run down with tears, because the LORD'S flock is carried away captive.** ¹⁸ **Say to the king and to the queen, Humble yourselves, sit down: for your principalities shall come down, [even] the crown of your glory.** ¹⁹ **The cities of the south shall be shut up, and none shall open them: Judah shall be carried away captive all of it, it shall be wholly carried away captive.** ²⁰ **Lift up your eyes, and behold them that come from the north: where is the flock [that] was given you, your beautiful flock?** ²¹ **What will you say when he shall punish you? for you have taught them [to be] captains, [and] as chief over you: shall not sorrows take you, as a woman in travail?**

(39) ²² **And if you say in your heart, Wherefore come these things upon me? For the greatness of your iniquity are your skirts discovered, [and] your heels made bare.** ²³ **Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots? [then] may ye also do good, that are accustomed to do evil.** ²⁴ **Therefore will I scatter them as the stubble that passes away by the wind of the wilderness.** ²⁵ **This is your lot, the portion of your measures from me, says the LORD; because you have forgotten me, and trusted in falsehood.** ²⁶ **Therefore will I discover your skirts upon your face, that your shame may appear.** ²⁷ **I have seen your adulteries, and your neighings, the lewdness of your whoredom, [and] your abominations on the hills in the fields. Woe to you, O Jerusalem! will you not be made clean? when [shall it] once [be]?**

Jeremiah Chapter 14

Sword, Famine and Pestilence

(40) ¹ The word of the LORD that came to Jeremiah concerning the dearth. ² Judah mourns, and the gates thereof languish; they are black to the ground; and the cry of Jerusalem is gone up. ³ And their nobles have sent their little ones to the waters: they came to the pits, [and] found no water; they returned with their vessels empty; they were ashamed and confounded, and covered their heads. ⁴ Because the ground is chapped, for there was no rain in the earth, the plowmen were ashamed, they covered their heads. ⁵ Yes, the hind also calved in the field, and forsook [it], because there was no grass. ⁶ And the wild donkeys did stand in the high places, they snuffed up the wind like dragons; their eyes did fail, because [there was] no grass. ⁷ O LORD, though our iniquities testify against us, do you [it] for your name's sake: for our backslidings are many; we have sinned against you. ⁸ O the hope of Israel, the savior thereof in time of trouble, why should you be as a stranger in the land, and as a wayfaring man [that] turns aside to tarry for a night? ⁹ Why should you be as a man astonished, as a mighty man [that] cannot save? yet you, O LORD, are in the midst of us, and we are called by your name; leave us not. ¹⁰ Thus says the LORD to this people, *Thus have they loved to wander, they have not refrained their feet, therefore the LORD does not accept them; he will now remember their iniquity, and visit their sins.* ¹¹ Then said the LORD unto me, *Pray not for this people for [their] good.* ¹² *When they fast, I will not hear their cry; and when they offer burnt offering and an oblation, I will not accept them: but I will consume them by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence.*

(41) ¹³ Then said I, Ah, Lord GOD! behold, the prophets say to them, Ye shall not see the sword, neither shall ye have famine; but I will give you assured peace in this place. ¹⁴ Then the LORD said to me, *The prophets prophesy lies in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spoke to them: they prophesy to you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nothing, and the deceit of their heart.* ¹⁵ *Therefore thus says the LORD concerning the prophets that prophesy in my name, and I sent them not, yet they say, Sword and famine shall not be in this land; By sword and famine shall those prophets be consumed.* ¹⁶ *And the people to whom they prophesy shall be cast out in the streets of Jerusalem because of the famine and the sword; and they shall have none to bury them, them, their wives, nor their sons, nor their daughters: for I will pour their wickedness upon them.* ¹⁷ *Therefore you shall say this word to them; Let my eyes run down with tears night and day, and let them not cease: for the virgin daughter of my people is broken with a great breach, with a very grievous blow.* ¹⁸ *If I go forth into the field, then behold the slain with the sword! and if I enter into the city, then behold them that are sick with famine! yes, both the prophet and the priest go about into a land that they know not.* ¹⁹ *Have you utterly rejected Judah? has your soul loathed Zion? why have you smitten us, and there is no healing for us? we looked for peace, and there is no good; and for the time of healing, and behold trouble!* ²⁰ *We acknowledge, O LORD, our wickedness, [and] the iniquity of our fathers: for we have sinned against you.* ²¹ *Do not abhor [us], for your name's sake, do not disgrace the throne of your glory: remember, break not your covenant with us.* ²² *Are there [any] among the vanities of the Gentiles that can cause rain? or can the heavens give showers? are not you he, O LORD our God? therefore we will wait upon you: for you have made all these [things].*

Jeremiah Chapter 15

(42) ¹ Then said the LORD unto me, Though Moses and Samuel stood before me, [yet] my mind [could] not [be] toward this people: cast them out of my sight, and let them go forth. ² And it shall come to pass, if they say to you, Where shall we go forth? then you shall tell them, Thus says the LORD; Such as are for death, to death; and such as are for the sword, to the sword; and such as are for the famine, to the famine; and such as are for the captivity, to the captivity. ³ And I will appoint over them four kinds, says the LORD: the sword to slay, and the dogs to tear, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the earth, to devour and destroy. ⁴ And I will cause them to be removed into all kingdoms of the earth, because of Manasseh the son of Hezekiah king of Judah, for [that] which he did in Jerusalem. ⁵ For who shall have pity upon you, O Jerusalem? or who shall bemoan you? or who shall go aside to ask how you do? ⁶ You have forsaken me, says the LORD, you are gone backward: therefore will I stretch out my hand against you, and destroy you; I am weary with repenting. ⁷ And I will fan them with a fan in the gates of the land; I will bereave them of children, I will destroy my people, [since] they return not from their ways. ⁸ Their widows are increased to me above the sand of the seas: I have brought upon them against the mother of the young men a spoiler at noonday: I have caused [him] to fall upon it suddenly, and terrors upon the city. ⁹ She that has borne seven languishes: she has given up the spirit; her sun is gone down while [it was] yet day: she has been ashamed and confounded: and the residue of them will I deliver to the sword before their enemies, says the LORD. ¹⁰ Woe is me, my mother, that you have borne me a man of strife and a man of contention to the whole earth! I have neither lent on usury, nor men have lent to me on usury; [yet] every one of them does curse me. ¹¹ The LORD said, Verily it shall be well with your remnant; verily I will cause the enemy to entreat you [well] in the time of evil and in the time of affliction. ¹² Shall iron break the northern iron and the steel? ¹³ Your substance and your treasures will I give to the spoil without price, and [that] for all your sins, even in all your borders. ¹⁴ And I will make [you] to pass with your enemies into a land [which] you know not: for a fire is kindled in my anger, [which] shall burn upon you.

(43) ¹⁵ O LORD, you know: remember me, and visit me, and revenge me of my persecutors; take me not away in your longsuffering: know that for your sake I have permitted rebuke. ¹⁶ **Your words were found, and I did eat them; and your word was to me the joy and rejoicing of my heart:** for I am called by your name, O LORD God of hosts. ¹⁷ I sat not in the assembly of the mockers, nor rejoiced; I sat alone because of your hand: for you have filled me with indignation. ¹⁸ Why is my pain perpetual, and my wound incurable, [which] refuses to be healed? will you be altogether to me as a liar, [and as] waters [that] fail? ¹⁹ Therefore thus says the LORD, If you return, then will I bring you again, [and] you shall stand before me: and if you take forth the precious from the vile, you shall be as my mouth: let them return to you; but return not you to them. ²⁰ And I will make you to this people a fenced brazen wall: and they shall fight against you, but they shall not prevail against you: for I [am] with you to save you and to deliver you, says the LORD. ²¹ And I will deliver you out of the hand of the wicked, and I will redeem you out of the hand of the terrible.

Jeremiah Chapter 16

(44) ¹ The word of the LORD came also to me, saying, ² You shall not take you a wife, neither shall you have sons or daughters in this place. ³ For thus says the LORD concerning the sons and concerning the daughters that are born in this place, and concerning their mothers that bare them, and concerning their fathers that begat them in this land; ⁴ They shall die of grievous deaths; they shall not be lamented; neither shall they be buried; [but] they shall be as dung upon the face of the earth: and they shall be consumed by the sword, and by famine; and their carcasses shall be meat for the fowls of heaven, and for the beasts of the earth. ⁵ For thus says the LORD, Enter not into the house of mourning, neither go to lament nor bemoan them: for I have taken away my peace from this people, says the LORD, [even] loving-kindness and mercies. ⁶ Both the great and the small shall die in this land: they shall not be buried, neither shall [men] lament for them, nor cut themselves, nor make themselves bald for them: ⁷ Neither shall [men] tear [themselves] for them in mourning, to comfort them for the dead; neither shall [men] give them the cup of consolation to drink for their father or for their mother. ⁸ You shall not also go into the house of feasting, to sit with them to eat and to drink. ⁹ For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will cause to cease out of this place in your eyes, and in your days, the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride.

Jeremiah Chapter 16

(45) ¹⁰ And it shall come to pass, when you shall show this people all these words, and they shall say to you, Wherefore has the LORD pronounced all this great evil against us? or what is our iniquity? or what is our sin that we have committed against the LORD our God? ¹¹ Then shall you say to them, Because your fathers have forsaken me, says the LORD, and have walked after other gods, and have served them, and have worshipped them, and have forsaken me, and have not kept my law; ¹² And ye have done worse than your fathers; for, behold, ye walk everyone after the imagination of his evil heart, that they may not hearken to me: ¹³ Therefore will I cast you out of this land into a land that ye know not, [neither] ye nor your fathers; and there shall ye serve other gods day and night; where I will not show you favor. ¹⁴ Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that it shall no more be said, The LORD lives, that brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; ¹⁵ But, The LORD lives, that brought up the children of Israel from the land of the north, and from all the lands where he had driven them: and I will bring them again into their land that I gave to their fathers. ¹⁶ Behold, I will send for many fishers, says the LORD, and they shall fish them; and after will I send for many hunters, and they shall hunt them from every mountain, and from every hill, and out of the holes of the rocks. ¹⁷ For my eyes are upon all their ways: they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from my eyes. ¹⁸ And first I will recompense their iniquity and their sin double; because they have defiled my land, they have filled my inheritance with the carcasses of their detestable and abominable things. ¹⁹ O LORD, my strength, and my fortress, and my refuge in the day of affliction, the Gentiles shall come to you from the ends of the earth, and shall say, Surely our fathers have inherited lies, vanity, and [things] wherein there is no profit. ²⁰ Shall a man make gods to himself, and they are no gods? ²¹ Therefore, behold, I will this once cause them to know, I will cause them to know my hand and my might; and they shall know that my name is The LORD.

Jeremiah Chapter 17

How to be Blessed Living among the Cursed

(46) ¹ The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, [and] with the point of a diamond: [it is] graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars; ² While their children remember their altars and their groves by the green trees upon the high hills. ³ O my mountain in the field, I will give your substance [and] all your treasures to the spoil, [and] your high places for sin, throughout all your borders. ⁴ And you, even thyself, shall discontinue from your heritage that I gave you; and I will cause you to serve your enemies in the land which you know not: for ye have kindled a fire in my anger, [which] shall burn forever. ⁵ Thus says the LORD; Cursed [be] the man that trusts in man, and makes flesh his arm, and whose heart departs from the LORD. ⁶ For he shall be like the heath in the desert, and shall not see when good comes; but shall inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, [in] a salt land and not inhabited. ⁷ Blessed is the man that trusts in the LORD, and whose hope the LORD is. ⁸ For he shall be as a tree planted by the waters, and [that] spreads out her roots by the river, and shall not see when heat comes, but her leaf shall be green; and shall not be careful in the year of drought, neither shall cease from yielding fruit. ⁹ ^a The heart is deceitful above all [things], and desperately wicked: who can know it? ¹⁰ I the LORD search the heart, [I] try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, [and] according to the fruit of his doings. ¹¹ [As] the partridge sits [on eggs], and hatches them not; [so] he that gets riches, and not by right, shall leave them in the midst of his days, and at his end shall be a fool. ¹² A glorious high throne from the beginning is the place of our sanctuary. ¹³ O LORD, the hope of Israel, all that forsake you shall be ashamed, [and] they that depart from me shall be written in the earth, because they have forsaken the LORD, the fountain of living waters. ¹⁴ Heal me, O LORD, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for you are my praise. ¹⁵ Behold, they say to me, Where is the word of the LORD? let it come now. ¹⁶ As for me, I have not hastened from [being] a pastor to follow you: neither have I desired the woeful day; you know: that which came out of my lips was [right] before you. ¹⁷ Be not a terror to me: you are my hope in the day of evil. ¹⁸ Let them be confounded that persecute me, but let not me be confounded: let them be dismayed, but let not me be dismayed: bring upon them the day of evil, and destroy them with double destruction.

^a The heart is deceitful above all [things], and desperately wicked: who can know it? This verse must be interpreted in the immediate context. Jeremiah's heart was not deceitful, neither is the blessed man of vs 7-8, compared to Psalm 1.

Jeremiah Chapter 17

Honor the Sabbath

(47) ¹⁹ Thus said the LORD unto me; Go and stand in the gate of the children of the people, whereby the kings of Judah come in, and by the which they go out, and in all the gates of Jerusalem; ²⁰ And say to them, Hear ye the word of the LORD, ye kings of Judah, and all Judah, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, that enter in by these gates: ²¹ Thus says the LORD; Take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the sabbath day, nor bring [it] in by the gates of Jerusalem; ²² Neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the sabbath day, neither do ye any work, but hallow ye the sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers. ²³ But they obeyed not, neither inclined their ear, but made their neck stiff, that they might not hear, nor receive instruction. ²⁴ And it shall come to pass, if ye diligently hearken to me, says the LORD, to bring in no burden through the gates of this city on the sabbath day, but hallow the sabbath day, to do no work therein; ²⁵ Then shall there enter into the gates of this city kings and princes sitting upon the throne of David, riding in chariots and on horses, they, and their princes, the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem: and this city shall remain forever. ²⁶ And they shall come from the cities of Judah, and from the places about Jerusalem, and from the land of Benjamin, and from the plain, and from the mountains, and from the south, bringing burnt offerings, and sacrifices, and grain offerings, and incense, and bringing sacrifices of praise, to the house of the LORD. ²⁷ But if ye will not hearken to me to hallow the sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day; then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.

Jeremiah Chapters 18

The Potter and the Clay - Observe, Hear, and Speak

(Arise and Go) Observe - The Potter's Work

(48) ¹ The word which came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ² Arise, and go down to the potter's house, and there I will cause you to hear my words. ³ Then I went down to the potter's house, and, behold, he worked a work on the wheels. ⁴ And the vessel that he made of clay was marred in the hand of the potter: so he made it again another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make [it].



Application: I learn from the figures in the Old Testament (Hebrews 9:24 with the Tabernacle, and 1 Peter 3:21 with Noah's ark and water baptism). Today I am the clay and God is the potter. Philippians 1:6, "He that has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ" **if I diligently seek him.** Not fanatical or cultic, but balanced and in the power of the Holy Spirit. **Mar** is severe deformity to make unfit for its designed purpose. OT-Nation. NT-Individual believer: MT 18, Acts 6, 1 Cor 5, 1 Cor 9:27 (Paul castaway), the Lord's Supper in 1 Corinthians 11.

Hear - Return or See His Back

(49) ⁵ Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁶ O house of Israel, cannot I do with you as this potter? says the LORD. Behold, as the clay is in the potter's hand, so are ye in my hand, O house of Israel. ⁷ [At what] instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to pluck up, and to pull down, and to destroy [it]; ⁸ If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do to them. ⁹ And [at what] instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant [it]; ¹⁰ If it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them.

Jeremiah Chapters 18

(Go) Speak – Return from your evil way

¹¹ Now therefore go to, speak to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, thus says the LORD; Behold, I frame evil against you, and devise a device against you: return ye now everyone from his evil way, and make your ways and your doings good. ¹² And they said, There is no hope: but we will walk after our own devices, and we will everyone do the imagination of his evil heart. ¹³ Therefore thus says the LORD; Ask ye now among the heathen, who has heard such things: the virgin of Israel has done a very horrible thing. ¹⁴ Will [a man] leave the snow of Lebanon [which comes] from the rock of the field? [or] shall the cold flowing waters that come from another place be forsaken? ¹⁵ Because my people has forgotten me, they have burned incense to vanity, and they have caused them to stumble in their ways [from] the ancient paths, to walk in paths, [in] a way not cast up; ¹⁶ To make their land desolate, [and] a perpetual hissing; everyone that passes thereby shall be astonished, and wag his head. ¹⁷ I will scatter them as with an east wind before the enemy; I will show them the back, and not the face, in the day of their calamity.

Persecuted - 18:18-23

(50) ¹⁸ Then said they, Come, and let us devise devices against Jeremiah; for the law shall not perish from the priest, nor counsel from the wise, nor the word from the prophet. Come, and let us smite him with the tongue, and let us not give heed to any of his words. ¹⁹ Give heed to me, O LORD, and hearken to the voice of them that contend with me. ²⁰ Shall evil be recompensed for good? for they have digged a pit for my soul. Remember that I stood before you to speak good for them, [and] to turn away your wrath from them.

Old Testament Vengeance (verses New Testament: Matthew 5:11-12, 38-39, 43-44, Ro 12:19-21)

²¹ Therefore deliver up their children to the famine, and pour out their [blood] by the force of the sword; and let their wives be bereaved of their children, and [be] widows; and let their men be put to death; [let] their young men [be] slain by the sword in battle. ²² Let a cry be heard from their houses, when you shall bring a troop suddenly upon them: for they have digged a pit to take me, and hid snares for my feet. ²³ Yet, LORD, you know all their counsel against me to slay [me]: forgive not their iniquity, neither blot out their sin from your sight, but let them be overthrown before you; deal [thus] with them in the time of your anger.

Jeremiah Chapter 19

A Clay Bottle is Broken

Go – to Tophet and Break a Clay Bottle

(51) ¹ Thus says the LORD, **Go and get a potter's earthen bottle**, and [take] of the ancients of the people, and of the ancients of the priests; ² And go forth to the valley of the son of Hinnom, which is by the entry of the potter's gate, and proclaim there the words that I shall tell you, ³ And say, Hear ye the word of the LORD, O kings of Judah, and inhabitants of Jerusalem; Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring evil upon this place, the which whosoever hears, his ears shall tingle. ⁴ Because they have forsaken me, and have estranged this place, and have burned incense in it to other gods, whom neither they nor their fathers have known, nor the kings of Judah, and have filled this place with the blood of innocents; ⁵ They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire [for] burnt offerings to Baal, which I commanded not, nor spoke [it], neither came [it] into my mind: ⁶ Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that this place shall no more be called Tophet, nor The valley of the son of Hinnom, but The valley of slaughter. ⁷ And I will make void the counsel of Judah and Jerusalem in this place; and I will cause them to fall by the sword before their enemies, and by the hands of them that seek their lives: and their carcasses will I give to be meat for the fowls of the heaven, and for the beasts of the earth. ⁸ And I will make this city desolate, and a hissing; everyone that passes thereby shall be astonished and hiss because of all the plagues thereof. ⁹ And I will cause them to eat the flesh of their sons and the flesh of their daughters, and they shall eat everyone the flesh of his friend in the siege and hardship, wherewith their enemies, and they that seek their lives, shall oppress them. ¹⁰ Then shall you **break the bottle** in the sight of the men that go with you,

Jeremiah Chapter 19

Speak - about Tophet to Jerusalem

(52) ¹¹ And shall **say** to them, Thus says the LORD of hosts; Even so will I break this people and this city, as [one] breaks a potter's vessel, that cannot be made whole again: and they shall bury them in Tophet, till [there be] no place to bury. ¹² Thus will I do to this place, says the LORD, and to the inhabitants thereof, and [even] make this city as Tophet: ¹³ And the houses of Jerusalem, and the houses of the kings of Judah, shall be defiled as the place of Tophet, because of all the houses upon whose roofs they have burned incense to all the host of heaven, and have poured out drink offerings to other gods. ¹⁴ Then came Jeremiah from Tophet, where the LORD had sent him to prophesy; and he stood in the court of the LORD'S house; and said to all the people, ¹⁵ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring upon this city and upon all her towns all the evil that I have pronounced against it, because they have hardened their necks, that they might not hear my words.

Note: Tophet is the valley of the son of Hinnom (Joshua 15:8) and the valley of slaughter (vs 6). This is south west of Jerusalem where children were burnt as an offering to Baal. This same location is referred to in Nehemiah 3:13-15 as the dung gate and by Jesus in the Greek language as Gehenna. This is where Judas hung committed suicide and the Potter's field was purchased to bury him. The potter and clay figure is sung in "Have Thine Own Way, Lord" by Adelaide A. Pollard in 1902.

Jeremiah Chapter 20

Persecute

(53) ¹ Now Pashur the son of Immer the priest, who was also chief governor in the house of the LORD, heard that Jeremiah prophesied these things. ² Then Pashur smote Jeremiah the prophet, and put him in the stocks that [were] in the high gate of Benjamin, which was by the house of the LORD. ³ And it came to pass on the next day, that Pashur brought forth Jeremiah out of the stocks. Then said Jeremiah to him, The LORD has not called your name Pashur, but Magor-missabib.

Jeremiah's Response

⁴ For thus says the LORD, Behold, I will make you a terror to yourself, and to all your friends: and they shall fall by the sword of their enemies, and your eyes shall behold [it]: and I will give all Judah into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall carry them captive into Babylon, and shall slay them with the sword. ⁵ Moreover I will deliver all the strength of this city, and all the labors thereof, and all the precious things thereof, and all the treasures of the kings of Judah will I give into the hand of their enemies, which shall spoil them, and take them, and carry them to Babylon. ⁶ And you, Pashur, and all that dwell in your house shall go into captivity: and you shall come to Babylon, and there you shall die, and shall be buried there, you, and all your friends, to whom you have prophesied lies.

Q1 - What do the names of Pashur and Magor-messabib mean in Hebrew?

A - Pashur is "peace or tranquility." Magor-messabib is the opposite, "terror on every side."

Application: I must expect acceptance or rejection when speaking the truth of the LORD, and respond boldly to the false teachers (teachers because no prophets exist today, 2 Peter 2 and Jude)

QT Encouragement: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us discern between true and false teachers, the same as in Jeremiah's time.

Jeremiah Sorrows but Still Speaks for the LORD

(54) ⁷ O LORD, you have deceived me, and I was deceived: you are stronger than I, and have prevailed: I am in derision daily, everyone mocks me. ⁸ For since I spoke, I cried out, I cried violence and spoil; because the word of the LORD was made a reproach to me, and a derision, daily. ⁹ **Then I said, I will not make mention of him, nor speak anymore in his name. But [his word] was in my heart as a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary with forbearing, and I could not [stay].** ¹⁰ For I heard the defaming of many, fear on every side. Report, [say they], and we will report it. All my familiars watched for my halting, [saying], Peradventure he will be enticed, and we shall prevail against him, and we shall take our revenge on him. ¹¹ But the LORD is with me as a mighty terrible one: therefore my persecutors shall stumble, and they shall not prevail: they shall be greatly ashamed; for

they shall not prosper: [their] everlasting confusion shall never be forgotten. ¹² But, O LORD of hosts, that try the righteous, [and] see the reins and the heart, let me see your vengeance on them: for to you I have opened my cause. ¹³ Sing to the LORD, praise ye the LORD: for he has delivered the soul of the poor from the hand of evildoers. ¹⁴ Cursed [be] the day wherein I was born: let not the day wherein my mother bare me be blessed. ¹⁵ Cursed [be] the man who brought tidings to my father, saying, A man child is born to you; making him very glad. ¹⁶ And let that man be as the cities which the LORD overthrew, and repented not: and let him hear the cry in the morning, and the shouting at noontide; ¹⁷ Because he slew me not from the womb; or that my mother might have been my grave, and her womb [to be] always great [with me]. ¹⁸ Wherefore came I forth out of the womb to see labor and sorrow, that my days should be consumed with shame?

Jeremiah Chapter 21

King Zedekiah Requests Blessing

(55) (Request) ¹ The word which came to Jeremiah from the LORD, when king Zedekiah sent to him ^a Pashur the son of Melchiah, and Zephaniah the son of Maaseiah the priest saying, ² "Enquire, I pray you, of the LORD for us; for Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon makes war against us; if so be that the LORD will deal with us according to all his wondrous works, that he may go up from us."

^a King David began 24 orders of priests: Melchiah 5th, Maaseiah 24th. The deputy High Priest Pashur persecuted Jeremiah in 20:1-6 and 37:3, 38:1. Zephaniah is 2nd in charge, who is later slain by Nebuchadnezzar.

Jeremiah's 1st Reply – to King Zedekiah via two Priests

³ Then said Jeremiah to them, Thus shall ye say to Zedekiah ⁴ The LORD God of Israel says, "Behold, I will turn back the weapons of war that are in your hands, wherewith ye fight against the king of Babylon, and the Chaldeans, which besiege you outside the walls, and I will assemble them into the midst of this city. ⁵ And I myself will fight against you with an outstretched hand and with a strong arm, even in anger, and in fury, and in great wrath. ⁶ And I will smite the inhabitants of this city, both man and beast: they shall die of a great pestilence. ⁷ And afterward, says the LORD, I will deliver Zedekiah king of Judah, and his servants, and the people, and such as are left in this city ^a from the pestilence, from the sword, and from the famine, into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, and into the hand of their enemies, and into the hand of those that seek their life: and he shall smite them with the edge of the sword; he shall not spare them, neither have pity, nor have mercy."

^a Forms of Severe Judgment: The Four Horsemen, White-Conquering Crown, Red-War, Black-Famine, Pale-Pestilence, Rev 6:8.

Jeremiah's 2nd Reply – to the People

(56) (Reply 2) ⁸ And to this people you shall say, "Thus says the LORD; Behold, ^a I set before you the way of life, and the way of death. ⁹ He that abides in this city shall die by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence: but he that goes out, and falls to the Chaldeans that besiege you, he shall live, and his life shall be to him for a prey. ¹⁰ For I have set my face against this city for evil, and not for good, says the LORD: it shall be given into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall burn it with fire."

^a Deut 30:15-19. Note: Compare to the three levels of wisdom in Proverbs 16; the LORD, king, and individual person. The religious leaders are with or under the king and choose either good or evil and discern when to obey God or man. Acts 5:26-41 with the Pharisee Gamaliel and the Apostles.

QT Encouragement: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us discern good and evil kings and religious leaders. God gives the people their individual choice to follow the way of life or the way of death. This is the design of the U.S.A. Constitution based on the God of the Bible, beginning with "We the People" and Abraham Lincoln in the Gettysburg Address, "Government of the people, by the people, for the people shall not perish from the earth."

Jeremiah Chapter 21

Jeremiah's 3rd Reply – to the House of the King of Judah

(57) ¹¹ And concerning the house of the king of Judah, [say], Hear ye the word of the LORD; ¹² O house of David, thus says the LORD; "Execute judgment in the morning, and deliver [him that is] spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor, lest my fury go out like fire, and burn that none can quench [it], because of the evil of your doings. ¹³ Behold, I am against you, O inhabitant of the valley, and rock of the plain," says the LORD; You say, "Who shall come down against us? or who shall enter into our habitations?" ¹⁴ "But I will punish you according to the fruit of your doings," says the LORD: "and I will kindle a fire in the forest thereof, and it shall devour all things round about it."

Jeremiah Chapter 22

Hear the Word and Be Blessed

¹ Thus says the LORD; Go down to the house of the king of Judah, and speak there this word, ² And say, Hear the word of the LORD, O king of Judah, that sits upon the throne of David, you, and your servants, and your people that enter in by these gates: ³ Thus says the LORD; Execute ye judgment and righteousness, and deliver the spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor: and do no wrong, do no violence to the stranger, the fatherless, nor the widow, neither shed innocent blood in this place. ⁴ For if ye do this thing indeed, then shall there enter in by the gates of this house kings sitting upon the throne of David, riding in chariots and on horses, he, and his servants, and his people.

Do Not Hear the Word and Be Cursed

⁵ But if ye will not hear these words, I swear by myself, says the LORD, that this house shall become a desolation. ⁶ For thus says the LORD to the king's house of Judah; You are Gilead to me, [and] the head of Lebanon: [yet] surely I will make you a wilderness, [and] cities [which] are not inhabited. ⁷ And I will prepare destroyers against you, everyone with his weapons: and they shall cut down your choice cedars, and cast them into the fire. ⁸ And many nations shall pass by this city, and they shall say every man to his neighbor, Wherefore has the LORD done thus to this great city? ⁹ Then they shall answer, Because they have forsaken the covenant of the LORD their God, and worshipped other gods, and served them. ¹⁰ Weep ye not for the dead, neither bemoan him. Weep sore for him that goes away: for he shall return no more, nor see his native country.

Note: Gilead is a mountain with fruits and spices, Lebanon has beautiful, strong, fragrant cedar trees.

King Jehohaz

(58) ¹¹ For thus says the LORD concerning Shallum the son of Josiah king of Judah, which reigned instead of Josiah his father, which went forth out of this place; He shall not return here anymore: ¹² But he shall die in the place where they have led him captive, and shall see this land no more.

King Jehoiakim

¹³ Woe to him that builds his house by unrighteousness, and his chambers by wrong; [that] uses his neighbor's service without wages, and gives him not for his work; ¹⁴ That says, I will build me a wide house and large chambers, and cuts him out windows; and [it is] ceiled with cedar, and painted with vermilion. ¹⁵ Shall you reign, because you closest [thyself] in cedar?

King Josiah

did not your father eat and drink, and do judgment and justice, [and] then [it was] well with him? ¹⁶ He judged the cause of the poor and needy; then [it was] well [with him: was] not this to know me? says the LORD.

Jeremiah Chapter 22

King Jehoiakim

¹⁷ But your eyes and your heart are not but for your covetousness, and for to shed innocent blood, and for oppression, and for violence, to do [it]. ¹⁸ Therefore thus says the LORD concerning Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah; They shall not lament for him, [saying], Ah my brother! or, Ah sister! they shall not lament for him, [saying], Ah lord! or, Ah his glory! ¹⁹ He shall be buried with the burial of a donkey, drawn and cast forth beyond the gates of Jerusalem. ²⁰ Go up to Lebanon, and cry; and lift up your voice in Bashan, and cry from the passages: for all your lovers are destroyed. ²¹ I spoke to you in your prosperity; [but] you said, I will not hear. This [has been] your manner from your youth, that you obeyed not my voice. ²² The wind shall eat up all your ^a pastors, and your lovers shall go into captivity: surely then shall you be ashamed and confounded for all your wickedness. ²³ O inhabitant of Lebanon, that make your nest in the cedars, how gracious shall you be when pangs come upon you, the pain as of a woman in travail!

^a Pastors and shepherds are interchangeable, depending on the translators.

Note: A king's duty to execute judgment and justice. King David's primary duty in 2 Samuel 8:15. The LORD's duty as king are proclaimed in Jeremiah 4:2, 9:2, and 23:5. The house of the king of Judah's duty as king are proclaimed in Jeremiah 21:12a and 22:3a (wicked kings who do not hear the LORD) and 22:25 (good kings who hear the LORD). The Lord Jesus Christ will return as the King of Kings and reign upon the earth with a rod of iron over sin, after the Devil is locked up for 1000 years. The saints will return and reign with Christ.

The Curse on King Jeconiah

(59) ²⁴ [As] I live, says the LORD, though Coniah the son of Jehoiakim king of Judah were the signet upon my right hand, yet I would pluck you there; ²⁵ And I will give you into the hand of them that seek your life, and into the hand [of them] whose face you fear, even into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and into the hand of the Chaldeans. ²⁶ And I will cast you out, and your mother that bare you, into another country, where ye were not born; and there shall ye die. ²⁷ But to the land whereunto they desire to return, there they shall not return. ²⁸ [Is] this man Coniah a despised broken idol? [is he] a vessel wherein is no pleasure? wherefore are they cast out, he and his seed, and are cast into a land which they know not? ²⁹ O earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the LORD. ³⁰ Thus says the LORD, Write ye this man childless, a man [that] shall not prosper in his days: for no man of his seed shall prosper, sitting upon the throne of David, and ruling anymore in Judah.

Jeconiah repented and restored to blessing.

(1) Weep for those in exile (Jeremiah 21:10).

(2) Jeconiah had several sons in Babylon (1 Chronicles 3:17-18).

(3) The new king after Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, 38 years later, Evil-Merodach released Jeconiah from prison and honored him more than his other kings (2 Kings 25:27-28).

(4) Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel "I will make you like my signet ring, for I have chosen you," (Hag 2:23).

(5) And after they were brought to Babylon, **Jechonias** begat **Salathiel (Sheatiel)**; and Salathiel begat **Zorobabel (Zerubbabel)**; (Matthew 1:12).

(6) God forgives and restores the same with New Testament sin in the congregation (1 Corinthians 5), then later repentance and restoration (2 Corinthians 7).

Good King

Josiah - 31 years, 8-39 yrs. old, 640-609 BC (two sons, one grandson, and one brother)

Wicked kings

Jehoahaz - 3 months, 23 yrs. old, 609 BC, prisoner to Egypt (Shallum)

Jehoiakim - 11 years, 25-37 yrs. old, 609-598 BC, died in Jerusalem (Eliakim)

1st invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, **603 BC** (took Daniel and youth, and temple utensils)

Jehoiachin - 3 months, 8 yrs. old, 597 BC, Jehoiakim's son, exile to Babylon (Jeconiah or Coniah)

2nd invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, **597 BC** (took Jeconiah-leaders-craftsmen, temple treasures)

Zedekiah - 11 years, 21-31 yrs. old, 597-586 BC, prisoner to Babylon, Josiah's brother (Mattaniah)

3rd invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, **586 BC** (took all people /destroyed temple and Jerusalem)

False and True Shepherds, Prophets, and Priests

False Shepherds in the Present

(60) ¹ Woe be to the Shepherds that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! says the LORD.
² Therefore thus says the LORD God of Israel against the pastors that feed my people; Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, says the LORD.

True Shepherds in the Future

³ And I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries where I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase. ⁴ And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, says the LORD.



Note: Pastor and shepherd are interchangeable, depending on the translators, both have to do with feeding and caring for the sheep. The same in the New Testament 18x, always shepherd except 1x pastor in Eph 4:11. Jesus is the Good Shepherd, (John 10), Great Shepherd and Chief Shepherd (Hebrews and 1 Peter). Jesus said to Peter 3 times, do you love me? feed my sheep. More frequent is the term elder(s) (presbytery), minister and servant for the spiritual leader in the local congregation in the New Testament.

The Righteous King in the Far Future *(5a 1st Coming and 5b-8 2nd Coming)*

⁵ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will raise to David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. ⁶ In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby

he shall be called, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS.

⁷ Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that they shall no more say, The LORD lives, which brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; ⁸ But, The LORD lives, which brought up and which led the seed of the house of Israel out of the north country, and from all countries where I had driven them; and they shall dwell in their own land.

Note: Jesus 1st coming - Branch is Jesus in John 15, I am the Branch. Isaiah 53:2 For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him.

False and True Prophets and Priests

(61) ⁹ My heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake; I am like a drunken man, and like a man whom wine has overcome, because of the LORD, and because of the words of his holiness. ¹⁰ For the land is full of adulterers; for because of swearing the land mourns; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their force is not right. ¹¹ For both prophet and priest are profane; yes, in my house I have found their wickedness, says the LORD.

¹² Wherefore their way shall be to them as slippery [ways] in the darkness: they shall be driven on, and fall therein: for I will bring evil upon them, [even] the year of their visitation, says the LORD.

The Way of False Prophets (2 Peter 2, Jude 4-19)

¹³ And I have seen folly in the prophets of Samaria; they prophesied in Baal, and caused my people Israel to err. ¹⁴ I have seen also in the prophets of Jerusalem a horrible thing: they commit adultery, and walk in lies: they strengthen also the hands of evildoers, that none does return from his wickedness: they are all of them to me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah.

¹⁵ Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land. ¹⁶ Thus says the LORD of hosts, Hearken not to the words of the prophets that prophesy to you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, [and] not out of the mouth of the LORD. ¹⁷ They say still to them that despise me, The LORD has said, Ye shall have peace; and they say to everyone that walks after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you. ¹⁸ For who has stood in the counsel of the LORD, and has perceived and heard his word? who has marked his word, and heard [it]?

Judgment of the False Prophets

¹⁹ Behold, a whirlwind of the LORD is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. ²⁰ The anger of the LORD shall not return, until he has executed, and till he has performed the thoughts of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it perfectly.

Note: the later days refer to the Church of Laodicea, rapture, and Tribulation of Daniel 2:24-27

God Knows about the False Prophets (Jeremiah 23:28b, 1 Corinthians 14)

²¹ I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. ²² But if they had stood in my counsel, and had **caused my people to hear my words**, then they should have **turned** from their evil **way**, and from their evil **doings**. ²³ [Am] I a God at hand, says the LORD, and not a God afar off? ²⁴ **Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him?** says the LORD. Do not I fill heaven and earth? says the LORD.

False Prophets have False Dreams

²⁵ I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. ²⁶ How long shall [this] be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yes, [they are] prophets of the deceit of their own heart; ²⁷ Which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal. ²⁸ The prophet that has a dream, let him tell a dream; ²⁹ Is not my word like a fire, says Jehovah; and like a hammer [that] breaks the rock in pieces? ³⁰ Therefore, behold, I [am] against the prophets, says the LORD, that steal my words everyone from his neighbor. ³¹ Behold, I [am] against the prophets, says the LORD, that use their languages, and say, He says. ³² Behold, I [am] against them that prophesy false dreams, says the LORD, and do tell them, and cause my people to err by their lies, and by their lightness; yet I sent them not, nor commanded them: therefore they shall not profit this people at all, says the LORD.

Deceived Prophets, Priests, and People

(62) ³³ And when this people, or the prophet, or a priest, shall ask you, saying, What is the burden of the LORD? you shall then say to them, What burden? I will even forsake you, says the LORD. ³⁴ And [as for] the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say, The burden of the LORD, I will even punish that man and his house. ³⁵ Thus shall ye say everyone to his neighbor, and everyone to his brother, What has the LORD answered? and, What has the LORD spoken? ³⁶ And the burden of the LORD shall ye mention no more: for every man's word shall be his burden; for ye have perverted the words of the living God, of the LORD of hosts our God. ³⁷ Thus shall you say to the prophet, What has the LORD answered you? and, What has the LORD spoken? ³⁸ But since ye say, The burden of the LORD; therefore thus says the LORD; Because ye say this word, The burden of the LORD, and I have sent to you, saying, Ye shall not say, The burden of the LORD; ³⁹ Therefore, behold, I, even I, will utterly forget you, and I will forsake you, and the city that I gave you and your fathers, [and cast you] out of my presence: ⁴⁰ And I will bring an everlasting reproach upon you, and a perpetual shame, which shall not be forgotten.

Jeremiah Chapter 23

Q1 – What is the difference between the prophet and priest?

A1 – The prophet speaks for God to the people. The priest speaks to God for the people.

Q2 – What is a shepherd?

bishop, chaplain, priest A1 – A Bible-based religious leader with different titles: elder, minister, servant, minister, pastor,, reverend, etc. that feeds the sheep. They feed the sheep the Holy Scriptures in deception or truth or shades in-between. The care for souls or power-money reveals.

Q3 – Are there prophets today?

A1 – The early years of the church was established on the foundation of Christ, the cornerstone, and the apostles and prophets (Ephesians 2:20). By the time near Peter's death, the prophets are no longer needed; therefore, compared to prophets in the Old Testament are replaced by teachers (2 Peter 2:1).

Application: I must be wise as a serpent and harmless as a dove with the false shepherds, prophets, and priests. I must help the people caught up in the deception, with meekness and by God's grace and mercy.

QT Encouragement: Daily time in the Bible and prayer help us discern between the false and true shepherds (feed the sheep), word of the prophets (teachers today, 2 Peter 2), and priests (religious leaders in the congregation).

Jeremiah Chapter 24

Parable of the 2 Baskets of Figs: One Very Good and One Very Evil



(63) ¹ The LORD showed me, and, behold, two baskets of figs [were] set before the temple of the LORD, after that Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon had carried away captive Jeconiah the son of Jehoiakim king of Judah, and the princes of Judah, with the carpenters and smiths, from Jerusalem, and had brought them to Babylon.

² One basket had very good figs, [even] like the figs [that are] first ripe: and the other basket had very naughty figs, which could not be eaten, they were so bad. ³ Then said the LORD unto me, **What see you, Jeremiah?** And I said, Figs; the good figs, very good; and the evil, very evil, that cannot be eaten, they are so evil.

⁴ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁵ **Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel; Like these good figs, so will I acknowledge ^a them that are carried away captive of Judah, whom I have sent out of this place into the land of the Chaldeans for [their] good. ⁶ For I will set my eyes upon them for good, and I will bring them again to this land: and I will build them, and not pull them down; and I will plant them, and not pluck them up. ⁷ And I will give them a heart to know me, that I [am] the LORD: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return to me with their whole heart.**

^a First invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, **603 BC** (took Daniel and youth, and temple utensils). The second invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, **597 BC** (took Jeconiah-leaders-craftsmen, temple treasures). Those that returned with Nehemiah after the 70-year exile. Esther – Mordecai, Zerubbabel, Ezra, Nehemiah.

⁸ **And the evil figs, which cannot be eaten, they are so evil; surely thus says the LORD, So will I give Zedekiah the king of Judah, and his princes, and the residue of Jerusalem, that remain in this land, and them that dwell in the land of Egypt: ⁹ And I will deliver them to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth for [their] hurt, [to be] a reproach and a proverb, a taunt and a curse, in all places where I shall drive them. ¹⁰ And I will send the sword, the famine, and the pestilence, among them, till they be consumed from off the land that I gave to them and to their fathers.**

Jeremiah Chapter 25

The 70-Year Prophecy of Israel's Captivity and Return

The People Refuse to Hear the LORD's Servants to their own Hurt

(64) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah concerning all the people of Judah in the fourth year of ^a Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah, that was the first year of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon; ² Jeremiah the prophet spoke to all the people of Judah, and to all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, saying, ³ "From the thirteenth year of Josiah the son of Amon king of Judah, even to this day, that is the twenty-third year, the word of the LORD has come to me, and I have spoken to you, rising early and speaking; but ye have not listened. ⁴ And the LORD has sent to you all his servants the prophets, rising early and sending them; but ye have not listened, nor inclined your ear to hear. ⁵ They said, Turn ye again now everyone from his evil way, and from the evil of your doings, and dwell in the land that the LORD has given to you and to your fathers for ever and ever: ⁶ And go not after other gods to serve them, and to worship them, and provoke me not to anger with the works of your hands; and I will do you no hurt. ⁷ **Yet ye have not listened to me, says the LORD; that ye might provoke me to anger with the works of your hands to your own hurt."**

^a In 612 BC the Assyrian capital Nineveh fell to the Babylonian King Nabopolassar. This prophecy is in 606 BC, a year before the fall of Jerusalem. In 605 BC Nebuchadnezzar follows his father Nabopolassar as king of the Babylonian empire and he defeats Egypt and Assyria at the battle of Carchemish. Later in **605 BC** he led the first invasion of Jerusalem and Daniel and others were exiled to Babylon.

The Seventy Year Prophecy of Babylonian Captivity and Return, 606 BC (Daniel 9:1-3, Ezra 1)

(65) ⁸ Therefore says the LORD of hosts; "Because ye have not heard my words, ⁹ Behold, I will send and take all the families of the north, says the LORD, and Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon, my servant, and will bring them against this land, and against the inhabitants thereof, and against all these nations round about, and will utterly destroy them, and make them an astonishment, and a hissing, and perpetual desolations. ¹⁰ Moreover I will take from them the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the sound of the millstones, and the light of the candle. ¹¹ This whole land shall be a desolation, an astonishment; and these nations shall ^a serve the king of Babylon seventy years.

^a This is just before the 1st deportation in 605 BC during Jehoiakim's reign. Daniel and others were deported, Daniel 1:1-3. The people returned with Nehemiah with authority of the Medo-Persian king Cyrus of the Persian empire – 70 years later. The 3rd deportation is in 586 until the temple is rebuilt under Zerubbabel in 516 BC – 70 years later. See Jeremiah 29:1-10 for return.

Note: The Neo-Babylonian age is 1000-539 BC. Middle Babylon is 1600-1000 BC. Old Babylon is 2700-1600 BC – tower of Babel in Genesis 10, Nimrod, and the Hammurabi Stele (1790-1750 BC. The script is cuneiform and language Akkadian. The god Marduk or sun god Shamash, god of justice, is giving over 300 laws to King Hammurabi. The epilogue are laws for the posterity of the king. This legal system is used to change the city-states into an empire. The French discovered in 1901.) In the future Revelation chapters 17-18 are spiritual and economic Babylon.

Babylon and Other Nations Judged after 70 Years is Complete

¹² And it shall come to pass, ^a when seventy years are accomplished, I will punish the king of Babylon, and that nation, says the LORD, for their iniquity, and the land of the Chaldeans, and will make it perpetual desolations. ¹³ And I will bring upon that land all my words which I have pronounced against it, [even] all that is written in this book, which Jeremiah has prophesied against all the nations. ¹⁴ For many nations and great kings shall serve themselves of them also: and I will recompense them according to their deeds, and according to the works of their own hands."

^a Study of the 70-year prophecy of Jeremiah being near fulfillment, led to prayer for the nation of Israel's sin and Daniel's sin, then the 70 week prophecy of Daniel concerning the future. Daniel 9. 605 B.C. to 536 B.C. 4th yr. of Jehoiakim (Jeremiah 36:1) to decree of Cyrus (Ezra 1) Daniel 9:1-3

Jeremiah Chapter 25

All the Earth will be Drunk with the Grapes of Wrath

(66) ¹⁵ For thus says the LORD God of Israel to me; ^e "Take the wine cup of this fury at my hand, and cause all the nations, to whom I send you, to drink it. ¹⁶ And they shall drink, and be moved, and be mad, because of the sword that I will send among them. ¹⁷ Then took I the cup at the LORD'S hand, and made all the nations to drink, to whom the LORD had sent me:" ¹⁸ [To wit], Jerusalem, and the cities of Judah, and the kings thereof, and the princes thereof, to make them a desolation, an astonishment, a hissing, and a curse; as it is this day; ¹⁹ Pharaoh king of Egypt, and his servants, and his princes, and all his people; ²⁰ And all the mingled people, and all the kings of the land of Uz, and all the kings of the land of the Philistines, and Ashkelon, and Azzah, and Ekron, and the remnant of Ashdod, ²¹ Edom, and Moab, and the children of Ammon, ²² And all the kings of Tyre, and all the kings of Zidon, and the kings of the isles which are beyond the sea, ²³ Dedan, and Tema, and Buz, and all that are in the utmost corners, ²⁴ And all the kings of Arabia, and all the kings of the mingled people that dwell in the desert, ²⁵ And all the kings of Zimri, and all the kings of Elam, and all the kings of the Medes, ²⁶ And all the kings of the north, far and near, one with another, and all the kingdoms of the world, which are upon the face of the earth: and the king of ^f Babylon shall drink after them.

²⁷ Therefore you shall say to them, "Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Drink ye, and be drunken, and ^g vomit, and fall, and rise no more, because of the sword which I will send among you. ²⁸ And it shall be, if they refuse to take the cup at your hand to drink, then you shall say to them, Thus says the LORD of hosts; Ye shall certainly drink. ²⁹ For, look, I begin to bring evil on the city which is called by my name, and should ye be utterly unpunished? Ye shall not be unpunished: for I will call for a sword upon all the inhabitants of the earth," says the LORD of hosts. ³⁰ Therefore prophesy you against them all these words, and say to them, "The LORD shall roar from on high, and utter his voice from his holy habitation; he shall mightily roar upon his habitation; he shall give a shout, as they that ^h tread the grapes, against all the inhabitants of the earth. ³¹ A noise shall come [even] to the ends of the earth; for the LORD has a controversy with the nations, he will plead with all flesh; he will give them that are wicked to the sword," says the LORD. ³² Thus says the LORD of hosts, "Behold, evil shall go forth from nation to nation, and a great whirlwind shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth. ³³ And the slain of the LORD shall be at that day from one end of the earth even to the other end of the earth: they shall not be lamented, neither gathered, nor buried; they shall be dung upon the ground.

^e Revelation 16:19, 18:6,

^f Babylon=Sheshach ^{KJV}

^g Vomit = Spew ^{KJV},

^h Rev 14:19-20, 19:17-21. Judgment of water and fire on the whole earth – before and after the grapes of wrath (2 Peter 2:5, 3:18).

The False Shepherds and Leaders of the Flock of the Pasture are Accountable

³⁴ Howl, ye **shepherds**, and cry; and wallow yourselves [in the ⁱ ashes], ye ^j **principal of the flock**: for the days of your slaughter and of your dispersions are accomplished; and ye shall fall like ^k precious vessel. ³⁵ And the shepherds shall have no way to flee, nor the principal of the flock to escape. ³⁶ A voice of the cry of the shepherds, and a howling of the principal of the flock, [shall be heard]: for the LORD has spoiled their pasture. ³⁷ And the peaceable habitations are cut down because of the **fierce anger of the LORD**. ³⁸ He has forsaken his ^l lair, as the lion: for their land is desolate because of the fierceness of the oppressor, and because of his **fierce anger**."

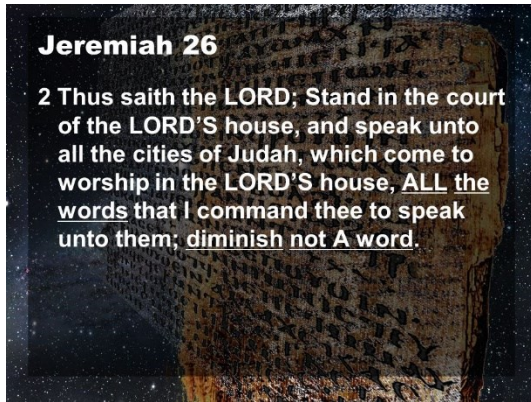
ⁱ Ashes = Dust,

^j Principal = Elder or Well-known,

^k Pleasant = Precious ^{KJV},

^l Lair = Covert ^{KJV}

Stand-up and speak-up in the Court of the LORD's House



Jeremiah 26

2 Thus saith the LORD; Stand in the court of the LORD'S house, and speak unto all the cities of Judah, which come to worship in the LORD'S house, ALL the words that I command thee to speak unto them; diminish not A word.

(67) ¹ In the beginning of the reign of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah came this word from the LORD, saying, ² Thus says the LORD; Stand in the court of the LORD'S house, and speak to all the cities of Judah, which come to worship in the LORD'S house, all the words that I command you to speak to them; diminish not a word: ³ If so be they will hearken, and turn every man from his evil way, that I may repent me of the evil, which I purpose to do to them because of the evil of their doings. ⁴ And you shall say to them, Thus says the LORD; If ye will not hearken to me, to walk in my law, which I have set before you, ⁵ To hearken to the words of my servants the prophets, whom I sent to

you, both rising up early, and sending them, but ye have not listened; ⁶ Then will I make this house like Shiloh, and will make this city a curse to all the nations of the earth. ⁷ So the priests and the prophets and all the people heard Jeremiah speaking these words in the house of the LORD. ⁸ Now it came to pass, when Jeremiah had made an end of speaking all that the LORD had commanded [him] to speak to all the people, that the priests and the prophets and all the people took him, saying, You shall surely die. ⁹ Why have you prophesied in the name of the LORD, saying, This house shall be like Shiloh, and this city shall be desolate without an inhabitant? And all the people were gathered against Jeremiah in the house of the LORD.

Note: House of Shiloh - Jeremiah 12:12-14 > sons of Eli and Eli's death, the 7 churches of Rev 2-3

The Priests, Prophets, and the People Desire Jeremiah's Death

The Princes Sat at the Gate to Hear the Priests, Prophets, and the People

(68) ¹⁰ When the princes of Judah heard these things, then they came up from the king's house to the house of the LORD, and sat down in the entry of the new gate of the LORD'S [house]. ¹¹ Then spoke the priests and the prophets to the princes and to all the people, saying, This man is worthy to die; for he has prophesied against this city, as ye have heard with your ears.

Jeremiah Spoke to the Princes and the People

¹² Then spoke Jeremiah to all the princes and to all the people, saying, The LORD sent me to prophesy against this house and against this city all the words that ye have heard. ¹³ Therefore now amend your ways and your doings, and obey the voice of the LORD your God; and the LORD will repent him of the evil that he has pronounced against you. ¹⁴ As for me, behold, I [am] in your hand: do with me as seems good and meet to you. ¹⁵ But know ye for certain, that if ye put me to death, ye shall surely bring innocent blood upon yourselves, and upon this city, and upon the inhabitants thereof: for of a truth the LORD has sent me to you to speak all these words in your ears.

The Elders Defend Jeremiah with a Prophet and a Past Good King (100 years ago)

¹⁶ Then said the princes and all the people to the priests and to the prophets; This man is not worthy to die: for he has spoken to us in the name of the LORD our God. ¹⁷ Then rose up certain of the elders of the land, and spoke to all the assembly of the people, saying, ¹⁸ Micah the Morasthite prophesied in the days of Hezekiah king of Judah, and spoke to all the people of Judah, saying, Thus says the LORD of hosts; Zion shall be plowed [like] a field, and Jerusalem shall become heaps, and the mountain of the house as the high places of a forest. ¹⁹ Did Hezekiah king of Judah and all Judah put him at all to death? did he not fear the LORD, and begged the LORD, and the LORD repented him of the evil which he had pronounced against them? Thus might we procure great evil against our souls.

The Elders Defend Jeremiah with a Prophet and the current Evil King

²⁰ And there was also a man that prophesied in the name of the LORD, Urijah the son of Shemaiah of Kirjathjearim, who prophesied against this city and against this land according to all the words of Jeremiah: ²¹ And when Jehoiakim the king, with all his mighty men, and all the princes, heard his words, the king sought to put him to death: but when Urijah heard it, he was afraid, and fled, and went into Egypt; ²² And Jehoiakim the king sent men into Egypt, [namely], Elnathan the son of Achbor, and [certain] men with him into Egypt. ²³ And they fetched forth Urijah out of Egypt, and brought him to Jehoiakim the king; who slew him with the sword, and cast his dead body into the graves of the common people. ²⁴ Nevertheless the hand of Ahikam the son of Shaphan was with Jeremiah, that they should not give him into the hand of the people to put him to death.

Note: Ahikam is an elder and the father of Gedaliah. Gedaliah is appointed as governor of Judah, by King Nebuchadnezzar to replace King Zedekiah in 586 BC. (2 Kings 22:12, 2 Chronicles 34:20. 2 Kings 25:22, Jeremiah 39:14)

Application: No Elders stood up for Jesus. Are you an elder? Do you know elders? Will an elder be around if you are persecuted to death? If not, say "not my will, but your will" as Jesus said.

Jeremiah and Five Kings Must Choose to Submit to the Wooden Yoke of Babylon

(69) ¹ In the beginning of the reign of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah came this word to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ² Thus says the LORD unto me; Make you bonds and yokes /wood-iron/ and put them upon your neck, ³ And send them to the king of Edom, and to the king of Moab, and to the king of the Ammonites, and to the king of Tyre, and to the king of Zidon, by the hand of the messengers which come to Jerusalem to Zedekiah king of Judah; ⁴ And command them to say to their masters, Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Thus shall ye say to your masters; ⁵ I have made the earth, the man and the beast that are upon the ground, by my great power and by my outstretched arm, and have given it to whom it seemed meet to me. ⁶ And now I have given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, my servant; and the beasts of the field I have given him also to serve him. ⁷ And all nations shall serve him, and his son, and his son's son, until the very time of his land come: and then many nations and great kings shall serve themselves of him. ⁸ And it shall come to pass, [that] the nation and kingdom which will not serve the same Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, and that will not put their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, that nation will I punish, says the LORD, with the sword, and with the famine, and with the pestilence, until I have consumed them by his hand. ⁹ Therefore hearken not ye to your prophets, nor to your diviners, nor to your dreamers, nor to your enchanters, nor to your sorcerers, which speak to you, saying, Ye shall not serve the king of Babylon: ¹⁰ For they prophesy a lie to you, to remove you far from your land; and that I should drive you out, and ye should perish. ¹¹ But the nations that bring their neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, and serve him, those will I let remain still in their own land, says the LORD; and they shall till it, and dwell therein.

The False Prophets lie

(70) ¹² I spoke also to Zedekiah king of Judah according to all these words, saying, Bring your necks under the yoke of the king of Babylon, and serve him and his people, and live. ¹³ Why will ye die, you and your people, by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence, as the LORD has spoken against the nation that will not serve the king of Babylon? ¹⁴ Therefore hearken not to the words of the prophets that speak to you, saying, Ye shall not serve the king of Babylon: for they prophesy a lie to you. ¹⁵ For I have not sent them, says the LORD, yet they prophesy a lie in my name; that I might drive you out, and that ye might perish, ye, and the prophets that prophesy to you. ¹⁶ Also I spoke to the priests and to all this people, saying, Thus says the LORD; Hearken not to the words of your prophets that prophesy to you, saying, Behold, the vessels of the LORD'S house shall now shortly be brought again from Babylon: for they prophesy a lie to you. ¹⁷ Hearken not to them; serve the king of Babylon, and live: wherefore should this city be laid waste?

Jeremiah Chapter 27

¹⁸ But if they [be] prophets, and if the word of the LORD be with them, let them now make intercession to the LORD of hosts, that the vessels which are left in the house of the LORD, and [in] the house of the king of Judah, and at Jerusalem, go not to Babylon. ¹⁹ For thus says the LORD of hosts concerning the pillars, and concerning the sea, and concerning the bases, and concerning the residue of the vessels that remain in this city, ²⁰ Which Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon took not, when he carried away captive Jeconiah the son of Jehoiakim king of Judah from Jerusalem to Babylon, and all the nobles of Judah and Jerusalem; ²¹ Yes, thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, concerning the vessels that remain [in] the house of the LORD, and [in] the house of the king of Judah and of Jerusalem; ²² They shall be carried to Babylon, and there they will be until the day that I visit them, says the LORD; then will I bring them up, and restore them to this place.

Good king: Josiah

Wicked kings

Jehoahaz – 3 months

Jehoiakim–11 years, 1st invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, 603 BC (took Daniel and youth, and temple utensils)

Jehoiachin– 3 months, 2nd invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, 597 BC (took Jeconiah-leaders-craftsmen, temple treasures)

Zedekiah –11 years, 3rd invasion by Nebuchadnezzar, 586 BC (took all people /destroyed temple and Jerusalem)

Jeremiah Chapter 28

Jeremiah Contends with Hananiah before the Priests and all the People

(71) ¹ And it came to pass the same year, in the beginning of the reign of Zedekiah king of Judah, in the fourth year, [and] in the fifth month, [that] Hananiah the son of Azur the prophet, which was of Gibeon, spoke to me in the house of the LORD, in the presence of the priests and of all the people, saying, ² Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, saying, I have broken the yoke of the king of Babylon. ³ Within two full years will I bring again into this place all the vessels of the LORD'S house, that Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon took away from this place, and carried them to Babylon: ⁴ And I will bring again to this place Jeconiah the son of Jehoiakim king of Judah, with all the captives of Judah, that went into Babylon, says the LORD: for I will break the yoke of the king of Babylon. ⁵ Then the prophet Jeremiah said to the prophet Hananiah in the presence of the priests, and in the presence of all the people that stood in the house of the LORD, ⁶ Even the prophet Jeremiah said, Amen: the LORD do so: the LORD perform your words which you have prophesied, to bring again the vessels of the LORD'S house, and all that is carried away captive, from Babylon into this place. ⁷ Nevertheless hear you now this word that I speak in your ears, and in the ears of all the people; ⁸ The prophets that have been before me /Urijah/ and before you of old /Micah/ prophesied both against many countries, and against great kingdoms, of war, and of evil, and of pestilence. ⁹ The prophet which prophesies of peace, when the word of the prophet shall come to pass, [then] shall the prophet be known, that the LORD has truly sent him.

Jeremiah Replaces Hananiah's Wood Yokes with Iron Yokes

(72) ¹⁰ Then Hananiah the prophet took the yoke from off the prophet Jeremiah's neck, and broke it. ¹¹ And Hananiah spoke in the presence of all the people, saying, Thus says the LORD; Even so will I break the yoke of Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon from the neck of all nations within the space of two full years. And the prophet Jeremiah went his way. ¹² Then the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah [the prophet], after that Hananiah the prophet had broken the yoke from off the neck of the prophet Jeremiah, saying, ¹³ Go and tell Hananiah, saying, Thus says the LORD; You have broken the yokes of wood; but you shall make for them yokes of iron. ¹⁴ For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; I have put a yoke of iron upon the neck of all these nations, that they may serve Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon; and they shall serve him: and I have given him the beasts of the field also. ¹⁵ Then said the prophet Jeremiah to Hananiah the prophet, Hear now, Hananiah; The LORD has not sent you; but you make this people to trust in a lie. ¹⁶ Therefore thus says the LORD; Behold, I will cast you from off the face of the earth: this year you shall die, because you have taught rebellion against the LORD. ¹⁷ So Hananiah the prophet died the same year in the seventh month.

A Letter to the Captives in Babylon

(73) ¹ Now these are the words of the letter that Jeremiah the prophet sent from Jerusalem to the residue of the elders which were carried away captives, and to the priests, and to the prophets, and to all the people whom Nebuchadnezzar had carried away captive from Jerusalem to Babylon; ² (After that Jeconiah the king, and the queen, and the eunuchs, the princes of Judah and Jerusalem, and the carpenters, and the smiths, were departed from Jerusalem;) ³ By the hand of Elasah the son of Shaphan, and Gemariah the son of Hilkiah, (whom Zedekiah king of Judah sent to Babylon to Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon) saying, ⁴ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, **to all that are carried away captives, whom I have caused to be carried away from Jerusalem to Babylon;**

Notes: vs 3, Elasah is the brother of Ahikam, Jer 26:24. Gemariah is the son of Hilkiah, the high-priest under Josiah who found the lost Book of the Law (2Ki 22:4), and prominent in the work of reformation.

Be Good Citizens While Captive in Babylon

⁵ Build ye houses, and dwell [in them]; and plant gardens, and eat the fruit of them; ⁶ Take ye wives, and beget sons and daughters; and take wives for your sons, and give your daughters to husbands, that they may bear sons and daughters; that ye may be increased there, and not diminished. ⁷ And seek the peace of the city where I have caused you to be carried away captives, and pray to the LORD for it: for in the peace thereof shall ye have peace. ⁸ For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Let not your prophets and your diviners, that [be] in the midst of you, deceive you, neither hearken to your dreams which ye cause to be dreamed. ⁹ For they prophesy falsely to you in my name: I have not sent them, says the LORD.

The Return to Jerusalem from Babylon after 70 Years Captivity (2 Chr 36:18-23, Daniel 9:1-3)

(74) ¹⁰ For thus saith the LORD, **That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you, and perform my good word toward you, in causing you to return to this place.** ¹¹ For I know the thoughts that I think toward you, says the LORD, thoughts of peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end. ¹² Then shall ye call upon me, and ye shall go and pray to me, and I will hearken to you. ¹³ And ye shall seek me, and find [me], when ye shall search for me with all your heart. ¹⁴ And I will be found of you, says the LORD: and I will turn away your captivity, and I will gather you from all the nations, and from all the places where I have driven you, says the LORD; and I will bring you again into the place where I caused you to be carried away captive.

Judgment on the False Prophets in Babylon, Ahab and Zedekiah

(75) ¹⁵ Because ye have said, The LORD has raised us up prophets in Babylon; ¹⁶ [Know] that thus says the LORD of the king that sits upon the throne of David, and of all the people that dwells in this city, [and] of your brethren that are not gone forth with you into captivity; ¹⁷ Thus says the LORD of hosts; Behold, I will send upon them the sword, the famine, and the pestilence, and will make them like vile figs, that cannot be eaten, they are so evil. ¹⁸ And I will persecute them with the sword, with the famine, and with the pestilence, and will deliver them to be removed to all the kingdoms of the earth, to be a curse, and an astonishment, and a hissing, and a reproach, among all the nations where I have driven them: ¹⁹ Because they have not listened to my words, says the LORD, which I sent to them by my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them; but ye would not hear, says the LORD. ²⁰ Hear ye therefore the word of the LORD, all ye of the captivity, whom I have sent from Jerusalem to Babylon: ²¹ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, of Ahab the son of Kolaiah, and of Zedekiah the son of Maaseiah, which prophesy a lie to you in my name; Behold, I will deliver them into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon; and he shall slay them before your eyes; ²² And of them shall be taken up a curse by all the captivity of Judah which are in Babylon, saying, The LORD make you like Zedekiah and like Ahab, whom the king of Babylon roasted in the fire; ²³ Because they have committed villainy in Israel, and have committed adultery with their neighbors' wives, and have spoken lying words in my name, which I have not commanded them; even I know, and [am] a witness, says the LORD.

Judgment on the Leading False Priest in Babylon, Shemaiah

²⁴ [Thus] shall you also speak to Shemaiah the Nehelamite, saying, ²⁵ Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, saying, Because you have sent letters in your name to all the people that are at Jerusalem, and to Zephaniah the son of Maaseiah the priest, and to all the priests, saying, ²⁶ The LORD has made you priest in the stead of Jehoiada the priest, that ye should be officers in the house of the LORD, for every man [that is] mad, and makes himself a prophet, that you should put him in prison, and in the stocks. ²⁷ Now therefore why have you not reproved Jeremiah of Anathoth, which makes himself a prophet to you? ²⁸ For therefore he sent to us [in] Babylon, saying, This [captivity is] long: build ye houses, and dwell [in them]; and plant gardens, and eat the fruit of them. ²⁹ And Zephaniah the priest read this letter in the ears of Jeremiah the prophet. ³⁰ Then came the word of the LORD to Jeremiah, saying, ³¹ Send to all them of the captivity, saying, Thus says the LORD concerning Shemaiah the Nehelamite; Because that Shemaiah has prophesied to you, and I sent him not, and he caused you to trust in a lie: ³² Therefore thus says the LORD; Behold, I will punish Shemaiah the Nehelamite, and his seed: he shall not have a man to dwell among this people; neither shall he behold the good that I will do for my people, says the LORD; because he has taught rebellion against the LORD.

Israel Returns to the Land

(76) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ² Thus speaks the LORD God of Israel, saying, **Write you all the words that I have spoken to you in a book.** ³ For, look, the days come, says the LORD, that I will bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah, says the LORD: and I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers, and they shall possess it.

Israel Saved from the Time of Jacob's Trouble (Daniel's 70 week, last 3 ½ years)

⁴ And these are the words that the LORD spoke concerning Israel and concerning Judah. ⁵ For thus says the LORD; We have heard a voice of trembling, of fear, and not of peace. ⁶ Ask ye now, and see whether a man does travail with child? wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail, and all faces are turned into paleness? ⁷ Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob's trouble; but he shall be saved out of it.

Israel is Blessed in That Day (1000-year reign)

⁸ For it shall come to pass in that day, says the LORD of hosts, [that] I will break his yoke from off your neck, and will burst your bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him: ⁹ But they shall serve the LORD their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up to them. ¹⁰ Therefore fear you not, O my servant Jacob, says the LORD; neither be dismayed, O Israel: for, look, I will save you from afar, and your seed from the land of their captivity; and Jacob shall return, and shall be in rest, and be quiet, and none shall make [him] afraid.

The Chastisement of a Heavenly Loving Father (Hebrews 12:1-6)

¹¹ For I [am] with you, says the LORD, to save you: though I make a full end of all nations where I have scattered you, yet will I not make a full end of you: but I will correct you in measure, and will not leave you altogether unpunished. ¹² For thus says the LORD, Your bruise is incurable, [and] your wound is grievous. ¹³ [There is] none to plead your cause, that you may be bound up: you have no healing medicines. ¹⁴ All your lovers have forgotten you; they seek you not; for I have wounded you with the wound of an enemy, with the chastisement of a cruel one, for the multitude of your iniquity; [because] your sins were increased. ¹⁵ Why cry you for your affliction? your sorrow is incurable for the multitude of your iniquity: [because] your sins were increased, I have done these things to you. ¹⁶ Therefore all they that devour you shall be devoured; and all your adversaries, every one of them, shall go into captivity; and they that spoil you shall be a spoil, and all that prey upon you will I give for a prey.

Note: As God sees Israel as a nation, he sees the believer as part of the universal church, local congregation, family, and individual.

After Chastisement is Hope

(77) ¹⁷ For I will restore health to you, and I will heal you of your wounds, says the LORD; because they called you an Outcast, [saying], This is Zion, whom no man seeks after. ¹⁸ Thus says the LORD; Behold, I will bring again the captivity of Jacob's tents, and have mercy on his dwelling-places; and the city shall be built upon her own heap, and the palace shall remain after the manner thereof. ¹⁹ And out of them shall proceed thanksgiving and the voice of them that make merry: and I will multiply them, and they shall not be few; I will also glorify them, and they shall not be small. ²⁰ Their children also shall be as aforetime, and their assembly shall be established before me, and I will punish all that oppress them. ²¹ And their nobles shall be of themselves, and their governor shall proceed from the midst of them; and I will cause him to draw near, and he shall approach to me: for who is this that engaged his heart to approach to me? says the LORD. ²² And ye shall be my people, and I will be your God. ²³ Behold, the whirlwind of the LORD goes forth with fury, a continuing whirlwind: it shall fall with pain upon the head of the wicked. ²⁴ The fierce anger of the LORD shall not return, until he has done [it], and until he has performed the intents of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it.

Restoration of the People (Israel)

(78) ¹ At the same time, says the LORD, I will be the God of all the families of Israel, and they shall be my people. ² Thus says the LORD, The people [which were] left of the sword found grace in the wilderness; [even] Israel, when I went to cause him to rest. ³ The LORD has appeared of old to me, [saying], Yes, I have loved you with an everlasting love: therefore with loving-kindness I have drawn you. ⁴ Again I will build you, and you shall be built, O virgin of Israel: you shall again be adorned with your tamborines, and shall go forth in the dances of them that make merry. ⁵ You shall yet plant vines upon the mountains of Samaria: the planters shall plant, and shall eat them as common things. ⁶ For there shall be a day, [that] the watchmen upon the mount Ephraim shall cry, Arise ye, and let us go up to Zion to the LORD our God. ⁷ For thus says the LORD; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations: publish ye, praise ye, and say, O LORD, save your people, the remnant of Israel. ⁸ Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the Earth, [and] with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that travails with child together: a great company shall return there. ⁹ They shall come with weeping, and with supplications I will lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my firstborn.

(79) ¹⁰ Hear the word of the LORD, O ye nations, and declare [it] in the isles afar off, and say, He that scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him, as a shepherd [does] his flock. ¹¹ For the LORD has redeemed Jacob, and ransomed him from the hand of [him that was] stronger than he. ¹² Therefore they shall come and sing in the height of Zion, and shall flow together to the goodness of the LORD, for wheat, and for wine, and for oil, and for the young of the flock and of the herd: and their soul shall be as a watered garden; and they shall not sorrow anymore at all. ¹³ Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together: for I will turn their mourning into joy, and will comfort them, and make them rejoice from their sorrow. ¹⁴ And I will satiate the soul of the priests with fatness, and my people shall be satisfied with my goodness, says the LORD.

Note: verse 11, Esau was stronger than Jacob, see Obadiah.

Prayer in a dream: Part 1 – Lament

¹⁵ Thus says the LORD; A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, [and] bitter weeping; Rachel weeping for her children refused to be comforted for her children, because they [were] not. ¹⁶ Thus says the LORD; Refrain your voice from weeping, and your eyes from tears: for your work shall be rewarded, says the LORD; and they shall come again from the land of the enemy. ¹⁷ And there is hope in your end, says the LORD, that your children shall come again to their own border.

Notes: Verse 15, when? Matthew 2:18, Bethlehem – their future-our past. Verse 16, when? Roman empire, WWII, Great Tribulation. Verse 17, when? return to Israel – May 14, 1948.

Prayer in a dream: Part 2 – Repent (Ephraim)

(80) ¹⁸ I have surely heard Ephraim bemoaning himself [thus]; You have chastised me, and I was chastised, as a bullock unaccustomed [to the yoke]: turn you me, and I shall be turned; for you are the LORD my God. ¹⁹ Surely after that I was turned, I repented; and after that I was instructed, I smote upon [my] thigh: I was ashamed, yes, even confounded, because I did bear the reproach of my youth.

Prayer in a dream: Part 3 – Mercy (Ephraim)

²⁰ [Is] Ephraim my dear son? [is he] a pleasant child? for since I spoke against him, I do earnestly remember him still: therefore my bowels are troubled for him; I will surely have mercy upon him, says the LORD. ²¹ Set you up waymarks, make you high heaps: set your heart toward the highway, [even] the way [which] you went: turn again, O virgin of Israel, turn again to these your cities. ²² How long will you go about, O you backsliding daughter? for the LORD has created a new thing in the Earth, A woman shall compass a man.

Notes: Ephraim - Joseph and Asenath had two sons. Joseph blessed Ephraim over Manasseh (Gen 41:52, 48:1). Levi was the 13th however has own areas in each tribe. The ark was at Shiloh and for 400 years. Ephraim was preeminent for more than 500 years, from the time of Joshua to King David (same time between Norman Conquest and War of the Roses) Joshua, Gideon and Saul are from the same area and Samaria (between Judea and Galilee). Later Rehoboam departed with 10 tribes to form Israel apart from Judah. Verse 22b, The woman represents God's love as a mother for her male child, or a time of peace where the weaker woman can protect the stronger man.

Prayer in a dream: Part 4 – Hope (Israel)

²³ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; As yet they shall use this speech in the land of Judah and in the cities thereof, when I shall bring again their captivity; The LORD bless you, O habitation of justice, [and] mountain of holiness. ²⁴ And there shall dwell in Judah itself, and in all the cities thereof together, husbandmen, and they [that] go forth with flocks. ²⁵ For I have satiated the weary soul, and I have replenished every sorrowful soul. ²⁶ Upon this I awaked, and beheld; and my sleep was sweet to me.

Future Spiritual Israel in the New Covenant (Romans 9:6, 10-11)

(81) ²⁷ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will sow the house of Israel and the house of Judah with the seed of man, and with the seed of beast. ²⁸ And it shall come to pass, [that] like as I have watched over them, to pluck up, and to break down, and to throw down, and to destroy, and to afflict; so will I watch over them, to build, and to plant, says the LORD. ²⁹ In those days they shall say no more, The fathers have eaten a sour grape, and the children's teeth are set on edge. ³⁰ But everyone shall die for his own iniquity: every man that eats the sour grape, his teeth shall be set on edge. ³¹ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: ³² Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day [that] I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they broke, although I was a husband to them, says the LORD: ³³ But this [shall be] the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; **After those days, says the LORD, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people.** ³⁴ And they shall **teach no more** every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: **for they shall all know me, from the least of them to the great of them,** says the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.

Notes: verse 33, when? covenant at the last supper, rejected by the house of Israel at Jesus 1st coming. Verse 33-34, when? at the day of Pentecost in part and the 1000-year reign of Christ at his second coming in full.

Jeremiah Chapter 31

³⁵ Thus says the LORD, which gives the sun for a light by day, [and] the ordinances of the moon and of the stars for a light by night, which divides the sea when the waves thereof roar; The LORD of hosts is his name: ³⁶ **If those ordinances depart from before me, says the LORD, [then] the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before me forever.** ³⁷ Thus says the LORD; If heaven above can be measured, and the foundations of the Earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done, says the LORD.

Note: verse 35, 24-hour day as in Genesis 1-2. When shall day and night cease? Rev 21-22 New Jerusalem. The promise is the same as day and night continues, repeated in Jeremiah 33:20, 25.

Physical Jerusalem expanded during Christ's 1000-year reign on Earth

³⁸ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that the city shall be built to the LORD from the tower of Hananeel to the gate of the corner. ³⁹ And the measuring line shall yet go forth over against it upon the hill Gareb, and shall compass about to Goath. ⁴⁰ And the whole valley of the dead bodies, and of the ashes, and all the fields to the brook of Kidron, to the corner of the horse gate toward the east, [shall be] holy to the LORD; it shall not be plucked up, nor thrown down anymore forever.

Jeremiah Chapter 32

Prison (1-5), Purchase Land (6-15), Prayer (16-25), and Promise Return (26-44)

(82) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD in the tenth year of Zedekiah king of Judah, which was the eighteenth year of Nebuchadrezzar. ² For then the king of Babylon's army besieged Jerusalem: and Jeremiah the prophet was shut up in the court of the prison, which was in the king of Judah's house. ³ For Zedekiah king of Judah had shut him up, saying, Wherefore do you prophesy, and say, Thus says the LORD, Behold, I will give this city into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall take it; ⁴ And Zedekiah king of Judah shall not escape out of the hand of the Chaldeans, but shall surely be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon, and shall speak with him mouth to mouth, and his eyes shall behold his eyes; ⁵ And he shall lead Zedekiah to Babylon, and there shall he be until I visit him, says the LORD: though ye fight with the Chaldeans, ye shall not prosper.

Note: siege of Jerusalem began in the ninth year until 11th year - three years, Jer 39:1. Temp relief when Egypt approached and resumed when Egypt withdrew, Jer 37:5.

⁶ And Jeremiah said, The word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁷ **Behold, Hanameel the son of Shallum your uncle shall come to you, saying, Buy you my field that is in Anathoth: for the right of redemption is yours to buy [it].** ⁸ So Hanameel my uncle's son came to me in the court of the prison according to the word of the LORD, and said to me, Buy my field, I pray you, that is in Anathoth, which is in the country of Benjamin: for the right of inheritance is yours, and the redemption is yours; buy [it] for thyself. **Then I knew that this was the word of the LORD.** ⁹ And I bought the field of Hanameel my uncle's son, that was in Anathoth, and weighed him the money, [even] seventeen shekels of silver. ¹⁰ And I subscribed the evidence, and sealed [it], and took witnesses, and weighed [him] the money in the balances. ¹¹ So I took the evidence of the purchase, [both] that which was sealed [according] to the law and custom, and that which was open: ¹² And I gave the evidence of the purchase to Baruch the son of Neriah, the son of Maaseiah, in the sight of Hanameel my uncle's [son], and in the presence of the witnesses that subscribed the book of the purchase, before all the Jews that sat in the court of the prison. ¹³ And I charged **Baruch** before them, saying, ¹⁴ **Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Take these evidences, this evidence of the purchase, both which is sealed, and this evidence which is open; and put them in an earthen vessel, that they may continue many days.** ¹⁵ For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Houses and fields and vineyards shall be possessed again in this land.

Notes: Shekels and balance scale. Anathoth is home of Jeremiah, Jer 1:1, belongs to the tribe of Benjamin 3 miles north of Jerusalem, which is occupied by the Babylonian army. The promised land was a sacred inheritance, Leviticus 25:25-34, Ruth 3:9-13, 4:1-12.

Jeremiah's Prayer of Praise (16-19), Past Story (20-23), and Present Judgment (24-25)

(83) ¹⁶ Now when I had delivered the evidence of the purchase to Baruch the son of Neriah, I prayed to the LORD, saying, ¹⁷ Ah Lord GOD! behold, you have made the heaven and the Earth by your great power and **stretched out arm**, [and] there is nothing too hard for you: ¹⁸ You show loving-kindness to thousands, and recompense the iniquity of the fathers into the bosom of their children after them: the Great, the Mighty God, the LORD of hosts, is his name, ¹⁹ Great in counsel, and mighty in work: for your eyes are open upon all the ways of the sons of men: to give everyone according to **his ways**, and according to the fruit of **his doings**: ²⁰ Which has set signs and wonders in the land of Egypt, [even] to this day, and in Israel, and among [other] men; and has made you a name, as at this day; ²¹ And has brought forth your people Israel out of the land of Egypt with signs, and with wonders, and with a **strong hand**, and with a **stretched out arm**, and with great terror; ²² And has given them this land, which you did swear to their fathers to give them, a land flowing with milk and honey; ²³ And they came in, and possessed it; but they obeyed not your voice, neither walked in your law; they have done nothing of all that you commanded them to do: therefore you have caused all this evil to come upon them: ²⁴ Behold the mounts, they are come to the city to take it; and the city is given into the hand of the Chaldeans, that fight against it, because of the **sword**, and of the **famine**, and of the **pestilence**: and what you have spoken is come to pass; and, behold, you see [it]. ²⁵ And you have said to me, O Lord GOD, **Buy you the field for money, and take witnesses; for the city is given into the hand of the Chaldeans.**

Notes: White Horse (make peace)/Red Horse (take peace)-**Sword/Great Sword**, Black Horse-**Famine**/food-oil-wine, Pale Horse-**Pestilence**/(kill ¼ of the Earth) sword-hunger-death-beasts. Jeremiah repeats-15x (1st time in 14:12), Eze-7x, I Chr 21:12-1x (Judgment on David), II Chr 20:9-1x (Jehoshaphat's Prayer). Jeremiah repeats sword and famine more frequently - 24x. War, which comes by God's just judgments for sin.

Nothing is too Hard for the LORD (Judgment 26-29a, Sin 26b-36, Promise 37-44)

(84) ²⁶ Then came the word of the LORD to Jeremiah, saying, ²⁷ Behold, I [am] the LORD, the God of all flesh: is there anything too hard for me? ²⁸ Therefore thus says the LORD; Behold, I will give this city into the hand of the Chaldeans, and into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, and he shall take it: ²⁹ And the Chaldeans, that fight against this city, shall come and set fire on this city, and burn it with the houses, upon whose roofs they have offered incense to Baal, and poured out drink offerings to other gods, to provoke me to anger. ³⁰ For the children of Israel and the children of Judah have only done evil before me from their youth: for the children of Israel have only provoked me to anger with the work of their hands, says the LORD. ³¹ For this city has been to me [as] a provocation of my anger and of my fury from the day that they built it even to this day; that I should remove it from before my face, ³² Because of all the evil of the children of Israel and of the children of Judah, which they have done to provoke me to anger, they, their kings, their princes, their priests, and their prophets, and the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem. ³³ **And they have turned to me the back, and not the face: though I taught them, rising up early and teaching them, yet they have not listened to receive instruction.** ³⁴ But they set their abominations in the house, which is called by my name, to defile it. ³⁵ And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through [the fire] to Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin. ³⁶ And now therefore thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, concerning this city, whereof ye say, It shall be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence; ³⁷ Behold, I will gather them out of all countries, where I have driven them in my anger, and in my fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again to this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely: ³⁸ And they shall be my people, and I will be their God: ³⁹ And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me forever, for the good of them, and of their children after them: ⁴⁰ And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me. ⁴¹ Yes, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and I will plant them in this land assuredly with my whole heart and with my whole soul.

Jeremiah Chapter 32

⁴² For thus says the LORD; Like as I have brought all this great evil upon this people, so I will bring upon them all the good that I have promised them. ⁴³ And fields shall be bought in this land, whereof ye say, [It is] desolate without man or beast; it is given into the hand of the Chaldeans. ⁴⁴ Men shall buy fields for money, and subscribe evidences, and seal them, and take witnesses in the land of Benjamin, and in the places about Jerusalem, and in the cities of Judah, and in the cities of the mountains, and in the cities of the valley, and in the cities of the south: for I will cause their captivity to return, says the LORD.

Jeremiah Chapter 33

Reconfirming the Covenant with Jerusalem (1-11a) and the Land (11b-14)

(85) ¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah the second time, while he was yet shut up in the court of the prison, saying, ² Thus says the LORD the maker thereof, the LORD that formed it, to establish it; the LORD is his name; ³ Call to me, and I will answer you, and show you great and mighty things, which you know not. ⁴ For thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, concerning the houses of this city, and concerning the houses of the kings of Judah, which are thrown down by the mounts, and by the sword; ⁵ They come to fight with the Chaldeans, but [it is] to fill them with the dead bodies of men, whom I have slain in my anger and in my fury, and **for all whose wickedness I have hid my face from this city.** ⁶ Behold, I will bring it health and cure, and I will cure them, and will reveal to them the abundance of peace and truth. ⁷ And I will cause the captivity of Judah and the captivity of Israel to return, and will build them, as at the first. ⁸ And I will cleanse them from all their iniquity, whereby they have sinned against me; and I will pardon all their iniquities, whereby they have sinned, and whereby they have transgressed against me. ⁹ And it shall be to me a name of joy, a praise and a honor before all the nations of the Earth, which shall hear all the good that I do to them: and they shall fear and tremble for all the goodness and for all the prosperity that I procure to it. ¹⁰ Thus says the LORD; Again there shall be heard in this place, which ye say [shall be] desolate without man and without beast, [even] in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, that are desolate, without man, and without inhabitant, and without beast, ¹¹ The voice of joy, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride, the voice of them that shall say, Praise the LORD of hosts: for the LORD is good; for his mercy [endures] forever: [and] of them that shall bring the sacrifice of praise into the house of the LORD. For I will cause to return the captivity of the land, as at the first, says the LORD. ¹² Thus says the LORD of hosts; Again in this place, which is desolate without man and without beast, and in all the cities thereof, shall be a habitation of shepherds causing [their] flocks to lie down. ¹³ In the cities of the mountains, in the cities of the valley, and in the cities of the south, and in the land of Benjamin, and in the places about Jerusalem, and in the cities of Judah, shall the flocks pass again under the hands of him that tells them, says the LORD. ¹⁴ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will perform that good thing which I have promised to the house of Israel and to the house of Judah.

Note: 1-14 apply to Israel then, now, and future. Does not apply to the church as replacement theology, and on in nature to God's grace to the church now – it cannot be used to excuse or justify, or downplay sin in the local church or individual believer in the New Testament, John 10:1-17.

Return of Christ / Son of David

(86) ¹⁵ In those days, and at that time, will I cause the **Branch of righteousness** to grow up to David; and **he shall execute judgment and righteousness in the land.** ¹⁶ In those days shall Judah be saved, and **Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this [is the name] wherewith she shall be called, The LORD our righteousness.** ¹⁷ For thus says the LORD; David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of Israel; ¹⁸ Neither shall the **priests the Levites** want a man before me to offer burnt offerings, and to kindle grain offerings, and to do sacrifice continually. ¹⁹ And the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, saying, ²⁰ Thus says the LORD; **If ye can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season;** ²¹ [Then] may also my covenant be broken with David my servant, that he should not have a son to reign upon his throne; and with the Levites the priests, my ministers. ²² As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured: so I will multiply the seed of David my servant, and the Levites that minister to me. ²³ Moreover the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, saying, ²⁴ Consider you not

Jeremiah Chapter 33

what this people have spoken, saying, The two families which the LORD has chosen, he has even cast them off? thus they have despised my people, that they should be no more a nation before them.

²⁵ Thus says the LORD; **If my covenant [be] not with day and night, [and if] I have not appointed the ordinances of heaven and Earth;** ²⁶ Then I will cast away the seed of Jacob, and David my servant, [so] that I will not take [any] of his seed [to be] rulers over the seed of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob: for I will cause their captivity to return, and have mercy on them.

Jeremiah Chapter 34

King Zedekiah sets the Slaves Free, then the People Re-capture the Slaves

(87) ¹ The word which came to Jeremiah from the LORD, when Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and all his army, and all the kingdoms of the earth of his dominion, and all the people, fought against Jerusalem, and against all the cities thereof, saying, ² Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel; Go and speak to Zedekiah king of Judah, and tell him, Thus says the LORD; Behold, I will give this city into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall burn it with fire: ³ And you shall not escape out of his hand, but shall surely be taken, and delivered into his hand; and your eyes shall behold the eyes of the king of Babylon, and he shall speak with you mouth to mouth, and you shall go to Babylon. ⁴ Yet hear the word of the LORD, O Zedekiah king of Judah; Thus says the LORD of you, You shall not die by the sword: ⁵ [But] you shall die in peace: and with the burnings of your fathers, the former kings which were before you, so they will burn [odors] for you; and they will lament you, [saying], Ah lord! for I have pronounced the word, says the LORD. ⁶ Then Jeremiah the prophet spoke all these words to Zedekiah king of Judah in Jerusalem, ⁷ When the king of Babylon's army fought against Jerusalem, and against all the cities of Judah that were left, against Lachish, and against Azekah: for these defended cities remained of the cities of Judah. ⁸ [This is] the word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, after that the king Zedekiah had made a covenant with all the people which [were] at Jerusalem, to proclaim liberty to them; ⁹ That every man should let his manservant, and every man his maidservant, [being] a Hebrew or a Hebrewess, go free; that none should serve himself of them, [to wit], of a Jew his brother. ¹⁰ Now when all the princes, and all the people, which had entered into the covenant, heard that everyone should let his manservant, and everyone his maidservant, go free, that none should serve themselves of them anymore, then they obeyed, and let them go. ¹¹ But afterward they turned, and caused the servants and the handmaids, whom they had let go free, to return, and brought them into subjection for servants and for handmaids.

The King and People are Judged for their Disobedience Concerning their Slave's Freedom

(88) ¹² Therefore the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ¹³ Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel; I made a covenant with your fathers in the day that I brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondmen, saying, ¹⁴ At the end of seven years let ye go every man his brother a Hebrew, which has been sold to you; and when he has served you six years, you shall let him go free from you: but your fathers listened not to me, neither inclined their ear. ¹⁵ And ye were now turned, and had done right in my sight, in proclaiming liberty every man to his neighbor; and ye had made a covenant before me in the house which is called by my name: ¹⁶ But ye turned and polluted my name, and caused every man his servant, and every man his handmaid, whom ye had set at liberty at their pleasure, to return, and brought them into subjection, to be to you for servants and for handmaids. ¹⁷ Therefore thus says the LORD; Ye have not listened to me, in proclaiming liberty, everyone to his brother, and every man to his neighbor: behold, I proclaim a liberty for you, says the LORD, to the sword, to the pestilence, and to the famine; and I will make you to be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. ¹⁸ And I will give the men that have transgressed my covenant, which have not performed the words of the covenant which they had made before me, when they cut the calf in twain, and passed between the parts thereof, ¹⁹ The princes of Judah, and the princes of Jerusalem, the eunuchs, and the priests, and all the people of the land, which passed between the parts of the calf; ²⁰ I will even give them into the hand of their enemies, and into the hand of them that seek their life: and their dead bodies shall be for meat to the fowls of the heaven, and to the beasts of the earth. ²¹ And Zedekiah king of Judah and his princes will I give into the hand of their enemies, and into the hand of them that seek their life, and into the hand of the king of Babylon's army, which are gone up from you. ²² Behold, I will command, says the LORD, and cause them to return to this city; and they shall fight against it, and take it, and burn it with fire: and I will make the cities of Judah a desolation without an inhabitant.

Note: verse 14. At the end of seven years--that is, not on the *eighth* year, but within the limit of the seventh year, not later than the end of the seventh year (Ex 21:2; 23:10; De 15:12). So "at the end of three years" (De 14:28; 2Ki 18:10), and "after three days, I will rise again" (Mt 27:63), that is, on the *third day* (compare Mt 27:64).

Jeremiah Chapter 35

The Rechabites Example of Listening to and Obeying their Father

(89) ¹ The word which came to Jeremiah from the LORD in the days of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah, saying, ² Go to the house of the Rechabites, and speak to them, and bring them into the house of the LORD, into one of the chambers, and give them wine to drink. ³ Then I took Jaazaniah the son of Jeremiah, the son of Habaziah, and his brethren, and all his sons, and the whole house of the Rechabites; ⁴ And I brought them into the house of the LORD, into the chamber of the sons of Hanan, the son of Igdaliah, a man of God, which was by the chamber of the princes, which was above the chamber of Maaseiah the son of Shallum, the keeper of the door: ⁵ And I set before the sons of the house of the Rechabites pots full of wine, and cups, and I said to them, Drink ye wine. ⁶ But they said, We will drink no wine: for Jonadab the son of Rechab our father commanded us, saying, Ye shall drink no wine, [neither ye], nor your sons forever: ⁷ Neither shall ye build house, nor sow seed, nor plant vineyard, nor have [any]: but all your days ye shall dwell in tents; that ye may live many days in the land where ye [be] strangers. ⁸ Thus have we obeyed the voice of Jonadab the son of Rechab our father in all that he has charged us, to drink no wine all our days, we, our wives, our sons, nor our daughters; ⁹ Nor to build houses for us to dwell in: neither have we vineyard, nor field, nor seed: ¹⁰ But we have dwelt in tents, and have obeyed, and done according to all that Jonadab our father commanded us. ¹¹ But it came to pass, when Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon came up into the land, that we said, Come, and let us go to Jerusalem for fear of the army of the Chaldeans, and for fear of the army of the Syrians: so we dwell at Jerusalem.

(90) ¹² Then came the word of the LORD to Jeremiah, saying, ¹³ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Go and tell the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, Will ye not receive instruction to hearken to my words? says the LORD. ¹⁴ The words of Jonadab the son of Rechab, that he commanded his sons not to drink wine, are performed; for to this day they drink none, but obey their father's commandment: notwithstanding I have spoken to you, rising early and speaking; but ye listened not to me. ¹⁵ I have sent also to you all my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them, saying, Return ye now every man from his evil way, and amend your doings, and go not after other gods to serve them, and ye shall dwell in the land which I have given to you and to your fathers: but ye have not inclined your ear, nor listened to me. ¹⁶ Because the sons of Jonadab the son of Rechab have performed the commandment of their father, which he commanded them; but this people have not listened to me: ¹⁷ Therefore thus says the LORD God of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring upon Judah and upon all the inhabitants of Jerusalem all the evil that I have pronounced against them: because I have spoken to them, but they have not heard; and I have called to them, but they have not answered. ¹⁸ And Jeremiah said to the house of the Rechabites, Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Because ye have obeyed the commandment of Jonadab your father, and kept all his precepts, and done according to all that he has commanded you: ¹⁹ Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Jonadab the son of Rechab shall not want a man to stand before me forever.

Note: verse 1, Jeremiah refers to a past experience. Verse 2, the Rechabites are Kenites related to the Medianites and Moses by marriage (Judges 1:16). Jonadab helped King Jehu rid Israel of Baal-worship after King Ahab (2 Kings 10:15-27) 200 years earlier.

Baruch Writes Jeremiah's Words (1-4) then Reads in the Temple (5-19)

(91) ¹ And it came to pass in the **fourth year of Jehoiakim** the son of Josiah king of Judah, [that] this word came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, ² **Take you a roll of a book, and write therein all the words that I have spoken to you against Israel, and against Judah, and against all the nations, from the day I spoke to you, from the days of Josiah, even to this day.** ³ It may be that the house of Judah will hear all the evil which I purpose to do to them; that they may return every man from his evil way; that I **may forgive their iniquity and their sin.** ⁴ Then Jeremiah called Baruch the son of Neriah: and Baruch wrote from the mouth of Jeremiah all the words of the LORD, which he had spoken to him, upon a roll of a book. ⁵ And Jeremiah commanded Baruch, saying, I [am] shut up; I cannot go into the house of the LORD: ⁶ Therefore go you, and read in the roll, which you have written from my mouth, the words of the LORD in the ears of the people in the LORD'S house upon the fasting day: and also you shall read them in the ears of all Judah that come out of their cities. ⁷ **It may be they will present their supplication before the LORD, and will return everyone from his evil way:** for great is the anger and the fury that the LORD has pronounced against this people. ⁸ And Baruch the son of Neriah did according to all that Jeremiah the prophet commanded him, reading in the book the words of the LORD in the LORD'S house.

(92) ⁹ And it came to pass in the **fifth year of Jehoiakim** the son of Josiah king of Judah, in the ninth month, [that] they proclaimed a fast before the LORD to all the people in Jerusalem, and to all the people that came from the cities of Judah to Jerusalem. ¹⁰ Then read Baruch in the book the words of Jeremiah in the house of the LORD, in the chamber of Gemariah the son of Shaphan the scribe, in the higher court, at the entry of the new gate of the LORD'S house, in the ears of all the people. ¹¹ When **Michaiah** the son of Gemariah, the son of Shaphan, had **heard out of the book all the words of the LORD,** ¹² Then **he went** down into the king's house, into the scribe's chamber: and, look, all the princes sat there, [even] Elishama the scribe, and Delaiah the son of Shemaiah, and Elnathan the son of Achbor, and Gemariah the son of Shaphan, and Zedekiah the son of Hananiah, and all the princes. ¹³ **Then Michaiah declared to them all the words that he had heard, when Baruch read the book in the ears of the people.** ¹⁴ Therefore all the princes sent Jehudi the son of Nethaniah, the son of Shelemiah, the son of Cush, to Baruch, saying, Take in your hand **the roll** wherein you have read in the ears of the people, and come. So Baruch the son of Neriah took the roll in his hand, and came to them. ¹⁵ And they said unto him, Sit down now, and read it in our ears. So Baruch read [it] in their ears. ¹⁶ Now it came to pass, when they had heard all the words, they were afraid both one and other, and said to Baruch, We will surely tell the king of all these words. ¹⁷ And they asked Baruch, saying, Tell us now, How did you write all these words at his mouth? ¹⁸ Then Baruch answered them, He pronounced all these words to me with his mouth, and I wrote them with ink in the book. ¹⁹ **Then said the princes to Baruch, Go, hide you, you and Jeremiah; and let no man know where ye be.**

Application: God inspired His word to be spoken and written with ink on a scroll. The inspired language for the Hebrew Bible or Old Testament is Hebrew, not the Catholic belief of Aramaic or the scholar referring to the Greek Septuagint. The greatest evidence of this is the Great Isaiah Scroll from the Dead Sea Scrolls, the same Hebrew preserved by the Masoretes from the 6th-10th century used to translate into the Old Testament of many languages.

King Jehoiakim's House Hear Jehudi read and Burns the Scroll (Writings)

(93) ²⁰ And they went in to the king into the court, but they laid up the roll in the chamber of Elishama the scribe, and told all the words in the ears of the king. ²¹ So the king sent Jehudi to fetch the scroll: and he took it out of Elishama the scribe's chamber. And Jehudi read it in the ears of the king, and in the ears of all the princes which stood beside the king. ²² Now the king sat in the winter house in the ninth month: and [there was a fire] on the hearth burning before him. ²³ And it came to pass, [that] **when Jehudi had read three or four leaves, he cut it with the penknife, and cast [it] into the fire that was on the hearth, until all the roll was consumed in the fire that was on the hearth.** ²⁴ Yet they were not afraid, nor tore their garments, [neither] the king, nor any of his servants that heard all these words. ²⁵ Nevertheless Elnathan and Delaiah and Gemariah had made intercession to the king that he would not burn the scroll: but he would not hear them. ²⁶ But the king commanded Jerahmeel the son of Hammelech, and Seraiah the son of Azriel, and Shelemiah the son of Abdeel, to take Baruch the scribe and Jeremiah the prophet: **but the LORD hid them.**

*The Scroll is **Re-written** from the Mouth of Jeremiah by the Scribe Baruch*

(94) ²⁷ Then the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, after that the king had burned the scroll, and the words which Baruch wrote at the mouth of Jeremiah, saying, ²⁸ **Take you again another scroll, and write in it all the former words that were in the first roll, which Jehoiakim the king of Judah has burned.**

²⁹ **And you shall say to Jehoiakim king of Judah, Thus says the LORD; You have burned this scroll, saying, Why have you written therein, saying, The king of Babylon shall certainly come and destroy this land, and shall cause to cease from there man and beast? ³⁰ Therefore thus says the LORD of Jehoiakim king of Judah; He shall have none to sit upon the throne of David: and his dead body shall be cast out in the day to the heat, and in the night to the frost. ³¹ And I will punish him and his seed and his servants for their iniquity; and I will bring upon them, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and upon the men of Judah, all the evil that I have pronounced against them; but they listened not. ³² Then took Jeremiah another scroll, and gave it to Baruch the scribe, the son of Neriah; who wrote therein from the mouth of Jeremiah all the words of the book which Jehoiakim king of Judah had burned in the fire: and there were added besides to them many like words.**

Jeremiah Chapter 37

Prayer (1-4) Egypt Defends Jerusalem (5) the Babylonians will return (6-10)

(95) ¹ And king Zedekiah the son of Josiah reigned instead of Coniah the son of Jehoiakim, whom Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon made king in the land of Judah. ² But neither he, nor his servants, nor the people of the land, did hearken to the words of the LORD, which he spoke by the prophet Jeremiah. ³ And **Zedekiah the king sent** Jehucal the son of Shelemiah and Zephaniah the son of Maaseiah the priest to the prophet Jeremiah, saying, **Pray now to the LORD our God for us.** ⁴ Now Jeremiah came in and went out among the people: for they had not put him into prison. ⁵ **Then** Pharaoh's army was come forth out of Egypt: and when the Chaldeans that besieged Jerusalem heard tidings of them, they departed from Jerusalem. ⁶ **Then** came the word of the LORD to the prophet Jeremiah, saying, ⁷ Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel; Thus shall ye say to the king of Judah, that sent you to me to enquire of me; **Behold, Pharaoh's army, which is come forth to help you, shall return to Egypt into their own land.** ⁸ And the Chaldeans shall come again, and fight against this city, and take it, and burn it with fire. ⁹ Thus says the LORD; Deceive not yourselves, saying, The Chaldeans shall surely depart from us: for they shall not depart. ¹⁰ For though ye had smitten the whole army of the Chaldeans that fight against you, and there remained [but] wounded men among them, [yet] should they rise up every man in his tent, and burn this city with fire.

Jeremiah Falsely Accused, Beat and Put in Prison (11-16) Release to court of Prison (17-21)

(96) ¹¹ And it came to pass, that when the army of the Chaldeans was broken up from Jerusalem for fear of Pharaoh's army, ¹² Then Jeremiah went forth out of Jerusalem to go into the land of Benjamin, to separate himself there in the midst of the people. ¹³ And when **he was in the gate of Benjamin**, a captain of the ward was there, whose name was Irijah, the son of Shelemiah, the son of Hananiah; and he took Jeremiah the prophet, saying, You fall away to the Chaldeans. ¹⁴ Then said Jeremiah, [It is] false; I fall not away to the Chaldeans. But he listened not to him: so Irijah took Jeremiah, and brought him to the princes. ¹⁵ **Wherefore the princes were angry with Jeremiah, and smote him, and put him in prison in the house of Jonathan the scribe: for they had made that the prison.** ¹⁶ When Jeremiah was entered into the dungeon, and into the cabins, and Jeremiah had remained there many days; ¹⁷ Then Zedekiah the king sent, and took him out: and the king asked him secretly in his house, and said, **Is there [any] word from the LORD?** And Jeremiah said, There is: for, said he, **you shall be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon.** ¹⁸ Moreover Jeremiah said to king Zedekiah, What have I offended against you, or against your servants, or against this people, that ye have put me in prison? ¹⁹ Where are now your prophets which prophesied to you, saying, The king of Babylon shall not come against you, nor against this land? ²⁰ Therefore hear now, I pray you, O my lord the king: let my supplication, I pray you, be accepted before you; that you cause me not to return to the house of Jonathan the scribe, lest I die there. ²¹ Then Zedekiah the king commanded that they should commit Jeremiah into the court of the prison, and that they should give him daily a piece of bread out of the bakers' street, until all the bread in the city were spent. Thus Jeremiah remained in the court of the prison.

Princes Cast Jeremiah into the Muddy Dungeon (1-6) Ebedmelech the Ethiopian's Plea (7-13)

(97) ¹ Then Shephatiah the son of Mattan, and Gedaliah the son of Pashur, and Jucal the son of Shelemiah, and Pashur the son of Malchiah, heard the words that Jeremiah had spoken to all the people, saying, ² Thus says the LORD, **He that remains in this city shall die by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence: but he that goes forth to the Chaldeans shall live; for he shall have his life for a prey, and shall live.** ³ Thus says the LORD, **This city shall surely be given into the hand of the king of Babylon's army, which shall take it.** ⁴ Therefore the princes said to the king, We beseech you, let this man be put to death: for thus he weakens the hands of the men of war that remain in this city, and the hands of all the people, in speaking such words to them: for this man seeks not the welfare of this people, but the hurt. ⁵ Then Zedekiah the king said, Behold, he is in your hand: for the king is not [he that] can do [any] thing against you. ⁶ Then took they Jeremiah, and cast him into the dungeon of Malchiah the son of Hammelech, that was in the court of the prison: and they let down Jeremiah with cords. And in the dungeon [there was] no water, but mire: so Jeremiah sunk in the mire. ⁷ Now when **Ebedmelech the Ethiopian, one of the eunuchs which** was in the king's house, heard that they had put Jeremiah in the dungeon; the king then sitting in the gate of Benjamin; ⁸ Ebedmelech went forth out of the king's house, and spoke to the king, saying, ⁹ My lord the king, these men have done evil in all that they have done to Jeremiah the prophet, whom they have cast into the dungeon; and he is like to die for hunger in the place where he is: for there is no more bread in the city. ¹⁰ Then the king commanded Ebedmelech the Ethiopian, saying, Take from hence **thirty men** with you, and take up Jeremiah the prophet out of the dungeon, before he die. ¹¹ So Ebedmelech took the men with him, and went into the house of the king under the treasury, and took there old cast clouts and old rotten rags, and let them down by cords into the dungeon to Jeremiah. ¹² And Ebedmelech the Ethiopian said to Jeremiah, Put now [these] old cast clouts and rotten rags under your armholes under the cords. And Jeremiah did so. ¹³ So they drew up Jeremiah with cords, and took him up out of the dungeon: and Jeremiah remained in the court of the prison.

King Zedekiah and Jeremiah Meet Secretly and Hide Agreement from the Princes

(98) ¹⁴ Then Zedekiah the king sent, and took Jeremiah the prophet to him into the third entry that is in the house of the LORD: and the king said to Jeremiah, I will ask you a thing; hide nothing from me. ¹⁵ Then Jeremiah said to Zedekiah, If I declare [it] to you, will you not surely put me to death? and if I give you counsel, will you not hearken to me? ¹⁶ So Zedekiah the king swore secretly to Jeremiah, saying, [As] the LORD lives, that made us this soul, I will not put you to death, neither will I give you into the hand of these men that seek your life. ¹⁷ Then said Jeremiah to Zedekiah, Thus says the LORD, the God of hosts, the God of Israel; **If you will assuredly go forth to the king of Babylon's princes, then your soul shall live, and this city shall not be burned with fire; and you shall live, and your house:** ¹⁸ **But if you will not go forth to the king of Babylon's princes, then shall this city be given into the hand of the Chaldeans, and they shall burn it with fire, and you shall not escape out of their hand.** ¹⁹ And Zedekiah the king said to Jeremiah, I am afraid of the Jews that are fallen to the Chaldeans, lest they deliver me into their hand, and they mock me. ²⁰ But Jeremiah said, They shall not deliver [you]. Obey, I beseech you, the voice of the LORD, which I speak to you: so it shall be well to you, and your soul shall live. ²¹ But if you refuse to go forth, this is the word that the LORD has showed me: ²² **And, behold, all the women that are left in the king of Judah's house [shall be] brought forth to the king of Babylon's princes, and those [women] shall say, Your friends have set you on, and have prevailed against you: your feet are sunk in the mire, [and] they are turned away back.** ²³ **So they shall bring out all your wives and your children to the Chaldeans: and you shall not escape out of their hand, but shall be taken by the hand of the king of Babylon: and you shall cause this city to be burned with fire.** ²⁴ Then said Zedekiah to Jeremiah, Let no man know of these words, and you shall not die. ²⁵ But if the princes hear that I have talked with you, and they come to you, and say to you, Declare to us now what you have said to the king, hide it not from us, and we will not put you to death; also what the king said to you: ²⁶ Then you shall say to them, I presented my supplication before the king, that he would not cause me to return to Jonathan's house, to die there. ²⁷ Then came all the princes to Jeremiah, and asked him: and he told them according to all these words that the king had commanded. So they left off speaking with him; for the matter was not perceived. ²⁸ So Jeremiah abode in the court of the prison until the day that Jerusalem was taken: and he was [there] when Jerusalem was taken.

Note: Zedekiah knew he could trust Jeremiah, so may others trust in us. Jeremiah told the truth, but not the whole truth. Get wisdom for dealing with the enemy, the unsaved, the backslidden, and stay in God's will.

Walls of Jerusalem Broken – Zedekiah's 4 Sons Slayed and His Eyes Put Out

(99) ¹ In the **ninth year of Zedekiah king of Judah**, in the tenth month, came Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon and all his army against Jerusalem, and they besieged it. ² [And] in the **eleventh year** of Zedekiah, in the fourth month, the ninth [day] of the month, the city was broken up. ³ And all the princes of the king of Babylon came in, and sat in the middle gate, [even] Nergalsharezer, Samgarnebo, Sarsechim, Rabsaris, Nergalsharezer, Rabmag, with all the residue of the princes of the king of Babylon. ⁴ And it came to pass, [that] when Zedekiah the king of Judah saw them, and all the men of war, then they fled, and went forth out of the city by night, by the way of the king's garden, by the gate between the two walls: and he went out the way of the plain. ⁵ But the Chaldeans' army pursued after them, and overtook Zedekiah **in the plains of Jericho**: and when they had taken him, they brought him up to Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon to Riblah in the land of Hamath, where he gave judgment upon him. ⁶ Then **the king of Babylon slew the sons of Zedekiah in Riblah before his eyes**: also the king of Babylon slew all the nobles of Judah. ⁷ **Moreover he put out Zedekiah's eyes, and bound him with chains, to carry him to Babylon.** ⁸ And the Chaldeans burned the king's house, and the houses of the people, with fire, and brake down the walls of Jerusalem. ⁹ Then **Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard** carried away captive into Babylon the remnant of the people that remained in the city, and those that fell away, that fell to him, with the rest of the people that remained. ¹⁰ But **Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard** left of the poor of the people, which had nothing, in the land of Judah, and gave them vineyards and fields at the same time.

Nebuzaradan and Babylonian Princes Favor Jeremiah (11-14) Ebed-melech is Set Free (15-18)

(100) ¹¹ Now Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon gave charge concerning Jeremiah to Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard, saying, ¹² Take him, and look well to him, and do him no harm; but do to him even as he shall say to you. ¹³ So Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard sent, and Nebushasban, Rabsaris, and Nergalsharezer, Rabmag, and all the king of Babylon's princes; ¹⁴ Even they sent, and took Jeremiah out of the court of the prison, and committed him to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan, that he should carry him home: so he dwelt among the people.

¹⁵ Now the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah, while he was shut up in the court of the prison, saying, ¹⁶ **Go and speak to Ebedmelech the Ethiopian, saying, Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring my words upon this city for evil, and not for good; and they shall be [accomplished] in that day before you.** ¹⁷ **But I will deliver you in that day, says the LORD: and you shall not be given into the hand of the men of whom you are afraid.** ¹⁸ **For I will surely deliver you, and you shall not fall by the sword, but your life shall be for a prey to you: because you have put your trust in me, says the LORD.**

Note: The Babylonians were good to help the poor (vs10), and free Jeremiah and Ebedmelech. (vs 14) Gedaliah the son of Ahikam; Ahikam is an elder who saved Jeremiah earlier and a friend, Jeremiah 26:16-24. (vs 15) Jeremiah remembered the earlier favor of Ebedmelech to help him, Jeremiah 38:7-13. May we obey the Holy Scriptures so God's face can shine upon us, then we will shine before others.

Jeremiah Chapter 40

Jeremiah Released from Chains and His Choice of Liberty

(101) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, after that Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard had let him go from Ramah, when he had taken him being bound in chains among all that were carried away captive of Jerusalem and Judah, which were carried away captive to Babylon. ² And the captain of the guard took Jeremiah, and said unto him, The LORD your God has pronounced this evil upon this place. ³ Now the LORD has brought [it], and done according as he has said: because ye have sinned against the LORD, and have not obeyed his voice, therefore this thing is come upon you. ⁴ And now, behold, I loose you this day from the chains which [were] upon your hand. If it seem good to you to come with me into Babylon, come; and I will look well to you: but if it seem ill to you to come with me into Babylon, forbear: behold, all the land is before you: where it seems good and convenient for you to go, thither go. ⁵ Now while he was not yet gone back, [he said], Go back also to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan, whom the king of Babylon has made governor over the cities of Judah, and dwell with him among the people: or go wheresoever it seems convenient to you to go. So the captain of the guard gave him food and a reward, and let him go. ⁶ Then went Jeremiah to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam to Mizpah; and dwelt with him among the people that were left in the land.

^a Gedaliah is the son of the elder Ahikam who spoke up for Jeremiah when the princes and the people desire to kill him, 26:24.

Governor Gedaliah is Warned by Johanan of the Ammonites and Ishmael

(102) ⁷ Now when all the captains of the forces which [were] in the fields, [even] they and their men, heard that the king of Babylon had made Gedaliah the son of Ahikam governor in the land, and had committed to him men, and women, and children, and of the poor of the land, of them that were not carried away captive to Babylon; ⁸ Then they came to Gedaliah to Mizpah, even Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, and Johanan and Jonathan the sons of Kareah, and Seraiah the son of Tanhumeth, and the sons of Ephai the Netophasite, and Jezaniah the son of a Maachasite, they and their men. ⁹ And Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan swore to them and to their men, saying, Fear not to serve the Chaldeans: dwell in the land, and serve the king of Babylon, and it shall be well with you. ¹⁰ As for me, behold, I will dwell at Mizpah to serve the Chaldeans, which will come to us: but ye, gather ye wine, and summer fruits, and oil, and put them in your vessels, and dwell in your cities that ye have taken. ¹¹ Likewise when all the Jews that [were] in Moab, and among the Ammonites, and in Edom, and that [were] in all the countries, heard that the king of Babylon had left a remnant of Judah, and that he had set over them Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan; ¹² Even all the Jews returned out of all places where they were driven, and came to the land of Judah, to Gedaliah, to Mizpah, and gathered wine and summer fruits very much. ¹³ Moreover Johanan the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces that [were] in the fields, came to Gedaliah to Mizpah, ¹⁴ And said unto him, Do you certainly know that Baalis the king of the Ammonites has sent Ishmael the son of Nethaniah to slay you? But Gedaliah the son of Ahikam believed them not. ¹⁵ Then Johanan the son of Kareah spoke to Gedaliah in Mizpah secretly, saying, Let me go, I pray you, and I will slay Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, and no man shall know [it]: wherefore should he slay you, that all the Jews which are gathered to you should be scattered, and the remnant in Judah perish? ¹⁶ But Gedaliah the son of Ahikam said to Johanan the son of Kareah, You shall not do this thing: for you speak falsely of Ishmael.

Note: Johanan – God is gracious in Hebrew. God’s grace is shown through his acts to save king Gedaliah, who strikes twice. Gedaliah is out when the Ammonites throw the third ball. Ramah is six miles north of Jerusalem, Mizpah is 2-3 miles from Ramah, an outpost to protect Jerusalem during time of King Asa of Judah.

Jeremiah Chapter 41

Ishmael (an actor that used the Jews emotions) Slays Governor Gedaliah and many more

(103) ¹ Now it came to pass in the seventh month, [that] **Ishmael** the son of Nethaniah the son of Elishama, of the seed royal, and the princes of the king, **even ten men with him**, came to **Gedaliah** the son of Ahikam to Mizpah; and there **they did eat bread together in Mizpah**. ² Then arose Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, and the ten men that were with him, and smote Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan with the sword, and slew him, whom the king of Babylon had made governor over the land. ³ **Ishmael also slew all the Jews that were with him, [even] with Gedaliah, at Mizpah, and the Chaldeans that were found there, [and] the men of war.** ⁴ And it came to pass the second day after he had slain Gedaliah, and no man knew [it], ⁵ That there came certain **from Shechem, from Shiloh, and from Samaria**, [even] **fourscore men**, having their beards shaven, and their clothes tore, and having cut themselves, with offerings and incense in their hand, to bring them to the house of the LORD. ⁶ And Ishmael the son of Nethaniah went forth from Mizpah to meet them, **weeping all along as he went: and** it came to pass, as he met them, he said to them, Come to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam. ⁷ And it was [so], when they came into the midst of the city, that **Ishmael** the son of Nethaniah **slew them**, [and cast them] into the midst of the pit, he, and the men that [were] with him. ⁸ But **ten men were found among them that said to Ishmael, Slay us not: for we have treasures in the field, of wheat, and of barley, and of oil, and of honey.** So he forbore, and slew them not among their brethren. ⁹ Now the pit wherein Ishmael had cast all the dead bodies of the men, whom he had slain because of Gedaliah, was it which Asa the king had made for fear of Baasha king of Israel: [and] Ishmael the son of Nethaniah filled it with [them that were] slain. ¹⁰ Then Ishmael carried away captive all the residue of the people that [were] in Mizpah, [even] the king's daughters, and all the people that remained in Mizpah, whom Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard had committed to Gedaliah the son of Ahikam: and Ishmael the son of Nethaniah carried them away captive, and departed to go over to the Ammonites.

Johanan Rescues the Jews from the Ammonites

(104) ¹¹ But when **Johanan** the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces that [were] with him, heard of all the evil that Ishmael the son of Nethaniah had done, ¹² Then they took all the men, and went to fight with Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, and found him by the great waters that are in Gibeon. ¹³ Now it came to pass, [that] when all the people which [were] with Ishmael saw Johanan the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces that [were] with him, then they were glad. ¹⁴ So all the people that Ishmael had carried away captive from Mizpah cast about and returned, and went to Johanan the son of Kareah. ¹⁵ **But Ishmael the son of Nethaniah escaped from Johanan with eight men, and went to the Ammonites.** ¹⁶ Then took Johanan the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces that [were] with him, all the remnant of the people whom he had recovered from Ishmael the son of Nethaniah, from Mizpah, after [that] he had slain Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, [even] mighty men of war, and the women, and the children, and the eunuchs, whom he had brought again from Gibeon: ¹⁷ And they departed, and dwelt in the habitation of Chimham, which is by Bethlehem, to go to enter into Egypt, ¹⁸ Because of the Chaldeans: for they were afraid of them, because Ishmael the son of Nethaniah had slain Gedaliah the son of Ahikam, whom the king of Babylon made governor in the land.

Note: This scene occurs nine months after the fall of Jerusalem.

Application – take heed to warnings and beware of actors.

People Request Jeremiah to Pray for Them

(105) ¹ Then all the captains of the forces, and **Johanah** the son of Kareah, and Jezeban the son of Hoshaiah, and all the people from **the least even to the great**, came near, ² And said to Jeremiah the prophet, Let, we beseech you, our supplication be accepted before you, and **pray for us to the LORD your God, [even] for all this remnant; (for we are left [but] a few of many, as your eyes do behold us:)** ³ That the LORD your God may show us the way wherein we may walk, and the thing that we may do. ⁴ Then Jeremiah the prophet said to them, I have heard [you]; behold, I will pray to the LORD your God according to your words; and it shall come to pass, [that] whatsoever thing the LORD shall answer you, I will declare [it] to you; **I will keep nothing back from you.** ⁵ Then they said to Jeremiah, The LORD be a true and faithful witness between us, if we do not even according to all things for the which the LORD your God shall send you to us. ⁶ Whether [it be] good, or whether [it be] evil, we will obey the voice of the LORD our God, to whom we send you; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the LORD our God.

Prayer Answered with Promise of Blessing

⁷ And it came to pass after ten days, that the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah. ⁸ Then called he Johanah the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces which [were] with him, and all the people from the least even to the great, ⁹ And said to them, Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, to whom ye sent me to present your supplication before him; ¹⁰ **If ye will still abide in this land, then will I build you, and not pull [you] down, and I will plant you, and not pluck [you] up: for I repent me of the evil that I have done to you.** ¹¹ **Be not afraid of the king of Babylon, of whom ye are afraid; be not afraid of him, says the LORD: for I [am] with you to save you, and to deliver you from his hand.** ¹² And I will show mercies to you, that he may have mercy upon you, and cause you to return to your own land.

Application: In fear for their lives the people make vain promises. The prayer is answered 10 days later.

People Warned Not to go to Egypt for Safety

(106) ¹³ But if ye say, We will not dwell in this land, neither obey the voice of the LORD your God, ¹⁴ Saying, No; but we will go into the land of Egypt, where we shall see no war, nor hear the sound of the trumpet, nor have hunger of bread; and there will we dwell: ¹⁵ And now therefore hear the word of the LORD, ye remnant of Judah; Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; **If ye wholly set your faces to enter into Egypt, and go to sojourn there;** ¹⁶ **Then it shall come to pass, [that] the sword, which ye feared, shall overtake you there in the land of Egypt, and the famine, whereof ye were afraid, shall follow close after you there in Egypt; and there ye shall die.** ¹⁷ **So shall it be with all the men that set their faces to go into Egypt to sojourn there; they shall die by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence: and none of them shall remain or escape from the evil that I will bring upon them.** ¹⁸ **For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; As my anger and my fury has been poured forth upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem; so shall my fury be poured forth upon you, when ye shall enter into Egypt: and ye shall be an execration, and an astonishment, and a curse, and a reproach; and ye shall see this place no more.** ¹⁹ The LORD has said concerning you, O ye remnant of Judah; **Go ye not into Egypt:** know certainly that I have admonished you this day. ²⁰ For ye dissembled in your hearts, when ye sent me to the LORD your God, saying, Pray for us to the LORD our God; and according to all that the LORD our God shall say, so declare to us, and we will do [it]. ²¹ And [now] I have this day declared [it] to you; but ye have not obeyed the voice of the LORD your God, nor any [thing] for the which he has sent me to you. ²² Now therefore know certainly that ye shall die by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence, in the place where ye desire to go [and] to sojourn.

Proud Men Refute Jeremiah's Truth and Go to Egypt

(107) ¹ And it came to pass, [that] when Jeremiah had made an end of speaking to all the people all the words of the LORD their God, for which the LORD their God had sent him to them, [even] all these words, ² Then spoke Azariah the son of Hoshaiiah, and Johanan the son of Kareah, and all the proud men, saying to Jeremiah, You speak falsely: the LORD our God has not sent you to say, Go not into Egypt to sojourn there: ³ But **Baruch** the son of Neriah sets you on against us, for to deliver us into the hand of the Chaldeans, that they might put us to death, and carry us away captives into Babylon. ⁴ So **Johanan** the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces, and all the people, obeyed **not the voice of the LORD, to dwell in the land of Judah.** ⁵ But Johanan the son of Kareah, and all the captains of the forces, took all the remnant of Judah, that were returned from all nations, where they had been driven, to dwell in the land of Judah; ⁶ [Even] men, and women, and children, and the king's daughters, and every person that Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard had left with Gedaliah the son of Ahikam the son of Shaphan, and Jeremiah the prophet, and Baruch the son of Neriah. ⁷ So they came into the land of Egypt: for they obeyed not the voice of the LORD: thus came they [even] to Tahpanhes.

Prophecy of Nebuchadnezzar Conquering Egypt

(108) ⁸ Then came the word of the LORD to Jeremiah in Tahpanhes, saying, ⁹ **Take great stones in your hand, and hide them in the clay in the brick-kiln, which is at the entry of Pharaoh's house in Tahpanhes, in the sight of the men of Judah;** ¹⁰ **And say to them, Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will send and take Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, my servant, and will set his throne upon these stones that I have hid; and he shall spread his royal pavilion over them.** ¹¹ **And when he comes, he shall smite the land of Egypt, [and deliver] such [as are] for death to death; and such [as are] for captivity to captivity; and such [as are] for the sword to the sword.** ¹² **And I will kindle a fire in the houses of the gods of Egypt; and he shall burn them, and carry them away captives: and he shall array himself with the land of Egypt, as a shepherd puts on his garment; and he shall go forth from there in peace.** ¹³ **He shall break also the images of Bethshemesh, that is in the land of Egypt; and the houses of the gods of the Egyptians shall he burn with fire.**

In Egypt Judah is not Humbled or Fear the LORD, but Burn Incense to the Queen of Heaven

(109) ¹ The word that came to Jeremiah concerning all the Jews which dwell in the land of Egypt, which dwell at Migdol, and at Tahpanhes, and at Noph, and in the country of Pathros, saying, ² **Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Ye have seen all the evil that I have brought upon Jerusalem, and upon all the cities of Judah; and, behold, this day they are a desolation, and no man dwells therein,** ³ **Because of their wickedness which they have committed to provoke me to anger, in that they went to burn incense, [and] to serve other gods, whom they knew not, [neither] they, ye, nor your fathers.** ⁴ **Howbeit I sent to you all my servants the prophets, rising early and sending them, saying, Oh, do not this abominable thing that I hate.** ⁵ **But they listened not, nor inclined their ear to turn from their wickedness, to burn no incense to other gods.** ⁶ **Wherefore my fury and my anger was poured forth, and was kindled in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem; and they are wasted [and] desolate, as at this day.** ⁷ **Therefore now thus says the LORD, the God of hosts, the God of Israel; Wherefore commit ye [this] great evil against your souls, to cut off from you man and woman, child and suckling, out of Judah, to leave you none to remain;** ⁸ **In that ye provoke me to wrath with the works of your hands, burning incense to other gods in the land of Egypt, where ye be gone to dwell, that ye might cut yourselves off, and that ye might be a curse and a reproach among all the nations of the earth?** ⁹ **Have ye forgotten the wickedness of your fathers, and the wickedness of the kings of Judah, and the wickedness of their wives, and your own wickedness, and the wickedness of your wives, which they have committed in the land of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem?** ¹⁰ **They are not humbled [even] to this day, neither have they feared, nor walked in my law, nor in my statutes,** that I set before you and before your fathers. ¹¹ **Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will set my face against you for evil, and to cut off all Judah.**

(110) ¹² And I will take the remnant of Judah, that have **set their faces to go into the land of Egypt to sojourn there, and they shall all be consumed, [and] fall in the land of Egypt;** they shall [even] be consumed by the sword [and] by the famine: they shall die, from the least even to the great, by the sword and by the famine: and they shall be an execration, [and] an astonishment, and a curse, and a reproach. ¹³ For I will punish them that dwell in the land of Egypt, as I have punished Jerusalem, by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence: ¹⁴ So that none of the remnant of Judah, which are gone into the land of Egypt to sojourn there, shall escape or remain, that they should return into the land of Judah, to the which they have a desire to return to dwell there: for none shall return but such as shall escape. ¹⁵ Then all the men which knew that their wives had burned incense to other gods, and all the women that stood by, a great multitude, even all the people that dwelt in the land of Egypt, in Pathros, answered Jeremiah, saying, ¹⁶ **[As for] the word that you have spoken to us in the name of the LORD, we will not hearken to you.** ¹⁷ **But we will certainly do whatsoever thing goes forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings to her,** as we have done, we, and our fathers, our kings, and our princes, in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem: for [then] had we plenty of food, and were well, and saw no evil. ¹⁸ But since we left off to burn incense to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings to her, we have wanted all [things], and have been consumed by the sword and by the famine. ¹⁹ And when we burned incense to the **queen of heaven**, and poured out drink offerings to her, did we make her cakes to worship her, and pour out drink offerings to her, without our men?

(111) ²⁰ Then Jeremiah said to all the people, to the men, and to the women, and to all the people which had given him [that] answer, saying, ²¹ The incense that ye burned in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, ye, and your fathers, your kings, and your princes, and the people of the land, did not the LORD remember them, and came it [not] into his mind? ²² So that the LORD could no longer bear, because of the evil of your doings, [and] because of the abominations which ye have committed; therefore is your land a desolation, and an astonishment, and a curse, without an inhabitant, as at this day. ²³ Because ye have burned incense, and because **ye have sinned against the LORD, and have not obeyed the voice of the LORD, nor walked in his law, nor in his statutes, nor in his testimonies;** therefore this evil is happened to you, as at this day. ²⁴ Moreover Jeremiah said to all the people, and to all the women, Hear the word of the LORD, all Judah that are in the land of Egypt: ²⁵ Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, saying; **Ye and your wives have both spoken with your mouths, and fulfilled with your hand, saying, We will surely perform our vows that we have vowed, to burn incense to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings to her: ye will surely accomplish your vows, and surely perform your vows.** ²⁶ Therefore hear ye the word of the LORD, all Judah that dwell in the land of Egypt; **Behold, I have sworn by my great name,** says the LORD, **that my name shall no more be named in the mouth of any man of Judah in all the land of Egypt, saying, The Lord GOD lives.** ²⁷ **Behold, I will watch over them for evil, and not for good:** and all the men of Judah that are in the land of Egypt shall be consumed by the sword and by the famine, until there be an end of them. ²⁸ Yet a small number that escape the sword shall return out of the land of Egypt into the land of Judah, and all the remnant of Judah, that are gone into the land of Egypt to sojourn there, shall know whose words shall stand, mine, or theirs. ²⁹ And this [shall be] a sign to you, says the LORD, that **I will punish you in this place, that ye may know that my words shall surely stand against you for evil:** ³⁰ Thus says the LORD; Behold, I will give Pharaohhophra king of Egypt into the hand of his enemies, and into the hand of them that seek his life; as I gave Zedekiah king of Judah into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, his enemy, and that sought his life.

Private Discipleship of Baruch

(112) ¹ The word that Jeremiah the prophet spoke to ^a Baruch the son of Neriah, when he had written these words in a book at the mouth of Jeremiah, in the fourth year of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah, saying, ² Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, to you, O Baruch; ³ **You did say, Woe is me now!** for the LORD has added grief to my sorrow; I fainted in my sighing, and I find no rest. ⁴ Thus shall you say to him, The LORD says thus; Behold, [that] which **I have built will I break down, and that which I have planted I will pluck up, even this whole land.** ⁵ And seek you great things for thyself? seek them not: for, behold, I will bring evil upon all flesh, says the LORD: but your life will I give to you for a prey in all places where you go.

^a Jeremiah 36, public discipleship 18 years earlier.

Prophecy Against Egypt (using Babylon at the Battle of Carchemish)



(113) ¹ The word of the LORD which came to Jeremiah the prophet **against the Gentiles;** ² Against Egypt, against the army of Pharaoh-necho king of Egypt, which was by the **river Euphrates in Carchemish,** which **Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon smote** in the fourth year of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah. ³ **Order ye the buckler and shield, and draw near to battle.** ⁴ **Harness the horses; and get up, ye horsemen, and stand forth with [your] helmets; furbish the spears, [and] put on the brigandines.** ⁵ **Wherefore I have seen them dismayed [and] turned away back? and their mighty ones are beaten down, and are fled apace, and look not back: [for] fear was round about, says the LORD.** ⁶ **Let not the swift flee away, nor the mighty man escape; they shall stumble, and fall toward the north by the river Euphrates.** ⁷ **Who is this [that] comes up as a flood, whose waters are moved as the rivers?** ⁸ **Egypt rises up like a flood, and [his] waters are moved like the rivers; and he says, I will go up, [and] will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof.** ⁹ **Come up, ye horses; and rage, ye chariots; and let the mighty men come forth; the Ethiopians and the Libyans, that handle the shield; and the Lydians, that handle [and] bend the bow.** ¹⁰ For this is the day of the Lord GOD of hosts, a day of vengeance, that he may avenge him of his adversaries: and the sword shall devour, and it shall be satiate and made drunk with their blood: for the Lord GOD of hosts has a sacrifice in the north country by the river Euphrates. ¹¹ **Go up into Gilead, and take balm, O virgin, the daughter of Egypt: in vain shall you use many medicines; [for] you shall not be cured.** ¹² The nations have heard of your shame, and your cry has filled the land: for the mighty man has stumbled against the mighty, [and] they are fallen both together. ¹³ The word that the LORD spoke to Jeremiah the prophet, how **Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon should come [and] smite the land of Egypt.** ¹⁴ **Declare ye in Egypt, and publish in Migdol, and publish in Noph and in Tahpanhes: say ye, Stand fast, and prepare you; for the sword shall devour round about you.** ¹⁵ **Why are your valiant [men] swept away? they stood not, because the LORD did drive them.** ¹⁶ He made many to fall, yes, one fell upon another: and they said, Arise, and let us go again to our own people, and to the land of our nativity, from the oppressing sword. ¹⁷ They did cry there, Pharaoh king of Egypt [is but] a noise; he has passed the time appointed. ¹⁸ [As] I live, says the King, whose name is the LORD of hosts, Surely as Tabor is among the mountains, and as Carmel by the sea, [so] shall he come. ¹⁹ O you daughter dwelling in Egypt, furnish thyself to go into captivity: for Noph shall be waste and desolate without an inhabitant. ²⁰ Egypt [is like] a very fair heifer, [but] destruction comes; it comes out of the north. ²¹ Also her hired men are in the midst of her like fatted bullocks; for they also are turned back, [and] are fled away together: they did not stand, because the day of their calamity was come upon them, [and] the time of their visitation. ²² The voice thereof shall go like a serpent; for they shall march with an army, and come against her with axes, as hewers of wood. ²³ They shall cut down her forest, says the LORD, though it cannot be searched; because they are more than the grasshoppers, and are innumerable.

Jeremiah Chapter 46

²⁴ The daughter of Egypt shall be confounded; she shall be delivered into the hand of the people of the north. ²⁵ The LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, says; Behold, I will punish the multitude of No, and Pharaoh, and Egypt, with their gods, and their kings; even Pharaoh, and [all] them that trust in him: ²⁶ And I will deliver them into the hand of those that seek their lives, and into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, and into the hand of his servants: and afterward it shall be inhabited, as in the days of old, says the LORD.

Note: In the time of King Josiah, Egypt joined Assyria and caused the Babylonians to flee from their siege of Jerusalem in 609 BC, then Egypt took King Jehohaz captive to Egypt. Later in 609BC the Egyptians and Assyrians battle the Babylonians at Carchemish resulting in a turning point of empires. The Babylonians rise, reducing the Assyrian and Egyptian empire.

Jacob (Human) & Israel (Divine) Promise Future Mercy & Justice (Ezra-Nehemiah & May 14, 1948)

(114) ²⁷ But fear not you, O my servant **Jacob**, and be not dismayed, **O Israel**: for, behold, I will save you from afar off, and your seed from the land of their captivity; and **Jacob** shall return, and be in rest and at ease, and none shall make [him] afraid. ²⁸ Fear you not, **O Jacob** My servant, says the LORD: for I [am] with you; for I will make a full end of all the nations where I have driven you: but I will not make a full end of you, but correct you in measure; yet will I not leave you wholly unpunished.

Note: Jacob represents the human side of man, the old man (Romans 6-7). Israel represents the divine side of man, the new man in Christ (Romans 8). Possibly Jacob is an individual and Israel a nation. Verse 28 (Mt 28:20, always, even unto the end), there is always a remnant. Justice in New Testament is 1 Corinthians 5:10, 2 Corinthians 3:14-15 and 2 Timothy

Jeremiah Chapter 47

Prophecy Against the Philistines

(115) ¹ The word of the LORD that came to Jeremiah the prophet against the Philistines, before that Pharaoh smote **Gaza**. ² Thus says the LORD; Behold, waters rise up **out of the north**, and shall be an overflowing flood, and shall overflow the land, and all that is therein; the city, and them that dwell therein: then the men shall cry, and all the inhabitants of the land shall howl. ³ At the noise of the stamping of the hoofs of his strong [horses], at the rushing of his chariots, [and at] the rumbling of his wheels, the fathers shall not look back to [their] children for feebleness of hands; ⁴ Because of the day that comes to spoil all the Philistines, [and] to cut off from Tyre and Zidon every helper that remains: for the LORD will spoil the Philistines, the remnant of the country of Caphtor. ⁵ Baldness is come upon **Gaza**; **Ashkelon** is cut off [with] the remnant of their valley: how long will you cut thyself? ⁶ O you **sword of the LORD**, how long [will it be] ere you be quiet? put up thyself into your **sheath**, rest, and be still. ⁷ How can it be quiet, seeing the LORD has given it a charge against Ashkelon, and against the sea shore? there has he appointed it.

Jeremiah Chapter 48

Prophecy Against Moab (descendants of Lot, south of Ammon, Moabite Stone-Chemosh god)

(116) ¹ Against Moab thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; **Woe to Nebo!** for it is spoiled: Kiriathaim is confounded [and] taken: Misgab is confounded and dismayed. ² [There shall be] no more praise of Moab: in Heshbon they have devised evil against it; come, and let us cut it off from [being] a nation. Also you shall be cut down, O Madmen; the sword shall pursue you. ³ A voice of crying [shall be] from Horonaim, spoiling and great destruction. ⁴ Moab is destroyed; her little ones have caused a cry to be heard. ⁵ For in the going up of Luhith continual weeping shall go up; for in the going down of Horonaim the enemies have heard a cry of destruction. ⁶ Flee, save your lives, and be like the heath in the wilderness. ⁷ For **because you have trusted in your works and in your treasures, you shall also be taken: and Chemosh shall go forth into captivity [with] his priests and his princes together.** ⁸ And the spoiler shall come upon every city, and no city shall escape: the valley also shall perish, and the plain shall be destroyed, as the LORD has spoken. ⁹ Give wings to Moab, that it may flee and get away: for the cities thereof shall be desolate, without any to dwell therein. ¹⁰ **Cursed [be] he that does the work of the LORD deceitfully, and cursed [be] he that keeps back his sword from blood.** ¹¹ Moab has been at ease from his youth, and he has settled on his lees, and has not been

emptied from vessel to vessel, neither has he gone into captivity: therefore his taste remained in him, and his scent is not changed. ¹² Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will send to him wanderers, that shall cause him to wander, and shall empty his vessels, and break their bottles.

¹³ And **Moab shall be ashamed of Chemosh, as the house of Israel was ashamed of Bethel their confidence.**

Note: Bethel is a good place of worship Genesis to Samuel is now an evil place of worship beginning with King Jeroboam in Kings and Chronicles. The Mesha Stele or Moabite Stone was discovered in 1868.

(117) ¹⁴ How say ye, We are mighty and strong men for the war? ¹⁵ Moab is spoiled, and gone up [out of] her cities, and his chosen young men are gone down to the slaughter, says the King, whose name is the LORD of hosts. ¹⁶ The calamity of Moab is near to come, and his affliction hastes fast. ¹⁷ All ye that are about him, bemoan him; and all ye that know his name, say, How is the strong staff broken, [and] the beautiful rod! ¹⁸ You daughter that do inhabit Dibon, come down from [your] glory, and sit in thirst; for the spoiler of Moab shall come upon you, [and] he shall destroy your strong holds. ¹⁹ O inhabitant of Aroer, stand by the way, and espy; ask him that flees, and her that escapes, [and] say, What is done? ²⁰ Moab is confounded; for it is broken down: howl and cry; tell ye it in Arnon, that Moab is spoiled, ²¹ And judgment is come upon the plain country; upon Holon, and upon Jahazah, and upon Mephaath, ²² And upon Dibon, and upon Nebo, and upon Bethdiblathaim, ²³ And upon Kiriathaim, and upon Bethgamul, and upon Bethmeon, ²⁴ And upon Kerioth, and upon Bozrah, and upon all the cities of the land of Moab, far or near. ²⁵ The horn of Moab is cut off, and his arm is broken, says the LORD.

(118) ²⁶ Make ye him drunken: for he magnified [himself] against the LORD: Moab also shall wallow in his vomit, and he also shall be in derision. ²⁷ For was not Israel a derision to you? was he found among thieves? for since you spoke of him, you skipped for joy. ²⁸ O ye that dwell in Moab, leave the cities, and dwell in the rock, and be like the dove [that] makes her nest in the sides of the hole's mouth. ²⁹ We have heard the pride of Moab, (he is exceeding proud) his loftiness, and his arrogancy, and his pride, and the haughtiness of his heart. ³⁰ I know his wrath, says the LORD; but [it shall] not [be] so; his lies shall not so effect [it]. ³¹ Therefore will I howl for Moab, and I will cry out for all Moab; [my heart] shall mourn for the men of Kirheres. ³² O vine of Sibmah, I will weep for you with the weeping of Jazer: your plants are gone over the sea, they reach [even] to the sea of Jazer: the spoiler is fallen upon your summer fruits and upon your vintage. ³³ And joy and gladness is taken from the plentiful field, and from the land of Moab; and I have caused wine to fail from the winepresses: none shall tread with shouting; [their] shouting [shall be] no shouting. ³⁴ From the cry of Heshbon [even] to Elealeh, [and even] to Jahaz, have they uttered their voice, from Zoar [even] to Horonaim, [as] a heifer of three years old: for the waters also of Nimrim shall be desolate. ³⁵ **Moreover I will cause to cease in Moab, says the LORD, him that offers in the high places, and him that burns incense to his gods.** ³⁶ Therefore my heart shall sound for Moab like pipes, and my heart shall sound like pipes for the men of Kirheres: because the riches [that] he has gotten are perished. ³⁷ For every head [shall be] bald, and every beard clipped: upon all the hands [shall be] cuttings, and upon the loins sackcloth. ³⁸ [There shall be] lamentation generally upon all the housetops of Moab, and in the streets thereof: for I have broken Moab like a vessel wherein is no pleasure, says the LORD. ³⁹ They shall howl, [saying], How it is broken down! how has Moab turned the back with shame! so shall Moab be a derision and a dismaying to all them about him. ⁴⁰ For thus says the LORD; Behold, he shall fly as an eagle, and shall spread his wings over Moab. ⁴¹ Kerioth is taken, and the strong holds are surprised, and **the mighty men's hearts in Moab at that day shall be as the heart of a woman in her pangs.** ⁴² **And Moab shall be destroyed from [being] a people, because he has magnified [himself] against the LORD.** ⁴³ Fear, and the pit, and the snare, [shall be] upon you, O inhabitant of Moab, says the LORD. ⁴⁴ He that flees from the fear shall fall into the pit; and he that gets up out of the pit shall be taken in the snare: for I will bring upon it, [even] upon Moab, the year of their visitation, says the LORD. ⁴⁵ They that fled stood under the shadow of Heshbon because of the force: but a fire shall come forth out of Heshbon, and a flame from the midst of Sihon, and shall devour the corner of Moab, and the crown of the head of the tumultuous ones. ⁴⁶ **Woe be to you, O Moab! the people of Chemosh perishes:** for your sons are taken captives, and your daughters captives. ⁴⁷ **Yet will I bring again the captivity of Moab in the latter days, says the LORD. Thus far is the judgment of Moab.**

Prophecy Against the Ammonites (descendants of Lot, north of Moab, east of the Jordan River)

(119) ¹ Concerning the Ammonites, thus says the LORD; Has Israel **no sons?** has he **no heir?** why [then] does **their king inherit Gad**, and his people dwell in his **cities?** ² Therefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will cause an alarm of war to be heard in **Rabbah** of the Ammonites; and it shall be a desolate heap, and her daughters shall be burned with fire: then shall **Israel be heir** to them that were **his heirs**, says the LORD. ³ Howl, **O Heshbon, for Ai is spoiled: cry, ye daughters of Rabbah**, gird you with sackcloth; lament, and run to and fro by the hedges; for **their king** shall go into captivity, [and] his priests and his princes together. ⁴ Wherefore glory you in the valleys, your flowing valley, **O backsliding daughter?** that trusted in her treasures, [saying], Who shall come to me? ⁵ Behold, I will bring a fear upon you, says the Lord GOD of hosts, from all those that be about you; and ye shall be driven out every man right forth; and none shall gather up him that wanders. ⁶ And **afterward I will bring again the captivity of the children of Ammon**, says the LORD.

Notes: King is in context with sons and heir and cities. Ammon shall return to their land when the Persians allow all nations to return under King Artaxerxes. Some resist God's mercy and some continue to resist God's judgment from where there is no possibility of restoration. To resist God is demonic but to resist the devil is Godly (James 4:7-10). Fredrick Douglas home video ended with RESIST taken out of context of his good witness to align with a biased narrative in America in 2020.

Each nation and the borders go with their God's. Some Bible versions translate the Hebrew word Melek as Malcam or Milcom only in 49:1, 3. Where all 2523x translate to king and Malcom 1x in the KJV.

Prophecy Against Edom (south of Moab, see the book of Obadiah)

(120) ⁷ Concerning Edom, thus says the LORD of hosts; **[Is] wisdom no more in Teman? is counsel perished from the prudent? is their wisdom vanished?** ⁸ Flee ye, turn back, dwell deep, O inhabitants of Dedan; for **I will bring the calamity of Esau upon him, the time [that] I will visit him.** ⁹ If grape-gatherers come to you, would they not leave [some] gleaning grapes? if thieves by night, they will destroy till they have enough. ¹⁰ But I have made Esau bare, I have uncovered his secret places, and he shall not be able to hide himself: his seed is spoiled, and his brethren, and his neighbors, and he is not. ¹¹ Leave your fatherless children, I will preserve them alive; and let your widows trust in me. ¹² For thus says the LORD; Behold, they whose judgment was not to drink of the cup have assuredly drunken; and are you he [that] shall altogether go unpunished? you shall not go unpunished, but you shall surely drink [of it]. ¹³ For I have sworn by myself, says the LORD, that Bozrah shall become a desolation, a reproach, a waste, and a curse; and all the cities thereof shall be perpetual wastes. ¹⁴ I have heard a rumor from the LORD, and an ambassador is sent to the heathen, [saying], Gather ye together, and come against her, and rise up to the battle. ¹⁵ For, look, I will make you small among the heathen, [and] despised among men. ¹⁶ **Your terribleness has deceived you, [and] the pride of your heart, O you that dwell in the clefts of the rock, that hold the height of the hill: though you should make your nest as high as the eagle, I will bring you down from there**, says the LORD. ¹⁷ Also Edom shall be a desolation: everyone that goes by it shall be astonished, and shall hiss at all the plagues thereof. ¹⁸ **As in the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbor [cities] thereof, says the LORD, no man shall abide there, neither shall a son of man dwell in it.** ¹⁹ Behold, he shall come up like a lion from the swelling of Jordan against the habitation of the strong: but I will suddenly make him run away from her: and who is a chosen [man, that] I may appoint over her? for who is like me? and who will appoint me the time? and who is that shepherd that will stand before me? ²⁰ Therefore hear the counsel of the LORD, that he has taken against Edom; and his purposes, that he has purposed against the inhabitants of Teman: Surely the least of the flock shall draw them out: surely he shall make their habitations desolate with them. ²¹ The earth is moved at the noise of their fall, at the cry the noise thereof was heard in the Red sea. ²² Behold, he shall come up and fly as the eagle, and spread his wings over Bozrah: and **at that day shall the heart of the mighty men of Edom be as the heart of a woman in her pangs.**

Prophecy Against Damascus (north of Ammon)

(121) ²³ Concerning Damascus. Hamath is confounded, and Arpad: for they have heard evil tidings: they are fainthearted; **there is sorrow on the sea;** it cannot be quiet. ²⁴ Damascus is waxed feeble, [and] turns herself to flee, and fear has seized on [her]: anguish and sorrows have taken her, **as a woman in travail.** ²⁵ **How is the city of praise not left, the city of my joy!** ²⁶ Therefore her young men shall fall in her streets, and all the men of war shall be cut off in that day, says the LORD of hosts. ²⁷ And I will kindle a fire in the wall of Damascus, and it shall consume the palaces of Benhadad.

Prophecy Against Kedar (south in Arabia)

(122) ²⁸ Concerning Kedar, and concerning the kingdoms of Hazor, which Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon shall smite, thus says the LORD; **Arise ye, go up to Kedar, and spoil the men of the east.** ²⁹ Their tents and their flocks they will take away: they shall take to themselves their curtains, and all their vessels, and their camels; and they shall cry to them, Fear is on every side.

Prophecy Against Hazor (north of Sea of Galilee)

³⁰ Flee, get you far off, dwell deep, O ye inhabitants of Hazor, says the LORD; for Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon has taken counsel against you, and has conceived a purpose against you. ³¹ Arise, get you up to the wealthy nation, that dwells without care, says the LORD, which have neither gates nor bars, [which] dwell alone. ³² And their camels shall be a booty, and the multitude of their cattle a spoil: and I will scatter into all winds them [that are] in the utmost corners; and I will bring their calamity from all sides thereof, says the LORD. ³³ And Hazor shall be a dwelling for dragons, [and] a desolation forever: there shall no man abide there, nor [any] son of man dwell in it.

Prophecy Against Elam (north at upper Persian Gulf, modern Iran)

(123) ³⁴ The word of the LORD that came to Jeremiah the prophet against Elam in the beginning of the reign of Zedekiah king of Judah, saying, ³⁵ Thus says the LORD of hosts; Behold, I will break the bow of Elam, the chief of their might. ³⁶ And upon Elam will I bring the four winds from the four quarters of heaven, and will scatter them toward all those winds; and there shall be no nation where the outcasts of Elam shall not come. ³⁷ For I will cause Elam to be dismayed before their enemies, and before them that seek their life: and I will bring evil upon them, [even] my fierce anger, says the LORD; and I will send the sword after them, till I have consumed them: ³⁸ And I will set my throne in Elam, and will destroy from there the king and the princes, says the LORD. ³⁹ **But it shall come to pass in the latter days, [that] I will bring again the captivity of Elam,** says the LORD.

Note: Same with Moab "in the latter days." Ammon only says "I will bring again the captivity."

Prophecy Against Babylon

Prophecy Against Babylon – by the Medo Persians and Return of Israel and Judah to Zion

(124) ¹ The word that the LORD spoke against Babylon [and] against the land of the Chaldeans by Jeremiah the prophet. ² Declare ye among the nations, and publish, and set up a standard; publish, [and] conceal not: say, Babylon is taken, Bel is confounded, Merodach is broken in pieces; her idols are confounded, her images are broken in pieces. ³ For out of the north there comes up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast. ⁴ In those days, and in that time, says the LORD, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the LORD their God. ⁵ They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, [saying], Come, and let us join ourselves to the LORD in a perpetual covenant [that] shall not be forgotten. ⁶ My people has been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away [on] the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their resting-place. ⁷ All that found them have devoured

Jeremiah Chapter 50

them: and their adversaries said, We offend not, because they have sinned against the LORD, the habitation of justice, even the LORD, the hope of their fathers. ⁸ Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he goats before the flocks. ⁹ For, look, I will raise and cause to come up against Babylon an assembly of great nations from the north country: and they shall set themselves in array against her; from there she shall be taken: their arrows [shall be] as of a mighty expert man; none shall return in vain. ¹⁰ And Chaldea shall be a spoil: all that spoil her shall be satisfied, says the LORD. ¹¹ Because ye were glad, because ye rejoiced, O ye destroyers of my heritage, because ye are grown fat as the heifer at grass, and bellow as bulls; ¹² Your mother shall be sore confounded; she that bare you shall be ashamed: behold, the hindermost of the nations [shall be] a wilderness, a dry land, and a desert. ¹³ Because of the wrath of the LORD it shall not be inhabited, but it shall be wholly desolate: everyone that goes by Babylon shall be astonished, and hiss at all her plagues. ¹⁴ Put yourselves in array against Babylon round about: all ye that bend the bow, shoot at her, spare no arrows: for she has sinned against the LORD. ¹⁵ Shout against her round about: she has given her hand: her foundations are fallen, her walls are thrown down: for it is the vengeance of the LORD: take vengeance upon her; as she has done, do to her. ¹⁶ Cut off the sower from Babylon, and him that handles the sickle in the time of harvest: for fear of the oppressing sword they shall turn everyone to his people, and they shall flee everyone to his own land. ¹⁷ Israel is a scattered sheep; the lions have driven [him] away: first the king of Assyria has devoured him; and last this Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon has broken his bones. ¹⁸ Therefore thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will punish the king of Babylon and his land, as I have punished the king of Assyria.

Promise to Israel and Judah to Return

¹⁹ And I will bring Israel again to his habitation, and he shall feed on Carmel and Bashan, and his soul shall be satisfied upon mount Ephraim and Gilead. ²⁰ In those days, and in that time, says the LORD, the iniquity of Israel shall be sought for, and [there shall be] none; and the sins of Judah, and they shall not be found: for I will pardon them whom I reserve.

The Time of Babylon's Visitation

(125) ²¹ Go up against the land of Merathaim, [even] against it, and against the inhabitants of Pekod: waste and utterly destroy after them, says the LORD, and do according to all that I have commanded you. ²² A sound of battle is in the land, and of great destruction. ²³ How is the hammer of the whole earth cut asunder and broken! how is Babylon become a desolation among the nations! ²⁴ I have laid a snare for you, and you are also taken, O Babylon, and you was not aware: you are found, and also caught, because you have striven against the LORD. ²⁵ **The LORD has opened his armory, and has brought forth the weapons of his indignation: for this is the work of the Lord GOD of hosts in the land of the Chaldeans.** ²⁶ Come against her from the utmost border, open her storehouses: cast her up as heaps, and destroy her utterly: let nothing of her be left. ²⁷ Slay all her bullocks; let them go down to the slaughter: woe to them! for their day is come, the time of their visitation. ²⁸ The voice of them that flee and escape out of the land of Babylon, to declare in Zion the vengeance of the LORD our God, the vengeance of his temple. ²⁹ Call together the archers against Babylon: all ye that bend the bow, camp against it round about; let none thereof escape: recompense her according to her work; according to all that she has done, do to her: for she has been proud against the LORD, against the Holy One of Israel. ³⁰ Therefore shall her young men fall in the streets, and all her men of war shall be cut off in that day, says the LORD. ³¹ **Behold, I [am] against you, [O you] most proud,** says the Lord GOD of hosts: for your day is come, the time [that] I will visit you. ³² And the most proud shall stumble and fall, and none shall raise him up: and **I will kindle a fire in his cities,** and it shall devour all round about him.

Promise to Israel and Judah to Return

³³ Thus says the LORD of hosts; The children of Israel and the children of Judah [were] oppressed together: and all that took them captives held them fast; they refused to let them go. ³⁴ Their **Redeemer is strong**; the LORD of hosts is his name: he shall thoroughly plead their cause, that he may give rest to the land, and disquiet the inhabitants of Babylon.

Jeremiah Chapter 50

The Sword and Famine Against Babylon (pestilence)

(126) ³⁵ A sword is upon the Chaldeans, says the LORD, and upon the inhabitants of Babylon, and upon her princes, and upon her wise [men]. ³⁶ A sword is upon the liars; and they shall dote: a sword is upon her mighty men; and they shall be dismayed. ³⁷ A sword is upon their horses, and upon their chariots, and upon all the mingled people that are in the midst of her; and they shall become as women: a sword is upon her treasures; and they shall be robbed. ³⁸ A drought is upon her waters; and they shall be dried up: **for it is the land of graven images, and they are mad upon [their] idols.** ³⁹ Therefore the wild beasts of the desert with the wild beasts of the islands shall dwell [there], and the owls shall dwell therein: and it shall be no more inhabited forever; neither shall it be dwelt in from generation to generation. ⁴⁰ As God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah and the neighbor [cities] thereof, says the LORD; [so] shall no man abide there, neither shall any son of man dwell therein. ⁴¹ Behold, a people shall come from the north, and a great nation, and many kings shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth. ⁴² They shall hold the bow and the lance: they are cruel, and will not show mercy: their voice shall roar like the sea, and they shall ride upon horses, [everyone] put in array, like a man to the battle, against you, O daughter of Babylon. ⁴³ The king of Babylon has heard the report of them, and his hands waxed feeble: anguish took hold of him, [and] pangs as of a woman in travail. ⁴⁴ Behold, he shall come up like a lion from the swelling of Jordan to the habitation of the strong: **but I will make them suddenly run away from her: and who is a chosen [man, that] I may appoint over her? for who is like me? and who will appoint me the time? and who is that shepherd that will stand before me?** ⁴⁵ Therefore hear ye the counsel of the LORD, that he has taken against Babylon; and his purposes, that he has purposed against the land of the Chaldeans: Surely the least of the flock shall draw them out: surely he shall make [their] habitation desolate with them. ⁴⁶ At the noise of the taking of Babylon the earth is moved, and the cry is heard among the nations.

Jeremiah Chapter 51

¹ Thus says the LORD; Behold, I will raise up against Babylon, and against them that dwell in the midst of them that rise up against me, a destroying wind; ² And will send to Babylon fanners, that shall fan her, and shall empty her land: for in the day of trouble they shall be against her round about. ³ Against [him that] bends let the archer bend his bow, and against [him that] lifts himself up in his brigandine: and spare ye not her young men; destroy ye utterly all her host. ⁴ Thus the slain shall fall in the land of the Chaldeans, and [they that are] thrust through in her streets.

Promise to Israel and Judah to Return

⁵ For Israel [has] not [been] forsaken, nor Judah of his God, of the LORD of hosts; though their land was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel. ⁶ Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this is the time of the LORD'S vengeance; he will render to her a recompense.

The Sword Against Babylon

(127) ⁷ Babylon [has been] a golden cup in the LORD'S hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. ⁸ Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed: howl for her; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed. ⁹ We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: forsake her, and let us go everyone into his own country: for her judgment reaches to heaven, and is lifted up [even] to the skies. ¹⁰ The LORD has brought forth our righteousness: come, and let us declare in Zion the work of the LORD our God. ¹¹ Make bright the arrows; gather the shields: the LORD has raised up the spirit of the kings of the Medes: for his device is against Babylon, to destroy it; because it is the vengeance of the LORD, the vengeance of his temple. ¹² Set up the standard upon the walls of Babylon, make the watch strong, set up the watchmen, prepare the ambushes: for the LORD has both devised and done that which he spoke against the inhabitants of Babylon. ¹³ O you that dwell upon many waters, abundant in treasures, your end is come, [and] the measure of your covetousness. ¹⁴ The LORD of hosts has sworn by himself, [saying], **Surely I will fill you with men, as with caterpillars; and they shall lift up a shout against you.** ¹⁵ He has made the earth by his power, he has established the world by his wisdom, and has stretched out the heaven by his

Jeremiah Chapter 51

understanding. ¹⁶ When he utters [his] voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens; and he causes the vapors to ascend from the ends of the earth: he makes lightnings with rain, and brings forth the wind out of his treasures. ¹⁷ Every man is brutish by [his] knowledge; every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. ¹⁸ They are vanity, the work of errors: **in the time of their visitation they shall perish.**

God's Vengeance for and with Israel

¹⁹ The portion of Jacob is not like them; for he is the former of all things: and [Israel is] the rod of his inheritance: the LORD of hosts is his name. ²⁰ **You are my battle axe [and] weapons of war: for with you will I break in pieces the nations, and with you will I destroy kingdoms;** ²¹ And **with you will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with you will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider;** ²² **With you also will I break in pieces man and woman; and with you will I break in pieces old and young; and with you will I break in pieces the young man and the maid;** ²³ I will also break in pieces **with you** the shepherd and his flock; and **with you** will I break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen; and **with you** will I break in pieces captains and rulers. ²⁴ And I will render to Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, says the LORD.

The Sword Against Babylon (25-58) and Seraiah the Quiet Prince (59-64)

(128) ²⁵ Behold, I [am] against you, O destroying mountain, says the LORD, which destroy all the earth: and I will stretch out my hand upon you, and roll you down from the rocks, and will make you a burnt mountain. ²⁶ And they shall not take of you a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but you shall be desolate forever, says the LORD. ²⁷ Set ye up a standard in the land, blow the trumpet among the nations, prepare the nations against her, call together against her the kingdoms of Ararat, Minni, and Ashchenaz; appoint a captain against her; cause the horses to come up as the rough caterpillars. ²⁸ Prepare against her the nations with the kings of the Medes, the captains thereof, and all the rulers thereof, and all the land of his dominion. ²⁹ And the land shall tremble and sorrow: for every purpose of the LORD shall be performed against Babylon, to make the land of Babylon a desolation without an inhabitant. ³⁰ **The mighty men of Babylon have forborn to fight, they have remained in [their] holds: their might has failed;** they became as women: they have burned her dwelling-places; her bars are broken. ³¹ One post shall run to meet another, and one messenger to meet another, to show the king of Babylon that his city is taken at [one] end, ³² And that the passages are stopped, and the reeds they have burned with fire, and the men of war are affrighted. ³³ For thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; The daughter of Babylon is like a threshing-floor, [it is] time to thresh her: yet a little while, and the time of her harvest shall come. ³⁴ Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon has devoured me, he has crushed me, he has made me an empty vessel, he has swallowed me up like a dragon, he has filled his belly with my delicates, he has cast me out. ³⁵ The violence done to me and to my flesh [be] upon Babylon, shall the inhabitant of Zion say; and my blood upon the inhabitants of Chaldea, shall Jerusalem say. ³⁶ Therefore thus says the LORD; Behold, I will plead your cause, and take vengeance for you; and I will dry up her sea, and make her springs dry. ³⁷ And Babylon shall become heaps, a dwelling-place for dragons, an astonishment, and a hissing, without an inhabitant. ³⁸ They shall roar together like lions: they shall yell as lions' whelps. ³⁹ In their heat I will make their feasts, and I will make them drunken, that they may rejoice, and sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, says the LORD. ⁴⁰ I will bring them down like lambs to the slaughter, like rams with he goats. ⁴¹ How is Sheshach taken! and how is the praise of the whole earth surprised! how is Babylon become an astonishment among the nations! ⁴² The sea is come up upon Babylon: she is covered with the multitude of the waves thereof. ⁴³ Her cities are a desolation, a dry land, and a wilderness, a land wherein no man dwells, neither does [any] son of man pass thereby. ⁴⁴ And I will punish **Bel** in Babylon, and I will bring forth out of his mouth that which he has swallowed up: and the nations shall not flow together anymore to him: **yes, the wall of Babylon shall fall.** ⁴⁵ My people, go ye out of the midst of her, and deliver ye every man his soul from the fierce anger of the LORD. ⁴⁶ And lest your heart faint, and ye fear for the rumor that shall be heard in the land; a rumor shall both come [one] year, and after that in [another] year [shall come] a rumor, and violence in the land, ruler against ruler. ⁴⁷ **Therefore, behold, the days come, that I will do judgment upon the graven images of Babylon:** and her whole land shall be confounded, and all her slain shall fall in the midst of her. ⁴⁸ Then the heaven and the earth, and all that is therein, shall sing for Babylon: for the

Jeremiah Chapter 51

spoilers shall come to her from the north, says the LORD. ⁴⁹ As Babylon [has caused] the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon shall fall the slain of all the earth. ⁵⁰ Ye that have escaped the sword, go away, stand not still: remember the LORD afar off, and let Jerusalem come into your mind. ⁵¹ We are confounded, because we have heard reproach: shame has covered our faces: for strangers are come into the sanctuaries of the LORD'S house. ⁵² Wherefore, behold, the days come, says the LORD, that I will do judgment upon her graven images: and through all her land the wounded shall groan. ⁵³ **Though Babylon should mount up to heaven, and though she should fortify the height of her strength, [yet] from me shall spoilers come to her,** says the LORD. ⁵⁴ A sound of a cry [comes] from Babylon, and great destruction from the land of the Chaldeans: ⁵⁵ Because the LORD has spoiled Babylon, and destroyed out of her the great voice; when her waves do roar like great waters, a noise of their voice is uttered: ⁵⁶ Because the spoiler is come upon her, [even] upon Babylon, and her mighty men are taken, everyone of their bows is broken: for the LORD God of recompenses shall surely requite. ⁵⁷ **And I will make drunk her princes, and her wise [men], her captains, and her rulers, and her mighty men: and they shall sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake,** says the King, whose name is the LORD of hosts. ⁵⁸ Thus says the LORD of hosts; **The broad walls of Babylon shall be utterly broken, and her high gates shall be burned with fire;** and the people shall labor in vain, and the folk in the fire, and they shall be weary.

Note: vs 34-35 needs to be understood and read properly to give understanding to others.

Prophecy to Seraiah, the Quiet Prince (to the Jews exiled in Babylon)

⁵⁹ The word which Jeremiah the prophet commanded Seraiah the son of Neriah, the son of Maaseiah, when he went with Zedekiah the king of Judah into Babylon in the fourth year of his reign. And [this] Seraiah was a quiet prince. ⁶⁰ So Jeremiah wrote in a book all the evil that should come upon Babylon, [even] all these words that are written against Babylon. ⁶¹ And Jeremiah said to Seraiah, When you come to Babylon, and shall see, and shall read all these words; ⁶² Then shall you say, O LORD, you have spoken against this place, to cut it off, that none shall remain in it, neither man nor beast, but that it shall be desolate forever. ⁶³ And it shall be, when you have made an end of reading this book, [that] you shall bind a stone to it, and cast it into the midst of Euphrates: ⁶⁴ And you shall say, **Thus shall Babylon sink, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her: and they shall be weary.** Thus far are the words of Jeremiah.

Note: verses 59-64 is an amazing ending for chapters 50-51, which includes chapters 50-51. In the fourth year of Zedekiah's reign he went to Babylon for homage to Nebuchadnezzar. In Jeremiah 27, this as a time of Zedekiah and Judah conspired with five other nations (Edom, Moab, Ammon, Tyrus, and Zidon) against Babylon.

Seraiah is the grandson of high priest Hilkiah who discovered the lost book of the law in Josiah's reign. Also Seraiah is the grandfather of Joshua-ben-Jozdak, the high priest at the return from exile.

So the family line survived his violent death, and another branch of it would produce the great Ezra, a century hence." (Kidner)

"Like his brother Baruch (Jeremiah 32:12; 36:1-10), Seraiah served as Jeremiah's spokesperson. (Also like Baruch, his name has been found on an ancient seal)." (Ryken)

Seraiah had charge of the royal gifts to be presented on that occasion. Jeremiah took advantage of the occasion, and sent with Seraiah a word of cheer to the exiles in Babylon, and an announcement of the doom in store for that guilty city. The roll containing this message (Jeremiah 50:1-8), Seraiah read to the exiles, and then, after fixing a stone to it, throw it into the Euphrates, uttering, as it sank, the prayer recorded in Jeremiah 51:59-64. Babylon was at this time in the height of its glory, the greatest and most powerful monarchy in the world. Scarcely seventy years elapsed when the words of the prophet were all fulfilled by the Medes. Lastly and final fulfillment is written in John's vision where the mighty angel threw a stone into the sea, saying, "so shall Babylon, that great city be thrown down with violence, and shall be found no more." (Revelation 18:21)

King Zedekiah's Captivity

(129) ¹ Zedekiah was one and twenty years old when he began to reign, and he reigned eleven years in Jerusalem. And his mother's name was Hamutal the daughter of Jeremiah of Libnah. ² **And he did [that which was] evil in the eyes of the LORD, according to all that Jehoiakim had done.** ³ For through the anger of the LORD it came to pass in Jerusalem and Judah, till he had cast them out from his presence, that Zedekiah rebelled against the king of Babylon. ⁴ And it came to pass in the **ninth year** of his reign, in the **tenth month**, in the **tenth [day]** of the month, [that] Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon came, he and all his army, against Jerusalem, and pitched against it, and built forts against it round about. ⁵ So the city was besieged to the **eleventh year** of king Zedekiah. ⁶ And in the **fourth month**, in the **ninth [day]** of the month, **the famine was sore in the city**, so that there was no bread for the people of the land. ⁷ Then the city was broken up, and all the men of war fled, and went forth out of the city by night by the way of the gate between the two walls, which was by the king's garden; (now the Chaldeans [were] by the city round about:) and they went by the way of the plain. ⁸ But the army of the Chaldeans pursued after the king, and overtook Zedekiah in the plains of Jericho; and all his army was scattered from him. ⁹ Then they took the king, and carried him up to the king of Babylon to Riplah in the land of Hamath; where he gave judgment upon him. ¹⁰ And the king of Babylon slew the sons of Zedekiah before his eyes: he slew also all the princes of Judah in Riblah. ¹¹ Then he put out the eyes of Zedekiah; and the king of Babylon bound him in chains, and carried him to Babylon, and put him in prison till the day of his death..

Note: Zedekiah was evil according to all that Jehoiakim (not Rehoboam) had done.

Nebuzaradan Burns Jerusalem (12-16) and takes the Temple Furnishings to Babylon (17-23)

(130) ¹² Now in the **fifth month**, in the **tenth [day]** of the month, which was the nineteenth year of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, came Nebuzaradan, captain of the guard, [which] served the king of Babylon, into Jerusalem, ¹³ And burned the house of the LORD, and the king's house; and all the houses of Jerusalem, and all the houses of the great [men], burned he with fire: ¹⁴ And all the army of the Chaldeans, that [were] with the captain of the guard, brake down all the walls of Jerusalem round about. ¹⁵ Then Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard carried away captive [certain] of the poor of the people, and the residue of the people that remained in the city, and those that fell away, that fell to the king of Babylon, and the rest of the multitude. ¹⁶ But Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard left [certain] of the poor of the land for vinedressers and for husbandmen. ¹⁷ Also the pillars of brass that [were] in the house of the LORD, and the bases, and the brazen sea that was in the house of the LORD, the Chaldeans brake, and carried all the brass of them to Babylon. ¹⁸ The caldrons also, and the shovels, and the snuffers, and the bowls, and the spoons, and all the vessels of brass wherewith they ministered, took they away. ¹⁹ And the basins, and the firepans, and the bowls, and the caldrons, and the candlesticks, and the spoons, and the cups; [that] which was of gold [in] gold, and [that] which was of silver [in] silver, took the captain of the guard away. ²⁰ The two pillars, one sea, and twelve brazen bulls that [were] under the bases, which king Solomon had made in the house of the LORD: the brass of all these vessels was without weight. ²¹ And [concerning] the pillars, the height of one pillar was eighteen cubits; and a fillet of twelve cubits did compass it; and the thickness thereof was four fingers: [it was] hollow. ²² And a capital of brass was upon it; and the height of one capital was five cubits, with network and pomegranates upon the capitals round about, all [of] brass. The second pillar also and the pomegranates [were] like to these. ²³ And there were ninety and six pomegranates on a side; [and] all the pomegranates upon the network [were] a hundred round about.

Nebuzaradan Takes the People to Babylon

(131) ²⁴ And the captain of the guard took Seraiah the chief priest, and Zephaniah the second priest, and the three keepers of the door: ²⁵ He took also out of the city an eunuch, which had the charge of the men of war; and seven men of them that were near the king's person, which were found in the city; and the principal scribe of the host, who mustered the people of the land; and threescore men of the people of the land, that were found in the midst of the city. ²⁶ So Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard took them, and brought them to the king of Babylon to Riblah. ²⁷ And the king of Babylon smote them, and put them to death in Riblah in the land of Hamath. Thus Judah was carried away captive out of his own land. ²⁸ This is the people whom Nebuchadrezzar carried away captive: in the **seventh year three thousand Jews and three and twenty:** ²⁹ In the **eighteenth year of Nebuchadrezzar he carried away captive from Jerusalem eight hundred thirty and two persons:** ³⁰ In the three and twentieth year of

Jeremiah Chapter 52

Nebuchadrezzar Nebuzaradan the captain of the guard carried away captive of the Jews **seven hundred forty and five persons**: all the persons [were] four thousand and six hundred.

King Jehoiachin Set Free and Fed by King Evilmerodach

(132) ³¹ And it came to pass in the seven and thirtieth year of the captivity of Jehoiachin king of Judah, in the twelfth month, in the five and twentieth [day] of the month, [that] Evilmerodach king of Babylon in the [first] year of his reign lifted up the head of Jehoiachin king of Judah, and brought him forth out of prison, ³² And spoke kindly to him, and set his throne above the throne of the kings that [were] with him in Babylon, ³³ And changed his prison garments: and he did continually eat bread before him all the days of his life. ³⁴ And [for] his diet, there was a continual diet given him of the king of Babylon, every day a portion until the day of his death, all the days of his life.

Timeline on some of the Kings of Babylon, Egypt, and Jerusalem

626-605	Nabopolassar (B)	612 Captures Nineveh, conquers Assyria.
610-595	Neco II (E)	605 Kills Josiah in battle of Carchemish at Megiddo (2 Chr 35:20-2)
605-562	Nebuchadnezzar (B)	605 summer, attacks Jerusalem 1 st time (Daniel 1:1, Jer 36)
623	Josiah (J)	found the book of the law
	Jehoahaz (Shallum)	3 months, captive to Egypt
605	Jehoiakim (Eliakim)	burns Jeremiah's scrolls (Jeremiah 36:29)
597	Jehoiachin (Jeconiah, Coniah)	Jerusalem attacked 2 nd time, March 16 (2 Kings 25:1-7)
587	Zedekiah (Mattaniah)	Jerusalem attacked 3 rd time, Jan 589-Jul 587 (2 Kings 25:1-7)
587	Gedaliah Appointed governor,	3 rd month; Ammon assassinated 7 th month (Jer 40:14)
562-560	Evil-merodach	King of Babylon
553-539	Belshazzar	King of Babylon, coregent with Nabonidus, handwriting on the wall
539	Darius the Mede	Cyrus the Great capture Babylon, Darius and Cyrus are co-regents
536	Cyrus Cylinder	Darius dies and Cyrus lets nations return to homeland
605-536	70-year prophecy	Begins when Daniel captured in 605 and Daniel is freed in 536
520-510	Zerubbabel	2 nd Judean Governor

Main Characters:

Jeremiah, Prophet and Priest
 People of Judah and Jerusalem
 Kings of Judah
 Foreign Kings
 Foreign Kingdoms
 False Prophets
 Wicked Pastors
 Wicked Priests
 Baruch the Scribe

Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
1 / 627	1-25 Oracles against Judah Jeremiah's Call	5 Before I formed you in the belly I knew you; ... sanctified – ordained you	¹⁷ arise, and speak ... be not dismayed at their faces
2 / 620	2-20 Reproofs and Admonitions Israel's sin	13 two evils, forsaken living waters, hewed out broken cisterns	19 Your own wickedness shall correct you, and your backslidings shall reprove you: know therefore and see that it is an evil thing and bitter, that you have forsaken the LORD your God, and that my fear is not in you, says the LORD God of hosts.
3 / 620	Israel and Judah entreated to repent	13 Only acknowledge your iniquity, that you have transgressed against the LORD your God, ... 22 Return, ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings.	15 And I will give you pastors according to my heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.
4 / 615	God called Israel	3-4 ... Break up your fallow ground, and sow not among thorns. Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskin of your heart... unless my fury comes forth like fire, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings. 14 Wash your heart from wickedness, that you may be saved. How long shall your wicked [vain] thoughts lodge within you?	19 My bowels, my bowels! I am pained at my very heart; my heart makes a noise in me; I cannot hold my peace, because you have heard, O my soul, the sound of the trumpet, the alarm of war.
5 / 615	Corruption of the heart	3 ... they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock: they have refused to return. 21-22 Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; that have eyes, and see not, that have ears, and hear not. Fear ye not me? Says the LORD: will you not tremble at my presence, ...	1-2 Run ye to and fro through the streets of Jerusalem, and see now, and know, and seek in the broad places thereof, if ye can find a man, if there be any that executes judgment, that seek the truth: and I will pardon it. And though they say, The LORD liveth; surely they swear falsely. 14 Because ye speak this word, behold I will make my words in your mouth fire, and this people wood, and it shall devour them.

		23 But this people have a revolting and rebellious heart;	
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
6 / 615	Warnings of Judgment to Come	16 The LORD says, Stand in the ways, and see, and ask for the old paths, where is the good way, and walk therein, and you shall find rest for your souls. But they said, We will not listen.	8-11 Be you instructed, O Jerusalem,... the word of the LORD is a reproach onto them; they have no delight in it. ,, Therefore I am full of the fury of the LORD; I am weary with holding in... 17 Also I set watchmen over you, saying, listen to the sound of the trumpet. But they said, We will not listen. 26-27 I have set you for a tower and a fortress among my people, that you may know and try their ways.
7 / 610	Call for Repentance 16 Therefore pray not for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for the, neither make intercession to me: for I will not hear you.	23-25 Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and you shall be my people: and walk in all the ways I have commanded you, that it may be well for you. But they listened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward.	2-3 Stand in the gate of the LORD'S house, and proclaim there this word, and say, Hear the word of the LORD, all you of Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship the LORD... Amend your ways and your doings, and I will cause you to dwell in this place.
8 / 610	Sad State of Jews 20 The harvest is past, the summer is ended, and we are not saved.	5-8 Why is my people slid back by a perpetual backsliding? They hold fast deceit, they refuse to return. ... No man repents of his wickedness, saying, What have I done? ...	14 Why do we sit still?
9 / 610	Know God 14 But they have walked after the imagination of their own heart, and after Baalim	23-26 But let him that glories, glory in this, that he understands and knows me, that I am the LORD that exercises loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, says the LORD.	1 Oh that my head were waters, and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people!
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
10/ 610	Warning Against Idols 21 For the pastors are become brutish, and have not sought the LORD:...	3-4 one cuts a tree out of the forest,... They deck it with silver and gold	11 Thus say to them, the gods that have not made the heavens and the earth, even they shall perish from the earth, and from under the heavens. (Aramaic, one verse)
11/ 610	Plot against Jeremiah 14 Therefore pray not for this	20 But, O LORD of hosts, that judges righteously, that tries the reins and the heart, let me see your vengeance on them: for to you have I revealed my cause.	21 Therefore thus says the LORD of the men of Anathoth, that seek your life, saying, Prophecy not in the name of the Lord, that you will not die by our hand.

	people, neither lift up a cry or prayer for them: for I will not hear them in the time that they cry to me for their trouble.		
12/ 610	Israel Rejected by God 15-17 And it shall come to pass, if they will diligently learn the ways of my people, to swear by my name, The LORD liveth,... But if they will not obey,	3 But you, O LORD, knows me: you have seen me and tries my heart toward you: pull them out like sheep for the slaughter, and prepare them for the day of slaughter. 10-11 ... because no man lays it to heart. 1-2 Jeremiah's complaint.	5 If you have run with the footmen, and they have wearied you, then how can you contend with horses? And if the land of peace, wherein you trust, they weary you, then how will you do in the swelling of the Jordan?
13/ 610	Parable of the Marred Girdle 26 Therefore I will discover your skirts upon your face, that your shame may appear. (David's dance – inward)	¹⁰ This evil people, that refuse to hear my words, that walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall be even as this girdle, that is good for nothing.	12 Therefore you shall speak to them this word: Thus says the LORD God of Israel,
14/ 610	7- ¹⁰ Jeremiah Prays 11 Then said the LORD unto me, Pray not for this people for their good.	7 O LORD, though our iniquities testify against us, do you it for your name's sake: for our backslidings are many; we have sinned against you.	14 Then the LORD said to me, The prophets prophesy lies in my name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spoke to them: they prophesy to you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart.
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
15/ 610	The LORD'S Anger 6 You have forsaken me, says the LORD, you are gone backward: therefore will I stretch out my hand against you, and destroy you; I am weary with repenting. 14 ... for a fire is kindled in my anger, that shall burn upon you.	15-18 Your words were found, and I did eat them; and your word was onto me the joy and rejoicing of my heart: for I am called by your name, O Lord God of hosts ¹⁰ Jeremiah's complaint. One of two. The other is 12:1- ²	19-21 If you return, then I will bring you again to stand before me: and if you take forth the precious from the vile, you shall be as my mouth: let them return to you, but don't you return to them. And I will make you to this a fenced brazen wall: and they shall fight against you, but they shall not prevail against you: for I am with you to save and deliver, says the LORD.
16/ 610	Signs of Coming Captivity	¹⁷ For mine eyes upon all their ways: they are not hid from my face, neither is their iniquity hid from my eyes.	8 You shall not also go into the house of feasting, to sit with them to eat and to drink.

	Jeremiah not to attend any funerals or have pity when Jews are punished.		
17/ 610	The Sin of Judah 13 all that forsake you shall be ashamed, and they that depart from me shall be written in the earth, because they have forsaken the LORD, the fountain of living waters. (not written in the Book of Life)	9-10 The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.	14-18 Heal me, O Lord, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for you are my praise. Behold, they say onto me, Where is the word of the LORD? For you are my praise. As for me, I have not hastened from being a pastor to follow you: neither have I desired the woeful day; you knows, that which came out of my lips was right before you.
18/ 605	18-20 Preaching in Prison The Parable of the Potter. Jeremiah visits a potter's shop.	¹⁷ I will scatter them as with an east wind before the enemy; I will show them the back, and not the face, in the day of their calamity.	11 Now therefore go to, speak to the men of Judah, ... Behold, I frame evil against you, and devise a devise against you: Return ye now everyone from his evil way, and make your ways and doings good.
19/ 605			
20/ 605	Jeremiah Imprisoned		7-9 (9) Then I said, I will not make mention of him, nor speak anymore in his name. But his word was in mine heart as a burning fire shut up in my bones, and I was weary with forbearing, and I could not stay.
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
21/ 589	21-25 Later Prophecies The Siege		
22/ 609	Shallum, Jehoiakim, Jehoiakin		
23/ 599	Messianic King / False Prophets 5-6 Someday a Godly King shall reign. Prophecy of Jesus Christ.	9 Mine heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake; I am like a drunken man, and like a man whom wine has overcome, because of the LORD, and because of the words of his holiness.	29 Is not my word like a fire? Saith the LORD: and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?

	6 ... AND THIS IS HIS NAME WHEREBY HE SHALL BE CALLED, THE LORD OUR RIGHTEOUSNES S.		
24/ 597	The Vision of Figs	7 And I will give them a heart to know me, that I am the LORD: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God: for they shall return onto me with their whole heart.	
25/ 605	The Judgment of Judah 70 years in exile (from 606 to 536 BC, from captivity to return)		3 ... (for ¹⁰ years)the word of the LORD has come to me, and I have spoken to you, rising early and speaking; but you have not listened.
26/ 608	26-45 The Life of Jeremiah The Temple Sermon and Jeremiah's Arrest 4-6	13-14 Therefore now amend your ways and your doings, and obey the voice of the LORD your God; and the LORD will repent him of the evil that he hath pronounced against you. As for me, behold, I am in your hand: do with me as seemeth good and meet to you.	2 Thus saith the LORD; stand in the court of the LORD'S house, and speak to all the cities of Judah, which come to worship in the LORD'S house, all the words that I command you to speak to them; diminish not a word.
27/ 594	27-29 The Yoke of Babylon Wood yoke broken and replaced with steel yoke.	2	
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
28/ 593			
29/ 596		13-14 And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search me with all your heart. And I will be found of you, saith the LORD: and I will turn away your captivity,	19 Because they have not listened to my words, saith the LORD, which I sent to them by my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them; but ye would not hear, saith the LORD.
30/ 596	30-33 The Book of Consolidation The Day of the Lord		
31/ 596	The Restoration of the Nation 31 first time New Covenant is mentioned.	26 Upon this I awaked, and beheld; and my sleep was sweet to me.	19 Surely after that I was turned, I repented: and after that I was instructed, I smote upon my thigh: I was ashamed, yea, even confounded, because I did bear the reproach of my youth.

32/ 587	Jeremiah Buys Land Object lesson that Israel will be restored to their land.		
33/ 587	Promises of Restoration	3 Call to me, and I will answer you, and show you great and mighty things, which you knowest not.	
34/ 588	Truth to Zedekiah / The Covenant and Slaves		
35/ 588	The Rechabites		
36/ 604	King Burns Jeremiahs Scroll / Jeremiah's Secretary (Burach) (FLASHBACK IN TIME)	7-8 It may be they will present their supplication before the LORD, and will return everyone from his evil way: for great is the anger and the fury that the LORD hath pronounced against this people. And Baruch the son of Neriah did according to all that Jeremiah the prophet commanded him, reading in the book the words of the LORD in the LORD's house.	32 Then took Jeremiah another roll, and gave it to Baruch the scribe, the son of Neriah; who wrote therein from the mouth of Jeremiah all the words of the book which Jehoiakim king of Judah had burned in the fire: and there were added besides to them many like words.
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
37/ 597	Jeremiah Jailed	15 Wherefore the princes were angry with Jeremiah, and smote him, and put him in prison in the house of Jonathan the scribe: for they had made that the prison.	
38/ 587	In a Miry Dungeon Jeremiah imprisoned in a muddy cistern (well), lowered with a rope	6 Then they took Jeremiah, and cast him into the dungeon of Malachiah the son of Hammelech, that was in the court of the prison: and they let down Jeremiah with cords. And in the dungeon there was no water, but mire: so Jeremiah sunk in the mire.	27 Then came all the princes to Jeremiah, and asked him: and he told them according to all these words that the king had commanded. So they left off speaking with him; for the matter was not perceived. So Jeremiah abode in the court of the prison until the day that Jerusalem was taken:
39/ 586	Jerusalem Falls		
40/ 586	40-45 Jeremiah's last years after fall to Babylon Gedaliah Murdered		4 And now, behold, I loose you this day from the chains which were upon your hand. If it seem good to you to come with me into Babylon, forbear: behold, all the land is before you: where it seemeth good and convenient for you to go, thither go.
41/ 586			
42/ 586	Refugees to Egypt 1-6 Jeremiah's prayer for Judah	6 Whether it be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the LORD our God, to whom we send you; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the LORD our God.	2-3 And said to Jeremiah the prophet, Let, we beseech you, our supplication be acceptable before you, and pray for us onto the LORD your God, even for all this remnant; (for we are left but a few of many, as your eyes do behold us) That the LORD your God may show

	7-22 Answer to prayer		us the way wherein we may walk, and the thing that we may do.
43/ 586	Jeremiah in Egypt		
44/ 586		¹⁰ They are not humbled even to this day, neither have they feared, nor walked in my law, nor in my statutes, that I set before you and before your fathers.	
45/ 604	Baruch Advised		
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
46/ 604	46-51 Prophecies against foreign nations Oracle Against Egypt	¹⁷ he has passed the time appointed.	
47/ 600	Against the Philistines		
48/ 600	Oracle Against Moab	6-7 Flee, save your lives, and be like the heath in the wilderness. For because you have not trusted in your works and in your treasures, you shalt also be taken:	
49/ 600	Against Ammonites, Edom, Damascus, Kedar and Hazor	16 Your terribleness hath deceived you, and the pride of your heart, O you that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, that holdest the height of the hill: though you shouldst make your nest as high as the eagle, I will bring you down from thence, saith the LORD.	
50/ 595	Against Babylon		
51/ 595		30 The mighty men of Babylon have forborne to fight, they have remained in their holds: their might hath failed; they became as women: they have burned her dwelling places; her bars are broken,	
52/ 586	Appendix		
	LAMENTATIONS	22 VERSES EACH, each verse begins with a letter of the Hebrew alphabet (acrostic). Acrostics help to memorize poems and songs. To use all letters of Hebrew alphabet may symbolize or emphasize "fullness"	SADDEST BOOK IN THE BIBLE Poetry with a beat. In the original English and in some translations. The beat or rhythm is usually 3-2, 3 beats first line and 2 beats second line. Only done here in the Bible.
1/ 586	1-5 After fall of Jerusalem 16 For these things I weep;	6 And from the daughter of Zion all her beauty is departed: her princes are become like deer that find no	13 From above hath he sent fire into my bones, and it prevaieth against them:

	mine eye, mine eye runneth down with water,	pasture, and they are gone without strength before the pursuer. 8-9 Jerusalem has grievously sinned: therefore she is removed: all that honored her despise her, because they have seen her nakedness: yea, she sightheth, and turns backward. Her filthiness is in her skirts:	
Chapter / Date	Chapter Title / Hard Sayings	Key Verse	Witness
2/ 586	7-8	14 Your prophets have seen vain and foolish things for you: and they have not discovered your iniquity, to turn away your captivity; but have seen for you false burdens and causes of banishment.	18-19 Their heart cried to the LORD, O wall of the daughter of Zion, let tears run down like a river day and night: give thyself no rest; let not the apple of your eye cease. Arise, cry out in the night: in the beginning of the watches pour out your heart like water before the face of the LORD: lift up your hands toward him for the life of your young children, that faint for hunger in the top of every street.
3/ 586	63 Behold their sitting down, and their rising up; I am their music. 64-66 66 VERSES. Every three verses begin with a different letter of the Hebrew alphabet.	22-23 It is of the LORD'S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. They are new every morning: great is your faithfulness. 40-41 Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the LORD. Let us lift up our heart with our hands to God in the heavens.	48-50 Mine eye runneth down with rivers of water for the destruction of the daughter of my people. Mine eye trickleth down, and ceaseth not, without any intermission, till the LORD look down, and behold from heaven. 57 You drewest near in the day that I called upon you: you said, Fear not.
4/ 586			
5/ 586	3, 8	13-18 They took the young men to grind, and the children fell under the wood. The elders have ceased from the gate, the young men from their music. The joy of our heart is ceased; our dance is turned into mourning. The crown is fallen from our head: woe to us, that we have sinned! For this our heart is faint; for these things our eyes are dim. Because the mountain of Zion, which is desolate, the foxes walk upon it.	19-21 . . . Turn you us onto you, O LORD, and we shall be turned; renew our days as of old . . .
	Psalms 74, 79, and 137 are songs of grief about the fall of Jerusalem.	Luke 13:34-35 Jesus laments over the impending disaster of Jerusalem.	

Historical Setting

Judah had 20 kings. Judah had 4 religious declines and 3 revivals. Josiah was last good king, leading the last revival after finding the scroll of the Law. Was this really a revival? Of the King, yes; of the people, no. Jeremiah's life is during the time of the final decline of Judah as a nation blessed of God before captivity by Babylonia.

Jeremiah had a reputation as a meddler and a traitor: people, leaders, and kings tried to silence him. We understand Jeremiah's personality more clearly than any other prophet. His stand to speak for the LORD through years of rejection and persecution is a testimony of the ways of man and the grace of God.

His message was of Judgment, not salvation. God had sent many prophets before, rising up early, and Judah rejected them. Now the fate of an apostate nation was inevitable. Deuteronomy 28-30.

Kings during life of Jeremiah

Josiah (640-609) Killed in battle
Jehoahaz (609, 3 months) Captive to Egypt
Jehoiakim (609-598)
Jehoiachin (597, 3 months) Captive to Babylon
Zedekiah (597-587) Captive to Babylon, blinded
Gedaliah 586 –

Nation divided on whether to have allegiance to Egypt, Pharaoh-Necho or Babylon, King Nebuchadnezzar. Their false prophets advised them neither, only trust in God, (w/o obedience?)

Jeremiah has more words than any other book of the Bible?

Seal of Jeremiah's scribe Baruch. In 1975 a clay impression of an ancient seal used to validate official documents was discovered in Israel. The seal is inscribed with the words, ""belonging to Baruch son of Neriah the scribe."" Jeremiah 32:12 Furthermore, the clay impression was scorched, indicating it had been burned, possibly in the fire that destroyed Jerusalem in 586 BC.

Key phrases and words

The Lord liveth
Repent
Backslidings
Backward
Return
Turn
Heart
Imaginations
Pray not
The word of the LORD came onto me
Rising up early, and sending them
Hardened
Obey
Fire

New Testament references

- 1) Direct to person: Jeremiah said. Jeremiah 31:15 to Matthew 2:18
- 2) Direct to Scripture: It is written.
- 3) Indirect to Scripture: Not quotation.

7:11 to Mt 21:13, Mk 11:17, Lu 19:46, and Isaiah 56:7 Thieves/prayer
 9:23-24 to 1 Cor 1:31, 2 Cor 10:17
 12:7 to Mt 23:38, Lu 13:35
 18:6 to Ro 9:21
 19:13 to Acts 7:42-43 (2nd time, Acts 7 w/Moses is 1st time)
 22:5 to Mt 23:38
 31:31-34 to John 6:45 and Hebrews 8:8-12, 10:16-17 (Caution – context)

Lamentations

3:30 to Matthew 5:39
 3:33 to Hebrews 12:10
 3:40 to 2 Cor 13:5

Old Testament References. In other OT Books.

Prophecies Fulfilled. 31:15 Matthew 2:16-18 Slaughter of the innocents and weeping of Rachael

Parables or Illustrations:

Cisterns - 2
 The Marred Girdle - 13
 The Filled Bottles - 13
 The Potter - 18
 The Broken Potter - 19
 Good and Bad Figs - 24
 The Yokes - 27
 Purchase of a Field - 32

Prayers of Jeremiah:

14:7-10 for Judah
 42:1-6 for a famine

References to God. God as LORD, several times. Also LORD of hosts

Jesus Christ. None? Compare to Isaiah—the 5th Gospel.

Holy Spirit. None?

Doctrines:

Sin
 Backsliding
 Judgment
 Obedience
 Repentance
 Heart
 Word
 Remnant
 First Coming of the Lord
 Second Coming of the Lord
 Kingdom

Apocrypha links.

Book of Baruch. 100 BC. Three chapters. Some ancient codices place it after Lamentations.

The Letter of Jeremiah. 300 BC. Based on Jeremiah 11:10. In English translations usually attached as chapter of Baruch.

Lamentations (5-12, 20 min) 2020

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book**

1 2 3 4 5

12 Extreme Lessons from the Fall of a Nation by an Angry God

Key Passage: 3:22-23, & 5:21 Turn you us to you, O LORD, and we shall be turned; renew our days as of old.

I personally foresee and prepare for the fall by knowing that:

Scripture

- | | |
|--|------|
| 1) solitude and emptiness replace greatness and fullness that existed before | 1:1 |
| 2) the law is no [more]; her prophets also find no vision from the LORD. | 2:9 |
| 3) the elders sit upon the ground, [and] keep silence: the virgins hang down their heads | 2:10 |

Jeremiah's personal hope

3:20-32

4) ²⁰ My soul has them still in remembrance, and is humbled in me. ²¹ This I recall to my mind, therefore I have hope. ²² [It is of] the LORD'S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. ²³ [They are] new every morning: great is your faithfulness. ²⁴ The LORD is my portion, says my soul; therefore will I hope in him. ²⁵ The LORD is good to them that wait for him, to the soul [that] seeks him. ²⁶ [It is] good that [a man] should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD. ²⁷ [It is] good for a man that he bear the yoke in his youth. ²⁸ He sits alone and keeps silence, because he has borne [it] upon him. ²⁹ He puts his mouth in the dust; if so be there may be hope. ³⁰ He gives [his] cheek to him that smites him: he is filled full with reproach. ³¹ For the Lord will not cast off forever: ³² But though he cause grief, yet will he have compassion according to the multitude of his mercies.

- | | |
|--|-----------|
| 5) the sins of the spiritual leaders (prophet, priest & king) - the anger of the LORD divides them | 4:13, 16a |
|--|-----------|

Jeremiah's personal prayer

5:1-22

- | | |
|--|-------|
| 6) We have an inheritance or birthright to earn the fullness of, by obedience to our God | 5:2 |
| 7) Our fathers have sinned, [and are] not; and we have borne their iniquities. | 5:7 |
| 8) The elders have ceased from the gate, the young men from their music. | 5:14 |
| 9) The joy of our heart is ceased; our dance is turned into mourning – too late (James 4:7-10) | 5:15 |
| 10) The crown is fallen [from] our head: woe to us, that we have sinned! | 5:16 |
| 11) the foxes walk upon it. | 5:18b |
| 12) You, O LORD, remain forever; your throne from generation to generation. | 5:19 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
Lamentations 2:18-20a	Supplication & Praise	Help in time of judgment		Great need	The people of Jerusalem
Lamentations 3:8		Prayer not heard	Continual disobedience		National transgressions
Lamentations 3:44		Prayer not heard	Continual disobedience		National transgressions
Lamentations 3:48-58	Supplication				Lesson on prayer
Lamentations 5:1-22	Supplication				Lesson on prayer

Title: Prayer and Hope in the Midst of Loss and Destruction

The five laments of Jeremiah came immediately after the fall of the capital of the nation of Israel, Jerusalem; and the religious system of the temple, at the hands of the Babylonian Empire and King Nebuchadnezzar.

How can the believer today benefit from the writings of Lamentations? The book of Lamentations helps us understand that we cannot prevent prophecy being fulfilled or the course of nations, but we can be prepared for the worst as individuals, families, and congregations of local believers. This book gives us wisdom as no other book of the Bible, as being part of the decline and fall of a nation -- before, during and after the decline and fall. We learn from the story of Job with the trials and comfort for the individual, whereas Lamentations is directed to a nation, which consists of individuals, families and small non-ecclesiastical groups that can be prepared in heart, mind, and soul.

Structure of Lamentations: Chapters 1 - 4 follow the Hebrew alphabet of 22 letters. Chapter 3 contains 3 x 22 = 66 shorter verses for each letter. Chapter 5 is a prayer. Therefore the chapter and verse breaks are a solid foundation for our study, meditation and understanding. This is known as acrostic design.

In the Hebrew TANAK which include the law, prophets, and writings. The writings are three writings of poetry - Psalms, Proverbs and Job; the historical books of Daniel, Ezra (which includes Nehemiah) and Chronicles; and five scrolls:

Song of Songs – read during the feast of Passover

Ruth – read during the feast of Shavout (Pentecost)

Lamentations – read during the Kinnot, the 9th of AV (July 29, 2020)

Ecclesiastes – read during the feast of Sukkot

Ruth – Read during the feast of Purim

Lamentations is read to remember the destruction of the 1st and 2nd temple on the same day, the failure at Kadesh-Barnea, and other downfalls of the people of Israel according to the Mishnah. It is a solemn day of fasting. In Hebrew called Tisha B'Av.

To begin our talks and sharing from Lamentations let's look at the doctrine of prayer. We may already be at the stage where God does not hear our prayer as a nation, as in Lamentations 3:8 and 3:44, however as individuals let's look at the example of Jeremiah and the lessons of prayer in 2:18-19. 3:48-58 and 5:1-22. Is it time for us to turn our dance into mourning (Lamentation 5:15b and James 4:7-10). I don't say other parts of Lamentations are applicable yet, but to be prepared in this time of the Laodicean church (Revelation 3) and an overcomer, such activities contrary to the culture are beneficial for the true child of God. A few cautions are not to have pride or self-righteousness in such a decision, as it can be a quiet personal decision (please read this now, Lamentations 3:21-29). May the LORD grant us insight to share and encourage one another in this timely book of the Bible.

Jeremiah's grotto is where Jewish tradition say Jeremiah penned Lamentations. The grotto or small cave is the cave to the side of Golgotha, or one of the eyes of Golgotha (skull) near where Jesus was crucified, to the right of Gordon's Tomb, garden, and cistern.



Gems in Lamentations

Bible TOC

LORD – 32x (Jehovah – self existent, eternal), Lord – 14x (Adonai – proper name of a personal god)
God – 1x (el - mighty)

Priest(s) – 6x, Elders – 5x, Prophet(s) – 4x, King(s) – 3x

Enemies- 14x (chapters 1, 2, 4), Adversaries- 4x (chapters 1, 2), Daughters of Edom – 2x (chapter 5)

Zion – 15x, Jerusalem – 7x, Judah – 5x, Israel – 3x

Daughter – 19x (17x + 2x Edom), Virgin – 2x

Sanctuary – 4x, Tabernacle – 2x (chapters 1, 2, 4)

Chapter pronouns:

I, me, my (Jeremiah)	us, we, our (Jeremiah & Israel)	her, she, they, their (city of Jerusalem, Zion, elders)	he, his, you (God-LORD-Lord)	they, their, them (Enemies)
-------------------------	---------------------------------------	---	---------------------------------	--------------------------------

Lament 1: The Fall of Jerusalem

1:1-11	1x (11)	50x		6x
1:12-23	43x			9x

Lament 2: The Fall of Jerusalem

2:1-9		13x	37x	5x
2:10-22	13x	46x	17x	14x

Lament 3: Jeremiah personal sorrow and hope - like Job, then Habakkuk

3:1-39 Job	30x		27x	1x
3:40-47		10x	1x	1x
3:48-66	27x			

Lament 4: God's chastisement of His People (Hebrews 12:5-14)

4:1-12			5x	
4:13-22		16x (17-20)	1x	2x

Lament 5: Jeremiah's prayer to turn back to God

5:1-12	31x	2x		2x (11-13)
--------	------------	----	--	------------

Doubt vs Faith,
Discourage vs Encourage,
Disappoint vs Appoint,
Defeat vs Feat,
Depress vs Press,
Death vs Life.

God has temporarily turned his back on his people due to their transgression.

* Concentric circles: (1) City of Jerusalem (Land of Zion), (2) Judah, (3) Israel, (4) world.

Tale of 2 cities, Babylon and Jerusalem – review dispensations.

The Misery of Jerusalem because of Her Transgression (*her/she/they/their/Zion/Jerusalem*)

(1) ¹ How does the city sit solitary, [that was] full of people! [how] is she become as a widow! she [that was] great among the nations, [and] princess among the provinces, [how] is she become tributary! ² She weeps sore in the night, and her tears are on her cheeks: among all her lovers she has none to comfort [her]: all her friends have dealt treacherously with her, they are become her enemies. ³ Judah is gone into captivity because of affliction, and because of great servitude: she dwells among the heathen, she finds no rest: all her persecutors overtook her between the straits. ⁴ The ways of Zion do mourn, because none come to the solemn feasts: all her gates are desolate: her priests sigh, her virgins are afflicted, and she is in bitterness. ⁵ Her adversaries are the chief, her enemies prosper; for the LORD has afflicted her for the multitude of her transgressions: her children are gone into captivity before the enemy. ⁶ And from the daughter of Zion all her beauty is departed: her princes are become like deer [that] find no pasture, and they are gone without strength before the pursuer. ⁷ Jerusalem remembered in the days of her affliction and of her miseries all her pleasant things that she had in the days of old, when her people fell into the hand of the enemy, and none did help her: the adversaries saw her, [and] did mock at her sabbaths. ⁸ Jerusalem has grievously sinned; therefore she is removed: all that honored her despise her, because they have seen her nakedness: yes, she sighs, and turns backward. ⁹ Her filthiness is in her skirts; she remembers not her last end; therefore she came down wonderfully: she had no comforter. O LORD, behold my affliction: for the enemy has magnified [himself]. ¹⁰ The adversary has spread out his hand upon all her pleasant things: for she has seen [that] the heathen entered into her sanctuary, whom you did command [that] they should not enter into your assembly. ¹¹ All her people sigh, they seek bread; they have given their pleasant things for meat to relieve the soul: see, O LORD, and consider; for I am become vile.

Jerusalem Complains of Her Grief (*Jeremiah identifies with the city of Jerusalem, I/me/my*)

(2) ¹² [Is it] nothing to you, all ye that pass by? behold, and see if there be any sorrow like to my sorrow, which is done to me, wherewith the LORD has afflicted [me] in the day of his fierce anger. ¹³ From above has he sent fire into my bones, and it prevails against them: he has spread a net for my feet, he has turned me back: he has made me desolate [and] faint all the day. ¹⁴ The yoke of my transgressions is bound by his hand: they are wreathed, [and] come up upon my neck: he has made my strength to fall, the Lord has delivered me into [their] hands, [from whom] I am not able to rise up. ¹⁵ The Lord has trodden under foot all my mighty [men] in the midst of me: he has called an assembly against me to crush my young men: the Lord has trodden the virgin, the daughter of Judah, [as] in a winepress. ¹⁶ For these [things] I weep; my eye, my eye runs down with water, because the comforter that should relieve my soul is far from me: my children are desolate, because the enemy prevailed. ¹⁷ Zion spreads forth her hands, [and there is] none to comfort her: the LORD has commanded concerning Jacob, [that] his adversaries [should be] round about him: Jerusalem is as a menstruous woman among them. ¹⁸ The LORD is righteous; for I have rebelled against his commandment: hear, I pray you, all people, and behold my sorrow: my virgins and my young men are gone into captivity. ¹⁹ I called for my lovers, [but] they deceived me: my priests and my elders gave up the spirit in the city, while they sought their meat to relieve their souls. ²⁰ Behold, O LORD; for I [am] in distress: my bowels are troubled; my heart is turned within me; for I have grievously rebelled: abroad the sword bereaves, at home there is as death. ²¹ They have heard that I sigh: there is none to comfort me: all my enemies have heard of my trouble; they are glad that you have done [it]: you will bring the day [that] you have called, and they shall be like to me. ²² Let all their wickedness come before you; and do to them, as you have done to me for all my transgressions: for my sighs are many, and my heart is faint.

The Lord's Judgment on Israel, Judah, and the Temple (Lord/God/LORD/He/His/You)

(3) ¹ How has the Lord covered the daughter of Zion with a cloud in his anger, [and] cast down from heaven to the earth the beauty of Israel, and remembered not his footstool in the day of his anger! ² The Lord has swallowed up all the habitations of Jacob, and has not pitied: he has thrown down in his wrath the strong holds of the daughter of Judah; he has brought them down to the ground: he has polluted the kingdom and the princes thereof. ³ He has cut off in [his] fierce anger all the horn of Israel: he has drawn back his right hand from before the enemy, and he burned against Jacob like a flaming fire, [which] devours round about. ⁴ He has bent his bow like an enemy: he stood with his right hand as an adversary, and slew all [that were] pleasant to the eye in the tabernacle of the daughter of Zion: he poured out his fury like fire. ⁵ The Lord was as an enemy: he has swallowed up Israel, he has swallowed up all her palaces: he has destroyed his strong holds, and has increased in the daughter of Judah mourning and lamentation. ⁶ And he has violently taken away his tabernacle, as [if it were of] a garden: he has destroyed his places of the assembly: the LORD has caused the solemn feasts and sabbaths to be forgotten in Zion, and has despised in the indignation of his anger the king and the priest. ⁷ The Lord has cast off his altar, he has abhorred his sanctuary, he has given up into the hand of the enemy the walls of her palaces; they have made a noise in the house of the LORD, as in the day of a solemn feast. ⁸ The LORD has purposed to destroy the wall of the daughter of Zion: he has stretched out a line, he has not withdrawn his hand from destroying: therefore he made the rampart and the wall to lament; they languished together. ⁹ Her gates are sunk into the ground; he has destroyed and broken her bars: her king and her princes are among the Gentiles: the law is no [more]; her prophets also find no vision from the LORD.

Consequences for Jerusalem's Elders, Virgins, Children, Prophets, Priests, and Young Men

(4) ¹⁰ The elders of the daughter of Zion sit upon the ground, [and] keep silence: they have cast up dust upon their heads; they have girded themselves with sackcloth: the virgins of Jerusalem hang down their heads to the ground. ¹¹ My eyes do fail with tears, my bowels are troubled, my liver is poured upon the earth, for the destruction of the daughter of my people; because the children and the sucklings swoon in the streets of the city. ¹² They say to their mothers, Where is corn and wine? when they swooned as the wounded in the streets of the city, when their soul was poured out into their mothers' bosom. ¹³ What thing shall I take to witness for you? what thing shall I liken to you, O daughter of Jerusalem? what shall I equal to you, that I may comfort you, O virgin daughter of Zion? for your breach is great like the sea: who can heal you? ¹⁴ Your prophets have seen vain and foolish things for you: and they have not discovered your iniquity, to turn away your captivity; but have seen for you false burdens and causes of banishment. ¹⁵ All that pass by clap [their] hands at you; they hiss and wag their head at the daughter of Jerusalem, [saying, Is] this the city that [men] call The perfection of beauty, The joy of the whole earth? ¹⁶ All your enemies have opened their mouth against you: they hiss and gnash the teeth: they say, We have swallowed [her] up: certainly this is the day that we looked for; we have found, we have seen [it]. ¹⁷ The LORD has done [that] which he had devised; he has fulfilled his word that he had commanded in the days of old: he has thrown down, and has not pitied: and he has caused [your] enemy to rejoice over you, he has set up the horn of your adversaries.

The Daughter of Zions Prays about their Grievous Circumstances

¹⁸ Their heart cried to the Lord, O wall of the daughter of Zion, let tears run down like a river day and night: give thyself no rest; let not the apple of your eye cease. ¹⁹ Arise, cry out in the night: in the beginning of the watches pour out your heart like water before the face of the Lord: lift up your hands toward him for the life of your young children, that faint for hunger in the top of every street. ²⁰ Behold, O LORD, and consider to whom you have done this.

None Shall Escape the Day of the LORD's Anger

Shall the women eat their fruit, [and] children of a span long? shall the priest and the prophet be slain in the sanctuary of the Lord? ²¹ The young and the old lie on the ground in the streets: my virgins and my young men are fallen by the sword; you have slain them in the day of your anger; you have killed, [and] not pitied. ²² You have called as in a solemn day my terrors round about, so that in the day of the LORD'S anger none escaped nor remained: those that I have swaddled and brought up has my enemy consumed.

Transgression of a Nation (Jeremiah speaks with God, like Job; 1-18)

(5) ¹ I [am] the man [that] has seen affliction by the rod of his wrath. ² He has led me, and brought [me into] darkness, but not [into] light. ³ Surely against me is he turned; he turns his hand [against me] all the day. ⁴ My flesh and my skin has he made old; he has broken my bones. ⁵ He has built against me, and compassed [me] with gall and travail. ⁶ He has set me in dark places, as [they that be] dead of old. ⁷ He has hedged me about, that I cannot get out: he has made my chain heavy. ⁸ Also when I cry and shout, he shuts out my prayer. ⁹ He has enclosed my ways with hewn stone, he has made my paths crooked. ¹⁰ He was to me [as] a bear lying in wait, [and as] a lion in secret places. ¹¹ He has turned aside my ways, and pulled me in pieces: he has made me desolate. ¹² He has bent his bow, and set me as a mark for the arrow. ¹³ He has caused the arrows of his quiver to enter into my reins. ¹⁴ I was a derision to all my people; [and] their song all the day. ¹⁵ He has filled me with bitterness, he has made me drunken with wormwood. ¹⁶ He has also broken my teeth with gravel stones, he has covered me with ashes. ¹⁷ And you have removed my soul far off from peace: I forgot prosperity. ¹⁸ And I said, My strength and my hope is perished from the LORD:

Principles of Judgment and Prayer (19-30)

(6) ¹⁹ Remembering my affliction and my misery, the wormwood and the gall. ²⁰ My soul has them still in remembrance, and is humbled in me. ²¹ This I recall to my mind, therefore I have hope. ²² [It is of] the LORD'S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. ²³ [They are] new every morning: great is your faithfulness. ²⁴ The LORD is my portion, says my soul; therefore will I hope in him. ²⁵ The LORD is good to them that wait for him, to the soul [that] seeks him. ²⁶ [It is] good that [a man] should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD. ²⁷ [It is] good for a man that he bear the yoke in his youth. ²⁸ He sits alone and keeps silence, because he has borne [it] upon him. ²⁹ He puts his mouth in the dust; if so be there may be hope. ³⁰ He gives [his] cheek to him that smites him: he is filled full with reproach. ³¹ For the Lord will not cast off forever: ³² But though he cause grief, yet will he have compassion according to the multitude of his mercies. ³³ For he does not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men. ³⁴ To crush under his feet all the prisoners of the earth, ³⁵ To turn aside the right of a man before the face of the most High, ³⁶ To subvert a man in his cause, the Lord approves not. ³⁷ Who is he [that] says, and it comes to pass, [when] the Lord commands [it] not? ³⁸ Out of the mouth of the most High proceeds not evil and good? ³⁹ Wherefore does a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins?

Jeremiah's (our) Prayers that are Right in the Present, but not Heard Yet (40-51)

(7) ⁴⁰ Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the LORD. ⁴¹ Let us lift up our heart with [our] hands to God in the heavens. ⁴² We have transgressed and have rebelled: you have not pardoned. ⁴³ You have covered with anger, and persecuted us: you have slain, you have not pitied. ⁴⁴ You have covered thyself with a cloud, that [our] prayer should not pass through. ⁴⁵ You have made us [as] the off-scouring and refuse in the midst of the people. ⁴⁶ All our enemies have opened their mouths against us. ⁴⁷ Fear and a snare is come upon us, desolation and destruction. ⁴⁸ My eye runs down with rivers of water for the destruction of the daughter of my people. ⁴⁹ My eye trickles down, and ceases not, without any intermission, ⁵⁰ Till the LORD look down, and behold from heaven.

Jeremiah's (our) Prayers Heard in the Past, but not Heard in the Present (52-66)

(8) ⁵¹ My eye affects my heart because of all the daughters of my city. ⁵² My enemies chased me sore, like a bird, without cause. ⁵³ They have cut off my life in the dungeon, and cast a stone upon me. ⁵⁴ Waters flowed over my head; [then] I said, I am cut off. ⁵⁵ I called upon your name, O LORD, out of the low dungeon. ⁵⁶ You have heard my voice: hide not your ear at my breathing, at my cry. ⁵⁷ You drew near in the day [that] I called upon you: you said, Fear not. ⁵⁸ O Lord, you have pleaded the causes of my soul; you have redeemed my life. ⁵⁹ O LORD, you have seen my wrong: judge you my cause. ⁶⁰ You have seen all their vengeance [and] all their imaginations against me. ⁶¹ You have heard their reproach, O LORD, [and] all their imaginations against me; ⁶² The lips of those that rose up against me, and their device against me all the day. ⁶³ Behold their sitting down, and their rising up; I [am] their music. ⁶⁴ Render to them a recompense, O LORD, according to the work of their hands. ⁶⁵ Give them sorrow of heart, your curse to them. ⁶⁶ Persecute and destroy them in anger from under the heavens of the LORD.

Transgression of a Nation (Jeremiah speaks with God, like Job; 1-18)

(5) ¹ I [am] the man [that] has seen affliction by the rod of his wrath. ² He has led me, and brought [me into] darkness, but not [into] light. ³ Surely against me is he turned; he turns his hand [against me] all the day. ⁴ My flesh and my skin has he made old; he has broken my bones. ⁵ He has built against me, and compassed [me] with gall and travail. ⁶ He has set me in dark places, as [they that be] dead of old. ⁷ He has hedged me about, that I cannot get out: he has made my chain heavy. ⁸ Also when I cry and shout, he shuts out my prayer. ⁹ He has enclosed my ways with hewn stone, he has made my paths crooked. ¹⁰ He was to me [as] a bear lying in wait, [and as] a lion in secret places. ¹¹ He has turned aside my ways, and pulled me in pieces: he has made me desolate. ¹² He has bent his bow, and set me as a mark for the arrow. ¹³ He has caused the arrows of his quiver to enter into my reins. ¹⁴ I was a derision to all my people; [and] their song all the day. ¹⁵ He has filled me with bitterness, he has made me drunken with wormwood. ¹⁶ He has also broken my teeth with gravel stones, he has covered me with ashes. ¹⁷ And you have removed my soul far off from peace: I forgot prosperity. ¹⁸ And I said, My strength and my hope is perished from the LORD:

Principles of Judgment and Prayer (19-30)

(6) ¹⁹ Remembering my affliction and my misery, the wormwood and the gall. ²⁰ My soul has them still in remembrance, and is humbled in me. ²¹ This I recall to my mind, therefore I have hope. ²² [It is of] the LORD'S mercies that we are not consumed, because his compassions fail not. ²³ [They are] new every morning: great is your faithfulness. ²⁴ The LORD is my portion, says my soul; therefore will I hope in him. ²⁵ The LORD is good to them that wait for him, to the soul [that] seeks him. ²⁶ [It is] good that [a man] should both hope and quietly wait for the salvation of the LORD. ²⁷ [It is] good for a man that he bear the yoke in his youth. ²⁸ He sits alone and keeps silence, because he has borne [it] upon him. ²⁹ He puts his mouth in the dust; if so be there may be hope. ³⁰ He gives [his] cheek to him that smites him: he is filled full with reproach. ³¹ For the Lord will not cast off forever: ³² But though he cause grief, yet will he have compassion according to the multitude of his mercies. ³³ For he does not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men. ³⁴ To crush under his feet all the prisoners of the earth, ³⁵ To turn aside the right of a man before the face of the most High, ³⁶ To subvert a man in his cause, the Lord approves not. ³⁷ Who is he [that] says, and it comes to pass, [when] the Lord commands [it] not? ³⁸ Out of the mouth of the most High proceeds not evil and good? ³⁹ Wherefore does a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins?

Jeremiah's (our) Prayers that are Right in the Present, but not Heard Yet (40-51)

(7) ⁴⁰ Let us search and try our ways, and turn again to the LORD. ⁴¹ Let us lift up our heart with [our] hands to God in the heavens. ⁴² We have transgressed and have rebelled: you have not pardoned. ⁴³ You have covered with anger, and persecuted us: you have slain, you have not pitied. ⁴⁴ You have covered thyself with a cloud, that [our] prayer should not pass through. ⁴⁵ You have made us [as] the off-scouring and refuse in the midst of the people. ⁴⁶ All our enemies have opened their mouths against us. ⁴⁷ Fear and a snare is come upon us, desolation and destruction. ⁴⁸ My eye runs down with rivers of water for the destruction of the daughter of my people. ⁴⁹ My eye trickles down, and ceases not, without any intermission, ⁵⁰ Till the LORD look down, and behold from heaven.

Jeremiah's (our) Prayers Heard in the Past, but not Heard in the Present (52-66)

(8) ⁵¹ My eye affects my heart because of all the daughters of my city. ⁵² My enemies chased me sore, like a bird, without cause. ⁵³ They have cut off my life in the dungeon, and cast a stone upon me. ⁵⁴ Waters flowed over my head; [then] I said, I am cut off. ⁵⁵ I called upon your name, O LORD, out of the low dungeon. ⁵⁶ You have heard my voice: hide not your ear at my breathing, at my cry. ⁵⁷ You drew near in the day [that] I called upon you: you said, Fear not. ⁵⁸ O Lord, you have pleaded the causes of my soul; you have redeemed my life. ⁵⁹ O LORD, you have seen my wrong: judge you my cause. ⁶⁰ You have seen all their vengeance [and] all their imaginations against me. ⁶¹ You have heard their reproach, O LORD, [and] all their imaginations against me; ⁶² The lips of those that rose up against me, and their device against me all the day. ⁶³ Behold their sitting down, and their rising up; I [am] their music. ⁶⁴ Render to them a recompense, O LORD, according to the work of their hands. ⁶⁵ Give them sorrow of heart, your curse to them. ⁶⁶ Persecute and destroy them in anger from under the heavens of the LORD.

The Prayer of Jeremiah – Confession and Petition

(11) ¹ Remember, O LORD, what is come upon us: consider, and behold our reproach. ² Our inheritance is turned to strangers, our houses to aliens. ³ We are orphans and fatherless, our mothers are as widows. ⁴ We have drunken our water for money; our wood is sold to us. ⁵ Our necks are under persecution: we labor, [and] have no rest. ⁶ We have given the hand [to] the Egyptians, [and to] the Assyrians, to be satisfied with bread. ⁷ Our fathers have sinned, [and are] not; and we have borne their iniquities. ⁸ Servants have ruled over us: there is none that does deliver [us] out of their hand. ⁹ We got our bread with [the peril of] our lives because of the sword of the wilderness. ¹⁰ Our skin was black like an oven because of the terrible famine. ¹¹ They ravished the women in Zion, [and] the maids in the cities of Judah. ¹² Princes are hanged up by their hand: the faces of elders were not honored. ¹³ They took the young men to grind, and the children fell under the wood. ¹⁴ The elders have ceased from the gate, the young men from their music. ¹⁵ The joy of our heart is ceased; our dance is turned into mourning. ¹⁶ The crown is fallen [from] our head: woe to us, that we have sinned!

(12) ¹⁷ For this our heart is faint; for these [things] our eyes are dim. ¹⁸ Because of the mountain of Zion, which is desolate, the foxes walk upon it. ¹⁹ You, O LORD, remain forever; your throne from generation to generation. ²⁰ Wherefore do you forget us forever, [and] forsake us so long time? ²¹ Turn you us to you, O LORD, and we shall be turned; renew our days as of old. ²² But you have utterly rejected us; you are very angry against us.

Ezekiel (48-128, 3.75 hr, Exile) 2021

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25
26 27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43 44 45 46 47 48

12 Encouragements from an Obedient, Dramatic Watchman

Key verse: "Son of man, I have made thee a watchman to the house of Israel" 3:17

Themes: The sovereign glorious God. God the Spirit (25x). son of man (96x).
Not a theme: Ezekiel's own name (2x) 1:3, 24:24.

LORD (>200x) 1:3 The word of the LORD came to Ezekiel the priest, until the last words of the book in 48:35 "The LORD is there."

A watchman will:

Scripture

- | | |
|--|-------------|
| 1) Let the spirit enable us to stand on our feet and hear when God speaks | 2:1-2 |
| 2) Be sorrowful for the spiritually dead, and warn the wicked and righteous | 3:17 |
| 3) Be a little sanctuary to God wherever they are | 11:16 |
| 4) Know when the glory of the Lord departs from a place, step by step | 11:23 |
| 5) Be accountable for our own sin and righteousness, and not another's (18) | 18:20 |
| 6) Be a man that repairs the wall, & stands in the gap before God for others | 22:30 |
| 7) Represent God when his life's desire dies, without questioning or total trust | 24:16-17 |
| 8) Be renewed in purpose (as witnesses) and faith when circumstances change | 33:7 |
| 9) Know when something happens before anyone tells them | 33:22 |
| 10) Trust God as a shepherd who seeks out his flock that are scattered | 34:12 |
| 11) Be cleansed from filthiness with water to have a new heart & spirit | 36:25-26 |
| 12) Know when the glory of the Lord returns to a place | 43:5 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Ezekiel 8:18	Supplication	Asking for pity	Disobedience		Prayers not heard People of Israel
Ezekiel 20:2	Supplication	To ask of God	Their rebellion to God's commands		Prayers not heard Elders of Israel
Ezekiel 39:29	Supplication	After return to their God		Obedience	Prayers heard People of Israel

Application today. We can be unique and even a loner, yet filled with the Spirit and obedient to the will of God. Let's be more of a watchman over our own lives and for others. Things change and our watchman duties need renewed. Our words and prayers are evidence of the love of Jesus alive and awake in us, by the new heart and spirit given to us at salvation.

Note for today: God's people at their lowest were worshipping the sun God in his temple and women false prophets were specified.

Outline I of Ezekiel "God Strengthens"

Background. Ezekiel was a priest carried away into Babylon to a country town along the Euphrates River 500 miles north of the city of Babylon where Daniel lived. His calling 5 years later at 30 was as a prophet to Judah; a priest that became a "street preacher" for 22 years. No other books mention Ezekiel; he mentions Daniel 3x. Ezekiel is 1 of 3 apocalyptic books: Ezekiel, Daniel, and Revelation, all 3 exiled from Israel.

Ezekiel gives the bad news first (1-32) and the good news last (33-48). He spoke against sun god worship in the temple and women prophets. His dates are exact to the day 14x. Jeremiah spoke much of the Father as Isaiah the Son and Ezekiel the Spirit.

		<u>Chapters</u>
Part 1) Messages of Doom (to God's people)	1-23	
Ezekiel's call & commission (Ps 137)		1-3
The of sin & judgment of Judah & Jerusalem (23 – changing point, two women)		4-23
Part 2) Messages Against Foreign Nations (to the surrounding nations)	24-35	
Ammon, Moab, Edom, & Philistia (closest)		24-25
Tyre & Sidon (Temple destroyed, 586 BC)		26-28
Egypt (furthest)		29-35
Part 3) Messages of Hope (to God's people)	36-48	
Restoring the people of God (being fulfilled today & near future)		36-39
Restoring the worship of God (fulfilled in the future)		40-48
Design of the Temple		40-42
Worship of the Temple		43-46
Location of the Temple		47-48

Visions (4)	Signs for Israel (19) (12:11, 24:24)	Parables for Israel (8)
1:1-28 God's glory (Isaiah 6)	3:25-27 prison home & limit speech	
2:1-3:11 Calling & commission	4:1-2 Drawing Jerusalem besieged	
3:12-15 Conclusion	4:3 Setting iron pan between him & tile	
	4:4-8 Laying on sides for 430 days	
	4:9-11, 16-17 Eat small exact amounts	
8:1-4 Between earth & heaven	4:12-15 Cooking bread over manure	
8:5-18 The temple defiled	5:1-17 Shave head & beard - 3 parts	
9:1-11 Slaying in Jerusalem	6:1-10 Prophecy against the mountains	
10:1-22 God's glory leaving	6:11-14 Clap hand, stomp foot & say	15:1-8 The fruitless vine
11:22-25 Glory departs temple	12:1-16 Breaks house wall and moves	16:1-63 From purity to harlotry (Hos)
	12:17-20 Eat trembling and drink	17:1-24 Two eagles (Babylon & Egypt)
	19:1-14 Sang lamentation for leaders	
37:1-14 Valley of dry bones	20:45-49 Prophecy against the S. forest	20:45-21:7 Forest fire (allegory)
38-39 Gog & Magog	21:1-7 Prophecy & weep to Jerusalem	22:17-22 Dross in the furnace
40:1-4 Man with measuring rod	21:8-17 The sword and weeping	22:23-31 Land not cleansed with rain
40:5-42:20 The temple design	21:18-32 Made a map with 2 roads	23:1-49 Two harlot sisters
43:1-5 Glory returns to temple	24:15-27 Wife's death & mute	24:1-14 Scum of the boiling pot
43:6-46:24 Temple service	33:21-22 His speech returns-5 months	
47:1-48:35 Topography	37:15-28 Two sticks merge into one	

Southern KingdomJudah's KingForeign King

612-589 Habakkuk

Josiah - Zedekiah

627-560 Jeremiah, the last prophet to Jerusalem

605 1st captivity Daniel taken to Babylon

Jehoakim

Nebuchadnezzar

597 2nd captivity Ezekiel taken to Babylon**Jehoiachin****Nebuchadnezzar**

593-571 Prophet Ezekiel is called and commissioned

586 3rd captivity, Judah falls & Jerusalem destroyed

Zedekiah

Nebuchadnezzar

605-536 Prophet Daniel

Neb, Bel, Dar, Cyrus

539 Babylon overthrown by Media-Persia

Cyrus

537 Jews return to Judah under governor Zerubbabel

Cyrus

N.T. Compare Ezekiel 1 to Revelation 4-5, 3:3 to 10:10, 8:3 to 13:14-15, 9 to 7, 10 to 8:1-5

Ezekiel Chapter 1

(1) ¹ Now it came to pass in the thirtieth year, in the fourth [month], in the fifth [day] of the month, as I was among the captives by the river of Chebar, [that] the heavens were opened, and I saw visions of God. ² In the fifth [day] of the month, which was the fifth year of king Jehoiachin's captivity, ³ The word of the LORD came expressly to Ezekiel the priest, the son of Buzi, in the land of the Chaldeans by the river Chebar; and the hand of the LORD was there upon him. ⁴ And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the color of amber, out of the midst of the fire. ⁵ Also out of the midst thereof [came] the likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man. ⁶ And everyone had four faces, and everyone had four wings. ⁷ And their feet [were] straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the color of burnished brass. ⁸ And [they had] the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings. ⁹ Their wings [were] joined one to another; they turned not when they went; they went everyone straight forward. ¹⁰ As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle. ¹¹ Thus [were] their faces: and their wings [were] stretched upward; two [wings] of everyone [were] joined one to another, and two covered their bodies. ¹² And they went everyone straight forward: where the spirit was to go, they went; [and] they turned not when they went. ¹³ As for the likeness of the living creatures, their appearance was like burning coals of fire, [and] like the appearance of lamps: it went up and down among the living creatures; and the fire was bright, and out of the fire went forth lightning. ¹⁴ And the living creatures ran and returned as the appearance of a flash of lightning.

(2) ¹⁵ Now as I beheld the living creatures, behold one wheel upon the earth by the living creatures, with his four faces. ¹⁶ The appearance of the ^a wheels and their work was like to the color of a beryl: and they four had one likeness: and their appearance and their work was as it were a wheel in the middle of a wheel. ¹⁷ When they went, they went upon their four sides: [and] they turned not when they went. ¹⁸ As for their rings, they were so high that they were dreadful; and their rings [were] full of eyes round about them four. ¹⁹ And when the living creatures went, the wheels went by them: and when the living creatures were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up. ²⁰ Whithersoever the spirit was to go, they went, thither [was their] spirit to go; and the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creature was in the wheels. ²¹ When those went, [these] went; and when those stood, [these] stood; and when those were lifted up from the earth, the wheels were lifted up over against them: for the spirit of the living creatures was in the wheels. ²² And the likeness of the firmament upon the heads of the living creature was as the color of the terrible crystal, stretched forth over their heads above. ²³ And under the firmament [were] their wings straight, the one toward the other: everyone had two, which covered on this side, and everyone had two, which covered on that side, their bodies. ²⁴ And when they went, I heard the noise of their wings, like the noise of great waters, as the voice of the Almighty, the voice of speech, as the noise of a host: when they stood, they let down their wings. ²⁵ And there was a voice from the firmament that was over their heads, when they stood, [and] had let down their wings. ²⁶ And above the firmament that was over their heads was the likeness of a throne, as the appearance of a sapphire stone: and upon the likeness of the throne was the likeness as the appearance of a man above upon it. ²⁷ And I saw as the color of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about. ²⁸ As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw [it], I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of one that spoke.

^a wheels of fire are also specified for God's throne in Ezekiel 10:9 and Daniel 7:9.

Ezekiel Chapter 2

(3) ¹ And he said to me, Son of man, stand upon your feet, and I will speak to you. ² And the spirit entered into me when he spoke to me, and set me upon my feet, that I heard him that spoke to me. ³ And he said to me, Son of man, I send you to the children of Israel, to a rebellious nation that has rebelled against me: they and their fathers have transgressed against me, [even] to this very day. ⁴ For [they are] impudent children and stiff-hearted. I do send you to them; and you shall say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD. ⁵ And they, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear, (for they are a rebellious house,) yet shall know that there has been a prophet among them. ⁶ And you, son of man, be not afraid of them, neither be afraid of their words, though briars and thorns [be] with you, and you do dwell among scorpions: be not afraid of their words, nor be dismayed at their looks, though they [be] a rebellious house. ⁷ And you shall speak my words to them, whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear: for they are most rebellious. ⁸ But you, son of man, hear what I say to you; Be not you rebellious like that rebellious house: open your mouth, and eat that I give you. ⁹ And when I looked, behold, a hand was sent to me; and, look, a roll of a book was therein; ¹⁰ And he spread it before me; and it was written within and without: and [there was] written therein lamentations, and mourning, and woe.

Ezekiel Chapter 3

(4) ¹ Moreover he said to me, Son of man, eat that you find; eat this roll, and go speak to the house of Israel. ² So I opened my mouth, and he caused me to eat that roll. ³ And he said to me, Son of man, cause your belly to eat, and fill your bowels with this roll that I give you. Then did I eat [it]; and it was in my mouth as honey for sweetness. ⁴ And he said to me, Son of man, go, get you to the house of Israel, and speak with my words to them. ⁵ For you are not sent to a people of a strange speech and of a hard language, [but] to the house of Israel; ⁶ Not to many people of a strange speech and of a hard language, whose words you cannot understand. Surely, had I sent you to them, they would have listened to you. ⁷ But the house of Israel will not hearken to you; for they will not hearken to me: for all the house of Israel are impudent and hardhearted. ⁸ Behold, I have made your face strong against their faces, and your forehead strong against their foreheads. ⁹ As an adamant harder than flint I have made your forehead: fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks, though they [be] a rebellious house. ¹⁰ Moreover he said to me, Son of man, all my words that I shall speak to you receive in your heart, and hear with your ears. ¹¹ And go, get you to them of the captivity, to the children of your people, and speak to them, and tell them, Thus says the Lord GOD; whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear. ¹² Then the spirit took me up, and I heard behind me a voice of a great rushing, [saying], Blessed [be] the glory of the LORD from his place. ¹³ [I heard] also the noise of the wings of the living creatures that touched one another, and the noise of the wheels over against them, and a noise of a great rushing. ¹⁴ So the spirit lifted me up, and took me away, and I went in bitterness, in the heat of my spirit; but the hand of the LORD was strong upon me.

(5) ¹⁵ Then I came to them of the captivity at Telabib, that dwelt by the river of Chebar, and I sat where they sat, and remained there astonished among them seven days. ¹⁶ And it came to pass at the end of seven days, that the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁷ Son of man, I have made you a watchman to the house of Israel: therefore hear the word at my mouth, and give them warning from me. ¹⁸ When I say to the wicked, You shall surely die; and you give him not warning, nor speak to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his life; the same wicked [man] shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at your hand. ¹⁹ Yet if you warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but you have delivered your soul. ²⁰ Again, When a righteous [man] does turn from his righteousness, and commit iniquity, and I lay a stumbling-block before him, he shall die: because you have not given him warning, he shall die in his sin, and his righteousness which he has done shall not be remembered; but his blood will I require at your hand. ²¹ Nevertheless if you warn the righteous [man], that the righteous sin not, and he does not sin, he shall surely live, because he is warned; also you have delivered your soul.

(6) ²² And the hand of the LORD was there upon me; and he said to me, Arise, go forth into the plain, and I will there talk with you. ²³ Then I arose, and went forth into the plain: and, behold, the glory of the LORD stood there, as the glory which I saw by the river of Chebar: and I fell on my face. ²⁴ Then the spirit entered into me, and set me upon my feet, and spoke with me, and said to me, Go, shut thyself within your house. ²⁵ But you, O son of man, behold, they shall put bands upon you, and shall bind you

Ezekiel Chapter 3

with them, and you shall not go out among them: ²⁶ And I will make your tongue cleave to the roof of your mouth, that you shall be dumb, and shall not be to them a reprov-er: for they are a rebellious house. ²⁷ But when I speak with you, I will open your mouth, and you shall say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; He that hears, let him hear; and he that forbears, let him forbear: for they are a rebellious house.

Ezekiel Chapter 4

(7) ¹ You also, son of man, take you a tile, and lay it before you, and portray upon it the city, [even] Jerusalem: ² And lay siege against it, and build a fort against it, and cast a mount against it; set the camp also against it, and set [battering] rams against it round about. ³ Moreover take you to you an iron pan, and set it [for] a wall of iron between you and the city: and set your face against it, and it shall be besieged, and you shall lay siege against it. This [shall be] a sign to the house of Israel. ⁴ Lie you also upon your left side, and lay the iniquity of the house of Israel upon it: [according] to the number of the days that you shall lie upon it you shall bear their iniquity. ⁵ For I have laid upon you the years of their iniquity, according to the number of the days, ^a **three hundred and ninety days**: so shall you bear the iniquity of the house of Israel. ⁶ And when you have accomplished them, lie again on your right side, and you shall bear the iniquity of the house of Judah **forty days**: I have appointed you **each day for a year**. ⁷ Therefore you shall set your face toward the siege of Jerusalem, and your arm [shall be] uncovered, and you shall prophesy against it. ⁸ And, behold, I will lay bands upon you, and you shall not turn you from one side to another, till you have ended the days of your siege.

^a 390d + 40d = 430d. 430y - 70y = 360y. 360y x 7 = 2520y (360d). 2520y (360d) = 2483y 9m 21d (365d).

The Servitude of the Nation. In 606 BC, Babylon conquered the Israelites. They were in bondage for 70 years before their probationary time would begin. (II Chronicles 36:21, Daniel 9:2, Jeremiah 29:10). 606 BC - 70 = 536 BC.. In 536, July 23 their probationary period would begin and would end in the year - 2483y 9m 21d = 1948y 5m 14d or May 14, 1948. They did not hearken unto God, and in 536 BC, God multiplied the remainder by 7 (Leviticus 26).

The calendar God uses only has 360 days to a year (Lunar years, from new moon to new moon). The calendar we use today has 365 days, 1 extra day every 4 years, Leap year (this is commonly known as the Julian calendar).

2,520 yrs. X 360 days = 907,200 days. Now divide 907,200 days by 365.25 yrs. Total calendar yrs. = 2,483.77. 2,483.77 - 536 BC = 1947.77. The years 1 BC - 1 AD were counted as 1 year instead of 2 yrs., therefore; we need to add 1 year to our calculations. 1947.77 + 1 = 1948.77.

The Jewish New Year is Rosh Hashanna and falls in September or early October (it depends on the moon). 77 months brings you to May of 1948. Israel became a nation on the 14th day of May in 1948.

The Desolations of Jerusalem. Third siege of Nebuchadnezzar in 587 BC. 70 yr. siege ended Aug 16, 518.

518 days 8m 16d - 2483y 9m 21 d = 1967y 6m 7d or June 7, 1967 end of six-day war and East Jerusalem, Samaria, Golan Heights and West Bank are gained

(8) ⁹ Take you also to you wheat, and barley, and beans, and lentils, and millet, and fitches, and put them in one vessel, and make you bread thereof, [according] to the number of the days that you shall lie upon your side, three hundred and ninety days shall you eat thereof. ¹⁰ And your meat which you shall eat [shall be] by weight, twenty shekels a day: from time to time shall you eat it. ¹¹ You shall drink also water by measure, the sixth part of a hin: from time to time shall you drink. ¹² And you shall eat it [as] barley cakes, and you shall bake it with dung that comes out of man, in their sight. ¹³ And the LORD said, Even thus shall the children of Israel eat their defiled bread among the Gentiles, where I will drive them. ¹⁴ Then said I, Ah Lord GOD! behold, my soul has not been polluted: for from my youth up even till now I have not eaten of that which dies of itself, or is torn in pieces; neither came there abominable flesh into my mouth. ¹⁵ Then he said to me, Look, I have given you cow's dung for man's dung, and you shall prepare your bread therewith. ¹⁶ Moreover he said to me, Son of man, behold, I will break the staff of bread in Jerusalem: and they shall eat bread by weight, and with care; and they shall drink water by measure, and with astonishment: ¹⁷ That they may want bread and water, and be astonished one with another, and consume away for their iniquity.

Ezekiel Chapter 5

(9) ¹ And you, son of man, take you a sharp knife, take you a barber's razor, and cause [it] to pass upon your head and upon your beard: then take you balances to weigh, and divide the [hair]. ² You shall burn with fire a third part in the midst of the city, when the days of the siege are fulfilled: and you shall take a third part, [and] smite about it with a knife: and a third part you shall scatter in the wind; and I will draw out a sword after them. ³ You shall also take thereof a few in number, and bind them in your skirts. ⁴ Then take of them again, and cast them into the midst of the fire, and burn them in the fire; [for] thereof shall a fire come forth into all the house of Israel. ⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD; **This is Jerusalem: I have set it in the midst of the nations and countries [that are] round about her.** ⁶ And she has changed my judgments into wickedness more than the nations, and my statutes more than the countries that are round about her: for they have refused my judgments and my statutes, they have not walked in them. ⁷ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because ye multiplied more than the nations that are round about you, [and] have not walked in my statutes, neither have kept my judgments, neither have done according to the judgments of the nations that are round about you; ⁸ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I, even I, [am] against you, and will execute judgments in the midst of you in the sight of the nations. ⁹ And I will do in you that which I have not done, and whereunto I will not do anymore the like, because of all your abominations. ¹⁰ Therefore the fathers shall eat the sons in the midst of you, and the sons shall eat their fathers; and I will execute judgments in you, and the whole remnant of you will I scatter into all the winds. ¹¹ Wherefore, [as] I live, says the Lord GOD; Surely, because you have defiled my sanctuary with all your detestable things, and with all your abominations, therefore will I also diminish [you]; neither shall my eye spare, neither will I have any pity.

(10) ¹² A third part of you shall die with the pestilence, and with famine they will be consumed in the midst of you: and a third part shall fall by the sword round about you; and I will scatter a third part into all the winds, and I will draw out a sword after them. ¹³ Thus shall my anger be accomplished, and I will cause my fury to rest upon them, and I will be comforted: and they shall know that I the LORD have spoken [it] in my zeal, when I have accomplished my fury in them. ¹⁴ Moreover I will make you waste, and a reproach among the nations that are round about you, in the sight of all that pass by. ¹⁵ So it shall be a reproach and a taunt, an instruction and an astonishment to the nations that are round about you, when I shall execute judgments in you in anger and in fury and in furious rebukes. I the LORD have spoken [it]. ¹⁶ When I shall send upon them the evil arrows of famine, which shall be for [their] destruction, [and] which I will send to destroy you: and I will increase the famine upon you, and will break your staff of bread: ¹⁷ So will I send upon you famine and evil beasts, and they shall bereave you; and pestilence and blood shall pass through you; and I will bring the sword upon you. I the LORD have spoken [it].

Ezekiel Chapter 6

(11) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, set your face toward the mountains of Israel, and prophesy against them, ³ And say, Ye mountains of Israel, hear the Word of the Lord GOD; Thus says the Lord GOD to the mountains, and to the hills, to the rivers, and to the valleys; Behold, I, [even] I, will bring a sword upon you, and I will destroy your high places. ⁴ And your altars shall be desolate, and your images shall be broken: and I will cast down your slain [men] before your idols. ⁵ And I will lay the dead carcasses of the children of Israel before their idols; and I will scatter your bones round about your altars. ⁶ In all your dwelling-places the cities shall be laid waste, and the high places shall be desolate; that your altars may be laid waste and made desolate, and your idols may be broken and cease, and your images may be cut down, and your works may be abolished. ⁷ And the slain shall fall in the midst of you, and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁸ Yet will I leave a remnant, that ye may have [some] that shall escape the sword among the nations, when ye shall be scattered through the countries. ⁹ And they that escape of you shall remember me among the nations where they shall be carried captives, because I am broken with their whorish heart, which has departed from me, and with their eyes, which go a whoring after their idols: and they shall loathe themselves for the evils which they have committed in all their abominations. ¹⁰ And they shall know that I [am] the LORD, [and that] I have not said in vain that I would do this evil to them.

Ezekiel Chapter 6

(12) ¹¹ Thus says the Lord GOD; Smite with your hand, and stamp with your foot, and say, Alas for all the evil abominations of the house of Israel! for they shall fall by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence. ¹² He that is far off shall die of the pestilence; and he that is near shall fall by the sword; and he that remains and is besieged shall die by the famine: thus will I accomplish my fury upon them. ¹³ Then shall ye know that I [am] the LORD, when their slain [men] shall be among their idols round about their altars, upon every high hill, in all the tops of the mountains, and under every green tree, and under every thick oak, the place where they did offer sweet fragrance to all their idols. ¹⁴ So will I stretch out my hand upon them, and make the land desolate, yes, more desolate than the wilderness toward Diblah, in all their habitations: and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Ezekiel Chapter 7

(13) ¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Also, you son of man, thus says the Lord GOD to the land of Israel; An end, the end is come upon the four corners of the land. ³ Now is the end [come] upon you, and I will send my anger upon you, and will judge you according to your ways, and will recompense upon you all your abominations. ⁴ And my eye shall not spare you, neither will I have pity: but I will recompense your ways upon you, and your abominations shall be in the midst of you: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD; An evil, an only evil, behold, is come. ⁶ An end is come, the end is come: it watches for you; behold, it is come. ⁷ The morning is come to you, O you that dwell in the land: the time is come, the day of trouble is near, and not the sounding again of the mountains. ⁸ Now will I shortly pour out my fury upon you, and accomplish my anger upon you: and I will judge you according to your ways, and will recompense you for all your abominations. ⁹ And my eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: I will recompense you according to your ways and your abominations [that] are in the midst of you; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD that smites. ¹⁰ Behold the day, behold, it is come: the morning is gone forth; the rod has blossomed, pride has budded. ¹¹ Violence is risen up into a rod of wickedness: none of them [shall remain], nor of their multitude, nor of any of theirs: neither [shall there be] wailing for them. ¹² The time is come, the day draws near: let not the buyer rejoice, nor the seller mourn: for wrath is upon all the multitude thereof. ¹³ For the seller shall not return to that which is sold, although they were yet alive: for the vision is concerning the whole multitude thereof, [which] shall not return; neither shall any strengthen himself in the iniquity of his life. ¹⁴ They have blown the trumpet, even to make all ready; but none goes to the battle: for my wrath is upon all the multitude thereof. ¹⁵ The sword is without, and the pestilence and the famine within: he that is in the field shall die with the sword; and he that is in the city, famine and pestilence shall devour him. ¹⁶ But they that escape of them shall escape, and shall be on the mountains like doves of the valleys, all of them mourning, everyone for his iniquity. ¹⁷ All hands shall be feeble, and all knees shall be weak [as] water. ¹⁸ They shall also gird [themselves] with sackcloth, and horror shall cover them; and shame [shall be] upon all faces, and baldness upon all their heads. ¹⁹ They shall cast their silver in the streets, and their gold shall be removed: their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them in the day of the wrath of the LORD: they shall not satisfy their souls, neither fill their bowels: because it is the stumbling-block of their iniquity.

(14) ²⁰ As for the beauty of his ornament, he set it in majesty: but they made the images of their abominations [and] of their detestable things therein: therefore I have set it far from them. ²¹ And I will give it into the hands of the strangers for a prey, and to the wicked of the earth for a spoil; and they shall pollute it. ²² My face will I turn also from them, and they shall pollute my secret [place]: for the robbers shall enter into it, and defile it. ²³ Make a chain: for the land is full of bloody crimes, and the city is full of violence. ²⁴ Wherefore I will bring the worst of the heathen, and they shall possess their houses: I will also make the pomp of the strong to cease; and their holy places shall be defiled. ²⁵ Destruction comes; and they shall seek peace, and [there shall be] none. ²⁶ Mischief shall come upon mischief, and rumor shall be upon rumor; then they will seek a vision of the prophet; but the law shall perish from the priest, and counsel from the ancients. ²⁷ The king shall mourn, and the prince shall be clothed with desolation, and the hands of the people of the land shall be troubled: I will do to them after their way, and according to their deserts will I judge them; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Ezekiel Chapter 8

(15) ¹ And it came to pass in the sixth year, in the sixth [month], in the fifth [day] of the month, [as] I sat in my house, and the elders of Judah sat before me, that the hand of the Lord GOD fell there upon me. ² Then I beheld, and look a likeness as the appearance of fire: from the appearance of his loins even downward, fire; and from his loins even upward, as the appearance of brightness, as the color of amber. ³ And he put forth the form of a hand, and took me by a lock of my head; and the spirit lifted me up between the earth and the heaven, and brought me in the visions of God to Jerusalem, to the door of the inner gate that looks toward the north; where was the seat of the image of jealousy, which provokes to jealousy. ⁴ And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel was there, according to the vision that I saw in the plain. ⁵ Then said he to me, **Son of man, lift up your eyes now the way toward the north.** So I lifted up my eyes the way toward the north, and behold northward at the gate of the altar this image of jealousy in the entry. ⁶ He said furthermore to me, **Son of man, see you what they do? [even] the great abominations that the house of Israel commits here, that I should go far off from my sanctuary? but turn you yet again, [and] you shall see greater abominations.** ⁷ And he brought me to the door of the court; and when I looked, behold a hole in the wall. ⁸ Then said he to me, **Son of man, dig now in the wall:** and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door. ⁹ And he said to me, **Go in, and behold the wicked abominations that they do here.** ¹⁰ So I went in and saw; and behold every form of creeping things, and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel, portrayed upon the wall round about. ¹¹ And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up. ¹² Then said he to me, **Son of man, have you seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every man in the chambers of his imagery? for they say, The LORD sees us not; the LORD has forsaken the earth.**

(16) ¹³ He said also to me, **Turn you yet again, [and] you shall see greater abominations that they do.** ¹⁴ Then he brought me to the door of the gate of the LORD'S house which was toward the north; and, behold, there sat women weeping for Tammuz. ¹⁵ Then said he to me, **Have you seen [this], O son of man? turn you yet again, [and] you shall see greater abominations than these.** ¹⁶ And he brought me into the inner court of the LORD'S house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the LORD, between the porch and the altar, [were] about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the LORD, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east. ¹⁷ **Then he said to me, Have you seen [this], O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger: and, look, they put the branch to their nose.** ¹⁸ **Therefore will I also deal in fury: my eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in my ears with a loud voice, [yet] will I not hear them.**

Ezekiel Chapter 9

(17) ¹ He cried also in my ears with a loud voice, saying, **Cause them that have charge over the city to draw near, even every man [with] his destroying weapon in his hand.** ² And, behold, six men came from the way of the higher gate, which lies toward the north, and every man a slaughter weapon in his hand; and one man among them was clothed with linen, with a writer's inkhorn by his side: and they went in, and stood beside the brazen altar. ³ And the glory of the God of Israel was gone up from the cherub, whereupon he was, to the threshold of the house. And he called to the man clothed with linen, which had the writer's inkhorn by his side; ⁴ And the LORD said unto him, **Go through the midst of the city, through the midst of Jerusalem, and set a mark upon the foreheads of the men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof.** ⁵ And to the others he said in my hearing, **Go ye after him through the city, and smite: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity:** ⁶ **Slay utterly old [and] young, both maids, and little children, and women: but come not near any man upon whom is the mark; and begin at my sanctuary.** Then they began at the ancient men which [were] before the house.

Ezekiel Chapter 9

⁷ And he said to them, **Defile the house, and fill the courts with the slain: go ye forth. And they went forth, and slew in the city.** ⁸ And it came to pass, while they were slaying them, and I was left, that I fell upon my face, and cried, and said, Ah Lord GOD! will you destroy all the residue of Israel in your pouring out of your fury upon Jerusalem? ⁹ Then said he to me, **The iniquity of the house of Israel and Judah is exceeding great, and the land is full of blood, and the city full of perverseness: for they say, The LORD has forsaken the earth, and the LORD sees not.** ¹⁰ **And as for me also, my eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity, [but] I will recompense their way upon their head.** ¹¹ And, behold, the man clothed with linen, which had the inkhorn by his side, reported the matter, saying, I have done as you have commanded me.

Ezekiel Chapter 10

(18) ¹ Then I looked, and, behold, in the firmament that was above the head of the cherubims there appeared over them as it were a sapphire stone, as the appearance of the likeness of a throne. ² And he spoke to the man clothed with linen, and said, **Go in between the wheels, [even] under the cherub, and fill your hand with coals of fire from between the cherubims, and scatter them over the city.** And he went in, in my sight. ³ Now the cherubims stood on the right side of the house, when the man went in; and the cloud filled the inner court. ⁴ Then the glory of the LORD went up from the cherub, [and stood] over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the LORD'S glory. ⁵ And the sound of the cherubims' wings was heard [even] to the outer court, as the voice of the Almighty God when he speaks. ⁶ And it came to pass, [that] when he had commanded the man clothed with linen, saying, **Take fire from between the wheels, from between the cherubims; then he went in, and stood beside the wheels.** ⁷ And [one] cherub stretched forth his hand from between the cherubims to the fire that was between the cherubims, and took [thereof], and put [it] into the hands of [him that was] clothed with linen: who took [it], and went out.

The Cherubim with Four Faces

(19) ⁸ And there appeared in the cherubims the form of a man's hand under their wings. ⁹ And when I looked, behold the four wheels by the cherubims, one wheel by one cherub, and another wheel by another cherub: and the appearance of the wheels was as the color of a beryl stone. ¹⁰ And [as for] their appearances, they four had one likeness, as if a wheel had been in the midst of a wheel. ¹¹ When they went, they went upon their four sides; they turned not as they went, but to the place where the head looked they followed it; they turned not as they went. ¹² And their whole body, and their backs, and their hands, and their wings, and the wheels, [were] full of eyes round about, [even] the wheels that they four had. ¹³ As for the wheels, it was cried to them in my hearing, O wheel. ¹⁴ And everyone had four faces: the first face was the face of a cherub, and the second face was the face of a man, and the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle. ¹⁵ And the cherubims were lifted up. This is the living creature that I saw by the river of Chebar. ¹⁶ And when the cherubims went, the wheels went by them: and when the cherubims lifted up their wings to mount up from the earth, the same wheels also turned not from beside them. ¹⁷ When they stood, [these] stood; and when they were lifted up, [these] lifted up themselves [also]: for the spirit of the living creature was in them. ¹⁸ Then the glory of the LORD departed from off the threshold of the house, and stood over the cherubims. ¹⁹ And the cherubims lifted up their wings, and mounted up from the earth in my sight: when they went out, the wheels also [were] beside them, and [everyone] stood at the door of the east gate of the LORD'S house; and the glory of the God of Israel was over them above. ²⁰ This is the living creature that I saw under the God of Israel by the river of Chebar; and I knew that they [were] the cherubims. ²¹ Every one had four faces apiece, and everyone four wings; and the likeness of the hands of a man was under their wings. ²² And the likeness of their faces was the same faces which I saw by the river of Chebar, their appearances and themselves: they went everyone straight forward.

Ezekiel Chapter 11

(20) ¹ Moreover the spirit lifted me up, and brought me to the east gate of the LORD'S house, which looks eastward: and behold at the door of the gate five and twenty men; among whom I saw Jaazaniah the son of Azur, and Pelatiah the son of Benaiah, princes of the people. ² Then said he to me, Son of man, **these are the men that devise mischief, and give wicked counsel in this city:** ³ Which say, [It is] not near; let us build houses: this [city is] the caldron, and we [be] the flesh. ⁴ Therefore prophesy against them, **prophesy, O son of man.** ⁵ And the Spirit of the LORD fell upon me, and said to me, **Speak; Thus says the LORD; Thus have ye said, O house of Israel: for I know the things that come into your mind, [everyone of] them.** ⁶ Ye have multiplied your slain in this city, and ye have filled the streets thereof with the slain. ⁷ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; **Your slain whom ye have laid in the midst of it, they are the flesh, and this [city is] the caldron: but I will bring you forth out of the midst of it.** ⁸ Ye have feared the sword; and I will bring a sword upon you, **says the Lord GOD.** ⁹ And I will bring you out of the midst thereof, and deliver you into the hands of strangers, and will execute judgments among you. ¹⁰ Ye shall fall by the sword; I will judge you in the border of Israel; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ¹¹ This [city] shall not be your caldron, neither shall ye be the flesh in the midst thereof; [but] I will judge you in the border of Israel: ¹² And ye shall know that I [am] the LORD: for ye have not walked in my statutes, neither executed my judgments, but have done after the manners of the heathen that are round about you.

(21) ¹³ And it came to pass, when I prophesied, that Pelatiah the son of Benaiah died. Then fell I down upon my face, and cried with a loud voice, and said, Ah Lord GOD! will you make a full end of the remnant of Israel? ¹⁴ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁵ **Son of man, your brethren, [even] your brethren, the men of your kindred, and all the house of Israel wholly, are they to whom the inhabitants of Jerusalem have said, Get you far from the LORD: to us is this land given in possession.** ¹⁶ Therefore say, **Thus says the Lord GOD; Although I have cast them far off among the heathen, and although I have scattered them among the countries, yet will I be to them as a little sanctuary in the countries where they shall come.** ¹⁷ Therefore say, **Thus says the Lord GOD; I will even gather you from the people, and assemble you out of the countries where ye have been scattered, and I will give you the land of Israel.** ¹⁸ And they shall come thither, and they shall take away all the detestable things thereof and all the abominations thereof from there. ¹⁹ And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them a heart of flesh: ²⁰ That they may walk in my statutes, and keep my ordinances, and do them: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God. ²¹ But [as for them] whose heart walks after the heart of their detestable things and their abominations, I will recompense their way upon their own heads, **says the Lord GOD.**

(22) ²² Then did the cherubims lift up their wings, and the wheels beside them; and the glory of the God of Israel was over them above. ²³ And the glory of the LORD went up from the midst of the city, and stood upon the mountain which is on the east side of the city. ²⁴ Afterwards the spirit took me up, and brought me in a vision by the Spirit of God into Chaldea, to them of the captivity. So the vision that I had seen went up from me. ²⁵ Then I spoke to them of the captivity all the things that the LORD had showed me.

Ezekiel Chapter 12

(23) ¹ The word of the LORD also came to me, saying, ² Son of man, you dwell in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not; they have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house. ³ Therefore, you son of man, prepare you stuff for removing, and remove by day in their sight; and you shall remove from your place to another place in their sight: it may be they will consider, though they [be] a rebellious house. ⁴ Then shall you bring forth your stuff by day in their sight, as stuff for removing: and you shall go forth at even in their sight, as they that go forth into captivity. ⁵ Dig you through the wall in their sight, and carry out thereby. ⁶ In their sight shall you bear [it] upon [your] shoulders, [and] carry [it] forth in the twilight: you shall cover your face, that you see not the ground: for I have set you [for] a sign to the house of Israel. ⁷ And I did so as I was commanded: I brought forth my stuff by day, as stuff for captivity, and in the even I digged through the wall with my hand; I brought [it] forth in the twilight, [and] I bore [it] upon [my] shoulder in their sight. ⁸ And in the morning came the word of the LORD unto me, saying, ⁹ Son of man, has not the house of Israel, the rebellious house, said to you, What do you? ¹⁰ Say you to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; This burden [concerns] the prince in Jerusalem, and all the house of Israel that are among them. ¹¹ Say, I [am] your sign: like as I have done, so shall it be done to them: they shall remove [and] go into captivity. ¹² And the prince that is among them shall bear upon [his] shoulder in the twilight, and shall go forth: they shall dig through the wall to carry out thereby: he shall cover his face, that he see not the ground with [his] eyes. ¹³ My net also will I spread upon him, and he shall be taken in my snare: and I will bring him to Babylon [to] the land of the Chaldeans; yet shall he not see it, though he shall die there. ¹⁴ And I will scatter toward every wind all that are about him to help him, and all his bands; and I will draw out the sword after them. ¹⁵ And they shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I shall scatter them among the nations, and disperse them in the countries. ¹⁶ But I will leave a few men of them from the sword, from the famine, and from the pestilence; that they may declare all their abominations among the heathen where they come; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

(24) ¹⁷ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁸ Son of man, eat your bread with quaking, and drink your water with trembling and with carefulness; ¹⁹ And say to the people of the land, Thus says the Lord GOD of the inhabitants of Jerusalem, [and] of the land of Israel; They shall eat their bread with carefulness, and drink their water with astonishment, that her land may be desolate from all that is therein, because of the violence of all them that dwell therein. ²⁰ And the cities that are inhabited shall be laid waste, and the land shall be desolate; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ²¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²² Son of man, what is that proverb [that] ye have in the land of Israel, saying, The days are prolonged, and every vision fails? ²³ Tell them therefore, Thus says the Lord GOD; I will make this proverb to cease, and they shall no more use it as a proverb in Israel; but say to them, The days are at hand, and the effect of every vision. ²⁴ For there shall be no more any vain vision nor flattering divination within the house of Israel. ²⁵ For I [am] the LORD: I will speak, and the word that I shall speak shall come to pass; it shall be no more prolonged: for in your days, O rebellious house, will I say the word, and will perform it, says the Lord GOD. ²⁶ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²⁷ Son of man, behold, [they of] the house of Israel say, The vision that he sees is for many days [to come], and he prophesies of the times [that are] far off. ²⁸ Therefore say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; There shall none of my words be prolonged anymore, but the word which I have spoken shall be done, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 13

(25) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, prophesy against the prophets of Israel that prophesy, and say you to them that prophesy out of their own hearts, Hear ye the word of the LORD; ³ Thus says the Lord GOD; Woe to the foolish prophets, that follow their own spirit, and have seen nothing! ⁴ O Israel, your prophets are like the foxes in the deserts. ⁵ Ye have not gone up into the gaps, neither made up the hedge for the house of Israel to stand in the battle in the day of the LORD. ⁶ They have seen vanity and lying divination, saying, The LORD says: and the LORD has not sent them: and they have made [others] to hope that they would confirm the word. ⁷ Have ye not seen a vain vision, and have ye not spoken a lying divination, whereas ye say, The LORD says [it]; albeit I have not spoken? ⁸ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because ye have spoken vanity, and seen lies, therefore, behold, I [am] against you, ⁹ And my hand shall be upon the prophets that see vanity, and that divine lies: they shall not be in the assembly of my people, neither shall they be written in the writing of the house of Israel, neither shall they enter into the land of Israel; and ye shall know that I [am] the Lord GOD.

(26) ¹⁰ Because, even because they have seduced my people, saying, Peace; and [there was] no peace; and one built up a wall, and, look, others daubed it with untempered [mortar]: ¹¹ Say to them which daub [it] with untempered [mortar], that it shall fall: there shall be an overflowing shower; and ye, O great hailstones, shall fall; and a stormy wind shall rend [it]. ¹² Look, when the wall is fallen, shall it not be said to you, Where is the daubing wherewith ye have daubed [it]? ¹³ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; I will even rend [it] with a stormy wind in my fury; and there shall be an overflowing shower in my anger, and great hailstones in [my] fury to consume [it]. ¹⁴ So will I break down the wall that ye have daubed with untempered [mortar], and bring it down to the ground, so that the foundation thereof shall be discovered, and it shall fall, and ye shall be consumed in the midst thereof: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ¹⁵ Thus will I accomplish my wrath upon the wall, and upon them that have daubed it with untempered [mortar], and will say to you, The wall is no [more], neither they that daubed it; ¹⁶ [To wit], the prophets of Israel which prophesy concerning Jerusalem, and which see visions of peace for her, and there is no peace, says the Lord GOD.

(27) ¹⁷ Likewise, you son of man, set your face against the daughters of your people, which prophesy out of their own heart; and prophesy you against them, ¹⁸ And say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Woe to the [women] that sew pillows to all armholes, and make kerchiefs upon the head of every stature to hunt souls! Will ye hunt the souls of my people, and will ye save the souls alive [that come] to you? ¹⁹ And will ye pollute me among my people for handfuls of barley and for pieces of bread, to slay the souls that should not die, and to save the souls alive that should not live, by your lying to my people that hear [your] lies? ²⁰ Wherefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against your pillows, wherewith ye there hunt the souls to make them fly, and I will tear them from your arms, and will let the souls go, [even] the souls that ye hunt to make them fly. ²¹ Your kerchiefs also will I tear, and deliver my people out of your hand, and they shall be no more in your hand to be hunted; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ²² Because with lies ye have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life: ²³ Therefore ye shall see no more vanity, nor divine divinations: for I will deliver my people out of your hand: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Ezekiel Chapter 14

(28) ¹ Then came certain of the elders of Israel to me, and sat before me. ² And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ³ Son of man, these men have set up their idols in their heart, and put the stumbling-block of their iniquity before their face: should I be enquired of at all by them? ⁴ Therefore speak to them, and say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Every man of the house of Israel that sets up his idols in his heart, and puts the stumbling-block of his iniquity before his face, and comes to the prophet; I the LORD will answer him that comes according to the multitude of his idols; ⁵ That I may take the house of Israel in their own heart, because they are all estranged from me through their idols. ⁶ Therefore say to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD; Repent, and turn [yourselves] from your idols; and turn away your faces from all your abominations. ⁷ For every one of the house of Israel, or of the stranger that sojourns in Israel, which separates himself from me, and sets up his idols in his heart, and puts the stumbling-block of his iniquity before his face, and comes to a prophet to enquire of him concerning me; I the LORD will answer him by myself: ⁸ And I will set my face against that man, and will make him a sign and a proverb, and I will cut him off from the midst of my people; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁹ And if the prophet be deceived when he has spoken a thing, I the LORD have deceived that prophet, and I will stretch out my hand upon him, and will destroy him from the midst of my people Israel. ¹⁰ And they shall bear the punishment of their iniquity: the punishment of the prophet shall be even as the punishment of him that seeks [to him]; ¹¹ That the house of Israel may go no more astray from me, neither be polluted anymore with all their transgressions; but that they may be my people, and I may be their God, says the Lord GOD.

(29) ¹² The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ¹³ Son of man, when the land sins against me by trespassing grievously, then will I stretch out my hand upon it, and will break the staff of the bread thereof, and will send famine upon it, and will cut off man and beast from it: ¹⁴ Though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver [but] their own souls by their righteousness, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁵ If I cause noisome beasts to pass through the land, and they spoil it, so that it be desolate, that no man may pass through because of the beasts: ¹⁶ [Though] these three men [were] in it, [as] I live, says the Lord GOD, they shall deliver neither sons nor daughters; they only shall be delivered, but the land shall be desolate. ¹⁷ Or [if] I bring a sword upon that land, and say, Sword, go through the land; so that I cut off man and beast from it: ¹⁸ Though these three men [were] in it, [as] I live, says the Lord GOD, they shall deliver neither sons nor daughters, but they only shall be delivered themselves. ¹⁹ Or [if] I send a pestilence into that land, and pour out my fury upon it in blood, to cut off from it man and beast: ²⁰ Though Noah, Daniel, and Job, [were] in it, [as] I live, says the Lord GOD, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter; they shall [but] deliver their own souls by their righteousness. ²¹ For thus says the Lord GOD; How much more when I send my four sore judgments upon Jerusalem, the sword, and the famine, and the noisome beast, and the pestilence, to cut off from it man and beast? ²² Yet, behold, therein shall be left a remnant that shall be brought forth, [both] sons and daughters: behold, they shall come forth to you, and ye shall see their way and their doings: and ye shall be comforted concerning the evil that I have brought upon Jerusalem, [even] concerning all that I have brought upon it. ²³ And they shall comfort you, when ye see their ways and their doings: and ye shall know that I have not done without cause all that I have done in it, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 15

(31) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, What is the vine tree more than any tree, [or than] a branch which is among the trees of the forest? ³ Shall wood be taken thereof to do any work? or will [men] take a pin of it to hang any vessel thereon? ⁴ Behold, it is cast into the fire for fuel; the fire devours both the ends of it, and the midst of it is burned. Is it meet for [any] work? ⁵ Behold, when it was whole, it was meet for no work: how much less shall it be meet yet for [any] work, when the fire has devoured it, and it is burned? ⁶ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; As the vine tree among the trees of the forest, which I have given to the fire for fuel, so will I give the inhabitants of Jerusalem. ⁷ And I will set my face against them; they shall go out from [one] fire, and [another] fire shall devour them; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I set my face against them. ⁸ And I will make the land desolate, because they have committed a trespass, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 16

(32) ¹ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations, ³ And say, Thus says the Lord GOD to Jerusalem; Your birth and your nativity is of the land of Canaan; your father was an Amorite, and your mother a Hittite. ⁴ And [as for] your nativity, in the day you was born your navel was not cut, neither was you washed in water to supple [you]; you was not salted at all, nor swaddled at all. ⁵ None eye pitied you, to do any of these to you, to have compassion upon you; but you was cast out in the open field, to the loathing of your person, in the day that you was born. ⁶ And when I passed by you, and saw you polluted in your own blood, I said to you [when you was] in your blood, Live; yes, I said to you [when you was] in your blood, Live. ⁷ I have caused you to multiply as the bud of the field, and you have increased and waxen great, and you are come to excellent ornaments: [your] breasts are fashioned, and your hair is grown, whereas you was naked and bare. ⁸ Now when I passed by you, and looked upon you, behold, your time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over you, and covered your nakedness: yes, I swore to you, and entered into a covenant with you, says the Lord GOD, and you became my. ⁹ Then washed I you with water; yes, I thoroughly washed away your blood from you, and I anointed you with oil. ¹⁰ I clothed you also with broidered work, and shod you with badgers' skin, and I girded you about with fine linen, and I covered you with silk. ¹¹ I decked you also with ornaments, and I put bracelets upon your hands, and a chain on your neck. ¹² And I put a jewel on your forehead, and earrings in your ears, and a beautiful crown upon your head. ¹³ Thus was you decked with gold and silver; and your raiment [was of] fine linen, and silk, and broidered work; you did eat fine flour, and honey, and oil: and you was exceeding beautiful, and you did prosper into a kingdom. ¹⁴ And your renown went forth among the heathen for your beauty: for it was perfect through my comeliness, which I had put upon you, says the Lord GOD.

(33) ¹⁵ But you did trust in your own beauty, and played the harlot because of your renown, and poured out your fornications on everyone that passed by; his it was. ¹⁶ And of your garments you did take, and decked your high places with diverse colors, and played the harlot thereupon: [the like things] shall not come, neither shall it be [so]. ¹⁷ You have also taken your fair jewels of my gold and of my silver, which I had given you, and made to thyself images of men, and did commit whoredom with them, ¹⁸ And took your broidered garments, and covered them: and you have set my oil and my incense before them. ¹⁹ My food also which I gave you, fine flour, and oil, and honey, [wherewith] I fed you, you have even set it before them for a sweet fragrance: and [thus] it was, says the Lord GOD. ²⁰ Moreover you have taken your sons and your daughters, whom you have borne to me, and these have you sacrificed to them to be devoured. [Is this] of your whoredoms a small matter, ²¹ That you have slain my children, and delivered them to cause them to pass through [the fire] for them? ²² And in all your abominations and your whoredoms you have not remembered the days of your youth, when you was naked and bare, [and] was polluted in your blood. ²³ And it came to pass after all your wickedness, (woe, woe to you! says the Lord GOD;) ²⁴ [That] you have also built to you an eminent place, and has made you a high place in every street. ²⁵ You have built your high place at every head of the way, and has made your beauty to be abhorred, and has opened your feet to everyone that passed by, and multiplied your whoredoms. ²⁶ You have also committed fornication with the Egyptians your neighbors, great of flesh; and has increased your whoredoms, to provoke me to anger. ²⁷ Behold, therefore I have stretched out my hand over you, and have diminished your ordinary [food], and delivered you to the will of them that hate you, the daughters of the Philistines, which are ashamed of your lewd way. ²⁸ You have played the whore also with the Assyrians, because you was unsatiable; yes, you have played the harlot with them, and yet could not be satisfied. ²⁹ You have moreover multiplied your fornication in the land of Canaan to Chaldea; and yet you was not satisfied herewith. ³⁰ How weak is your heart, says the Lord GOD, seeing you do all these [things], the work of an imperious whorish woman; ³¹ In that you build your eminent place in the head of every way, and make your high place in every street; and has not been as a harlot, in that you scorn hire; ³² [But as] a wife that commits adultery, [which] takes strangers instead of her husband! ³³ They give gifts to all whores: but you give your gifts to all your lovers, and hire them, that they may come to you on every side for your whoredom. ³⁴ And the contrary is in you from [other] women in your whoredoms, whereas none follows you to commit whoredoms: and in that you give a reward, and no reward is given to you, therefore you are contrary.

Ezekiel Chapter 16

(34) ³⁵ Wherefore, O harlot, hear the word of the LORD: ³⁶ Thus says the Lord GOD; Because your filthiness was poured out, and your nakedness discovered through your whoredoms with your lovers, and with all the idols of your abominations, and by the blood of your children, which you did give to them; ³⁷ Behold, therefore I will gather all your lovers, with whom you have taken pleasure, and all them that you have loved, with all them that you have hated; I will even gather them round about against you, and will discover your nakedness to them, that they may see all your nakedness. ³⁸ And I will judge you, as women that break wedlock and shed blood are judged; and I will give you blood in fury and jealousy. ³⁹ And I will also give you into their hand, and they shall throw down your eminent place, and shall break down your high places: they shall strip you also of your clothes, and shall take your fair jewels, and leave you naked and bare. ⁴⁰ They shall also bring up a company against you, and they shall stone you with stones, and thrust you through with their swords. ⁴¹ And they shall burn your houses with fire, and execute judgments upon you in the sight of many women: and I will cause you to cease from playing the harlot, and you also shall give no hire anymore. ⁴² So will I make my fury toward you to rest, and my jealousy shall depart from you, and I will be quiet, and will be no more angry. ⁴³ Because you have not remembered the days of your youth, but has fretted me in all these [things]; behold, therefore I also will recompense your way upon [your] head, says the Lord GOD: and you shall not commit this lewdness above all your abominations.

(35) ⁴⁴ Behold, everyone that uses proverbs shall use [this] proverb against you, saying, As is the mother, [so is] her daughter. ⁴⁵ You are your mother's daughter, that loathes her husband and her children; and you are the sister of your sisters, which loathed their husbands and their children: your mother was a Hittite, and your father an Amorite. ⁴⁶ And your elder sister is Samaria, she and her daughters that dwell at your left hand: and your younger sister, that dwells at your right hand, is Sodom and her daughters. ⁴⁷ Yet have you not walked after their ways, nor done after their abominations: but, as [if that were] a very little [thing], you was corrupted more than they in all your ways. ⁴⁸ [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, Sodom your sister has not done, she nor her daughters, as you have done, you and your daughters. ⁴⁹ Behold, this was the iniquity of your sister Sodom, pride, fullness of bread, and abundance of idleness was in her and in her daughters, neither did she strengthen the hand of the poor and needy. ⁵⁰ And they were haughty, and committed abomination before me: therefore I took them away as I saw [good]. ⁵¹ Neither has Samaria committed half of your sins; but you have multiplied your abominations more than they, and has justified your sisters in all your abominations which you have done. ⁵² You also, which has judged your sisters, bear your own shame for your sins that you have committed more abominable than they: they are more righteous than you: yes, be you confounded also, and bear your shame, in that you have justified your sisters. ⁵³ When I shall bring again their captivity, the captivity of Sodom and her daughters, and the captivity of Samaria and her daughters, then [will I bring again] the captivity of your captives in the midst of them: ⁵⁴ That you may bear your own shame, and may be confounded in all that you have done, in that you are a comfort to them. ⁵⁵ When your sisters, Sodom and her daughters, shall return to their former estate, and Samaria and her daughters shall return to their former estate, then you and your daughters shall return to your former estate. ⁵⁶ For your sister Sodom was not mentioned by your mouth in the day of your pride, ⁵⁷ Before your wickedness was discovered, as at the time of [your] reproach of the daughters of Syria, and all [that are] round about her, the daughters of the Philistines, which despise you round about. ⁵⁸ You have borne your lewdness and your abominations, says the LORD. ⁵⁹ For thus says the Lord GOD; I will even deal with you as you have done, which has despised the oath in breaking the covenant.

(36) ⁶⁰ Nevertheless I will remember my covenant with you in the days of your youth, and I will establish to you an everlasting covenant. ⁶¹ Then you shall remember your ways, and be ashamed, when you shall receive your sisters, your elder and your younger: and I will give them to you for daughters, but not by your covenant. ⁶² And I will establish my covenant with you; and you shall know that I [am] the LORD: ⁶³ That you may remember, and be confounded, and never open your mouth anymore because of your shame, when I am pacified toward you for all that you have done, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 17

The Riddle of the 2 Eagles and the Vine

(37) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, put forth a riddle, and speak a parable to the house of Israel; ³ And say, Thus says the Lord GOD; A great eagle with great wings, long-winged, full of feathers, which had diverse colors, came to Lebanon, and took the highest branch of the cedar: ⁴ He cropped off the top of his young twigs, and carried it into a land of traffic; he set it in a city of merchants. ⁵ He took also of the seed of the land, and planted it in a fruitful field; he placed [it] by great waters, [and] set it [as] a willow tree. ⁶ And it grew, and became a spreading vine of low stature, whose branches turned toward him, and the roots thereof were under him: so it became a vine, and brought forth branches, and shot forth sprigs. ⁷ There was also another great eagle with great wings and many feathers: and, behold, this vine did bend her roots toward him, and shot forth her branches toward him, that he might water it by the furrows of her plantation. ⁸ It was planted in a good soil by great waters, that it might bring forth branches, and that it might bear fruit, that it might be a goodly vine. ⁹ Say you, Thus says the Lord GOD; Shall it prosper? shall he not pull up the roots thereof, and cut off the fruit thereof, that it wither? it shall wither in all the leaves of her spring, even without great power or many people to pluck it up by the roots thereof. ¹⁰ Yes, behold, [being] planted, shall it prosper? shall it not utterly wither, when the east wind touches it? it shall wither in the furrows where it grew.

(38) ¹¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹² Say now to the rebellious house, Don't ye know what these [things mean]? tell them, Behold, the king of Babylon is come to Jerusalem, and has taken the king thereof, and the princes thereof, and led them with him to Babylon; ¹³ And has taken of the king's seed, and made a covenant with him, and has taken an oath of him: he has also taken the mighty of the land: ¹⁴ That the kingdom might be base, that it might not lift itself up, [but] that by keeping of his covenant it might stand. ¹⁵ But he rebelled against him in sending his ambassadors into Egypt, that they might give him horses and much people. Shall he prosper? shall he escape that does such [things]? or shall he break the covenant, and be delivered? ¹⁶ [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, surely in the place [where] the king [dwells] that made him king, whose oath he despised, and whose covenant he brake, [even] with him in the midst of Babylon he shall die. ¹⁷ Neither shall Pharaoh with [his] mighty army and great company make for him in the war, by casting up mounts, and building forts, to cut off many persons: ¹⁸ Seeing he despised the oath by breaking the covenant, when, look, he had given his hand, and has done all these [things], he shall not escape. ¹⁹ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; [As] I live, surely my oath that he has despised, and my covenant that he has broken, even it will I recompense upon his own head. ²⁰ And I will spread my net upon him, and he shall be taken in my snare, and I will bring him to Babylon, and will plead with him there for his trespass that he has trespassed against me. ²¹ And all his fugitives with all his bands shall fall by the sword, and they that remain shall be scattered toward all winds: and ye shall know that I the LORD have spoken [it].

(39) ²² Thus says the Lord GOD; I will also take of the highest branch of the high cedar, and will set [it]; I will crop off from the top of his young twigs a tender one, and will plant [it] upon a high mountain and eminent: ²³ In the mountain of the height of Israel will I plant it: and it shall bring forth boughs, and bear fruit, and be a goodly cedar: and under it shall dwell all fowl of every wing; in the shadow of the branches thereof they will dwell. ²⁴ And all the trees of the field shall know that I the LORD have brought down the high tree, have exalted the low tree, have dried up the green tree, and have made the dry tree to flourish: I the LORD have spoken and have done [it].

Ezekiel Chapter 18

What we do/say works Death or Life in us

(40) ¹ The word of the LORD came to me again, saying, ² What mean ye, that ye use this proverb concerning the land of Israel, saying, The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge? ³ [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, ye shall not have [occasion] anymore to use this proverb in Israel. ⁴ Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sins, it shall die. ⁵ But if a man be just, and do that which is lawful and right, ⁶ [And] has not eaten upon the mountains, neither has lifted up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, neither has defiled his neighbor's wife, neither has come near to a menstruous woman, ⁷ And has not oppressed any, [but] has restored to the debtor his pledge, has spoiled none by violence, has given his bread to the hungry, and has covered the naked with a garment; ⁸ He [that] has not given forth upon usury, neither has taken any increase, [that] has withdrawn his hand from iniquity, has executed true judgment between man and man, ⁹ Has walked in my statutes, and has kept my judgments, to deal truly; he is just, he shall surely live, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁰ If he beget a son [that is] a robber, a shedder of blood, and [that] does the like to [any] one of these [things], ¹¹ And that does not any of those [duties], but even has eaten upon the mountains, and defiled his neighbor's wife, ¹² Has oppressed the poor and needy, has spoiled by violence, has not restored the pledge, and has lifted up his eyes to the idols, has committed abomination, ¹³ Has given forth upon usury, and has taken increase: shall he then live? he shall not live: he has done all these abominations; he shall surely die; his blood shall be upon him.

Father/Son are Independently Accountable before God

(41) ¹⁴ Now, look, [if] he beget a son, that sees all his father's sins which he has done, and considers, and does not such like, ¹⁵ [That] has not eaten upon the mountains, neither has lifted up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, has not defiled his neighbor's wife, ¹⁶ Neither has oppressed any, has not withheld the pledge, neither has spoiled by violence, [but] has given his bread to the hungry, and has covered the naked with a garment, ¹⁷ [That] has taken off his hand from the poor, [that] has not received usury nor increase, has executed my judgments, has walked in my statutes; he shall not die for the iniquity of his father, he shall surely live. ¹⁸ [As for] his father, because he cruelly oppressed, spoiled his brother by violence, and did [that] which is not good among his people, look, even he shall die in his iniquity. ¹⁹ Yet say ye, Why? does not the son bear the iniquity of the father? When the son has done that which is lawful and right, [and] has kept all my statutes, and has done them, he shall surely live. ²⁰ The soul that sins, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him. ²¹ But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he has committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. ²² All his transgressions that he has committed, they shall not be mentioned to him: in his righteousness that he has done he shall live. ²³ Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? says the Lord GOD: [and] not that he should return from his ways, and live? ²⁴ But when the righteous turns away from his righteousness, and commits iniquity, [and] does according to all the abominations that the wicked [man] does, shall he live? All his righteousness that he has done shall not be mentioned: in his trespass that he has trespassed, and in his sin that he has sinned, in them shall he die.

We can Turn to Righteousness or Wickedness

(42) ²⁵ Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. Hear now, O house of Israel; Is not my way equal? are not your ways unequal? ²⁶ When a righteous [man] turns away from his righteousness, and commits iniquity, and dies in them; for his iniquity that he has done shall he die. ²⁷ Again, when the wicked [man] turns away from his wickedness that he has committed, and does that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. ²⁸ Because he considers, and turns away from all his transgressions that he has committed, he shall surely live, he shall not die. ²⁹ Yet says the house of Israel, The way of the Lord is not equal. O house of Israel, are not my ways equal? are not your ways unequal? ³⁰ Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, everyone according to his ways, says the Lord GOD. Repent, and turn [yourselves] from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. ³¹ Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel? ³² For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dies, says the Lord GOD: wherefore turn [yourselves], and live ye.

Ezekiel Chapter 19

Israel's Princes Compared to Captive Lions

(43) ¹ Moreover take you up a lamentation for the princes of Israel, ² And say, What is your mother? A lioness: she lay down among lions, she nourished her whelps among young lions. ³ And she brought up one of her whelps: it became a young lion, and it learned to catch the prey; it devoured men. ⁴ The nations also heard of him; he was taken in their pit, and they brought him with chains to the land of Egypt. ⁵ Now when she saw that she had waited, [and] her hope was lost, then she took another of her whelps, [and] made him a young lion. ⁶ And he went up and down among the lions, he became a young lion, and learned to catch the prey, [and] devoured men. ⁷ And he knew their desolate palaces, and he laid waste their cities; and the land was desolate, and the fullness thereof, by the noise of his roaring. ⁸ Then the nations set against him on every side from the provinces, and spread their net over him: he was taken in their pit. ⁹ And they put him in ward in chains, and brought him to the king of Babylon: they brought him into holds, that his voice should no more be heard upon the mountains of Israel.

Israel's Rulers Compared to Strong Plants – Gone Dead

(44) ¹⁰ Your mother is like a vine in your blood, planted by the waters: she was fruitful and full of branches by reason of many waters. ¹¹ And she had strong rods for the scepters of them that bare rule, and her stature was exalted among the thick branches, and she appeared in her height with the multitude of her branches. ¹² But she was plucked up in fury, she was cast down to the ground, and the east wind dried up her fruit: her strong rods were broken and withered; the fire consumed them. ¹³ And now she is planted in the wilderness, in a dry and thirsty ground. ¹⁴ And fire is gone out of a rod of her branches, [which] has devoured her fruit, so that she has no strong rod [to be] a scepter to rule. This is a lamentation, and shall be for a lamentation.

Ezekiel Chapter 20

Israel's Elders Seek the Lord Unworthily

(45) ¹ And it came to pass in the seventh year, in the fifth [month], the tenth [day] of the month, [that] certain of the elders of Israel came to enquire of the LORD, and sat before me. ² Then came the word of the LORD unto me, saying, Son of man, speak to the elders of Israel, and say to them, ³ Thus says the Lord GOD; Are ye come to enquire of me? [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, I will not be enquired of by you. ⁴ Will you judge them, son of man, will you judge them? cause them to know the abominations of their fathers: ⁵ And say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; In the day when I chose Israel, and lifted up my hand to the seed of the house of Jacob, and made myself known to them in the land of Egypt, when I lifted up my hand to them, saying, I [am] the LORD your God; ⁶ In the day [that] I lifted up my hand to them, to bring them forth of the land of Egypt into a land that I had espied for them, flowing with milk and honey, which is the glory of all lands: ⁷ Then said I to them, Cast ye away every man the abominations of his eyes, and defile not yourselves with the idols of Egypt: I [am] the LORD your God. ⁸ But they rebelled against me, and would not hearken to me: they did not every man cast away the abominations of their eyes, neither did they forsake the idols of Egypt: then I said, I will pour out my fury upon them, to accomplish my anger against them in the midst of the land of Egypt. ⁹ But I worked for my name's sake, that it should not be polluted before the heathen, among whom they [were], in whose sight I made myself known to them, in bringing them forth out of the land of Egypt.

The House of Israel's Rebellion in the Wilderness

(46) ¹⁰ Wherefore I caused them to go forth out of the land of Egypt, and brought them into the wilderness. ¹¹ And I gave them my statutes, and showed them my judgments, which [if] a man do, he shall even live in them. ¹² Moreover also I gave them my sabbaths, to be a sign between me and them, that they might know that I [am] the LORD that sanctify them. ¹³ But the house of Israel rebelled against me in the wilderness: they walked not in my statutes, and they despised my judgments, which [if] a man do, he shall even live in them; and my sabbaths they greatly polluted: then I said, I would pour out my fury upon them in the wilderness, to consume them. ¹⁴ But I worked for my name's sake, that it should not be polluted before the heathen, in whose sight I brought them out. ¹⁵ Yet also I lifted up my hand to them in the wilderness, that I would not bring them into the land which I had given them, flowing with milk and honey, which is the glory of all lands; ¹⁶ Because they despised my judgments, and walked not in my statutes, but polluted my sabbaths: for their heart went after their idols. ¹⁷ Nevertheless my eye spared them from destroying them, neither did I make an end of them in the wilderness. ¹⁸ But I said to their children in the wilderness, Walk ye not in the statutes of your fathers, neither observe

Ezekiel Chapter 20

their judgments, nor defile yourselves with their idols: ¹⁹ I [am] the LORD your God; walk in my statutes, and keep my judgments, and do them; ²⁰ And hallow my sabbaths; and they shall be a sign between me and you, that ye may know that I [am] the LORD your God. ²¹ Notwithstanding the children rebelled against me: they walked not in my statutes, neither kept my judgments to do them, which [if] a man do, he shall even live in them; they polluted my sabbaths: then I said, I would pour out my fury upon them, to accomplish my anger against them in the wilderness. ²² Nevertheless I withdrew my hand, and worked for my name's sake, that it should not be polluted in the sight of the heathen, in whose sight I brought them forth. ²³ I lifted up my hand to them also in the wilderness, that I would scatter them among the heathen, and disperse them through the countries; ²⁴ Because they had not executed my judgments, but had despised my statutes, and had polluted my sabbaths, and their eyes were after their fathers' idols. ²⁵ Wherefore I gave them also statutes [that were] not good, and judgments whereby they should not live; ²⁶ And I polluted them in their own gifts, in that they caused to pass through [the fire] all that opens the womb, that I might make them desolate, to the end that they might know that I [am] the LORD.

(47) ²⁷ Therefore, son of man, speak to the house of Israel, and say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Yet in this your fathers have blasphemed me, in that they have committed a trespass against me.

²⁸ [For] when I had brought them into the land, [for] the which I lifted up my hand to give it to them, then they saw every high hill, and all the thick trees, and they offered there their sacrifices, and there they presented the provocation of their offering: there also they made their sweet fragrance, and poured out there their drink offerings. ²⁹ Then I said to them, What is the high place whereunto ye go? And the name thereof is called Bamah to this day. ³⁰ Wherefore say to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD; Are ye polluted after the manner of your fathers? and commit ye whoredom after their abominations?

³¹ For when ye offer your gifts, when ye make your sons to pass through the fire, ye pollute yourselves with all your idols, even to this day: and shall I be enquired of by you, O house of Israel? [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, I will not be enquired of by you. ³² And that which comes into your mind shall not be at all, that ye say, We will be as the heathen, as the families of the countries, to serve wood and stone.

(48) ³³ [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, surely with a mighty hand, and with a stretched out arm, and with fury poured out, will I rule over you: ³⁴ And I will bring you out from the people, and will gather you out of the countries wherein ye are scattered, with a mighty hand, and with a stretched out arm, and with fury poured out. ³⁵ And I will bring you into the wilderness of the people, and there will I plead with you face to face. ³⁶ Like as I pleaded with your fathers in the wilderness of the land of Egypt, so will I plead with you, says the Lord GOD. ³⁷ And I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant: ³⁸ And I will purge out from among you the rebels, and them that transgress against me: I will bring them forth out of the country where they sojourn, and they shall not enter into the land of Israel: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ³⁹ As for you, O house of Israel, thus says the Lord GOD; Go ye, serve ye everyone his idols, and hereafter [also], if ye will not hearken to me: but pollute ye my holy name no more with your gifts, and with your idols. ⁴⁰ For in my holy mountain, in the mountain of the height of Israel, says the Lord GOD, there shall all the house of Israel, all of them in the land, serve me: there will I accept them, and there will I require your offerings, and the first fruits of your oblations, with all your holy things. ⁴¹ I will accept you with your sweet fragrance, when I bring you out from the people, and gather you out of the countries wherein ye have been scattered; and I will be sanctified in you before the heathen. ⁴² And ye shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I shall bring you into the land of Israel, into the country [for] the which I lifted up my hand to give it to your fathers. ⁴³ And there shall ye remember your ways, and all your doings, wherein ye have been defiled; and ye shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for all your evils that ye have committed. ⁴⁴ And ye shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I have worked with you for my name's sake, not according to your wicked ways, nor according to your corrupt doings, O ye house of Israel, says the Lord GOD.

(49) ⁴⁵ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁴⁶ Son of man, set your face toward the south, and drop [your word] toward the south, and prophesy against the forest of the south field; ⁴⁷ And say to the forest of the south, Hear the word of the LORD; Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will kindle a fire in you, and it shall devour every green tree in you, and every dry tree: the flaming flame shall not be quenched, and all faces from the south to the north shall be burned therein. ⁴⁸ And all flesh shall see that I the LORD have kindled it: it shall not be quenched. ⁴⁹ Then said I, Ah Lord GOD! they say of me, Does he not speak parables?

(50) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, set your face toward Jerusalem, and drop [your word] toward the holy places, and prophesy against the land of Israel, ³ And say to the land of Israel, Thus says the LORD; Behold, I [am] against you, and will draw forth my sword out of his sheath, and will cut off from you the righteous and the wicked. ⁴ Seeing then that I will cut off from you the righteous and the wicked, therefore shall my sword go forth out of his sheath against all flesh from the south to the north: ⁵ That all flesh may know that I the LORD have drawn forth my sword out of his sheath: it shall not return anymore. ⁶ Sigh therefore, you son of man, with the breaking of [your] loins; and with bitterness sigh before their eyes. ⁷ And it shall be, when they say to you, Wherefore sigh you? that you shall answer, For the tidings; because it comes: and every heart shall melt, and all hands shall be feeble, and every spirit shall faint, and all knees shall be weak [as] water: behold, it comes, and shall be brought to pass, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel to Cry and Howl, and Hit his Thigh and Hit his Hands Together

(51) ⁸ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁹ Son of man, prophesy, and say, Thus says the LORD; Say, A sword, a sword is sharpened, and also furbished: ¹⁰ It is sharpened to make a sore slaughter; it is furbished that it may glitter: should we then make mirth? it contemns the rod of my son, [as] every tree. ¹¹ And he has given it to be furbished, that it may be handled: this sword is sharpened, and it is furbished, to give it into the hand of the slayer. ¹² Cry and howl, son of man: for it shall be upon my people, it [shall be] upon all the princes of Israel: terrors by reason of the sword shall be upon my people: smite therefore upon [your] thigh. ¹³ Because [it is] a trial, and what if [the sword] contemn even the rod? it shall be no [more], says the Lord GOD. ¹⁴ You therefore, son of man, prophesy, and smite [your] hands together, and let the sword be doubled the third time, the sword of the slain: it is the sword of the great [men that are] slain, which enters into their privy chambers. ¹⁵ I have set the point of the sword against all their gates, that [their] heart may faint, and [their] ruins be multiplied: ah! [it is] made bright, [it is] wrapped up for the slaughter. ¹⁶ Go you one way or other, [either] on the right hand, [or] on the left, whithersoever your face is set. ¹⁷ I will also smite my hands together, and I will cause my fury to rest: I the LORD have said [it].

Ezekiel Told of Sigh with Bitterness, and Reply

(52) ¹⁸ The word of the LORD came to me again, saying, ¹⁹ Also, you son of man, appoint you two ways, that the sword of the king of Babylon may come: both twain shall come forth out of one land: and choose you a place, choose [it] at the head of the way to the city. ²⁰ Appoint a way, that the sword may come to Rabbath of the Ammonites, and to Judah in Jerusalem the defended. ²¹ For the king of Babylon stood at the parting of the way, at the head of the two ways, to use divination: he made [his] arrows bright, he consulted with images, he looked in the liver. ²² At his right hand was the divination for Jerusalem, to appoint captains, to open the mouth in the slaughter, to lift up the voice with shouting, to appoint [battering] rams against the gates, to cast a mount, [and] to build a fort. ²³ And it shall be to them as a false divination in their sight, to them that have sworn oaths: but he will call to remembrance the iniquity, that they may be taken. ²⁴ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because ye have made your iniquity to be remembered, in that your transgressions are discovered, so that in all your doings your sins do appear; because, [I say], that ye are come to remembrance, ye shall be taken with the hand.

(53) ²⁵ And you, profane wicked prince of Israel, whose day is come, when iniquity [shall have] an end, ²⁶ Thus says the Lord GOD; Remove the diadem, and take off the crown: this [shall] not [be] the same: exalt [him that is] low, and abase [him that is] high. ²⁷ I will overturn, overturn, overturn, it: and it shall be no [more], until he come whose right it is; and I will give it [him]. ²⁸ And you, son of man, prophesy and say, Thus says the Lord GOD concerning the Ammonites, and concerning their reproach; even say you, The sword, the sword is drawn: for the slaughter [it is] furbished, to consume because of the glittering: ²⁹ While they see vanity to you, while they divine a lie to you, to bring you upon the necks of [them that are] slain, of the wicked, whose day is come, when their iniquity [shall have] an end. ³⁰ Shall I cause [it] to return into his sheath? I will judge you in the place where you was created, in the land of your nativity. ³¹ I will pour out my indignation upon you, I will blow against you in the fire of my wrath, and deliver you into the hand of brutish men, [and] skilful to destroy. ³² You shall be for fuel to the fire; your blood shall be in the midst of the land; you shall be no [more] remembered: for I the LORD have spoken [it].

Ezekiel Chapter 22

The Lord's Justice on His Wicked People

(54) ¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Now, you son of man, will you judge, will you judge the bloody city? yes, you shall show her all her abominations. ³ Then say you, Thus says the Lord GOD, The city sheds blood in the midst of it, that her time may come, and makes idols against herself to defile herself. ⁴ You are become guilty in your blood that you have shed; and has defiled thyself in your idols which you have made; and you have caused your days to draw near, and are come [even] to your years: therefore I have made you a reproach to the heathen, and a mocking to all countries. ⁵ [Those that be] near, and [those that be] far from you, shall mock you, [which are] infamous [and] much vexed. ⁶ Behold, the princes of Israel, everyone were in you to their power to shed blood. ⁷ In you have they set light by father and mother: in the midst of you have they dealt by oppression with the stranger: in you have they vexed the fatherless and the widow. ⁸ You have despised my holy things, and has profaned my sabbaths. ⁹ In you are men that carry tales to shed blood: and in you they eat upon the mountains: in the midst of you they commit lewdness. ¹⁰ In you have they discovered their fathers' nakedness: in you have they humbled her that was set apart for pollution. ¹¹ And one has committed abomination with his neighbor's wife; and another has lewdly defiled his daughter in law; and another in you has humbled his sister, his father's daughter. ¹² In you have they taken gifts to shed blood; you have taken usury and increase, and you have greedily gained of your neighbors by extortion, and has forgotten me, says the Lord GOD. ¹³ Behold, therefore I have smitten my hand at your dishonest gain which you have made, and at your blood which has been in the midst of you. ¹⁴ Can your heart endure, or can your hands be strong, in the days that I shall deal with you? I the LORD have spoken [it], and will do [it]. ¹⁵ And I will scatter you among the heathen, and disperse you in the countries, and will consume your filthiness out of you. ¹⁶ And you shall take your inheritance in thyself in the sight of the heathen, and you shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Brass, Tin, Iron and Lead for the Furnace

(55) ¹⁷ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁸ Son of man, the house of Israel is to me become dross: all they are brass, and tin, and iron, and lead, in the midst of the furnace; they are [even] the dross of silver. ¹⁹ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because ye are all become dross, behold, therefore I will gather you into the midst of Jerusalem. ²⁰ [As] they gather silver, and brass, and iron, and lead, and tin, into the midst of the furnace, to blow the fire upon it, to melt [it]; so will I gather [you] in my anger and in my fury, and I will leave [you there], and melt you. ²¹ Yes, I will gather you, and blow upon you in the fire of my wrath, and ye shall be melted in the midst thereof. ²² As silver is melted in the midst of the furnace, so shall ye be melted in the midst thereof; and ye shall know that I the LORD have poured out my fury upon you.

They put No Difference Between the Holy and Profane

(56) ²³ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²⁴ Son of man, say to her, You are the land that is not cleansed, nor rained upon in the day of indignation. ²⁵ [There is] a conspiracy of her prophets in the midst thereof, like a roaring lion ravening the prey; they have devoured souls; they have taken the treasure and precious things; they have made her many widows in the midst thereof. ²⁶ Her priests have violated my law, and have profaned my holy things: they have put no difference between the holy and profane, neither have they showed [difference] between the unclean and the clean, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them. ²⁷ Her princes in the midst thereof are like wolves ravening the prey, to shed blood, [and] to destroy souls, to get dishonest gain. ²⁸ And her prophets have daubed them with untempered [mortar], seeing vanity, and divining lies to them, saying, Thus says the Lord GOD, when the LORD has not spoken. ²⁹ The people of the land have used oppression, and exercised robbery, and have vexed the poor and needy: yes, they have oppressed the stranger wrongfully. ³⁰ And ^a I sought for a man among them, that should make up the hedge, and stand in the gap before me for the land, that I should not destroy it: but I found none. ³¹ Therefore I have poured out my indignation upon them; I have consumed them with the fire of my wrath: their own way I have recompensed upon their heads, says the Lord GOD.

^a the man the Lord God seeked is the Lord Jesus Christ. Job 9:33 Neither is there any daysman betwixt us, *that* might lay his hand upon us both.

Ezekiel Chapter 23

Two Bad Women – Aholah and Aholiah

(57) ¹ The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ² Son of man, there were two women, the daughters of one mother: ³ And they committed whoredoms in Egypt; they committed whoredoms in their youth: there were their breasts pressed, and there they bruised the teats of their virginity. ⁴ And the names of them [were] Aholah the elder, and Aholibah her sister: and they were mine, and they bare sons and daughters. Thus [were] their names; Samaria is Aholah, and Jerusalem Aholibah. ⁵ And Aholah played the harlot when she was mine; and she doted on her lovers, on the Assyrians [her] neighbors, ⁶ [Which were] clothed with blue, captains and rulers, all of them desirable young men, horsemen riding upon horses. ⁷ Thus she committed her whoredoms with them, with all them [that were] the chosen men of Assyria, and with all on whom she doted: with all their idols she defiled herself. ⁸ Neither left she her whoredoms [brought] from Egypt: for in her youth they lay with her, and they bruised the breasts of her virginity, and poured their whoredom upon her. ⁹ Wherefore I have delivered her into the hand of her lovers, into the hand of the Assyrians, upon whom she doted. ¹⁰ These discovered her nakedness: they took her sons and her daughters, and slew her with the sword: and she became famous among women; for they had executed judgment upon her. ¹¹ And when her sister Aholibah saw [this], she was more corrupt in her inordinate love than she, and in her whoredoms more than her sister in [her] whoredoms. ¹² She doted upon the Assyrians [her] neighbors, captains and rulers clothed most gorgeously, horsemen riding upon horses, all of them desirable young men. ¹³ Then I saw that she was defiled, [that] they [took] both one way, ¹⁴ And [that] she increased her whoredoms: for when she saw men portrayed upon the wall, the images of the Chaldeans portrayed with vermilion, ¹⁵ Girded with girdles upon their loins, exceeding in dyed attire upon their heads, all of them princes to look to, after the manner of the Babylonians of Chaldea, the land of their nativity: ¹⁶ And as soon as she saw them with her eyes, she doted upon them, and sent messengers to them into Chaldea. ¹⁷ And the Babylonians came to her into the bed of love, and they defiled her with their whoredom, and she was polluted with them, and her mind was alienated from them. ¹⁸ So she discovered her whoredoms, and discovered her nakedness: then my mind was alienated from her, like as my mind was alienated from her sister. ¹⁹ Yet she multiplied her whoredoms, in calling to remembrance the days of her youth, wherein she had played the harlot in the land of Egypt. ²⁰ For she doted upon their paramours, whose flesh [is as] the flesh of donkeys, and whose issue [is like] the issue of horses. ²¹ Thus you called to remembrance the lewdness of your youth, in bruising your teats by the Egyptians for the paps of your youth.

(58) ²² Therefore, O Aholibah, thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will raise up your lovers against you, from whom your mind is alienated, and I will bring them against you on every side; ²³ The Babylonians, and all the Chaldeans, Pekod, and Shoa, and Koa, [and] all the Assyrians with them: all of them desirable young men, captains and rulers, great lords and renowned, all of them riding upon horses. ²⁴ And they shall come against you with chariots, wagons, and wheels, and with an assembly of people, [which] shall set against you buckler and shield and helmet round about: and I will set judgment before them, and they shall judge you according to their judgments. ²⁵ And I will set my jealousy against you, and they shall deal furiously with you: they shall take away your nose and your ears; and your remnant shall fall by the sword: they shall take your sons and your daughters; and your residue shall be devoured by the fire. ²⁶ They shall also strip you out of your clothes, and take away your fair jewels. ²⁷ Thus will I make your lewdness to cease from you, and your whoredom [brought] from the land of Egypt: so that you shall not lift up your eyes to them, nor remember Egypt anymore. ²⁸ For thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will deliver you into the hand [of them] whom you hate, into the hand [of them] from whom your mind is alienated: ²⁹ And they shall deal with you hatefully, and shall take away all your labor, and shall leave you naked and bare: and the nakedness of your whoredoms shall be discovered, both your lewdness and your whoredoms. ³⁰ I will do these [things] to you, because you have gone a whoring after the heathen, [and] because you are polluted with their idols. ³¹ You have walked in the way of your sister; therefore will I give her cup into your hand. ³² Thus says the Lord GOD; You shall drink of your sister's cup deep and large: you shall be laughed to scorn and had in derision; it contains much. ³³ You shall be filled with drunkenness and sorrow, with the cup of astonishment and desolation, with the cup of your sister Samaria. ³⁴ You shall even drink it and suck [it] out, and you shall break the sherds thereof, and pluck off your own breasts: for I have spoken [it], says the Lord GOD. ³⁵ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because you have forgotten me, and cast me behind your back, therefore bear you also your lewdness and your whoredoms.

Ezekiel Chapter 23

(59) ³⁶ The LORD said moreover to me; Son of man, will you judge Aholah and Aholibah? yes, declare to them their abominations; ³⁷ That they have committed adultery, and blood is in their hands, and with their idols have they committed adultery, and have also caused their sons, whom they bare to me, to pass for them through [the fire], to devour them. ³⁸ Moreover this they have done to me: they have defiled my sanctuary in the same day, and have profaned my sabbaths. ³⁹ For when they had slain their children to their idols, then they came the same day into my sanctuary to profane it; and, look, thus have they done in the midst of my house. ⁴⁰ And furthermore, that ye have sent for men to come from far, to whom a messenger was sent; and, look, they came: for whom you did wash thyself, painted your eyes, and decked thyself with ornaments, ⁴¹ And sat upon a stately bed, and a table prepared before it, whereupon you have set my incense and my oil. ⁴² And a voice of a multitude being at ease was with her: and with the men of the common sort [were] brought Sabean from the wilderness, which put bracelets upon their hands, and beautiful crowns upon their heads. ⁴³ Then said I to [her that was] old in adulteries, Will they now commit whoredoms with her, and she [with them]? ⁴⁴ Yet they went in to her, as they go in to a woman that plays the harlot: so went they in to Aholah and to Aholibah, the lewd women. ⁴⁵ And the righteous men, they shall judge them after the manner of adulteresses, and after the manner of women that shed blood; because they are adulteresses, and blood is in their hands. ⁴⁶ For thus says the Lord GOD; I will bring up a company upon them, and will give them to be removed and spoiled. ⁴⁷ And the company shall stone them with stones, and dispatch them with their swords; they shall slay their sons and their daughters, and burn up their houses with fire. ⁴⁸ Thus will I cause lewdness to cease out of the land, that all women may be taught not to do after your lewdness. ⁴⁹ And they shall recompense your lewdness upon you, and ye shall bear the sins of your idols: and ye shall know that I [am] the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 24

Parable of Scum Boiling in a Pot

(60) ¹ Again in the ninth year, in the tenth month, in the tenth [day] of the month, the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, write you the name of the day, [even] of this same day: the king of Babylon set himself against Jerusalem this same day. ³ And utter a parable to the rebellious house, and say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Set on a pot, set [it] on, and also pour water into it: ⁴ Gather the pieces thereof into it, [even] every good piece, the thigh, and the shoulder; fill [it] with the choice bones. ⁵ Take the choice of the flock, and burn also the bones under it, [and] make it boil well, and let them boil the bones of it therein. ⁶ Wherefore thus says the Lord GOD; Woe to the bloody city, to the pot whose scum is therein, and whose scum is not gone out of it! bring it out piece by piece; let no lot fall upon it. ⁷ For her blood is in the midst of her; she set it upon the top of a rock; she poured it not upon the ground, to cover it with dust; ⁸ That it might cause fury to come up to take vengeance; I have set her blood upon the top of a rock, that it should not be covered. ⁹ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Woe to the bloody city! I will even make the pile for fire great. ¹⁰ Heap on wood, kindle the fire, consume the flesh, and spice it well, and let the bones be burned. ¹¹ Then set it empty upon the coals thereof, that the brass of it may be hot, and may burn, and [that] the filthiness of it may be molten in it, [that] the scum of it may be consumed. ¹² She has wearied [herself] with lies, and her great scum went not forth out of her: her scum [shall be] in the fire. ¹³ In your filthiness is lewdness: because I have purged you, and you was not purged, you shall not be purged from your filthiness anymore, till I have caused my fury to rest upon you. ¹⁴ I the LORD have spoken [it]: it shall come to pass, and I will do [it]; I will not go back, neither will I spare, neither will I repent; according to your ways, and according to your doings, they will judge you, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel's a Sign to Israel with Wife's Death

(61) ¹⁵ Also the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁶ Son of man, behold, I take away from you the desire of your eyes with a stroke: yet neither shall you mourn nor weep, neither shall your tears run down. ¹⁷ Forbear to cry, make no mourning for the dead, bind the tire of your head upon you, and put on your shoes upon your feet, and cover not [your] lips, and eat not the bread of men. ¹⁸ So I spoke to the people in the morning: and at even my wife died; and I did in the morning as I was commanded. ¹⁹ And the people said to me, Will you not tell us what these [things are] to us, that you do [so]?

Ezekiel Chapter 24

²⁰ Then I answered them, The word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²¹ Speak to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will profane my sanctuary, the excellency of your strength, the desire of your eyes, and that which your soul pities; and your sons and your daughters whom ye have left shall fall by the sword. ²² And ye shall do as I have done: ye shall not cover [your] lips, nor eat the bread of men. ²³ And your turbans [shall be] upon your heads, and your shoes upon your feet: ye shall not mourn nor weep; but ye shall pine away for your iniquities, and mourn one toward another. ²⁴ Thus Ezekiel is to you a sign: according to all that he has done shall ye do: and when this comes, ye shall know that I [am] the Lord GOD. ²⁵ Also, you son of man, [shall it] not [be] in the day when I take from them their strength, the joy of their glory, the desire of their eyes, and that whereupon they set their minds, their sons and their daughters, ²⁶ [That] he that escapes in that day shall come to you, to cause [you] to hear [it] with [your] ears? ²⁷ ^a In that day shall your mouth be opened to him which is escaped, and you shall speak, and be no more dumb: and you shall be a sign to them; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

^a 1 Peter 4:12-19, EZ 33:22

Ezekiel Chapter 25

The Ammonites are Warned

(62) ¹ The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ² Son of man, set your face against the Ammonites, and prophesy against them; ³ And say to the Ammonites, Hear the Word of the Lord GOD; Thus says the Lord GOD; Because you said, Aha, against my sanctuary, when it was profaned; and against the land of Israel, when it was desolate; and against the house of Judah, when they went into captivity; ⁴ Behold, therefore I will deliver you to the men of the east for a possession, and they shall set their palaces in you, and make their dwellings in you: they shall eat your fruit, and they shall drink your milk. ⁵ And I will make Rabbah a stable for camels, and the Ammonites a couching-place for flocks: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁶ For thus says the Lord GOD; Because you have clapped [your] hands, and stamped with the feet, and rejoiced in heart with all your despite against the land of Israel; ⁷ Behold, therefore I will stretch out my hand upon you, and will deliver you for a spoil to the heathen; and I will cut you off from the people, and I will cause you to perish out of the countries: I will destroy you; and you shall know that I [am] the LORD.

The Cities of Moab, Edom and Philistines are Warned

(63) ⁸ Thus says the Lord GOD; Because that Moab and Seir do say, Behold, the house of Judah is like to all the heathen; ⁹ Therefore, behold, I will open the side of Moab from the cities, from his cities [which are] on his frontiers, the glory of the country, Bethjeshimoth, Baalmeon, and Kiriathaim, ¹⁰ To the men of the east with the Ammonites, and will give them in possession, that the Ammonites may not be remembered among the nations. ¹¹ And I will execute judgments upon Moab; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD. ¹² Thus says the Lord GOD; Because that Edom has dealt against the house of Judah by taking vengeance, and has greatly offended, and revenged himself upon them; ¹³ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; I will also stretch out my hand upon Edom, and will cut off man and beast from it; and I will make it desolate from Teman; and they of Dedan shall fall by the sword. ¹⁴ And I will lay my vengeance upon Edom by the hand of my people Israel: and they shall do in Edom according to my anger and according to my fury; and they shall know my vengeance, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD; Because the Philistines have dealt by revenge, and have taken vengeance with a despiteful heart, to destroy [it] for the old hatred; ¹⁶ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will stretch out my hand upon the Philistines, and I will cut off the Cherethims, and destroy the remnant of the sea coast. ¹⁷ And I will execute great vengeance upon them with furious rebukes; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I shall lay my vengeance upon them.

Tyre is Warned (chapters 26:1-28:19)

(64) ¹ And it came to pass in the eleventh year, in the first [day] of the month, [that] the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, because that Tyre has said against Jerusalem, Aha, she is broken [that was] the gates of the people: she is turned to me: I shall be replenished, [now] she is laid waste: ³ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against you, O Tyre, and will cause many nations to come up against you, as the sea causes his waves to come up. ⁴ And they shall destroy the walls of Tyre, and break down her towers: I will also scrape her dust from her, and make her like the top of a rock. ⁵ It shall be [a place for] the spreading of nets in the midst of the sea: for I have spoken [it], says the Lord GOD: and it shall become a spoil to the nations. ⁶ And her daughters which are in the field shall be slain by the sword; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁷ For thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will bring upon Tyre Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, a king of kings, from the north, with horses, and with chariots, and with horsemen, and companies, and much people. ⁸ He shall slay with the sword your daughters in the field: and he shall make a fort against you, and cast a mount against you, and lift up the buckler against you. ⁹ And he shall set engines of war against your walls, and with his axes he shall break down your towers. ¹⁰ By reason of the abundance of his horses their dust shall cover you: your walls shall shake at the noise of the horsemen, and of the wheels, and of the chariots, when he shall enter into your gates, as men enter into a city wherein is made a breach. ¹¹ With the hoofs of his horses shall he tread down all your streets: he shall slay your people by the sword, and your strong garrisons shall go down to the ground. ¹² And they shall make a spoil of your riches, and make a prey of your merchandise: and they shall break down your walls, and destroy your pleasant houses: and they shall lay your stones and your timber and your dust in the midst of the water. ¹³ And I will cause the noise of your songs to cease; and the sound of your harps shall be no more heard. ¹⁴ And I will make you like the top of a rock: you shall be [a place] to spread nets upon; you shall be built no more: for I the LORD have spoken [it], says the Lord GOD.

(65) ¹⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD to Tyre; Shall not the isles shake at the sound of your fall, when the wounded cry, when the slaughter is made in the midst of you? ¹⁶ Then all the princes of the sea shall come down from their thrones, and lay away their robes, and put off their brodered garments: they shall clothe themselves with trembling; they shall sit upon the ground, and shall tremble at [every] moment, and be astonished at you. ¹⁷ And they shall take up a lamentation for you, and say to you, How are you destroyed, [that was] inhabited of seafaring men, the renowned city, which was strong in the sea, she and her inhabitants, which cause their terror [to be] on all that haunt it! ¹⁸ Now shall the isles tremble in the day of your fall; yes, the isles that are in the sea shall be troubled at your departure. ¹⁹ For thus says the Lord GOD; When I shall make you a desolate city, like the cities that are not inhabited; when I shall bring up the deep upon you, and great waters shall cover you; ²⁰ When I shall bring you down with them that descend into the pit, with the people of old time, and shall set you in the low parts of the earth, in places desolate of old, with them that go down to the pit, that you be not inhabited; and I shall set glory in the land of the living; ²¹ I will make you a terror, and you [shall be] no [more]: though you be sought for, yet shall you never be found again, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 27

(66) ¹ The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ² Now, you son of man, take up a lamentation for Tyre; ³ And say to Tyre, O you that are situate at the entry of the sea, [which are] a merchant of the people for many isles, Thus says the Lord GOD; O Tyre, you have said, I [am] of perfect beauty. ⁴ Your borders are in the midst of the seas, your builders have perfected your beauty. ⁵ They have made all your [ship] boards of fir trees of Senir: they have taken cedars from Lebanon to make masts for you. ⁶ [Of] the oaks of Bashan have they made your oars; the company of the Ashurites have made your benches [of] ivory, [brought] out of the isles of Chittim. ⁷ Fine linen with brodered work from Egypt was that which you spread forth to be your sail; blue and purple from the isles of Elishah was that which covered you. ⁸ The inhabitants of Zidon and Arvad were your mariners: your wise [men], O Tyre, [that] were in you, were your pilots. ⁹ The ancients of Gebal and the wise [men] thereof were in you your caulkers: all the ships of the sea with their mariners were in you to occupy your merchandise. ¹⁰ They of Persia and of Lud and of Phut were in your army, your men of war: they hanged the shield and helmet in you; they set forth your comeliness. ¹¹ The men of Arvad with your army [were] upon your walls round about, and the Gammadims were in your towers: they hanged their shields upon your walls round about; they have made your beauty perfect. ¹² Tarshish was your merchant by reason of the multitude of all [kind of] riches; with silver, iron, tin, and lead, they traded in your fairs. ¹³ Javan, Tubal, and Meshech, they [were] your merchants: they traded the persons of men and vessels of brass in your market. ¹⁴ They of the house of Togarmah traded in your fairs with horses and horsemen and mules. ¹⁵ The men of Dedan [were] your merchants; many isles [were] the merchandise of your hand: they brought you [for] a present horns of ivory and ebony. ¹⁶ Syria was your merchant by reason of the multitude of the wares of your making: they occupied in your fairs with emeralds, purple, and brodered work, and fine linen, and coral, and agate. ¹⁷ Judah, and the land of Israel, they [were] your merchants: they traded in your market wheat of Minnith, and Pannag, and honey, and oil, and balm. ¹⁸ Damascus was your merchant in the multitude of the wares of your making, for the multitude of all riches; in the wine of Helbon, and white wool. ¹⁹ Dan also and Javan going to and fro occupied in your fairs: bright iron, cassia, and calamus, were in your market. ²⁰ Dedan was your merchant in precious clothes for chariots. ²¹ Arabia, and all the princes of Kedar, they occupied with you in lambs, and rams, and goats: in these [were they] your merchants. ²² The merchants of Sheba and Raamah, they [were] your merchants: they occupied in your fairs with chief of all spices, and with all precious stones, and gold. ²³ Haran, and Canneh, and Eden, the merchants of Sheba, Asshur, [and] Chilmad, [were] your merchants. ²⁴ These [were] your merchants in all sorts [of things], in blue clothes, and brodered work, and in chests of rich apparel, bound with cords, and made of cedar, among your merchandise. ²⁵ The ships of Tarshish did sing of you in your market: and you was replenished, and made very glorious in the midst of the seas.

(67) ²⁶ Your rowers have brought you into great waters: the east wind has broken you in the midst of the seas. ²⁷ Your riches, and your fairs, your merchandise, your mariners, and your pilots, your caulkers, and the occupiers of your merchandise, and all your men of war, that are in you, and in all your company which is in the midst of you, shall fall into the midst of the seas in the day of your ruin. ²⁸ The suburbs shall shake at the sound of the cry of your pilots. ²⁹ And all that handle the oar, the mariners, [and] all the pilots of the sea, shall come down from their ships, they shall stand upon the land; ³⁰ And shall cause their voice to be heard against you, and shall cry bitterly, and shall cast up dust upon their heads, they shall wallow themselves in the ashes: ³¹ And they shall make themselves utterly bald for you, and gird them with sackcloth, and they shall weep for you with bitterness of heart [and] bitter wailing. ³² And in their wailing they shall take up a lamentation for you, and lament over you, [saying], What [city is] like Tyre, like the destroyed in the midst of the sea? ³³ When your wares went forth out of the seas, you filled many people; you did enrich the kings of the earth with the multitude of your riches and of your merchandise. ³⁴ ^a In the time [when] you shall be broken by the seas in the depths of the waters your merchandise and all your company in the midst of you shall fall. ³⁵ All the inhabitants of the isles shall be astonished at you, and their kings shall be sore afraid, they shall be troubled in [their] countenance. ³⁶ The merchants among the people shall hiss at you; you shall be a terror, and never [shall be] anymore.

^a Revelation 18-19

Ezekiel Chapter 28

(68) ¹ The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ² Son of man, say to the prince of Tyre, Thus says the Lord GOD; Because your heart is lifted up, and you have said, I [am] a God, I sit [in] the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; yet you are a man, and not God, though you set your heart as the heart of God: ³ Behold, you are wiser than Daniel; there is no secret that they can hide from you: ⁴ With your wisdom and with your understanding you have gotten you riches, and has gotten gold and silver into your treasures: ⁵ By your great wisdom [and] by your traffic have you increased your riches, and your heart is lifted up because of your riches: ⁶ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because you have set your heart as the heart of God; ⁷ Behold, therefore I will bring strangers upon you, the terrible of the nations: and they shall draw their swords against the beauty of your wisdom, and they shall defile your brightness. ⁸ They shall bring you down to the pit, and you shall die the deaths of [them that are] slain in the midst of the seas. ⁹ Will you yet say before him that slays you, I [am] God? but you [shall be] a man, and no God, in the hand of him that slays you. ¹⁰ You shall die the deaths of the uncircumcised by the hand of strangers: for I have spoken [it], says the Lord GOD.

King of Tyre Personified as Satan

(69) ¹¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹² Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyre, and say to him, Thus says the Lord GOD; You seal up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. ¹³ You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of your tamborines and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you was created. ¹⁴ You are the anointed cherub that covers; and I have set you [so]: you was upon the holy mountain of God; you have walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. ¹⁵ You was perfect in your ways from the day that you was created, till iniquity was found in you. ¹⁶ By the multitude of your merchandise they have filled the midst of you with violence, and you have sinned: therefore I will cast you as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. ¹⁷ Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty, you have corrupted your wisdom by reason of your brightness: I will cast you to the ground, I will lay you before kings, that they may behold you. ¹⁸ You have defiled your sanctuaries by the multitude of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your traffic; therefore will I bring forth a fire from the midst of you, it shall devour you, and I will bring you to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all them that behold you. ¹⁹ All they that know you among the people shall be astonished at you: you shall be a terror, and never [shall] you [be] anymore.

Note: Compare to Revelation 18-19

Zidon is Warned

(70) ²⁰ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²¹ Son of man, set your face against Zidon, and prophesy against it, ²² And say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against you, O Zidon; and I will be glorified in the midst of you: and they shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I shall have executed judgments in her, and shall be sanctified in her. ²³ For I will send into her pestilence, and blood into her streets; and the wounded shall be judged in the midst of her by the sword upon her on every side; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD. ²⁴ And there shall be no more a pricking brier to the house of Israel, nor [any] grieving thorn of all [that are] round about them, that despised them; and they shall know that I [am] the Lord GOD. ²⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD; When I shall have gathered the house of Israel from the people among whom they are scattered, and shall be sanctified in them in the sight of the heathen, then they will dwell in their land that I have given to my servant Jacob. ²⁶ And they shall dwell safely therein, and shall build houses, and plant vineyards; yes, they shall dwell with confidence, when I have executed judgments upon all those that despise them round about them; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD their God.

Egypt is Warned

(71) ¹ In the tenth year, in the tenth [month], in the twelfth [day] of the month, the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, set your face against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and prophesy against him, and against all Egypt: ³ Speak, and say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against you, Pharaoh king of Egypt, the great dragon that lies in the midst of his rivers, which has said, My river is my own, and I have made [it] for myself. ⁴ But I will put hooks in your jaws, and I will cause the fish of your rivers to stick to your scales, and I will bring you up out of the midst of your rivers, and all the fish of your rivers shall stick to your scales. ⁵ And I will leave you [thrown] into the wilderness, you and all the fish of your rivers: you shall fall upon the open fields; you shall not be brought together, nor gathered: I have given you for meat to the beasts of the field and to the fowls of the heaven. ⁶ And all the inhabitants of Egypt shall know that I [am] the LORD, because they have been a staff of reed to the house of Israel. ⁷ When they took hold of you by your hand, you did break, and rend all their shoulder: and when they leaned upon you, you brake, and made all their loins to be at a stand.

(72) ⁸ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will bring a sword upon you, and cut off man and beast out of you. ⁹ And the land of Egypt shall be desolate and waste; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD: because he has said, The river is my, and I have made [it]. ¹⁰ Behold, therefore I [am] against you, and against your rivers, and I will make the land of Egypt utterly waste [and] desolate, from the tower of Syene even to the border of Ethiopia. ¹¹ No foot of man shall pass through it, nor foot of beast shall pass through it, neither shall it be inhabited forty years. ¹² And I will make the land of Egypt desolate in the midst of the countries [that are] desolate, and her cities among the cities [that are] laid waste shall be desolate forty years: and I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and will disperse them through the countries. ¹³ Yet thus says the Lord GOD; At the end of forty years will I gather the Egyptians from the people where they were scattered: ¹⁴ And I will bring again the captivity of Egypt, and will cause them to return [into] the land of Pathros, into the land of their habitation; and they shall be there a base kingdom. ¹⁵ It shall be the basest of the kingdoms; neither shall it exalt itself anymore above the nations: for I will diminish them, that they shall no more rule over the nations. ¹⁶ And it shall be no more the confidence of the house of Israel, which brings [their] iniquity to remembrance, when they shall look after them: but they shall know that I [am] the Lord GOD.

(73) ¹⁷ And it came to pass in the seven and twentieth year, in the first [month], in the first [day] of the month, the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁸ Son of man, Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon caused his army to serve a great service against Tyre: every head was made bald, and every shoulder was peeled: yet had he no wages, nor his army, for Tyre, for the service that he had served against it: ¹⁹ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will give the land of Egypt to Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon; and he shall take her multitude, and take her spoil, and take her prey; and it shall be the wages for his army. ²⁰ I have given him the land of Egypt [for] his labor wherewith he served against it, because they worked for me, says the Lord GOD. ²¹ In that day will I cause the horn of the house of Israel to bud forth, and I will give you the opening of the mouth in the midst of them; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Egypt, Ethiopian and Libya Warned

(74) ¹ The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ² Son of man, prophesy and say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Howl ye, Alas for the day! ³ For the day is near, even the day of the LORD is near, a cloudy day; it shall be the time of the heathen. ⁴ And the sword shall come upon Egypt, and great pain shall be in Ethiopia, when the slain shall fall in Egypt, and they shall take away her multitude, and her foundations shall be broken down. ⁵ Ethiopia, and Libya, and Lydia, and all the mingled people, and Chub, and the men of the land that is in league, shall fall with them by the sword. ⁶ Thus says the LORD; They also that uphold Egypt shall fall; and the pride of her power shall come down: from the tower of Syene they will fall in it by the sword, says the Lord GOD. ⁷ And they shall be desolate in the midst of the countries [that are] desolate, and her cities shall be in the midst of the cities [that are] wasted. ⁸ And they shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I have set a fire in Egypt, and [when] all her helpers shall be destroyed. ⁹ In that day shall messengers go forth from me in ships to make the careless Ethiopians afraid, and great pain shall come upon them, as in the day of Egypt: for, look, it comes. ¹⁰ Thus says the Lord GOD; I will also make the multitude of Egypt to cease by the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon. ¹¹ He and his people with him, the terrible of the nations, shall be brought to destroy the land: and they shall draw their swords against Egypt, and fill the land with the slain. ¹² And I will make the rivers dry, and sell the land into the hand of the wicked: and I will make the land waste, and all that is therein, by the hand of strangers: I the LORD have spoken [it]. ¹³ Thus says the Lord GOD; I will also destroy the idols, and I will cause [their] images to cease out of Noph; and there shall be no more a prince of the land of Egypt: and I will put a fear in the land of Egypt. ¹⁴ And I will make Pathros desolate, and will set fire in Zoan, and will execute judgments in No. ¹⁵ And I will pour my fury upon Sin, the strength of Egypt; and I will cut off the multitude of No. ¹⁶ And I will set fire in Egypt: Sin shall have great pain, and No shall be tore asunder, and Noph [shall have] distresses daily. ¹⁷ The young men of Aven and of Pibeseth shall fall by the sword: and these [cities] shall go into captivity. ¹⁸ At Tehaphnehes also the day shall be darkened, when I shall break there the yokes of Egypt: and the pomp of her strength shall cease in her: as for her, a cloud shall cover her, and her daughters shall go into captivity. ¹⁹ Thus will I execute judgments in Egypt: and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

(75) ²⁰ And it came to pass in the eleventh year, in the first [month], in the seventh [day] of the month, [that] the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²¹ Son of man, I have broken the arm of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and, look, it shall not be bound up to be healed, to put a roller to bind it, to make it strong to hold the sword. ²² Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and will break his arms, the strong, and that which was broken; and I will cause the sword to fall out of his hand. ²³ And I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and will disperse them through the countries. ²⁴ And I will strengthen the arms of the king of Babylon, and put my sword in his hand: but I will break Pharaoh's arms, and he shall groan before him with the groanings of a deadly wounded [man]. ²⁵ But I will strengthen the arms of the king of Babylon, and the arms of Pharaoh shall fall down; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I shall put my sword into the hand of the king of Babylon, and he shall stretch it out upon the land of Egypt. ²⁶ And I will scatter the Egyptians among the nations, and disperse them among the countries; and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Ezekiel Chapter 31

Warning to Pharaoh of Egypt (chapters 31-32)

(76) ¹ And it came to pass in the eleventh year, in the third [month], in the first [day] of the month, [that] the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, speak to Pharaoh king of Egypt, and to his multitude; Whom are you like in your greatness? ³ Behold, the Assyrian was a cedar in Lebanon with fair branches, and with a shadowing shroud, and of a high stature; and his top was among the thick boughs. ⁴ The waters made him great, the deep set him up on high with her rivers running round about his plants, and sent out her little rivers to all the trees of the field. ⁵ Therefore his height was exalted above all the trees of the field, and his boughs were multiplied, and his branches became long because of the multitude of waters, when he shot forth. ⁶ All the fowls of heaven made their nests in his boughs, and under his branches did all the beasts of the field bring forth their young, and under his shadow dwelt all great nations. ⁷ Thus was he fair in his greatness, in the length of his branches: for his root was by great waters. ⁸ The cedars in the garden of God could not hide him: the fir trees were not like his boughs, and the chestnut trees were not like his branches; nor any tree in the garden of God was like to him in his beauty. ⁹ I have made him fair by the multitude of his branches: so that all the trees of Eden, that [were] in the garden of God, envied him.

(77) ¹⁰ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Because you have lifted up thyself in height, and he has shot up his top among the thick boughs, and his heart is lifted up in his height; ¹¹ I have therefore delivered him into the hand of the mighty one of the heathen; he shall surely deal with him: I have driven him out for his wickedness. ¹² And strangers, the terrible of the nations, have cut him off, and have left him: upon the mountains and in all the valleys his branches are fallen, and his boughs are broken by all the rivers of the land; and all the people of the earth are gone down from his shadow, and have left him. ¹³ Upon his ruin shall all the fowls of the heaven remain, and all the beasts of the field shall be upon his branches: ¹⁴ To the end that none of all the trees by the waters exalt themselves for their height, neither shoot up their top among the thick boughs, neither their trees stand up in their height, all that drink water: for they are all delivered to death, to the nether parts of the earth, in the midst of the children of men, with them that go down to the pit. ¹⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD; In the day when he went down to Shoel I caused a mourning: I covered the deep for him, and I restrained the floods thereof, and the great waters were stayed: and I caused Lebanon to mourn for him, and all the trees of the field fainted for him. ¹⁶ I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to Shoel with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the nether parts of the earth. ¹⁷ They also went down into Shoel with him to [them that be] slain with the sword; and [they that were] his arm, [that] dwelt under his shadow in the midst of the heathen. ¹⁸ To whom are you thus like in glory and in greatness among the trees of Eden? yet shall you be brought down with the trees of Eden to the nether parts of the earth: you shall lie in the midst of the uncircumcised with [them that be] slain by the sword. This is Pharaoh and all his multitude, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 32

(78) ¹ And it came to pass in the twelfth year, in the twelfth month, in the first [day] of the month, [that] the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh king of Egypt, and say to him, You are like a young lion of the nations, and you are as a whale in the seas: and you came forth with your rivers, and troubled the waters with your feet, and fouled their rivers. ³ Thus says the Lord GOD; I will therefore spread out my net over you with a company of many people; and they shall bring you up in my net. ⁴ Then will I leave you upon the land, I will cast you forth upon the open field, and will cause all the fowls of the heaven to remain upon you, and I will fill the beasts of the whole earth with you. ⁵ And I will lay your flesh upon the mountains, and fill the valleys with your height. ⁶ I will also water with your blood the land wherein you swim, [even] to the mountains; and the rivers shall be full of you. ⁷ And when I shall put you out, I will cover the heaven, and make the stars thereof dark; I will cover the sun with a cloud, and the moon shall not give her light. ⁸ All the bright lights of heaven will I make dark over you, and set darkness upon your land, says the Lord GOD. ⁹ I will also vex the hearts of many people, when I shall bring your destruction among the nations, into the countries which you have not known. ¹⁰ Yes, I will make many people amazed at you, and their kings shall be horribly afraid for you, when I shall brandish my sword before them; and they shall tremble at [every] moment, every man for his own life, in the day of your fall.

(79) ¹¹ For thus says the Lord GOD; The sword of the king of Babylon shall come upon you. ¹² By the swords of the mighty will I cause your multitude to fall, the terrible of the nations, all of them: and they shall spoil the pomp of Egypt, and all the multitude thereof shall be destroyed. ¹³ I will destroy also all the beasts thereof from beside the great waters; neither shall the foot of man trouble them anymore, nor the hoofs of beasts trouble them. ¹⁴ Then will I make their waters deep, and cause their rivers to run like oil, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁵ When I shall make the land of Egypt desolate, and the country shall be destitute of that whereof it was full, when I shall smite all them that dwell therein, then they will know that I [am] the LORD. ¹⁶ This is the lamentation wherewith they shall lament her: the daughters of the nations shall lament her: they shall lament for her, [even] for Egypt, and for all her multitude, says the Lord GOD.

(80) ¹⁷ It came to pass also in the twelfth year, in the fifteenth [day] of the month, [that] the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁸ Son of man, wail for the multitude of Egypt, and cast them down, [even] her, and the daughters of the famous nations, to the nether parts of the earth, with them that go down into the pit. ¹⁹ Whom do you pass in beauty? go down, and be you laid with the uncircumcised. ²⁰ They shall fall in the midst of [them that are] slain by the sword: she is delivered to the sword: draw her and all her multitudes. ²¹ The strong among the mighty shall speak to him out of the midst of Shoel with them that help him: they are gone down, they lie uncircumcised, slain by the sword. ²² Asshur is there and all her company: his graves are about him: all of them slain, fallen by the sword: ²³ Whose graves are set in the sides of the pit, and her company is round about her grave: all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which caused terror in the land of the living. ²⁴ There is Elam and all her multitude round about her grave, all of them slain, fallen by the sword, which are gone down uncircumcised into the nether parts of the earth, which caused their terror in the land of the living; yet have they borne their shame with them that go down to the pit. ²⁵ They have set her a bed in the midst of the slain with all her multitude: her graves are round about him: all of them uncircumcised, slain by the sword: though their terror was caused in the land of the living, yet have they borne their shame with them that go down to the pit: he is put in the midst of [them that be] slain. ²⁶ There is Meshech, Tubal, and all her multitude: her graves are round about him: all of them uncircumcised, slain by the sword, though they caused their terror in the land of the living. ²⁷ And they shall not lie with the mighty [that are] fallen of the uncircumcised, which are gone down to Shoel with their weapons of war: and they have laid their swords under their heads, but their iniquities shall be upon their bones, though [they were] the terror of the mighty in the land of the living. ²⁸ Yes, you shall be broken in the midst of the uncircumcised, and shall lie with [them that are] slain with the sword. ²⁹ There is Edom, her kings, and all her princes, which with their might are laid by [them that were] slain by the sword: they shall lie with the uncircumcised, and with them that go down to the pit.

Ezekiel Chapter 32

³⁰ There [be] the princes of the north, all of them, and all the Zidonians, which are gone down with the slain; with their terror they are ashamed of their might; and they lie uncircumcised with [them that be] slain by the sword, and bear their shame with them that go down to the pit. ³¹ Pharaoh shall see them, and shall be comforted over all his multitude, [even] Pharaoh and all his army slain by the sword, says the Lord GOD. ³² For I have caused my terror in the land of the living: and he shall be laid in the midst of the uncircumcised with [them that are] slain with the sword, [even] Pharaoh and all his multitude, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 33

Advice to the Watchmen of Israel

(81) ¹ Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, speak to the children of your people, and say to them, When I bring the sword upon a land, if the people of the land take a man of their coasts, and set him for their watchman: ³ If when he sees the sword come upon the land, he blow the trumpet, and warn the people; ⁴ Then whosoever hears the sound of the trumpet, and takes not warning; if the sword come, and take him away, his blood shall be upon his own head. ⁵ He heard the sound of the trumpet, and took not warning; his blood shall be upon him. But he that takes warning shall deliver his soul. ⁶ But if the watchman see the sword come, and blow not the trumpet, and the people be not warned; if the sword come, and take [any] person from among them, he is taken away in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at the watchman's hand. ⁷ So you, O son of man, I have set you a watchman to the house of Israel; therefore you shall hear the word at my mouth, and warn them from me. ⁸ When I say to the wicked, O wicked [man], you shall surely die; if you do not speak to warn the wicked from his way, that wicked [man] shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at your hand. ⁹ Nevertheless, if you warn the wicked of his way to turn from it; if he do not turn from his way, he shall die in his iniquity; but you have delivered your soul.

Warning to the Righteous and the Wicked

(82) ¹⁰ Therefore, O you son of man, speak to the house of Israel; Thus ye speak, saying, If our transgressions and our sins [be] upon us, and we pine away in them, how should we then live? ¹¹ Say to them, [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die, O house of Israel? ¹² Therefore, you son of man, say to the children of your people, The righteousness of the righteous shall not deliver him in the day of his transgression: as for the wickedness of the wicked, he shall not fall thereby in the day that he turns from his wickedness; neither shall the righteous be able to live for his [righteousness] in the day that he sins. ¹³ When I shall say to the righteous, [that] he shall surely live; if he trust to his own righteousness, and commit iniquity, all his righteousnesses shall not be remembered; but for his iniquity that he has committed, he shall die for it. ¹⁴ Again, when I say to the wicked, You shall surely die; if he turn from his sin, and do that which is lawful and right; ¹⁵ [If] the wicked restore the pledge, give again that he had robbed, walk in the statutes of life, without committing iniquity; he shall surely live, he shall not die. ¹⁶ None of his sins that he has committed shall be mentioned to him: he has done that which is lawful and right; he shall surely live. ¹⁷ Yet the children of your people say, The way of the Lord is not equal: but as for them, their way is not equal. ¹⁸ When the righteous turns from his righteousness, and commits iniquity, he shall even die thereby. ¹⁹ But if the wicked turn from his wickedness, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall live thereby. ²⁰ Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. O ye house of Israel, I will judge you everyone after his ways.

Ezekiel Chapter 33

One or Many Make no Difference in being Abraham or his Children

(83) ²¹ And it came to pass in the twelfth year of our captivity, in the tenth [month], in the fifth [day] of the month, [that] one that had escaped out of Jerusalem came to me, saying, The city is smitten. ²² **Now the hand of the LORD was upon me in the evening, before he that was escaped came; and had opened my mouth, until he came to me in the morning; and my mouth was opened, and I was no more dumb.** ²³ Then the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ²⁴ Son of man, they that inhabit those wastes of the land of Israel speak, saying, Abraham was one, and he inherited the land: but we are many; the land is given us for inheritance. ²⁵ Wherefore say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Ye eat with the blood, and lift up your eyes toward your idols, and shed blood: and shall ye possess the land? ²⁶ Ye stand upon your sword, ye work abomination, and ye defile everyone his neighbor's wife: and shall ye possess the land? ²⁷ Say you thus to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; [As] I live, surely they that are in the wastes shall fall by the sword, and him that is in the open field will I give to the beasts to be devoured, and they that [be] in the forts and in the caves shall die of the pestilence. ²⁸ For I will lay the land most desolate, and the pomp of her strength shall cease; and the mountains of Israel shall be desolate, that none shall pass through. ²⁹ Then they will know that I [am] the LORD, when I have laid the land most desolate because of all their abominations which they have committed.

They Come and Hear, but do not do

(84) ³⁰ Also, you son of man, the children of your people still are talking against you by the walls and in the doors of the houses, and speak one to another, everyone to his brother, saying, Come, I pray you, and hear what is the word that comes forth from the LORD. ³¹ And they come to you as the people come, and they sit before you [as] my people, and they hear your words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they show much love, [but] their heart goes after their covetousness. ³² And, look, you are to them as a very lovely song of one that has a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear your words, but they do them not. ³³ And when this comes to pass, (look, it will come,) then they will know that a prophet has been among them.

Ezekiel Chapter 34

Bad and Good Shepherds Compared (bad)

(85) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, prophesy against the shepherds of Israel, prophesy, and say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD to the shepherds; Woe [be] to the shepherds of Israel that do feed themselves! should not the shepherds feed the flocks? ³ Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe you with the wool, ye kill them that are fed: [but] ye feed not the flock. ⁴ The diseased have ye not strengthened, neither have ye healed that which was sick, neither have ye bound up [that which was] broken, neither have ye brought again that which was driven away, neither have ye sought that which was lost; but with force and with cruelty have ye ruled them. ⁵ And they were scattered, because there is no shepherd: and they became meat to all the beasts of the field, when they were scattered. ⁶ My sheep wandered through all the mountains, and upon every high hill: yes, my flock was scattered upon all the face of the earth, and none did search or seek [after them]. ⁷ Therefore, ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; ⁸ [As] I live, says the Lord GOD, surely because my flock became a prey, and my flock became meat to every beast of the field, because [there was] no shepherd, neither did my shepherds search for my flock, but the shepherds fed themselves, and fed not my flock; ⁹ Therefore, O ye shepherds, hear the word of the LORD; ¹⁰ Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against the shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves anymore; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them.

Ezekiel Chapter 34

(good shepherds)

(86) ¹¹ For thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I, [even] I, will both search my sheep, and seek them out. ¹² As a shepherd seeks out his flock in the day that he is among his sheep [that are] scattered; so will I seek out my sheep, and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day. ¹³ And I will bring them out from the people, and gather them from the countries, and will bring them to their own land, and feed them upon the mountains of Israel by the rivers, and in all the inhabited places of the country. ¹⁴ I will feed them in a good pasture, and upon the high mountains of Israel shall their fold be: there they will lie in a good fold, and [in] a fat pasture they will feed upon the mountains of Israel. ¹⁵ I will feed my flock, and I will cause them to lie down, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁶ I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away, and will bind up [that which was] broken, and will strengthen that which was sick:

(bad shepherds)

but I will destroy the fat and the strong; I will feed them with judgment. ¹⁷ And [as for] you, O my flock, thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I judge between cattle and cattle, between the rams and the he goats. ¹⁸ [Seems it] a small thing to you to have eaten up the good pasture, but ye must tread down with your feet the residue of your pastures? and to have drunk of the deep waters, but ye must foul the residue with your feet? ¹⁹ And [as for] my flock, they eat that which ye have trodden with your feet; and they drink that which ye have fouled with your feet. ²⁰ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD to them; Behold, I, [even] I, will judge between the fat cattle and between the lean cattle. ²¹ Because ye have thrust with side and with shoulder, and pushed all the diseased with your horns, till ye have scattered them abroad; ²² Therefore will I save my flock, and they shall no more be a prey; and I will judge between cattle and cattle.

The One Good Shepherd

(87) ²³ And I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, [even] my servant David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. ²⁴ And I the LORD will be their God, and my servant David a prince among them; I the LORD have spoken [it]. ²⁵ And I will make with them a covenant of peace, and will cause the evil beasts to cease out of the land: and they shall dwell safely in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods. ²⁶ And I will make them and the places round about my hill a blessing; and I will cause the shower to come down in his season; there shall be showers of blessing. ²⁷ And the tree of the field shall yield her fruit, and the earth shall yield her increase, and they shall be safe in their land, and shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I have broken the bands of their yoke, and delivered them out of the hand of those that served themselves of them. ²⁸ And they shall no more be a prey to the heathen, neither shall the beast of the land devour them; but they shall dwell safely, and none shall make them afraid. ²⁹ And I will raise up for them a plant of renown, and they shall be no more consumed with hunger in the land, neither bear the shame of the heathen anymore. ³⁰ Thus they will know that I the LORD their God [am] with them, and [that] they, [even] the house of Israel, are my people, says the Lord GOD. ³¹ And ye my flock, the flock of my pasture, are men, [and] I [am] your God, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 35

Warning to the Edomites (at mount Seir, Genesis 36:9)

(88) ¹ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, set your face against mount Seir, and prophesy against it, ³ And say to it, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, O mount Seir, I [am] against you, and I will stretch out my hand against you, and I will make you most desolate. ⁴ I will lay your cities waste, and you shall be desolate, and you shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁵ Because you have had a perpetual hatred, and has shed [the blood of] the children of Israel by the force of the sword in the time of their calamity, in the time [that their] iniquity had an end: ⁶ Therefore, [as] I live, says the Lord GOD, I will prepare you to blood, and blood shall pursue you: since you have not hated blood, even blood shall pursue you. ⁷ Thus will I make mount Seir most desolate, and cut off from it him that passes

Ezekiel Chapter 35

out and him that returns. ⁸ And I will fill his mountains with his slain [men]: in your hills, and in your valleys, and in all your rivers, they will fall that are slain with the sword. ⁹ I will make you perpetual desolations, and your cities shall not return: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ¹⁰ Because you have said, These two nations and these two countries shall be mine, and we will possess it; whereas the LORD was there: ¹¹ Therefore, [as] I live, says the Lord GOD, I will even do according to your anger, and according to your envy which you have used out of your hatred against them; and I will make myself known among them, when I have judged you. ¹² And you shall know that I [am] the LORD, [and that] I have heard all your blasphemies which you have spoken against the mountains of Israel, saying, They are laid desolate, they are given us to consume. ¹³ Thus with your mouth ye have boasted against me, and have multiplied your words against me: I have heard them. ¹⁴ Thus says the Lord GOD; When the whole earth rejoices, I will make you desolate. ¹⁵ As you did rejoice at the inheritance of the house of Israel, because it was desolate, so will I do to you: you shall be desolate, O mount Seir, and all Idumea, [even] all of it: and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Ezekiel Chapter 36

Judgment on the Nations

(89) ¹ Also, you son of man, prophesy to the mountains of Israel, and say, Ye mountains of Israel, hear the word of the LORD: ² Thus says the Lord GOD; Because the enemy has said against you, Aha, even the ancient high places are ours in possession: ³ Therefore prophesy and say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Because they have made [you] desolate, and swallowed you up on every side, that ye might be a possession to the residue of the heathen, and ye are taken up in the lips of talkers, and are an infamy of the people: ⁴ Therefore, ye mountains of Israel, hear the Word of the Lord GOD; Thus says the Lord GOD to the mountains, and to the hills, to the rivers, and to the valleys, to the desolate wastes, and to the cities that are forsaken, which became a prey and derision to the residue of the heathen that are round about; ⁵ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Surely in the fire of my jealousy I have spoken against the residue of the heathen, and against all Idumea, which have appointed my land into their possession with the joy of all [their] heart, with despiteful minds, to cast it out for a prey. ⁶ Prophesy therefore concerning the land of Israel, and say to the mountains, and to the hills, to the rivers, and to the valleys, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I have spoken in my jealousy and in my fury, because ye have borne the shame of the heathen: ⁷ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; I have lifted up my hand, Surely the heathen that are about you, they shall bear their shame. ⁸ But ye, O mountains of Israel, ye shall shoot forth your branches, and yield your fruit to my people of Israel; for they are at hand to come. ⁹ For, behold, I [am] for you, and I will turn to you, and ye shall be tilled and sown: ¹⁰ And I will multiply men upon you, all the house of Israel, [even] all of it: and the cities shall be inhabited, and the wastes shall be built: ¹¹ And I will multiply upon you man and beast; and they shall increase and bring fruit: and I will settle you after your old estates, and will do better [to you] than at your beginnings: and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ¹² Yes, I will cause men to walk upon you, [even] my people Israel; and they shall possess you, and you shall be their inheritance, and you shall no more henceforth bereave them [of men]. ¹³ Thus says the Lord GOD; Because they say to you, You [land] devour up men, and has bereaved your nations; ¹⁴ Therefore you shall devour men no more, neither bereave your nations anymore, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁵ Neither will I cause [men] to hear in you the shame of the heathen anymore, neither shall you bear the reproach of the people anymore, neither shall you cause your nations to fall anymore, says the Lord GOD.

God Protects Israel for His Own Name's Sake

(90) ¹⁶ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ¹⁷ Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own way and by their doings: their way was before me as the uncleanness of a removed woman. ¹⁸ Wherefore I poured my fury upon them for the blood that they had shed upon the land, and for their idols [wherewith] they had polluted it: ¹⁹ And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: according to their way and according to their doings I judged them. ²⁰ And when they entered to the heathen, where they went, they profaned my holy name, when they said to them, These are the people of the LORD, and are gone forth out of his land. ²¹ But I had pity for my holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the heathen, where they went. ²² Therefore say to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD; I do not [this] for your

Ezekiel Chapter 36

sakes, O house of Israel, but for my holy name's sake, which ye have profaned among the heathen, where ye went. ²³ And I will sanctify my great name, which was profaned among the heathen, which ye have profaned in the midst of them; and the heathen shall know that I [am] the LORD, says the Lord GOD, when I shall be sanctified in you before their eyes. ²⁴ For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land.

Old and New Covenant Compared

(91) ²⁵ Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. ²⁶ A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh. ²⁷ And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. ²⁸ And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God. ²⁹ I will also save you from all your uncleannesses: and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you. ³⁰ And I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that ye shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen. ³¹ Then shall ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that [were] not good, and shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations. ³² Not for your sakes do I [this], says the Lord GOD, be it known to you: be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel. ³³ Thus says the Lord GOD; In the day that I shall have cleansed you from all your iniquities I will also cause [you] to dwell in the cities, and the wastes shall be built. ³⁴ And the desolate land shall be tilled, whereas it lay desolate in the sight of all that passed by. ³⁵ And they shall say, This land that was desolate is become like the garden of Eden; and the waste and desolate and ruined cities [are become] fenced, [and] are inhabited. ³⁶ Then the heathen that are left round about you shall know that I the LORD build the ruined [places, and] plant that that was desolate: I the LORD have spoken [it], and I will do [it]. ³⁷ Thus says the Lord GOD; I will yet [for] this be enquired of by the house of Israel, to do [it] for them; I will increase them with men like a flock. ³⁸ As the holy flock, as the flock of Jerusalem in her solemn feasts; so shall the waste cities be filled with flocks of men: and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Note: The gentiles are temporarily grafted in, Romans 9-11. The context is Israel's hope and not the churches hope, which is the better promises of Revelation 21-22. Although the better promises are in the present life also.

Ezekiel Chapter 37

Valley of the Dry Bones

(92) ¹ The hand of the LORD was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the LORD, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, ² And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, [there were] very many in the open valley; and, look, [they were] very dry. ³ And he said to me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord GOD, you know. ⁴ Again he said to me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say to them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the LORD. ⁵ Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: ⁶ And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁷ So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. ⁸ And when I beheld, look, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but [there was] no breath in them. ⁹ Then said he to me, Prophecy to the wind, prophecy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus says the Lord GOD; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. ¹⁰ So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army.

(93) ¹¹ Then he said to me, Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel: behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost: we are cut off for our parts. ¹² Therefore prophecy and say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. ¹³ And ye shall know that I [am] the LORD, when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves,

Ezekiel Chapter 37

¹⁴ And shall put my spirit in you, and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the LORD have spoken [it], and performed [it], says the LORD.

Israel's Return in Unity

(94) ¹⁵ The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, ¹⁶ Moreover, you son of man, take you one stick, and write upon it, For Judah, and for the children of Israel his companions: then take another stick, and write upon it, For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim, and [for] all the house of Israel his companions: ¹⁷ And join them one to another into one stick; and they shall become one in your hand. ¹⁸ And when the children of your people shall speak to you, saying, Will you not show us what you [mean] by these? ¹⁹ Say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel his fellows, and will put them with him, [even] with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they shall be one in my hand. ²⁰ And the sticks whereon you write shall be in your hand before their eyes. ²¹ And say to them, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, where they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land: ²² And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms anymore at all: ²³ Neither shall they defile themselves anymore with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwelling-places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so they will be my people, and I will be their God. ²⁴ And David my servant [shall be] king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them. ²⁵ And they shall dwell in the land that I have given to Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, [even] they, and their children, and their children's children forever: and my servant David [shall be] their prince forever. ²⁶ Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. ²⁷ My tabernacle also shall be with them: yes, I will be their God, and they shall be my people. ²⁸ And the heathen shall know that I the LORD do sanctify Israel, when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore.

Ezekiel Chapter 38

Gog Warned

(95) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ² Son of man, set your face against Gog, the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal, and prophesy against him, ³ And say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against you, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal: ⁴ And I will turn you back, and put hooks into your jaws, and I will bring you forth, and all your army, horses and horsemen, all of them clothed with all sorts [of armor, even] a great company [with] bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords: ⁵ Persia, Ethiopia, and Libya with them; all of them with shield and helmet: ⁶ Gomer, and all his bands; the house of Togarmah of the north quarters, and all his bands: [and] many people with you. ⁷ Be you prepared, and prepare for thyself, you, and all your company that are assembled to you, and be you a guard to them.

(96) ⁸ After many days you shall be visited: in the latter years you shall come into the land [that is] brought back from the sword, [and is] gathered out of many people, against the mountains of Israel, which have been always waste: but it is brought forth out of the nations, and they shall dwell safely all of them. ⁹ You shall ascend and come like a storm, you shall be like a cloud to cover the land, you, and all your bands, and many people with you. ¹⁰ Thus says the Lord GOD; It shall also come to pass, [that] at the same time shall things come into your mind, and you shall think an evil thought: ¹¹ And you shall say, I will go up to the land of unwalled villages; I will go to them that are at rest, that dwell safely, all of them dwelling without walls, and having neither bars nor gates, ¹² To take a spoil, and to take a prey; to turn your hand upon the desolate places [that are now] inhabited, and upon the people [that are] gathered out of the nations, which have gotten cattle and goods, that dwell in the midst of the land. ¹³ Sheba, and Dedan, and the merchants of Tarshish, with all the young lions thereof, shall say to you, Are you come to take a spoil? have you gathered your company to take a prey? to carry away silver and gold, to take away cattle and goods, to take a great spoil?

Ezekiel Chapter 38

A Great Earthquake (with Tsunami and mudslide)

(97) ¹⁴ Therefore, son of man, prophesy and say to Gog, Thus says the Lord GOD; In that day when my people of Israel dwells safely, shall you not know [it]? ¹⁵ And you shall come from your place out of the north parts, you, and many people with you, all of them riding upon horses, a great company, and a mighty army: ¹⁶ And you shall come up against my people of Israel, as a cloud to cover the land; it shall be in the latter days, and I will bring you against my land, that the heathen may know me, when I shall be sanctified in you, O Gog, before their eyes. ¹⁷ Thus says the Lord GOD; [Are] you he of whom I have spoken in old time by my servants the prophets of Israel, which prophesied in those days [many] years that I would bring you against them? ¹⁸ And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, says the Lord GOD, [that] my fury shall come up in my face. ¹⁹ For in my jealousy [and] in the fire of my wrath I have spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel; ²⁰ So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that are upon the face of the earth, shall shake at my presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground. ²¹ And I will call for a sword against him throughout all my mountains, says the Lord GOD: every man's sword shall be against his brother. ²² And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone. ²³ Thus will I magnify myself, and sanctify myself; and I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I [am] the LORD.

Ezekiel Chapter 39

(98) ¹ Therefore, you son of man, prophesy against Gog, and say, Thus says the Lord GOD; Behold, I [am] against you, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal: ² And I will turn you back, and leave but the sixth part of you, and will cause you to come up from the north parts, and will bring you upon the mountains of Israel: ³ And I will smite your bow out of your left hand, and will cause your arrows to fall out of your right hand ⁴ You shall fall upon the mountains of Israel, you, and all your bands, and the people that is with you: I will give you to the ravenous birds of every sort, and [to] the beasts of the field to be devoured. ⁵ You shall fall upon the open field: for I have spoken [it], says the Lord GOD. ⁶ And I will send a fire on Magog, and among them that dwell carelessly in the islands: and they shall know that I [am] the LORD. ⁷ So will I make my holy name known in the midst of my people Israel; and I will not [let them] pollute my holy name anymore: and the heathen shall know that I [am] the LORD, the Holy One in Israel.

Something Like Nuclear Cleanup (fuel for 7 years/cleanse in 7 months)

(99) ⁸ Behold, it is come, and it is done, says the Lord GOD; this is the day whereof I have spoken. ⁹ And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth, and shall set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and the bucklers, the bows and the arrows, and the hand-staves, and the spears, and they shall burn them with fire seven years: ¹⁰ So that they shall take no wood out of the field, neither cut down [any] out of the forests; for they shall burn the weapons with fire: and they shall spoil those that spoiled them, and rob those that robbed them, says the Lord GOD. ¹¹ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] I will give to Gog a place there of graves in Israel, the valley of the passengers on the east of the sea: and it shall stop the [noses] of the passengers: and there they will bury Gog and all his multitude: and they shall call [it] The valley of Hamongog. ¹² And seven months shall the house of Israel be burying of them, that they may cleanse the land. ¹³ Yes, all the people of the land shall bury them; and it shall be to them a renown the day that I shall be glorified, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁴ And they shall sever out men of continual employment, passing through the land to bury with the passengers those that remain upon the face of the earth, to cleanse it: after the end of seven months they will search. ¹⁵ And the passengers [that] pass through the land, when [any] sees a man's bone, then shall he set up a sign by it, till the buriers have buried it in the valley of Hamongog. ¹⁶ And also the name of the city [shall be] Hamonah. Thus they will cleanse the land.

Ezekiel Chapter 39

(100)¹⁷ And, you son of man, thus says the Lord GOD; Speak to every feathered fowl, and to every beast of the field, Assemble yourselves, and come; gather yourselves on every side to my sacrifice that I do sacrifice for you, [even] a great sacrifice upon the mountains of Israel, that ye may eat flesh, and drink blood. ¹⁸ Ye shall eat the flesh of the mighty, and drink the blood of the princes of the earth, of rams, of lambs, and of goats, of bullocks, all of them fatlings of Bashan. ¹⁹ And ye shall eat fat till ye be full, and drink blood till ye be drunken, of my sacrifice which I have sacrificed for you. ²⁰ Thus ye shall be filled at my table with horses and chariots, with mighty men, and with all men of war, says the Lord GOD. ²¹ And I will set my glory among the heathen, and all the heathen shall see my judgment that I have executed, and my hand that I have laid upon them. ²² So the house of Israel shall know that I [am] the LORD their God from that day and forward.

The Future Temple in Jerusalem foretold

(101)²³ And the heathen shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they trespassed against me, ^a therefore hid I my face from them, and gave them into the hand of their enemies: so fell they all by the sword. ²⁴ According to their uncleanness and according to their transgressions I have done to them, and ^a hid my face from them. ²⁵ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; Now will I bring again the captivity of Jacob, and have mercy upon the whole house of Israel, and will be jealous for my holy name; ²⁶ After that they have borne their shame, and all their trespasses whereby they have trespassed against me, when they dwelt safely in their land, and none made them afraid. ²⁷ When I have brought them again from the people, and gathered them out of their enemies' lands, and am sanctified in them in the sight of many nations; ²⁸ Then they will know that I [am] the LORD their God, which caused them to be led into captivity among the heathen: but I have gathered them to their own land, and have left none of them anymore there. ²⁹ ^a **Neither will I hide my face anymore from them: for ^b I have poured out my spirit upon the house of Israel,** says the Lord GOD.

^a Until this time, God is hiding his face from Israel (Romans 9-11). The event just before the temple and the literal future reign of Christ on earth in chapters 40-48. The manifold wisdom of God is shown in the Lord's prayer concerning the future body of Christ and Israel on earth, ultimately and completely fulfilled in chapters 40-48 as follow.

^b This happened to Israel in Acts 2 for a temporary time, until Saul was called and given the ministry of the dispensation to the gentiles, which is still to the Jew first, then to the gentile. The following 3 verses refer to the partial and complete fulfillment of the times of refreshing from the early and latter rains. Isaiah 62:7 And give him no rest, till he establish, and till he make Jerusalem a praise in the earth. Zechariah 12:10 And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourns for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.

Joel 2:28 And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: Psalms 122:6 Pray for the peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee. Jeremiah 29:7 And seek the peace of the city whither I have caused you to be carried away captives, and pray unto the LORD for it: for in the peace thereof shall ye have peace.

This is a prayer for the Israeli, not the gentile during the dispensation of abundant grace. We are looking for the heavenly Jerusalem. What is our place during this time?

The following verse explains: 1 Corinthians 6:1-3 Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints? Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? Don't ye know that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

40-48 VISIONS OF GOD GIVEN TO EZEKIEL ABOUT THE FUTURE TEMPLE AND REIGN ON EARTH

Ezekiel Chapter 40

(102) ¹ In the five and twentieth year of our captivity, in the beginning of the year, in the tenth [day] of the month, in the fourteenth year after that the city was smitten, in the selfsame day the hand of the LORD was upon me, and brought me thither. ² In the visions of God brought he me into the land of Israel, and set me upon a very high mountain, by which was as the frame of a city on the south. ³ And he brought me thither, and, behold, [there was] a man, whose appearance was like the appearance of brass, with a line of flax in his hand, and ^a measuring reed; and he stood in the gate. ⁴ And the man said to me, Son of man, behold with your eyes, and hear with your ears, and set your heart upon all that I shall show you; for to the intent that I might show them to you are you brought hither: declare all that you see to the house of Israel.

^a Differing from the reed of Revelation 11:1-2, which was like iron that represents judgment during the 70th week of Daniel. This man of brass that stood in the "eastern" gate "of the temple" was the Preincarnate Christ or an angel.

Design of the Temple (40:5-42:20)

The Eastern Gate

(103) ⁵ And behold a **wall on the outside of the house** round about, and in the man's hand a measuring reed of six cubits [long] by the cubit and a hand breadth: so he measured the breadth of the building, one reed; and the height, one reed. ⁶ Then came he to the **gate** which looks toward the **east**, and went up the stairs thereof, and measured the threshold of the gate, [which was] one reed broad; and the other threshold [of the gate, which was] one reed broad. ⁷ And [every] little chamber was one reed long, and one reed broad; and between the little chambers [were] five cubits; and the threshold of the gate by the porch of the gate within was one reed. ⁸ He measured also the porch of the gate within, one reed. ⁹ Then measured he the porch of the gate, eight cubits; and the posts thereof, two cubits; and the porch of the gate was inward. ¹⁰ And the little chambers of the gate eastward [were] three on this side, and three on that side; they three [were] of one measure: and the posts had one measure on this side and on that side. ¹¹ And he measured the breadth of the entry of the gate, ten cubits; [and] the length of the gate, thirteen cubits. ¹² The space also before the little chambers was one cubit [on this side], and the space was one cubit on that side: and the little chambers [were] six cubits on this side, and six cubits on that side. ¹³ He measured then the gate from the roof of [one] little chamber to the roof of another: the breadth was five and twenty cubits, door against door. ¹⁴ He made also posts of threescore cubits, even to the post of the court round about the gate. ¹⁵ And from the face of the gate of the entrance to the face of the porch of the inner gate [were] fifty cubits. ¹⁶ And [there were] narrow windows to the little chambers, and to their posts within the gate round about, and likewise to the arches: and windows [were] round about inward: and upon [each] post [were] **palm trees**.

The Outer Court and it's Gates

(104) ¹⁷ Then brought he me into the outward court, and, look, [there were] chambers, and a pavement made for the court round about: thirty chambers [were] upon the pavement. ¹⁸ And the pavement by the side of the gates over against the length of the gates was the lower pavement. ¹⁹ Then he measured the breadth from the forefront of the lower gate to the forefront of the inner court without, a hundred cubits eastward and northward. ²⁰ And the gate of the outward court that looked toward the north, he measured the length thereof, and the breadth thereof. ²¹ And the little chambers thereof [were] three on this side and three on that side; and the posts thereof and the arches thereof were after the measure of the first gate: the length thereof was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. ²² And their windows, and their arches, and their **palm trees**, [were] after the measure of the gate that looks toward the east; and they went up to it by **seven steps**; and the arches thereof [were] before them. ²³ And the gate of the inner court was over against the gate toward the north, and toward the east; and he measured from gate to gate a hundred cubits. ²⁴ After that he brought me toward the south, and behold a gate toward the south: and he measured the posts thereof and the arches thereof according to these measures.

Ezekiel Chapter 40

²⁵ And [there were] windows in it and in the arches thereof round about, like those windows: the length was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. ²⁶ And [there were] seven steps to go up to it, and the arches thereof [were] before them: and it had palm trees, one on this side, and another on that side, upon the posts thereof. ²⁷ And [there was] a gate in the inner court toward the south: and he measured from gate to gate toward the south a hundred cubits.

The Inner Court and it's Gates

(105) ²⁸ And he brought me to the **inner court** by the south gate: and he measured the south gate according to these measures; ²⁹ And the little chambers thereof, and the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, according to these measures: and [there were] windows in it and in the arches thereof round about: [it was] fifty cubits long, and five and twenty cubits broad. ³⁰ And the arches round about [were] five and twenty cubits long, and five cubits broad. ³¹ And the arches thereof [were] toward the utter court; and **palm trees** [were] upon the posts thereof: and the going up to it had **eight steps**.

³² And he brought me into the inner court toward the east: and he measured the gate according to these measures. ³³ And the little chambers thereof, and the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, [were] according to these measures: and [there were] windows therein and in the arches thereof round about: [it was] fifty cubits long, and five and twenty cubits broad. ³⁴ And the arches thereof [were] toward the outward court; and palm trees [were] upon the posts thereof, on this side, and on that side: and the going up to it had eight steps. ³⁵ And he brought me to the north gate, and measured [it] according to these measures; ³⁶ The little chambers thereof, the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, and the windows to it round about: the length was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. ³⁷ And the posts thereof [were] toward the utter court; and palm trees [were] upon the posts thereof, on this side, and on that side: and the going up to it had eight steps. ³⁸ And the chambers and the entries thereof [were] by the posts of the gates, where they washed the burnt offering.

The Place Where the Animal Sacrifices were Prepared

(106) ³⁹ And in the porch of the gate [were] two tables on this side, and two tables on that side, to slay thereon the burnt offering and the sin offering and the trespass offering. ⁴⁰ And at the side without, as one goes up to the entry of the north gate, [were] two tables; and on the other side, which was at the porch of the gate, [were] two tables. ⁴¹ Four tables [were] on this side, and four tables on that side, by the side of the gate; eight tables, whereupon they slew [their sacrifices]. ⁴² And the four tables [were] of hewn stone for the burnt offering, of a cubit and a half long, and a cubit and a half broad, and one cubit high: whereupon also they laid the instruments wherewith they slew the burnt offering and the sacrifice. ⁴³ And within [were] hooks, a hand broad, fastened round about: and upon the tables was the flesh of the offering.

Homes of the Singers and Priests

(107) ⁴⁴ And without the inner gate [were] the chambers of the singers in the inner court, which was at the side of the north gate; and their prospect was toward the south: one at the side of the east gate [having] the prospect toward the north. ⁴⁵ And he said to me, This chamber, whose prospect is toward the south, is for the priests, the keepers of the charge of the house. ⁴⁶ And the chamber whose prospect is toward the north is for the priests, the keepers of the charge of the altar: these are the sons of Zadok among the sons of Levi, which come near to the LORD to minister to him. ⁴⁷ So he measured the court, a hundred cubits long, and a hundred cubits broad, foursquare; and the altar [that was] before the house. ⁴⁸ And he brought me to the porch of the house, and measured [each] post of the porch, five cubits on this side, and five cubits on that side: and the breadth of the gate was three cubits on this side, and three cubits on that side. ⁴⁹ The length of the porch was twenty cubits, and the breadth eleven cubits; and [he brought me] by the steps whereby they went up to it: and [there were] pillars by the posts, one on this side, and another on that side.

Design of the Temple or Sanctuary

(108) ¹ Afterward he brought me to the temple, and measured the posts, six cubits broad on the one side, and six cubits broad on the other side, [which was] the breadth of the tabernacle. ² And the breadth of the door was ten cubits; and the sides of the door [were] five cubits on the one side, and five cubits on the other side: and he measured the length thereof, forty cubits: and the breadth, twenty cubits. ³ Then went he inward, and measured the post of the door, two cubits; and the door, six cubits; and the breadth of the door, seven cubits. ⁴ So he measured the length thereof, twenty cubits; and the breadth, twenty cubits, before the temple: and he said to me, **This is the most holy** [place]. ⁵ After he measured the wall of the house, six cubits; and the breadth of [every] side chamber, four cubits, round about the house on every side. ⁶ And the side chambers [were] three, one over another, and thirty in order; and they entered into the wall which was of the house for the side chambers round about, that they might have hold, but they had not hold in the wall of the house. ⁷ And [there was] an enlarging, and a winding about still upward to the side chambers: for the winding about of the house went still upward round about the house: therefore the breadth of the house [was still] upward, and so increased [from] the lowest [chamber] to the highest by the midst. ⁸ I saw also the height of the house round about: the foundations of the side chambers [were] a full reed of six great cubits. ⁹ The thickness of the wall, which was for the side chamber without, was five cubits: and [that] which was left was the place of the side chambers that [were] within. ¹⁰ And between the chambers was the wideness of twenty cubits round about the house on every side. ¹¹ And the doors of the side chambers [were] toward [the place that was] left, one door toward the north, and another door toward the south: and the breadth of the place that was left was five cubits round about.

(109) ¹² Now the building that was before the separate place at the end toward the west was seventy cubits broad; and the wall of the building was five cubits thick round about, and the length thereof ninety cubits. ¹³ So he measured the house, a hundred cubits long; and the separate place, and the building, with the walls thereof, a hundred cubits long; ¹⁴ Also the breadth of the face of the house, and of the separate place toward the east, a hundred cubits. ¹⁵ And he measured the length of the building over against the separate place which was behind it, and the galleries thereof on the one side and on the other side, a hundred cubits, with the inner temple, and the porches of the court; ¹⁶ The door posts, and the narrow windows, and the galleries round about on their three stories, over against the door, ceiled with wood round about, and from the ground up to the windows, and the windows [were] covered; ¹⁷ To that above the door, even to the inner house, and without, and by all the wall round about within and without, by measure. ¹⁸ And [it was] made with **cherubims and palm trees**, so that a palm tree was between a cherub and a cherub; and [every] cherub had two faces; ¹⁹ So that the face of a man was toward the palm tree on the one side, and the face of a young lion toward the palm tree on the other side: [it was] made through all the house round about. ²⁰ From the ground to above the door [were] cherubims and palm trees made, and [on] the wall of the temple. ²¹ The posts of the temple [were] squared, [and] the face of the sanctuary; the appearance [of the one] as the appearance [of the other]. ²² The altar of wood was three cubits high, and the length thereof two cubits; and the corners thereof, and the length thereof, and the walls thereof, [were] of wood: and he said to me, This is the table that is before the LORD. ²³ And the temple and the sanctuary had two doors. ²⁴ And the doors had two leaves [apiece], two turning leaves; two [leaves] for the one door, and two leaves for the other [door]. ²⁵ And [there were] made on them, on the doors of the temple, cherubims and palm trees, like as [were] made upon the walls; and [there were] thick planks upon the face of the porch without. ²⁶ And [there were] narrow windows and palm trees on the one side and on the other side, on the sides of the porch, and [upon] the side chambers of the house, and thick planks.

Homes of the Priests

(110) ¹ Then he brought me forth into the outer court, the way toward the north: and he brought me into the chamber that was over against the separate place, and which was before the building toward the north. ² Before the length of a hundred cubits was the north door, and the breadth was fifty cubits. ³ Over against the twenty [cubits] which [were] for the inner court, and over against the pavement which was for the outer court, was gallery against gallery in three [stories]. ⁴ And before the chambers was a walk of ten cubits breadth inward, a way of one cubit; and their doors toward the north. ⁵ Now the upper chambers [were] shorter: for the galleries were higher than these, than the lower, and than the middlemost of the building. ⁶ For they [were] in three [stories], but had not pillars as the pillars of the courts: therefore [the building] was narrowed more than the lowest and the middlemost from the ground. ⁷ And the wall that was without over against the chambers, toward the outer court on the forepart of the chambers, the length thereof was fifty cubits. ⁸ For the length of the chambers that [were] in the outer court was fifty cubits: and, look, before the temple [were] a hundred cubits. ⁹ And from under these chambers was the entry on the east side, as one goes into them from the outer court. ¹⁰ The chambers [were] in the thickness of the wall of the court toward the east, over against the separate place, and over against the building. ¹¹ And the way before them was like the appearance of the chambers which [were] toward the north, as long as they, [and] as broad as they: and all their goings out [were] both according to their fashions, and according to their doors. ¹² And according to the doors of the chambers that [were] toward the south was a door in the head of the way, [even] the way directly before the wall toward the east, as one enters into them.

The Altar

(111) ¹³ Then said he to me, The north chambers [and] the south chambers, which are before the separate place, they [be] holy chambers, where the priests that approach to the LORD shall eat the most holy things: there they will lay the most holy things, and the grain offering, and the sin offering, and the trespass offering; for the place is holy. ¹⁴ When the priests enter therein, then they will not go out of the holy [place] into the outer court, but there they shall lay their garments wherein they minister; for they are holy; and shall put on other garments, and shall approach to [those things] which are for the people. ¹⁵ Now when he had made an end of measuring the inner house, he brought me forth toward the gate whose prospect is toward the east, and measured it round about. ¹⁶ He measured the east side with the measuring reed, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed round about. ¹⁷ He measured the north side, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed round about. ¹⁸ He measured the south side, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed. ¹⁹ He turned about to the west side, [and] measured five hundred reeds with the measuring reed. ²⁰ He measured it by the four sides: it had a wall round about, five hundred [reeds] long, and five hundred broad, to make a separation between the sanctuary and the profane place.

43-46 Worship of the Temple

Home of the LORD

(112) ¹ Afterward he brought me to the gate, [even] the gate that looks toward the east:

² And, behold, ^a **the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east:** and his voice was like a noise of many waters: and the earth shined with his glory. ³ And [it was] according to the appearance of the vision which I saw, [even] according to the vision that I saw when I came to destroy the city: and the visions [were] like the vision that I saw by the river Chebar; and **I fell upon my face.** ⁴ And the glory of the LORD came into the house by the way of the gate whose prospect is toward the east.

⁵ So the spirit took me up, and brought me into the inner court; and, behold, the glory of the LORD filled the house. ⁶ And I heard [him] speaking to me out of the house; and the man stood by me. ⁷ And he said to me, **Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel forever, and my holy name,** shall the house of Israel no more defile, [neither] they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places. ⁸ In their setting of their threshold by my thresholds, and their post by my posts, and the wall between me and them, they have even defiled my holy name by their abominations that they have committed: wherefore I have consumed them in my anger. ⁹ Now let them put away their whoredom, and the carcasses of their kings, far from me, and I will dwell in the midst of them forever. ¹⁰ You son of man, show the house to the house of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their iniquities: and let them measure the pattern. ¹¹ And if they be ashamed of all that they have done, show them the form of the house, and the fashion thereof, and the goings out thereof, and the comings in thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the laws thereof: and write [it] in their sight, that they may keep the whole form thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and do them. ¹² This is the law of the house; Upon the top of the mountain the whole limit thereof round about [shall be] most holy. Behold, this is the law of the house.

^a The glory of the Lord that departed in Ezekiel 9 and 10 has returned. His presence is due to holiness, as his absence is due to sin. Applying this truth to our hearts, the same way Christ departs is the way he returns. Are you walking in his presence or absence today?

The Design of the Altar

(113) ¹³ And these are the measures of the altar after the cubits: The cubit is a cubit and a hand breadth; even the bottom [shall be] a cubit, and the breadth a cubit, and the border thereof by the edge thereof round about [shall be] a span: and this [shall be] the higher place of the altar. ¹⁴ And from the bottom [upon] the ground [even] to the lower settle [shall be] two cubits, and the breadth one cubit; and from the lesser settle [even] to the greater settle [shall be] four cubits, and the breadth [one] cubit. ¹⁵ So the altar [shall be] four cubits; and from the altar and upward [shall be] four horns. ¹⁶ And the altar [shall be] twelve [cubits] long, twelve broad, square in the four squares thereof. ¹⁷ And the settle [shall be] fourteen [cubits] long and fourteen broad in the four squares thereof; and the border about it [shall be] half a cubit; and the bottom thereof [shall be] a cubit about; and his stairs shall look toward the east.

Consecration of the Altar

(114) ¹⁸ And he said to me, Son of man, thus says the Lord GOD; These are the ordinances of the altar in the day when they shall make it, to offer burnt offerings thereon, and to sprinkle blood thereon.

¹⁹ And you shall give to the priests the Levites that be of the seed of Zadok, which approach to me, to minister to me, says the Lord GOD, a young bullock for a sin offering. ²⁰ And you shall take of the blood thereof, and put [it] on the four horns of it, and on the four corners of the settle, and upon the border round about: thus shall you cleanse and purge it. ²¹ You shall take the bullock also of the sin offering, and he shall burn it in the appointed place of the house, without the sanctuary. ²² And on the second day you shall offer a kid of the goats without blemish for a sin offering; and they shall cleanse the altar, as they did cleanse [it] with the bullock. ²³ When you have made an end of cleansing [it], you shall offer a young bullock without blemish, and a ram out of the flock without blemish. ²⁴ And you shall offer them before the LORD, and the priests shall cast salt upon them, and they shall offer them up [for] a burnt offering to the LORD

Ezekiel Chapter 43

²⁵ Seven days shall you prepare every day a goat [for] a sin offering: they shall also prepare a young bullock, and a ram out of the flock, without blemish. ²⁶ Seven days they will purge the altar and purify it; and they shall consecrate themselves. ²⁷ And when these days are expired, it shall be, [that] upon the eighth day, and [so] forward, the priests shall make your burnt offerings upon the altar, and your peace offerings; and I will accept you, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 44

The Eastern Gate is for the Prince

(115) ¹ Then he brought me back the way of the gate of the outward sanctuary which looks toward the east; and it was shut. ² Then said the LORD unto me; **This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the LORD, the God of Israel, has entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut.** ³ [It is] for ^a the prince; the prince, he shall sit in it to eat bread before the LORD; he shall enter by the way of the porch of [that] gate, and shall go out by the way of the same. ⁴ Then brought he me the way of the north gate before the house: and I looked, and, behold, the glory of the LORD filled the house of the LORD: and I fell upon my face. ⁵ And the LORD said to me, **Son of man, mark well, and behold with your eyes, and hear with your ears all that I say to you concerning all the ordinances of the house of the LORD, and all the laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary.** ⁶ And you shall say to the rebellious, [even] to the house of Israel, Thus says the Lord GOD; O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations, ⁷ In that ye have brought [into my sanctuary] strangers, uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary, to pollute it, [even] my house, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my covenant because of all your abominations. ⁸ And ye have not kept the charge of my holy things: but ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for yourselves. ⁹ Thus says the Lord GOD; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel.

^a The prince is mentioned at least 14 times in chapters 43-47. One who is not the King nor Messiah, but administers the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. He is not a priest (45:19), has sin (45:22), must worship the Lord (46:2), and fathers sons (46:16-18). He will lead the 12 tribes of Israel (14:8-9). This could be King David considering his position of leadership in judgment with justice and worship in the Old Testament.

Laws Concerning the Priests (Levites for services/sons of Zadok for ministry)

(116) ¹⁰ And the Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray, which went astray away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity. ¹¹ Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, [having] charge at the gates of the house, and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister to them. ¹² Because they ministered to them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore I have lifted up my hand against them, says the Lord GOD, and they shall bear their iniquity. ¹³ And they shall not come near to me, to do the office of a priest to me, nor to come near to any of my holy things, in the most holy [place]: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed. ¹⁴ But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein. ¹⁵ But the priests the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of my sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from me, they shall come near to me to minister to me, and they shall stand before me to offer to me the fat and the blood, says the Lord GOD: ¹⁶ They shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister to me, and they shall keep my charge.

Ezekiel Chapter 44

Duties and Privileges of the Priest

(117) ¹⁷ And it shall come to pass, [that] when they enter in at the gates of the inner court, they shall be clothed with linen garments; and no wool shall come upon them, while they minister in the gates of the inner court, and within. ¹⁸ They shall have linen bonnets upon their heads, and shall have linen breeches upon their loins; they shall not gird [themselves] with anything that causes sweat. ¹⁹ And when they go forth into the outer court, [even] into the outer court to the people, they shall put off their garments wherein they ministered, and lay them in the holy chambers, and they shall put on other garments; and they shall not sanctify the people with their garments. ²⁰ Neither shall they shave their heads, nor allow their locks to grow long; they shall only poll their heads. ²¹ **a Neither shall any priest drink wine, when they enter into the inner court.** ²² Neither shall they take for their wives a widow, nor her that is put away: but they shall take maidens of the seed of the house of Israel, or a widow that had a priest before. ²³ **b** And they shall teach my people [the difference] between the holy and profane, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean. ²⁴ And in controversy they shall stand in judgment; [and] they shall judge it according to my judgments: and they shall keep my laws and my statutes in all my assemblies; and they shall hallow my sabbaths. ²⁵ And they shall come at no dead person to defile themselves: but for father, or for mother, or for son, or for daughter, for brother, or for sister that has had no husband, they may defile themselves. ²⁶ And after he is cleansed, they shall reckon to him seven days. ²⁷ And in the day that he goes into the sanctuary, to the inner court, to minister in the sanctuary, he shall offer his sin offering, **says the Lord GOD.** ²⁸ And it shall be to them for an inheritance: I [am] their inheritance: and ye shall give them no possession in Israel: I [am] their possession. ²⁹ They shall eat the grain offering, and the sin offering, and the trespass offering; and every dedicated thing in Israel shall be theirs. ³⁰ And the first of all the first fruits of all [things], and every oblation of all, of every [sort] of your oblations, shall be the priest's: ye shall also give to the priest the first of your dough, that he may cause the blessing to rest in your house. ³¹ The priests shall not eat of anything that is dead of itself, or torn, whether it be fowl or beast.

^a The inner court entrance is access to the altar of sacrifice, which was on the way to the temple which has the Holy Place and Most Holy Place. Since The LORD is there (48:35) continuously, no laver or furnishings inside are needed. Only the altar of sacrifice which began with the shedding of animal skins in Genesis, then Cain and Abel in Genesis 4, looking forward. In this temple we are looking backward in memorial of what God accomplished by the sacrifice of His Son on Mount Calvary.

Why no wine for the priests? Worship demands a clear mind and following detailed procedures.

Application for today. As we are a royal priesthood today (1 Peter 1:) Le 10:9; Nu 6:3; Jg 13:4; Pr 20:1; 21:17; 23:29-32; 31:4-5; Isa 5:11,22; 24:9; 28:1,3,7; Jer 23:9; 35:2-10,14,18-19; **Eze 44:21**; Ho 4:11; Lu 1:15; Ro 14:21; Eph 5:18; Tit 2:3

^b The sons of Zadok were faithful to King David; 2 Samuel 15:24, 1 Kings 1:32, 2:26-27, 35.

Dividing the Land

(118) ¹ Moreover, when ye shall divide by lot the land for inheritance, ye shall offer an oblation to the LORD, a holy portion of the land: the length [shall be] the length of five and twenty thousand [reeds], and the breadth [shall be] ten thousand. This [shall be] holy in all the borders thereof round about.

² Of this there shall be for the sanctuary five hundred [in length], with five hundred [in breadth], square round about; and fifty cubits round about for the suburbs thereof. ³ And of this measure shall you measure the length of five and twenty thousand, and the breadth of ten thousand: and in it shall be the sanctuary [and] the most holy [place]. ⁴ The holy [portion] of the land shall be for the priests the ministers of the sanctuary, which shall come near to minister to the LORD: and it shall be a place for their houses, and a holy place for the sanctuary. ⁵ And the five and twenty thousand of length, and the ten thousand of breadth, shall also the Levites, the ministers of the house, have for themselves, for a possession for twenty chambers. ⁶ And ye shall appoint the possession of the city five thousand broad, and five and twenty thousand long, over against the oblation of the holy [portion]: it shall be for the whole house of Israel. ⁷ And a [portion shall be] for the prince on the one side and on the other side of the oblation of the holy [portion], and of the possession of the city, before the oblation of the holy [portion], and before the possession of the city, from the west side westward, and from the east side eastward: and the length [shall be] over against one of the portions, from the west border to the east border. ⁸ In the land shall be his possession in Israel: and my princes shall no more oppress my people; and [the rest of] the land they will give to the house of Israel according to their tribes.

Laws for the Prince (princes/prince-King David, 45:9-46:18)

(119) ⁹ Thus says the Lord GOD; Let it suffice you, O princes of Israel: remove violence and spoil, and execute judgment and justice, take away your exactions from my people, says the Lord GOD.

¹⁰ Ye shall have just balances, and a just ephah, and a just bath. ¹¹ The ephah and the bath shall be of one measure, that the bath may contain the tenth part of a homer, and the ephah the tenth part of a homer: the measure thereof shall be after the homer. ¹² And the shekel [shall be] twenty gerahs: twenty shekels, five and twenty shekels, fifteen shekels, shall be your mina. ¹³ This is the oblation that ye shall offer; the sixth part of an ephah of a homer of wheat, and ye shall give the sixth part of an ephah of a homer of barley: ¹⁴ Concerning the ordinance of oil, the bath of oil, [ye shall offer] the tenth part of a bath out of the cor, [which is] a homer of ten baths; for ten baths are a homer: ¹⁵ And one lamb out of the flock, out of two hundred, out of the fat pastures of Israel; for a grain offering, and for a burnt offering, and for peace offerings, to make reconciliation for them, says the Lord GOD. ¹⁶ All the people of the land shall give this oblation for the prince in Israel. ¹⁷ And it shall be the prince's part [to give] burnt offerings, and grain offerings, and drink offerings, in the feasts, and in the new moons, and in the sabbaths, in all solemnities of the house of Israel: he shall prepare the sin offering, and the grain offering, and the burnt offering, and the peace offerings, to make reconciliation for the house of Israel.

Laws of the Feasts

(120) ¹⁸ Thus says the Lord GOD; In the ^a first [month], in the first [day] of the month, you shall take a young bullock without blemish, and cleanse the sanctuary: ¹⁹ And the priest shall take of the blood of the sin offering, and put [it] upon the posts of the house, and upon the four corners of the settle of the altar, and upon the posts of the gate of the inner court. ²⁰ And so you shall do the seventh [day] of the month ^b for everyone that errs, and for [him that is] simple: so shall ye reconcile the house. ²¹ In the first [month], in the fourteenth day of the month, ye shall have the passover, a feast of seven days; unleavened bread shall be eaten. ²² And upon that day shall the prince prepare for himself and for all the people of the land a bullock [for] a sin offering. ²³ And seven days of the feast he shall prepare a burnt offering to the LORD, seven bullocks and seven rams without blemish daily the seven days; and a kid of the goats daily [for] a sin offering. ²⁴ And he shall prepare a grain offering of an ephah for a bullock, and an ephah for a ram, and a hin of oil for an ephah. ²⁵ In the seventh [month], in the fifteenth day of the month, shall he do the like in the feast of the seven days, according to the sin offering, according to the burnt offering, and according to the grain offering, and according to the oil.

^b the priest making the sin offering for those the erring and simple one time a month applies for today also, however not limited to one time a month.

Ezekiel Chapter 45

Levitical Feasts (Leviticus 23)		Millennial Feasts (Ezekiel 45)	
	N/A		New Year 45:18-20
1	Passover 23:4-8	Passover	45:21-24
2	Unleavened Bread 23:6-10	Unleavened Bread	45:21-24
3	Firstfruits 23:11-14	N/A	
4	Pentecost 23:15-22	N/A	
5	Trumpets 23:23-25	N/A	
6	Atonement 23:26-32	N/A	
7	Tabernacles 23:33-44	Tabernacles	45:25
	Sabbath 23:3	Sabbath	46:1-8
		New Moon	46:1-8

Ezekiel 14:14, 20.

GEMS

Repeat: 2x (importance-Is 28, Verily), 3x (Calling-Samuel & Peter), 4x (Judgment – Amos)

All Job’s prayers are supplication or intercession

1. Live right (Job 1:1)
2. Intercede right (Job 1:5, for family, divine institution)
3. Trust God right (Job 13:15, even onto death)
4. Grieve right (Job 16:16-20, pray for the Lord’s burden) (tears)
5. Repent right (Job 40:3-5, 42:1-6, toward God)
6. Pray for others (42:7-8, friends) 7.
7. VICTORY (42:10-17, Romans 12:1-2 whole burnt offering)

PRAYING FOR VICTORY WITH JOB JOB 1:1, 1:5, 13:15, 16:16-20, 40:3-5, 42:7-8, 10-17, ROMANS 12:1-2			
Inspired order (Ezekiel 14:14, 20)	Noah (Hebrews 11:7)	Daniel (Mt 24, Mk 13)	Job (James 5:11)
Time order	Noah (2500 BC)	Job (2100 BC)	Daniel (600 BC)
Who	World	Nation	Family
Others	3 sons	3 friends	3 friends + Elihu
Purpose	Prophecy	Prophecy	Patience in Trials
Prayer	Burnt offerings	Daniel 4, 6, 9	Burnt Offerings

Laws of Worship

(121) ¹ Thus says the Lord GOD; The gate of the inner court that looks toward the east shall be shut the six working days; but on the sabbath it shall be opened, and in the day of the new moon it shall be opened. ² And the prince shall enter by the way of the porch of [that] gate without, and shall stand by the post of the gate, and the priests shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, and he shall worship at the threshold of the gate: then he shall go forth; but the gate shall not be shut until the evening. ³ Likewise the people of the land shall worship at the door of this gate before the LORD in the sabbaths and in the new moons. ⁴ And the burnt offering that the prince shall offer to the LORD in the sabbath day [shall be] six lambs without blemish, and a ram without blemish. ⁵ And the grain offering [shall be] an ephah for a ram, and the grain offering for the lambs as he shall be able to give, and a hin of oil to an ephah. ⁶ And in the day of the new moon [it shall be] a young bullock without blemish, and six lambs, and a ram: they shall be without blemish. ⁷ And he shall prepare a grain offering, ephah for a bullock, and an ephah for a ram, and for the lambs according as his hand shall attain to, and a hin of oil to an ephah. ⁸ And when the prince shall enter, he shall go in by the way of the porch of [that] gate, and he shall go forth by the way thereof. ⁹ But when the people of the land shall come before the LORD in the solemn feasts, he that enters in by the way of the north gate to worship shall go out by the way of the south gate; and he that enters by the way of the south gate shall go forth by the way of the north gate: he shall not return by the way of the gate whereby he came in, but shall go forth over against it. ¹⁰ And the prince in the midst of them, when they go in, shall go in; and when they go forth, shall go forth. ¹¹ And in the feasts and in the solemnities the grain offering shall be an ephah to a bullock, and an ephah to a ram, and to the lambs as he is able to give, and a hin of oil to an ephah. ¹² Now when the prince shall prepare a voluntary burnt offering or peace offerings voluntarily to the LORD, [one] shall then open him the gate that looks toward the east, and he shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, as he did on the sabbath day: then he shall go forth; and after his going forth [one] shall shut the gate. ¹³ You shall daily prepare a burnt offering to the LORD [of] a lamb of the first year without blemish: you shall prepare it every morning. ¹⁴ And you shall prepare a grain offering for it every morning, the sixth part of an ephah, and the third part of a hin of oil, to temper with the fine flour; a grain offering continually by a perpetual ordinance to the LORD. ¹⁵ Thus they will prepare the lamb, and the grain offering, and the oil, every morning [for] a continual burnt offering.

The Prince's Inheritance Laws

(122) ¹⁶ Thus says the Lord GOD; If the prince give a gift to any of his sons, the inheritance thereof shall be his sons'; it [shall be] their possession by inheritance. ¹⁷ But if he give a gift of his inheritance to one of his servants, then it shall be his to the year of liberty; after it shall return to the prince: but his inheritance shall be his sons' for them. ¹⁸ Moreover the prince shall not take of the people's inheritance by oppression, to thrust them out of their possession; [but] he shall give his sons inheritance out of his own possession: that my people be not scattered every man from his possession.

Laws for Preparing the Offerings

(123) ¹⁹ After he brought me through the entry, which was at the side of the gate, into the holy chambers of the priests, which looked toward the north: and, behold, there was a place on the two sides westward. ²⁰ Then said he to me, This is the place where the priests shall boil the trespass offering and the sin offering, where they shall bake the grain offering; that they bear them not out into the outer court, to sanctify the people. ²¹ Then he brought me forth into the outer court, and caused me to pass by the four corners of the court; and, behold, in every corner of the court [there was] a court. ²² In the four corners of the court [there were] courts joined of forty [cubits] long and thirty broad: these four corners [were] of one measure. ²³ And [there was] a row [of building] round about in them, round about them four, and [it was] made with boiling places under the rows round about. ²⁴ Then said he to me, These are the places of them that boil, where the ministers of the house shall boil the sacrifice of the people.

47-48 Millennial Land

The Deepening Healing Waters and Trees

(124) ¹ Afterward he brought me again to the door of the house; and, behold, ^a **waters issued out from under the threshold of the house eastward:** for the forefront of the house [stood toward] the east, and the waters came down from under from the right side of the house, at the south [side] of the altar. ² Then brought he me out of the way of the gate northward, and led me about the way without to the outer gate by the way that looks eastward; and, behold, there ran out waters on the right side. ³ And when the man that had the line in his hand went forth eastward, he measured a thousand cubits, and he brought me through the waters; **the waters [were] to the ankles.** ⁴ Again he measured a thousand, and brought me through the waters; **the waters [were] to the knees.** Again he measured a thousand, and brought me through; **the waters [were] to the loins.** ⁵ Afterward he measured a thousand; [and it was] a river that I could not pass over: for the waters were risen, **waters to swim in,** a river that could not be passed over. ⁶ And he said to me, **Son of man, have you seen [this]?** Then he brought me, and caused me to return to the brink of the river. ⁷ Now when I had returned, behold, at the bank of the river [were] very many trees on the one side and on the other. ⁸ Then he said to me, **These waters issue out toward the east country, and go down into the desert, and go into the sea: [which being] brought forth into the sea, the waters shall be healed.** ⁹ And it shall come to pass, [that] everything that lives, which moves, whithersoever the rivers shall come, shall live: and there shall be a very great multitude of fish, because these waters shall come thither: for they shall be healed; and everything shall live where the river comes. ¹⁰ And it shall come to pass, [that] the fishers shall stand upon it from Engedi even to Eneglaim; they shall be a [place] to spread forth nets; their fish shall be according to their kinds, as the fish of the great sea, exceeding many. ¹¹ But the miry places thereof and the marshes thereof shall not be healed; they shall be given to salt. ¹² And by the river upon the bank thereof, on this side and on that side, shall grow all **trees for food, whose leaf shall not fade, neither shall the fruit thereof be consumed: it shall bring forth new fruit according to his months, because their waters they issued out of the sanctuary: and the fruit thereof shall be for food, and the leaf thereof for medicine.**

^a How do we walk in and where are we today in the healing waters and trees today?

Borders of the Land

(125) ¹³ Thus says the Lord GOD; This [shall be] the border, whereby ye shall inherit the land according to the twelve tribes of Israel: Joseph [shall have two] portions. ¹⁴ And ye shall inherit it, one as well as another: [concerning] the which I lifted up my hand to give it to your fathers: and this land shall fall to you for inheritance. ¹⁵ And this [shall be] the border of the land toward the north side, from the great sea, the way of Hethlon, as men go to Zedad; ¹⁶ Hamath, Berothah, Sibram, which is between the border of Damascus and the border of Hamath; Hazarhatticon, which is by the coast of Hauran. ¹⁷ And the border from the sea shall be Hazarenan, the border of Damascus, and the north northward, and the border of Hamath. And [this is] the north side. ¹⁸ And the east side ye shall measure from Hauran, and from Damascus, and from Gilead, and from the land of Israel [by] Jordan, from the border to the east sea. And [this is] the east side. ¹⁹ And the south side southward, from Tamar [even] to the waters of strife [in] Kadesh, the river to the great sea. And [this is] the south side southward. ²⁰ The west side also [shall be] the great sea from the border, till a man come over against Hamath. This is the west side. ²¹ So shall ye divide this land to you according to the tribes of Israel. ²² And it shall come to pass, [that] ye shall divide it by lot for an inheritance to you, and to the strangers that sojourn among you, which shall beget children among you: and they shall be to you as born in the country among the children of Israel; they shall have inheritance with you among the tribes of Israel. ²³ And it shall come to pass, [that] in what tribe the stranger sojourns, there shall ye give [him] his inheritance, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 48

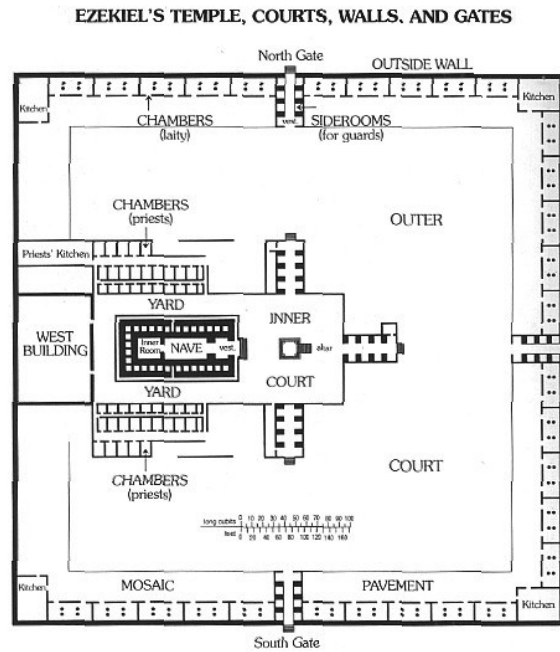
(126) ¹ Now these are the names of the tribes. From the north end to the coast of the way of Hethlon, as one goes to Hamath, Hazarenan, the border of Damascus northward, to the coast of Hamath; for these are his sides east [and] west; a [portion for] Dan. ² And by the border of Dan, from the east side to the west side, a [portion for] Asher. ³ And by the border of Asher, from the east side even to the west side, a [portion for] Naphtali. ⁴ And by the border of Naphtali, from the east side to the west side, a [portion for] Manasseh. ⁵ And by the border of Manasseh, from the east side to the west side, a [portion for] Ephraim. ⁶ And by the border of Ephraim, from the east side even to the west side, a [portion for] Reuben. ⁷ And by the border of Reuben, from the east side to the west side, a [portion for] Judah. ⁸ And by the border of Judah, from the east side to the west side, shall be the offering which ye shall offer of five and twenty thousand [reeds in] breadth, and [in] length as one of the [other] parts, from the east side to the west side: and the sanctuary shall be in the midst of it. ⁹ The oblation that ye shall offer to the LORD [shall be] of five and twenty thousand in length, and of ten thousand in breadth. ¹⁰ And for them, [even] for the priests, shall be [this] holy oblation; toward the north five and twenty thousand [in length], and toward the west ten thousand in breadth, and toward the east ten thousand in breadth, and toward the south five and twenty thousand in length: and the sanctuary of the LORD shall be in the midst thereof. ¹¹ [It shall be] for the priests that are sanctified of the sons of Zadok; which have kept my charge, which went not astray when the children of Israel went astray, as the Levites went astray. ¹² And [this] oblation of the land that is offered shall be to them a thing most holy by the border of the Levites. ¹³ And over against the border of the priests the Levites [shall have] five and twenty thousand in length, and ten thousand in breadth: all the length [shall be] five and twenty thousand, and the breadth ten thousand. ¹⁴ And they shall not sell of it, neither exchange, nor alienate the first fruits of the land: for [it is] holy to the LORD.

(127) ¹⁵ And the five thousand, that are left in the breadth over against the five and twenty thousand, shall be a profane [place] for the city, for dwelling, and for suburbs: and the city shall be in the midst thereof. ¹⁶ And these [shall be] the measures thereof; the north side four thousand and five hundred, and the south side four thousand and five hundred, and on the east side four thousand and five hundred, and the west side four thousand and five hundred. ¹⁷ And the suburbs of the city shall be toward the north two hundred and fifty, and toward the south two hundred and fifty, and toward the east two hundred and fifty, and toward the west two hundred and fifty. ¹⁸ And the residue in length over against the oblation of the holy [portion shall be] ten thousand eastward, and ten thousand westward: and it shall be over against the oblation of the holy [portion]; and the increase thereof shall be for food to them that serve the city. ¹⁹ And they that serve the city shall serve it out of all the tribes of Israel. ²⁰ All the oblation [shall be] five and twenty thousand by five and twenty thousand: ye shall offer the holy oblation foursquare, with the possession of the city. ²¹ And the residue [shall be] for the prince, on the one side and on the other of the holy oblation, and of the possession of the city, over against the five and twenty thousand of the oblation toward the east border, and westward over against the five and twenty thousand toward the west border, over against the portions for the prince: and it shall be the holy oblation; and the sanctuary of the house [shall be] in the midst thereof. ²² Moreover from the possession of the Levites, and from the possession of the city, [being] in the midst [of that] which is the prince's, between the border of Judah and the border of Benjamin, shall be for the prince. ²³ As for the rest of the tribes, from the east side to the west side, Benjamin [shall have] a [portion]. ²⁴ And by the border of Benjamin, from the east side to the west side, Simeon [shall have] a [portion]. ²⁵ And by the border of Simeon, from the east side to the west side, Issachar a [portion]. ²⁶ And by the border of Issachar, from the east side to the west side, Zebulun a [portion]. ²⁷ And by the border of Zebulun, from the east side to the west side, Gad a [portion]. ²⁸ And by the border of Gad, at the south side southward, the border shall be even from Tamar [to] the waters of strife [in] Kadesh, [and] to the river toward the great sea. ²⁹ This is the land which ye shall divide by lot to the tribes of Israel for inheritance, and these are their portions, says the Lord GOD.

Ezekiel Chapter 48

The Gates and Name of the City

(128) ³⁰ And these are the goings out of the city on the north side, four thousand and five hundred measures. ³¹ And the gates of the city [shall be] after the names of the tribes of Israel: three gates northward; one gate of Reuben, one gate of Judah, one gate of Levi. ³² And at the east side four thousand and five hundred: and three gates; and one gate of Joseph, one gate of Benjamin, one gate of Dan. ³³ And at the south side four thousand and five hundred measures: and three gates; one gate of Simeon, one gate of Issachar, one gate of Zebulun. ³⁴ At the west side four thousand and five hundred, [with] their three gates; one gate of Gad, one gate of Asher, one gate of Naphtali. ³⁵ [It was] round about eighteen thousand [measures]: and **the name of the city from [that] day [shall be], The LORD is there.**



Daniel (12-52, 1.25 hr, Exile) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

12 Examples of a Holy Life Taking a Stand in an Unholy Society

Key verse: Seventy weeks are determined upon your people and upon your holy city 9:24

Themes: Holy living (1-6) and world prophecy (7-12)

Hebrew Names	Chaldean Names	Chaldean meaning
Daniel – God is my judge	Belteshazzar – Bel protect the king	Bel – Babylonian god
Hananiah – the Lord is gracious	Shadrach – command of Aku	Babylonian god
Mishael – who is like the Lord?	Meshach – who is what Aku is	Babylonian god
Azariah – the Lord is my helper	Abed-nego – servant of Nego	God of vegetation (Isaiah 46:1)

To consistently practice personal purity I:

Scripture

1) must purpose holiness in our heart (Daniel & friends)	1:8
2) are able to sit in the gate of the king	2:49
3) will serve God, whether he delivers us or not from the furnace (3 friends)	3:17-18
4) can praise the King of heaven who is able to abase the proud	4:37
5) use our abilities without desire for gifts or rewards	5:17
6) trust angels to shut the lions' mouths as we are innocent in God's eyes (Daniel)	6:22
7) may be troubled and our countenance change, but keep a matter in our heart	7:28
8) can faint and be sick; then rise up, and do the king's business	8:27
9) understand the Bible and set our face to seek God by prayer with fasting	9:2-3
10) are greatly beloved, and with fear set our heart to understand and stand	10:9-11
11) be wise and turn many to righteousness to shine as the stars forever	12:3
12) Understand that some prophecy is closed up and sealed until the time of the end	12:9-10

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Daniel 4:34-37	Praise	After end of Judgment		Mind returns to normal	Nebuchadnezzar prays
Daniel 9:1-27	Supplication	Deliverance	Satan / Jerusalem	Fasting / Gabriel	Timely / Intercession

Chapters 2:4b-7:28 were written in Aramaic, to outline the "times of the gentiles".

Angels (7x): 6:22, 7:16, 8:16, 10:6 & 13, 10:18-19, 12:1

Gabriel is a messianic messenger, 8:16. Michael is a warrior for Israel, 12:1.

Application today: Dare to be a Daniel in our Babylon (Yokosuka) and be friends that grow strong together to endure hardships; together and apart.

Outline I of Daniel "God is my Judge"

Background. Daniel is similar in rise, position, and character to Joseph in Egypt. In righteousness he is compared to Noah (3 sons) and Job (3 friends) by Ezekiel (14:14, 18). Daniel has (3 friends).

<u>Southern Kingdom</u>		<u>Judah's King</u>	<u>Foreign King</u>
612-589	Habakkuk		
627-560	Jeremiah, the last prophet to Jerusalem	Josiah - Zedekiah	
605	1st captivity Daniel taken to Babylon (15 yrs. old)	Jehoiakim	Nebuchadnezzar
597	2 nd captivity Ezekiel taken to Babylon	Jehoiachin	Nebuchadnezzar
593-571	Ezekiel		
586	3 rd captivity Judah falls & Jerusalem destroyed	Zedekiah	Nebuchadnezzar
602-536	Daniel		Neb, Evil, Bel I, III
539	Babylon overthrown by Media-Persia		Darius I, Darius III
537	Jews return to Judah under governor	Zerubbabel	Cyrus
520	Haggai and Zechariah		

N.T. Comparisons: Matthew 24:15, Mark 13:14 & Luke 21:24, Hebrews 11:32-33, Revelation

Daniel

Part 1) Narrative of Daniel's Life (Historical)

1-6

King Nebuchadnezzar (Babylon)	1-4
Stand for God, dream of statue, fiery furnace, and dream of a tree	
King Belshazzar III (Babylon)	5
Writing on the wall – end of Babylonian empire	
King Darius I (Medo-Persia)	6
Lion's den	

Part 2) Daniel's Visions (Prophetical)

7-12

King Belshazzar I (Babylon)	7-8
4 beasts, then the ram & goat (Greek empire)	
King Darius III (Medo-Persia)	9
Daniel's prayer & fasting 21 days, prophecy of 70 weeks	
King Cyrus (Medo-Persia)	10:1-11:35
Prophecies of near future (Medo-Persia, Greek, Roman)	11:36-12:13
Prophecies of far future (Great tribulation – revived Roman)	

2 Dreams - Nebuchadnezzar	3 Visions - Daniel	4 Miracles
2 Statue – 6 kingdoms	7 Four beasts	1 Health in obedience (circumstantial decision)
4 Tree / Bird (only chapter in the O.T. written by a gentile)	8 Ram & Goat	3 Fiery furnace (son of man – Jesus Christ)
	10-12 Messenger	5 Handwriting on the wall (angel)
		6 Lion's Den (angel)

Kingdoms (6)	Daniel 2 (4 metals)/ 7 (4 beasts)	Daniel 8 (2 animals) / 10-11
Babylon	2:32, 37-38 Gold / 7:4, 17 Lion	
Medo-Persia	2:32, 39 Silver / 7:5, 17 Bear	8:3-8, 20-21 Ram / 10:20-21, 11:2-35
Greece	2:32, 39 Bronze / 7:6, 17 Leopard	8:3-8, 20-21 Goat / 10:20-21, 11:2-35
Rome	2:33, 40 Iron / 7:7, 17, 23 ?	
Greco-Roman	2:33, 41-43 Iron-Clay / 7:7-8, 11, 24-25	8:9-12, 23-26 / 11:36-45
Christ's Millennial	2:34-35, 44-45 / 7:13-14, 26-27	

1:1-7 *Excellence and Brainwashing*

(1) ¹ In the third year of the reign of Jehoiakim king of Judah came Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon to Jerusalem, and besieged it. ² And the Lord gave Jehoiakim king of Judah into his hand, with part of the vessels of the house of God: which he carried into the land of Shinar to the house of his god; and he brought the vessels into the treasure house of his god. ³ And the king spoke unto Ashpenaz the master of his eunuchs, that he should bring [certain] of the children of Israel, and of the king's seed, and of the princes; ⁴ Children in whom was no blemish, but well favored, and skillful in all wisdom, and cunning in knowledge, and understanding science, and such as had ability in them to stand in the king's palace, and whom they might teach the learning and the tongue of the Chaldeans. ⁵ And the king appointed them a daily provision of the king's meat, and of the wine which he drank: so nourishing them three years, that at the end thereof they might stand before the king. ⁶ Now among these were of the children of Judah: Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah: ⁷ To whom the prince of the eunuchs gave names: for he gave to Daniel [the name] of Belteshazzar; and to Hananiah, of Shadrach; and to Mishael, of Meshach; and to Azariah, of Abednego.

Notes: Young men around 15 years old. Jehoiakim is appointed by Egypt as king. Indoctrination. Land of Shinar is Nimrod's Tower of Babel in Genesis 10-11 where all false religious systems began. This will end at Revelation 17-18 where the religious and commercial Babylonian systems are ended before the return of Jesus Christ. An Eunuch is one of three categories Jesus described in Matthew 19:12: By birth, force or choice.

1:8-17 *A Special Diet of the King for 3 Years is Wisely Refused*

(2) ⁸ **But Daniel purposed in his heart that he would not defile himself with the portion of the king's meat, nor with the wine which he drank:** therefore he requested of the prince of the eunuchs that he might not defile himself. ⁹ Now God had brought Daniel into favor and tender love with the prince of the eunuchs. ¹⁰ And the prince of the eunuchs said unto Daniel, I fear my lord the king, who has appointed your meat and your drink: for why should he see your faces worse liking than the children which are of your sort? then shall ye make [me] endanger my head to the king. ¹¹ Then said Daniel unto Melzar, whom the prince of the eunuchs had set over Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, ¹² Prove your servants, I beseech you, ten days; and let them give us pulse to eat, and water to drink. ¹³ Then let our countenances be looked upon before you, and the countenance of the children that eat of the portion of the king's meat: and as you see, deal with your servants. ¹⁴ So he consented unto them in this matter, and proved them ten days. ¹⁵ And at the end of ten days their countenances appeared fairer and fatter in flesh than all the children which did eat the portion of the king's meat. ¹⁶ Thus Melzar took away the portion of their meat, and the wine that they should drink; and gave them pulse. ¹⁷ As for these four children, God gave them knowledge and skill in all learning and wisdom: and Daniel had understanding in all visions and dreams.

Note: Defile, pollute, or spotted are external, physical and temporary in the Old Testament, until Jesus died on the cross. This changes in the New Testament (Matthew 15:16-20, Acts 10, 1 Corinthians 10, Ephesians 5:3-4, 5:25-29, 1 Timothy 4:5). The heart is desperately wicked in unsaved man, and we have a new heart since Acts 2.

1:18-21 *Ten Times Better (18-20) and Ending Well (21)*

(3) ¹⁸ Now at the end of the days that the king had said he should bring them in, then the prince of the eunuchs brought them in before Nebuchadnezzar. ¹⁹ And the king communed with them; and among them all was found none like Daniel, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah: therefore stood they before the king. ²⁰ And in all matters of wisdom [and] understanding, that the king enquired of them, he found them ten times better than all the magicians [and] astrologers that [were] in all his realm. ²¹ And Daniel continued [even] to the first year of king Cyrus.

Note: Cyrus, and Jeremiah's 70-year prophecy with Isaiah's prophecy. God's time and timing. The traditional site of Daniel's 80 foot tomb is Susa in Iran.

Daniel Chapter 2

2:1-13 *The King Demands to Know and Interpret his Troubling Dreams*

(4) ¹ And in the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him. ² Then the king commanded to call the magicians, and the astrologers, and the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans, for to show the king his dreams. So they came and stood before the king. ³ And the king said unto them, I have dreamed a dream, and my spirit was troubled to know the dream. ⁴ **Then spoke the Chaldeans to the king in Syriack,** ^a O king, live forever: tell your servants the dream, and we will show the interpretation. ⁵ The king answered and said to the Chaldeans, The thing is gone from me: if ye will not make known to me the dream, with the interpretation thereof, ye shall be cut in pieces, and your houses shall be made a dunghill. ⁶ But if ye show the dream, and the interpretation thereof, ye shall receive of me **gifts and rewards and great honor:** therefore show me the dream, and the interpretation thereof. ⁷ They answered again and said, Let the king tell his servants the dream, and we will show the interpretation of it. ⁸ The king answered and said, I know of certainty **that ye would gain the time,** because ye see the thing is gone from me.

^a 2:4b-7:28 in Syriac, Peshitta was translated into Syriac from Biblical Hebrew, probably 2nd century AD,

(5) ⁹ But if ye will not make known to me the dream, [there is but] one decree for you: for ye have prepared **lying and corrupt words** to speak before me, **till the time be changed:** therefore tell me the dream, and I shall know that ye can show me the interpretation thereof. ¹⁰ The Chaldeans answered before the king, and said, There is not a man upon the earth that can show the king's matter: therefore there is no king, lord, nor ruler, [that] asked such things at any magician, or astrologer, or Chaldean. ¹¹ And [it is] a rare thing that the king requires, and there is none other that can show it before the king, **except the gods, whose dwelling is not with flesh.** ¹² For this cause the **king was angry and very furious,** and commanded to destroy all the wise [men] of Babylon. ¹³ And the **decree went forth** that the wise [men] should be slain; and they sought Daniel and his fellows to be slain. ¹⁴ Then Daniel answered with counsel and wisdom to **Arioch the captain of the king's guard,** which was gone forth to slay the wise [men] of Babylon: ¹⁵ He answered and said to Arioch the king's captain, Why is the decree [so] hasty from the king? Then Arioch made the thing known to Daniel. ¹⁶ Then Daniel went in, and desired of the king that he would give him **time,** and that he would show the king the interpretation.

2:14-30 *Daniel Seeks God (17-18) Prayer & Praise (19-23) and Petitions the King*

(6) ¹⁷ Then Daniel went to his house, and made the thing known to Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, his companions: ¹⁸ That they would desire mercies of the God of heaven concerning this **secret;** that Daniel and his fellows should **not perish with the rest of the wise [men] of Babylon.**

(7) ¹⁹ Then was the secret revealed to Daniel in a **night vision.** Then Daniel blessed **the God of heaven.** ²⁰ Daniel answered and said, Blessed be the name of God for ever and ever: for **wisdom and might** are His: ²¹ And He changes the times and the seasons: **He removes kings, and sets up kings:** He **gives wisdom to the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding:** ²² **He reveals the deep and secret things: He knows what is in the darkness, and the light dwells with Him.** ²³ I thank you, and praise you, O You God of my fathers, who has given me **wisdom and might,** and has made known to me now what we desired of You: for You have [now] made known to us the king's matter.

(8) ²⁴ Therefore **Daniel went in unto Arioch,** whom the king had ordained to destroy the wise [men] of Babylon: he went and said thus unto him; **Destroy not the wise [men] of Babylon:** bring me in before the king, and I will show unto the king the interpretation. ²⁵ Then Arioch brought in Daniel before the king **in haste,** and said thus to him, I have found a man of the captives of Judah, that will make known unto the king the interpretation. ²⁶ The king answered and said to Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, Are you able to make known unto me the dream which I have seen, and the interpretation thereof? ²⁷ Daniel answered in the presence of the king, and said, The secret which the king has demanded cannot the wise [men], the astrologers, the magicians, the soothsayers, show to the king; ²⁸ But there is a God in heaven that **reveals secrets,** and makes known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in **the latter days.**

Daniel Chapter 2

Your dream, and the visions of your head upon your bed, are these; ²⁹ As for you, O king, your thoughts came [into your mind] upon your bed, what should come to pass hereafter: and He that reveals secrets makes known to you what shall come to pass. ³⁰ But as for me, **this secret is not revealed to me for [any] wisdom that I have more than any living**, but for [our] sakes that shall make known the interpretation to the king, and that you might know the thoughts of your heart.

Note: Proverbs 25:2-3

2:31-45 *Daniel Tells (31-35) and Interprets (36-45) the Dream to the King*

(9) ³¹ You, O king, saw, and behold a **great image**. This great image, whose **brightness was excellent**, stood before you; and the form thereof was **terrible**. ³² This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, ³³ His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay. ³⁴ **You saw till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet [that were] of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces.** ³⁵ Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and **became like the chaff of the summer threshing-floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them:** and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.

Note: No place found seems like the darkness of nothing. Isaiah 9:6-7.

Babylon (37-38), **Persia** (39a) / **Greece** (39b), **Rome** (40) / Greco-Rome (41-43), Christ's (44-45)

(10) ³⁶ This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. ³⁷ You, O king, are a **king of kings: for the God of heaven has given you a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory.** ³⁸ And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven has he given into your hand, and has made you ruler over them all. You are this head of gold. ³⁹ And after you shall arise another kingdom **inferior** to you, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. ⁴⁰ And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaks in pieces and subdues all [things]: and as iron that breaks all these, **shall it break in pieces and bruise.** ⁴¹ And whereas you saw the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as you saw the iron mixed with miry clay. ⁴² And [as] the toes of the feet [were] part of iron, and part of clay, [so] the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. ⁴³ And whereas you saw iron mixed with miry clay, **they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men:** but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

(11) ⁴⁴ And in the days of **these kings** shall the **God of heaven set up a^a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people**, [but] it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever. ⁴⁵ Forasmuch as you saw that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the **great God has made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter:** and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

^a The kingdom is Israel's millennial kingdom in Revelation 19-20 and many Old Testament prophecies; i.e., Ezekiel 40-48.

2:46-49 *Daniel Honored by the King*

(12) ⁴⁶ Then the king Nebuchadnezzar **fell upon his face, and worshipped Daniel**, and commanded that they should offer an oblation and sweet odors unto him. ⁴⁷ The king answered unto Daniel, and said, Of a truth [it is], that your God is a God of gods, and a Lord of kings, and a **revealer of secrets**, seeing you could reveal this secret. ⁴⁸ Then the king made Daniel a great man, and gave him many great gifts, and made him **ruler over the whole province of Babylon, and chief of the governors over all the wise [men] of Babylon.** ⁴⁹ Then Daniel requested of the king, and he set Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, over the affairs of the province of Babylon: but **Daniel [sat] in the gate of the king.**

3:1-7 PRIDE – Worship the Image of Gold or Die

(13) ¹ Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold, whose height was threescore cubits, [and] the breadth thereof six cubits: he set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon. ² Then Nebuchadnezzar the king **sent to gather together** the princes, the governors, and the captains, the judges, the treasurers, the counselors, the sheriffs, and all the rulers of the provinces, to come to the dedication of the image which Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up. ³ Then the princes, the governors, and captains, the judges, the treasurers, the counselors, the sheriffs, and all the rulers of the provinces, **were gathered together** to the **dedication of the image** that Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up; and they stood before the image that Nebuchadnezzar had set up. ⁴ Then a herald cried aloud, To you it is commanded, O **people, nations, and languages,** ⁵ [That] at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, lute, dulcimer, and **all kinds of music,** ye fall down and worship the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar the king has set up: ⁶ And whoso falls not down and worships shall the same hour be ^a **cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace.** ⁷ Therefore at that time, when all the people heard the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, lute, and **all kinds of music, all the people, the nations, and the languages, fell down [and] worshipped the golden image** that Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up.

^a Cast in Aramaic is used 11 times in Daniel 2-7: 3:6, 11,15, 20, 21, 24 (fiery furnace), 6:7, 12, 16, 24 (lion's den), and 7:9 (thrones thrown, or set up quickly). In 7:9 the word "down" is added, which makes the thrones belong to those who sat with God to judge. Rev 13-17, image of the beast 7x.

Notes: The time is around 584 BC, 20 years after Daniel chapter 2 ends. Jerusalem and the temple are destroyed 18 years after the first exile of Nebuchadnezzar from Jerusalem to Babylon in 605 BC.

The image of Nebuchadnezzar is 90 feet tall and 9 feet wide, probably on a pedestal in the plain of Dura. The 2nd commandment forbids the worship of idols or images made of anything on earth. The image in Babylon looks back at the tower of Babel by Nimrod in Genesis 10-11, and points ahead to the image of the antichrist in spiritual and commercial Babylon in Revelation 17-18.

3:8-15 PERSECUTION – Jews who Refuse to Worship the Image

(14) ⁸ Wherefore at that time certain **Chaldeans** came near, and accused the Jews. ⁹ They spoke and said to the king Nebuchadnezzar, O king, live forever. ¹⁰ You, O king, has **made a decree,** that every man that shall hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, lute, and dulcimer, and **all kinds of music,** shall fall down and worship the golden image: ¹¹ And whoso falls not down and worships, [that] he should be cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace. ¹² There are certain Jews whom you have set over the affairs of the province of Babylon, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego; these men, O king, have **not regarded you:** they serve not your gods, nor worship the golden image which you have set up.

¹³ Then Nebuchadnezzar in [his] **rage and fury** commanded to bring Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. Then they brought these men before the king. ¹⁴ Nebuchadnezzar spoke and said to them, [Is it] true, O Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, do not ye serve my gods, nor worship the golden image which I have set up? ¹⁵ Now if ye be ready that at what time ye hear the sound of the cornet, flute, harp, sackbut, lute, and dulcimer, and **all kinds of music, ye fall down and worship the image** which I have made; [well]: but if ye worship not, ye shall be cast **the same hour** into the midst of a burning fiery furnace; and **who is that God that shall deliver you out of my hands?**

3:16-18 PURITY – the 100% Uncompromised Heart

¹⁶ Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, answered and said to the king, O Nebuchadnezzar, **we are not careful to answer you in this matter.** ¹⁷ If it be [so], our God whom we serve is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and He will deliver [us] out of your hand, O king. ¹⁸ But if not, be it known to you, O king, that we will not serve your gods, nor worship the golden image which you have set up.

Note: Worship as Job 13:17 and the Apostles in Acts 5:29 and Rev 12:11. "Hitler's nationalist view: Whoever serves ___ serves ___ nation, serves god." Mt 6:33 seek ye first the political kingdom ... 1960, Ghana. Is 2:4 "they shall beat their swords into plowshares,...neither shall they learn war any more" U.N.

Daniel Chapter 3

3:19-25 **PROTECTION - While in the Fiery Furnace an Angel Appears**

(15) ¹⁹ Then was Nebuchadnezzar **full of fury, and the form of his visage was changed against** Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego: [therefore] he spoke, and commanded that they should heat the furnace ^a greatly, seven times more than it was custom to be heated. ²⁰ And he commanded the most mighty men that [were] in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, [and] to cast them into the burning fiery furnace. ²¹ Then these men were bound in their coats, their hosen, and their hats, and their [other] garments, and were cast into the midst of the burning fiery furnace. ²² Therefore because the king's commandment was urgent, and the furnace exceeding hot, the flame of the fire slew those men that took up Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego. ²³ And these three men, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, fell down bound into the midst of the burning fiery furnace. ²⁴ **Then** Nebuchadnezzar the king was astonished, and rose up in haste, [and] spoke, and said unto his counselors, Did not we cast three men **bound** into the midst of the fire? They answered and said to the king, True, O king. ²⁵ He answered and said, Look, I see **four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God.**

Note: Daniel is away at the king's business. Daniel represent the raptured church during the future tribulation of Israel and the earth. Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego represent the 2 witness, Moses and Elijah, and the 144,000 Jews during the future tribulation in Revelation 7, 11, and 14. The fourth man is the pre-incarnat Christ, who frees us from the bondage of man to walk with Him.

^a 3:19 "one" in KJV is "greatly", in context of Aramaic or Chaldean in Daniel 2:31, 14x total.

3:26-30 **PROMOTION - The King Recognizes (26-28) and Promotes (29-30) the 3 Jews**

(16) ²⁶ Then Nebuchadnezzar came near to the mouth of the burning fiery furnace, [and] spoke, and said, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, ye servants of the most high God, come forth, and come [hither]. Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, came forth of the midst of the fire. ²⁷ And the princes, governors, and captains, and the king's counselors, being gathered together, saw these men, upon whose bodies the fire had no power, nor was a hair of their head singed, neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them. ²⁸ [Then] Nebuchadnezzar spoke, and said, Blessed [be] the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, who has sent **His angel, and delivered his servants that trusted in him, and have changed the king's word, and yielded their bodies, that they might not serve nor worship any god, except their own God.**

Note: Was the king saved? Time between chapters 3 and 4? The gift of suffering, 1 Peter 1:6-9.

²⁹ Therefore I make a **decree**, That every **people, nation, and language**, which speak anything amiss against the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, **shall be cut in pieces, and their houses shall be made a dunghill**: because there is no other God that can deliver after this sort. ³⁰ Then the king **promoted** Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, in the province of Babylon.

Note: Repeat of Daniel 2:5. Dunghill equals trash and waste of all types, dung gate. Our past as dung, Phil 3:8. Ez 4:12, 15, human waste baked in cakes. Malachi 2:3 Animal sacrifice waste spread on faces.

Time and timing factors: (six is the number of man, seven is God's perfection or completion)

- | | | |
|--|------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. Jerusalem and temple destroyed | Matthew 24-25 | restored |
| 2. Daniel is not present | Rev 4:1, 12:5 | caught up |
| 3. Events move quickly in a predetermined time | Rev 6, 18:10, 17 | 7 seals, one hour |
| 4. The king/kingdom decree is violent | Rev 12:11, 13 | forced state religion |
| 5. Religion and Government are merged | Rev 17-18 | religion & prosperity |
| 6. Music initiates the worship of the image | Rev 18:22 | music no more |

4 types: Nebuchadnezzar (66) is like Paul before his salvation in Acts 9 – antichrist (666), Shadrach, Meshach, & Abed-nego – Israel, Fire – tribulation, Daniel – the church.

Ez 20:14, 20 Noah (earth), Daniel (nation), and Job (family). 1 John 5:21 Keep yourself from idols. Idols today are inward from the heart which put self above God in our time and priorities by TV or sports stars, music, drugs, philosophies, traditions, emotions and materialism.

Daniel Chapter 4 Nebuchadnezzar's Conversion Praise (1-3, 43-47) and Testimony (4-42)

4:1-7 Memo to the Kingdom, Praise (1-3) and Background (4-7)

(17) ¹ **Nebuchadnezzar the king, to all people, nations, and languages, that dwell in all the earth; Peace be multiplied unto you.** ² I thought it good to show the signs and wonders that the high God has worked toward me. ³ How great are His signs! and how mighty are His wonders! His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and His dominion is from generation to generation. ⁴ I Nebuchadnezzar was at rest in my house, and flourishing in my palace: ⁵ I saw a dream which made me afraid, and the thoughts upon my bed and the visions of my head troubled me. ⁶ Therefore made I a **decree** to bring in all the wise [men] of Babylon before me, that they might make known unto me the interpretation of the dream. ⁷ Then came in the magicians, the astrologers, the Chaldeans, and the soothsayers: and I told the dream before them; but they did not make known unto me the interpretation thereof.

4:8-17 The King Requests Daniel to Interpret his Dream (8-12) and Angelic Vision (13-17)

(18) ⁸ But at the last **Daniel** came in before me, **whose name was Belteshazzar**, according to the name of my god, and **in whom is the spirit of the holy gods**: and before him I told the dream, [saying], ⁹ O Belteshazzar, master of the magicians, because I know that the **spirit of the holy gods is in you**, and no secret troubles you, tell me the visions of my dream that I have seen, and the interpretation thereof. ¹⁰ Thus [were] the visions of my head in my bed; I saw, and behold a tree in the midst of the earth, and the height thereof was great. ¹¹ The tree grew, and was strong, and the height thereof reached to heaven, and the sight thereof to the end of all the earth: ¹² The leaves thereof [were] fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was food for all: the beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it.

¹³ I saw in the visions of my head upon my bed, and, behold, **a watcher and a holy one came down from heaven**; ¹⁴ He cried aloud, and said thus, Hew down the tree, and cut off his branches, shake off his leaves, and scatter his fruit: let the beasts get away from under it, and the fowls from his branches: ¹⁵ Nevertheless leave the stump of his roots in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and [let] his portion [be] with the beasts in the grass of the earth: ¹⁶ **Let his heart be changed from man's, and let a beast's heart be given unto him**; and let seven times pass over him. ¹⁷ This matter is by the **decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones**: to the intent that the living may know that the Most High rules in the kingdom of men, and gives it to whomsoever He will, and sets up over it the **basest of men**.

Note: A great tree follows a great image to worship 7 years earlier. King Nebuchadnezzar was following Lucifer (Isaiah 14:12 and Ezekiel 28), yet ordained since the foundation of the world (Ephesians 1:4, Matthew 13:35) to be "My servant" in Jeremiah 25:9, 27:6-7, and 43:10.

Heb 6 – whom God love he chastens. His children can learn the hard way or the easy way. Do not be an empire builder on earth! Build Jesus in others. Illness – Clinical Lycanthropy.

Job 33:14-18 Elihu says God calls man to repentance in many ways, 2x dreams and visions. Vs 16, heart changed from a man's heart to a beast's heart. Beast of sea and earth with heart of animal – Rev 13.

Return like the prodigal son, in a much better eternal state of being. Principle of expositional constancy – tree (man, insanity outside of God, root of David, Tree of knowledge and tree of life)

Daniel 3 – conviction of sin around 7 years earlier, not saved or converted to the most holy God until after brokedness and repentance. Last mention of Shadrach, Meshash, and Abed-nego.

Nebuchadnezzar in chapter 4 is the only gentile writer of Scripture in the Old Testament and Luke is the only gentile writer of Scripture in the New Testament (Luke and Acts). He reigned and knew Daniel for 43 years, 605-562 BC. James 4:7-10 is the key New Testament reference.

Archeological proof: 350 BC Greek historian Megasthenes said "he was possessed by some god" and eventual downfall of Babylon. Was it due to being righteous and helping the poor, Daniel 4:27?

A cuneiform tablet of 18 lines published at the British museum in 1975 says, His life appeared of no value to him, speaks bad counsel to Evil-merodach, Then he gives an entirely different order, He does not heed the words from his own lips, He does not show love to son or daughter, family and clan do not exist, He weeps bitterly to Marduk, the great gods. His prayers go forth to.

Daniel Chapter 4

4:18-27 **Daniel Interprets the Dream (18-22) and Vision (23-27)**

(19) ¹⁸ This dream I king Nebuchadnezzar have seen. Now you, O Belteshazzar, declare the interpretation thereof, forasmuch as all the wise [men] of my kingdom are not able to make known to me the interpretation: but you are able; for the **spirit of the holy gods is in you.** ¹⁹ Then Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, was astonished for one hour, and his thoughts troubled him. The king spoke, and said, Belteshazzar, let not the dream, or the interpretation thereof, trouble you. Belteshazzar answered and said, My lord, the dream [be] to them that hate you, and the interpretation thereof to your enemies.

²⁰ The tree that you saw, which grew, and was strong, whose height reached unto the heaven, and the sight thereof to all the earth; ²¹ Whose leaves [were] fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was food for all; under which the beasts of the field dwelt, and upon whose branches the fowls of the heaven had their habitation: ²² It is you, O king, that are grown and become strong: for your greatness is grown, and reaches unto heaven, and your dominion to the end of the earth. ²³ And whereas the king saw a watcher and a holy one coming down from heaven, and saying, Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and [let] his portion [be] with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him; ²⁴ This is the interpretation, O king, and this is the decree of the Most High, which is come upon my lord the king: ²⁵ That they shall drive you from men, and your dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and they shall make you to eat grass as oxen, and they shall wet you with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass over you, till you know that the Most High rules in the kingdom of men, and gives it to whomsoever He will. ²⁶ And whereas they commanded to leave the stump of the tree roots; your kingdom shall be sure to you, after that you shall have known that **heaven rules.**

²⁷ Wherefore, O king, let my counsel be acceptable to you, and **break off your sins by righteousness, and your iniquities by showing mercy to the poor;** if it may be a lengthening of your **tranquility.**

Note: Tranquility is used 1x and in context with peace, 4:1 RVR09, Darby, WEB. NKJV, LSB – prosperity. The poor will not be over taxed and have peace too. Vs 26, heavens do rule ^{KJV}.

4:28-33 **After 1 Year the King is Humbled for 7 Years (Herod-Acts 12:21-23, voice of a god)**

(20) ²⁸ All this came upon the king Nebuchadnezzar. ²⁹ At the end of **twelve months** he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon. ³⁰ The king spoke, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that ^a **I** have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of **my** power, and for the honor of **my** majesty?

³¹ **While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, [saying], O king Nebuchadnezzar, to you it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from you.** ³² **And they shall drive you from men, and your dwelling [shall be] with the beasts of the field: they shall make you to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over you, until you know that the Most High rules in the kingdom of men, and gives it to whomsoever He will.** ³³ The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' [feathers], and his nails like birds' [claws].

^a "I have built" is similar to when pride began to enter into King David's life as he perceived the glory of his kingdom and immediately took more wives for himself, 2 Samuel 5:12-13, 1 Chronicles 14:2-3.

4:34-37 **God Saves the King from His Pride to Glorify the King of Heaven (not Judiasm)**

³⁴ And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up my eyes unto heaven, and my understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the **most High**, and I praised and honored Him that lives forever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and **His kingdom** is from generation to generation: ³⁵ And all the inhabitants of the **earth** are reputed as nothing: and He does according to His will in the **army of heaven**, and [among] the inhabitants of the **earth**: and none can stay His hand, or say unto Him, What do You? ³⁶ At the same time my reason **returned** unto me; and for the glory of my kingdom, my honor and brightness **returned** unto me; and my counselors and my lords sought unto me; and I was established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me. ³⁷ Now I Nebuchadnezzar **praise and extol and honor the King of heaven**, all whose **works are truth**, and **His ways judgment**: and those that **walk in pride He is able to abase.**

5:1-4 **The King's Party** (food, wine, women, prosperity, idols – a false peace and safety)

(21) ¹ Belshazzar the king made a great feast to a thousand of his lords, and drank wine before the thousand. ² Belshazzar, while he tasted the wine, commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem; that the king, and his princes, his wives, and his concubines, might drink therein. ³ Then they brought the golden vessels that were taken out of the temple of the house of God which was at Jerusalem; and the king, and his princes, his wives, and his concubines, drank in them. ⁴ They drank wine, and praised the gods of gold, and of silver, of brass, of iron, of wood, and of stone.

Note: Nebuchadnezzar was the grandfather of Belshazzar. Wine 1:8, 5:1,2,3,4. OT/NT difference. Controlled by God or satan? Ephesians 5:18. OT-outward, external. NT-inward, internal.

5:5-9 **A Finger Writes on the Wall** (the king is greatly troubled)

(22) ⁵ In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the plaster of the wall of the king's palace: and the king saw the part of the hand that wrote. ⁶ Then the king's countenance was changed, and his thoughts troubled him, so that the joints of his loins were loosed, and his knees smote one against another. ⁷ The king cried aloud to bring in the astrologers, the Chaldeans, and the soothsayers. [And] the king spoke, and said to the wise [men] of Babylon, Whosoever shall read this writing, and show me the interpretation thereof, shall be clothed with scarlet, and [have] a chain of gold about his neck, and shall be the third ruler in the kingdom. ⁸ Then came in all the king's wise [men]: but they could not read the writing, nor make known to the king the interpretation thereof. ⁹ Then was king Belshazzar greatly troubled, and his countenance was changed in him, and his lords were astonished.

Note: vs 7, Nobody could read - Hebrew? Or interpret (5x) vs 7, 8, 15, 16, 17. Reward (3x) vs 7, 16, 29.

5:10-16 **The Queen Recommends Daniel** (10-12), **the King Speaks to Daniel** (13-16)

(23) ¹⁰ [Now] the queen, by reason of the words of the king and his lords, came into the banquet house: [and] the queen spoke and said, O king, live forever: let not your thoughts trouble you, nor let your countenance be changed: ¹¹ There is a man in your kingdom, in whom is the spirit of the holy gods; and in the days of your father light and understanding and wisdom, like the wisdom of the gods, was found in him; whom the king Nebuchadnezzar your father, the king, [I say], your father, made master of the magicians, astrologers, Chaldeans, [and] soothsayers; ¹² Forasmuch as an excellent spirit, and knowledge, and understanding, interpreting of dreams, and showing of hard sentences, and dissolving of doubts, were found in the same Daniel, whom the king named Belteshazzar: now let Daniel be called, and he will show the interpretation. ¹³ Then was Daniel brought in before the king. [And] the king spoke and said unto Daniel, [Are] you that Daniel, which are of the children of the captivity of Judah, whom the king my father brought out of Jewry? ¹⁴ I have even heard of you, that the spirit of the gods is in you, and [that] light and understanding and excellent wisdom is found in you. ¹⁵ And now the wise [men], the astrologers, have been brought in before me, that they should read this writing, and make known unto me the interpretation thereof: but they could not show the interpretation of the thing: ¹⁶ And I have heard of you, that you can make interpretations, and dissolve doubts: now if you can read the writing, and make known to me the interpretation thereof, you shall be clothed with scarlet, and [have] a chain of gold about your neck, and shall be the third ruler in the kingdom.

Note: vs 10, the queen-mother, the widow of Evil-merodach, named Nitocris, a lady, according to Greek historian Herodotus, eminent for her wisdom, and who had the chief direction of public affairs, or the widow of Nebuchadnezzar. Both knew Daniel well. Daniel's abilities were neglected and his position downgraded after Nebuchadnezzar died. The wisemen of Matthew 2:1-12 come from Daniel's time and maybe before with Melchizedek. The wisemen from the east were from Babylon or Shinar.

Babylon is more than a geographic location of the past. Seat of all false religions. Gen 10-11 to Rev 17-18. The tales of 2 cities – Babylon and Jerusalem. The king and kingdom represent governments and we have wisdom to understand our times and New Testament Scriptures Romans 13:1-10, 1 Tim 2:1-2.

Daniel Chapter 5

5:17-24 *Daniel Compares a Good (17-21) and Evil (22-24) King and Government*

(24) ¹⁷ Then Daniel answered and said before the king, Let your gifts be to thyself, and give your rewards to another; yet I will read the writing unto the king, and make known to him the interpretation.

¹⁸ O you king, the Most High God gave Nebuchadnezzar your father a kingdom, and majesty, and glory, and honor: ¹⁹ And for the majesty that He gave him, all people, nations, and languages, trembled and feared before him: whom he would he slew; and whom he would he kept alive; and whom he would he set up; and whom he would he put down. ²⁰ But when his heart was lifted up, and his mind hardened in pride, he was deposed from his kingly throne, and they took his glory from him: ²¹ And he was driven from the sons of men; and his heart was made like the beasts, and his dwelling was with the wild donkeys: they fed him with grass like oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven; till he knew that the Most High God ruled in the kingdom of men, and [that] He appoints over it whomsoever He will. ²² And you his son, O Belshazzar, have not humbled your heart, though you knew all this; ²³ But have lifted up yourself against the Lord of heaven; and they have brought the vessels of His house before you, and you, and your lords, your wives, and your concubines, have drunk wine in them; and you have praised the gods of silver, and gold, of brass, iron, wood, and stone, which see not, nor hear, nor know: and the God in whose hand your breath is, and whose are all your ways, have you not glorified: ²⁴ Then was the part of the hand sent from Him; and this writing was written.

Note: Daniel is a nationalist for Babylon. He is a statesman which stays with excellence from Daniel 1 to 12. The kings change in being good or evil, but Daniel does not. Saddam Hussein thought he was the reincarnation of Nebuchadnezzar and built a palace and restored some of Babylon the city. Medes – water lowered, 2 gates left open, Isaiah 44:28-45:1 and Jeremiah 51:57-58.

5:25-30 *Daniel Interprets the Writing*

(number Ps 90:12, Job 14:5. Tekel – shekel, Deut 25:13-15, Jer 32; righteousness has weight)

(25) ²⁵ And this is the writing that was written, MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPHARSIN. ²⁶ This is the interpretation of the thing: MENE; God has numbered your kingdom, and finished it. ²⁷ TEKEL; You are weighed in the balances, and are found wanting. ²⁸ PERES; Your kingdom is divided, and given to the Medes and Persians. ²⁹ Then commanded Belshazzar, and they clothed Daniel with scarlet, and [put] a chain of gold about his neck, and made a proclamation concerning him, that he should be the third ruler in the kingdom. ³⁰ In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain.

5:31-6:9 *Lion's Den - A Political Trap is set for Daniel Regarding Worship*

³¹ And Darius the Median took the kingdom, [being] about threescore and two years old.

Note: The Massoretic division of the chapters is correct. More ancient versions; Theodotion, the Peshitta, and the Vulgate agree with Stephen Langton, Archbishop of Canterbury's chapter division in 1217.

Daniel Chapter 6

(26) ¹ It pleased Darius to set over the kingdom a hundred and twenty princes, which should be over the whole kingdom; ² And over these three presidents; of whom Daniel was first: that the princes might give accounts to them, and the king should have no damage. ³ Then this Daniel was preferred above the presidents and princes, because an excellent spirit was in him; and the king thought to set him over the whole realm. ⁴ Then the presidents and princes sought to find occasion against Daniel concerning the kingdom; but they could find none occasion nor fault; forasmuch as he was faithful, neither was there any error or fault found in him. ⁵ Then said these men, We shall not find any occasion against this Daniel, except we find [it] against him concerning the law of his God. ⁶ Then these presidents and princes assembled together to the king, and said thus to him, King Darius, live forever. ⁷ All the presidents of the kingdom, the governors, and the princes, the counselors, and the captains, have consulted together to establish a royal statute, and to make a firm decree, that whosoever shall ask a petition of any God or man for thirty days, save of you, O king, he shall be cast into the den of lions. ⁸ Now, O king, establish the decree, and sign the writing, that it be not changed, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which alters not. ⁹ Wherefore king Darius signed the writing and the decree.

Note:

Daniel Chapter 6

6:10-15 *Daniel Still Prays to God Three Times a Day*

(27) ¹⁰ Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime. ¹¹ Then these men assembled, and found Daniel praying and making supplication before his God. ¹² Then they came near, and spoke before the king concerning the king's decree; Have you not signed a decree, that every man that shall ask [a petition] of any God or man within thirty days, save of you, O king, shall be cast into the den of lions? The king answered and said, The thing is true, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which alters not.

¹³ Then answered they and said before the king, That Daniel, which is of the children of the captivity of Judah, regards not you, O king, nor the decree that you have signed, but makes his petition three times a day. ¹⁴ Then the king, when he heard [these] words, was sore displeased with himself, and set [his] heart on Daniel to deliver him: and he labored till the going down of the sun to deliver him. ¹⁵ Then these men assembled to the king, and said to the king, Know, O king, that the law of the Medes and Persians is, That no decree nor statute which the king establishes may be changed.

6:16-24 *Daniel is Protected in the Lion's Den*

(28) ¹⁶ Then the king commanded, and they brought Daniel, and cast [him] into the den of lions. [Now] the king spoke and said to Daniel, Your God whom you serve continually, he will deliver you.

¹⁷ And a stone was brought, and laid upon the mouth of the den; and the king sealed it with his own signet, and with the signet of his lords; that the purpose might not be changed concerning Daniel.

¹⁸ Then the king went to his palace, and passed the night fasting: neither were instruments of music brought before him: and his sleep went from him. ¹⁹ Then the king arose very early in the morning, and went in haste to the den of lions. ²⁰ And when he came to the den, he cried with a lamentable voice to Daniel: [and] the king spoke and said to Daniel, O Daniel, servant of the living God, is your God, whom you serve continually, able to deliver you from the lions? ²¹ Then said Daniel to the king, O king, live forever. ²² My God has sent his angel, and has shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: forasmuch as before him innocency was found in me; and also before you, O king, I have done no hurt.

²³ Then was the king exceeding glad for him, and commanded that they should take Daniel up out of the den. So Daniel was taken up out of the den, and no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God. ²⁴ And the king commanded, and they brought those men which had accused Daniel, and they cast them into the den of lions, them, their children, and their wives; and the lions had the mastery of them, and brake all their bones in pieces or ever they came at the bottom of the den.

6:25-28 *Daniel Prospered in the Reigns of Darius and Cyrus*

(29) ²⁵ Then king Darius wrote to all people, nations, and languages, that dwell in all the earth; Peace be multiplied to you. ²⁶ I make a decree, That in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble and fear before the God of Daniel: for he is the living God, and steadfast forever, and his kingdom [that] which shall not be destroyed, and his dominion [shall be even] to the end. ²⁷ He delivers and rescues, and he works signs and wonders in heaven and in earth, who has delivered Daniel from the power of the lions.

²⁸ So this Daniel prospered in the reign of Darius, and in the reign of Cyrus the Persian.

Daniel Chapter 7

Daniel's Vision of 4 Beasts (focus on 4th beast)

(30) ¹ In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote the dream, [and] told the sum of the matters. ² Daniel spoke and said, I saw in my vision by night, and, behold, the four winds of the heaven strove upon the great sea. ³ And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another. ⁴ The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it. ⁵ And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and [it had] three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus to it, Arise, devour much flesh. ⁶ After this I beheld, and look another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.

⁷ After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that [were] before it; and it had ten horns.

⁸ I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn [were] eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.

Vision of God

(31) ⁹ I beheld till the thrones were cast [down], and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne [was like] the fiery flame, [and] his wheels [as] burning fire. ¹⁰ A fiery stream issued and came forth from before him: thousand thousands ministered to him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before him: the judgment was set, and the books were opened.

Vision of the 4th Beast

¹¹ I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spoke: I beheld [even] till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame. ¹² As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time.

Vision of Christ's Return

(32) ¹³ I saw in the night visions, and, behold, [one] like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. ¹⁴ And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and his kingdom [that] which shall not be destroyed.

Interpretation of the 4 Beasts as 4 Kings

(33) ¹⁵ I Daniel was grieved in my spirit in the midst of [my] body, and the visions of my head troubled me. ¹⁶ I came near to one of them that stood by, and asked him the truth of all this. So he told me, and made me know the interpretation of the things. ¹⁷ These great beasts, which are four, are four kings, [which] shall arise out of the earth. ¹⁸ But the saints of the most High shall take the kingdom, and possess the kingdom forever, even for ever and ever.

Daniel Chapter 7

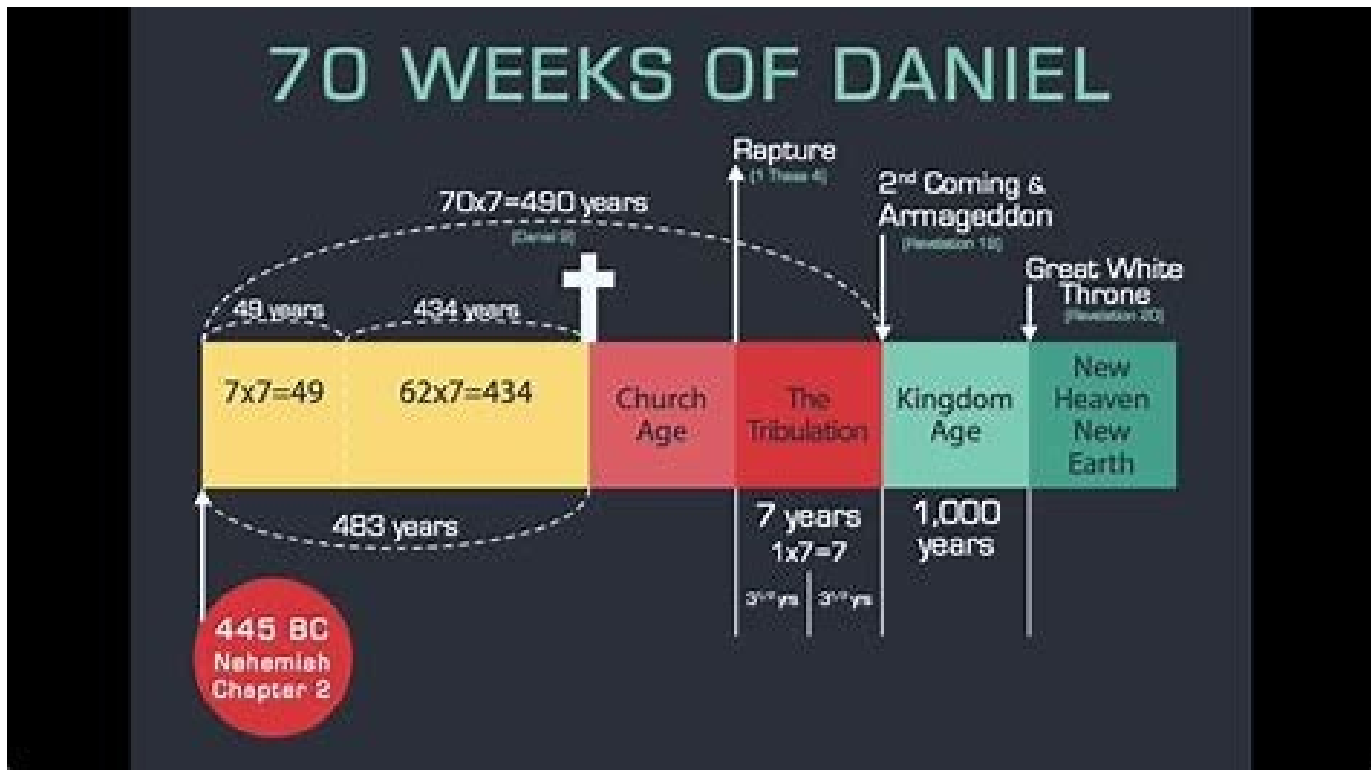
A Detailed Interpretation of the 4th Beast

19 Then I would know the truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth [were of] iron, and his nails [of] brass; [which] devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; 20 And of the ten horns that [were] in his head, and [of] the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even [of] that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spoke very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows. 21 I beheld, and the same horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them; 22 Until the Ancient of days came, and judgment was given to the saints of the most High; and the time came that the saints possessed the kingdom. 23 Thus he said, The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. 24 And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings [that] shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. 25 And he shall speak [great] words against the most High, and shall wear out the saints of the most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.

Interpretation of God and Christ's Return

(34) 26 But the judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy [it] to the end. 27 And the kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the kingdom under the whole heaven, shall be given to the people of the saints of the most High, whose kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey him. 28 Thus far is the end of the matter.

As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.



Unholy Trinity:

Satan – before his fall in Genesis 3.	Anti God	Down from heaven
Antichrist - Beast, makes other worship the image	Anti Christ	Rev 18 Political Out of the sea
False Prophet – miracles, cause to receive mark of beast	Anti Spirit	Rev 17 Religious Out of the earth

(35) ¹ In the third year of the reign of king Belshazzar a vision appeared to me, [even to] me Daniel, after that which appeared to me at the first. ² And I saw in a vision; and it came to pass, when I saw, that I was at Shushan [in] the palace, which is in the province of Elam; and I saw in a vision, and I was by the river of Ulai. ³ Then I lifted up my eyes, and saw, and, behold, there stood before the river a ram which had [two] horns: and the [two] horns [were] high; but one was higher than the other, and the higher came up last. ⁴ I saw the ram pushing westward, and northward, and southward; so that no beasts might stand before him, neither [was there any] that could deliver out of his hand; but he did according to his will, and became great.

(36) ⁵ And as I was considering, behold, a he goat came from the west on the face of the whole earth, and touched not the ground: and the goat had a notable horn between his eyes. ⁶ And he came to the ram that had [two] horns, which I had seen standing before the river, and ran to him in the fury of his power. ⁷ And I saw him come close to the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram, and brake his two horns: and there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him: and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand. ⁸ Therefore the he goat waxed very great: and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of heaven.

Detailed Vision of Goat's Little Horn

(37) ⁹ And out of one of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the pleasant [land]. ¹⁰ And it waxed great, [even] to the host of heaven; and it cast down [some] of the host and of the stars to the ground, and stamped upon them. ¹¹ Yes, he magnified [himself] even to the prince of the host, and by him the daily [sacrifice] was taken away, and the place of his sanctuary was cast down. ¹² And a host was given [him] against the daily [sacrifice] by reason of transgression, and it cast down the truth to the ground; and it practiced, and prospered. ¹³ Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said to that certain [saint] which spoke, How long [shall be] the vision [concerning] the daily [sacrifice], and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot? ¹⁴ And he said to me, To two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.

The Angel Gabriel Interprets the Vision (details of goat's little horn)

(38) ¹⁵ And it came to pass, when I, [even] I Daniel, had seen the vision, and sought for the meaning, then, behold, there stood before me as the appearance of a man. ¹⁶ And I heard a man's voice between [the banks of] Ulai, which called, and said, Gabriel, make this [man] to understand the vision. ¹⁷ So he came near where I stood: and when he came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said to me, **Understand, O son of man: for at the time of the end [shall be] the vision.** ¹⁸ **Now as he was speaking with me, I was in a deep sleep on my face toward the ground: but he touched me, and set me upright.** ¹⁹ **And he said, Behold, I will make you know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end [shall be].** ²⁰ **The ram which you saw having [two] horns are the kings of Media and Persia.** ²¹ **And the rough goat is the king of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king.** ²² **Now that being broken, whereas four stood up for it, four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation, but not in his power.**

(39) ²³ **And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up.** ²⁴ **And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the holy people.** ²⁵ **And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify [himself] in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many: he shall also stand up against the Prince of princes; but he shall be broken without hand.** ²⁶ **And the vision of the evening and the morning which was told is true: wherefore shut you up the vision; for it [shall be] for many days.** ²⁷ And I Daniel fainted, and was sick [certain] days; afterward I rose up, and did the king's business; and I was astonished at the vision, but none understood [it].

Daniel Chapter 9

(5th) 537 B.C. 68 yrs. into the 70 yr. captivity. Daniel went into exile in 605 at 15 yrs. old and is now 82.

(40) 1-3 ¹ In the first year of Darius the son of Ahasuerus, of the seed of the Medes, which was made king over the realm of the Chaldeans; ² In the first year of his reign I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the LORD came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish ^a seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem. ³ And ^b I set my face to the Lord God, to seek by prayer and supplications, with fasting, and sackcloth, and ashes:

^a Jeremiah's letter ([Jer 29:10](#)) to the captives in Babylon; also [Jer 25:11-12](#); compare [2Ch 36:21](#); where it is indicated that the 70 years exile was to restore the Sabbath rests that Israel ignored for 490 (7 x 70) years, [Leviticus 24:4-5](#), [26:34-43](#). [Jer 30:18](#); [31:38](#); [33:7-13](#). God's promises are the ground on which we should, like Daniel, rest sure hope; not so as to make our prayers needless, but rather to encourage them. Cyrus king of Persia acknowledged Jeremiah's prophecy in [Ezra 1:1](#) and supports Zerubbabel to return with Israel and re-build the temple in Jerusalem. Study of the 70-year prophecy of Jeremiah led to the 70-week prophecy of Daniel. In sequence in Daniel 9.

1 st Exile	606 BC	Daniel among exiles	Jeremiah	Nebuchadnezzar	Daniel 1:1-2
2 nd Exile	598	Ezekiel among 10K		Nebuchadnezzar	
	594	Ezekiel began to prophesy			
3 rd Exile	586	Jerusalem sacked & Temple destroyed		Nebuchadnezzar	
	538	Daniel 9:1-2		Darius, King of Medes over Persia	
1 st return	536 (70 yrs.)	Servitude of the Nation	Ezra 1-6	Zerubbabel & Joshua	Temple
				Cyrus, King of Persia	
2 nd return			Ezra 7-10	Temple	Artaxerxes
3 rd return	516 BC	Desolations of Jerusalem	Nehemiah 1-13, (2:1-5)	Walls	Artaxerxes 445

Rest for the land: **Begins in Leviticus 25-26.** 536 + 490 = 1026 AD. The time is during the reign of Solomon. It begins after he completes the temple.

^b Prayer in 9:3-19 leads into the 70 weeks prophecy of vs 20-27. Next turn to 2 Chronicles 36:22-23 to see the fulfillment of Jeremiah's 70-year prophecy.

⁴ And I prayed to the LORD my God, and made my confession, and said, O Lord, the great and dreadful God, keeping the covenant and mercy to them that love him, and to them that keep his commandments; ⁵ We have sinned, and have committed iniquity, and have done wickedly, and have rebelled, even by departing from your precepts and from your judgments: ⁶ Neither have we listened to your servants the prophets, which spoke in your name to our kings, our princes, and our fathers, and to all the people of the land. ⁷ O Lord, righteousness [belongs] to you, but to us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and to all Israel, [that are] near, and [that are] far off, through all the countries where you have driven them, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against you. ⁸ O Lord, to us [belongs] confusion of face, to our kings, to our princes, and to our fathers, because we have sinned against you. ⁹ To the Lord our God [belong] mercies and forgivenesses, though we have rebelled against him; ¹⁰ Neither have we obeyed the voice of the LORD our God, to walk in his laws, which he set before us by his servants the prophets. ¹¹ Yes, all Israel have transgressed your law, even by departing, that they might not obey your voice; therefore the curse is poured upon us, and the oath that is written in the law of Moses the servant of God, because we have sinned against him. ¹² And he has confirmed his words, which he spoke against us, and against our judges that judged us, by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole heaven has not been done as has been done upon Jerusalem. ¹³ As [it is] written in the law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities, and understand your truth. ¹⁴ Therefore has the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all his works which he does: for we obeyed not his voice. ¹⁵ And now, O Lord our God, that has brought your people forth out of the land of Egypt with a mighty hand, and has gotten you renown, as at this day; we have sinned, we have done wickedly.

Daniel Chapter 9

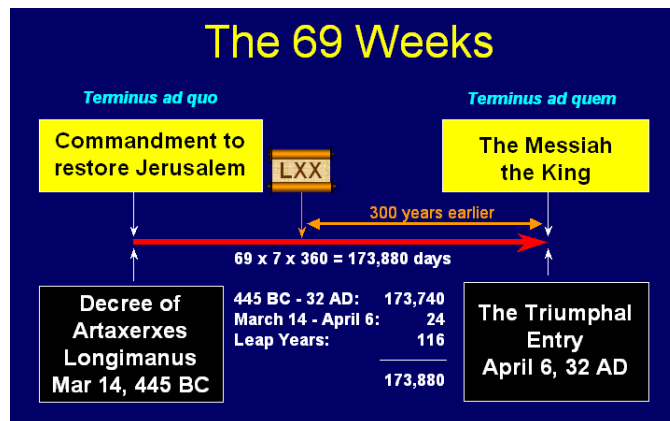
(41) ¹⁶ O Lord, according to all your righteousness, I beseech you, let your anger and your fury be turned away from your city Jerusalem, your holy mountain: because for our sins, and for the iniquities of our fathers, Jerusalem and your people [are become] a reproach to all [that are] about us.

¹⁷ Now therefore, O our God, hear the prayer of your servant, and his supplications, and cause your face to shine upon your sanctuary that is desolate, for the Lord's sake. ¹⁸ O my God, incline your ear, and hear; open your eyes, and behold our desolations, and the city which is called by your name: for we do not present our supplications before you for our righteousnesses, but for your great mercies.

¹⁹ O Lord, hear; O Lord, forgive; O Lord, hearken and do; defer not, for your own sake, O my God: for your city and your people are called by your name.

(42) ²⁰ And whiles I was speaking, and praying, and confessing my sin and the sin of my people Israel, and presenting my supplication before the LORD my God for the holy mountain of my God; ²¹ Yes, whiles I was speaking in prayer, even the man Gabriel, whom I had seen in the vision at the beginning, being caused to fly swiftly, touched me about the time of the evening oblation. ²² And he informed [me], and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give you skill and understanding.

²³ At the beginning of your supplications the commandment came forth, and I am come to show [you]; for you are greatly beloved: therefore understand the matter, and consider the vision. ²⁴ Seventy weeks are determined upon your people and upon your holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. ²⁵ Know therefore and understand, [that] from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem to the Messiah the Prince [shall be] seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. ²⁶ And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof [shall be] with a flood, and to the end of the war desolations are determined. ²⁷ And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make [it] desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.



Recognition: Timeline by Chuck Missler from his study in Daniel.

1st and 2nd Coming of Jesus Christ

Da 9:24 Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city (Jerusalem), to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. (Acts 2 to Revelation 3 is between the 69th and 70th week)

1st Coming of Jesus Christ (as the Lamb of God)

Da 9:25 Know therefore and understand, [that] from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince [shall be] seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. **Da 9:26** And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; (Roman Empire, General Titus, 70 AD)

Daniel Chapter 9

2nd Coming of Jesus Christ (as the King of Kings)

and the end thereof [shall be] with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

Da 9:27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make [it] desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.

Daniel Chapter 10

(43) ¹ In the third year of Cyrus king of Persia a thing was revealed to Daniel, whose name was called Belteshazzar; and the thing was true, but the time appointed was long: and he understood the thing, and had understanding of the vision. ² In those days I Daniel was mourning three full weeks. ³ I ate no pleasant bread, neither came flesh nor wine in my mouth, neither did I anoint myself at all, till three whole weeks were fulfilled. ⁴ And in the four and twentieth day of the first month, as I was by the side of the great river, which is Hiddekel; ⁵ Then I lifted up my eyes, and looked, and beheld a certain man clothed in linen, whose loins [were] girded with fine gold of Uphaz: ⁶ His body also was like the beryl, and his face as the appearance of lightning, and his eyes as lamps of fire, and his arms and his feet like in color to polished brass, and the voice of his words like the voice of a multitude. ⁷ And I Daniel alone saw the vision: for the men that were with me saw not the vision; but a great quaking fell upon them, so that they fled to hide themselves. ⁸ Therefore I was left alone, and saw this great vision, and there remained no strength in me: for my comeliness was turned in me into corruption, and I retained no strength. ⁹ Yet heard I the voice of his words: and when I heard the voice of his words, then I was in a deep sleep on my face, and my face toward the ground.

A Great Angel (or Preincarnate Jesus Christ) and the Great Angel Michael come to Help

(44) ¹⁰ And, behold, a hand touched me, which set me upon my knees and [upon] the palms of my hands. ¹¹ And he said to me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak to you, and stand upright: for to you am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word to me, I stood trembling. ¹² Then said he to me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that you did set your heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before your God, your words were heard, and I am come for your words. ¹³ But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: **but, look, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia.** ¹⁴ **Now I am come to make you understand what shall befall your people in the latter days: for yet the vision is for [many] days.** ¹⁵ And when he had spoken such words to me, I set my face toward the ground, and I became dumb. ¹⁶ And, behold, [one] like the similitude of the sons of men touched my lips: then I opened my mouth, and spoke, and said unto him that stood before me, O my lord, by the vision my sorrows are turned upon me, and I have retained no strength. ¹⁷ For how can the servant of this my lord talk with this my lord? for as for me, straightway there remained no strength in me, neither is there breath left in me. ¹⁸ Then there came again and touched me [one] like the appearance of a man, and he strengthened me, ¹⁹ And said, O man greatly beloved, fear not: peace [be] to you, be strong, yes, be strong. And when he had spoken to me, I was strengthened, and said, Let my lord speak; for you have strengthened me. ²⁰ Then said he, Know you wherefore I come to you? and now will I return to fight with the prince of Persia: and when I am gone forth, look, the prince of Grecia shall come. ²¹ But I will show you that which is noted in the Scripture of truth: **and there is none that holds with me in these things, but Michael your prince.**

Daniel 11		
v. 1-2	539-530 529-522 522 521-486 486-465 465-425	Cyrus Cambyses Artaxerxes Darius I Hystaspes Xerxes I Artaxerxes Longimanus
v. 3-4	334-323	Alexander the Great
Four Generals divide the empire:		
	Macedonia & Greece Asia Minor and Thrace Syria and Babylon Egypt, Arabia, Israel	Cassander Lysimachus Seleucus Ptolemy
		Dan 5; Isa 45 Esther Dan 9; Neh 2 Cf Dan 8:8f Dan 11:5-35

Daniel Chapter 11

¹ Also I in the first year of Darius the Mede, [even] I, stood to confirm and to strengthen him.

Persian (Artaxerxes) and Greek (Alexander) Empires

(45) ² And now will I show you the truth. Behold, there shall stand up yet three kings in Persia; and the fourth shall be far richer than [they] all: and by his strength through his riches he shall stir up all against the realm of Grecia. ³ And a mighty king shall stand up, that shall rule with great dominion, and do according to his will. ⁴ And when he shall stand up, his kingdom shall be broken, and shall be divided toward the four winds of heaven; and not to his posterity, nor according to his dominion which he ruled: for his kingdom shall be plucked up, even for others beside those.

(46) ⁵ And the ^a king of the south shall be strong, and [one] of his princes; and he shall be strong above him, and have dominion; his dominion [shall be] a great dominion. ⁶ And in the end of years they shall join themselves together; for the king's daughter of the south shall come to the king of the north to make an agreement: but she shall not retain the power of the arm; neither shall he stand, nor his arm: but she shall be given up, and they that brought her, and he that begat her, and he that strengthened her in [these] times. ⁷ But out of a branch of her roots shall [one] stand up in his estate, which shall come with an army, and shall enter into the fortress of the king of the north, and shall deal against them, and shall prevail: ⁸ And shall also carry captives into Egypt their gods, with their princes, [and] with their precious vessels of silver and of gold; and he shall continue [more] years than the king of the north. ⁹ So the king of the south shall come into [his] kingdom, and shall return into his own land. ¹⁰ But his sons shall be stirred up, and shall assemble a multitude of great forces: and [one] shall certainly come, and overflow, and pass through: then shall he return, and be stirred up, [even] to his fortress. ¹¹ And the king of the south shall be moved with choler, and shall come forth and fight with him, [even] with the king of the north: and he shall set forth a great multitude; but the multitude shall be given into his hand. ¹² [And] when he has taken away the

multitude, his heart shall be lifted up; and he shall cast down [many] ten thousands: but he shall not be strengthened [by it]. ¹³ For the king of the north shall return, and shall set forth a multitude greater than the former, and shall certainly come after certain years with a great army and with much riches. ¹⁴ And in those times there shall many stand up against the king of the south: also the robbers of your people shall exalt themselves to establish the vision; but they shall fall. ¹⁵ So the king of the north shall come, and cast up a mount, and take the most fenced cities: and the arms of the south shall not withstand, neither his chosen people, neither [shall there be any] strength to withstand. ¹⁶ But he that comes against him shall do according to his own will, and none shall stand before him: and he shall stand in the glorious land, which by his hand shall be consumed. ¹⁷ He shall also set his face to enter with the strength of his whole kingdom, and upright ones with him; thus shall he do: and he shall give him the daughter of women, corrupting her: but she shall not stand [on his side], neither be for him. ¹⁸ After this shall he turn his face to the isles, and shall take many: but a prince for his own behalf shall cause the reproach offered by him to cease; without his own reproach he shall cause [it] to turn upon him. ¹⁹ Then he shall turn his face toward the fort of his own land: but he shall stumble and fall, and not be found. ²⁰ Then shall stand up in his estate a raiser of taxes [in] the glory of the kingdom: but within few days he shall be destroyed, neither in anger, nor in battle.

Ptolemies vs. Seleucids	
"Kings of the South"	"Kings of the North"
Daniel Chapter 11	
5 Ptolemy I Soter (323-285 BC)	5 Seleucus I Nicator (312-281) Antiochus I Soter (281-262)
6 Ptolemy II Philadelphus (285-246) LXX	6 Antiochus II Theos (262-246)
7-8 Ptolemy III Euergetes (246-221)	7-9 Seleucus II Callinicus (246-227) 10 Seleucus III Soter (227-223)
11-12 Ptolemy IV Philopater (221-204)	10-19 Antiochus III the Great (223-187)
17 Ptolemy V Epiphanes (204-181)	20 Seleucus IV Philopater (187-176)
25 Ptolemy VI Philometer (181-145)	21-35 Antiochus IV Epiphanes (175-163)

multitude, his heart shall be lifted up; and he shall cast down [many] ten thousands: but he shall not be strengthened [by it]. ¹³ For the king of the north shall return, and shall set forth a multitude greater than the former, and shall certainly come after certain years with a great army and with much riches.

¹⁴ And in those times there shall many stand up against the king of the south: also the robbers of your people shall exalt themselves to establish the vision; but they shall fall. ¹⁵ So the king of the north shall come, and cast up a mount, and take the most fenced cities: and the arms of the south shall not withstand, neither his chosen people, neither [shall there be any] strength to withstand. ¹⁶ But he that comes against him shall do according to his own will, and none shall stand before him: and he shall stand in the glorious land, which by his hand shall be consumed. ¹⁷ He shall also set his face to enter with the strength of his whole kingdom, and upright ones with him; thus shall he do: and he shall give him the daughter of women, corrupting her: but she shall not stand [on his side], neither be for him. ¹⁸ After this shall he turn his face to the isles, and shall take many: but a prince for his own behalf shall cause the reproach offered by him to cease; without his own reproach he shall cause [it] to turn upon him.

¹⁹ Then he shall turn his face toward the fort of his own land: but he shall stumble and fall, and not be found. ²⁰ Then shall stand up in his estate a raiser of taxes [in] the glory of the kingdom: but within few days he shall be destroyed, neither in anger, nor in battle.

^a South is Egypt and north is Assyria, with Israel in-between. Roman empire began to rise in Antiochus III.

Daniel Chapter 11

Antiochus IV Epiphanes (Greece)

(47) ²¹ And in his estate shall stand up a vile person, to whom they shall not give the honor of the kingdom: but he shall come in peaceably, and obtain the kingdom by flatteries. ²² And with the arms of a flood they will be overflown from before him, and shall be broken; yes, also the prince of the covenant. ²³ And after the league [made] with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people. ²⁴ He shall enter peaceably even upon the fattest places of the province; and he shall do [that] which his fathers have not done, nor his fathers' fathers; he shall scatter among them the prey, and spoil, and riches: [yes], and he shall forecast his devices against the strong holds, even for a time. ²⁵ And he shall stir up his power and his courage against the king of the south with a great army; and the king of the south shall be stirred up to battle with a very great and mighty army; but he shall not stand: for they shall forecast devices against him. ²⁶ Yes, they that feed of the portion of his meat shall destroy him, and his army shall overflow: and many shall fall down slain. ²⁷ And both these kings' hearts [shall be] to do mischief, and they shall speak lies at one table; but it shall not prosper: for yet the end [shall be] at the time appointed. ²⁸ Then shall he return into his land with great riches; and his heart [shall be] against the holy covenant; and he shall do [exploits], and return to his own land. ²⁹ At the time appointed he shall return, and come toward the south; but it shall not be as the former, or as the latter.

The Roman Empire is Rising – Macabean Revolt and Hanukkah

(48) ³⁰ For the ships of Chittim shall come against him: therefore he shall be grieved, and return, and have indignation against the holy covenant: so shall he do; he shall even return, and have intelligence with them that forsake the holy covenant. ³¹ And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily [sacrifice], and they shall place the abomination that makes desolate. ³² And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries: but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do [exploits]. ³³ And they that understand among the people shall instruct many: yet they shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, [many] days. ³⁴ Now when they shall fall, they shall be helped with a little help: but many shall cleave to them with flatteries. ³⁵ And [some] of them of understanding shall fall, to try them, and to purge, and to make them white, [even] to the time of the end: because [it is] yet for a time appointed.

Historical and Future Prophetical - the End Battle at Megiddo (last half of Daniel's 70th week, 9:24-27)

(49) ³⁶ And the king shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god, and shall speak marvelous things against the God of gods, and shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished: for that that is determined shall be done. ³⁷ Neither shall he regard the ^a God of his fathers, nor the desire of women, nor regard any god: for he shall magnify himself above all. ³⁸ But in his estate shall he honor the God of forces: and a god whom his fathers knew not shall he honor with gold, and silver, and with precious stones, and pleasant things. ³⁹ Thus shall he do in the most strong holds with a strange god, whom he shall acknowledge [and] increase with glory: and he shall cause them to rule over many, and shall divide the land for gain. ⁴⁰ And at the time of the end shall the king of the south push at him: and the king of the north shall come against him like a whirlwind, with chariots, and with horsemen, and with many ships; and he shall enter into the countries, and shall overflow and pass over. ⁴¹ He shall enter also into the glorious land, and many [countries] shall be overthrown: but these shall escape out of his hand, [even] Edom, and Moab, and the chief of the children of Ammon. ⁴² He shall stretch forth his hand also upon the countries: and the land of Egypt shall not escape. ⁴³ But he shall have power over the treasures of gold and of silver, and over all the precious things of Egypt: and the Libyans and the Ethiopians [shall be] at his steps. ⁴⁴ But tidings out of the east and out of the north shall trouble him: therefore he shall go forth with great fury to destroy, and utterly to make away many. ⁴⁵ And he shall plant the tabernacles of his palace between the seas in the glorious holy mountain; yet he shall come to his end, and none shall help him.

^a "God" of His fathers indicates a Jewish anti-christ, while some translate this "gods" of his fathers which could indicate a gentile or Assyrian antichrist. God is Eloyhim in Hebrew. Does it really matter? No, the true believers won't be here at this time. From the immediate context both can be true and he is half gentile and half Jew.

(50) ¹ **And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which stands for the children of your people:** and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation [even] to that same time: and at that time your people shall be delivered, everyone that shall be found written in the book.

(51) ² And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame [and] everlasting contempt. ³ And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

(52) ⁴ But you, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, [even] to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. ⁵ Then I Daniel looked, and, behold, there stood other two, the one on this side of the bank of the river, and the other on that side of the bank of the river.

⁶ And [one] said to the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, How long [shall it be to] the end of these wonders? ⁷ And I heard the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand to heaven, and swore by him that lives forever that [it shall be] for a time, times, and a half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these [things] shall be finished. ⁸ And I heard, but I understood not: then said I, O my Lord, what [shall be] the end of these [things]? ⁹ And he said, Go your way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. ¹⁰ Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.

¹¹ And from the time [that] the daily [sacrifice] shall be taken away, and the abomination that makes desolate set up, [there shall be] a thousand two hundred and ninety days. ¹² Blessed is he that waits, and comes to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days. ¹³ But go you your way till the end [be]: for you shall rest, and stand in your lot at the end of the days.

Daniel	Key Word	Character Builder	Language	Dream/Vision	Date Order (Daniel's age)	King/Empire
1	Food	Separation (Ex 19:4-6)	Hebrew		1 603 BC (15)	Nebuchadnezzar Babylon
2	4 Metals (statue)	Praise (2:19-23)	Aramaic ("Times of the Gentiles" Luke 21:24 Focus on gentile reign. Ekklesia not seen.)	Dream/King	2 598 BC (20)	Nebuchadnezzar Babylon
3	Fire (statue-3 friends)	Friendship			3	Nebuchadnezzar Babylon
4	Tree	Servanthood (4:19, 27)		Dream/King	4	Nebuchadnezzar Babylon
5	Handwriting	Meekness (5:17)		Vision/King	7 539 BC (72)	Belshazzar - end Babylon New: Darius Media (Persia)
6	Lions "worship who"	Worship (prayer 3x day)			8 538 BC (73)	Darius Media (title)
7	4 Beasts (4 th beast)	Wisdom (7:28)		Dream/Daniel	5 570 BC (48)	Belshazzar I - 1 st yr. Babylon
8	Ram & Goat (Persian & Greek)	Weakness (8:17, 27)	Hebrew	Vision/Daniel	6 567 BC (51)	Belshazzar I - 3 rd yr. Babylon
9	70 weeks (Jeremiah 25:11-12)	Prayer (Intercession)	(prepare for the Messiah, focus on Israel)	Vision/Daniel	9 539 BC (79)	Darius - 1 st yr Media (title)
10-12	Angels / Food (Prince of Peace, Greek, Persia, Michael)	Sovereignty (Romans 9-11)		Vision/Daniel	10-12 533 BC (85)	Cyrus - 3 rd yr.
Ezra 1-6 Rebuilt temple Haggai Nehemiah 2					536 BC 445 BC May 14	Cyrus - 1 st yr. Artaxerxes

Chapters 1-6 are Daniel's personal view and 7-12 are God's worldview. 1-6 are public and 7-12 are private.
Chapter 4 is only chapter by gentile in the Old Testament. Same as 1 gentile writer in the New Testament which is Luke.

Another Old and New Testament parallel is books of one chapter covering the physical and spiritual enemies in Obadiah and Jude.

1. Judah's captivity by Babylon was in 3 phases. In what phase was Daniel and his 3 friends taken captive? 1st Daniel 1:1 3rd yr. of Jehoiakim. 1st 605BC, 2nd 597BC Ezekiel, 3rd 586BC
2. Who were the 2 contemporary prophets during the time of Daniel?
Ezekiel (country – 500 miles north of Babylon), Jeremiah (Jerusalem), & Habakkuk
3. The statue in Nebuchadnezzar's vision with a head of gold in chapter 2 is who? Nebuchadnezzar. This is probably the inspiration to make a statue of gold in chapter 3 and demand worship of himself.
4. Four kingdoms are represented in Daniel 2 and 7? Name them.
Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greek, Roman
5. Was Nebuchadnezzar saved? Yes, Daniel 4:36-37.
6. In what language was Daniel chapters 2:4b to 8 written?
Aramaic. To the gentiles. World language of Babylon, like English today. Not Hebrew.
(The Passion by Mel Gibson was in Aramaic)
7. Read with contemplation Daniel's prayer in chapter 9. For how many days did Daniel fast in Daniel 9?
21 days
8. How many years are the 70 weeks in Daniel 9:25?
 $69 + 1 = 70$. $7 \times 70 = 490$ years.
9. When did the 69th week end?
Daniel 9:26, Rebuilt city in Nehemiah to the Messiah cut off (Palm Sunday)
10. Who is Daniel compared to concerning living righteously?
Ezekiel 14:14 tells us. Noah, Daniel & Job Why these 2 men?
Why not Adam, Abraham, Jacob, Joseph, Moses, David, Solomon, Isaiah, Jeremiah or even Ezekiel?

Bonus question: Where was Daniel when his 3 friends were in the fiery furnace in Daniel 3?
In Daniel 2:48-49 Nebuchadnezzar made Daniel 2nd ruler over his kingdom, like Joseph over Egypt. He was about the business of the kingdom outside of the capital city of Babylon. (15 sq miles and walls that 4 chariots could ride side by side)

Victorious Christian Living Truth: From question # 7 regarding Daniel's prayer of chapter 9.

Look at the divine sequence of seeking God in chapter 9:

- 1) 9:2 I must read & understand the truths of the Bible. In Daniel's case the writing of Jeremiah concerning the 70 years captivity.
- 2) 9:3 I must set my face toward God.
- 3) 9:4-15 I must pray with confession of my and our sins.
- 4) 9:16-20 I must plea for God's mercy.
- 5) 9:21-27 I will see God move. In Daniel's case the angel Gabriel appeared and gave him a further revelation of 70 weeks.

Note: Sir Isaac Newton, Observations Upon the Prophecies of Daniel and the Apocalypse of St. John pp78-79, 1622-1727, originally published in 1733. "This prophecy is called the Revelation, with respect to the scripture of truth, which Daniel was commanded to shut up and seal, until the time of the end... Prophecies of Daniel and John should not be understood till the time of the end. The folly of interpreters has been, to foretell times and things by this Prophecy, as if God designed to make them prophets. The design of God is much otherwise. Paraphrase – after prophecy is fulfilled the event is interpreted, in God's Providence. As the 1st coming, so is the 2nd coming.

Acronym to memorize the Minor prophets: 3 * 4 = 12 (x) = 65 chapters, Isaiah 66.. Words 30K, Isaiah 37K. Chapters in 1229 AD by Stephen Langton. Read in 4 hours

1st 3: **Hosea** (14), **Joel** (3), **Amos** (9)
 Note: To Israel, Judah, and Israel

HoJoAm (1st 2 letters)

2nd 3: **Obadiah** (1), **Jonah** (4), **Micah** (7)
 Note: To Edom, Nineveh, and Judah

OJM (1st letter)

3rd 3: **Nahum** (3), **Habakkuk** (3), **Zephaniah** (3)
 Note: To Nineveh, Judah, and Judah - 3 chapters each

NahHabZep (1st 3 letters)

4th 3: **Haggai** (2), **Zechariah** (14), **Malachi** (4)
 Note: To Israel post exile. 520 to 432 BC.

HaZeMa (1st 2 letters)

Purpose of Prayer from the 12 minor prophets. 1 Cor 10:6-13 examples to admonish Ro 15:4 our learning & hope.

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
HoJoAm – Israel, Judah, and Israel (Joel is the first)					
Hosea 5:15 (725)	Supplication	Return (repent) God loves backsliders		Seek Me Early Salvation	Israel the nation
5:15 I (God) will go [and] return to my place (heaven), till they acknowledge their offence, and seek my face: in their affliction they will seek me early.					
Joel 2:17 (835)	Supplication	Judgment - Repent Day of the LORD		Future Blessing Acts 2-Peter	Judah the nation
2: 17 Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar , and let them say, Spare thy people, O LORD, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where [is] their God?					
Amos 7:5-9 (752)	Supplication	Judgment and Justice Prepare to meet God!		Hope for faithful and repentant 9:11-15	Israel the nation Joel 3:16
7:8 And the LORD said unto me, Amos, what seest thou? And I said, A plumbline. Then said the Lord, Behold, I will set a plumbline in the midst of my people Israel: I will not again pass by them any more:					
OJM – Edom, Nineveh, and Judah (time of Isaiah w/ Hosea and Amos)					
Obadiah Amos 9:1 (845)	No Prayer Enemy satan	Judgment of the enemy of Israel	Spirit of Doeg No hope	2 Tim 3:1-9, Rev 3 Romans 1:18-3:30	Edom the nation sons of Esau / Cain
Jonah 3:5-9 (755)	Supplication	Repentance Prejudice conquered		Judgment postponed Blessing denied 4:10	Nineveh. Capitol of Assyrian kingdom
3:5 So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them.					
Micah 3:1-4 (735)	Supplication	Israel seeks God too late	Hate Good & Love Evil	Divine expectation Hope in the last days	Israel & Judah nation Prayer not Heard.
4 Then shall they cry unto the LORD, but he will not hear them: he will even hide his face from them at that time, as they have behaved themselves ill in their doings.					
NahHabZep – Nineveh, Judah and Jerusalem (fall to Babylon in 586 BC)					
Nahum (650)	No Prayer	Judgment, around 100 years after Jonah	Doom No hope	Love may abound in all judgment Phil 1:9	Nineveh Assyrian capitol
Habakkuk 1-2 (609)	Conversation	Questions & Answers	2:1 I will stand upon my watch	Concern Walk by faith	Judah the nation Judgment near
Habakkuk 3:1-19	Supplication Praise	Overcomers in trials nation- personal faith	3:2 revive your work, in wrath remember mercy	Understands God's sovereignty	Habakkuk the individual believer
3:17 Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither [shall] fruit [be] in the vines; the labour of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no meat; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and [there shall be] no herd in the stalls: 18 Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation. 19 The LORD God [is] my strength, and he will make my feet like hinds' [feet], and he will make me to walk upon mine high places.					
Zephaniah 3:2 (630)	No prayer 1 John 5:16	Judgment coming to Judah-remnant	Sin unto death	Day of the LORD, 24x Hope in the future	Judah the nation
3:2 She obeyed not the voice; she received not correction; she trusted not in the LORD; she drew not near to her God.					
HaZeMa - Return after 70 years captivity. Zerubbabel rebuilt temple and Nehemiah the walls of Jerusalem.					
Haggai (520)	No Prayer John 9:4	Get to work – complete the temple	Complacency, Need change	Courage - Revival Build!	Israel (local church) Governor Zerubbabel
Zechariah 12:10 (480)	Supplication	House of David Present distress	In That Day visions	Prophecy- Tribulation Future glory	Israel the nation Spirit – grace & supp
12:10 And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for [his] only [son], and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for [his] firstborn.					
Malachi 1:9 (432)	No Prayer 1 John 5:16	Repentance, Deny sin - robbery	Blemished offerings	The LORD cannot change	Israel. To the priests Deut 28
1:8 And if ye offer the blind for sacrifice, [is it] not evil? and if ye offer the lame and sick, [is it] not evil? offer it now unto thy governor; will he be pleased with thee, or accept thy person? saith the LORD of hosts. 9 And now, I pray you, beseech God that he will be gracious unto us: this hath been by your means: will he regard your persons? saith the LORD of hosts.					

Hosea (14-27, 30 min, Israel) 2020

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14

12 Ways our Backsliding Path May Return to the Lord

	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Know that; as Hosea purchased Gomer, Christ purchased us.	3:2
2) God's people are destroyed for lack of knowledge	4:6
3) We must be wise master builders, and not move our boundaries as Judah	5:10
4) We must recognize our need, and return to the LORD	6:1
5) Ensure my pancake is cooked on both sides	7:8
6) Ensure I'm not as a silly dove without heart	7:11
7) Know the wicked say, "the prophet is a fool, the spiritual man is mad"	9:7
8) Live for "others" and have "united" hearts	10:1-2a
9) Sow to ourselves in righteousness, reap in mercy; break up our fallow ground: for [it is] time to seek the LORD, till he come and rain righteousness upon us.	10:12
10) Turn to our God: keep mercy and judgment, and wait on our God continually	12:6
11) Know God will heal our backsliding, He will love us freely:	14:4
12) We will say, What have I to do anymore with idols?	14:8
Conclusion - Thesis Statement. 14:9 Who is wise, and he shall understand these [things]? prudent, and he shall know them? for the ways of the LORD are right , and the just shall walk in them : but the transgressors shall fall therein .	

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Hosea 5:15	Supplication	Repentance		Seek Me Early	Israel

Application: Can a Christian become backslidden? Can a family become backslidden? Can a congregation become backslidden? Can a nation become backslidden? How much and what are the signs? Am I backslidden? How can I be restored?

Acronym to memorize the Minor prophets: 3 * 4 = 12 (x) = 65 chapters, Isaiah 66.. Words 30K, Is 37K.
 Chapters in 1229 AD by Stephen Langton. Read in 4 hours

1st 3: **Hosea** (14), **Joel** (3), **Amos** (9)

HoJoAm (1st 2 letters)

Note: To Israel (last before fall to the Assyrian), Judah, and Israel (1st after Elijah & Elisha)

2nd 3: **Obadiah** (1), **Jonah** (4), **Micah** (7)

OJM (1st letter)

Note: To Edom, Nineveh, and Judah

3rd 3: **Nahum** (3), **Habakkuk** (3), **Zephaniah** (3)

NahHabZep (1st 3 letters)

Note: To Nineveh, Judah, and Judah - 3 chapters each

4th 3: **Haggai** (2), **Zechariah** (14), **Malachi** (4)

HaZeMa (1st 2 letters)

Note: To Israel post exile. 520 to 432 BC.

Outline I of Hosea "Yahweh has Saved"

Background. As Hosea's wife played the harlot, so has Israel. Using the metaphor of Hosea's physical family relating to Israel's spiritual life, his wife Gomer and their 3 children. When the nation Israel came out of Egypt she was as a virgin. She committed idolatry and could not become a nation of priests (Exodus 19:7) after worshipping the calf when Moses received the 10 commandments the first time. Hosea was not a priest. Gomer represented Israel from their beginning as a nation to the present and into the future "Day of the Lord."

Hosea went through the fall of the northern kingdom of Israel as Jeremiah did the southern kingdom of Judah over 100 years later. **They are the only ones to use the term "backsliding".**

Cultural setting: Israel was prosperous with a strong military. Covetousness, harlotry, alcohol, and idols prevailed, along with building temples, sacrifices and false worship.

Meditation point: Do we live in such a time in our society, could it be like the church of Laodicean in Revelation 3? If yes, we must take extreme care for ourselves and families.

New Testament Connection. The believer will be presented to Jesus Christ as a chaste virgin when he returns as king of kings. God forsook Israel as a nation temporarily, but we cannot lose our position as children of God in our lifetime, but we can lose our rewards and crowns due to spiritual adultery. Revelation 3:19. Idolatry - Colossians 3:5.

Key words: Return or turn 22x, Ephraim 4:2 – 13:1, 36x. Ephraim is the leader of a wicked, sinful people.

Southern Kingdom (Judah - Jerusalem)	Northern Kingdom (Israel - Samaria)	Assyria
792-740 King Uzziah	875-848 King Ahab and Elijah 847-797 King Jehu and Elisha	793-753 Jonah
715-687 King Hezekiah	760-750 Prophet Amos	
742-687 Prophet Micah to Judah & Israel	753-715 Prophet Hosea	
740-689 Prophet Isaiah		
721 King Hoshea and Fall of Israel to Assyria		

Themes: Sin, Judgment, Salvation, and the faithful love of God

CHILDREN OF FAITHFUL HOSEA AND UNFAITHFUL GOMER		
Name	Meaning	Purpose
Jezreel	God sows or scatters	God will sow or scatter His people
Lo-Ruhamah	No Mercy	God will show no more mercy to His people
Lo-Ammi	Not my people	God will not recognize Israel as His people

Part 1) Hosea's Unfaithful Wife (Gomer) or Gomer's Faithful Husband 1-3

Introduction		1:1	
Lesson 1	Judgment Salvation	1:2-9 1:10-11	Hosea's family & the blood and valley of Jezreel Day of Jezreel & the blood of Naboth (1 Kings 21) avenged
Lesson 2	Judgment Salvation	2:1-13 2:14-3:5	Gomer's unfaithfulness Valley of Achor (Joshua 7:24-26)

Part 2) God's Unfaithful Wife (Israel) or Israel's Faithful God 4-14

Strike 1	Judgment Salvation:	4-5 (2 chapters) 6:1-3 (3 verses, 23 words)	Israel's crime & sentence. Ephraim, Judah, & the priests. Prophetic for Israel when Christ returns to reign
Strike 2 3 base hit	Judgment Ekklesia Salvation	6:4-11:7 (5 chapters) 10:11-12 11:8-12 (6 verses-49 words)	Israel's rebellion
Strike 3	Judgment Salvation	12-13 (2 chapters) 14:1-8 (8 verses, 99 words)	Israel's unfaithfulness
Conclusion		14:9	

- Hosea is like Job in his trials with family in chapters 1-3 and discourse with 5 parts; introduction, three friends or three strikes in chapters 4-14, and conclusion for all to learn from.
- Hosea is like Isaiah in its majestic literary expressions at times (10:11-12) and like Song of Songs powerful imagery in chapter 14.
- Hosea is like Song of Songs with many threads of truth progressively revealed. Hosea shows God's faithfulness and Song of Songs God's love – both through the Lord Jesus Christ.

Part 1: Hosea the Faithful Husband or Homer the Unfaithful Wife, 1-3

Hosea Chapter 1

1:1-9 Hosea's Wife and Three Children

(1) ¹ The word of the LORD that came unto Hosea, the son of Beeri, in the days of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, [and] Hezekiah, kings of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of Joash, king of Israel.

Judgment (Hosea's wife and three children. Jezreel is prophetic: past, present, and far future)

² The beginning of the word of the LORD by Hosea. And the LORD said unto Hosea, **Go, take to you a wife of whoredoms and children of whoredoms: for the land has committed great whoredom, [departing] from the LORD.** ³ So he went and took Gomer the daughter of Diblaim; which conceived, and bare him a son.

⁴ And the LORD said unto him, **Call his name Jezreel; for yet a little [while], and I will avenge the blood of Jezreel upon the house of Jehu, and will cause to cease the kingdom of the house of Israel.** ⁵ And it shall come to pass at that day, that I will break the bow of Israel in the valley of Jezreel. ⁶ And she conceived again, and bare a daughter. And [God] said unto him, **Call her name Lo-ruhamah: for I will no more have mercy upon the house of Israel; but I will utterly take them away.** ⁷ But I will have mercy upon the house of Judah, and will save them by the LORD their God, and will not save them by bow, nor by sword, nor by battle, by horses, nor by horsemen. ⁸ Now when she had weaned Lo-ruhamah, she conceived, and bare a son. ⁹ Then said [God], **Call his name Lo-ammi: for ye are not my people, and I will not be your [God].**

Note: Valley of Jezreel – see Zechariah 14:2, Revelation 16:14-16. Jezreel was conceived of Hosea, and Lo-ruhamah and Lo-ammi were born of adultery.

1:10-11 Salvation (in the far future for Israel at the Second Coming of Christ)

(2) ¹⁰ Yet the number of the **children of Israel** shall be as the sand of the sea, which cannot be measured nor numbered; and it shall come to pass, [that] in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, [there] it shall be said to them, [Ye are] the **sons of the living God.** ¹¹ Then shall the **children of Judah and the children of Israel** be gathered together, and **appoint themselves one head**, and they shall come up out of the land: for great [shall be] the day of Jezreel.

Notes: Jezreel in Hebrew is "where God sows or scatters." One head is Jesus Christ. Romans 9:25-26 & 1 Peter 2:10. Ahab > Naboth > Jehu > Assyrians > Christ's return when the vineyard of righteous Naboth is restored, 1 Kings 21. The day of Jezreel is just before the return of Jesus Christ to reign as king on earth from Jerusalem (Ezekiel 40-48).

<p>Jezreel in Hosea 1-2</p> <p>Ahab & Jezebel's Summer Palace</p> <p>2 Past Events (1:4)</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> - Blood by Ahab - Blood by Jehu <p>2 Present Places</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> - City (palace) - Valley (1:5) <p>2 Future Times</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> - Near future (1:5, 6b, 7b) - Far future (day 1:11) - Hear (2:22) (1:10-11, 2:14-3:5) 		<p><u>Jezreel in Hebrew</u> means "God sows or scatters"</p> <p>Like the parable of the Sower, the Seed, and the Four Soils See Matthew 13</p> <p>Seeds of truth for a fruitful vineyard ↓</p> <p>Song of Songs</p> <p>1:2</p> <p>1:6</p> <p>2:13</p> <p>2:15</p> <p>6:11</p> <p>7:8</p> <p>7:12</p> <p>8:11-12</p>
--	--	---

Hosea Chapter 2 2:1-13 **Judgment** plead (1-5), the prodigal wife (6-13) has seven curses, "I will"

(3) ¹ Say ye unto your brethren, Ammi; and to your sisters, Ruhamah. ² Plead with your mother, plead: for she is not my wife, neither [am] I her husband: let her therefore put away her whoredoms out of her sight, and her adulteries from between her breasts; ³ Lest I strip her naked, and set her as in the day that she was born, and make her as a wilderness, and set her like a dry land, and slay her with thirst. ⁴ And I will not have mercy upon her children; for they [be] the children of whoredoms. ⁵ For their mother has played the harlot: she that conceived them has done shamefully: for she said, I will go after my lovers, that give [me] my ^a bread and my water, my wool and my flax, my oil and my drink. ⁶ Therefore, behold, I will hedge up your way with thorns, and make a wall, that she shall not find her paths. ⁷ And she shall follow after her lovers, but she shall not overtake them; and she shall seek them, but shall not find them: then shall she say, ^b I will go and return to my first husband; for then [was it] better with me than now. ⁸ For she did not know that I gave her corn, and wine, and oil, and multiplied her silver and gold, [which] they prepared for Baal. ⁹ **Therefore will I return, and take away** my corn in the time thereof, and my wine in the season thereof, and will recover my wool and my flax [given] to cover her nakedness. ¹⁰ And now **will I discover her lewdness** in the sight of her lovers, and none shall deliver her out of my hand. ¹¹ **I will also cause** all her mirth to cease, her feast days, her new moons, and her sabbaths, and all her solemn feasts. ¹² And **I will destroy** her vines and her fig trees, whereof she has said, These are my rewards that my lovers have given me: and **I will make** them a forest, and the beasts of the field shall eat them. ¹³ And **I will visit** upon her the days of Baalim, wherein she burned incense to them, and she adorned herself with her earrings and her jewels, and ^c she went after her lovers, and **forgot me**, says the LORD.

^a bread and water – food, wool and flax – clothes, oil and drink – pleasure (feed the body and mind)

^b Her first husband Hosea. Gomer represents Israel and Hosea God. Like the prodigal son returning to his father in the New Testament, Luke 15.

^c The love of the world is as fornication in the higher standards of the New Testament. Matthew 5-7, James 4:4, 1 John 2:15-17. Mirth differs from joy and cheerfulness, as always implying noise.

2:14-23 **Salvation** (10 "I will" blessings, Valley of Achor–Joshua 7, Jezreel–blood of Naboth, Ps 34:17)

(4) ¹⁴ **Therefore**, behold, **I will** allure her, and bring her into the wilderness, and **speak comfortably to her**. ¹⁵ And **I will give her** her vineyards from there, and the valley of Achor for a door of hope: and she shall sing there, as in the days of her youth, and as in the day when she came up out of the land of Egypt. ¹⁶ And it shall be at that day, says the LORD, [that] you shall call me Ishi; and shall call me no more Baali. ¹⁷ For **I will take away** the names of Baalim out of her mouth, and they shall no more be remembered by their name. ¹⁸ And in that day **will I make a covenant** for them with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven, and [with] the creeping things of the ground: and **I will break** the bow and the sword and the battle out of the earth, and will make them to lie down safely. ¹⁹ And **I will betroth** you unto me forever; yes, I will betroth you unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in loving-kindness, and in mercies. ²⁰ I will even betroth you unto me in faithfulness: and you shall know the LORD. ²¹ And it shall come to pass in that day, **I will hear**, says the LORD, I will hear the heavens, and they shall hear the earth; ²² And the earth shall hear the corn, and the wine, and the oil; and they shall hear Jezreel. ²³ And **I will sow** her unto me in the earth; and **I will have mercy** upon her that had not obtained mercy; and **I will say** to [them which were] not my people, You [are] my people; and they shall say, [You are] my God.

Note: The valley of Achor (trouble) is the opposite of the time of Joshua. Ishi is Hebrew for Husband. Baali are the fertility and nature gods of the Philistines & Israel. This far future prophecy begins in Rev 13

Hosea Chapter 3 3:1-5 **Hosea Redeems Gomer** with 15 Pieces of Silver & 1.5 homers (90 pounds)

(5) ¹ Then said the LORD unto me, Go yet, love a woman beloved of [her] friend, yet an adulteress, according to the love of the LORD toward the children of Israel, who look to other gods, and love flagons of wine. ² So I bought her to me for fifteen [pieces] of silver, and [for] a homer of barley, and a half homer of barley: ³ And I said unto her, You shall abide for me many days; you shall not play the harlot, and you shall not be for [another] man: so [will] I also [be] for you. ⁴ For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and [without] teraphim: ⁵ Afterward shall the children of Israel **return**, and **seek** the LORD their God, and David their king; and shall **fear** the LORD and his goodness in the latter days.

4:1-3 The People’s Crime (vs 1-2) the People and the Land’s Sentence (vs 3)

(6) ¹ Hear the word of the LORD, ye children of Israel: for the LORD has a **controversy** with the inhabitants of the land, because there is **no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God** in the land. ² By **swearing, and lying, and killing, and stealing, and committing adultery, they break out**, and blood touches blood. ³ **Therefore shall the land mourn**, and everyone that dwells therein shall languish, with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven; yes, the fishes of the sea also shall be taken away.

Notes: Random (free-thinker), repeat, recycle (tradition). Opposite of humility, Spirit, self-control. Adultery is sexual, not spiritual. Context determines if spiritual or sexual. Land Romans 8: The whole creation groans. The Declaration of Independence “appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world” It is too late for Israel for the nation to apply 2 Chr 7:14.

4:4-11 The Levite Priests Example Causes the People to Fall

(7) ⁴ **Yet** let no man strive, nor reprove another: for your people are as they that **strive with the priest**. ⁵ **Therefore** shall you fall in the day, and the prophet also shall fall with you in the night, and I will destroy your mother. ⁶ **My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because you have rejected knowledge, I will also reject you, that you shall be no priest to me:** seeing you have forgotten the law of your God, I will also **forget your children**. ⁷ As they were increased, so they sinned against me: [therefore] will I change their glory into shame. ⁸ They eat up the sin of my people, and they set their heart on their iniquity. ⁹ And there shall be, **like people, like priest:** and I will punish them for their ways, and reward them their doings. ¹⁰ For they shall eat, and not have enough: they shall commit whoredom, and shall not increase: because they have left off to take heed to the LORD. ¹¹ **Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart.**

Notes: vs 5 Mother is the nation of Israel who fall to the Assyria in 721 BC and Judah in 586 BC to Babylon. The children of the Levite priests have higher standards and expectations than the people. i.e. the priest could only marry a virgin of the children of Israel, example in OT. The priest are addressed as in the book of Malachi. The priests represent the people to God and present an example of obedience to the word of the LORD to the people.

4:12-19 The Priests Counsel Causes the People to Fall

(8) ¹² My people ask counsel at their stocks, and their staff declares to them: for the spirit of whoredoms has caused them to err, and they have gone a whoring from under their God. ¹³ They sacrifice upon the tops of the mountains, and burn incense upon the hills, under oaks and poplars and elms, because the shadow thereof is good: **therefore your daughters shall commit whoredom, and your spouses shall commit adultery**. ¹⁴ I will not punish your daughters when they commit whoredom, nor your spouses when they commit adultery: for themselves are separated with whores, and they sacrifice with harlots: **therefore the people [that] does not understand shall fall**. ¹⁵ Though you, **Israel, play the harlot, [yet] let not Judah offend;** and come not ye to **Gilgal, neither go ye up to Bethaven,** nor swear, The LORD lives. ¹⁶ For Israel slides back as a stubborn heifer: now the LORD will feed them as a lamb in a large place. ¹⁷ **Ephraim is joined to idols: let him alone.** ¹⁸ Their drink is sour: they have committed whoredom continually: her rulers [with] shame do love, Give ye. ¹⁹ The wind has bound her up in her wings, and they shall be ashamed because of their sacrifices.

Notes: vs 12 Stocks is hard wood like the stock of a rifle or wooden idols. Staff is the diviner’s rod for magic as Moses and Pharaoh. Vs 13 Therefore the spirit of whoredoms is spiritual worship that increases with physical whoredom and adultery. Vs 14 is opposite for those who understand in Hosea 14:9.

Gilgal: vs 15-17 Israel the nation in progress, Ephraim the city far gone, and Judah the future.

Beth-haven: House of wickedness, near Bethel or house of God.

Heifer: A cow that resists going in the owner’s direction; KJV uses backslidden which is different in

Hebrew in Hosea 11:7 and 14:4. Lamb: being together without a shepherd are not where the food is.

Hosea Chapter 5

5:1-7 Hear ye this - Israel Suddenly Falls in their Iniquity

(9) ¹ **Hear ye this**, O priests; and hearken, ye house of Israel; and give ye ear, O house of the king; for judgment is toward you, because ye have been a snare on Mizpah, and a net spread upon Tabor.
² And the revolvers are profound to make slaughter, though I [have been] a rebuker of them all.
³ I know Ephraim, and Israel is not hid from me: for now, O Ephraim, you commit whoredom, [and] Israel is defiled. ⁴ They will not frame their doings to turn to their God: for the spirit of whoredoms is in the midst of them, and they have not known the LORD. ⁵ And the pride of Israel does testify to his face: therefore shall Israel and Ephraim fall in their **iniquity**; Judah also shall fall with them. ⁶ They shall go with their flocks and with their herds to seek the LORD; but they shall not find [him]; he has withdrawn himself from them. ⁷ They say dealt treacherously against the LORD: for they have begotten strange children: now shall a month devour them with their portions.

Notes: vs 4 framework not in place to give controls and guidance to their lives due to sin; but randomness, hit and miss, luck, astrology, palm reading, witchcraft, etc. vs 7 Strange children like 2 Timothy 3:1-9. A month or new moon or 30 days, a specific period of time for rapid judgment for their iniquity. What is the difference between sin, transgression, and iniquity?

5:8-15 Warning of the Coming Judgment by the Assyrians

(10) ⁸ Blow ye the cornet in Gibeah, [and] the trumpet in Ramah: cry aloud [at] Bethaven, after you, O Benjamin. ⁹ Ephraim shall be desolate in the day of rebuke: among the tribes of Israel I have made known that which shall surely be. ¹⁰ The **princes of Judah** were like them that remove the bound: [therefore] I will pour out my wrath upon them like water. ¹¹ Ephraim is oppressed [and] broken in judgment, because he willingly walked after the commandment. ¹² Therefore [will] I [be] to Ephraim as a moth, and to the house of Judah as rottenness. ¹³ When Ephraim saw his sickness, and Judah [saw] his wound, then went Ephraim to the Assyrian, and sent to king Jareb: yet could he not heal you, nor cure you of your wound.

¹⁴ For I [will be] to Ephraim as a **lion**, and as a **young lion** to the house of Judah: I, [even] I, will **tear** and go away; I will take away, and none shall rescue [him]. ¹⁵ **I will go [and] return to my place, till they acknowledge their offence, and seek my face: in their affliction they will seek me early.**

Notes: The capitol of Israel is Samaria which is in the tribe of Ephraim land area. Vs 10 remove the bound refers to being held together, binders for materials such as glue, from the atom to space all things are held together by God. Hebrew 1:3 upholding all things from the word of his power.
vs 13: Assyria is parallel to China today, in the area of finances and political influence in the world.
vs 14 Go when Jesus came to earth, return at the ascension. vs 15 Israel will acknowledge their offense (Romans 11, Matthew 24, and Revelation 13). vs 15 is a connecting verse or links to 6:1-3.

Hosea Chapter 6 6:1-3 **Salvation** (*homerun 1, in the far future during the 70th week of Daniel*)

(11) ¹ **Come, and let us return to the LORD: for he has torn, and he will heal us;** he has smitten, and he will bind us up. ² After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight. ³ Then shall we know, [if] we follow on to know the LORD: his going forth is prepared as the morning; and he shall come to us as the rain, as the latter [and] former rain to the earth.

Notes: Latter rain is fall and former rain is spring. Jeremiah 5:24 Let us now fear the LORD our God, that gives the rain, both the former and latter, in his season; he reserves unto us the appointed weeks of harvest. Rain is stated the second time in Hosea 10:12 as another run that is in between runs or

Joel 2:23 Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for he has given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, and the latter rain in the first month. , (all of chapter 2 is prophetic for the far future for Israel, not the church or latter rain movement

Acts 2:16-21 refers to the last days which are from the sending of power from on high in Acts 2 until the return of Jesus Christ. The last days referred to from Joel refers to the future return of Israel to the land during the 70th week of Daniel after the rapture of the church and during the great tribulation

Hosea Chapter 6

Judgment - Strike 2 of 3 (6:4-11:7)

6:4-11 **True Prophets (4-6) and Lewd Priests (7-9)**

(12)⁴ **O Ephraim**, what shall I do to you? **O Judah**, what shall I do to you? for your goodness is as a morning cloud, and as the early dew it goes away. ⁵ Therefore I have hewed them by the prophets; I have slain them by the words of my mouth: and your judgments [are as] the light [that] goes forth. ⁶ For I desired mercy, and not sacrifice; and the knowledge of God more than burnt offerings. ⁷ But they like men have transgressed the covenant: there have they dealt treacherously against me. ⁸ **Gilead** is a city of them that work iniquity, [and is] polluted with blood. ⁹ And as **troops of robbers** wait for a man, [so] **the company of priests murder in the way by consent: for they commit lewdness.** ¹⁰ I have seen a horrible thing in the house of **Israel**: there is the whoredom of **Ephraim**, Israel is defiled. ¹¹ Also, **O Judah**, he has set a harvest for you, when I returned the captivity of my people.

Note: vs 9 "way of consent" is translated 1x consent and 53x Shechem. vs 10-11 Words against Israel and Ephraim are for the present and Judah is prophetic for the 1st and 2nd coming of the Messiah.

Hosea Chapter 7

Ephraim is a half-baked Pancake and Mixed Faith (4-9), a Silly Dove (11-15), and a Deceitful Bow (16)

(13)¹ When I would have healed **Israel**, then the **iniquity of Ephraim** was discovered, and the **wickedness of Samaria**: for they commit **falsehood**; and the thief comes in, [and] the **troop of robbers** spoils without. ² And they **consider not in their hearts** [that] I remember all their wickedness: now their own doings have beset them about; they are before my face. ³ **They make the king glad with their wickedness, and the princes with their lies.** ⁴ They are all adulterers, as an oven heated by the baker, [who] ceases from raising after he has kneaded the dough, until it be leavened. ⁵ In the day of **our king** the **princes have made [him] sick with bottles of wine**; he stretched out his hand with scorners. ⁶ For they have made ready their **heart** like an oven, while they lie in wait: **their baker sleeps** all the night; in the morning it burns as a flaming fire. ⁷ They are all hot as an oven, and have devoured their judges; all their kings are fallen: **there is none among them that calls to me.** ⁸ **Ephraim**, he has **mixed himself among the people; Ephraim** is a cake not turned. ⁹ **Strangers have devoured his strength, and he knows [it] not: yes, gray hairs are here and there upon him, yet he knows not.** ¹⁰ And the **pride of Israel** testifies to his face: and they do not return to the LORD their God, nor seek him for all this.

(14)¹¹ **Ephraim** also is like a silly dove without heart: they **call to Egypt**, they **go to Assyria.** ¹² When they shall go, I will spread my net upon them; I will bring them down as the fowls of the heaven; I will chastise them, as their assembly has heard. ¹³ Woe to them! for they have fled from me: destruction to them! because they have transgressed against me: though I have redeemed them, yet they have spoken lies against me. ¹⁴ And they have **not cried to me with their heart, when they howled upon their beds: they assemble themselves for corn and wine**, [and] they rebel against me. ¹⁵ Though I have bound [and] strengthened their arms, yet do they imagine mischief against me. ¹⁶ **They return, [but] not to the most High**: they are like **a deceitful bow**: their princes shall fall by the sword for the rage of their tongue: **this [shall be] their derision in the land of Egypt.**

Hosea Chapter 8 *Israel Sets up their Kings(not the LORD) and Has a Gold Calf Idol in Samaria*

(15)¹ [Set] the trumpet to your mouth. [He shall come] **as an eagle** against the house of the LORD, because they have **transgressed my covenant, and trespassed against my law.** ² Israel shall cry to me, My God, we know you. ³ **Israel** has cast off [the thing that is] good: the enemy shall pursue him. ⁴ **They have set up kings, but not by me: they have made princes, and I knew [it] not**: of their silver and their gold have they made them idols, that they may be cut off. ⁵ Your calf, O Samaria, has cast [you] off; my anger is kindled against them: how long [will it be] ere they attain to innocency? ⁶ For from Israel was it also: the workman made it; therefore it is not God: but the calf of Samaria shall be broken in pieces.

Hosea Chapter 8

8:7-14 *Among the Gentiles, Israel is Like a Vessel Wherein is No Pleasure*

(16) ⁷ **For they have sown the wind, and they shall reap the whirlwind:** it has no stalk: the bud shall yield no meal: if so be it yield, the strangers shall swallow it up. ⁸ **Israel** is swallowed up: now they will be among the Gentiles **as a vessel wherein is no pleasure.** ⁹ For they are gone up to **Assyria, a wild donkey alone by himself: Ephraim has hired lovers.** ¹⁰ Yes, though they have hired among the nations, now will I gather them, and they shall sorrow a little for the burden of the king of princes. ¹¹ Because **Ephraim** has made many altars to sin, altars shall be to him to sin. ¹² **I have written to him the great things of my law, [but] they were counted as a strange thing.** ¹³ They sacrifice flesh [for] the sacrifices of my offerings, and eat [it; but] the LORD accepts them not; now will he remember their iniquity, and visit their sins: they shall return to Egypt. ¹⁴ **For Israel has forgotten his Maker,** and builds temples; and Judah has multiplied fenced cities: but I will send a fire upon his cities, and it shall devour the palaces thereof.

Note: Compare Ephraim and Assyria to President Biden and China, and the ban on ex-president Trump and Secretary of State Mike Pompeo on Jan 21, 2021. Currently the CCP is rewriting the Bible beginning with the Gospel of John, China prints and publishes the most Bibles in the world from Nanjing Amity Printing Company ("**Amity Printing**") is China's sole Bible printer with capacity to produce 18 million copies per year. In coordination with the U.B.S. and only sold in government churches in China.

Hosea Chapter 9

9:1-9 *Rejoice Not and No More Levitical Feast Days*

(17) ¹ **Rejoice not,** O Israel, for joy, as [other] people: for you have gone a whoring from your God, you have loved a reward upon every corn floor. ² The floor and the winepress shall not feed them, and the **new wine shall fail in her.** ³ They shall not dwell in the LORD'S land; but **Ephraim** shall return to **Egypt,** and they shall eat unclean [things] in **Assyria.** ⁴ They shall not offer wine [offerings] to the LORD, neither shall they be pleasing to him: their sacrifices [shall be] to them as the bread of mourners; all that eat thereof shall be polluted: for their bread for their soul shall not come into the house of the LORD. ⁵ What will ye do in the solemn day, and in the day of the feast of the LORD? ⁶ For, look, they are gone because of destruction: Egypt shall gather them up, Memphis shall bury them: the pleasant [places] for their silver, nettles shall possess them: thorns [shall be] in their tabernacles. ⁷ The days of visitation are come, the days of recompense are come; **Israel** shall know [it]: **the prophet is a fool, the spiritual man is mad, for the multitude of your iniquity,** and the **great hatred.** ⁸ The watchman of Ephraim was with my God: [but] the prophet is a snare of a fowler in all his ways, [and] **hatred in the house of his God.** ⁹ They have deeply corrupted [themselves], **as in the days of Gibeah:** [therefore] he will remember their iniquity, he will visit their sins.

Note: vs 7-8 During judgment the true prophet is a fool and the spiritual man is mad. There is great hatred they experience toward them, and in the house of his God (Jeremiah 29:25-26 and Acts 26:24).

9:10-17 *Israel was Like Grapes in the Wilderness: They Went to Baalpeor to Their Shame*

(18) ¹⁰ I found Israel like grapes in the wilderness; I saw your fathers as the first ripe in the fig tree at her first time: [but] they went to **Baalpeor,** and **separated themselves to [that] shame; and [their] abominations were according as they loved.** ¹¹ [As for] **Ephraim, their glory shall fly away like a bird, from the birth, and from the womb, and from the conception.** ¹² Though they bring up their children, yet will I bereave them, [that there shall] not [be] a man [left]: yes, woe also to them when I depart from them! ¹³ Ephraim, as I saw Tyre, is planted in a pleasant place: but **Ephraim shall bring forth his children to the murderer.** ¹⁴ Give them, O LORD: what will you give? give them a miscarrying womb and dry breasts. ¹⁵ All their wickedness is in **Gilgal:** for there I hated them: for the wickedness of their doings I will drive them out of my house, I will love them no more: all their princes are revolvers. ¹⁶ **Ephraim** is smitten, their root is dried up, they shall bear no fruit: yes, though they bring forth, yet will I slay [even] the beloved [fruit] of their womb. ¹⁷ **My God will cast them away, because they did not hearken to him: and they shall be wanderers among the nations.**

Note: vs 11 declares the glory of Ephraim shall fly away as a child's birth begins in the womb and conception. vs 13 tells of child sacrifice as tax paid legal abortion since 1972 in the U.S.A.

Hosea Chapter 10

10:1-8 **Israel is an Empty Vine, Their Heart is Divided** (1-2)

(19) ¹ Israel is an empty vine, he brings forth fruit to himself: according to the multitude of his fruit he has increased the altars; according to the goodness of his land they have made goodly images. ² **Their heart is divided;** now they will be found faulty: he shall break down their altars, he shall spoil their images. ³ For now they shall say, We have no king, because we feared not the LORD; what then should a king do to us? ⁴ They have spoken words, swearing falsely in making a covenant: thus judgment springs up as hemlock in the furrows of the field. ⁵ The inhabitants of **Samaria** shall fear because of the calves of Bethaven: for the people thereof shall mourn over it, and the priests thereof [that] rejoiced on it, for the glory thereof, because it is departed from it. ⁶ It shall be also carried to Assyria [for] a present to king Jareb: Ephraim shall receive shame, and Israel shall be ashamed of his own counsel. ⁷ [As for] Samaria, her king is cut off as the foam upon the water. ⁸ The high places also of Aven, the sin of Israel, shall be destroyed: the thorn and the thistle shall come up on their altars; and they shall say to the mountains, Cover us; and to the hills, Fall on us.

10:9-15 **Break Up Your Fallow Ground for it is Time to Seek the LORD** (11-12)

(20) ⁹ O Israel, you **have sinned from the days of Gibeah:** there they stood: the battle in Gibeah against the children of iniquity did not overtake them. ¹⁰ [It is] in my desire that I should chastise them; and the people shall be gathered against them, when they shall bind themselves in their two furrows. ¹¹ **And Ephraim [is as] a heifer [that is] taught, [and] loves to tread out [the corn]; but I passed over upon her fair neck: I will make Ephraim to ride; Judah shall plow, [and] Jacob shall break his clods.** ¹² **Sow to yourselves in righteousness, reap in mercy; break up your fallow ground: for [it is] time to seek the LORD, till he come and rain righteousness upon you.** ¹³ Ye have plowed wickedness, ye have reaped iniquity; ye have eaten the fruit of lies: because you did trust in your way, in the multitude of your mighty men. ¹⁴ Therefore shall a tumult arise among your people, and all your fortresses shall be spoiled, as Shalman spoiled Betharbel in the day of battle: the mother was dashed in pieces upon [her] children. ¹⁵ So shall Bethel do to you because of your great wickedness: in a morning shall the king of Israel utterly be cut off.

Note: 10:11-12 is a 3- base hit before the home run in the far future salvation for Israel in 11:8-12

Hosea Chapter 11

11:1-7 **God's Love for Israel** (his fatherly love, looking back to Egypt and forward to Jesus)

(21) ¹ **When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called my son out of Egypt.** ² [As] they called them, so they went from them: they sacrificed to **Baalim, and burned incense to graven images.** ³ I taught Ephraim also to go, taking them by their arms; but they knew not that I healed them. ⁴ I drew them with cords of a man, with bands of love: and I was to them as they that take off the yoke on their jaws, and I laid meat to them. ⁵ He shall not return into the land of Egypt, but the Assyrian shall be his king, because they refused to return. ⁶ And the sword shall abide on his cities, and shall consume his branches, and devour them, because of their own counsels. ⁷ And my people are bent to backsliding from me: though they called them to the most High, none at all would exalt [him].

11:8-12 **Salvation** (home run, the spiritual laws of salvation apply to the true and false church also)

⁸ How shall I give you up, Ephraim? [how] shall I deliver you, Israel? how shall I make you as Admah? [how] shall I set you as Zeboim? my heart is turned within me, my repentings are kindled together. ⁹ I will not execute the fierceness of my anger, I will not return to destroy Ephraim: for I [am] God, and not man; the Holy One in the midst of you: and I will not enter into the city. ¹⁰ They shall walk after the LORD: he shall roar like a lion: when he shall roar, then the children shall **tremble** from the west. ¹¹ They shall **tremble as a bird out of Egypt, and as a dove out of the land of Assyria:** and I will place them in their houses, says the LORD. ¹² **Ephraim** compasses me about with lies, and the **house of Israel** with deceit: **but Judah yet rules with God, and is faithful with the saints.**

Note: See commentary by Matthew Henry for Hosea 11:8-17.

12:1-6 **Lies Increase (1), Jacob Wrestles an Angel (2-6), and Anger with Ephraim (7-14)**

(22) ¹ **Ephraim** feeds on wind, and follows after the east wind: he **daily increases lies and desolation**; and they do make a covenant with the Assyrians, and oil is carried into Egypt. ² The LORD has also a controversy with Judah, and will **punish Jacob according to his ways; according to his doings** will he recompense him. ³ He took his brother by the heel in the womb, and by his strength he had power with God: ⁴ Yes, he had power over the angel, and prevailed: he wept, and made supplication to him: he found him [in] Bethel, and there he spoke with us; ⁵ Even the LORD God of hosts; the LORD is his memorial. ⁶ Therefore turn you to your God: keep mercy and judgment, and wait on your God continually.

Note: Same event as at Genesis 32:24-30. Jacob's name is changed to Israel. In Hebrew Jacob is "heel catcher" and Israel is "governed by God." There God "spoke to us" which includes Ephraim, Israel, Judah, the ekklesia, and every believer. The LORD has a controversy with Judah and he has with Israel in 4:1.

(23) ⁷ [He is] a merchant, the balances of deceit are in his hand: he loves to oppress. ⁸ And **Ephraim** said, Yet **I am become rich**, I have found me out substance: [in] all my labors they shall find none iniquity in me that [were] sin. ⁹ And I [that am] the LORD your God from the land of Egypt will yet make you to dwell in tabernacles, as in the days of the solemn feast. ¹⁰ I have also spoken by the prophets, and I have multiplied visions, and used **similitudes**, by the ministry of the prophets. ¹¹ [Is there] iniquity [in] Gilead? surely they are vanity: they sacrifice bullocks in Gilgal; yes, their altars are as heaps in the furrows of the fields. ¹² And Jacob fled into the country of Syria, and Israel served for a wife, and for a wife he kept [sheep]. ¹³ And by a prophet the LORD brought Israel out of Egypt, and by a prophet was he preserved. ¹⁴ Ephraim provoked [him] to anger most bitterly: therefore shall he leave his blood upon him, and his reproach shall his Lord return to him.

Note: vs 8 I am become rich is confusing their prosperity to blessing from God apart from morality. vs 10 prophets are Elijah, Elisha, Amos to Israel and Joel, Isaiah, and Micah to Judah. Similitudes use earthly examples preceded by "like" or "as." Vs 13 Aaron and Moses. All true prophets, 2 Peter 2:1.

Hosea Chapter 13 Ephraim Sins More and More (1-8) and Repentance is Hid (9-16)

(24) ¹ When **Ephraim spoke trembling, he exalted himself in Israel; but when he offended in Baal**, he died. ² And now they sin more and more, and have made them molten images of their silver, [and] idols according to their own understanding, all of it the work of the craftsmen: they say of them, Let the men that sacrifice kiss the calves. ³ Therefore they shall be as the morning cloud, and as the early dew that passes away, as the chaff [that] is driven with the whirlwind out of the floor, and as the smoke out of the chimney. ⁴ Yet I [am] the LORD your God from the land of Egypt, and you shall know no god but me: for there is no savior beside me. ⁵ I did know you in the wilderness, in the land of great drought. ⁶ According to their pasture, so were they filled; they were filled, and their heart was exalted; therefore have they forgotten me. ⁷ Therefore I will be to them as a lion: as a leopard by the way will I observe them: ⁸ I will meet them as a bear [that is] bereaved [of her whelps], and will rend the caul of their heart, and there **will I devour them like a lion**: the wild beast shall tear them.

Note: vs 1, Ephraim was the place of central government and prosperity. The LORD tears in Hosea 5:14.

(25) ⁹ **O Israel, you have destroyed thyself; but in me is your help.** ¹⁰ I will be your king: where [is any other] that may save you in all your cities? and your judges of whom you said, Give me a king and princes? ¹¹ I gave you a king in my anger, and took [him] away in my wrath. ¹² The iniquity of Ephraim is bound up; **his sin is hid**. ¹³ The sorrows of a travailing woman shall come upon him: he is an unwise son; for he should not stay long in [the place of] the breaking forth of children.

¹⁴ **I will** ransom them from the power of Shoel; **I will** redeem them from death: O death, **I will** be your plagues; O grave, **I will** be your destruction: **repentance shall be hid from my eyes**. ¹⁵ Though he be fruitful among [his] brethren, an east wind shall come, the wind of the LORD shall come up from the wilderness, and his spring shall become dry, and his fountain shall be dried up: he shall spoil the treasure of all pleasant vessels. ¹⁶ Samaria shall become desolate; for she has rebelled against her God: they shall fall by the sword: their infants shall be dashed in pieces, and their women with child shall be ripped up.

Note: vs 16 by the Assyrians in 722 BC and before. This is why Jonah did not want to go to Nineveh.

Hosea Chapter 14

Salvation (homerun)

Return and turn with words to God (1-2); not nation, not military nor idols (3)

(26) ¹ O Israel, **return** to the LORD your God; for you have **fallen by your iniquity**. ² **Take with you words, and turn to the LORD:** say to him, Take away all iniquity, and receive [us] graciously: so will we render the calves of our lips. ³ Asshur shall not save us; we will not ride upon horses: neither will we say anymore to the work of our hands, [Ye are] our gods: for in you the fatherless finds mercy.

Note: We can and must take our words to our God, in prayer. Asshur is the old capital of Assyria, and their primary god. Fatherless finds mercy reminds us Hosea 10:12 where we sow righteousness and reap mercy. Return and turn have the same Hebrew word as recompense and reward in Hosea, used 22x.

Israel shall grow-root-branch,-beauty-smell, revive(4-7) and Ephraim shall be like a fir tree with fruit (8)

(27) ⁴ **I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for my anger is turned away from him.** ⁵ **I will be as the dew to Israel: he shall grow as the lily, and cast forth his roots as Lebanon.** ⁶ *His branches shall spread, and his beauty shall be as the olive tree, and his smell as Lebanon.* ⁷ *They that dwell under his shadow shall return; they shall revive [as] the corn, and grow as the vine: the scent thereof [shall be] as the wine of Lebanon.* ⁸ *Ephraim [shall say], What have I to do anymore with idols? I have heard [him], and observed him: I [am] like a green fir tree. From me is your fruit found.*

Note: backsliding is used 12x in the Hebrew Bible; 9x in Jeremiah, 2x in Hosea, and Proverbs 1:32. vs 4-5 has three "I will" as salvation has three "I will not" in 11:9. vs 8 Ephraim heard and observed him reminds us of John 1:1-4 and 1 John1:1-4. From God our fruit is found, as in John 15:5, Galatians 2:20. This passage is similar to the writing in Song of Songs.

Conclusion: The Righteous Walk and the Transgressors Fall

⁹ Who is wise, and he shall understand these [things]? prudent, and he shall know them? for the ways of the LORD are right, and the just shall walk in them: but the **transgressors shall fall** therein.

Note: vs 9 switches from a nation to an individual "he." May we be wise (from God, James 1:5-7 and James 3) and prudent (toward man in when and how) as we hate sin and follow Christ. The degrees of severity of sin -> iniquity > transgress (trespass or debts) are figures in the Law sin and trespass offerings. Israel lasted for 260 years before fall to Assyria.

Jezeel is specified in 4 ways in Hosea 1-2
 Bethel – house of God, worship a golden calf
 Bethaven / Aven- house of wickedness
 Gibeah – Gibeonite Lewdness (Judges 19)
 Gilead – a Levite city that works iniquity
 Gilgal – idol worship
 Samaria – capital known for wickedness
 Shechem – city of refuge

Place	Hosea Reference
Gilgal	4:15; 9:15; 12:11
Bethaven	4:15; 5:8; 10:5,8
Mizpah	5:1
Tabor	5:1
Gibeah	5:8; 9:9; 10:9
Ramah	5:8
Gilead	6:8; 12:11
Shechem	6:9
Samaria	7:1; 8:5-6; 10:5,7; 13:16
Bethel	10:15; 12:4

The Twelve Tribes in Canaan

Joel (3-9, 12 min, Judah) 2017

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3

12 Sounds of God's Judgment & Blessing

Text: The Letter by the Prophet Joel "Yahweh is God"

Purpose: Reproof & Hope for Judah & Jerusalem

Key Words: Day of the Lord 6x and the law of first mention.

		<u>Application for today</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
JUDGMENT: SIN & SORROW (past & present)			
1) 4 waves of Locust armies (past)	1:4	The experience of destruction (gnawing, swarming, creeping & stripping)	1:1-4
2) Awake, you drunkards & weep (present)	1:5	The call for all to sorrow (wail Jerusalem, despair farmers, lament priests)	1:5-13
3) Call to repent and effects of the plague	1:14	with fasting and prayer	1:14-20
4) Blow the trumpet in Zion	2:1	Near future human army invasion (Warning - extended long blow, 1 trumpet)	2:1-11
REPENTANCE in the (near and far future)			
5) Turn to me with all your heart	2:12	Tear your heart—not your garment	2:12-14
6) Blow the trumpet in Zion	2:15	Call for public repentance (Assembly - long blow, 2 trumpets)	2:15-17
BLESSING: RESTORATION in the (near & far future)			
7) Then the Lord will be zealous to bless	2:18	Time of rejoicing and fruitfulness	2:18-27
8) I will restore the years the locust has eaten	2:25	God's protection, provision & providence	1:4
NIGHT – RETRIBUTION in the (far future)			
9) I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh	2:28	Peter in Acts 2:16-21 , Ro 10:13, 11	2:28-32
10) I will gather all nations	3:2	War down in the Valley of Jehosophat	3:1-8
11) Beat your plowshares into swords	3:10	Multitudes in the valley of decision	3:9-17
MORNING - SECOND COMING OF JESUS CHRIST TO EARTH in the (far future)			
12) And it will come to pass in "that day"	3:18	2 Peter 1:19 Hope, abundance & joy	3:18-21

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Joel 1:14	Supplication	Call to Repentance		Priests call for a fast	Gather elders & all people
Joel 2:17	Supplication	Call to Repentance		Testimony of God's people	Priests between porch & altar
Joel 2:32	Supplication	Salvation		Whosoever calls on Jesus	To Israel Romans 10:17

Challenges: (1) Why locusts? No king. Proverbs 30:27, Psalm 105:34-35, Revelation 9:4. (2) Date of Joel? No king during reign of Queen Athaliah (type of anti-christ) or most of Josiah. Same time as Elijah & Elisha in Israel. Elijah also translates "Yahweh is God." (3) Why Peter? He knew guilt & mercy.

Joel Chapter 1

1:1-7 *Judah is Plagued with Locusts and Famine*

(1) ¹ The word of the LORD that came to Joel the son of Pethuel. ² **Hear this, ye old men, and give ear, all ye inhabitants of the land. Has this been in your days, or even in the days of your fathers?** ³ **Tell ye your children of it, and [let] your children [tell] their children, and their children another generation.** ⁴ **That which the palmerworm has left has the locust eaten; and that which the locust has left has the cankerworm eaten; and that which the cankerworm has left has the caterpillar eaten.** ⁵ **Awake, ye drunkards, and weep; and howl, all ye drinkers of wine, because of the new wine; for it is cut off from your mouth.** ⁶ **For a nation is come up upon my land, strong, and without number, whose teeth are the teeth of a lion, and he has the cheek teeth of a great lion.** ⁷ **He has laid my vine waste, and barked my fig tree: he has made it clean bare, and cast [it] away; the branches thereof are made white.**

1:8-20 *Judah Told to Mourn*

(2) ⁸ Lament like a virgin girded with sackcloth for the husband of her youth. ⁹ The grain offering and the drink offering is cut off from the house of the LORD; the priests, the LORD'S ministers, mourn. ¹⁰ The field is was, the land mourns; for the corn is was: the new wine is dried up, the oil languishes. ¹¹ Be ye ashamed, O ye husbandmen; howl, O ye vinedressers, for the wheat and for the barley; because the harvest of the field is perished. ¹² The vine is dried up, and the fig tree languishes; the pomegranate tree, the palm tree also, and the apple tree, [even] all the trees of the field, are withered: because joy is withered away from the sons of men. ¹³ Gird yourselves, and lament, ye priests: howl, ye ministers of the altar: come, lie all night in sackcloth, ye ministers of my God: for the grain offering and the drink offering is withheld from the house of your God. ¹⁴ Sanctify ye a fast, call a solemn assembly, gather the elders [and] all the inhabitants of the land [into] the house of the LORD your God, and cry to the LORD, ¹⁵ Alas for the day! for the day of the LORD is at hand, and as a destruction from the Almighty shall it come. ¹⁶ Is not the meat cut off before our eyes, [yes], joy and gladness from the house of our God? ¹⁷ The seed is rotten under their clods, the garners are laid desolate, the barns are broken down; for the corn is withered. ¹⁸ How do the beasts groan! the herds of cattle are perplexed, because they have no pasture; yes, the flocks of sheep are made desolate. ¹⁹ O LORD, to you will I cry: for the fire has devoured the pastures of the wilderness, and the flame has burned all the trees of the field. ²⁰ The beasts of the field cry also to you: for the rivers of waters are dried up, and the fire has devoured the pastures of the wilderness.

Joel Chapter 2

2:1-11 *The Day of the Lord*

(3) ¹ **Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an alarm in my holy mountain:** let all the inhabitants of the land tremble: for the day of the LORD comes, for [it is] near at hand; ² A day of darkness and of gloominess, a day of clouds and of thick darkness, as the morning spread upon the mountains: a great people and a strong; there has not been ever the like, neither shall be anymore after it, [even] to the years of many generations. ³ A fire devours before them; and behind them a flame burns: the land is as the garden of Eden before them, and behind them a desolate wilderness; yes, and nothing shall escape them. ⁴ The appearance of them is as the appearance of horses; and as horsemen, so they will run. ⁵ Like the noise of chariots on the tops of mountains they will leap, like the noise of a flame of fire that devours the stubble, as a strong people set in battle array. ⁶ Before their face the people shall be much pained: all faces shall gather blackness. ⁷ They shall run like mighty men; they shall climb the wall like men of war; and they shall march everyone on his ways, and they shall not break their ranks: ⁸ Neither shall one thrust another; they shall walk everyone in his path: and [when] they fall upon the sword, they shall not be wounded. ⁹ They shall run to and fro in the city; they shall run upon the wall, they shall climb up upon the houses; they shall enter in at the windows like a thief. ¹⁰ The earth shall quake before them; the heavens shall tremble: the sun and the moon shall be dark, and the stars shall withdraw their shining: ¹¹ And the LORD shall utter his voice before his army: for his camp is very great: for [he is] strong that executes his word: for the day of the LORD is great and very terrible; and who can abide it?

Joel Chapter 2

2:12-17 *The Lord Invites His People Back*

(4) ¹² Therefore also now, says the LORD, turn ye [even] to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: ¹³ And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn to the LORD your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repents him of the evil. ¹⁴ Who knows [if] he will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him; [even] a grain offering and a drink offering to the LORD your God?

(5) ¹⁵ Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly: ¹⁶ Gather the people, sanctify the assembly, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet. ¹⁷ Let the priests, the ministers of the LORD, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare your people, O LORD, and give not your heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?

2:18-27 *The Lord Promises Blessings*

¹⁸ Then will the LORD be jealous for his land, and pity his people. ¹⁹ Yes, the LORD will answer and say unto his people, Behold, I will send you corn, and wine, and oil, and ye shall be satisfied therewith: and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen: ²⁰ But I will remove far off from you the northern [army], and will drive him into a land barren and desolate, with his face toward the east sea, and his hinder part toward the utmost sea, and his stink shall come up, and his ill fragrance shall come up, because he has done great things. ²¹ Fear not, O land; be glad and rejoice: for the LORD will do great things. ²² Be not afraid, ye beasts of the field: for the pastures of the wilderness do spring, for the tree bears her fruit, the fig tree and the vine do yield their strength. ²³ Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for he has given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first [month]. ²⁴ And the floors shall be full of wheat, and the fats shall overflow with wine and oil. ²⁵ And I will restore to you the years that the locust has eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you. ²⁶ And ye shall eat in plenty, and be satisfied, and praise the name of the LORD your God, that has dealt wondrously with you: and my people shall never be ashamed. ²⁷ And ye shall know that I [am] in the midst of Israel, and [that] I [am] the LORD your God, and none else: and my people shall never be ashamed.

2:28-32 *The Lord Will Pour out His Spirit*

(6) ²⁸ And it shall come to pass afterward, [that] I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions: ²⁹ And also upon the servants and upon the handmaids in those days will I pour out my spirit. ³⁰ And I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth, blood, and fire, and pillars of smoke. ³¹ The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the great and the terrible day of the LORD come. ³² And it shall come to pass, [that] whosoever shall call on the name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD has said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.

The Lord Will Rescue His People

(7) ¹ For, behold, in those days, and in that time, when I shall bring again the captivity of Judah and Jerusalem, ² I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there for my people and [for] my heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations, and parted my land. ³ And they have cast lots for my people; and have given a boy for an harlot, and sold a girl for wine, that they might drink. ⁴ Yes, and what have ye to do with me, O Tyre, and Zidon, and all the coasts of Palestine? will ye render me a recompense? and if ye recompense me, swiftly [and] speedily will I return your recompense upon your own head; ⁵ Because ye have taken my silver and my gold, and have carried into your temples my goodly pleasant things: ⁶ The children also of Judah and the children of Jerusalem have ye sold to the Grecians, that ye might remove them far from their border. ⁷ Behold, I will raise them out of the place where ye have sold them, and will return your recompense upon your own head: ⁸ And I will sell your sons and your daughters into the hand of the children of Judah, and they shall sell them to the Sabeans, to a people far off: for the LORD has spoken [it].

(8) ⁹ Proclaim ye this among the Gentiles; Prepare war, wake up the mighty men, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up: ¹⁰ Beat your plowshares into swords, and your pruning hooks into spears: let the weak say, I [am] strong. ¹¹ Assemble yourselves, and come, all ye heathen, and gather yourselves together round about: thither cause your mighty ones to come down, O LORD. ¹² Let the heathen be wakened, and come up to the valley of Jehoshaphat: for there will I sit to judge all the heathen round about. ¹³ Put ye in the sickle, for the harvest is ripe: come, get you down; for the press is full, the fats overflow; for their wickedness is great. ¹⁴ Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision: for the day of the LORD is near in the valley of decision. ¹⁵ The sun and the moon shall be darkened, and the stars shall withdraw their shining. ¹⁶ The LORD also shall roar out of Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem; and the heavens and the earth shall shake: but the LORD [will be] the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel. ¹⁷ So shall ye know that I [am] the LORD your God dwelling in Zion, my holy mountain: then shall Jerusalem be holy, and there shall no strangers pass through her anymore.

(9) ¹⁸ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, and all the rivers of Judah shall flow with waters, and a fountain shall come forth of the house of the LORD, and shall water the valley of Shittim. ¹⁹ Egypt shall be a desolation, and Edom shall be a desolate wilderness, for the violence [against] the children of Judah, because they have shed innocent blood in their land. ²⁰ But Judah shall dwell forever, and Jerusalem from generation to generation. ²¹ For I will cleanse their blood [that] I have not cleansed: for the LORD dwells in Zion.

Ps 105:34 EXPOSITION.

Ver. 34 He spoke, and the locusts came, and caterpillars, and that without number. One word from the Captain and the armies leap forward. The expression is very striking, and sets forth the immediate result of the divine word. The caterpillar is called the licker, because it seems to lick up every green thing as in a moment. Perhaps the caterpillar here meant is still the locust in another form. That locusts swarm in countless armies is a fact of ordinary observation, and the case would be worse on this occasion. We have ourselves ridden for miles through armies of locusts, and we have seen with our own eyes how completely they devour every green thing. The description is not strained when we read, "And did eat up all the herbs in their land, and devoured the fruit of their ground." Nothing escapes these ravenous creatures, they even climb the trees to reach any remnant of foliage which may survive. Commissioned as these were by God, we may be sure they would do their work thoroughly, and leave behind them nothing but a desolate wilderness.

EXPLANATORY NOTES AND QUAIN T SAYINGS.

Ver. 34. -- Locusts came, and caterpillars, and that without number. In this country, and in all the dominions of Prete Janni, is a very great and horrible plague, which is an innumerable company of locusts, which eat and consume all the corn and trees; and the number of them is so great, as it is incredible; and with their multitude they cover the earth and fill the air in such wise, that it is a hard matter to be able to see the sun...We travelled five days journey through places wholly waste and destroyed, wherein millet had been sown, which had stalks as great as those we set in our vineyards, and we saw them all broken and beaten down as if a tempest had been there; and this the locusts did. The trees were without leaves, and the bark of them was all devoured; and no grass was there to be seen, for they had eaten up all things; and if we had not been warned and advised to carry food with us, we and our cattle had perished. This country was all covered with locusts without wings; and they told us these were the seed of them which had eaten up all, and that as soon as their wings were grown they would seek after the old ones. The number of them was so great, that I shall not speak of it, because I shall not be believed: but this! will say, that I saw men, women, and children sit as forlorn and dead among the locusts. --*Samuel Purchas*, 1577-1628.

Ver. 34. -- Locusts and caterpillars. God did not bring the same plague twice; but when there was occasion for another, it was still a new one; for he has many arrows in his quiver. --*Matthew Henry*.

Ver. 34. -- Without number. A swarm [of locusts], which was observed in India in 1825, occupied a space of forty English square miles, contained at least forty millions of locusts in one line, and cast a long shadow on the earth. And Major Moore thus describes an immense army of these animals which ravaged the Mahratta country: "The column they composed extended five hundred miles; and so compact was it when on the wing, that like an eclipse, it completely hid the sun, so that no shadow was cast by any object." Brown, in his travels in Africa, states that an area of nearly two thousand square miles was literally covered by them; and Kirby and Spence mention that a column of them was so immense, that they took four hours to fly over the spot where the observer stood. --*M. Kalisch*.

Ver. 34. -- Came...and that without number.

Onward they came, a dark continuous cloud
Of congregated myriads number less;
The rushing of whose wings was as the sound
Of some broad river, headlong in its course,
Plunged from a mountain summit; or
The roar Of a wild ocean in the autumnal storm,
Shattering its billows on a shore of rocks,
Onward they came, the winds impelled them on. *Robert Southey*, 1774-1843.

Amos (9-19, 25 min, Israel) 2017

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9

12 Advance Warnings for the Elect of God

Key verse: "Let Judgment roll down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream (5:24)

How to prevent God's judgment on us now and at the Judgment Seat of Christ: Scripture

- | | |
|---|---------|
| 1) Know that for three transgressions and four, God will not turn away judgment | 1:3 |
| 2) We will not profane His holy name (Jesus Christ in the New Testament) | 2:7 |
| 3) Know we can't walk together with God, except we be agreed? | 3:3 |
| 4) Be consistently prepared to meet our God | 4:12 |
| 5) Hate the evil, and love the good, and establish judgment in the gate | 5:14-15 |
| 6) Let judgment run down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream | 5:23-24 |
| 7) Don't rest in the false comfort of music and instruments | 6:5 |
| 8) God sets a plumb line in the midst of His people: He will go around it | 7:8 |
| 9) God calls us – we don't need seminary or credentials | 7:14-15 |
| 10) Caution that worship is not replaced by making money with false scales | 8:5 |
| 11) A time will come when it is too late to hear and find the Word of God | 8:12 |
| 12) God will raise up the tabernacle of David, and close up the breaches | 9:11 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Amos 7:2	Supplication	Intercession Mercy			Amos for Israel
Amos 7:5	Supplication	Intercession Mercy			Amos for Israel

Application today.

Then: Mixing of true and false worship, boastful complacency, music, personal comfort, abuse or neglect of the poor, drunkenness, gluttony, violence, open immorality.

Today: Luke 9:24-27. Let us judge ourselves and each other before it is too late.

Outline I of Amos "Burden-Bearer"

Background: Amos moved from his hometown of Tekoa, Judah north to prophesy to Israel. He was a sheep-breeder, fig farmer and a prophet. In a time of national prosperity, the acquiring of more money consumes the people and the poor are abused. Where Hosea his counterpart addresses Israel's unfaithfulness and God's love, Amos addresses judgment on Israel from a just and right God. Hosea is a last plea to return to God while Amos is an advance warning to judge themselves before God judges them.

Locations: Tekoa, Jerusalem, Bethel, and Samaria

<u>Southern Kingdom</u> (Judah - Jerusalem)	<u>Northern Kingdom</u> (Israel - Samaria)	<u>Assyria</u>
975 King Rehoboam	975 King Jeroboam	
956-889 King Asa & King Jehosaphat	875-848 King Ahab and Elijah	
	847-797 King Jehu and Elisha	
	793-753 Jonah	
792-740 King Uzziah	787-747 King Jeroboam II	
	760-750 Prophet Amos	
715-687 King Hezekiah	753-715 Prophet Hosea	
742-687 Prophet Micah to Judah & Israel		
740-689 Prophet Isaiah	722 King Hoshea and Fall of Israel to Assyria	

New Testament Connection: Amos 9:11 - Acts 15:15-16 Israel is like the congregation at Corinth.

	<u>Amos</u>
Introduction (2 yrs. before the earthquake, Zech 14:5, archeology)	1:1-2
Part 1) Eight Judgments on the surrounding nations, Judah & Israel	1-2
"For three transgressions of _____ and for four, I will not turn away, because . . . "	
1. Damascus (Syrian, oldest inhabited city on earth)	1:3-5
2. Gaza (Philistine – Palestine today. Betrayal to Edom)	1:6-8
3. Tyre (betrayal to Edom after King Solomon)	1:9-10
4. Edom (descendants of Jacob's brother Esau, Obadiah)	1:11-12
5. Ammon (descendants of Lot's 2 nd grandson)	1:13-15
6. Moab (descendants of Lot's 1 st grandson)	2:1-3
7. Judah	2:4-5
8. Israel	2:6-16
Part 2) Five Messages of Guilt & Punishment Against Israel	3-6
1. "Hear this word", 12 tribes of Israel (Jacob)	3:1-15
2. "Hear this word", Women, worship & stubbornness of Israel	4:1-13
3. "Hear this word", Seek God & live by His grace	5:1-17
4. "Woe", Unacceptable worship & captivity	5:18-27
5. "Woe", Complacency & pride	6:1-14
Part 3) Five Visions of Approaching Judgment	7-9
1. Locusts (Waiver-love)	7:1-3
2. Fire (Waiver-love)	7:4-6
3. Plumb line (Justice-holy)	7:7-9
Refusal of Amos' intimidation by Amaziah the Bethel priest	7:10-17
4. Basket of Summer Fruit (1-3, overdue-holy) 4-6, 7-10, 11-14	8:1-14
5. Striking the Lintel (1-4, here-holy) 5-10	9:1-10
Hope for Israel's faithful (future-love)	9:11-15

Amos Chapter 1

1:1-2 Introduction

(1) ¹ The words of Amos, who was among the herdmen of Tekoa, which he saw concerning Israel in the days of Uzziah king of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of Joash king of Israel, two years before the earthquake. ² And he said, The LORD will a roar from Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem; and the habitations of the shepherds shall mourn, and the top of Carmel shall wither.

^a Lion typology also in Job 4:9-10

1:3-5 Damascus is Judged (Syria to the north)

³ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Damascus, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because they have threshed Gilead with threshing instruments of iron: ⁴ But I will send a fire into the house of a Hazael, which shall devour the palaces of Benhadad. ⁵ I will break also the gate of Damascus, and cut off the inhabitant from the plain of Aven, and him that holds the scepter from the house of Eden: and the people of Syria shall go into captivity to Kir, says the LORD.

^a Time of Elisha, 2 Kings 8:7-15 and 13:22-25

1:6-8 Gaza is Judged (to the west)

⁶ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Gaza, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because they carried away captive the whole captivity, to deliver them up to Edom: ⁷ But I will send a fire on the wall of Gaza, which shall devour the palaces thereof: ⁸ And I will cut off the inhabitant from Ashdod, and him that holds the scepter from Ashkelon, and I will turn my hand against Ekron: and the remnant of the Philistines shall perish, says the Lord GOD.

1:9-10 Tyre is Judged (King David's ally to the north)

(2) ⁹ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Tyre, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because they delivered up the whole captivity to Edom, and remembered not the brotherly covenant: ¹⁰ But I will send a fire on the wall of Tyre, which shall devour the palaces thereof.

1:11-12 Edom is Judged (Jacob's brother Esau, to the east)

¹¹ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Edom, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because he did pursue his brother with the sword, and did cast off all pity, and his anger did tear perpetually, and he kept his wrath forever: ¹² But I will send a fire upon Teman, which shall devour the palaces of Bozrah.

1:13-15 Ammon is Judged (Lot's descendants to the east)

(3) ¹³ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of the children of Ammon, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because they have ripped up the women with child of Gilead, that they might enlarge their border: ¹⁴ But I will kindle a fire in the wall of Rabbah, and it shall devour the palaces thereof, with shouting in the day of battle, with a tempest in the day of the whirlwind: ¹⁵ And their king shall go into captivity, he and his princes together, says the LORD.

Amos Chapter 2

2:1-3 *Moab is Judged (Lot's descendants to the east)*

¹ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Moab, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because he burned the bones of the king of Edom into lime: ² But I will send a fire upon Moab, and it shall devour the palaces of Kerioth: and Moab shall die with tumult, with shouting, [and] with the sound of the trumpet: ³ And I will cut off the judge from the midst thereof, and will slay all the princes thereof with him, says the LORD.

Summary notes on 1:3-2:3. There are four patterns of each surrounding nation: 1) three transgressions, and for four 2) leaders are accountable 3) fire destroys the palace / walls of the city 4) past sin toward Israel is judged. Also, we see that judgment begins or as parallel to the nations whereas in 1 Peter 4:17 it begins in the House of the Lord. It seems that timing and circumstances are the difference.

2:4-5 *Judah is Judged*

(4) ⁴ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Judah, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because they have despised the law of the LORD, and have not kept his commandments, and their lies caused them to err, after the which their fathers have walked: ⁵ But I will send a fire upon Judah, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem.

^a The first seven are judged without the law (Romans 1:20-21) and Judah is judged by the law. Some punished for evil against God's people, Genesis 12:3. Their lies of self-deception because they justify behavior contrary to the law of Moses, with the excuse that their fathers (ancestors, parents, dad, families) have done it. Beware – if our fathers disobey God's law and seem not to be disciplined for it does not justify their sin, only means that it is not God's time to judge the sin as an individual. However, each person will be judged for their own sin at the end. (Hebrews 13:8, 1 Cor 3:11-15, 2 Cor 5:10)

2:6-16 *Israel is Judged*

(5) ⁶ Thus says the LORD; For three transgressions of Israel, and for four, I will not turn away [the punishment] thereof; because they sold the righteous for silver, and the poor for a pair of shoes; ⁷ That pant after the dust of the earth on the head of the poor, and turn aside the way of the meek: and a man and his father will go in to the [same] maid, to profane my holy name: ⁸ And they lay [themselves] down upon a clothes laid to pledge by every altar, and they drink the wine of the condemned [in] the house of their god. ⁹ Yet destroyed I the Amorite before them, whose height was like the height of the cedars, and he was strong as the oaks; yet I destroyed his fruit from above, and his roots from beneath. ¹⁰ Also I brought you up from the land of Egypt, and led you forty years through the wilderness, to possess the land of the Amorite. ¹¹ And I raised up of your sons for prophets, and of your young men for Nazarites. [Is it] not even thus, O ye children of Israel? says the LORD. ¹² But ye gave the Nazarites wine to drink; and commanded the prophets, saying, Prophecy not. ¹³ Behold, I am pressed under you, as a cart is pressed [that is] full of sheaves. ¹⁴ Therefore the flight shall perish from the swift, and the strong shall not strengthen his force, neither shall the mighty deliver himself: ¹⁵ Neither shall he stand that handles the bow; and [he that is] swift of foot shall not deliver [himself]: neither shall he that rides the horse deliver himself. ¹⁶ And [he that is] courageous among the mighty shall flee away naked in that day, says the LORD.

^a Clothes to be given back to the poor for the coldness of the night, Exodus 22:25-27.

Summary note on 2:6-16. vs 6-8 reveal three areas of sin: greed, sex, and alcohol.

Summary note on chapters 1-2. The sequence of judgments concealed here are revealed in the New Testament 1 Corinthians 2:14-3:1. The surrounding nations are a type of the unbeliever or natural man, Israel the northern kingdom is a type of the carnal believer or make-believer that is caught in the works of religion, and Judah the southern kingdom is a type of the true believer purchased by the blood of Christ by his faith and God's grace (Eph 2:8-9). The true believer can be a carnal or spiritual person (1 Cor 2:10-3:1)

Amos Chapter 3

3:1-8 The Guilt & Punishment of Israel

(6) ¹ Hear this word that the LORD has spoken against you, O children of Israel, against the whole family which I brought up from the land of Egypt, saying, ² You only I have known of all the families of the earth: therefore a I will punish you for all your iniquities. ³ **Can two walk together, except they be agreed?** ⁴ Will a lion roar in the forest, when he has no prey? will a young lion cry out of his den, if he have taken nothing? ⁵ Can a bird fall in a snare upon the earth, where no gin is for him? shall [one] take up a snare from the earth, and have taken nothing at all? ⁶ Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? shall there be destruction in a city, and the LORD has not done [it]? ⁷ Surely the Lord GOD will do nothing, but he reveals his secret to his servants the prophets. ⁸ The lion has roared, who will not fear? the Lord GOD has spoken, who can but prophesy?

^a Greater privilege results in greater responsibility, Genesis 12:3, Leviticus 26, Luke 12:48.

^b This is a series of 5 No and 2 Yes statements

(7) ⁹ Publish in the palaces at Ashdod, and in the palaces in the land of Egypt, and say, Assemble yourselves upon the mountains of Samaria, and behold the great tumults in the midst thereof, and the oppressed in the midst thereof. ¹⁰ For they know not to do right, says the LORD, who store up violence and robbery in their palaces. ¹¹ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD; An adversary [there shall be] even round about the land; and he shall bring down your strength from you, and your palaces shall be spoiled. ¹² Thus says the LORD; As the shepherd takes out of the mouth of the lion two legs, or a piece of an ear; so shall the children of Israel be taken out that dwell in Samaria in the corner of a bed, and in Damascus [in] a couch. ¹³ Hear ye, and testify in the house of Jacob, says the Lord GOD, the God of hosts, ¹⁴ That in the day that I shall visit the transgressions of Israel upon him I will also visit the altars of Bethel: and the horns of the altar shall be cut off, and fall to the ground. ¹⁵ And a I will smite the winter house with the summer house; and the houses of ivory shall perish, and the great houses shall have an end, says the LORD.

^a Temporary material gain apart from God results in eternal loss, 1 Corinthians 3:15.

Amos Chapter 4

Proud Women & Profane Worship

(8) ¹ Hear this word, ye a cows of Bashan, that are in the mountain of Samaria, which oppress the poor, which crush the needy, which say to their husbands, Bring, and let us drink. ² The Lord GOD has sworn by his holiness, that, look, the days shall come upon you, that he will take you away with hooks, and your posterity with fishhooks. ³ And ye shall go out at the breaches, every [cow at that which is] before her; and ye shall cast them ^b into the palace, says the LORD. ⁴ Come to ^c Bethel, and transgress; at ^c Gilgal multiply transgression; and bring your sacrifices every morning, [and] your tithes ^d after three years: ⁵ And offer a sacrifice of thanksgiving with leaven, and proclaim [and] publish the free offerings: for this you like, O ye children of Israel, says the Lord GOD.

^a Cow refers to women here and bull to men in Psalm 22:12. Balsam was well known for its well fed, healthy cows and bulls.

^b various translations: from the palace or into Harmon

^c Holy places from before: Bethel is the place of Jacob's ladder dream (Genesis 28:10-22) and of Gilgal renewed his God's covenant (Joshua 5:2-11)

^d alternative translation: every three days

Stubbornness of Israel

(9) ⁶ And I also have given you a cleanness of teeth in all your cities, and want of bread in all your places: yet have ye not returned to me, says the LORD. ⁷ And also I have withheld the rain from you, when [there were] yet three months to the harvest: and I caused it to rain upon one city, and caused it not to rain upon another city: one piece was rained upon, and the piece whereupon it rained not withered. ⁸ So two [or] three cities wandered to one city, to drink water; but they were not satisfied: yet have ye not returned to me, says the LORD. ⁹ I have smitten you with blasting and mildew: when your gardens and your vineyards and your fig trees and your olive trees increased, the locust devoured them: yet have ye not returned to me, says the LORD. ¹⁰ I have sent among you the pestilence after the manner of Egypt: your young men I have slain with the sword, and have taken away your horses; and I have made the stink of your camps to come up to your nostrils: yet have ye not returned to me, says the LORD. ¹¹ I have overthrown [some] of you, as God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah, and ye were as a firebrand plucked out of the burning: yet have ye not returned to me, says the LORD. ¹² Therefore thus will I do to you, O Israel: [and] because I will do this to you, ^b prepare to meet your God, O Israel. ¹³ For, look, he that ^c forms the mountains, and creates the wind, and declares to man what is his thought, that makes the morning darkness, and treads upon the high places of the earth, The LORD, The God of hosts, is his name.

^a three areas of judgment: famine (6-8), pestilence (9-10a), sword (10b-11)

^b prepare to meet your God - in judgment (12)

^c three ways God judges: as creator of earth (mountains for volcanoes and earthquakes), nature (the winds for hurricanes, typhoons, and tornadoes) and man (in thoughts)

Amos Chapter 5

Seek God & Live by His Grace

(10) ¹ ^a Hear ye this word which I take up against you, [even] a lamentation, O house of Israel.

² **The virgin of Israel is fallen; she shall no more rise: she is forsaken upon her land; there is none to raise her up.** ³ For thus says the Lord GOD; The city that went out [by] a thousand shall leave a hundred, and that which went forth [by] a hundred shall leave ten, to the house of Israel.

⁴ For thus says the LORD to the house of Israel, **Seek ye me, and ye shall live:** ⁵ But seek not Bethel, nor enter into Gilgal, and pass not to Beersheba: for Gilgal shall surely go into captivity, and Bethel shall come to nothing. ⁶ **Seek the LORD, and ye shall live;** lest he break out like fire in the house of Joseph, and devour [it], and [there be] none to quench [it] in Bethel. ⁷ Ye who turn judgment to wormwood, and leave off righteousness in the earth, ⁸ [Seek him] that makes the seven stars and Orion, and turns the shadow of death into the morning, and makes the day dark with night: that calls for the waters of the sea, and pours them out upon the face of the earth: The LORD is his name: ⁹ That strengthens the spoiled against the strong, so that the spoiled shall come against the fortress. ¹⁰ They hate him that rebukes in the gate, and they abhor him that speaks uprightly. ¹¹ Forasmuch therefore as your treading is upon the poor, and ye take from him burdens of wheat: ye have built houses of hewn stone, but ye shall not dwell in them; ye have planted pleasant vineyards, but ye shall not drink wine of them. ¹² For I know your manifold transgressions and your mighty sins: they afflict the just, they take a bribe, and they turn aside the poor in the gate [from their right]. ¹³ Therefore the prudent shall keep silence in that time; for it is an evil time. ¹⁴ **Seek good, and not evil, that ye may live: and so the LORD, the God of hosts, shall be with you, as ye have spoken.** ¹⁵ **Hate the evil, and love the good, and establish judgment in the gate: it may be that the LORD God of hosts will be gracious to the remnant of Joseph.**

¹⁶ Therefore the LORD, the God of hosts, the Lord, says thus; Wailing [shall be] in all streets; and they shall say in all the highways, Alas! alas! and they shall call the husbandman to mourning, and such as are skillful of lamentation to wailing. ¹⁷ And in all vineyards [shall be] wailing: for I will pass through you, says the LORD.

^a Note the chiastic structure of verses 1-17

A Certain judgment 1-3

B Call for individual repentance 4-6

C Legal injustice 7

D Portrayal of sovereign Yawheh 8-9

C Legal injustice 10-13

B Call for individual repentance 14-15

A Certain judgment 16-17

Amos Chapter 5

Unacceptable Worship & Captivity

(11) ¹⁸ ^a Woe to you that desire the day of the LORD! to what end is it for you? the day of the LORD is darkness, and not light. ¹⁹ As if a man did flee from a lion, and a bear met him; or went into the house, and leaned his hand on the wall, and a serpent bit him. ²⁰ [Shall] not the day of the LORD [be] darkness, and not light? even very dark, and no brightness in it? ²¹ I hate, I despise your feast days, and I will not smell in your solemn assemblies. ²² Though ye offer me ^b burnt offerings and your grain offerings, I will not accept them: neither will I regard the peace offerings of your fat beasts. ²³ **Take you away from me the noise of your songs; for I will not hear the melody of your viols.** ²⁴ **But let judgment run down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream.** ²⁵ Have ye offered to me sacrifices and offerings in the wilderness forty years, O house of Israel? ²⁶ But ye have borne the tabernacle of your Moloch and Chiun your images, the star of your god, which ye made to yourselves. ²⁷ Therefore will I cause you to go into captivity beyond Damascus, says the LORD, whose name is The God of hosts.

^a Note the chiasmic structure of verses 18-27

- A Inevitable judgment 18-19
- B Religious hypocrisy 21-22
- C Call for individual response 23-24
- B Religious hypocrisy 25-26
- A Inevitable judgment 27

^b Sin and trespass offering are not mentioned

Amos Chapter 6

Israel's Complacency & Pride

(12) ¹ Woe to them [that are] at ease in Zion, and trust in the mountain of Samaria, [which are] named chief of the nations, to whom the house of Israel came! ² Pass ye to Calneh, and see; and from there go ye to Hamath the great: then go down to Gath of the Philistines: [be they] better than these kingdoms? or their border greater than your border? ³ Ye that put far away the a evil day, and cause the seat of violence to come near; ⁴ That lie upon beds of ivory, and stretch themselves upon their couches, and eat the lambs out of the flock, and the calves out of the midst of the stall; ⁵ That chant to the sound of the viol, [and] invent to themselves instruments of music, like David; ⁶ That drink wine in bowls, and anoint themselves with the chief ointments: but they are not grieved for the affliction of Joseph. ⁷ Therefore now they will go captive with the first that go captive, and the banquet of them that stretched themselves shall be removed.

^a evil day is the same as the day of God's judgment or day of the Lord (Ec 8:11, Amos 5:17, Isa 47:7, 56:12, Eze 11:3, 12:22, 27; Mt 24:48, 1 Th 5:3, 2 Pe 3:4).

⁸ The Lord GOD has sworn by himself, says the LORD the God of hosts, I abhor the excellency of Jacob, and hate his palaces: therefore will I deliver up the city with all that is therein. ⁹ Then it shall come to pass, if there remain ten men in one house, that they shall die. ¹⁰ And a man's uncle shall take him up, and he that burns him, to bring out the bones out of the house, and shall say to him that is by the sides of the house, [Is there] yet [any] with you? and he shall say, No. Then shall he say, Hold your tongue: for we may not make mention of the name of the LORD. ¹¹ For, behold, the LORD commands, and he will smite the great house with breaches, and the little house with clefts. ¹² Shall horses run upon the rock? will [one] plow [there] with oxen? for a ye have turned judgment into gall, and the fruit of righteousness into hemlock: ¹³ Ye which rejoice in a ^b thing of nothing, which say, Have we not taken to us horns by our own strength? ¹⁴ **But, behold, I will raise up against you a nation, O house of Israel, says the LORD the God of hosts; and they shall afflict you from the entering in of Hemath to the river of the wilderness.**

^a gall = poison, wormwood = bitterness

^b Lo-debar was the name of the city in Hebrew, however a play on words and significance is called Lo-dabar "thing of nothing".

Amos Chapter 7

Vision of Locusts

(13) ¹ Thus has the Lord GOD showed to me; and, behold, he formed a grasshoppers in the beginning of the shooting up of the latter growth; and, look, [it was] the latter growth after the king's mowings. ² And it came to pass, [that] when they had made an end of eating the grass of the land, then I said, O Lord GOD, forgive, I beseech you: by whom shall Jacob arise? for he is small. ³ The LORD repented for this: **It shall not be**, says the LORD.

^a The locust from its grubbing as a larva or beginning stage. The locust has 4 stages of life which the book of Joel separates. Each stage is more disastrous.

Vision of Fire

⁴ Thus has the Lord GOD showed to me: and, behold, the Lord GOD called to a contend by fire, and it devoured the great deep, and did eat up a part. ⁵ Then said I, O Lord GOD, cease, I beseech you: by whom shall Jacob arise? for he is small. ⁶ The LORD repented for this: **This also shall not be**, says the Lord GOD.

^a This is judgment fire and in context of Amos's life seems to refer to a great draught caused by severe dry heat that even dries up the water beds below the earth. Brush fires are resultant.

Vision of Plumb line

(14) ⁷ Thus he showed me: and, behold, the ^a Lord stood upon a wall [made] by a plumb line, with a plumb line in his hand. ⁸ And the LORD said to me, **Amos, what see you?** And I said, A plumb line. **Then said the Lord, Behold, I will set a plumb line in the midst of my people Israel: I will not again pass by them anymore:** ⁹ **And the high places of Isaac shall be desolate, and the sanctuaries of Israel shall be laid waste; and I will rise against the house of Jeroboam with the sword.**

^a The metaphor of the wall was the national life of Israel and our personal life today. The metaphor of the plumb line is the Law of God, Moses law then and the New Testament today.

Amos Defends his Calling to Amaziah the Priest of Bethel

(15) ¹⁰ Then Amaziah the priest of Bethel sent to Jeroboam king of Israel, saying, Amos has conspired against you in the midst of the house of Israel: the land is not able to bear all his words. ¹¹ For thus Amos says, Jeroboam shall die by the sword, and Israel shall surely be led away captive out of their own land. ¹² Also Amaziah said to Amos, O you seer, go, flee you away into the land of Judah, and there eat bread, and prophesy there: ¹³ But prophesy not again anymore at Bethel: for it is the king's chapel, and it is the king's court. ¹⁴ Then answered Amos, and said to Amaziah, I was no prophet, neither was I a prophet's son; but I was a herd man, and a gatherer of sycomore fruit: ¹⁵ And the LORD took me as I followed the flock, and the LORD said to me, **Go, prophesy to my people Israel.** ¹⁶ Now therefore hear you the word of the LORD: You say, Prophesy not against Israel, and drop not [your word] against the house of Isaac. ¹⁷ Therefore thus says the LORD; **Your wife shall be a harlot in the city, and your sons and your daughters shall fall by the sword, and your land shall be divided by line; and you shall die in a polluted land: and Israel shall surely go into captivity forth of his land.**

Amos Chapter 8

Vision of Basket of Summer Fruit

(16) ¹ Thus has the Lord GOD showed to me: and behold a basket of summer fruit. ² And he said, **Amos, what see you?** And I said, A ^a basket of summer fruit. Then said the LORD unto me, **The end is come upon my people of Israel; I will not again pass by them anymore.** ³ And the ^b songs of the temple shall be howlings in that day, says the Lord GOD: [there shall be] many dead bodies in every place; they shall cast them forth with silence.

^a The fruit will rotten and not be usable, but stink and be repulsive

^b 3rd time song and instruments are rejected by God, next in 8:10. Earlier in 5:23 and 6:5.

Worship is Profaned

(17) ⁴ Hear this, O ye that swallow up the needy, even to make the poor of the land to fail, ⁵ Saying, When will the new moon be gone, that we may sell corn? and the sabbath, that we may set forth wheat, making the ephah small, and the shekel great, and falsifying the balances by deceit? ⁶ That we may buy the poor for silver, and the needy for a pair of shoes; [yes], and sell the refuse of the wheat? ⁷ The LORD has sworn by the excellency of Jacob, **Surely I will never forget any of their works.** ⁸ **Shall not the land tremble for this, and everyone mourn that dwells therein? and it shall rise up wholly as a flood; and it shall be cast out and drowned, as [by] the flood of Egypt.** ⁹ And it shall come to pass in that day, says the Lord GOD, that I will cause the sun to go down at noon, and I will darken the earth in the clear day: ¹⁰ And I will turn your feasts into mourning, and all your songs into lamentation; and I will bring up sackcloth upon all loins, and baldness upon every head; and I will make it as the mourning of an only [son], and the end thereof as a bitter day.

A Famine of the Word of God

¹¹ Behold, the ^a days come, says the Lord GOD, that **I will send a famine in the land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst for water, but of hearing the words of the LORD:** ¹² And they shall wander from sea to sea, and from the north even to the east, they shall run to and fro to seek the word of the LORD, and shall not find [it]. ¹³ In that day shall the fair virgins and young men faint for thirst. ¹⁴ They that swear by the sin of Samaria, and say, Your god, O Dan, lives; and, The manner of Beersheba lives; even they shall fall, and never rise up again.

^a Immediate fulfillment in the near future before 722 BC when Samaria is destroyed by the Assyrians. This occurs again during the 1st Coming and 2nd coming of Christ to the earth.

Amos Chapter 9

Vision of Striking the Lintel

(18) ¹ I saw the Lord standing upon the altar: and he said, ^a Smite the lintel of the door, that the posts may shake: and cut them in the head, all of them; and I will slay the last of them with the sword: he that flees of them shall not flee away, and he that escapes of them shall not be delivered. ² Though they dig into Shoel, there shall my hand take them; though they climb up to heaven, there will I bring them down: ³ And though they hide themselves in the top of Carmel, I will search and take them out there; and though they be hid from my sight in the bottom of the sea, there will I command the serpent, and he shall bite them: ⁴ And though they go into captivity before their enemies, there will I command the sword, and it shall slay them: and I will set my eyes upon them for evil, and not for good.

^a This final vision is the fatal blow to the head concerning at the altar where idol worship is the source of unmerciful judgment.

⁵ And the Lord GOD of hosts is he that touches the land, and it shall melt, and all that dwell therein shall mourn: and it shall rise up wholly like a flood; and shall be drowned, as [by] the flood of Egypt.

⁶ [It is] he that builds his stories in the heaven, and has founded his troop in the earth; he that calls for the waters of the sea, and pours them out upon the face of the earth: The LORD is his name.

⁷ [Are] ye not as children of the Ethiopians to me, O children of Israel? says the LORD. Have not I brought up Israel out of the land of Egypt? and the Philistines from Caphtor, and the Syrians from Kir?

⁸ Behold, the eyes of the Lord GOD are upon the sinful kingdom, and I will destroy it from off the face of the earth; saving that I will not utterly destroy the house of Jacob, says the LORD. ⁹ For, look, I will command, and I will sift the house of Israel among all nations, like as [corn] is sifted in a sieve, yet shall not the least grain fall upon the earth. ¹⁰ All the sinners of my people shall die by the sword, which say, The evil shall not overtake nor prevent us.

Hope for Israel's Faithful & Repentant

(19) ¹¹ In a that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old: ¹² That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen, which are called by my name, says the LORD that does this.

¹³ Behold, the days come, says the LORD, that the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that sows seed; and the mountains shall drop sweet wine, and all the hills shall melt.

¹⁴ And I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and drink the wine thereof; they shall also make gardens, and eat the fruit of them. ¹⁵ And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be pulled up out of their land which I have given them, says the LORD your God.

^a The day of the LORD or "that day" begins on the day of Pentecost in Acts 2 in verses 11 and 12 as confirmed by James in Acts 15:16-17. Verses 13-15 jump ahead to the time of Christ's returns to reign from the throne of David out of the temple in Jerusalem (Ezekiel 36:33-36).

Obadiah (1-3, 4 min, Edom) 2020

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

12 Progressive Steps of Edom's Hate

Text: 1 of 12 minor prophets (to the Edomites after an invasion of Jerusalem)

Purpose: Reproof & Correction (2 Timothy 3:16-17)

Characters: Esau and Jacob. Men of your confederacy, vs 7-9

Key Words: Pride, heart, brother, heathen

<u>Portion of Passage</u>	<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Emotion / Position</u>
Edom's Pride & Humiliation (1-9, Doctrine)		
1) Pride of your heart has deceived you	3	Pride in Heart
2) Who shall bring me down to the ground?	3	Superior in mind
3) [how] are his hidden things sought up!	6	Hidden things
Edom's Hate & Violence for Jacob (10-14, Practice)		
4) stood on the other side and cast lots	11	Thoughts & Far away
5) looked on your brother when he became a stranger.	11	See (Indifference)
6) rejoiced over Judah in their destruction	12	Emotions
7) spoken proudly in the day of distress.	12	Speak
8) entered into the gate of my people in their calamity	13	Get closer
9) looked on their affliction in the day of their calamity	13	See
10) laid [hands] on their substance in their calamity	13	Desire Possessions (\$)
11) stood in the crossway , to cut off those that did escape	14	Physical Positioning
12) delivered up those of his that did remain	14	Physical & Nearby

Esau's (Edom) Destruction & Jacob's (Israel) Hope 15-21

Prayers of the Bible None.

Poetic Justice: As you sow you reap. Truly, Esau & his descendants crossed the line of no return. The conflict of Edom and Israel is not finished and is a key role in the end time stage.

No repentance is offered. There is a sin we are not to pray for.

Eschatology: Near (vs 1-14) and far fulfillment (vs 15-21) of prophecy. The prophet sees two mountain tops that may be hard to discern the difference and see the valley or distance in between.

Esau is a type of: Ben Ladin, Hamas, Hezbollah and Jihad in the Moslem religion & World Council of Churches, National Council of Churches, Mainline denominations in the Christian religion.

Key Passages. Obadiah 1:15.

Old Testament: Genesis 25-36, Exodus 17:8-16, Numbers 20:14-21, Esther 3:1 (Haman the Agagite), Psalms 83:6-8, 137:6, **Malachi 4:1-4**.

New Testament: Idumean or Herodian dynasty: Matthew 2:1, 2:22, 24:21, Mark 6:14-29, 8:15 (14-21), Luke 13:31-32 (31-35), 23:8-12, John 0x, Acts 12:1-3,19-23, 25:13-26:32. **Romans 9:10-14**, Hebrews 12:15-17 (1-29).

Notes: 4 times Jerusalem was invaded: Egypt in 925 BC - Rehoboam, Philistines & Arabians in **845 BC** - Jehoram, Israel in 790 BC - Jehoash, and Babylon, 3rd time in **586 BC**. Ps 137 refers to the Babylonian invasion.

Introduction: **Spiritual warfare series, #1 "Discerning the enemy - inside the church (Jude)." Today, #2 in the spiritual warfare series "Discerning the enemy - outside the church (Obadiah)." When was Obadiah written? Appx 1300 years later the Genesis story of Jacob and Esau, after 586 BC when Nebuchadnezzar destroyed the temple and Jerusalem. E.W. Bullinger says 482 BC. Evidence are the many similarities of Obadiah 1:1-9 and Jeremiah 49:9-16, and earlier reference to two true prophets, Micah and Urijah, in Jeremiah 26.**

Background: **Both Jacob and Esau are blessed by Isaac to become great nations.** We will understand why later in Malachi **"God loves Jacob and hates Esau."** Linking verse from the New Testament. **Hebrews 11:20** By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

Obadiah "Servant of the LORD"

Edom's Pride & Humiliation (1-9, Doctrine of the deceptive ways in the heart) John 14:6 way-deceit-death

(1) ¹ The vision of Obadiah. Thus says the Lord GOD concerning Edom; **We have heard a rumor from the LORD, and an ambassador is sent among the heathen, Arise ye, and let us rise up against her in battle.**

² Behold, I have made you small among the heathen: you are greatly despised. ³ The pride of your heart has deceived you, you that dwell in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that says in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground? ⁴ Though you exalt [yourself] as the eagle, and though you set your nest among the stars, there will I bring you down, says the LORD.

Note: The capital of Edom is Petra, a protected city in a high place. Indiana Jones, Raiders of the Lost Ark.

⁵ If thieves came to you, if robbers by night, (how are you cut off!) would they not have stolen till they had enough? if the grape-gatherers came to you, would they not leave [some] grapes?

Three ways Edom's Heart is Deceived (people - position, wisdom - philosophy, and power – military strength)

⁶ How are [the things] of Esau searched out! [how] are his hidden things sought up! ⁷ All the men of your confederacy have brought you [even] to the border: the men that were at peace with you have deceived you, [and] prevailed against you; [they that eat] your bread have laid a wound under you: there is none understanding in him. ⁸ Shall I not in that day, says the LORD, even destroy the wise [men] out of Edom, and understanding out of the mount of Esau? ⁹ And your mighty [men], O Teman, shall be dismayed, to the end that every one of the mount of Esau may be cut off by slaughter.

Note: Teman is a place known for wisdom. Eliphaz the Temanite is the eldest of Job's three friends, very wise in man's understanding – inferior to God's wisdom. Christ is our wisdom. **1 Cor 1:30** But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: James 1:5-7 w/doings.

Edom's Hate for Jacob (10-14, Practice of deceptive doings from the heart)

(2) ¹⁰ For [your] violence against your brother Jacob shame shall cover you, and you shall be cut off forever. ¹¹ In the day that you

1) stood on the other side, in the day that the strangers carried away captive his forces, and foreigners entered into his gates, and cast lots upon Jerusalem, even you was as one of them. ¹² but you should not have

2) looked on the day of your brother in the day that he became a stranger; neither should you have

3) rejoiced over the children of Judah in the day of their destruction; neither should you have

4) spoken proudly in the day of distress. ¹³ You should not have

5) entered into the gate of my people in the day of their calamity; yea, you should not have

6) looked on their affliction in the day of their calamity, nor have

7) laid [hands] on their substance in the day of their calamity; ¹⁴ Neither should you have

8) stood in the crossway, to cut off those of his that did escape; neither should you have

9) delivered up those of his that did remain in the day of distress.

Note: Day is stated 9x: (1) a 24-hour day (2) a short period of days, or (3) a time in the past. The same word for day in Hebrew is "yome," 1250x, is understood by its context. i.e., in Genesis 1-2 days 1-7 are 24-hour cycles of light and dark

Esau hates Jacob and has no place for God. This way leads to God's judgment on Esau, who had several opportunities to do what is right with his brother Jacob. In Malachi 4:1-4, and Romans 9:13 (context of 9:11-16). Now we can understand why the Scriptures say, Jacob I loved and Esau I hated. God's holiness demands judgment with justice.

Edom's and all Nations End (15-21, far fulfillment)

¹⁵ For the day of the LORD is near upon all the heathen: as you have done, it shall be done unto you: your reward shall return upon your own head. ¹⁶ For as ye (Edom) have drunk (filled God's cup of wrath) upon my holy mountain, [so] shall all the heathen drink continually, yea, they shall drink, and they shall swallow down, and they shall be as though they had not been.

Note: Another use of day is in the phrase "the day of the LORD." This day is a future day or time of judgment, to reward the good or evil works of nations and individuals, depending on the context.

Over time the descendants of Esau continued to hate the descendants of Jacob beyond God's mercy. The Edomites mixed with the descendants of Ishmael and are the No one enemies of Jacob. Before Malachi, the 3 most hateful.

1. The Edomites stop Moses and Israel from entering the promised land.
2. With King Saul, Doeg the Agagite kills 85 Jewish priests, the children, and women of Nob (1 Sam 21-22)
3. Haman the Agagite hated the Jews in the book of Esther. And several more times.
4. **After Malachi:** Idumean Herod the Great, tried to kill the baby Jesus in Bethlehem. Herod Antipas beheaded John the baptizer. Herod Agrippa I put Peter in prison and martyred James the apostle. Herod Agrippa II imprisoned Paul. Last known genealogy of Esau.

Warning: genealogy is a source of many cultic and conspiracy belief systems.

5. **Present:** The spirit of Esau the Edomite: Adolf Hitler hated the Jews in WWII. The United Nations hates the Jews (Nikky Hale). George Soros is half Jew and betrayed them in WWII, then got rich (the Open Society).
6. **Future:** the anti-christ will deceive the Jews into peace, then kill 2/3 of them (Zechariah 13:8 and Revelation).

Jacob's and Mount Zions Hope (17-21)

(3) ¹⁷ But upon mount Zion shall be deliverance, and there shall be holiness; and the house of Jacob shall possess their possessions. ¹⁸ And the house of Jacob shall be a fire, and the house of Joseph a flame, and the house of Esau for stubble, and they shall kindle in them, and devour them; and there shall not be [any] remaining of the house of Esau; for the LORD has spoken [it].

Note: Fire is for two purposes: judgment for evil/strange fire or sanctification for good/holy fire. 1 Thes 5:23

Jacob shall possess (8x) the mountain of Esau and the land promised to Abraham during the future 1000 year reign of Christ on Earth

¹⁹ And [they of] the south shall possess the mount of Esau; and [they of] the plain the Philistines: and they shall possess the fields of Ephraim, and the fields of Samaria: and Benjamin [shall possess] Gilead.

²⁰ And the captivity of this host of the children of Israel [shall possess] that of the Canaanites, [even] to Zarephas; and the captivity of Jerusalem, which is in Sepharad, shall possess the cities of the south.

Note: Genesis 12:1-3, land promised to Abraham, 300k sq miles. During Solomon's time, it was 30k sq miles.

²¹ And saviors shall come up on mount Zion to judge the mount of Esau; and the kingdom shall be the LORD'S.

Note: Saviors are the return of Christ to fulfill all the promises. The saints will return to reign with Christ.

Application: I understand the nations that bless Israel with be blessed, and those that curse Israel will be cursed. I also understand that "Righteousness exalteth a nation: but sin is a reproach to any people" Proverbs 14:34 and "For the LORD your God blesses you, as he promised you: and you shall lend to many nations, but you shall not borrow; and you shall reign over many nations, but they shall not reign over you." Deu 15:6

SETTING (ESAU and JACOB) or (EDOM and ISRAEL) Obadiah (Servant of Jehovah) Genesis 25-36

Birth of twins to Isaac and Rebekah Genesis 25:21-26

- Children struggled within her. **Prophecy: Two nations** are in your womb.
- One stronger, elder serve younger.
- Esau red and hairy. Jacob's hand held onto Jacob's heel.
- Esau is hunter. Jacob is in tent.

1. Isaac loved Esau, Rebekah loved Jacob. Genesis 25-29 and 35-36

- Esau Sells Birthright (manipulation) Genesis 25:27-34
- Esau loses blessing to Jacob (deception) Genesis 27:27-29, 28:4
- Esau marries foreign women
- Esau's Curse 27:27-29, 28:4
- Jacob sent away to Haran 27:41-46; 28:1-7
- Curse is magnified 28:8-9
- Promise stated again 28:10-15 (13:1-3)
- Jacob's heart changed 28:22
- Jacob's work for a week for Rebekah 29:15-18
- Jacob is deceived 29:20-28
-
- 12 sons born 30: , 35:22b-26
- Jacob returns to Canaan 31:1-55
- Jacob wrestles Angel of the Lord (Israel - overcomer) 32:24-32
- Jacob and Israel are reconciled (lukewarm, 30 years later) 33:
- Jacob father of 12 patriarchs 35:21-26 (Acts 7:8)
- Esau settled in Mount Seir 36:8
- Both are blessed** Genesis 36:6-7, 43

2. Old Covenant Scripture

- Exodus 17:8-16 Amalek grandson of Esau. 1st opposition of Israel in wilderness.
- (Aaron & Hur held Moses hands up, for victory)
- Numbers 20:14-29 Edom forbids passage of Israelites with Moses
-
- 1 Samuel 15: King Saul disobeyed God by not killing all the Amalekites.
- Doeg the Agagite killed 85 priests, their women and children at Nob.
- 2 Samuel 8 King David had victory over Edom
-
- Daniel 11:** says they shall flee to Edom, Ammon, and Moab. Presently Jordan.
-
- 2 Kings 11 Solomon fought against Hadad, from the royal line of Edom. Resultant of God's discipline for many foreign wives
-
- 2 Chronicles 21:8-17 Revolt of Edom against Judah and Philistine and Arabian attack against Judah and Jerusalem in Jehoram's day
- 2 Chronicles 25 King Amaziah's raids Edom w/o success
- Ps 83:6-8 Edom, Ishmaelites, Hagarenes, 10 nations are enemies of Israel. Edom listed first
- Prophecies against Edom: Isaiah 34:1-17, Jer 49:7-22 (similar), Ezekiel 25:12-14, 35:1-15, Amos 1:11-12
-
- Esther:** Haman the Agagite was enemy of Jews, and of Esau - Genesis 36
-
- Malachi 1:1-4**

Antiochus IV Epiphanies. Greek king in 168 BC, 167 BC he sacrificed pig on the temple altar. The Maccabean Revolt. 400 silent years Nabatians kicked Edom out of their city and Hasmonian dynasty forced Edom to convert to Judaism.

3. The Gospels Family of Herod Antipater formally converted to the Jewish religious practices of Jacob. Herod (Idumeans) descended from Abraham through Isaac and Esau rather than Isaac and Jacob. They saw themselves as Jewish

- Matthew 2 **Herod the Great** (a king) Tried to use the wise men and killed the boys under 2 in Bethlehem
- Matthew 2:22 Son of Herod the Great - **Herod Archelaus** Ruled Judea. Joseph was afraid and fled, took his family to Egypt.
- Mark 6 Herod Archelaus brother **Herod (Antipas) the Tetrarch**, beheaded John the Baptist. Moral conflict of Herodias that John spoke of.
- Mark 8:15 Jesus warns the disciple against the leaven of the Pharisees and of Herod Antipas.
- Luke 13:31 Herod Antipas is the fox that the Pharisees warned Jesus about in Luke 3:31
- Luke 23:9-12 Herod Antipas the Idumean presided over Jesus' trial, and with Pontus Pilate, the Roman procurator, determined Jesus' death
- **Matthew 24:** The children of Israel shall have a refuge to flee to in the mountains.

4. ACTS

- Acts 4:27 John and Peter refer to the decision of **Antipas** and Pilate to execute Jesus.
- Acts 12 **Herod Agrippa I** had Peter arrested and put in prison. He ordered the execution of James the elder
- Acts 25-26 **Herod Agrippa II** Paul talked to him and asked for right to be tried as a Roman citizen. He used the word Christian to describe him.
- **After Acts:** WWII Adolf Hitler. United Nations: Nikky Haley. George Soros: the Open Society Foundations. The future anti-christ.

5. Letters

- Romans 9:9-12, 19-21 chapters 9-11, 1 John 2:14-16 compared to Romans 1-2, 3-5, 6-8, 9-11, 12-16
- Hebrews 12:15-17
- Time of Jacob's trouble (Matthew 24:21)

6. Peculiars

- Never quoted in the NT. No prayers.
- Shortest book in the OT
- Date: 586 or 845 BC. Early date-Hebrew Canon and similar story from Jeremiah 49:7-22
- Located below dead Sea and main city was Petra (rock fortress). Edom controlled the Kings Highway.
- Edom territory became Idumea - King Herod
- Jews and Edomites were relocated. Jews returned to natural land. Edomites did not. Not part of Jordan?
- Edom fled to Judah from before 400 BC
- Many Edom names still associated with southern Jordan (Genesis 36, 1 Chronicles 1:43-54)
- 1:13 Should not have (past) KJB or Do not (future) NASB.

7. Eschatology: Near (vs 1-16) and far fulfillment (vs 17-21) of prophecy. The prophet sees two mountain tops that may be hard to discern the difference and do not see the valley or distance in between. This concept was first set forth by Chrysostom in the 4th century. This is something to grasp and ponder on as events pass. The conflict of Edom and Israel is not finished and is a key role in the end times.

Jonah (4-8, 8 min, Assyria) 2023

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4

12 Miracles "for the Carnal Prophet" or "of a Caring God"

Purpose: Reproof & Correction for Nineveh (required reading at Yon Kipper)

Key Verse: 1:17 3 days & 3 nights, death (sheol – underworld, opposite of heaven) & life: prophetic

Background: 1st - Nimrod the mighty hunter, Genesis 10:8-12. 2nd - Jeroboam II in 2 Kings 14:23-27. 3rd – Story of Jonah, 756-770 BC. Israel falls to Assyria, 722 BC. 4th - King Hezekiah & Sennacherib at Jerusalem, Isaiah 36-39 & 2 Kings 18-19. Book of Nahum. 5th - Nineveh, the Capital of Assyrian Empire, destroyed in 612 BC, discovered in 1850. Pharisees error saying no prophet came from Galilee, John 7:52. Jesus compares himself to Jonah, Matthew 12:38-41, Luke 11:29-32; Jonah for a sign and Solomon for wisdom.

Unique things: No prophecy – narrative. Direct disobedience. Jesus refers to himself. Most miracles in 4 chapters.

	<u>Jonah</u>	<u>God Saves</u>	<u>Nineveh</u>	<u>Paul</u>
Chapter 1	Protests	Gentile Sailors	Sins	Saves others on ship
2	Prays	Jonah (Romans 6:23)	Prepared	Goes on missionary journeys
3	Preaches	City of Nineveh	Repents	Preached to Gentiles
4	Pouts	Lesson on agape love	Forgiven	Example of agape love

<u>Miracle</u>	<u>Key Verse</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Jonah Flees from Jehovah	1:3 Jonah goes down to Joppa, to Tarshish (50 mi)	1:1-3
2) Jehovah sends a great wind	1:4 Jonah is fast asleep down in the ship	1:4-6
3) Jonah chosen by Lot	1:7	1:7-13
4) Sailors believed in Jehovah	1:14	1:14-16
5) Jehovah prepares a great fish	1:17 Jonah down in fish for 3 days & 3 nights	1:17
6) Jonah prays to Jehovah his God	2:1 Jonah experiences death	2:1-7
7) Lord causes fish to vomit Jonah	2:8 Jonah experiences raising from death	2:8
8) Jonah preaches 1 day to Nineveh	3:5 (550 mile trip) 40 days to change	3:1-5
9) God (Elohiym) changes his mind	3:10	3:6-10
10) God prepares a gourd	4:6 Jonah goes up a mound	4:1-6
11) God prepares a worm	4:7	4:7
12) God prepares a strong east wind	4:8 God's Lesson. Jonah's Mound & Tomb	4:8-11

Prayers of the Bible

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
Jonah 1:14	Supplication	Fear / decision		Repentance Nature - Sea	Sailors
Jonah 2:1-9	Supplication Thanks	Fear of suffering and death		Repentance Nature - fish	Jonah
Jonah 3:5-9	Supplication	Fear of destruction		Repentance Words of Jonah	Nineveh
Jonah 4:2-4	Supplication	Fear of living		Very angry. Asks Lord to take his life	Jonah

Jonah Chapter 1

Jonah Goes the Opposite Direction

(1) ¹ Now the word of the LORD came to Jonah the son of Amittai, saying, ² **Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and cry against it; for their wickedness is come up before me.** ³ But Jonah rose up to flee to Tarshish from the presence of the LORD, and went down to Joppa; and he found a ship going to Tarshish: so he paid the fare thereof, and went down into it, to go with them to Tarshish from the presence of the LORD.

Great Winds Upon the Sea

(2) ⁴ But the LORD sent out a great wind into the sea, and there was a mighty tempest in the sea, so that the ship was like to be broken. ⁵ Then the mariners were afraid, and cried every man to his god, and cast forth the wares that [were] in the ship into the sea, to lighten [it] of them. But Jonah was gone down into the sides of the ship; and he lay, and was fast asleep. ⁶ So the shipmaster came to him, and said unto him, What mean you, O sleeper? arise, call upon your God, if so be that God will think upon us, that we perish not. ⁷ And they said everyone to his fellow, Come, and let us cast lots, that we may know for whose cause this evil is upon us. So they cast lots, and the lot fell upon Jonah. ⁸ Then said they to him, Tell us, we pray you, for whose cause this evil is upon us; What is your occupation? and whence comes you? what is your country? and of what people are you? ⁹ And he said to them, I [am] a Hebrew; and I fear the LORD, the God of heaven, which has made the sea and the dry [land].

Jonah Cast into the Sea

(3) ¹⁰ Then were the men exceedingly afraid, and said unto him, Why have you done this? For the men knew that he fled from the presence of the LORD, because he had told them. ¹¹ Then said they to him, What shall we do to you, that the sea may be calm to us? for the sea worked, and was tempestuous. ¹² And he said to them, Take me up, and cast me forth into the sea; so shall the sea be calm to you: for I know that for my sake this great tempest is upon you. ¹³ Nevertheless the men rowed hard to bring [it] to the land; but they could not: for the sea worked, and was tempestuous against them. ¹⁴ Wherefore they cried to the LORD, and said, We beseech you, O LORD, we beseech you, let us not perish for this man's life, and lay not upon us innocent blood: for you, O LORD, has done as it pleased you. ¹⁵ So they took up Jonah, and cast him forth into the sea: and the sea ceased from her raging. ¹⁶ Then the men feared the LORD exceedingly, and offered a sacrifice to the LORD, and made vows. ¹⁷ Now the LORD had prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights.

Jonah Chapter 2

Jonah Repents and is Cast into the Sea

(4) ¹ Then Jonah prayed to the LORD his God out of the fish's belly, ² And said, I cried by reason of my affliction to the LORD, and he heard me; out of the belly of Shoel cried I, [and] you heard my voice. ³ For you had cast me into the deep, in the midst of the seas; and the floods compassed me about: all your billows and your waves passed over me. ⁴ Then I said, I am cast out of your sight; yet I will look again toward your holy temple. ⁵ The waters compassed me about, [even] to the soul: the depth closed me round about, the weeds were wrapped about my head. ⁶ I went down to the bottoms of the mountains; the earth with her bars was about me forever: yet have you brought up my life from corruption, O LORD my God. ⁷ When my soul fainted within me I remembered the LORD: and my prayer came in to you, into your holy temple. ⁸ They that observe lying vanities forsake their own mercy. ⁹ But I will sacrifice to you with the voice of thanksgiving; I will pay [that] that I have vowed. Salvation is of the LORD. ¹⁰ **And the LORD spoke to the fish, and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry [land].**

Jonah Chapter 3

Jonah Preaches

(5) ¹ And the word of the LORD came to Jonah the second time, saying, ² **Arise, go to Nineveh, that great city, and preach to it the preaching that I bid you.** ³ So Jonah arose, and went to Nineveh, according to the word of the LORD. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey. ⁴ And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown.

Nineveh Repents

(6) ⁵ So the people of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the great of them even to the least of them. ⁶ For word came to the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered [him] with sackcloth, and sat in ashes. ⁷ And he caused [it] to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste anything: let them not feed, nor drink water: ⁸ But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily to God: yes, let them turn everyone from his evil way, and from the violence that is in their hands. ⁹ Who can tell [if] God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not? ¹⁰ And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do to them; and he did [it] not.

Jonah Chapter 4

Jonah Displeased

(7) ¹ But it displeased Jonah exceedingly, and he was very angry. ² And he prayed to the LORD, and said, I pray you, O LORD, was not this my saying, when I was yet in my country? Therefore I fled before to Tarshish: for I knew that you are a gracious God, and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repents you of the evil. ³ Therefore now, O LORD, take, I beseech you, my life from me; for [it is] better for me to die than to live. ⁴ Then said the LORD, **Do you well to be angry?**

Jonah Pouts (Lesson of the Shade Tree)

(8) ⁵ So Jonah went out of the city, and sat on the east side of the city, and there made him a booth, and sat under it in the shadow, till he might see what would become of the city. ⁶ And the LORD God prepared a gourd, and made [it] to come up over Jonah, that it might be a shadow over his head, to deliver him from his grief. So Jonah was exceeding glad of the gourd. ⁷ But God prepared a worm when the morning rose the next day, and it smote the gourd that it withered. ⁸ And it came to pass, when the sun did arise, that God prepared a vehement east wind; and the sun beat upon the head of Jonah, that he fainted, and wished in himself to die, and said, [It is] better for me to die than to live. ⁹ And God said to Jonah, **Do you well to be angry for the gourd?** And he said, I do well to be angry, [even] to death. ¹⁰ Then said the LORD, **You have had pity on the gourd, for the which you have not labored, neither made it grow; which came up in a night, and perished in a night:** ¹¹ **And should not I spare Nineveh, that great city, wherein are more than six score thousand persons that cannot discern between their right hand and their left hand; and [also] much cattle?**

Micah (7-17, 25 min, Judah) 2023

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7

12 Helps to be a Bright Light in Deep Darkness

Purpose: Prophecies of reproof and hope for Israel (Samaria) and Judah (Jerusalem)

Key words: Remnant – 6x: 2:12, 4:7, 5:3, 7-8; 7:18. That day – 5x: 4:6, 5:10, 7:4, 7:11-12.

Related history: Origen in the 4th century allegorized the return of Christ to rule in our heart, not the literal interpretation to rule on the earth in the future. Romans 9-11.

To be a bright light we know:

Scripture

- | | |
|--|------------|
| 1) Transgression of Jacob and sins of Israel – degrees of disobedience | 1:5 |
| 2) Speaking truth will shame the disobedient and do good for the obedient | 2:6-7 |
| 2) The disobedient will hear the prophesy of wine & strong drink | 2:11 |
| 3) False prophets make God’s people to err, as they cry, Peace | 3:5 |
| 4) I can be truly full of the power of the Spirit, of judgment and of might, to declare | 3:8 |
| 5) Leaders judge for reward , the priests teach for hire , and the prophets for money | 3:11 |
| 7) Out of Bethlehem shall come a ruler, from old – from everlasting (John 1:1-3) | 5:2 |
| 8) No self-sacrifices can remove or repair our sin, only Godly sorrow & repentance | 6:7 |
| 9) What is good & required? To do justly, love mercy & walk humbly before God | 6:8 |
| 10) I will look to the Lord. I will wait. My God shall hear me. | 7:7 |
| 11) When I sit in darkness, the Lord is a light to me. When I fall I shall rise. | 7:8-9 |
| 12) Our God pardons iniquity, delights in mercy & casts our sins into the depths of the sea | 7:18-19 |

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
Micah 3:1-4 (4)	Supplication	Israel seeks God	Hate Good & Love Evil		Prayer not Heard. God’s face hid.
Micah 7:7	Supplication	Micah seeks God		Look, Wait & Hear	Micah’s Prayer

Today’s application: Judge myself 1st on how bright my Light is. What darkens my light?

Judge my local congregation on how bright their light is. What darkens their light?

Outline I of Micah (Who is like Jehovah?)

Background. Micah prophesies against Samaria and Judah. His writing style is at times similar to his contemporary Isaiah (750-680) and characterized as the prophet of the oppressed middle class and poor. His doctrine of the "remnant" is unique among the prophets.

Micah is dated during the reigns of king Jotham (750-732), Ahaz (735-718) and Hezekiah (715-686 BC). Amos (780-750) and Hosea (753-715) prophesied before Micah to the Northern Kingdom. Later Jeremiah referred to Micah (Jer 26:17-19) when people do not pay attention to his messages.

	<u>Micah</u>
Message 1) Approaching Judgment	1-2
1:1	Greeting
1:2-16	Coming Judgment on Samaria & Judah
2:1-5	Woe to evildoers
2:6-11	Lying Prophets
2:12-13	Future Hope
Message 2) Israel's Leaders Guilt & Her Future Hope	3-5
3:1-12	Wicked Leaders (Civil: heads & rulers, Religious: prophets & priests)
4:1-13	Future Hope: Christ's Return. The Kingdom of God
5:1-2	Future Hope: Christ's 1 st coming. His birth (Matthew 2:5-6) & rejection
5:3	Interval between the King's rejection & return
5:4-15	Judgment of Israel's Enemies
Message 3) Israel on Trial	6
6:1-8	God pleads with Israel
6:9-16	Punishment of Israel's Injustice
Message 4) Final Lament & Promise during the Great Tribulation	7
7:1-6	Gloom
7:7-10	Intercession
7:11-20	Promise
<u>Themes</u>	
	Disobedience & Destruction 1-3
	Grace & Glory 4-7

(1) ¹ The word of the LORD that came to Micah the Morasthite in the days of Jotham, Ahaz, [and] Hezekiah, kings of Judah, which he saw concerning Samaria and Jerusalem. ² Hear, all ye people; hearken, O earth, and all that therein is: and let the Lord GOD be witness against you, the Lord from his holy temple. ³ For, behold, the LORD comes forth out of his place, and will come down, and tread upon the high places of the earth. ⁴ And the mountains shall be molten under him, and the valleys shall be cleft, as wax before the fire, [and] as the waters [that are] poured down a steep place. ⁵ For the transgression of Jacob is all this, and for the sins of the house of Israel. What is the transgression of Jacob? [is it] not Samaria? and what are the high places of Judah? [are they] not Jerusalem?

⁶ Therefore I will make Samaria as a heap of the field, [and] as plantings of a vineyard: and I will pour down the stones thereof into the valley, and I will discover the foundations thereof. ⁷ And all the graven images thereof shall be beaten to pieces, and all the hires thereof shall be burned with the fire, and all the idols thereof will I lay desolate: for she gathered [it] of the hire of a harlot, and they shall return to the hire of a harlot. ⁸ Therefore I will ^a wail and howl, I will go stripped and naked: I will make a wailing like the dragons, and mourning as the owls.

^a Micah's wailing and howling represent the great sorrow God has due to His people's disobedience to the Law.

(2) ⁹ For her wound is incurable; for it is come to Judah; ^a he is come to the gate of my people, [even] to Jerusalem. ¹⁰ Declare ye[it] not at ^b Gath, weep ye not at all: in the house of ^c Aphrah roll thyself in the dust. ¹¹ Pass ye away, you inhabitant of ^d Saphir, having your shame naked: the inhabitant of ^e Zaanan came not forth in the mourning of ^f Bethazel; he shall receive of you his standing. ¹² For the inhabitant of ^g Maroth waited carefully for good: but evil came down from the LORD to the gate of Jerusalem. ¹³ O you inhabitant of ^h Lachish, bind the chariot to the swift beast: she is the beginning of the sin to the daughter of Zion: for the transgressions of Israel were found in you. ¹⁴ Therefore shall you give presents to Moresheth-gath: the houses of ⁱ Achzib [shall be] a lie to the kings of Israel. ¹⁵ Yet will I bring a heir to you, O inhabitant of Mareshah: he shall come to Adullam the ^j glory of Israel. ¹⁶ Make you bald, and ^k shave yourself for your delicate children; enlarge your baldness as the eagle; for they are gone into captivity from you.

^a The Northern kingdom fell to Assyria in 722 BC. The invasion of the Assyrians under King Sennacherib in 701 BC captured 46 strong cities and over 200,00 Judahite captives and almost Jerusalem. Also see 5:6.

^b Teartown or tell

^c Dusttown or house of dust

^d Beauty

^e to go forth

^f Foundation

^g Bitterness

^h Horsetown

ⁱ Balkton

^j Princes

^k Poll thee ^{KJV}, shave refers to beard which is a great shame. Usually a growth of 30 days is shaved and offered.

(3) ¹ Woe to them that devise iniquity, and work evil upon their beds! when the morning is light, they practice it, because it is in the power of their hand. ² And they covet fields, and take them by violence; and houses, and take them away: so they oppress a man and his house, even a man and his heritage. ³ Therefore thus says the LORD; **Behold, against this family I devise an evil, from which ye shall not remove your necks; neither shall ye go haughtily: for this time is evil.** ⁴ In that day shall [one] take up a parable against you, and lament with a doleful lamentation, [and] say, We be utterly spoiled: he has changed the portion of my people: how has he removed [it] from me! turning away he has divided our fields. ⁵ Therefore you shall have none that shall cast a cord by lot in the assembly of the LORD.

Lying Prophets

(4) ⁶ Prophecy ye not, [say they to them that] prophecy: they shall not prophecy to them, [that] they shall not take shame. ⁷ O [you that are] named the house of Jacob, is the spirit of the LORD narrowed? are these his doings? do not my words do good to him that walks uprightly? ⁸ Even of late my people is risen up as an enemy: ye pull off the robe with the garment from them that pass by securely as men averse from war. ⁹ The women of my people have ye cast out from their pleasant houses; from their children have ye taken away my glory forever. ¹⁰ Arise ye, and depart; for this is not [your] rest: because it is polluted, it shall destroy [you], even with a sore destruction. ¹¹ If a man walking in the spirit and falsehood do lie, [saying], I will prophecy to you of wine and of strong drink; he shall even be the prophet of this people.

Future Hope

(5) ¹² I will surely assemble, O Jacob, all of you; I will surely gather the remnant of Israel; I will put them together as the sheep of Bozrah, as the flock in the midst of their fold: they shall make great noise by reason of [the multitude of] men. ¹³ The ^a breaker is come up before them: they have broken up, and have passed through the gate, and are gone out by it: and their king shall pass before them, and the LORD on the head of them.

^a Wall-breaker

(6) ¹ And I said, **Hear, I pray you, O heads of Jacob, and ye princes of the house of Israel; [Is it] not for you to know judgment?** ² Who hate the good, and love the evil; who pluck off their skin from off them, and their flesh from off their bones; ³ Who also eat the flesh of my people, and flay their skin from off them; and they break their bones, and chop them in pieces, as for the pot, and as flesh within the caldron. ⁴ Then they will cry to the LORD, but he will not hear them: he will even hide his face from them at that time, as they have behaved themselves ill in their doings.

⁵ Thus says the LORD concerning the **prophets** that make my people err, that bite with their teeth, and cry, Peace; and he that puts not into their mouths, they even prepare war against him. ⁶ **Therefore night [shall be] to you, that ye shall not have a vision; and it shall be dark to you, that ye shall not divine; and the sun shall go down over the prophets, and the day shall be dark over them.** ⁷ Then shall the seers be ashamed, and the diviners confounded: yes, they shall all cover their lips; for there is no answer of God. ⁸ **But truly I am full of power by the spirit of the LORD, and of judgment, and of might, ^a to declare to Jacob his transgression, and to Israel his sin.**

(7) ⁹ Hear this, I pray you, ye **heads of the house of Jacob, and princes of the house of Israel**, that abhor judgment, and pervert all equity. ¹⁰ They build up Zion with blood, and Jerusalem with iniquity. ¹¹ The heads thereof judge for reward, and the priests thereof teach for hire, and the prophets thereof divine for money: yet will they lean upon the LORD, and say, [Is] not the LORD among us? none evil can come upon us. ¹² Therefore shall Zion for your sake be plowed [as] a field, and Jerusalem shall become heaps, and the mountain of the house as the high places of the forest.

^a Acts 1:8, Romans 6-8

(8) ¹ But in the last days it shall come to pass, [that] the mountain of the house of the LORD shall be established in the top of the mountains, and it shall be exalted above the hills; and people shall flow to it. ² And many nations shall come, and say, Come, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, and to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for the law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem. ³ And he shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war anymore. **⁴ But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the LORD of hosts has spoken [it].** ⁵ For all people will walk everyone in the name of his god, and we will walk in the name of the LORD our God for ever and ever.

Note: George Washington referred to Micah 4:4 several times in different contexts.
<https://www.mountvernon.org/library/digitalhistory/digital-encyclopedia/article/vine-and-fig-tree/>

(9) ⁶ In that day, says the LORD, will I assemble her that halts, and I will gather her that is driven out, and her that I have afflicted; ⁷ And I will make her that halted a remnant, and her that was cast far off a strong nation: and the LORD shall reign over them in mount Zion from henceforth, even forever. ⁸ And you, O tower of the flock, the strong hold of the daughter of Zion, to you shall it come, even the first dominion; the kingdom shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem.

Near Judgment of Judah by Babylon

⁹ Now why do you cry out aloud? [is there] no king in you? is your counselor perished? for pangs have taken you as a woman in travail. ¹⁰ Be in pain, and labor to bring forth, O daughter of Zion, like a woman in travail: for now shall you go forth out of the city, and you shall dwell in the field, and you shall go [even] to Babylon; there shall you be delivered; there the LORD shall redeem you from the hand of your enemies. ¹¹ Now also many nations are gathered against you, that say, Let her be defiled, and let our eye look upon Zion. ¹² But they know not the thoughts of the LORD, neither understand they his counsel: for he shall gather them as the sheaves into the floor. ¹³ Arise and thresh, O daughter of Zion: for I will make your horn iron, and I will make your hoofs brass: and you shall beat in pieces many people: and I will consecrate their gain to the LORD, and their substance to the Lord of the whole earth.

¹ Now gather thyself in troops, O daughter of troops: he has laid siege against us: ^a they shall smite the judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek.

^a Matthew 26:67 fulfilled this prophecy. Rabbinical opposition to Jesus Christ as the Messiah caused the Hebrew writings to connect 5:1 and the end of chapter 4. Israel shall smite the Lord Jesus Christ during His trials before being crucified.

The Birth and Return of the Lord Jesus Christ

(10) ² But you, ^a Bethlehem Ephratah, [though] you be little among the thousands of Judah, [yet] out of you shall he come forth to me [that is] to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth [have been] from of old, from everlasting. ³ Therefore will he give them up, until the time [that] she which travails has brought forth: then the remnant of his brethren shall return to the children of Israel.

^a The place of the birth of the everlasting was prophesied 700 years before Jesus Christ was born. John 1:1-3, Col 1:13-16

Judgment of Israel's Enemies

(11) ⁴ And he shall stand and feed in the strength of the LORD, in the majesty of the name of the LORD his God; and they shall abide: for now shall he be great to the ends of the earth. ⁵ And this [man] shall be the peace, when the Assyrian shall come into our land: and when he shall tread in our palaces, then shall we raise against him seven shepherds, and eight principal men. ⁶ And they shall waste the land of Assyria with the sword, and the land of Nimrod in the entrances thereof: thus shall he deliver [us] from the Assyrian, when he comes into our land, and when he treads within our borders.

Micah Chapter 5

(12) ⁷ And the remnant of Jacob shall be in the midst of many people as a dew from the LORD, as the showers upon the grass, that tarries not for man, nor waits for the sons of men. ⁸ And the remnant of Jacob shall be among the Gentiles in the midst of many people as a lion among the beasts of the forest, as a young lion among the flocks of sheep: who, if he go through, both treads down, and tears in pieces, and none can deliver. ⁹ Your hand shall be lifted up upon your adversaries, and all your enemies shall be cut off.

Last 3 ½ years of the 70th Week of Daniel 9:24-27

¹⁰ And it shall come to pass in that day, says the LORD, that I will cut off your horses out of the midst of you, and I will destroy your chariots: ¹¹ And I will cut off the cities of your land, and throw down all your strong holds: ¹² And I will cut off witchcrafts out of your hand; and you shall have no [more] soothsayers: ¹³ Your graven images also will I cut off, and your standing images out of the midst of you; and you shall no more worship the work of your hands. ¹⁴ And I will pluck up your groves out of the midst of you: so will I destroy your cities. ¹⁵ And I will execute vengeance in anger and fury upon the heathen, such as they have not heard.

Micah Chapter 6

God's Plead with Israel remembering Lessons with Moses

(13) ¹ Hear ye now what the LORD says; Arise, contend you before the ^a mountains, and let the hills hear your voice. ² Hear ye, O mountains, the LORD'S controversy, and ye strong foundations of the earth: for the LORD has a controversy with his people, and he will plead with Israel. ³ O my people, what have I done to you? and wherein have I wearied you? testify against me. ⁴ For I brought you up out of the land of Egypt, and redeemed you out of the house of servants; and I sent before you Moses, Aaron, and Miriam. ⁵ O my people, remember now what Balak king of Moab consulted, and what Balaam the son of Beor answered him from Shittim to Gilgal; that ye may know the righteousness of the LORD. ⁶ Wherewith shall I come before the LORD, [and] bow myself before the high God? shall I come before him with burnt offerings, with calves of a year old? ⁷ Will the LORD be pleased with thousands of rams, [or] with ten thousands of rivers of oil? shall I give my firstborn [for] my transgression, the fruit of my body [for] the sin of my soul? ⁸ **He has showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the LORD require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God?**

^a Mountains & hills are often used simile for chief cities and their surrounding towns.

Punishment of Israel's Injustice remembering the dynasty of Omri and Ahab

(14) ⁹ The LORD'S voice cries to the city, and [the man of] wisdom shall see your name: **hear ye the rod, and who has appointed it.** ¹⁰ Are there yet the treasures of wickedness in the house of the wicked, and the scant measure [that is] abominable? ¹¹ Shall I count them pure with the wicked balances, and with the bag of deceitful weights? ¹² For the rich men thereof are full of violence, and the inhabitants thereof have spoken lies, and their tongue is deceitful in their mouth. ¹³ Therefore also will I make [you] sick in smiting you, in making [you] desolate because of your sins. ¹⁴ You shall eat, but not be satisfied; and your casting down [shall be] in the midst of you; and you shall take hold, but shall not deliver; and [that] which you deliver will I give up to the sword. ¹⁵ You shall sow, but you shall not reap; you shall tread the olives, but you shall not anoint you with oil; and sweet wine, but shall not drink wine. ¹⁶ **For the statutes of Omri are kept, and all the works of the house of Ahab, and ye walk in their counsels; that I should make you a desolation, and the inhabitants thereof a hissing: therefore ye shall bear the reproach of my people.**

Gloom

(15) ¹ Woe is me! for I am as when they have gathered the summer fruits, as the grape-gleanings of the vintage: there is no cluster to eat: my soul desired the first-ripe fruit. ² The ^a good [man] is perished out of the earth: and there is none upright among men: they all lie in wait for blood; they hunt every man his brother with a net. ³ That they may do evil with both hands earnestly, the prince asks, and the judge [asks] for a reward; and the great [man], he utters his mischievous desire: so they wrap it up. ⁴ The best of them is as a brier: the most upright [is sharper] than a thorn hedge: the day of your watchmen [and] your visitation comes; now shall be their perplexity. ⁵ Trust ye not in a friend, put ye not confidence in a guide: keep the doors of your mouth from her that lies in your bosom. ⁶ For the son dishonors the father, the daughter rises up against her mother, the daughter in law against her mother in law; a man's enemies are the men of his own house.

^a The days of vengeance in Matthew 24:9-31, 10:21-36, and Romans 11

Intercession

(16) ⁷ Therefore I will look to the LORD; I will wait for the God of my salvation: my God will hear me. ⁸ Rejoice not against me, O my enemy: when I fall, I shall arise; when I sit in darkness, the LORD [shall be] a light to me. ⁹ I will bear the indignation of the LORD, because I have sinned against him, until he plead my cause, and execute judgment for me: he will bring me forth to the light, [and] I shall behold his righteousness. ¹⁰ Then [she that is] my enemy shall see [it], and shame shall cover her which said to me, Where is the LORD your God? my eyes shall behold her: now shall she be trodden down as the mire of the streets.

Promise

(17) ¹¹ [In] the day that your walls are to be built, [in] that day shall the decree be far removed. ¹² [In] that day [also] he shall come even to you from Assyria, and [from] the fortified cities, and from the fortress even to the river, and from sea to sea, and [from] mountain to mountain. ¹³ Notwithstanding the land shall be desolate because of them that dwell therein, for the fruit of their doings. ¹⁴ Feed your people with your rod, the flock of your heritage, which dwell solitarily [in] the wood, in the midst of Carmel: let them feed [in] Bashan and Gilead, as in the days of old. ¹⁵ According to the days of your coming out of the land of Egypt will I show to him marvelous [things]. ¹⁶ The nations shall see and be confounded at all their might: they shall lay [their] hand upon [their] mouth, their ears shall be deaf. ¹⁷ They shall lick the dust like a serpent, they shall move out of their holes like worms of the earth: they shall be afraid of the LORD our God, and shall fear because of you. ¹⁸ Who is a God like to you, that pardons iniquity, and passes by the transgression of the remnant of his heritage? he retains not his anger forever, because he delights [in] mercy. ¹⁹ He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and you will cast all their sins into the depths of the sea. ²⁰ You will perform the truth to Jacob, [and] the mercy to Abraham, which you have sworn to our fathers from the days of old.

Nahum (3-4, 10 min, Assyria) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3

Nahum = Comfort. 1:7, 15

12 Retributions of Crossing the Point of No Return

Purpose: The gentile city of Nineveh (Judgment, 759 BC) / Opposite of Jonah (Mercy, 650 BC)

930 BC Rise of Nineveh.

765 BC Flood, 763 – Total eclipse of the sun, 759 – Famine. Fish god Dagon. Preparations for Jonah.

759 BC Jonah Preaches to Nineveh. After Hosea and Amos – prophets to Israel.

745-727 BC King Tiglath-Pileser III paid tribute by Kings Azariah, Menahem, & Ahaz.

722 BC King Salmanser V defeats the northern kingdom of Israel, 2 Kings 17:3-6, 18:9-10.

701 BC King Sennacherib loses to King Hezekiah at Jerusalem (3x) 2 Ki 18-19, 2 Chr 29-30, Is 36-37.

650 BC Nahum's prophecy. Probably during reign of King Manasseh. Time of Isaiah and Micah.

612 BC Medes & Babylonians defeat Nineveh after a 3-month siege & 3 defeats outside the city walls.

Nineveh: Inner walls 100' high x 60' wide. 1200 towers 200' high, 15 gates., 8 miles circumference, 1-2 million people.

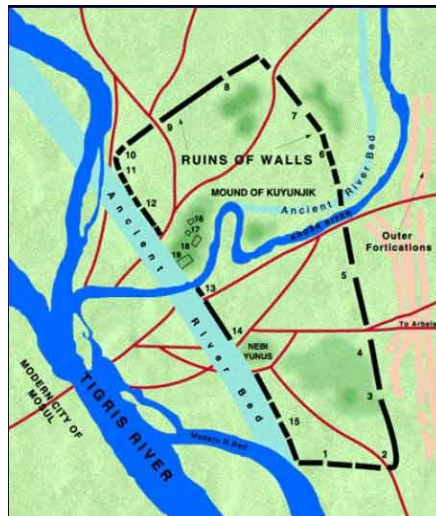
1850 AD Discovery of Nineveh by British Archeologist Austin Layard.

<u>Judgment</u>	<u>Key Verse</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Introduction – Burden or Judgment	1:1 Caper-naum is Hebrew "village of Nahum"	1:1
2) God's jealousy & anger displayed in nature	1:7 The Lord is good ... trust in Him.	1:2-7
3) Flood, darkness ... vs 8-10, 14	1:11 A wicked counselor - Sennacherib	1:8-14

"Though they be quiet, and likewise many" Assyrian wise saying

4) The feet of him that brings good news	1:15 Nahum – Assyria fell in 612 BC	1:15-2:2
5) Preparing well won't help	2:2 Judgment begins where?	2 Peter 4:17
6) Gates of river opened	2:7 Queen? Maids captured	2:3-8
7) Lions now flee and fear	2:10 Behold, I (God) am against thee	2:9-13
8) Sword and death, skirt upon your face	3:1 Bloody city, full of lies and robberies	3:1-7
9) Drunk, hid, and weak. vs 11-12	3:11 Gal 6:7-8, sow-reap	3:8-10
10) Compare with locusts – many, divided		3:11-17
11) Shepherds sleep, people scattered.	3:18 Jesus the Good Shepherd, John 10	3:18
12) No healing due to past wickedness	3:19 Ends like Jonah, only 2 books – rhetoric	3:19

Prayers of the Bible **None.**



Nineveh was large and, like Babylon, was protected by outer walls as well as an inner wall.

The inner wall was 50 feet wide and over 100 feet high.

Nahum Chapter 1

(1) ¹ The burden of Nineveh. The book of the vision of Nahum the Elkoshite.

God's Jealousy & Anger Displayed in Nature

² God is jealous, and the LORD avenges; the LORD avenges, and is furious; the LORD will take vengeance on His adversaries, and He reserves [wrath] for His enemies. ³ The LORD is slow to anger, and great in power, and will not at all acquit [the wicked]: the LORD has His way in the whirlwind and in the storm, and the clouds are the dust of His feet: ⁴ He rebukes the sea, and makes it dry, and dries up all the rivers: Bashan languishes, and Carmel, and the flower of Lebanon languishes. ⁵ The mountains quake at Him, and the hills melt, and the earth is burned at His presence, yes, the world, and all that dwell therein. ⁶ Who can stand before His indignation? and who can abide in the fierceness of His anger? His fury is poured out like fire, and the rocks are thrown down by Him. ⁷ **The LORD is good, a strong hold in the day of trouble; and He knows them that trust in Him.**

A Flood and Darkness will Overcome Nineveh

⁸ But with an overrunning flood He will make an utter end of the place thereof, and darkness shall pursue His enemies. ⁹ What do ye imagine against the LORD? He will make an utter end: affliction shall not rise up the second time. ¹⁰ For while [they be] folded together [as] thorns, and while they are drunken [as] drunkards, they shall be devoured as stubble fully dry. ¹¹ There is [one] come out of you, that imagines evil against the LORD, a wicked counselor.

Destruction of Nineveh Prophesied

(2) ¹² Thus says the LORD; ^a **Though [they be] quiet, and likewise many, yet thus they will be cut down, when He shall pass through. Though I have afflicted you, I will afflict you no more.** ¹³ **For now will I break His yoke from off you, and will burst your bonds in sunder.** ¹⁴ And the LORD has given a commandment concerning you, [that] no more of your name be sown: out of the house of your gods will I cut off the graven image and the molten image: I will make your grave; for you are vile.

^a An Assyrian legal formula. Unknown until discovery of Nineveh in 1850. Proof of providential preservation of Hebrew text.

Nahum Chapter 2

Comfort and Hope for Israel

(3) ^{1:15} ^a **Behold upon the mountains the feet of him that brings good tidings, that publishes peace!** O Judah, keep your solemn feasts, perform your vows: for the wicked shall no more pass through you; he is utterly cut off.

^{2:1} He that dashes in pieces is come up before your face: keep the fortress, watch the way, make [your] loins strong, fortify [your] power mightily. ² For the LORD has turned away the excellency of Jacob, as the excellency of Israel: for the ^b emptiers have emptied them out, and marred their vine branches.

The Bloody Battle, Captivity and Fleeing from Nineveh

³ The shield of his mighty men is made red, the valiant men are in scarlet: the chariots [shall be] with flaming torches in the day of his preparation, and the fir trees shall be terribly shaken. ⁴ The chariots shall rage in the streets, they shall jostle one against another in the broad ways: they shall seem like torches, they shall run like the lightnings. ⁵ He shall recount his worthies: they shall stumble in their walk; they shall make haste to the wall thereof, and the defense shall be prepared. ⁶ The gates of the rivers shall be opened, and the palace shall be dissolved. ⁷ And [Queen] Huzzab shall be led away captive, she shall be brought up, and her maids shall lead [her] as with the voice of doves, beating upon their breasts. ⁸ But Nineveh is of old like a pool of water: yet they shall flee away. Stand, stand, [they will cry]; but none shall look back.

^a [The Hebrew Writings begin chapter 2 here.](#)

^b [Assyrians](#)

The Assyrian Lion (people) Before Contrasted to Now

⁹ Take ye the spoil of silver, take the spoil of gold: for there is none end of the store [and] glory out of all the pleasant furniture. ¹⁰ She is empty, and void, and waste: and the heart melts, and the knees smite together, and much pain is in all loins, and the faces of them all gather blackness. ¹¹ Where is the dwelling of the lions, and the feeding-place of the young lions, where the lion, [even] the old lion, walked, [and] the lion's whelp, and none made them afraid? ¹² The lion did tear in pieces enough for his whelps, and strangled for his lionesses, and filled his holes with prey, and his dens with raven.

¹³ **Behold, I [am] against you, says the LORD of hosts, and I will burn her chariots in the smoke, and the sword shall devour your young lions: and I will cut off your prey from the earth, and the voice of your messengers shall no more be heard.**

Nahum Chapter 3

The Explanation of Why Nineveh is Wasted

(4) ¹ Woe to the bloody city! it is all **full of lies [and] robbery**; the prey departs not; ² The noise of a whip, and the noise of the rattling of the wheels, and of the prancing horses, and of the jumping chariots. ³ The horseman lifts up both the bright sword and the glittering spear: and there is a multitude of slain, and a great number of carcasses; and there is none end of [their] corpses; they stumble upon their corpses: ⁴ Because of the ^a multitude of the whoredoms of the well-favored harlot, the mistress of witchcrafts, that sells nations through her whoredoms, and families through her witchcrafts. ⁵ **Behold, I [am] against you**, says the LORD of hosts; and **I will discover your skirts upon your face**, and I will show the nations your nakedness, and the kingdoms your shame. ⁶ And I will cast abominable filth upon you, and make you vile, and will set you as a gazing-stock. ⁷ And it shall come to pass, [that] all they that look upon you shall flee from you, and say, Nineveh is laid waste: who will bemoan her? whence shall I seek comforters for you?

^a Similar to political and spiritual Babylon in Revelation 17-18.

As Assyria Destroyed Thebes, so shall Assyria be Destroyed (sow and reap)

⁸ Are you better than populous ^a No-ammon, that was situate among the rivers, [that had] the waters round about it, whose rampart was the sea, [and] her wall was from the sea? ⁹ Ethiopia and Egypt [were] her strength, and [it was] infinite; Put and Lubim were your helpers. ¹⁰ Yet was she carried away, she went into captivity: her young children also were dashed in pieces at the top of all the streets: and they cast lots for her honorable men, and all her great men were bound in chains.

^a A city in Egypt called Thebes in Greek. The Assyrians destroyed in 651 BC.

Characteristics of the Fall of Nineveh compared to Locusts

¹¹ You also shall be **drunken**: you shall be hid, you also shall seek strength because of the enemy. ¹² All your strong holds [shall be like] fig trees with the first ripe figs: if they be shaken, they shall even fall into the mouth of the eater. ¹³ Behold, **your people in the midst of you are women**: the gates of your land shall be set wide open to your enemies: the fire shall devour your bars. ¹⁴ Draw you waters for the siege, fortify your strong holds: go into clay, and tread the mortar, make strong the brick-kiln. ¹⁵ There shall the fire devour you; the sword shall cut you off, it shall eat you up like the cankerworm: make thyself many as the cankerworm, make thyself many as the locusts. ¹⁶ **You have multiplied your merchants above the stars of heaven**: the cankerworm spoils, and flies away. ¹⁷ Your crowned are as the locusts, and your captains as the great grasshoppers, which camp in the hedges in the cold day, [but] when the sun arises they flee away, and their place is not known where they are. ¹⁸ **Your shepherds slumber**, O king of Assyria: your nobles shall dwell [in the dust]: your people is scattered upon the mountains, and no man gathers them. ¹⁹ [There is] no healing of your bruise; your wound is grievous: all that hear the report of you shall clap the hands over you: for upon whom has not your wickedness passed continually?

Habakkuk (3-12, 10 min, Judah) 2023

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3

Habakkuk = Embracer

12 Steps from Perplexity to Ponder to Praise - in Prayer Between Habakkuk and God

Purpose: Judgment of God's People in Judah, then Judgment of Babylonians

Characters: Habakkuk, God, Nations of Chaldea and Judah

Godhead: God 17x (Jehovah 13x, Elohiym 2x, Elowahh 2x), Jesus Christ 1x, Holy Spirit 0x

722 BC Northern Kingdom falls to Assyria (Jonah 759 BC, Nahum 650 BC).

627 BC Jeremiah becomes a prophet. (621-580 BC)

610 BC Habakkuk becomes prophet. (610-605 BC)

609 BC King Josiah Dies and King Jehoiakim rules Judah (609-598 BC)

King Nebuchadnezzar, Babylon (605-562 BC)

605 BC 1st captivity by Babylon. Daniel and selected others captive to Babylon.

King Zedekiah of Judah.

597 BC 2nd captivity by Babylon. 10,000 slaves taken, includes Ezekiel.

586 BC 3rd captivity by Babylon. King Nebuchadnezzar destroys Solomon's temple in Jerusalem.

Habakkuk Down in Gloom

Key Verse

Scripture

- | | | | |
|---|------|---------------------------------|---------|
| 1) Habakkuk's Question about sinful Judah | Why? | Judgment of 1 Peter 4:17-18 | 1:1-4 |
| 2) God's Answer about Judah | | Because Acts 13:40-41 | 1:5-11 |
| 3) Habakkuk's Question about more sinful Babylon | | God's purity & wicked fishermen | 1:12-17 |
| 4) Habakkuk Stands and Watches | 2:1 | Waiting - How? In meekness | 2:1 |
| | 2:3 | Hebrews 10:37 | 2:2-4 |
| 5) God's Answer about Babylon | 2:4 | The Just - Romans 1:17 | |
| | | Shall Live - Galatians 3:11 | |
| | | By Faith - Hebrews 10:38 | |

God's Sentence on Babylon with 5 Woes

- | | | | |
|--|------|------------------------------------|---------|
| 6) Overview of 5 woes | | | 2:5 |
| Judgment for Rapacity (vicious stealing) | | | 2:6-8 |
| Judgment for Covetousness | | | 2:9-11 |
| 7) Judgment for Oppression | 2:14 | (1000) Future glory on the earth | 2:12-14 |
| Judgment for Drunkenness | | | 2:15-17 |
| 8) Judgment for Idolatry | 2:20 | (1000) Future silence of the earth | 2:18-20 |

Habakkuk Responds and Rises to Glory

- | | | | |
|--|------|--|---------|
| 9) Prayer for Revival in the midst of wrath | 3:2 | 70 yrs. later in Nehemiah & Ezra | 3:1-2 |
| 10) God's Awesome Appearance | | Glory-Light-Power-Judgment-Fire | 3:3-5 |
| 11) God's Avenging Anger | | History of Moses and Joshua
(Compare to Jesus and Paul) | 3:6-15 |
| 12) Praise for present trust in God's Goodness | 3:19 | (1000) Philippians 4 | 3:16-19 |

Prayers of the Bible

Habakkuk 1:1-2:20	Conversation	Questions & Answers		Concern	Habakkuk and the LORD
Habakkuk 3:1-19	Supplication Praise			Understands God's way	Habakkuk's Determination

In contrast to Nahum where there is no prayer and no hope for Nineveh, the whole book of Habakkuk is a 2-way conversation between man and God. There are 5 exchanges that seem like within one day. The prayer follows the Prayer Hand pattern from supplication to thanks to praise.

Within his soul, Habakkuk journeys from gloom to glory, from confusion to continuance, from trouble to thanks. Nothing has changed except within himself. This truth is eternal and extends to New Testament believers, a lesson to learn, Romans 15:4.

Chiasm in chapter 3. A (3:1), B (3:2), C (3:3-4), D (3:5-12), C (3:13-15), B (3:16-19a), A (3:19b)

1:1-4 Habakkuk Questions the LORD (about the sins of Judah)

(1) ¹ The burden which Habakkuk the prophet did see. ² O LORD, how long shall I cry, and thou wilt not hear! [even] cry out unto you [of] violence, and thou wilt not save! ³ Why dost thou show me iniquity, and cause [me] to behold grievance? for spoiling and violence are before me: and there are [that] raise up strife and contention. ⁴ Therefore the law is slacked, and **judgment does never go forth**: for the wicked does compass about the righteous; therefore **wrong judgment** proceeds.

1:5-11 The LORD Answers Habakkuk (the Babylonians will judge Judah's sins)

(2) ⁵ Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for [I] will work a work in your days, [which] ye will not believe, though it be told [you]. ⁶ For, look, I raise up the ^a Chaldeans, [that] bitter and hasty nation, which shall march through the breadth of the land, to possess the dwelling-places [that are] not theirs. ⁷ They are terrible and dreadful: their judgment and their dignity shall proceed of themselves. ⁸ Their horses also are swifter than the leopards, and are more fierce than the evening wolves: and their horsemen shall spread themselves, and their horsemen shall come from far; they shall fly as the eagle [that] hastes to eat. ⁹ They shall come all for violence: their faces shall sup up [as] the ^b east wind, and they shall gather the captivity as the sand. ¹⁰ And they shall scoff at the kings, and the princes shall be a scorn unto them: they shall deride every strong hold; for they shall heap dust, and take it. ¹¹ Then shall [his] mind change, and he shall pass over, and offend, [imputing] this his power unto his god.

^a Chaldeans are still in southern Iraq. Normally the upper class of people. Northern Iraq still has Assyrians. The Chaldeans are the Babylonians. Daniel 3, the king is god.

^b East winds are hot and dusty from the desert and are disastrous to crops.

1:12-2:1 Habakkuk Questions the LORD's justice (12-17) then repents (2:1)

(3) ¹² [Are] thou not from everlasting, **O LORD my God, my Holy One?** we shall not die. O LORD, Thou has ordained them for judgment; and, **O mighty God,** Thou has established them for correction. ¹³ [Thou art] of purer eyes than to behold evil, and cannot look on iniquity: wherefore look Thou upon them that deal treacherously, [and] hold Thy tongue when the wicked devours [the man that is] more righteous than he? ¹⁴ And ^a make men as the fishes of the sea, as the creeping things, [that have] no ruler over them? ¹⁵ They take up all of them with the angle, they catch them in their net, and gather them in their dragnet: therefore they rejoice and are glad. ¹⁶ Therefore they sacrifice to their net, and burn incense to their dragnet; because by them their portion is fat, and their meat plenteous. ¹⁷ Shall they therefore empty their net, and not spare continually to slay the nations?

^a The Chaldeans continued the same violent practices of the Assyrians as they put hooks through the lips of their prisoners to move them.

Habakkuk Chapter 2

¹ I will stand upon my watch, and set me upon the tower, and will watch to see what He will say unto me, and what I shall answer when I am reproved.

2:2-20 God's Answer about Babylon

(4) ² And the LORD answered me, and said, **Write the vision, and make [it] plain upon tables, that he may run that reads it.** ³ For the vision is yet for an appointed time, but at the end it shall speak, and not lie: though it tarry, wait for it; because it will surely come, it will not tarry.

Note: vs 4, Same truth throughout the Bible, God's judgment begins with his people. 1 Peter 4:17-18.

Habakkuk Chapter 2

(5) ⁴ **Behold, his soul [which] is lifted up is not upright in him: but the just shall live by his faith.**

⁵ Yes also, because he transgresses by wine, [he is] a proud man, neither keeps at home, who enlarges his desire as hell, and is as death, and cannot be satisfied, but gathers to him all nations, and heaps to him all people:

Note: vs 5 hell is shoel in Hebrew through the Old Testament.

Five Woes of Babylon

Predators (Greed)

⁶ Shall not all these take up a parable against him, and a taunting proverb against him, and say, Woe to him that increases [that which is] not his! how long? and to him that lades himself with thick clay!

⁷ Shall they not rise up suddenly that shall bite you, and awake that shall vex you, and you shall be for booties unto them? ⁸ Because you have spoiled many nations, all the remnant of the people shall spoil you; because of men's blood, and [for] the violence of the land, of the city, and of all that dwell therein.

Covetousness

(6) ⁹ Woe to him that covets an evil covetousness to his house, that he may set his nest on high, that he may be delivered from the power of evil! ¹⁰ You have consulted shame to your house by cutting off many people, and have sinned [against] your soul. ¹¹ For the stone shall cry out of the wall, and the beam out of the timber shall answer it.

Oppression

¹² Woe to him that builds a town with blood, and establishes a city by iniquity! ¹³ Behold, [is it] not of the LORD of hosts that the people shall labor in the very fire, and the people shall weary themselves for very vanity?

¹⁴ **For the ^a earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the glory of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.**

^a Babylon will fill the earth until Revelation 17-18.

Drunkenness

(7) ¹⁵ Woe to him that gives his neighbor drink, that put your bottle to [him], and make [him] drunken also, that you may look on their ^a nakedness! ¹⁶ You are filled with shame for glory: drink you also, and let your foreskin be uncovered: the cup of the LORD'S right hand shall be turned unto you, and shameful spewing [shall be] on your glory. ¹⁷ For the violence of Lebanon shall cover you, and the spoil of beasts, [which] made them afraid, because of men's blood, and for the violence of the land, of the city, and of all that dwell therein.

^a Drink and nakedness are often related.

Idolatry

¹⁸ What profits the graven image that the maker thereof has graven it; the molten image, and a teacher of lies, that the maker of his work trusts therein, to make dumb idols? ¹⁹ Woe unto him that says to the wood, Awake; to the dumb stone, Arise, it shall teach! Behold, it is laid over with gold and silver, and there is no breath at all in the midst of it.

²⁰ **But the LORD is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him.**

A (8) ¹ A prayer of Habakkuk the prophet upon Shigionoth.

Fear and Request for Mercy in Wrath (revival)

B ² O LORD, I have heard Your speech, [and] was afraid: **O LORD, revive Your work in the midst of the years, in the midst of the years make known; in wrath remember mercy.**

Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ

C (9) ³ God came from Teman, and the Holy One from mount Paran. Selah. His glory covered the heavens, and the earth was full of His praise. ⁴ And [His] brightness was as the light; He had horns [coming] out of His hand: and there was the hiding of His power.

Wrath before the Return of the Lord Jesus Christ (future great tribulation)

D (10) ⁵ Before Him went the pestilence, and burning coals went forth at His feet. ⁶ He stood, and measured the earth: He beheld, and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills did bow: His ways are everlasting. ⁷ I saw the tents of Cushan in affliction: [and] the curtains of the land of Midian did tremble. ⁸ Was the LORD displeased against the rivers? was Your anger against the rivers? was Your wrath against the sea, that You did ride upon Your horses [and] Your chariots of salvation? ⁹ Your bow was made quite naked, [according] to the oaths of the tribes, [even your] word. Selah. You did cleave the earth with rivers. ¹⁰ The mountains saw You, [and] they trembled: the overflowing of the water passed by: the deep uttered his voice, [and] lifted up his hands on high. ¹¹ The sun [and] moon stood still in their habitation: at the light of Your arrows they went, [and] at the shining of Your glittering spear. ¹² You did march through the land in indignation, You did thresh the heathen in anger.

Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ

C (11) ¹³ You went forth for the salvation of Your people, [even] for salvation with Your anointed; You wounded the head out of the house of the wicked, by discovering the foundation to the neck. Selah. ¹⁴ You did strike through with his staves the head of his villages: they came out as a whirlwind to scatter [me]: their rejoicing was as to devour the poor secretly. ¹⁵ You did walk through the sea with Your horses, [through] the heap of great waters.

Fear and Answer for Mercy in Wrath (revival - in me)

B ¹⁶ When I heard, my belly trembled; my lips quivered at the voice: rottenness entered into my bones, and I trembled in myself, that I might rest in the day of trouble: when He comes up to the people, He will invade [them] with His troops.

(12) ¹⁷ Although the fig tree shall not blossom, neither [shall] fruit [be] in the vines; the labor of the olive shall fail, and the fields shall yield no food; the flock shall be cut off from the fold, and [there shall be] no herd in the stalls: **¹⁸ Yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the God of my salvation.**

¹⁹ The LORD God is my strength, and He will make my feet like hinds' [feet], and He will make me to walk upon my high places.

A To the chief singer on my stringed instruments.

Notes: vs 8 & 15, horses of judgment in Rev 1, 6 and 19. Babylon is raised for justice and punishment of Israel through King Nebuchadnezzar (Daniel 1-5), a figure of Babylon's final destruction in Revelation 17-18. God had interim national revival in Ezra 1:1-5 & Nehemiah. Vs 3, last mention of Teman & Paran.

Historistic view: Matthew Henry commentary. Futuristic view: Chuck Smith commentary. I use to believe and teach the historic view in 2010, now believe and teach the futuristic view. Priority 3 doctrine.

Endnote: The book of Habakkuk shows us the value of developing a relationship with God through prayer. He begins as questioning, weak and insecure. He ends with nothing changed in circumstances or future, except for himself, now trusting, strong and confident. Consider the end of the matter as in the book of Job. The just shall live by faith. We have these experiences written for our benefit today. May we have ears that hear and eyes that see the eternal plan and purpose of God in heaven.

Zephaniah (3-7, 10 min, Judah) 2023

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3

12 Aspects of the Dark and Light Sides of God's Love

Background: Zephaniah = Yahweh Hides, 2:3. Zephaniah prophesied (630 BC) during the time of king Josiah (641-610 BC) and is the great-great grandson of King Hezekiah.

Purpose: Judgment of God's People, then other nations - then blessing. 1 Peter 4:17-18

Key Word: Day of the Lord 24x (near and far fulfillment)

Godhead: Jehovah 31x, Elohiym 5x, Jesus 0x, Spirit 0x

Dark Side: The LORD will Judge

Scripture

- | | | |
|--|---------------------|---------|
| 1) Introduction: Descendent of Hezekiah | Time of King Josiah | 1:1 |
| 2) The whole earth and all living creatures are consumed – opposite of creation | | 1:2-3 |
| 3) Judah's poor worship causes punishment, desolation and crying | | 1:4-13 |
| 4) Judah has trouble, distress, wasteness, desolation, gloominess & thick darkness | | 1:14-18 |
| 5) Judah's called to seek right and meekness to be hid from God's anger | | 2:1-3 |

(The Day of the LORD is not mentioned to the gentiles from 2:4 to 3:10. Why?)

- | | | |
|--|--|---------|
| 6) Philistia cities are forsaken, desolate, and destroyed | | 2:4-7 |
| 7) Moab & Ammon will be as Sodom and Gomorrah | | 2:8-11 |
| 8) Ethiopia & Assyria – Nineveh are slain, destroyed and desolate | | 2:12-15 |
| 9) Jerusalem is filthy, polluted and oppressing | | 3:1-5 |
| 10) The Nations experience God's fierce anger and devoured with fire of jealousy | | 3:6-8 |

Light Side: The LORD will Bless

- | | | |
|--|--|---------|
| 11) The Nations by turning to them a pure language | | 3:9-10 |
| 12) Jerusalem has God's saving among them with a mighty joy and love | | 3:11-20 |

Prayers of the Bible

Scripture	Form(s)	Purpose	Hindrance(s)	Aid(s)	Who
Zephaniah 1:6	No prayer		Sin	Pride	God's people, Jerusalem
Zephaniah 3:2	No prayer		Sin	Pride	God's people, Jerusalem
Zephaniah 3:9	Conversation Praise	Glorify God	None	Pure language	All people

Outline of Zephaniah

- 630 BC **Zephaniah** writes his prophecy.
- 628 BC King Josiah begins reforms. Law of Moses found in the temple in 622. He reigns from 640-609.
- 627 BC **Jeremiah** prophesies until 586 (appx 40 yrs.)
- 612 BC Nineveh Falls to Babylonians, Medes, and Scythians
- 609 BC **Habakkuk** prophesies Judah's fall to Babylon
- 605 BC 1st captivity by Babylon. Daniel and selected others captive for 70 years
- 597 BC 2nd captivity by Babylon. 10,000 slaves were taken from Jerusalem, including Ezekiel.
- 586 BC 3rd captivity by Babylon. King Nebuchadnezzar destroys Solomon's temple; rebuilt 70 yrs later

	Scripture
1) Introduction	1:1
2) <u>Yahweh Judges (Chiastic writing style)</u>	1:2-3:8
A) The Whole Earth	1:2-3
B) Judah & Jerusalem (Thesis Statement 2:3)	1:4-2:3
C) Surrounding Nations	2:4-15
B) Woe to Jerusalem	3:1-5
A) Woe to the Nations (transition)	3:6-8
3) <u>Yahweh Blesses</u>	3:9-20
A) The Nations (vs 10 transitional)	3:9-10
B) Judah & Jerusalem (conclusion 18-20)	3:11-20

ODDs and ENDS

Bible Canon of 66 Books (Memorization aid)

OT 39 Books	Pentecost	- 5	NT 27 Books	MT, MK, LK, JN, Acts	- 5
	Jos, Jud, Rut	- 3		Pauline	- 14
	Sam, Kin, Chr	- 3		Other	- 7
	Ezr, Neh, Esther	- 3		Revelation	- 1
	Poetry	- 5			
	Major prophets	- 5			
	Minor prophets	- 12			

Zephaniah, the 3rd prophet of a trilogy of Nahum, Habakkuk and Zephaniah, books 7-9 of the minor prophets. They are from the same time period, after the death of King Josiah until the fall of Judah to Babylon. Also they are contemporaries of Jeremiah (5:12, 6:14, 7:1-34, 8:11).

Zephaniah Chapter 1

The Lord Will Judge the Earth

(1) ¹ The word of the LORD which came to Zephaniah the ^a son of Cushi, the son of Gedaliah, the son of Amariah, the son of Hizkiah, in the days of Josiah the son of Amon, king of Judah.

^a The long lineage of Zephaniah indicates he was a descendant of King Josiah. He is the only prophet of royal descent. This is opposite of a servant whose lineage is not mentioned, as Jesus is represented in the Gospel according to Mark.

Who and Why? The World for the Stumbling Blocks and Wicked People

² ^a I will utterly consume all [things] from off the land, says the LORD. ³ I will consume man and beast; I will consume the fowls of the heaven, and the fishes of the sea, and the stumbling blocks with the wicked; and I will cut off man from off the land, says the LORD.

^a First of 6 "I will" in verses 2-6. God's mercy has had its time, now his wrath is fully executed.

Who and Why? Judah for False Worship (religious) and Non-worship (non-religious)

⁴ I will also stretch out my hand upon Judah, and upon all the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and I will cut off the remnant of Baal from this place, [and] the name of the ^a Chemarims with the priests;

⁵ And them that worship the ^b host of heaven upon the housetops; and them that worship [and] that swear by the LORD, and that swear by ^c Malcham; ⁶ And them that are ^d turned back from the LORD; and [those] that have ^e not sought the LORD, ^f nor enquired for him.

^a Worship of an alternative style offered by idolatrous priests. These priests were "put away" by Josiah in 2 Kings 23:5, condemned in Hosea 10:5.

^b Worship of the sun, moon, and stars "above".

^c Worship of an idol and God mixed. Malcham is the god of the Ammonites, also called Milcom. The same god is called Molech or Chemosh by the Moabites, Acts 7:35. The LXX translates it Moloch.

^d Those who once worshipped but later turned back or did not continue to worship God.

^e Those who did not seek God but were too busy in other things. No time for God.

^f Those who never asked for counsel for God's will through others or personal prayer.

Zephaniah Chapter 1

How? Judah is Judged in the Day of the LORD

(2) ⁷ ^a Hold your peace at the presence of the Lord GOD: for the **day of the LORD is at hand**: for the LORD has prepared a ^b sacrifice, he has bid his guests. ⁸ And it shall come to pass in the **day of the LORD'S** sacrifice, that I will punish the princes, and the king's children, and all such as are clothed with ^c strange apparel. ⁹ In **the same day** also will I punish all those that leap on the threshold, which fill their masters' houses with violence and deceit. ¹⁰ And it shall come to pass **in that day**, says the LORD, [that there shall be] the noise of a cry from the fish gate, and a howling from the second, and a great crashing from the hills. ¹¹ Howl, ye inhabitants of Maktesh, for all the merchant people are cut down; all they that bear silver are cut off. ¹² And it shall come to pass **at that time**, [that] I will search Jerusalem with candles, and punish the men that are ^d settled on their lees: that say in their heart, The LORD will not do good, neither will he do evil. ¹³ Therefore their goods shall become a booty, and their houses a desolation: they shall also build houses, but not inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, but not drink the wine thereof.

^a Same pattern as Habakkuk 2:20, Ecclesiastes 5:1-7, when Jesus was on the cross for 3 hours, Revelation 8:1. May we gain wisdom on how to approach, wait for, and listen to God from the testimony of Scripture.

^b The sacrifice is Judah and guests are the Babylonian army.

^c Indications of following other gods. Numbers 15:38, Deuteronomy 22:11-12.

^d Lees means "something preserved" indicating the long peace had not only increased their strength and riches, but hardened their hearts in carnal security. The dregs or sediment accumulating in a container of wine or liquor. Today we may say complacency. Jeremiah 48:11.

¹⁴ The ^a **great day of the LORD is near**, [it is] near, and hastes greatly, [even] the voice of the **day of the LORD**: the mighty man shall cry there bitterly. ¹⁵ **That day is a day of wrath**, a day of trouble and distress, a day of wasteness and desolation, a day of darkness and gloominess, a day of clouds and thick darkness, ¹⁶ **A day of the trumpet and alarm** against the fenced cities, and against the high towers. ¹⁷ And I will bring distress upon men, that they shall walk like blind men, ^b because they have sinned against the LORD: and their blood shall be poured out as dust, and their flesh as the dung. ¹⁸ Neither their silver nor their gold shall be able to deliver them in the **day of the LORD'S wrath**; but the whole land shall be devoured by the fire of his jealousy: for he shall make even a speedy riddance of all them that dwell in the land.

^a The intensity of God's wrath greatens to the worst man has known. The day of Jacob's trouble.

^b Simply put, yet sufficient to justify the judgment. May we as God's redeemed people, see that all sin is against the LORD and repent of it immediately.

Zephaniah Chapter 2

Judah is Exhorted "What to Do"

(3) ¹ Gather yourselves together, yes, gather together, O nation not desired; ² Before the decree bring forth, [before] the day pass as the chaff, before the fierce anger of the LORD come upon you, before the day of the LORD'S anger come upon you. ³ **Seek ye the LORD, all ye meek of the earth, which have worked his judgment; seek righteousness, seek meekness: ^a it may be ye shall be hid in the day of the LORD'S anger.**

^a Key verse to give hope to the faithful or those who do repent when they read the warning of Zephaniah. The LORD hid the poorest in the land from Nebuchadnezzar, 2 Kings 24:14.

How? Nearby Cities East of Judah

(4) ⁴ For **Gaza** shall be forsaken, and **Ashkelon** a desolation: they shall drive out **Ashdod** at the noon day, and **Ekron** shall be rooted up. ⁵ Woe to the inhabitants of the sea coast, the nation of the **Cherethites!** the word of the LORD is against you; O Canaan, the ^a land of the Philistines, I will even destroy you, that there shall be no inhabitant. ⁶ And the sea coast shall be dwellings [and] cottages for shepherds, and folds for flocks. ⁷ And the coast shall be for the remnant of the house of Judah; they shall feed thereupon: in the houses of Ashkelon they will lie down in the evening: for the LORD their God shall visit them, and turn away their captivity.

^a The four cities are part of Philistia and listed from south to north. These cities were strong since the times of Joshua when the tribe of Dan was given this land. Later Dan moved far north because they could not conquer the people in this area.

How? Nearby Nations West of Judah

⁸ I have heard the reproach of ^a **Moab**, and the revilings of the children of **Ammon**, whereby they have reproached my people, and magnified [themselves] against their border. ⁹ Therefore [as] I live, says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, Surely Moab shall be as **Sodom**, and the children of Ammon as **Gomorrah**, [even] the breeding of ^b nettles, and salt pits, and a perpetual desolation: the residue of my people shall spoil them, and the remnant of my people shall possess them. ¹⁰ This they will have for their **pride**, because they have **reproached and magnified [themselves] against the people of the LORD of hosts.** ¹¹ The ^c LORD [will be] terrible to them: for he will famish all the gods of the earth; and [men] shall worship him, everyone from his place, [even] all the isles of the heathen.

^a Both nations descended from Lot and were continual enemies of Israel.

^b Bothersome plants that prick, sting, and irritate the skin. Like thorns.

^c This is in the far future, after the great tribulation of Revelation and during the 1000-year reign of Christ. Jeremiah 48:9, Malachi 1:11.

How? Far Away Nations South and North of Judah

¹² **Ye Ethiopians also, ye [shall be] slain by my sword.** ¹³ And he will stretch out his hand against the north, and destroy **Assyria**; and will make ^a **Nineveh** a desolation, [and] dry like a wilderness. ¹⁴ And flocks shall lie down in the midst of her, all the beasts of the nations: both the ^b vulture and the hedgehog shall lodge in the ^c upper lintels of it; [their] voice shall sing in the windows; desolation [shall be] in the thresholds: for he shall uncover the cedar work. ¹⁵ This is the rejoicing city that dwelt carelessly, that said in her heart, I [am], and there is none beside me: how is she become a desolation, a place for beasts to lie down in! everyone that passes by her shall hiss, [and] wag his hand.

^a The earlier destruction of Nineveh could have served as an early warning alarm if God's people studied, believed in, and obeyed the Scriptures.

^b Translated as various type of animals living in the desolate land of Nineveh

^c Mounds left after the destruction, even until today.

Zephaniah Chapter 3

Woe to Jerusalem

(5) ¹ Woe to her that is filthy and polluted, to the oppressing city! ² **She obeyed not the voice; she received not correction; she trusted not in the LORD; she drew not near to her God.**

³ Her princes within her are roaring lions; her judges are evening wolves; they gnaw not the bones till the next day. ⁴ Her prophets are ^a light [and] treacherous persons: her priests have polluted the sanctuary, they have done violence to the law. ⁵ The just LORD is in the midst thereof; he will not do iniquity: every morning he brings his judgment to light, he fails not; but the unjust knows no shame.

^a Gay or not serious. Opposite of the New Testament expression sober minded or grave minded.

Woe to the Nations

⁶ I have cut off the nations: their towers are desolate; I made their streets waste, that none passes by: their cities are destroyed, so that there is no man, that there is none inhabitant. ⁷ I said, Surely you will fear me, you will receive instruction; so their dwelling should not be cut off, howsoever I punished them: but they rose early, [and] corrupted all their doings. ⁸ Therefore wait ye upon me, says the LORD, until the day that I rise up to the prey: for my determination is to ^a gather the nations, that I may assemble the kingdoms, to pour upon them my indignation, [even] all my fierce anger: for all the earth shall be devoured with the ^b fire of my jealousy.

^a Gather the nations to separate the sheep from the goats as in Matthew 25:31-46 and related to Revelation 16:14-16, at the end of the great tribulation, just before Christ returns to earth.

^b This fire of jealousy is for Israel and not the fire that consumes the present earth and heaven as in 2 Peter 3:9-11, just before the New Jerusalem descends from heaven as described in Revelation 21:1-22:5.

Part II - The LORD Will Bless

The Nations (Israel's Regathering)

(6) ⁹ For ^a then will I turn to the people ^b a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent. ¹⁰ From beyond the rivers of ^c **Ethiopia** my suppliants, [even] the daughter of my dispersed, shall ^d bring my offering.

^a The wrath of God turns into His blessing at this time.

^b Kosher Hebrew has no swear or cuss words. Hebrew has 22 letters and may be designed for mathematical purposes also. It is the only language to survive the test of time. The "pure language" is clarified in verse 13.

^c A precursor may be the massive airlift of 14,325 Ethiopian Jews to Israel in 1991 during the 36-hour Operation Solomon. One flight set a world record carrying 1,087 passengers on a 747.

^d There is Biblical and historical evidence indicating that the Ark of the Covenant is held in Ethiopia for this day.

Zephaniah Chapter 3

Judah's Sanctification (Israel's Repentance)

(7) ¹¹ In **that day** shall you not be ashamed for all your doings, wherein you have transgressed against me: for then I will take away out of the midst of you them that rejoice in your pride, and you shall no more be haughty because of my holy mountain. ¹² I will also leave in the midst of you an afflicted and poor people, and they shall trust in the name of the LORD. ¹³ The remnant of Israel shall not do iniquity, nor speak lies; neither shall a deceitful tongue be found in their mouth: for they shall feed and lie down, and none shall make them afraid.

Jerusalem's Rejoicing (Israel's Rejoicing)

¹⁴ Sing, ^a O daughter of Zion; shout, O Israel; be glad and rejoice with all the heart, O daughter of Jerusalem. ¹⁵ The LORD has taken away your judgments, he has cast out your enemy: the king of Israel, [even] the LORD, is in the midst of you: you shall not see evil anymore. ¹⁶ In **that day** it shall be said to Jerusalem, Fear you not: [and to] Zion, Let not your hands be slack. ¹⁷ **The LORD your God in the midst of you is mighty; he will save, he will rejoice over you with joy; he will rest in his ^b love, he will joy over you with singing.**

^a Citizens of Jerusalem. Used in the Song of Songs.

^b In Hebrew – Ahava. This word for love is used for the passionate love of Jacob for Rachael (Gen 29:20), the sacrificial love of Michal for David (1 Samuel 18:28), the fond love of Jacob for Joseph (Gen 27:3), Jonathan's deep friendship with David (1 Samuel 18:3) and Ezra's delight in the Lord's law (Ps 119:97).

Israel's Regathering (Israel's Redeemer)

¹⁸ ^a **I will** gather [them that are] sorrowful for the solemn assembly, [who] are of you, [to whom] the reproach of it was a burden. ¹⁹ Behold, at **that time I will** undo all that afflict you: and **I will** save her that halts, and gather her that was driven out; and **I will** get them praise and fame in every land where they have been put to shame. ²⁰ At **that time I will** bring you [again], even in **the time** that **I** gather you: for **I will** make you a name and a praise among all people of the earth, when **I** turn back your captivity before your eyes, says the LORD.

^a "I will" or "I" is repeated 8x showing that the kind mercies are totally of God as His just judgment was at the beginning of this book in 1:2-6.

Haggai (2-5, 8 min) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2

12 Lessons on Building the LORD's Temple

Purpose: To move God's people to consider their ways, be strong and build the Lord's house.

Themes: LORD of Hosts – 14x. House – 11x (temple 2x). Consider – 5x. Be strong – 3x.

Key Passage: Consider this day and upward 2:15, 2:18

New Testament: John 4:24, 1 Corinthians 3, Ephesians 2:19-21, 1 Peter 2:4-5, Revelation 5:10
Romans 6-8, 12:1-2, 2 Peter 3:7-14

Background: Haggai the prophet has 5 prophecies given within a 4-month period. His prophecy is given in 520 B.C. 16 years after the foundation of the temple is built. The dates relate to gentile kings and are during the "times of the gentiles". The prophecies cover the past promise in Egypt, present building of the temple, future Day of the Lord in Zechariah 9-14. God through the words of Haggai helped to rebuild the temple with Ezra, 5:1-2, 6:14.

Timeline: 1500 BC Covenant with the people of Israel, 538 BC Return to the land of Israel after 70 years captivity, 536 BC the foundation of the temple is completed and ordered by Persian king to stop, 520 BC God speaks by Haggai to complete the temple, 516 BC the temple is completed, 20?? After the 70th week of Daniel the glorified Christ returns to reign on earth for 1000 years. Total time is 4000 plus years.

I build my house and the household of God as I:

Scripture

- | | |
|---|-----------|
| 1) do not say, "the time is not come" | 1:2a |
| 2) do not say, "Is it time to build the Lord's house" | 1:2b |
| 3) consider if my work is God's revealed will | 1:5, 7 |
| 4) go, bring and build (go, glow, grow) | 1:8 |
| 5) obey and fear the Lord, for the LORD is with me | 1:12-13 |
| 6) permit the Lord to stir up my spirit: to go, bring and build | 1:14 |
| 7) be strong, because the LORD is with me | 2:4 |
| 8) fear not; my father's covenant is still with you (Matthew 28:18-20) | 2:5 |
| 9) trust God in the promise of future glory and peace (for the nation of Israel, millenium) | 2:9 |
| 10) worship with purity, not mixed with dirtiness | 2:12-14 |
| 11) consider my past disobedience, and present obedience and blessing from this day forward | 2:15, 19b |
| 12) know Christ will return and reign on earth as the King | 2:23 |

Prayers of the Bible – **None. It is time to work.**

Note: To turn away one must already have turned to, then they can later turn away – then turn back. As God dealt with the nation Israel in the Old Testament he deals with individual believers today in the time of the New Testament.

Today we build the temple spiritually in two ways. (1) our bodies are the temple of the Holy Spirit and (2) other believers who are part of the household of God, lively stones, 1 Peter 2:5.

Haggai (Hag means "festival") = "my festival."

Date (BC)	Book / Passage	Person	Vocation	Persian King	Comment
606 445	Daniel 9:2 Daniel 9:25	Daniel	Prophet to exiles	Nebuchadnezzar	70 years prophecy 70 weeks prophecy
536-520	Ezra 1-3 Isaiah/Jeremiah Predicted	1) Zerubbabel 2) Joshua	1) Governor 2) Priest	Cyrus edict to return	1 st return of 50k Built altar Built foundation
	Ezra 4:1-5, 4:6-23			Darius	Work stopped Summary of opposition
520-516	Ezra 5-6, Haggai Zechariah (<4 months of 5 prophecies)	1) Prophet – Help (now) 2) Prophet – Hope (future)		Darius	House of the Lord work resumes and is completed.
482-473	Esther	Mordecai	Family	Xerxes the Great	Marries Esther
458	Ezra 7-10	Ezra	Scribe-Priest Rebukes intermarriage	Grandson of Darius- Artaxerxes	2 nd return of 2k men and families.
445	Nehemiah 1-12	1) Nehemiah 2) Ezra	1) Build walls 52 days 2) Teach	Artaxerxes 464-423 BC	3 rd return of 42k Jews.
433-432	Nehemiah 13	Nehemiah		Darius II	1) 2) 3) 4) 5)
400	Malachi 1-4 (>100 yrs. after Haggai)	Malachi	Prophet	To the priests. 400 silent years. Maccabean Revolt. Silence broken by John the Baptist.	

Haggai, like James, is pragmatic. Haggai is down to earth. Zechariah his contemporary, is poetic, and up in heaven.

Acronym to memorize the Minor prophets: 3 * 4 = 12

1st 3: **H**osea (14), **J**oel (3), **A**mos (9)

Note: To Israel, Judah, and Israel

HoJoA (1st 2 - 2 letters, 3rd-1 letter)

2nd 3: **O**badiiah (1), **J**onah (4), **M**icah (7)

Note: To Edom, Nineveh, and Judah

OJM (1st letter)

3rd 3: **N**ahum (3), **H**abakkuk (3), **Z**ephaniah (3)

Note: To Nineveh, Judah, and Judah - 3 chapters each

NahHabZep (1st 3 letters)

4th 3: **H**aggai (2), **Z**echariah (14), **M**alachi (4)

Note: To Israel post exile. 520 to 432 BC.

HaZeMa (1st 2 letters)

Haggai Chapter 1 (Hag means "festival") = "my festival."

1:1-4 **1st Prophecy unto Zerubbabel and Joshua** (6th month, 1st day)

(1) ¹ In the ^a second year of Darius the king, in the sixth month, in the first day of the month, came the word of the LORD by Haggai the prophet unto Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and to Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, saying, ² Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, saying, This people say, **The time is not come, the time that the LORD'S ^b house should be built.** ³ Then came the word of the LORD by Haggai the prophet, saying, ⁴ **[Is it] time for you, O ye, to dwell in your ceiled houses, and this house [lie] waste?**

^a Haggai and Zechariah returned in the 1st group from Persian rule in 538 B.C. (Ezra 1:2-4)

^b House is used 11x with 3 perspectives of the same word in Hebrew, bah'-yith. The house of the Lord, the people's houses, and the future house when Jesus Christ returns. The word temple is used specifically in Haggai 2:15, 18.

Note: Zerubbabel is king, the last king of Israel and a type of Christ as King of Kings on earth in the millenium, Haggai 2:20-25. This bypasses the cursed lineage of Joconiah. A type of Christ in the genealogy of Mary and Jospheh, MT 1:12, Lu 3:27.

Zerubbabel as governor is spoken of before Joshua the high priest every time (7x) time and alone in Zechariah 4:6-7 and 4:9-10. Joshua was first when building the altar in Ezra 3:2.

1:5-11 **Consider Your Ways, You do Much and have Little** (2:15-19)

⁵ Now therefore thus says the LORD of hosts; **Consider your ways.** ⁶ Ye have sown much, and bring in little; ye eat, but ye have not; ye drink, but ye are not filled with drink; ye clothe you, but there is none warm; and he that earns wages earns wages [to put it] into a bag with holes. ⁷ Thus says the LORD of hosts; **Consider your ways.** ⁸ Go up to the mountain, and bring wood, and build the house; and I will take pleasure in it, and I will be glorified, says the LORD. ⁹ Ye looked for much, and, look, [it came] to little; and when ye brought [it] home, I did blow upon it. Why? says the LORD of Hosts. **Because of My house that is waste,** and ye run every man to his own house. ¹⁰ Therefore the heaven over you is stayed from dew, and the earth is stayed [from] her fruit. ¹¹ And I called for a drought upon the land, and upon the mountains, and upon the corn, and upon the new wine, and upon the oil, and upon [that] which the ground brings forth, and upon men, and upon cattle, and upon all the labor of the hands.

Note: vs 8, The 3 point message or charge still applies for today: Go, bring and build. Before they were not blessed by God and are now called to diligence and industry in the Lord's will and time.

1:12 **The Obedience and Fear of Zerubbabel, Joshua and the People**

(2) ¹² Then Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, and Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, with all the remnant of the people, obeyed the voice of the LORD their God, and the words of Haggai the prophet, as the LORD their God had sent him, and ^a the people did fear before the LORD.

^a They obeyed and feared the LORD. This fear is necessary at first to break the bondage of compromised habits they had developed since the government ordered them not to build 16 years before Haggai prophesied.

1:13-15 **2nd Prophecy for all to Work in the House of the Lord of Hosts** (6th month, 24th day)

¹³ Then spoke Haggai the LORD'S messenger in the LORD'S message unto the people, saying, I [am] with you, says the LORD. ¹⁴ And the LORD stirred up the spirit of Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and the spirit of Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, and the spirit of all the remnant of the people; and they came and did work in the house of the LORD of hosts, their God, ¹⁵ In the four and twentieth day of the sixth month, in the second year of Darius the king.

Note: vs 13, The promise is the same to us in this dispensation in Matthew 28:20.

Haggai Chapter 2

2:1-5 **3rd Prophecy for all to be Strong and Not Fear** (7th month, 21st day)

(3) ¹ In the ^a seventh [month], in the one and twentieth [day] of the month, came the word of the LORD by the prophet Haggai, saying, ² Speak now to Zerubbabel the son of Shealtiel, governor of Judah, and to Joshua the son of Jehozadak, the high priest, and to the residue of the people, saying, ^{3b} Who is left among you that saw this house in her first glory? and how do ye see it now? [is it] not in your eyes in comparison of it as nothing? ⁴ **Yet now be strong, O Zerubbabel,** says the LORD; and **be strong, O Joshua,** son of Jehozadak, the high priest; and **be strong, all ye people of the land,** says the LORD, and **work:** for ^c **I [am] with you,** says the LORD of hosts: ⁵ [According to] **the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt,** so My Spirit remains among you: **fear ye not.** /National covenant/

2:6-9 **Prophecy of the Millennial Temple** (2:20-23, Hebrews 12:26, Zechariah 9-14, Rev 6-19)

⁶ For thus says the LORD of hosts; Yet once, it is a little while, **and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry [land];** ⁷ And I will **shake all nations,** and the ^d **desire of all nations shall come:** and I will fill this ^e house with glory, says the LORD of hosts. ⁸ The silver is mine, and the gold is mine, says the LORD of hosts. ⁹ The glory of this latter ^e house shall be greater than of the former, says the LORD of hosts: and **in this place will I give peace,** says the LORD of hosts.

^a Tishri is a month for the fall festivals: the Feast of Trumpets on the 1st day, the Feast of Atonement of the 19th day and the Feast of Tabernacles which lasted 7 days and a Sabbath day followed on the 8th day. **On the last or 7th day of the Feast of Tabernacles this prophecy is spoken; the same day that Solomon dedicated the temple 440 years earlier (1 Kings 8:2; 2 Chronicles 7:8-10).**

^b The older returnees made a similar negative comparison with Solomon's Temple when the foundation of the temple was laid 16 years earlier (Ezra 3:8-13).

^c I am with you is the same promise given to the church in Matthew 28:18-20.

^d "The desire of all nations shall come" refers not to the gold and silver (Acts 3:6), but to the Messiah and the return of the Lord Jesus Christ to reign on the earth from the temple in Jerusalem as king of kings. Confirmed in verse 9 where "glory" and "peace" are attributes that the LORD of hosts gives to this future temple (Ezekiel 40-48). The OT promises are earthly to Israel in the future. The NT promises are heavenly to the believers in the future (2 Peter 3:7-14). The future throne of David (Acts 2:30).

^e House is referred to 11 of 1574 words by Haggai, more than any book of the Bible. From the tabernacle with Moses to Ezekiel 40-48 house of the Lord this is a holy place when the Lord is present and when His people walk in obedience. Today, the believer's body is a house of the Lord, like little houses referred to during the time of Babylonian exile. Ezekiel 11:16 Therefore say, Thus says the Lord Yahweh: Whereas I have removed them far off among the nations, and whereas I have scattered them among the countries, yet will I be to them a sanctuary for a little while in the countries where they are come.

Note: vs 5 covenant coming out of Egypt, Exodus 19:3-6, 29:45-46, 34:10-11, Deuteronomy 7:6.

1:12 to 2:5 chiastic structure:

- | | |
|--------------------------|---|
| a. Fear God (1:12b) | Come and work |
| b. Promise (1:13) | I am with you |
| c. Spirit (1:14-15) | stirred the spirit of civil, religious, and all remnant |
| c. Strong (2:1-4a) | |
| b. Promise (2:4b) | I am with you |
| a. Fear not people (2:5) | civil, religious, and all enemies |

We can read and understand the handwriting on the wall (Daniel 5) as the 7 seals are ready to open.

2:10-14 **Holy and Unclean can never mix – physical outward or moral inward**

(4) ¹⁰ In the four and twentieth [day] of the ninth [month], in the second year of Darius, came the word of the LORD by Haggai the prophet, saying, ¹¹ Thus says the LORD of hosts; Ask now the priests [concerning] the law, saying, ¹² If one bear **holy** flesh in the skirt of his garment, and with his skirt touches bread, or pottage, or wine, or oil, or any meat, shall it be **holy**? And the priests answered and said, **No**. ¹³ Then said Haggai, If [one that is] **unclean** by a dead body touch any of these, shall it be **unclean**? And the priests answered and said, ^a It shall be **unclean**. ¹⁴ Then answered Haggai, and said, **So is this people, and so is this nation before Me, says the LORD; and so is every work of their hands; and that which they offer there is unclean.**

^a It is unclean or holy. Holiness is personal, and uncleanness is contagious. Holiness cannot be transmitted to another person, but can influence them. Uncleanness can be transmitted to another person both outwardly and spiritually. An example is righteous Lot. Leviticus 6:18, 22:4-6, Numbers 19:11.

2:15-19 **Consider from this Day Forward – Since the Temple Foundation was Laid (16 years ago)**

¹⁵ And now, I pray you, **consider from this day and upward**, from before a stone was laid upon a stone **in the temple of the LORD**: ¹⁶ Since those [days] were, when [one] came to a heap of twenty [measures], there were [but] ten: when [one] came to the wine-vat for to draw out fifty [vessels] out of the press, there were [but] twenty. ¹⁷ I smote you with blasting and with mildew and with hail in all the labors of your hands; yet ye [turned] not to Me, says the LORD. ¹⁸ **Consider now** from this day and **upward**, **from the four and twentieth day of the ninth [month, even] from the day that the foundation of the LORD'S temple was laid, consider [it]**. ¹⁹ Is the seed yet in the barn? yes, as yet the vine, and the fig tree, and the pomegranate, and the olive tree, has not brought forth: **from this day will I bless [you]**.

2:20-23 **5th Prophecy to Zerubbabel about the Millennial Kingdom (2:6-9, Heb 12:26, Ez 40-48)**

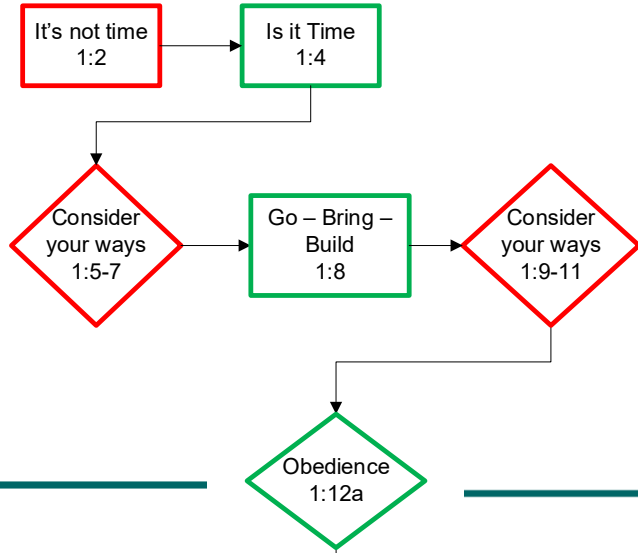
(5) ²⁰ And again the word of the LORD came unto Haggai in the four and twentieth [day] of the month, saying, ²¹ **Speak unto Zerubbabel, governor of Judah, saying, I will shake the heavens and the earth**; ²² And I will **overthrow the throne of kingdoms, and I will destroy the strength of the kingdoms of the heathen**; and I will overthrow the chariots, and those that ride in them; and the horses and their riders shall come down, everyone by the sword of his brother. ²³ **In that day**, says the LORD of hosts, will I take you, **O Zerubbabel, My servant**, the son of Shealtiel, says the LORD, and will make you **as a signet: for I have chosen you**, says the LORD of hosts. /vs 22, battle of Armageddon in Rev 19:17-21/

End note: Time is a key element in Haggai since the 4 prophecies connect with the circumstances of man and the timing of God through Haggai in the 2nd year of Darius the king of Persia, 521-486 BC.

Prophecy	Unto	Month	Day	Verse	Time	
1 st (1:1-11)	Zerubbabel and Joshua	6 th	1 st	1:1		520 BC
2 nd (1:13-15)	Lord stirred up the spirit-all	6 th	24 st	1:15	23 days later	
3 rd (2:1-9)	Zerubbabel and Joshua-all	7 th	21 st	2:1	27 days later	
(1:1-6)	Zechariah to all	8 th		1:1		
4 th (2:10-19)	the priests	9 th	24 th	2:10	63 days later	
5 th (2:20-23)	Zerubbabel (as the last king of Israel, next is when Jesus returns as king of kings)					
(1:7-6:15)	Zechariah (8 visions)	11 th	24 th	1:7		
Total:		almost 4 months			113 days	
(7-8)	Zechariah, 4 th year of Darius	9 th	4 th	7:1		517 BC
(9-14)	Zechariah, 1 st & 2 nd coming of the Messiah					
(1-6, 6:15)	Ezra, 6 th year of Darius	12 th (Adar)	3 rd		Temple completed:	516 BC
(7-8)	Ezra, 7 th year of Artaxerxes	1 st	1 st		2 nd return, 10,000 Jews	

Haggai – The Practical Prophet		
Ezra	520 BC	Zechariah

Phase I
Repentance
Haggai 1:1-11
1st prophecy



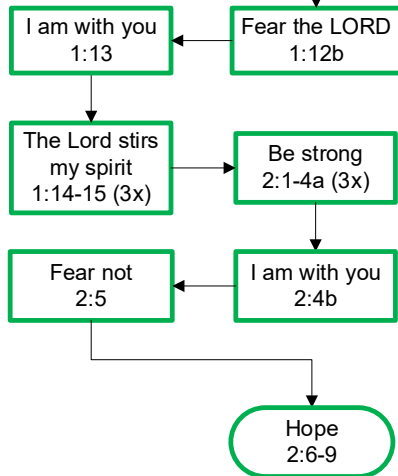
Time
There is a time to wait and a time not to wait
God sends Haggai

Turn
God speaks
Go-Bring-Build

Phase II
Revival
Haggai 1:12-2:9

2nd Prophecy
1:13-15

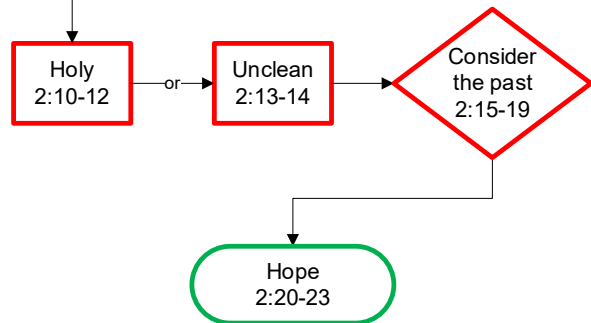
3rd Prophecy
2:1-9, 27



Trust
Seven sequential factors of Revival

Phase III
Continuous Revival
Haggai 2:10-23

4th & 5th prophecy



Time
There is a time delay in blessing. Four elements of continuous revival.

Zechariah (14-33, 40 min) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Present: 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 Future: 9 10 11 12 13 14

12 Truths for Our Sanctification

Purpose: To warn and comfort God's people in preparation for the coming of Jesus Christ

Key Passage: Jerusalem shall be a cup a trembling 12:2

Jerusalem is first called: The holy land (2:12), the city of truth and the holy mountain (8:3)

New Testament parallel: 1 Thessalonians, 1 John 3:1-3 preparing for the Heavenly Jerusalem (Rev 21-22). Also Romans 6-8 in the death and life contrast working in believers

Zechariah is the last of the Old Covenant prophets to be martyred. Matthew 23:35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah's son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Interesting that John the Baptist's father's name is Zechariah.

Zechariah = Jehovah remembers, Berechiah = Jehovah blesses, Iddo = at the appointed time. These names teach us to live focused, balanced, and discerning lives.

	<u>Scripture</u>
<u>I prepare for the Lord's return when I</u>	Zechariah
1) Turn to the Lord God, and He will turn to me	1:3
2) am silent, before the LORD: for he is raised up out of his holy habitation	2:13
3) Walk in His ways, and if I will keep His charge, then I shall also judge His house, and shall also keep His courts, and He will give me places to walk among these that stand by	3:7
4) Know that it is not by might, nor by power, but by His Spirit	4:6
5) Walk consistently by not stealing or lying – practice honesty and truth	5:3
6) Others will be there to help in His time, if I diligently obey the voice of the LORD my God	6:15
7) Pray and fast, eat and drink unto the Lord, and not eat and drink to myself	7:5-6
8) Turn to the strong hold (castle), as a prisoner of hope (in His return and justice)	9:12
9) Understand and have faith in the Good Shepherd's Beauty and Bands	11:7
10) Mourn and repent of my sin "apart from my wife" so he may rescue me	12:12
11) Go through His trials and refined as silver and gold; then call and He hears	13:9
12) Walk only in the light with no darkness, and have rivers of living water flowing from within	14:7-8
Practice personal purity or holiness in everyday common things	14:21

The 4 primary books of apocalypse in the Bible are: Daniel (sealed until the end of times – unsealed by Darby, Larkin, Scofield), Ezekiel, Zechariah, and Revelation. He prophesies of the messiah more than the other 12 minor prophets combined and 2nd to Isaiah among the prophets.

Key words: Lord of Hosts (54 of 235x), angel of the Lord (6 of 52x), Jerusalem (50 of 626x), in that day (21 of 108x).

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
Zechariah 7:2	Supplication	Worship at temple	Disobedience		After temple was completed
Zechariah 8:21-23	Prayer	Worship in Jerusalem		God is with you	All nations with Jew 1000
Zechariah 12:10	Supplication	House of David	In That Day	Prophecy / Context	Pour Spirit - Supp & Grace
Zechariah 13:9	Supplication	Mercy during tribulation		Trials	Israel

The Dead Sea Scrolls found at Qumran, includes the end of chapter 8 and beginning of chapter 9, showing that the same prophet wrote both.

The 4 prophetic parts of Zechariah

Present

- 1-6 Between history and 8 visions (one day) 3-month period (present, prophetic near and far future)
- 7-8 Worship, 1 question and 4 responses 2-year period (7 present, 8 prophetic far future)

Future

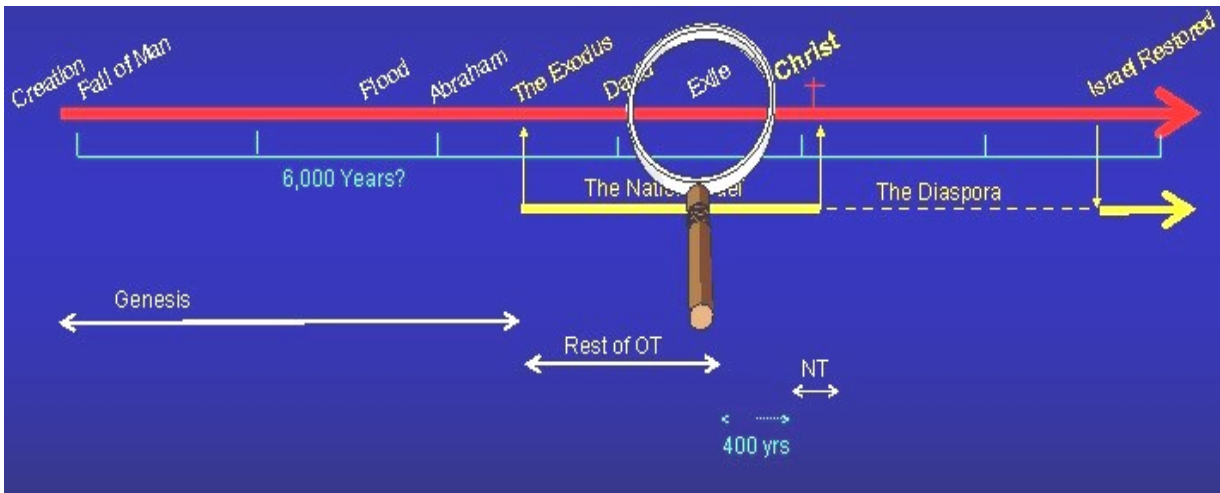
- 9-11 Greek and Roman empires prophetic near and far future
- 12-14 Second coming of Christ prophetic far future

The Dispensations of the Bible

Time Period	Revelation	Scripture	People	Place	Thing	Other
1. Eden to Fall	Innocence (family)	Genesis 1-2	Adam & Eve	Garden of Eden	Tree - River	Light
2. Fall to Flood	Conscience	Genesis 3-9	Noah	Ark	Ends in Water	Enoch
3. Flood to Abram	Government	Genesis 10-11	Nimrod	City of Babylon	Tower of Babel	Division
4. Abraham to Moses	Patriarchs (Family)	Genesis 12-50	Abraham, Isaac, Jacob (Israel)	Egypt	Tabernacle	Job Melchisedec
5. Moses to Christ	Law (nation)	Exodus to Malachi	Daniel Ez 14:14	City of Jerusalem	Temples	Abel to Zechariah
6. Christ	Grace (earth)	Matthew to Revelation 3	John the Baptist	All places	Body is temple	Unity Paul
7. Tribulation	Israel	Revelation 4-5, 6-18	Anti-christ	Jerusalem Babylon	Temple	
8. Kingdom on earth	Israel	Revelation 19-20	Christ	Jerusalem	Temple Ends in Fire	Feast of Tabernacles
9. Kingdom from heaven	God	Revelation 21-22	Christ	New Jerusalem	No temple Tree, River	Light

A dispensation is a period of time in which God reveals himself by nature and Scripture in unique ways different from other dispensations and progressive from beginning to end. With more revelation of God is greater accountability of man and greater grace of God. We can compare the progressive revelation to salt shaken into a flat dish, little by little until the whole dish is covered.

ZECHARIAH (JEHOVAH REMEMBERS)



Background

<u>Date BC</u>	<u>Book</u>	<u>People</u>	<u>Purpose</u>
536 - 457	Ezra – Scribe (1-6)	King Cyrus - Persia	Build temple foundation
520	Haggai – Prophet	1 st return – 50K Zerubbabel the Governor Joshua the High Priest	Build altar Build the temple
520 - 457	month 6,7,9 Zechariah – Prophet	King Darius - Persia Joshua the High Priest	Continue to build temple
518	2 yrs. later, 9 th month (7-8)	King Darius - Persia	
515/6	Ezra (6:15) 12 th month		Temple dedicated
482-473	Esther – Queen	Xerxes I (Ahasuerus) King of Persia	Protect people in Persia 2 nd return – 5K
446 - 420	Nehemiah – Governor (1-12) Ezra – Scribe (7-10)	Artaxerxes I King of Persia	Rebuild walls 3 rd return – 42K
432-431 420	Malachi – Prophet Nehemiah (13)	Artaxerxes I	

<u>Outline</u>	<u>Theme</u>	<u>Time</u>
1:1-6	Truth: Turn to the Lord – build the temple	same time as Haggai
1:7-6:15	Hope: Eight visions in one night (early prophecies with Haggai)	3 months after intro
7:1-8:23	Truth: Prayer and Fasting, one question with four responses (fasting turns into feasting)	2 years after intro
9:1-11:17	Hope: Prophecies of Christ's 1 st & 2 nd Coming (Good & Wicked Shepherds of Sheep & Goats)	
12:1-14:21	Hope: Prophecies of Christ's 2 nd Coming (parallels to Romans 6:1-23)	

Timothy Tidbits

This book can be read in 30 minutes. The 8 visions link and sequence to tell a story. In chapters 7-8 the 4 messages answer 1 question which describes the difference between dead and living works.

Zechariah like Jeremiah and Ezekiel are priest and prophet. He entered his office when young (2:4), probably around 30. His prophecies are divided into 3 time periods: (1) contemporary of Haggai with exhortation to build the temple (truth), and prophecy of the future chapters 1-6, 520 B.C., 8th and 11th month, (2) 2 years later, while the temple is being built, chapters 7-8, 518 B.C. 9th month, (3) after Haggai and just before or during the time of Esther, chapters 9-12, 480 B.C.

1:1-6 **Introduction – Don't Continue Doing Evil as Your Fathers – Turn to God** (520 BC, Oct-Nov)

(1) ¹ In the eighth month, in the second year of Darius, came the word of the LORD to Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, the son of Iddo the prophet, saying, ² **The LORD has been** ^a **sore displeased with your fathers.** ³ **Therefore say you unto them, Thus says the** ^b **LORD of hosts; Turn ye unto Me, says the LORD of hosts, and I will turn to you,** says the LORD of hosts. ⁴ **Be ye not as your fathers, to whom the former prophets have cried, saying, Thus says the LORD of hosts; Turn ye now from your evil ways, and [from] your evil doings: but they did not hear, nor hearken to Me, says the LORD.** ⁵ **Your fathers, where are they? and the prophets, do they live forever?** ⁶ **But My words and My statutes, which I commanded My servants the prophets, did they not take hold of your fathers?** so they returned and said, As the LORD of hosts thought to do to us, according to our ways, and according to our deeds, so He has dealt with us.

^a Sore displeased = angry with anger.

^b Lord of hosts implies boundless resources for His glory and His people's good.

Early Prophecies: The Temple is being rebuilt in 519 BC, February 15th (1:7-6:15)

Part 2 Eight sequentail visions in One Night

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| 1. Horses among the myrtle trees | (Jesus on the Red Horse) |
| 2. Four horns & four carpenters | (Jesus' Return as the 4 th Carpenter) |
| 3. Measuring line for Jerusalem | (Jesus with Measuring Line) |
| 4. Crowning of Joshua, the priest | (Jesus provides New Clothing) |
| 5. Gold lampstand & two olive trees | (Jesus and two Jewish Witnesses, 7 lights) |
| 6. The flying scroll & warning | (Justice by the Law of Moses) |
| 7. The woman in the basket | (Judgment of evil world systems) |
| 8. Four chariots | (Judgment of all the earth) |

Chapters 7-8, Question about fasting & 4 answers

Later Prophecies: After the temple is rebuild Chapters 9-14

1:7-17 **Vision 1 – The Horses among the Myrtle Trees (God's Messengers)**

(2) ⁷ Upon the four and twentieth day of the eleventh month, which is the month ^a Sebat, in the second year of Darius, came the word of the LORD to Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, the son of Iddo the prophet, saying, ⁸ **I saw by night, and behold a man riding upon a** ^b **red horse, and he stood among the** ^c **myrtle trees that [were] in the bottom; and behind him [were there] red horses, speckled, and white.** ⁹ **Then said I, O my lord, what are these? And the angel that talked with me said unto me, I will show you what these [be].** ¹⁰ **And the man that stood among the myrtle trees answered and said, These [are they] whom the LORD has sent to walk to and fro through the earth.** ¹¹ **And they answered the angel of the LORD that stood among the myrtle trees, and said, We have walked to and fro through the earth, and, behold, ^c all the earth sits still, and is at rest.**

^a The gentile term for month (Sebat) and the gentile king (Darius) are the calendar reference points due to being in the "Times of the Gentiles" in Luke 21:24, which is from the reign of the Babylonian King Nebuchadnezzar until the rapture of the body of Christ.

^b The red horse could represent suffering, speckled horse represent suffering with victory and white horse victory. Good supernatural horses are revealed in 2 Kings 2:11, 6:17, Haggai 2:21-22, Revelation 19:14. Evil supernatural horses are in vision 8, Revelation 6:1-8, 9:17-18.

^c Zechariah 2:13, Habakkuk 2:1. Silence in heaven and earth are signs of judgment is coming soon.

Zechariah Chapter 1

^c **Study notes on the Myrtle Tree.** A plant mentioned in Ne 8:15; Isa 41:19; 55:13; Zec 1:8,10-11

The modern Jews still adorn with myrtle the booths and sheds at the feast of tabernacles. Formerly, as we learn from Nehemiah 8:15. Myrtles grew on the hills about Jerusalem. "On Olivet." says Dean Stanley, "nothing is now to be seen but the olive and the fig tree:

"on some of the hills near Jerusalem, however, Hasselquist observed the myrtle. Dr. Hooker says it is not uncommon in Samaria and Galilee. The *Myrtus communis* is the kind denoted by the Hebrew word. (It is a shrub or low tree sometimes ten feet high, with green shining "sweet smelling" leaves, and snow-white flowers bordered with purple, "which emit a perfume more exquisite than that of the rose." The seeds of the myrtle, dried before they are ripe, form our allspice.)



(3) ¹² Then the angel of the LORD answered and said, O LORD of hosts, how long will you not have mercy on Jerusalem and on the cities of Judah, against which you have had indignation these threescore and ten years? ¹³ And the LORD answered the angel that talked with me [with] good words [and] comfortable words. ¹⁴ So the angel that communed with me said to me, Cry you, saying, **Thus says the LORD of hosts; I am jealous for Jerusalem and for Zion with a great jealousy.** ¹⁵ **And I am very sore displeased with the heathen [that are] at ease: for I was but a little displeased, and they helped forward the affliction.** ¹⁶ **Therefore thus says the LORD; I am returned to Jerusalem with mercies: My house shall be built in it, says the LORD of hosts, and a line shall be stretched forth upon Jerusalem.** ¹⁷ Cry yet, saying, Thus says the LORD of hosts; My cities through prosperity shall yet be spread abroad; and the LORD shall yet comfort Zion, and shall yet choose Jerusalem.

1:18-21 **Vision 2 – The 4 Horns and 4 Carpenters** (*Israel's Foes & God's Mercy*) (*past-present-future*)

(4) ¹⁸ Then lifted I up my eyes, and saw, and behold ^a four horns. ¹⁹ And I said to the angel that talked with me, **What [be] these?** And he answered me, **These are the horns which have scattered Judah, Israel, and Jerusalem.** ²⁰ And the LORD showed me four carpenters. ²¹ Then said I, What come these to do? And he spoke, saying, **These are the horns which have scattered Judah, so that no man did lift up his head: but these are come to fray them, to cast out the horns of the Gentiles, which lifted up [their] horn over the land of Judah to scatter it.**

^a The 4 horns (kings over kingdoms) and 4 carpenters (artisans, could be blacksmiths).

4 horns	4 carpenters
1-Babylon empire	conquered by Medo-Persians (526 BC)
2-Medo-Persain empire	conquered by Greeks (331 BC)
3-Greek empire	conquered by Romans (146 BC)
4-Roman empire	conquered by Jesus Christ (God's kingdom, future millennium, 20xx AD)

The chiastic structure of the 8 visions in one night is as follows:

- A The horseman among the myrtle trees (1:7-17)
- B The four horns and fours smiths (1:18-21), smiths are armies
 - C The surveyor (ch. 2)
 - D The cleansing and restoration of Joshua (ch. 3)
 - D The gold lampstand and the two olive trees (ch. 4)
 - C The flying scroll (5:1-4)
- B The woman in the basket (5:5-11)
- A The four chariots (6:1-8)

Zechariah Chapter 2

2:1-13 **Vision 3 – The Measuring Line for Jerusalem’s Blessing** (*immediate and millennial*)

(5) ¹ I lifted up my eyes again, and looked, and behold a man with a measuring line in his hand.
² Then I said, Where are you going? And he said unto me, To measure Jerusalem, to see what is the breadth thereof, and what is the length thereof. ³ And, behold, the angel that talked with me went forth, and another angel went out to meet him, ⁴ And said unto him, **Run, speak to this young man, saying, Jerusalem shall be inhabited [as] towns without walls for the multitude of men and cattle therein: ⁵ For I, says the LORD, will be to her a wall of fire round about, and will be the glory in the midst of her.**

(6) ⁶ Ho, ho, [come forth], and flee from the land of the north, says the LORD: for I have spread you abroad as the four winds of the heaven, says the LORD. ⁷ Deliver thyself, O Zion, that dwell [with] the daughter of Babylon. ⁸ For thus says the LORD of hosts; After the glory has He sent Me to the nations which spoiled you: for ^a he that touches you touches the apple of His eye. ⁹ For, behold, I will shake My hand upon them, and they shall be a spoil to their servants: and ye shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent Me. ¹⁰ Sing and rejoice, O daughter of Zion: for, look, I come, and I will dwell in the midst of you, says the LORD. ¹¹ And many nations shall be joined to the LORD in that day, and shall be My people: and I will dwell in the midst of you, and you shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent Me to you. ¹² And the LORD shall inherit Judah His portion in the ^b holy land, and shall choose Jerusalem again. ¹³ Be silent, O all flesh, before the LORD: for He is raised up out of His holy habitation.

^a Apple of eye, apple is pupil – the most precious, needed and protected place.

^b Holy land – 1st time mentioned. Law of 1st mention, Holy is set apart for a specific use, dedicated.

Notes: The other angel may be the Angel of the LORD or preincarnate Jesus.

In the first 3 visions the Lord deals with the enemies of Jerusalem. Judah and Israel.

In the 4th vision the Lord deals with the sins of his people in Jerusalem, Judah, and Israel

2 Peter 1:20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.

Zechariah Chapter 3

3:1-10 **Vision 4 –Satan and Cleansing Joshua the High Priest** (*past-present-future*)

(7) ¹ And he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the LORD, and Satan standing at his right hand to resist him. ² And the LORD said to Satan, **The LORD rebuke you, O Satan; even the LORD that has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you: is not this a brand plucked out of the fire?** ³ Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments, and stood before the angel. ⁴ And he answered and spoke to those that stood before him, saying, **Take away the filthy garments from him.** And to him he said, **Behold, I have caused your iniquity to pass from you, and I will clothe you with change of raiment.** ⁵ And I said, Let them set a fair miter upon his head. So they set a fair miter upon his head, and clothed him with garments. And the angel of the LORD stood by. ⁶ And the angel of the LORD protested to Joshua, saying, ⁷ Thus says the LORD of hosts; **If you will walk in My ways, and if you will keep My charge, then you shall also judge My house, and shall also keep My courts, and I will give you places to walk among these that stand by.** ⁸ Hear now, O Joshua the high priest, you, and your fellows that sit before you: for they are men wondered at: for, behold, I will bring forth My servant the BRANCH. ⁹ For behold the stone that I have laid before Joshua; upon one stone [shall be] seven eyes: behold, I will engrave the graving thereof, says the LORD of hosts, and I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day. ¹⁰ ^a In that day, says the LORD of hosts, shall ye call every man his neighbor under the vine and under the fig tree.

^a Romans 11, Israel future

Note: vs 2, The Lord rebuke you, O Satan is all that is needed. Jude 9.

Zechariah Chapter 4

4:1-14 **Vision 5 – The Gold Lampstand with 7 Lamps and 2 Olive Trees** (*The Light of the World*)

(8) ¹ And the angel that talked with me came again, and waked me, as a man that is wakened out of his sleep, ² And said unto me, **What do you see?** And I said, I have looked, and behold a candlestick all [of] gold, with a bowl upon the top of it, and his seven lamps thereon, and seven pipes to the seven lamps, which are upon the top thereof: ³ And two olive trees by it, one upon the right [side] of the bowl, and the other upon the left [side] thereof. ⁴ So I answered and spoke to the angel that talked with me, saying, What are these, my lord? ⁵ Then the angel that talked with me answered and said to me, **Know you not what these be?** And I said, "No, my lord." ⁶ Then he answered and spoke unto me, saying, **This is the word of the LORD unto Zerubbabel,** saying, **Not by might, nor by power, but by My spirit,** says the LORD of hosts. ⁷ Who are you, O great mountain? before Zerubbabel [you shall become] a plain: and he shall bring forth the headstone [thereof with] shoutings, [crying], Grace, grace to it.

(9) ⁸ Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ⁹ The hands of Zerubbabel have laid the foundation of this house; his hands shall also finish it; and you shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent me to you. ¹⁰ For who has despised the day of small things? for they shall rejoice, and shall see the plummet in the hand of Zerubbabel [with] those seven; ^a they are the eyes of the LORD, which run to and fro through the whole earth. ¹¹ Then I answered, and said unto him, What are these two olive trees upon the right [side] of the candlestick and upon the left [side] thereof? ¹² And I answered again, and said unto him, What [be these] two olive branches which through the two golden pipes empty the golden [oil] out of themselves? ¹³ And he answered me and said, **Know you not what these [be]?** And I said, No, my lord. ¹⁴ Then He said, **These are the ^b two anointed ones, that stand by the Lord of the whole earth.**

^a 2 Chronicles 16:9 For the eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole earth, to show himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him. Herein you have done foolishly: therefore from henceforth you shall have wars.

^b two anointed ones foretell of Revelation 11:3-12. Most of the prophecy in Zechariah have an immediate fulfillment with a greater far future fulfillment. In the full sense Jesus Christ is the priest-king (Psalm 110:4).

Zechariah Chapter 5

5:1-4 **Vision 6 – The Flying Scroll** (*Rebuke of sin by the written Word*) (*now & future*)

(10) ¹ Then I turned, and lifted up my eyes, and looked, and behold a flying roll. ² And he said unto me, **What do you see?** And I answered, I see a flying roll; the length thereof is twenty cubits, and the breadth thereof ten cubits. ³ Then said he to me, **This is the curse that goes forth over the face of the whole earth: for everyone that steals shall be cut off [as] on this side according to it; and everyone that swears shall be cut off [as] on that side according to it.** ⁴ I will bring it forth, says the LORD of hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that swears falsely by My name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof.

5:5-11 **Vision 7 – The Wicked Woman in Baskets** (*Revelation 18*) (*future*)

(11) ⁵ Then the angel that talked with me went forth, and said to me, **Lift up now your eyes, and see what is this that goes forth.** ⁶ And I said, What is it? And he said, **This is an ^a ephah that goes forth. He said moreover, This is their resemblance through all the earth.** ⁷ And, behold, there was lifted up a talent of lead: and this is a woman that sits in the midst of the ephah. ⁸ And he said, **This is wickedness. And he cast it into the midst of the ephah; and he cast the weight of lead upon the mouth thereof.** ⁹ Then lifted I up my eyes, and looked, and, behold, there came out two women, and the wind was in their wings; for they had wings like the wings of a stork: and they lifted up the ephah between the earth and the heaven. ¹⁰ Then said I unto the angel that talked with me, Where do these bear the ephah? ¹¹ And he said unto me, **To build it a house in the land of ^b Shinar: and it shall be established, and set there upon her own base.**

^a Ephah is a large basket. ^b Shinar is Babylon.

Zechariah Chapter 6

6:1-8 **Vision 8 – The 4 Chariots** (Revelation 7:1-3, 9:14-15) (Israel in the tribulation, Matthew 24)

(12) ¹ And I turned, and lifted up my eyes, and looked, and, behold, there came four chariots out from between two mountains; and the mountains [were] mountains of brass. ² In the first chariot [were] red horses; and in the second chariot black horses; ³ And in the third chariot white horses; and in the fourth chariot grisled and bay horses. ⁴ Then I answered and said to the angel that talked with me, What are these, my lord? ⁵ And the angel answered and said unto me, **These are the four spirits of the heavens, which go forth from standing before the Lord of all the earth.** ⁶ **The black horses which are therein go forth into the north country; and the white go forth after them; and the grisled go forth toward the south country.** ⁷ **And the bay went forth, and sought to go that they might walk to and fro through the earth: and he said, Get you hence, walk to and fro through the earth. So they walked to and fro through the earth.** ⁸ **Then he cried upon me, and spoke unto me, saying, Behold, these that go toward the north country have quieted my spirit in the north country.**

6:9-15 **Appendix: The Coronation of Joshua the High Priest as King**

(13) ⁹ And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, ¹⁰ Take of [them of] the captivity, [even] of Heldai, of Tobijah, and of Jedaiah, which are come from Babylon, and come you the same day, and go into the house of Josiah the son of Zephaniah; ¹¹ Then take silver and gold, and make crowns, and set them upon the head of Joshua the son of Josedech, the high priest; ¹² And speak unto him, saying, Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, saying, Behold the man whose name is The BRANCH; and He shall grow up out of His place, and He shall build the temple of the LORD: ¹³ Even He shall build the temple of the LORD; and He shall bear the glory, and shall sit and rule upon His throne; and He shall be a priest upon His throne: and the counsel of peace shall be between them both. ¹⁴ And the crowns shall be to Helem, and to Tobijah, and to Jedaiah, and to Hen the son of Zephaniah, for a memorial in the temple of the LORD. ¹⁵ And they [that are] far off shall come and build in the temple of the LORD, and ye shall know that the LORD of hosts has sent Me to you. And [this] shall come to pass, if ye will diligently obey the voice of the LORD your God.

Part 3 Four Messages of Zechariah (7:1-8:23) (2 years later, temple 1/3 built, 518 BC, December 7)

Zechariah Chapter 7

7:1-3 **Question about Prayer and Fasting**

(14) ¹ And it came to pass in the fourth year of king Darius, [that] the word of the LORD came to Zechariah in the fourth [day] of the ninth month, [even] in Chisleu; ² When they had sent to the house of God Sherezer and Regemmelech, and their men, to pray before the LORD, ³ [And] to speak to the priests which [were] in the house of the LORD of hosts, and to the prophets, saying, Should I weep in the fifth month, separating myself, as I have done these so many years?

7:4-7 **Answer 1 – Obedience must come before Sacrifice, Rebuke for Wrong Motives**

⁴ Then came the word of the LORD of hosts to me, saying, ⁵ **Speak unto all the people of the land, and to the priests,** saying, When ye fasted and mourned in the fifth and seventh [month], even those **seventy years,** did ye at all fast unto Me, [even] to Me? ⁶ And when ye did eat, and when ye did drink, did not ye eat [for yourselves], and drink [for yourselves]? ⁷ [Should ye] ^a not [hear] the words which the LORD has cried by the former prophets, when Jerusalem was inhabited and in prosperity, and the cities thereof round about her, when [men] inhabited the south and the plain?

^a Obedience must come before sacrifice. Isaiah 58 also speaks of the difference between the false and true fast. Answer 4 in 8:18-23 brings more light to the purpose and nature of fasting as designed by God. This is clear here and in Isaiah 58:3-9. See 1 Samuel 15:22 where Saul and told obedience is better than sacrifice by Samuel. In the Sermon on the Mount the Lord Jesus addresses prayer and fasting together also, as in many other Scriptures the two must link together at times.

Zechariah Chapter 7

7:8-14 **Answer 2 – Disobedience was the Cause for Captivity**

(15) ⁸ And the word of the LORD came unto Zechariah, saying, ⁹ Thus speaks the LORD of hosts, saying, **Execute true judgment, and show mercy and compassions every man to his brother:**

¹⁰ And oppress not the widow, nor the fatherless, the stranger, nor the poor; and let none of you imagine evil against his brother in your heart. ¹¹ But they refused to hearken, and pulled away the shoulder, and stopped their ears, that they should not hear. ¹² Yes, they made their hearts [as] an adamant stone, lest they should hear the law, and the words which the LORD of hosts has sent in His Spirit by the former prophets: therefore came a great wrath from the LORD of hosts. ¹³ Therefore it is come to pass, [that] as He cried, and they would not hear; so they cried, and I would not hear, says the LORD of Hosts: ¹⁴ But I scattered them with a whirlwind among all the nations whom they knew not. Thus the land was desolate after them, that no man passed through nor returned: for they laid the pleasant land desolate.

Zechariah Chapter 8

8:1-17 **Answer 3 – The Lord Jesus Christ Reigns at Jerusalem for 1000 years** /vs 16, Ps 15, 24/

(16) ¹ Again the word of the LORD of hosts came [unto me], saying, ² Thus says the LORD of hosts; I was jealous for Zion with great jealousy, and I was jealous for her with great fury. ³ Thus says the LORD; I am returned to Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: **and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the LORD of hosts the holy mountain.** ⁴ Thus says the LORD of hosts; There shall yet old men and old women dwell in the streets of Jerusalem, and every man with his staff in his hand for very age. ⁵ And the streets of the city shall be full of boys and girls playing in the streets thereof. ⁶ Thus says the LORD of hosts; If it be marvelous in the eyes of the remnant of this people in these days, should it also be marvelous in my eyes? says the LORD of hosts. ⁷ Thus says the LORD of hosts; Behold, I will save my people from the east country, and from the west country; ⁸ And I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and they shall be My people, and I will be their God, **in truth and in righteousness.**

(17) ⁹ Thus says the LORD of hosts; Let your hands be strong, ye that hear in these days these words by the mouth of the prophets, which [were] in the day [that] the foundation of the house of the LORD of hosts was laid, that the temple might be built. ¹⁰ For before these days there was no hire for man, nor any hire for beast; neither [was there any] peace to him that went out or came in because of the affliction: for I set all men everyone against his neighbor. ¹¹ But now I [will] not [be] to the residue of this people as in the former days, says the LORD of hosts. ¹² For the seed [shall be] prosperous; the vine shall give her fruit, and the ground shall give her increase, and the heavens shall give their dew; and I will cause the remnant of this people to possess all these [things]. ¹³ And it shall come to pass, [that] as ye were a curse among the heathen, O house of Judah, and house of Israel; so will I save you, and ye shall be a blessing: fear not, [but] let your hands be strong. ¹⁴ For thus says the LORD of hosts; As I thought to punish you, when your fathers provoked Me to wrath, says the LORD of hosts, and I repented not: ¹⁵ So again I have thought in these days to do well to Jerusalem and to the house of Judah: fear ye not. ¹⁶ These are the things that ye shall do; **Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbor; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates:** ¹⁷ And let none of you imagine evil in your hearts against his neighbor; and love no false oath: for all these [are things] that I hate, says the LORD.

8:18-23 **Answer 4 – Your Fasts will Become Feasts** (mourning into joy and rod of iron during 1000)

(18) ¹⁸ And the word of the LORD of hosts came to me, saying, ¹⁹ Thus says the LORD of hosts; The fast of the fourth [month], and the fast of the fifth, and the fast of the seventh, and the fast of the tenth, shall be to the house of Judah joy and gladness, and cheerful feasts; therefore love the truth and peace.

²⁰ Thus says the LORD of hosts; [It shall] yet [come to pass], that there shall come people, and the inhabitants of many cities: ²¹ And the inhabitants of one [city] shall go to another, saying, **Let us go speedily to pray before the LORD, and to seek the LORD of hosts: I will go also.** ²² Yes, many people and strong nations shall come to seek the LORD of hosts in Jerusalem, and to pray before the LORD. ²³ Thus says the LORD of hosts; In those days [it shall come to pass], that ten men shall take hold out of all languages of the nations, even shall take hold of the **skirt of him that is a Jew**, saying, We will go with you: for we have heard [that] God is with you.

/Psalm 122, 2:9. Rev 2:27, 19:15. Matthew 24-25/

Part 4 – Later Prophecies after Temple is Built (9:1-14:21)

Good & Wicked Shepherds of the Goats & Sheep (9-11)

Zechariah Chapter 9

Greek Empire (past before Christ's 1st Coming)

9:1-8 *The Wicked Shepherd (Alexander the Great) Conquers the Neighboring Nations*

(19) ¹ The burden of the word of the LORD in the land of Hadrach, and ^a Damascus [shall be] the rest thereof: when the eyes of man, as of all the tribes of Israel, [shall be] toward the LORD. ² **And Hamath also shall border thereby; ^b Tyre, and Zidon, though it be very wise. ³ And Tyre did build herself a strong hold, and heaped up silver as the dust, and fine gold as the mire of the streets. ⁴ Behold, the Lord will cast her out, and He will smite her power in the sea; and she shall be devoured with fire. ⁵ Ashkelon shall see [it], and fear; Gaza also [shall see it], and be very sorrowful, and Ekron; for her expectation shall be ashamed; and the king shall perish from Gaza, and Ashkelon shall not be inhabited. ⁶ And a bastard shall dwell in Ashdod, and I will cut off the pride of the Philistines. ⁷ And I will take away his blood out of his mouth, and his abominations from between his teeth: but he that remains, even he, [shall be] for our God, and he shall be as a governor in Judah, and Ekron as a Jebusite. ⁸ And I will encamp about My house because of the ^c army, because of him that passes by, and because of him that returns: and no oppressor shall pass through them anymore: for now I have seen with My eyes.**

^a Vs 1, Burden is judgment, prophesied 200 years before Greece arose. Verses 1-8 describe the conquests of Alexander the Great in the near future. He conquered from age of 19 to 30 with an army of 50K men, he died of pneumonia at 33 years old. These are the exact same route of cities Alexander the Great conquered when going through Israel.

^b Tyre of Isaiah 14 was a walled city at sea that was impregnable before Alexander the Great. Tyre was seigned by the Assyrians for 5 years, then the Babylonians for 13 years, finally falling to Alexander the Great in 7 months.

^c The historian Josephus describes how the High Priest and group of men in white robes greeted Alexander, who had a prophetic dream of this meeting while in Macedonia, therefore preventing the destruction of Jerusalem. Talmudic writings proclaim the priest declared Daniel 7-8 which foretold of Alexander the great. Whether either of these or other accounts are true, we do know that the Scripture was fulfilled when Alexander visited Jerusalem in peace.

9:9-10 *The Good Shepherd, Jesus the Christ at His 1st Coming (9) and 2nd Coming (10)*

(20) ⁹ Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, **your King comes to you: He is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon a donkey**, and upon a colt the foal of a donkey. ¹⁰ And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off: and He shall speak peace to the heathen: and his dominion [shall be] from sea [even] to sea, and from the river [even] to the ends of the earth.

^a Verse 9-10 is 1 of 24 times that Scripture splits the 1st and 2nd Coming of Jesus Christ to earth. The most popular being Isaiah 61:1-2 and Isaiah 9:6-7, however read the whole chapter to see the future of Israel which Zechariah prophesies. Rejoice greatly, daughter of Jerusalem and he is just, and having salvation relate to His 2nd Coming.

^b His 1st Coming is fulfilled in Matthew 21:4-5 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, your King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. John 12:12-16 On the next day many people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord. And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon; as it is written, Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, your King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt. These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him. Rather than the triumphant entry this event could be called the tragic exit. Foretold to the exact day in Daniel 9:24-27

Zechariah Chapter 9

9:11-10:1 ***The Maccabean Revolt and Victory from Greece (several good shepherds)***

(21) ¹¹ As for you also, by the blood of your covenant I have sent forth your prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water. ¹² **Turn you to the strong hold, ye prisoners of hope:** even today I declare [that] I will render double unto you; ¹³ When I have bent Judah for Me, filled the bow with Ephraim, and raised up your sons, O Zion, against your sons, O Greece, and made you as the sword of a mighty man. ¹⁴ And the LORD shall be seen over them, and His arrow shall go forth as the lightning: and the Lord GOD shall blow the trumpet, and shall go with whirlwinds of the south. ¹⁵ The LORD of hosts shall defend them; and they shall devour, and subdue with sling stones; and they shall drink, [and] make a noise as through wine; and they shall be filled like bowls, [and] as the corners of the altar. ¹⁶ And the LORD their God shall save them **in that day** as the flock of His people: for they [shall be as] the stones of a crown, lifted up as an ensign upon His land. ¹⁷ For how great is His goodness, and how great is His beauty! corn shall make the young men cheerful, and new wine the maids.

Zechariah Chapter 10

¹ Ask ye of the LORD rain in the time of the latter rain; [so] the LORD shall make bright clouds, and give them showers of rain, to everyone grass in the field.

Note: Literal rain is a physical blessing, latter rain is in the Fall. Before withholding of rain was a judgment.

10:2-3a ***The Wicked Shepherds Weakens Their Flocks (through visions and dreams)***

(22) ² For the idols have spoken vanity, and the diviners have seen a lie, and have told false dreams; they comfort in vain: therefore they went their way as a flock, they were troubled, because [there was] no shepherd. ³ **My anger was kindled against the shepherds, and I punished the goats:**

Note: The goats and the sheep are separated in Matthew 25:32-33 when Jesus Returns at the end of the tribulation.

10:3b-12 ***The Good Shepherd Strengthens His Flock***

for the LORD of hosts has visited His flock the house of Judah, and has made them as his goodly horse in the battle. ⁴ Out of him came forth the corner, out of him the nail, out of him the battle bow, out of him every oppressor together. ⁵ And they shall be as mighty [men], which tread down [their enemies] in the mire of the streets in the battle: and they shall fight, because the LORD is with them, and the riders on horses shall be confounded. ⁶ And I will strengthen the house of Judah, and I will save the house of Joseph, and I will bring them again to place them; for I have mercy upon them: and they shall be as though I had not cast them off: for I [am] the LORD their God, and will hear them. ⁷ And [they of] Ephraim shall be like a mighty [man], and their heart shall rejoice as through wine: yes, their children shall see [it], and be glad; their heart shall rejoice in the LORD. ⁸ I will hiss for them, and gather them; for I have redeemed them: and they shall increase as they have increased. ⁹ And I will sow them among the people: and they shall remember Me in far countries; and they shall live with their children, and turn again. ¹⁰ I will bring them again also out of the land of Egypt, and gather them out of Assyria; and I will bring them into the land of Gilead and Lebanon; and [place] shall not be found for them. ¹¹ And He shall pass through the sea with affliction, and shall smite the waves in the sea, and all the deeps of the river shall dry up: and the pride of Assyria shall be brought down, and the scepter of Egypt shall depart away. ¹² And I will strengthen them in the LORD; and they shall walk up and down in His name, says the LORD.

Note: In John 10 Jesus is the Good Shepherd.

11:1-6 *The Wicked Shepherd's Invasion of Jerusalem by Rome* (After Christ's 1st Coming)

(23) ¹ Open your doors, O Lebanon, that the fire may devour your cedars. ² Howl, fir tree; for the cedar is fallen; because the mighty are spoiled: howl, O ye oaks of Bashan; for the forest of the vintage is come down. ³ [There is] a voice of the howling of the shepherds; for their glory is spoiled: a voice of the roaring of young lions; for the pride of Jordan is spoiled. ⁴ Thus says the LORD my God; Feed the flock of the slaughter; ⁵ Whose possessors slay them, and hold themselves not guilty: and they that sell them say, Blessed [be] the LORD; for I am rich: and their ^a own shepherds pity them not. ⁶ For I will no more pity the inhabitants of the land, says the LORD: but, look, I will deliver the men everyone into his neighbor's hand, and into the hand of ^b his king: and they shall smite the land, and out of their hand I will not deliver them.

^a Their own shepherds are the priests, scribes, Pharisees, and Sadducees.

^b His king is the Roman Emperor Caesar, specifically when the Jews pledge allegiance to Caesar in John 19:15, But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate says to them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

11:7-14 *The Good Shepherd Feeds the Flock* (Beauty and Bands, at Christ's 1st Coming)

(24) ⁷ And I will feed the flock of slaughter, [even] you, O poor of the flock. And I took to Me ^a two staves; the one I called Beauty, and the other I called Bands; and I fed the flock. ⁸ ^b Three shepherds also I cut off in one month; and My soul loathed them, and their soul also abhorred Me. ⁹ Then said I, I will not feed you: that that dies, let it die; and that that is to be cut off, let it be cut off; and let the rest eat everyone the flesh of another. ¹⁰ And I took My staff, [even] Beauty, and cut it asunder, that I might break My covenant which I had made with all the people. ¹¹ And it was broken in that day: and so the poor of the flock that waited upon Me knew that it was the word of the LORD. ¹² And I said unto them, If ye think good, give [Me] My price; and if not, forbear. So **they weighed for My price thirty [pieces] of silver.** ¹³ And the LORD said unto me, **Cast it to the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty [pieces] of silver, and cast them to the potter in the house of the LORD.** ¹⁴ Then I cut asunder My other staff, [even] Bands, that I might break the brotherhood between Judah and Israel.

^a The 2 staves beauty and bands foretell the purpose of the Good Shepherd. Beauty is his love for the world and Bands is his union or covenant with Israel (Romans 9-11, Hosea, this is the conditional Old Covenant). Beauty also relates to Song of Songs when the woman says the king is "altogether lovely", foretelling the relationship of the believer with the Lord Jesus. Today we have greater promises as spoken in 1 Corinthians 10, Hebrews and 1 Peter 1. The beauty and bands still are part of Christ's nature for us and in us today.

^b Priests, Pharisees, and Sadducees.

Note: vs 13, Judas sold Jesus for the price of a cheap slave. Vs 14, Rome scattered Israel in 70 AD.

**11:15-17 *The Wicked Shepherd Leaves the Flock*
(Anti-christ during tribulation before Christ's 2nd Coming)**

(25) ¹⁵ And the LORD said to me, Take to you yet the instruments of a foolish shepherd. ¹⁶ For, look, I will raise up a shepherd in the land, [which] shall not visit those that be cut off, neither shall seek the young one, nor heal that that is broken, nor feed that that stands still: but he shall eat the flesh of the fat, and tear their claws in pieces. ¹⁷ Woe to the idol shepherd that leaves the flock! the ^a sword [shall be] upon his arm, and upon his right eye: his arm shall be clean dried up, and his right eye shall be utterly darkened.

^a Revelation 13:3. The things this wicked shepherd does not do in verse 16 are a list of things a good shepherd should do.

Events Around the Messiah's Second Coming (12:1-14:21)

Jerusalem: chapter 12 – 11x, chapter 14 – 10 x. In that day: chapter 12 – 7x, chapter 14 – 7x.

Zechariah Chapter 12

Jerusalem During the Great Tribulation and Battle of Armageddon

12:1-4 **1st – Our Identity or Birthright** (Romans 6:1-3)

(26) ¹ The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, says the LORD, which stretches forth the heavens, and lays the foundation of the earth, and forms the spirit of man within him. ² **Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling to all the people round about,** when they shall be in the siege both against Judah [and] against Jerusalem. ³ And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it. ⁴ In that day, says the LORD, I will smite every horse with astonishment, and his rider with madness: and I will open My eyes upon the house of Judah, and will smite every horse of the people with blindness.

^a This must be understood to be in God's timing. Testimony of when Jonathan Edwards walked into the factory or when he preached "Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God."

12:5-10a **2nd – Our Power from Above** (Romans 6:4-10)

(27) ⁵ And the governors of Judah shall say in their heart, The inhabitants of Jerusalem [shall be] my strength in the LORD of hosts their God. ⁶ In that day will I make the governors of Judah like a hearth of fire among the wood, and like a torch of fire in a sheaf; and they shall devour all the people round about, on the right hand and on the left: and Jerusalem shall be inhabited again in her own place, [even] in Jerusalem. ⁷ The LORD also shall save the tents of Judah first, that the glory of the house of David and the glory of the inhabitants of Jerusalem do not magnify [themselves] against Judah. ⁸ In that day shall the LORD defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David [shall be] as God, as the angel of the LORD before them. ⁹ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem. ¹⁰ And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, **the spirit of grace and of supplications:**

12:10b-14 **4th – Your Godly Sorrow** (Romans 6:11-13a)

(28) and they shall look upon Me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for Him, as one mourns for [his] only [son], and shall be in bitterness for Him, as one that is in bitterness for [his] firstborn. ¹¹ In that day shall there be a great mourning in Jerusalem, as the mourning of Hadadrimmon in the valley of ^a Megiddon. ¹² And the land shall ^b mourn, every family apart; the family of the house of David apart, and their wives apart; the family of the house of Nathan apart, and their wives apart; ¹³ The family of the house of Levi apart, and their wives apart; the family of Shimei apart, and their wives apart; ¹⁴ All the families that remain, every family apart, and their wives apart.

^a 2 Chronicles 35:20-24 where King Josiah fought King Necho of Egypt and was killed due to not obeying Necho.

^b David-king, Nathan-prophet, Levi-priest, Shimei-teacher.

13:1 **5th – Cleansing of the People** (Romans 6:13b-15)

^{13:1} In that day there shall be a **fountain opened** to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem **for sin and for uncleanness.**

Zechariah Chapter 13 *The Reign of Jesus Christ on the Earth for 1000 years*

13:2-5 **6th – Your Righteousness** (*Romans 6:16-18*) "sin onto death"

(29) ² And it shall come to pass in that day, says the LORD of hosts, [that] I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land. ³ And it shall come to pass, [that] when any shall yet prophesy, then his father and his mother that begat him shall say to him, You shall not live; for you speak lies in the name of the LORD: and his father and his mother that begat him shall thrust him through when he prophesies. ⁴ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the prophets shall be ashamed every one of his vision, when he has prophesied; neither shall they wear a rough garment to deceive: ⁵ But he shall say, I [am] no prophet, I [am] a husbandman; for man taught me to keep cattle from my youth.

The Great Tribulation

13:6-9 **7th – Your Works of Silver and Gold** (*Romans 6:19-23*) "made free from sin"

(30) ⁶ And [one] shall say to him, What are these wounds in your hands? Then he shall answer, [Those] with which I was wounded [in] the house of my friends. ⁷ ^a Awake, O sword, against My shepherd, and against the man [that is] My fellow, says the LORD of hosts: smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn My hand upon the little ones. ⁸ And it shall come to pass, [that] in all the land, says the LORD, two parts therein shall be cut off [and] die; but the third shall be left therein. ⁹ And **I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: they shall call on My name, and I will hear them: I will say, It is My people: and they shall say, The LORD is my God.**

^a Another split prophecy of Christ's 1st coming (6-7) and 2nd (8-9) coming to earth.

Zechariah Chapter 14 *The Battle of Armageddon in the Great Tribulation*

14:1-2 **8th – Our Need** (*Romans 7:1-3a*) "saints can be married to the works of the law"

(31) ¹ Behold, the day of the LORD comes, and your spoil shall be divided in the midst of you. ² For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city.

The Return of Jesus Christ

14:3-5 **9th - His Return to Earth** (*Romans 7:3b*) "saints can be married to the works of Christ"

³ Then shall the LORD go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle. ⁴ **And his feet shall stand in that day upon the ^a mount of Olives**, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, [and there shall be] a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south. ⁵ And ye shall flee [to] the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach to Azal: yes, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the LORD my God shall come, [and] all the saints with You.

^a The only time this place is called the Mount of Olives is in the Old Testament.

The Reign of Jesus Christ

14:6-11 **10th - His Light and Life** (*Romans 7:4-6*) "saints can serve in the newness of life"

(32) ⁶ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] the light shall not be clear, [nor] dark: ⁷ But it shall be one day which shall be known to the LORD, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, [that] **at evening time it shall be light.** ⁸ **And it shall be in that day, [that] living waters shall go out from Jerusalem;** half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be. ⁹ And the LORD shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one. ¹⁰ All the land shall be turned as a plain from Geba to Rimmon south of Jerusalem: and it shall be lifted up, and inhabited in her place, from Benjamin's gate to the place of the first gate, to the corner gate, and [from] the tower of Hananeel to the king's winepresses. ¹¹ And [men] shall dwell in it, and there shall be no more utter destruction; but **Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited.**

Zechariah Chapter 14

The Battle of the Great Tribulation

14:12-15 **11th - His Justice** (Romans 7:7-25) "saints can serve in the works of the flesh"

¹² And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. ¹³ And it shall come to pass in that day, [that] a great tumult from the LORD shall be among them; and they shall lay hold everyone on the hand of his neighbor, and his hand shall rise up against the hand of his neighbor. ¹⁴ And Judah also shall fight at Jerusalem; and the wealth of all the heathen round about shall be gathered together, gold, and silver, and apparel, in great abundance. ¹⁵ And so shall be the plague of the horse, of the mule, of the camel, and of the donkey, and of all the beasts that shall be in these tents, as this plague.

Note: A reference to the neutron bomb that dissolves flesh but does not harm structures. It also dissipates nuclear energy quickly after the explosion. The works of the flesh in the New Testament shall be burnt with fire at the Judgment Seat of Christ, hence saved as by fire or lack of reward. In the Old Testament we see the outward relation of a nation and the New Testament we see the inward relation of an individual in the body of Christ.

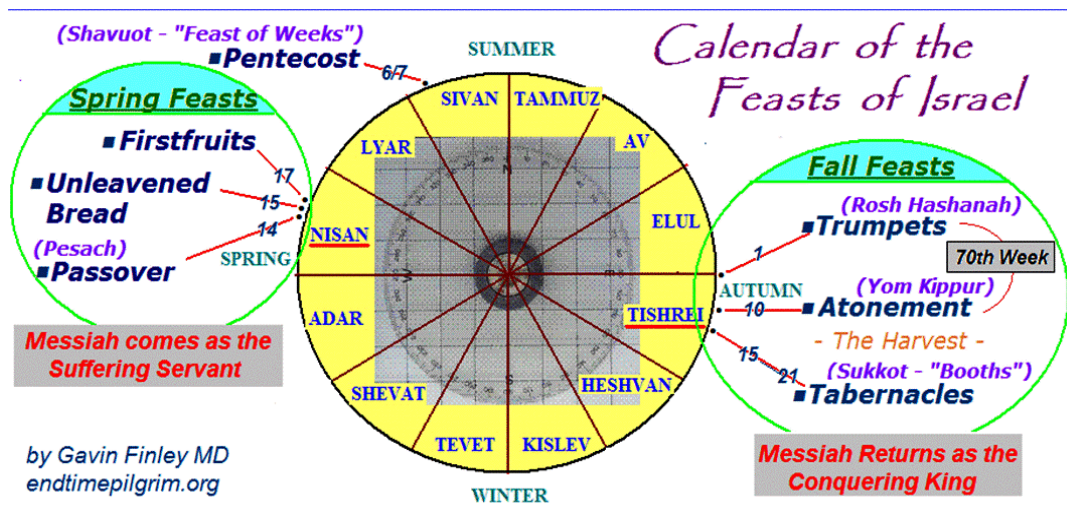
Zechariah Chapter 14 *The Reign and Worship of Jesus Christ during His 1000 Year Reign on Earth*

14:16-21 **12th - National Obedience and Individual Holiness** (Romans 8:1-8:17a, 1 Cor 13:12)

(33) ¹⁶ And it shall come to pass, [that] everyone that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, and to keep the ^a feast of tabernacles. ¹⁷ And it shall be, [that] whoso will not come up of [all] the families of the earth to Jerusalem to worship the King, the LORD of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain. ¹⁸ And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that [have] no [rain]; there shall be the plague, wherewith the LORD will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. ¹⁹ This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles. ²⁰ ^b In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, **HOLINESS TO THE LORD**; and the pots in the LORD'S house shall be like the bowls before the altar. ²¹ Yes, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be **holiness to the LORD of hosts**: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and boil therein: and in that day there shall be no more the Canaanite in the house of the LORD of hosts.

^a The feast of Booths or Tabernacles celebrated the provisions and redemption of Israel from Egyptian slavery. Strangers were welcome to participate (Leviticus 23:34-43). This feast is the last of seven and last of the three when all Israel celebrated yearly. It is a time of thankful rejoicing (Nehemiah 8:17). The Apostle Peter had the same idea when he desired to make three tabernacles or booths (Luke 9:33). At this time, this feast will be fulfilled in prophecy.

^b Holiness is practiced in civil life (the bells of the horses), in religious life (the pots in the LORD'S house, and in private life (every pot in Jerusalem). Lesson for today: Everyday things are holy when used for God's service.



Malachi (4-10, 11 min) 2022

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book**

1 2 3 4

Malachi = Messenger

12 Ways to be Shamed

Purpose: To instruct believers on the how the acts of life bring shame or honor; here and now, and forever.

Key verse: I am the Lord, I do not change. 3:6

Background: See book of Zechariah. At the same time period or before Nehemiah 13. It seems like there was no civil leader or Governor Nehemiah was absent in Assyria at this time, since he found the same disobedience when he returned.

I bring shame to myself and to / from God when I:

Scripture

Rebuke to the priesthood (elders / pastors) 1:1-2:10

- | | |
|---|------|
| 1) say, Wherein have you loved <i>me</i> ? | 1:2 |
| 2) say, Wherein have <i>I</i> despised your name? | 1:6 |
| 3) say, The table of the LORD is contemptible. | 1:7 |
| 4) say, The table of the LORD is polluted; and the fruit thereof, [even] his meat, is contemptible. | 1:12 |
| 5) say, Behold, what a weariness [is it]! and I have snuffed at it, | 1:13 |
| 6) will not hear, and I will not take it to heart | 2:2 |
| 7) deal treacherously against <i>my</i> brother, by profaning the covenant | 2:10 |

Rebuke to the people of Judah (believers) 2:11-3:15

- | | |
|---|------|
| 8) say, Wherefore? (for what reason) | 2:14 |
| 9) say, Wherein have <i>I</i> wearied [him]? | 2:17 |
| 10) say, Wherein shall <i>I</i> return? | 3:7 |
| 11) say, Wherein have <i>I</i> robbed thee? | 3:8 |
| 12) say, What have <i>I</i> spoken [so much] against you? | 3:13 |

<u>Similarities of</u>	Malachi	to	Nehemiah
Priestly sin	1:6		13:4-9
Neglect of tithes	3:7-12		13:10-13
Marriage with foreigners	2:10-16		13:23-28

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Malachi 1:9	Supplication	God's favor & grace	Blemished offering		Priests

Today's application: 2 Timothy 2:19-20 (19-26) Let everyone that names the name of Christ depart from iniquity: in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; some to honor and some to dishonor.

12 Ways to be Honored

Scripture**I bring honor to myself and to / from God when I:****Direction to the priesthood (elders / pastors)****1:1-2:10**

- 1) Honor heavenly father more than earthly father? Fear heavenly master more than earthly master? 1:6
- 2) Pray without ceasing and live a holy life 1:11c
- 3) Have life and peace because I fear and reverence God 2:5
- 4) Always say truth, practice justice, walk in peace and fairness, and turn many away from iniquity 2:6
- 5) Keep knowledge with my lips, and speak law that people seek as a messenger of the Lord of hosts 2:7

Direction to the people of Judah (believers)**2:11-3:15**

- 6) Allow the Lord to refine and purify me as gold and silver, by trials, so I may make an offering of Righteousness 3:3
- 7) Offer myself as a sweet-smelling sacrifice to the Lord, which is pleasant (Romans 12:1-3) 3:4
- 8) Fear God, so he can come near me for judgment and be a swift witness against the wicked 3:5
- 9) Fear the LORD and speak often one to another: and the LORD listens, and hears 3:16
- 9) Discern between the righteous and wicked,
between one who serves God and one who does not serve Him 3:18
- 10) Fear His name, the Sun of Righteousness shall arise . . . 4:2

Direction to learn from the past with hope for the future**4:4-6**

- 11) Remember the Law of Moses (Christ), My servant (Son) (Romans 7-8) 4:4
- 12) See Christ turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse. (Cure for curse in Matthew 1) 4:6

Daniel 12:2-3 And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars forever and ever.

Other passages: Past, Genesis 1-3 honor then shame. Future, Rev 4-5, honor (crowns) or shame (lack of crowns) relates to the tree for the healing of nations in the New Jerusalem in Revelation 22:1-5.

Today's application: 2 Timothy 2:21-22 (19-26) If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honor, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, prepared unto every good work. Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. Romans 14 Honor one another. 1 Cor 9:27 We run a race.

Same sins: Malachi 3:8, 9; cf. Nehemiah 13:10-12; Malachi 2:11-16; cf. Nehemiah 13:23-27.

Unfortunately, Nehemiah's second term as governor cannot be dated, which fact makes it also somewhat difficult to date Malachi. Nehemiah's first term lasted from 444 to 432 B.C. (chapter 5:14), after which he was recalled to Persia. There, he spent an unknown number of years before his return to Judea and his discovery of the abuses described in chapter 13. These were remedied by the vigorous actions of the governor. This leads us to conclude that Malachi's work may have followed Nehemiah's first term as governor, but preceded his return to Jerusalem from the Persian capital. Accordingly, the book can probably be dated about 425 B.C.

Malachi Chapter 1

1:1-5 **God's Unconditional Love for Nation of Israel** (look up)

(1) ¹ The burden of the word of the LORD to Israel by Malachi. ² **I have loved you,** says the LORD. Yet ye say, Wherein have You loved us? [Was] not Esau Jacob's brother? says the LORD: yet I loved Jacob, ³ And I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste for the dragons of the wilderness. ⁴ Whereas Edom says, We are impoverished, but we will return and build the desolate places; thus says the LORD of Hosts, They shall build, but I will throw down; and they shall call them, The border of wickedness, and, The people against whom the LORD has indignation forever. ⁵ And your eyes shall see, and ye shall say, **The LORD will be magnified from the border of Israel.**

Note: vs 1 burden is a heavy weight or judgment. Vs 2 I have loved you is a "perfect past action" that does not change (Malachi 3:6). I loved Jacob and hated Esau, Romans 9:13, Hebrews 11:20. Vs 4, Esau – Edomites – Herodian dynasty. See [Obadiah](#).

1:6-14 **Priests Offer Unacceptable Sacrifices** (look within)

(2) ⁶ A son honors [his] father, and a servant his master: if then I [be] a father, where is My honor? and if I [be] a master, where is My fear? says the LORD of hosts unto you, **O priests,** that despise My name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised Your name? ⁷ **Ye offer polluted bread upon My altar;** and ye say, Wherein have we polluted you? In that ye say, The table of the LORD is contemptible. ⁸ And **if ye offer the blind for sacrifice, [is it] not evil? and if ye offer the lame and sick, [is it] not evil? offer it now to your governor; will he be pleased with you, or accept your person?** says the LORD of hosts. ⁹ And now, I pray you, beseech God that He will be gracious unto us: this has been by your means: will He regard your persons? says the LORD of hosts. ¹⁰ Who [is there] even among you that would shut the doors [for nothing]? neither do ye kindle [fire] on My altar for nothing. I have no pleasure in you, says the LORD of hosts, **neither will I accept an offering at your hand.** ¹¹ For from the rising of the sun even to the going down of the same My name [shall be] great among the Gentiles; and in every place incense [shall be] offered to My name, and a pure offering: for My name [shall be] great among the heathen, says the LORD of hosts. ¹² But ye have profaned it, in that ye say, The table of the LORD is polluted; and the fruit thereof, [even] His meat, is contemptible. ¹³ Ye said also, Behold, what a weariness [is it]! and ye have snuffed at it, says the LORD of hosts; and ye brought [that which was] torn, and the lame, and the sick; thus ye brought an offering: should I accept this of your hand? says the LORD. ¹⁴ But cursed [be] the deceiver, which has in his flock a male, and vows, and sacrifices to the Lord a corrupt thing: for I [am] a great King, says the LORD of hosts, and My name is dreadful among the heathen.

Note: vs 7, "polluted" bread (Ez 2:62, Neh 7:64, Is 59:3, 63:3, Lam 4:14, Dan 1:8). vs 11 & 14b, prophetic for the Gentiles and heathen (John 3:1-36); we must offer excellent offerings to our God.

Malachi Chapter 2:1-9 **Priests are Cursed for not Fearing the LORD of Hosts** (look within)

(3) ¹ And now, O **ye priests,** this commandment is for you. ² If ye will not hear, and if ye will **not lay [it] to heart, to give glory to My name,** says the LORD of hosts, I will even send a curse upon you, and I will curse your blessings: yes, I have cursed them already, because **ye do not lay [it] to heart.** ³ Behold, I will corrupt your seed, and spread dung upon your faces, [even] the dung of your solemn feasts; and [one] shall take you away with it. ⁴ And ye shall know that I have sent this commandment unto you, that My covenant might be with Levi, says the LORD of hosts. ⁵ My covenant was with him of life and peace; and I gave them to him [for] the fear wherewith he feared Me, and was afraid before My name. ⁶ The law of truth was in his mouth, and iniquity was not found in his lips: he walked with Me in peace and **equity,** and did turn many away from iniquity. ⁷ For **the priest's lips should keep knowledge, and they should seek the law at his mouth: for he is the messenger of the LORD of Hosts.** ⁸ But ye are departed out of the way; ye have caused many to stumble at the law; ye have corrupted the covenant of Levi, says the LORD of hosts. ⁹ Therefore I have also made you contemptible and base before all the people, according as ye have not kept My ways, but have been partial in the law.

Note: Sins of irreverence, disobedience, cynicism, hypocrisy, offense. Believer priests (1 Peter 2:5, 9). Vs 7, equity is uprightness of the individual per God's law; not as defined today as equal outcome.

Malachi Chapter 2

2:10-17 *Priests and People Marry Foreigners and Break Marriage Vows* (look around)

(4) ¹⁰ Have we not all one father? has not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers? ¹¹ Judah has dealt treacherously, and an abomination is committed in Israel and in Jerusalem; for Judah has profaned the holiness of the LORD which he loved, and has married the daughter of a strange god. ¹² The LORD will cut off the man that does this, **the master and the scholar**, out of the tabernacles of Jacob, and him that offers an offering unto the LORD of hosts. ¹³ And this have ye done again, **covering the altar of the LORD with tears, with weeping, and with crying out, insomuch that he regards not the offering anymore, or receives [it] with good will at your hand.** ¹⁴ Yet ye say, Wherefore? Because the LORD has been witness between you and the wife of your youth, against whom you have dealt treacherously: yet is she your companion, and the wife of your covenant. ¹⁵ And did not he make one? **Yet had he the residue of the spirit.** And wherefore one? That he might seek a godly seed. Therefore **take heed to your spirit**, and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth. ¹⁶ For the LORD, the God of Israel, says that he hates putting away: for [one] covers violence with his garment, says the LORD of hosts: **therefore take heed to your spirit, that ye deal not treacherously.** ¹⁷ Ye have wearied the LORD with your words. Yet ye say, Wherein have we wearied [Him]? When ye say, **Every one that does evil is good in the sight of the LORD, and He delights in them;** or, Where is the God of judgment?

Malachi Chapter 3

3:1-6 *The Coming Messenger (1a), Jesus (1b), and Christ (2-6)* (look forward)

(5) ¹ Behold, I will send My messenger, and he shall prepare the way before Me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, says the LORD of Hosts. ² But who may abide the day of His coming? and who shall stand when He appears? For He is like a refiner's fire, and like fullers' soap: ³ And He shall sit [as] a refiner and purifier of silver: and **He shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.** ⁴ Then shall the offering of Judah and Jerusalem be pleasant unto the LORD, as in the days of old, and as in former years. ⁵ **And I will come near to you to judgment; and I will be a swift witness against the sorcerers, and against the adulterers, and against false swearers, and against those that oppress the hireling in [his] wages, the widow, and the fatherless, and that turn aside the stranger [from his right], and fear not Me,** says the LORD of hosts. ⁶ **For I [am] the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.**

Note: vs 1a, John the baptizer (Isaiah 40:3-5, Matthew 11:10, Mark 1:2, and Luke 7:27), 1b, Jesus at the temple from birth to Matthew 24-25), vs 2-6, as King at His 2nd coming to Israel.

"if you are enabled by faith to take Christ as a Savior, remember that you take him as the purger and the purifier, for it is from sin that he saves us." (Spurgeon)

3:7-12 *Past Polluted Pattern of Israel (7-9, 1:6-2:17) and Future Return of Israel (10-12)*

(6) ⁷ Even from the days of your fathers ye are gone away from My ordinances, and have not kept them. Return unto Me, and I will return unto you, says the LORD of hosts. **But ye said, Wherein shall we return?** ⁸ **Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed Me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed you? In tithes and offerings.** ⁹ Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed Me, [even] this whole nation.

¹⁰ **Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in My house, and prove Me now herewith, says the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that [there shall] not [be room] enough [to receive it].** ¹¹ And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes, and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine cast her fruit before the time in the field, says the LORD of hosts. ¹² And all nations shall call you blessed: for ye shall be a **delightful land**, says the LORD of hosts.

Note: As the religious leaders go the people go. Then the priests were the religious leaders, today the pastors, ministers, or several other titles are the religious leaders. After the 3 ½ years of tribulation.

Malachi Chapter 3

3:13-15 **Present Wickedness of Israel** (look within as the LORD sees Israel as a Nation)

(7) ¹³ Your words have been stout against Me, says the LORD. Yet ye say, What have we spoken [so much] against You? ¹⁴ Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit [is it] that we have kept His ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts? ¹⁵ And now we call the proud happy; yes, they that work wickedness are set up; yes, [they that] tempt God are even delivered.

Note: This judgment applies to the nation of Israel then, now in their blindness, and future during the first 3 ½ years of the tribulation.

3:16-4:6 **Directions for God's People** (look ahead – prophetic and written)

(8) ¹⁶ **Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD listened, and heard [it], and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon His name.** ¹⁷ And they shall be mine, says the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up My jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spares his own son that serves him. ¹⁸ **Then shall ye return, and discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serves God and him that serves him not.**

Note: Book of remembrance is for those of Israel and the gentiles saved during the wrath of God after the rapture of the church (Rev 20:11-15). They shall return as a nation in the future and reign with Christ on the earth. This is a pattern for the revived or revival in any church age. There are many blessings for the elect in every dispensation as time continues according to the plan and sovereignty of God. To God be the glory.

Malachi Chapter 4

4:1-3 **Curse** (1, Rev 20:11-15) **and Blessing** (2-3, Rev 20:1-10) (look ahead – prophetic and written)

(9) ¹ For, behold, the day comes, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yes, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that comes shall burn them up, says the LORD of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. ² But unto you that fear My name shall the Sun of Righteousness arise with healing in His wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall. ³ And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do [this], says the LORD of hosts.

4:4-6 **Remember Past** (4, 3:7-9) **and look ahead** (5-6, 3:10-12, 1st and 2nd Coming of Jesus)

(10) ⁴ Remember ye the law of Moses My servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, [with] the statutes and judgments. ⁵ Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD: ⁶ And he shall turn the heart of the fathers unto the children, and the heart of the children unto their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.

Note: The 1st coming of Jesus is fulfilled by John the baptizer and Jesus birth, life, death, resurrection, and ascension. The 2nd coming or return of Jesus is in the future and will be fulfilled as written in the Scriptures as inspired and preserved by holy men of God.

Vs 4 Exodus 19-31 is when God gave Moses the Ten Commandment in Exodus 20, and other commandments for the people before they made the golden calf and he returned in Exodus 32.

Vs 5-6 Rev 11:3-5 ³ And I will give [power] unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred [and] threescore days, clothed in sackcloth. ⁴ These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth. ⁵ And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. See Rev 11:1-13 for fuller context.

"**TANAKH**" - an Acronym, based on the letters **T** (for "**T**orah"), **N** (for "**N**eviim," the Prophets), and **K** (for "**K**etuvim," the Sacred Writings). It is the compendium of the teachings of G-d to human beings in document form.

The Torah consists of [Genesis](#) [בראשית], [Exodus](#) [שמות], [Leviticus](#) [ויקרא], [Numbers](#) [במדבר], [Deuteronomy](#) [דברים]

The books of Nevi'im are: First [Joshua](#) [יהושע], [Judges](#) [שופטים], [Samuel](#) (I & II) [שמואל], [Kings](#) (I & II) [מלכים]

Later: [Isaiah](#) [ישעיה], [Jeremiah](#) [ירמיה], [Ezekiel](#) [יחזקאל], The Twelve Minor Prophets [תרי עשר] [Hosea](#) [הושע], [Joel](#) [יואל], [Amos](#) [עמוס], [Obadiah](#) [עובדיה], [Jonah](#) [יונה], [Micah](#) [מיכה], [Nahum](#) [נחום], [Habakkuk](#) [חבקוק], [Zephaniah](#) [צפניה], [Haggai](#) [חגי], [Zechariah](#) [זכריה], [Malachi](#) [מלאכי]

The Ketuvim are: [Psalms](#) [תהלים], [Proverbs](#) [משלי], [Job](#) [איוב], [Song of Songs](#) [שיר השירים], [Ruth](#) [רות], [Lamentations](#) [איכה], [Ecclesiastes](#) [קהלת], [Esther](#) [אסתר], [Daniel](#) [דניאל], [Ezra-Nehemiah](#) [עזרא ונחמיה], [Chronicles](#) (I & II) [דברי הימים]

Traditionally Leviticus is the first book taught to Jewish children, and over half of the commentary of the Talmud is concerned with understanding its contents.

A Concealed Trilogy in the 39 Books of the Old Testament

Several groups of three are revealed in the New Testament such as: Man is spirit, soul and body (1 Thes 5:23); God in water baptism as the Father, Son and Holy Spirit (Matthew 28:19), in time as: past, present and future (Revelation 1:4) and three days and nights – the time Jonah was in the fishes belly and Jesus was in the grave before His resurrection. Jesus was tempted three times (Luke 4:3-10). Three is a number of divine perfection. My intrigue is to present a perspective that groups of three are concealed in the design and order of the 66 books of the canonized Bible in a pattern and order that fit the nature of the God. The primary underlying two currents in this macro view of the Old Testament are the three stages of the believer's life – baby, young man and father as taught in 1 John 2:12-14; mingled with the three the categories of people: natural, carnal, or spiritual explained in 1 Corinthians 2:12 – 3:1 . We can have eyes that see the shadows of the Old Testament given substance in Jesus Christ and the intended design for the saints inner man and holy living (1 Corinthians 10:1-10 and 1 Peter 1:10-20).

Old Testament (39 books – Three groups: The Law, the Prophets, and the Writings)

Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy

Genesis to Deuteronomy, the first set of five books written by Moses, called the "Law" contains 613 commandments in 4 categories: ceremonial, civil, dietary, and moral. The moral laws are the 10 commandments which are central to all the rest, and still is according to Romans 8:4 in the context of the spiritual laws detailed in Romans 1 – 8:17a. The exception being the 4th commandment concerning the Sabbath, which is not repeated in the New Testament because Christ is our Sabbath (Hebrews 4). Man has named the law of Moses Torah in Hebrew and Septuagint in Greek. Chuck Missler has an insightful interpretation of the law when he teaches how Leviticus is the third book which the other two point toward from both directions (2 + 1 + 2 = 5). The beginning of the concealed trilogy is in the calling of Israel, in our Father Abraham. Continued with deliverance by Moses, and the wilderness wanderings as a nation. These represent our individual calling and faith as Abraham, repentance from sin and birth into the new life as a baby, like Moses' deliverance from the bondage of slavery, and subsequent childhood in the wilderness. The best character illustration of how go from the wilderness into a spiritual young man stage of life is in the life of Jacob when he wrestled with the angel all night to receive the blessing God intended for him. This experience of Jacob leads us to the first of our next set of three books, Joshua.

Joshua, Judges & Ruth

The trilogy of Joshua, Judges and Ruth pick up after a while as we grow in childhood and our first love fades away into a time of wilderness wanderings, until crossing our Jordan River to battle and takeover our promised land as Joshua did. This accurately foretells the young man stage of the believer's life in agreement with Romans 6 sanctification truths. Even at this point we see some defeats like Ai and eventually to our dismay we find ourselves not doing what we should and doing what we should not because we are walking after the flesh, similar to the period of Judges when God's people did what was right in their own eyes. This is parallel to Romans 7 when we are caught up in the works of the law (or religion) and not growing in our personal relationship with Jesus. Finally, through time, diligence and experience we become spiritual fathers, resting in God's providence and sovereignty which is wonderfully illustrated in the story of Ruth and confirmed in Romans 8. In summary, reaching back into the Law and going forth into Joshua, Judges and Ruth with the nation of Israel is fulfilled in our sanctification revealed in Romans 6 through 8, extending into Romans 9 through 11.

Let's continue to the united kingdom of Israel with Kings Saul, David and Solomon. In Hebrew writings these six books are only three, and I think there is no harm in merging them. Saul represents the carnal man who is not called, but allowed by God to fill the position of king. He is followed by David, who represents the spiritual believer, is called of God and is a man after God's own heart, except for the period of time in his upper forties when pride and self took over. Even in his terrible sins he repented and was forgiven, yet sorrowful earthly consequences. Third is Solomon, who represents the carnal believer, who began his life right and full of wisdom, but gave himself over to foolishness unto the end of his life. The kings that follow Solomon in the division of Judah and Israel are covered in the Minor Prophets later.

Ezra, Nehemiah & Esther

These three historical books describe the time of return to Jerusalem from Babylonian and Persian captivity. Ezra the scribe loved the Scriptures and brought the law of Moses back to real application to Israel. He also wrote Psalm 1, probably Psalm 119 and possibly more books as told by Hebrew sages. Ezra represents the baby believer in their first love with the Scriptures. Next we see how Nehemiah was distressed when he saw Jerusalem in its sad condition in Nehemiah chapter 1. We must see ourselves, the walls and gates of our lives as needing rebuilding to continue growing from spiritual childhood into a young man who has the good hand of God on him to work as Nehemiah rebuilt the walls and gates of the city of Jerusalem; fighting the battle within his own people and without from other nations. Finally, Esther completes this trilogy in a similar pattern as Ruth does during the rise of Israel, resting in God's providence and sovereignty. Again we see the pattern of Joshua, Judges and Ruth in a later time period. Is this coincidence or by design a second witness of a truth concealed in the Old Testament and revealed in the New Testament?

Another triune way of looking at these three books is demonstrated in a previous article I wrote on the doctrine of "Languages in the Book of Acts and 1 Corinthians" which had 3 versions: the Ezra edition which was light duty, the Nehemiah edition was heavy duty where one gets down and dirty in the details and battle, holding back nothing and the Esther edition which was simple and straight forward. The audience would determine which version to use.

Job, Psalms & Daniel

These three wondrous, timeless and comprehensive books of the Old Testament must begin with Job, the first book of the Bible, penned before Moses wrote Genesis. Job's trust in God, personal righteousness and dialogue with his four friends are as real today for us in Christ as it was then. Next are the Psalms which address all the emotions of life from the most depressed to most joyful and everything in between. Psalms, the first book published on the Gutenberg Press, also presents the longest chapter which happens to be in the center of the Bible; Psalm 119. Thirdly in time and content is Daniel in his exemplary personal character, and detailed, yet wide and far reaching prophecies, ultimately fulfilled in the last book of the Bible - Revelation. All three are full of examples and very beneficial for the spiritually growing believer today.

Proverbs, Ecclesiastes & Song of Songs

Song of Songs is first not last in the youth of Solomon, an amazing love story depicting a glorious king growing in love with a lowly farm woman of the field. This compares wonderfully with the growing love relationship that individual believers have with the glorious king Jesus Christ. Maybe at the same time and in years that follow Solomon gives us a wisdom which even surpasses Job and his four friends. Proverbs 31 chapters is convenient to read one chapter a day. Lastly is Ecclesiastes written after Solomon has allowed his first love with the Shulamite woman to be replaced with many women who worship other Gods and weaken him in time to become a foolish man he warned against in Proverbs.

Isaiah, Jeremiah / Lamentations & Ezekiel

The grandeur of Isaiah prophesying of the tree of judgment falling down on Judah with the background forest of Jesus Christ's first and second coming. His book has some divine math in structure as the first 39 chapters focus on the holy character of God in the Old Testament - which has 39 books; followed by 27 chapters focus on the loving character of God in the New Testament - which has 27 books. Next is the longest book of the Bible after Psalms - Jeremiah. The self revealing stories of Jeremiah in Jerusalem just before and during the destruction and captivity to Babylon give us strength and hope in the midst of rejection as people around us do not listen or care about the Word of the LORD. Lamentations is appropriate for soon after the fall of Jerusalem in 586 B.C. Then during exile Ezekiel does some very strange living illustrations revealing God's plan in future things for the nation of Israel, of which we are temporarily grafted into as the unnatural vine. While Ezekiel was in the country, Daniel was in the King's palace. Daniel serves as a link between the larger and smaller books of the prophets. All three of these holy men give hope to the spiritually growing believer today. Only for the size of the books are these prophets first and separate from the following twelve. Is this because God knows our limited minds and by keeping the larger books first is probably best for us?

Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah, Malachi

These are referred to as the 12 Minor Prophets, being minor in only that they are shorter books. We can learn a lot of what not to do during this time of the divided kingdom. Judah is most applicable to the spiritually growing believer in the New Testament. Why? Because the promise of the Messiah were to the tribe of Judah, Jerusalem the city of peace and the temple of God we can closely identify in many types and figures concealed in the old and revealed to the New Testament believer. Israel applies to the carnal believer and the make-believer, often hard to distinguish one from the other. Examples are the traditional churches that depend on their ancestors and traditions for in a false or watered-down salvation. The surrounding nations represent the natural man in Adam, never experiencing the new life in Christ. These three groups are clearly divided in Amos, chapters 1 and 2. The written exception of the nations is Jonah and the revival in Nineveh, which lasted around 100 years. Breaking the prophets into chronological and geographical order helps simplify their perceived complexity.

Divided Kingdom

Israel

Elijah-Elisha
Hosea - Amos
Amos

Judah

Joel
Micah - *Isaiah*
Zephaniah - Habakkuk - *Jeremiah*

Exile

Ezekiel
Daniel

Return

Haggai
Zechariah
Malachi

Nations

Jonah – Nahum (Assyrians - Nineveh)
Obadiah (Edomites)

My conclusion is that God's design and intent for the believer in Christ is to enter into the fullness of the blessing of God as Paul prayed for in Ephesians 1:15-23 and 3:14-21. We are compelled but not forced; we have choices to make that determine our present and eternal rewards at the judgment seat of Christ. Our understanding of these spiritual growth truths must be experienced personally before we can clearly instruct other believers. How complete your understanding and practice of your sanctification will determine if you are walking after the flesh and a carnal believer or walking after the Spirit and a spiritual believer. May each believer enter into His rest and entire sanctification: to never fall, be fruitful and have an abundant entry into the kingdom of heaven as the Apostle Peter knew true for his life and continually reminded others in 1 Peter chapter 1. My prayer is that this trilogy concealed in the Old Testament is more clearly revealed to the reader to help them understand and appropriate these truths to experience in their personal walk with God.

New Testament

[New Testament Gems](#)

Bible TOC

Appendix: The New Testament reveals the Old Testament in major undercurrents, key text are Matthew 5-7 and Romans 6-8. To continue and fulfill from where we left the concealed trilogy of the Old Testament we see the * spiritual, carnal, and natural man as taught in 1 Corinthians 2:14-3:1, in a majority of the New Testament books as the following outlines.

Matthew, Mark & Luke / Acts

These three gospels may be harmonized or separated into the character of the Lion, Ox and Man.

John, 1-2-3 John, & Revelation 1-3

* Revelation 2-3 to the seven churches – 2 carnal, 2 spiritual and 3 both carnal and spiritual

Romans, Philippians & Colossians

* faithful and "spiritually" growing assemblies of believers (focus on earth)

Ephesians, 1 Thessalonians & 2 Thessalonians

* faithful and "spiritually" growing assemblies of believers (focus on heaven)

1-2 Timothy, Titus & Philemon

* faithful and "spiritually" growing individual believers

1 Corinthians, Galatians & Hebrews

(1 Corinthians 3:1 – love of this world, Galatians 1:6 and Hebrews 5:12 – works of the flesh)

* unfaithful and non-growing "carnal" assemblies of believers

2 Corinthians, James & 1 Peter

* I can't trilogize these three letters as a group, but as individual letters. 2 Corinthians will relate to 1 Corinthians as they change from carnal to spiritual believers in 2 Corinthians 7. James helps us grow into spiritual believers while 1 Peter helps us continue as spiritual believers.

2 Peter, Jude & Revelation 4-21

* exhortation to continue on and warning of the influence of false teachers – "natural" men.

It is interesting and an amazing balance how 2 Peter and Jude are just before 1, 2 and 3 John and Revelation.

Compared to the Old Testament 1 Corinthians 10:6, 11-15

<u>Old</u>	verses	<u>New</u>
Outward	vs	Inward
Physical	vs	Spiritual
Temporary	vs	Eternal
Grace	vs	Grace abundant, 1 Timothy 1:14 Full of grace & truth, John 1:14 (Not law vs grace)
Nation	vs	Individual
(body of Christ (Bride) united with head when he returns as the Bridegroom)		
Heart hardened Mark 10:1-12, Hebrews 3:7-10	vs	Heart purified Acts 1:15, 1 Peter 1:22
Mystery, 27x (10 mysteries)	vs	Revealed

The Gospels

1. [Genealogy of Christ](#)
2. [John the Baptizer](#)
3. [Harmony of the Gospels](#)
4. [Seven Sayings on the Cross](#)
5. [Parables](#)
6. [Miracles](#)
7. [Comparative Overview of the Gospels](#)

Notes	Matthew 1 & Luke 3	Matthew 1 (Son of David)	Luke 3 (Son of Man)	Luke continued
<p>*1 Jeconiah repented and restored to blessing. (1) Weep for those in exile (Jer 21:10). (2) Jeconiah had several sons in Babylon (1 Chr 3:17-18). (3) The new king after Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon, 38 years later, Evil-Merodach released Jeconiah from prison and honored him more than his other kings (2 Ki 25:27-28). (4) Zerubbabel son of Shealtiel "I will make you like my signet ring, for I have chosen you," (Haggai 2:23). (5) And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel (Sheatiel); and Salathiel begat Zorobabel (Zerubbabel); (Mt 1:12).</p> <p>*2 Now this is interesting and shows us not to mess around with God's holiness. If you count the generations, from Joram to Uzziah there are three guys missing: Ahaziah, Joash and Amaziah! Ahaziah was called the son-in-law to the House of Jacob (2 Kgs 8) and slain by Jehu (2 Kgs 9). Joash was slain by the servants in 2 Kings 12 and Amaziah was slain by the people of Jerusalem in 2 Kings 14. Ahaziah, Joash, and Amaziah all died violent deaths. God was visiting them because of idolatry, and fulfilled the punishing of the 3rd and 4th generations (Ex 20:4-5). While you will find their records in the Old Testament, they are literally blotted out of the genealogy according to the Law (Deu 29:20), from God's Book of Remembrance. Thus these 3 names were blotted out of the 3 groups of 14 generations according to Saint Matthews account.</p> <p>*3 It is only here that women are mentioned in a genealogy. In Matthew's account we see 5 women mentioned (Tamar, Rahab, Ruth, Bathsheba and Mary). Two are gentiles, Rahab and Ruth, They are all mentioned in relation to child-bearing.</p> <p>*4 The 14 in Luke's account from Adam to Eber are my own opinion, not conviction. However Eber is called the founder of the Jewish race and lives when the division from the Tower of Babel occurred</p> <p>*5 Solomon's lineage was cut-off (see note *1). David's son Nathan was the lineage the promise of the seed of David was fulfilled with, through Mary.</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Abraham [Ishmael of Hagar] 2. Isaac [Jacob & Esau] 3. Jacob 4. Judah-Thamar*3 5. Pharez 6. Hezron 7. Ram 8. Amminadab 9. Nahshon 10. Salmon-Rahab*3 11. Boaz-Ruth*3 12. Obed 13. Jesse 14. David-her of Uriah*3 <p>Notes: Josiah-Jeremiah 19</p> <p>2nd son- Johoahaz 1st son - Johoiakim</p> <p>*1 Jehoachin Jeremiah 22:18-30 (3 month, 10 day reign, childless-no legal successor to throne)</p> <p>2 Zerubbabel and Josiah The two olive trees and the candlestick. Zechariah 4:1-11</p> <p>Zerubbabel rebuilt the temple after Nehemiah rebuilt the walls of Jerusalem. Read Haggai the prophet.</p>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. David 2. Solomon*5 3. Rehoboam 4. Abijah 5. Asa 6. Jehoshaphat 7. Jehoram 8. Uzziah 9. Jotham 10. Ahaz 11. Hezekiah 12. Manasseh 13. Amon 14. Josiah <p>Jehoiakim*1 70 yrs captivity to Babylon</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Jehoiachin*1 2. Salatheil 3. Zerubbabel 4. Abiud (great-great grandson of Zerubbabel?) 5. Eliakim 6. Azor 7. Sadoc 8. Achim 9. Eliud 10. Eleazar 11. Matthan 12. Jacob 13. (Joseph) husband of Mary*3 14. Jesus 	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Adam [Cain & Abel] 2. Seth 3. Enosh 4. Kenan 5. Mahalalel 6. Jared 7. Enoch 8. Methuselah 9. Lamech 10. Noah 11. Shem [Ham-Japeth] 12. Arphaxad 13. Salah 14. Eber <p>Peleg Reu Serug Nahor Terah</p> <p>David Nathan*5 Mattatha Menan Melea Eliakim Jonan</p> <p>Joseph Juda Simeon Levi Matthat Jorim Eliezer Jose Er Elmodam Cosam Addi Melchi Neri Salathiel Zerubbabel</p>	<p>Rhesa Joanna Juda Joseph Semei Mattathias Maath Nagge Esli Naum Amos Mattathias Joseph Janna Melchi Levi Matthat Heli MARY*3 (Mary's lineage) Jesus</p>

PART ONE: JOHN PROPHESED (in the Hebrew Bible)				
Behold I will send my messenger (John), and he shall prepare the way before me				Malachi 3:1a
Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the LORD: And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come and smite the earth with a curse.				Malachi 4:5-6
PART TWO: JOHN'S BIRTH (6 months before Jesus' birth)				
The angel of the Lord appears to Zacharias with the name John. (before birth, same with Joseph and Jesus, Mt 1:18-25)			Luke 1:5-25	
Elizabeth's prophecy about Jesus. (blessing, same with Mary and Jesus, Luke 1:46-56)			Luke 1:39-45	
The birth and youth of John. (grew physically and spiritually, same with Jesus, Lu 2:39-40)			Luke 1:57-80	
PART THREE: JOHN'S MINISTRY (John 64 times, John the Baptist 14 times, John baptizes/variant 8 times)				
Preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. The ax is laid at the root of the trees, fruit-fire. Law by Moses, grace & truth by Jesus.	Matthew 3:1-12	Mark 1:1-8	Luke 3:1-18	John 1:6-28
John baptizes Jesus in the Jordan River. Jesus prays and the Spirit descends like a dove. Jesus baptizes with the Holy Spirit.	Matthew 3:13-17	Mark 1:9-11	Luke 3:21-22	John 1:29-34
Make straight the way of the Lord. Behold the lamb of God, that takes away the sin of the world. Andrew & John follow Jesus.				John 1:35-42
The bride, bridegroom, & friend of the bridegroom. He must increase, but I must decrease. He that comes from heaven is above all.				John 3:22-36
PART FOUR: JOHN'S DEATH (imprisoned and martyred)				
John exposes Herod's sins of marriage with his brother Philip's wife and much wickedness. Herod Antipas puts John in prison.			Luke 3:19-20	
Jesus encourages & defends John. There is no greater man born of woman. The least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than John.	Matthew 11:2-19		Luke 7:18-35	
John is beheaded by Herod Antipas. Herod supposes Jesus is John raised from the dead. (Matthew 16:13-16, 17:10-13)	Matthew 14:1-12	Mark 6:14-29	Luke 9:7-9	
PART FIVE: JOHN'S DISCIPLES (continue)				
The disciples of John ask Jesus to teach them to pray as John taught his disciples.			Luke 11:1	
Twelve of John's disciples hear the gospel of God from Paul and are saved.			Acts 19:1-7	

Note: Elias = Elijah. Named in 19 New Testament passages - **Confusion 10x**, OT prophet 4x, **Triune prophet 3x**, John 2x.

PART ONE: THE PERIOD OF CHRIST'S LIFE PRIOR TO HIS MINISTRY.				
1. Luke's Preface and Dedication			Luke 1:1-4	
2. John's Introduction				John 1:1-18
3. Genealogy of Jesus According to Matthew	Mt 1:1-17			
4. Genealogy According to Luke			Luke 3:23-38	
5. Annunciation to Zacharias of the Birth of John the Baptist (At Jerusalem. Probably B.C. 6)			Luke 1:5-25	
6. Annunciation of the Birth of Jesus (At Nazareth, B.C. 5)			Luke 1:26-38	
7. Mary, Future Mother of Jesus, Visits Elisabeth, Future Mother of John the Baptist (In the Hill Country of Judea, B.C. 5)			Luke 1:39-56	
8. The Birth and Early Life of John the Baptist (Hill Country of Judea, B.C. 5)			Luke 1:57-80	
9. Annunciation to Joseph of the Birth of Jesus (At Nazareth, B.C. 5)	Mt 1:18-25			
10. The Birth of Jesus (At Bethlehem of Judea, B.C. 5)			Luke 2:1-7	
11. The Birth of Jesus Proclaimed by Angels to the Shepherds (Near Bethlehem, B.C. 5)			Luke 2:8-20	
12. Circumcision, Temple Service, and Naming of Jesus (The Temple at Jerusalem, B.C. 4)			Luke 2:21-39	
13. Eastern Wise-Men, or Magi, Visit Jesus, the New-born King (Jerusalem and Bethlehem, B.C. 4)	Mt 2:1-12			
14. Flight into Egypt and Slaughter of the Bethlehem Children (Bethlehem and Road thence to Egypt, B.C. 4)	Mt 2:13-18			
15. The Child Jesus Brought from Egypt to Nazareth (Egypt and Nazareth, B.C. 4)	Mt 2:19-23			
16. Jesus Living at Nazareth and Visiting Jerusalem in His Twelfth Year (Nazareth and Jerusalem, A.D. 7 or 8)			Luke 2:40-52	

PART TWO: BEGINNING OF THE MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST, THE FORERUNNER.				
17. John the Baptist's Person and Preaching (In the wilderness of Judea, and on the banks of the Jordan, occupying several months, probably A.D. 25 or 26)	Mt 3:1-12	Mk 1:1-8	Lu 3:1-18	

PART THREE: BEGINNING OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY.				
18. Jesus Baptized by John in the Jordan (Jordan east of Jericho, Spring of A.D. 27)	Mt 3:13-17	Mk 1:9-11	Lu 3:21,22	

19. Jesus Tempted in the Wilderness	Mt 4:1-11	Mk 1:12,13	Lu 4:1-13	
20. John's First Testimony to Jesus (Bethany beyond Jordan, February, A.D. 27)				Jn 1:19-34
21. Jesus Makes His First Disciples (Bethany Beyond Jordan, Spring, A.D. 27) Andrew/Peter, Phillip/Nathaniel				Jn 1:35-51
22. Jesus Works His First Miracle at Cana in Galilee				Jn 2:1-11
23. Jesus' First Residence at Capernaum				Jn 2:12

PART FOUR (A): FROM THE FIRST TO THE SECOND PASSOVER.

24. Jesus Attends the First Passover of His Ministry (Jerusalem, April 9, A.D. 27)

A. Jesus Cleanses the Temple, death & rise in 3 days (1 st of 5 times his passion foretold)				Jn 2:13-25
B. Jesus Talks with Nicodemus				Jn 3:1-21
25. First Ministry in Judea--John's Second Testimony (Judea and Aenon)				Jn 3:22-36
26. Jesus Sets Out from Judea for Galilee				
A. Reasons for Retiring to Galilee	Mt 4:12	Mk 1:14	Lu 3:19,20	Jn 4:1-4
B. At Jacob's Well, and at Sychar				Jn 4:5-42
C. Arrival in Galilee			Luke 4:14	Jn 4:43-45
27. General Account of Jesus' Teaching	Mt 4:17	Mk 1:14	Lu 4:14-30	
28. The Second Miracle at Cana				Jn 4:46-54
29. Jesus' Temporary Residence at Capernaum	Mt 4:13-16			

PART FOUR: (B) FROM THE FIRST TO THE SECOND PASSOVER.

30. Jesus Calls Four Fishermen to Follow Him (Sea of Galilee, Near Capernaum)	Mt 4:18-22	Mk 1:16-20	Lu 5:1-11	
31. Healing a Demoniac in a Synagogue (At Capernaum)		Mk 1:21-28	Lu 4:31-37	
32. Healing Peter's Mother-in-Law and Many Others (At Capernaum)	Mt 8:14-17	Mk 1:29-34	Lu 4:38-41	
33. Jesus Makes a Preaching Tour Through Galilee	Mt 4:23-25	Mk 1:35-39	Lu 4:42-44	
34. Jesus Heals a Leper and Creates Much Excitement (A city of Galilee)	Mt 8:2-4	Mk 1:40-45	Lu 5:12-16	
35. Jesus Heals a Paralytic at Capernaum	Mt 9:2-8	Mk 2:1-12	Lu 5:17-26	
36. The Call of Matthew (At or near Capernaum)	Mt 9:9	Mk 2:13,14	Lu 5:27,28	

PART FIVE: FROM THE SECOND PASSOVER UNTIL THE THIRD.

37. Jesus Heals on the Sabbath Day and Defends His Act (A Feast-time at Jerusalem, probably the Passover)				Jn 5:1-47
38. Jesus Defends Disciples Who Pluck Grain on the Sabbath (Probably while on the way from Jerusalem to Galilee)	Mt 12:1-8	Mk 2:23-28	Lu 6:1-5	
39. Jesus Defends Healing a Withered Hand on the Sabbath (Probably Galilee)	Mt 12:9-14	Mk 3:1-6	Lu 6:6-11	
40. Jesus Heals Multitudes Beside the Sea of Galilee	Mt 12:15-21	Mk 3:7-12		
41. After Prayer Jesus Selects Twelve Apostles (Near Capernaum)	Mt 10:2-4	Mk 3:13-19	Lu 6:12-16	
42. The Sermon on the Mount (Concerning the Privileges and Requirements of the Messianic Reign. A mountain plateau not far from Capernaum.)				
A. Introductory Statements	Mt 5:1,2		Lu 6:17-20	
B. Beatitudes: Promises to Messiah's Subjects	Mt 5:3-12		Lu 6:20-26	
C. Influence and Duties of Messiah's Subjects	Mt 5:13-16			
D. Relation of Messianic Teaching to Old Testament and Traditional Teaching	Mt 5:17-48		Lu 6:27-30,32-36	
E. Almsgiving, Prayer, and Fasting to Be Performed Sincerely, Not Ostentatiously	Mt 6:1-18			
F. Security of Heavenly Treasures Contrasted with Earthly Anxieties	Mt 6:19-34			
G. Law Concerning Judging	Mt 7:1-6		Lu 6:37-42	
I. The Golden Rule	Mt 7:12		Lu 6:31	
J. The Two Ways and the False Prophets	Mt 7:13-23		Lu 6:43-45	
K. Conclusion and Application: Two Builders	Mt 7:24-29		Lu 6:46-49	
43. Healing the Centurion's Servant (At Capernaum)	Mt 8:1,5-13		Lu 7:1-10	
44. Jesus Raises the Widow's Son (At Nain in Galilee)			Luke 7:11-17	
45. The Baptist's Inquiry and Jesus' Discourse Suggested Thereby (Galilee)	Mt 11:2-30		Lu 7:18-35	
46. Jesus' Feet Anointed in the House of a Pharisee (Galilee)			Luke 7:36-50	
47. Further Journeying about Galilee			Luke 8:1-3	

48. Blasphemous Accusations of the Jews (Galilee)	Mt 12:22-37	Mk 3:19-30	Lu 11:14-23	
49. Sign Seekers and the Enthusiast Reproved (Galilee, on the same day as the last section)	Mt 12:38-45		Lu 11:24-36	
50. Christ's Teaching as to His Mother and Brethren (Galilee, same day as last lesson)	Mt 12:46-50	Mk 3:31-35	Lu 8:19-21	
51. Dining with a Pharisee, Jesus Denounces That Sect			Luke 11:37-54	
52. Concerning Hypocrisy, Worldly Anxiety, Watchfulness, and His Approaching Passion (Galilee)			Luke 12:1-59	
53. Repentance Enjoyed. Parable of the Barren Fig-Tree			Luke 13:1-9	
54. The First Great Group of Parables (Beside the Sea of Galilee)				
A. Introduction	Mt 13:1-3	Mk 4:1,2	Lu 8:4	
B. Parable of the Sower	Mt 13:3-23	Mk 4:3-25	Lu 8:5-18	
C. Parable of the Seed Growing of Itself		Mk 4:26-29		
D. The Parable of the Tares	Mt 13:24-30			
E. Parables of the Mustard Seed and Leaven	Mt 13:31-35	Mk 4:30-34		
F. The Parable of the Tares Explained	Mt 13:36-43			
G. Parables of Treasure, Pearl, and Net	Mt 13:44-53			
55. Jesus Stills the Storm (Sea of Galilee; same day as last section)	Mt 8:18-27	Mk 4:35-41	Lu 8:22-25	
56. Jesus Heals Two Gergesene Demoniacs (Gergesa, now called Khersa)	Mt 8:28-34 9:1	Mk 5:1-21	Lu 8:26-40	
57. Matthew's Feast. Discourse on Fasting (Capernaum)	Mt 9:10-17	Mk 2:15-22	Lu 5:29-39	
58. Jairus' Daughter and the Invalid Woman (Capernaum, same day as last)	Mt 9:18-26	Mk 5:22-43	Lu 8:41-56	
59. Healing Blind Men and a Dumb Demoniac (Probably Capernaum)	Mt 9:27-34			
60. Jesus Visits Nazareth and Is Rejected	Mt 13:54-58	Mk 6:1-6	Lu 4:16-31	
61. Third Circuit of Galilee. The Twelve Instructed and Sent Forth	Mt 9:35-38 10:1,5-42	Mk 6:6-13	Lu 9:1-6	
62. Herod Antipas Supposes Jesus to Be John. John is beheaded.	Mt 14:1-12	Mk 6:14-29	Lu 9:7-9	

63. First Withdrawal from Herod's Territory and Return (Spring, A.D. 29)				
A. Return of the Twelve and Retirement to the East Shore of Galilee	Mt 14:13	Mk 6:30-32	Lu 9:10	Jn 6:1
B. Feeding the Five Thousand	Mt 14:13-21	Mk 6:33-44	Lu 9:11-17	Jn 6:2-14
C. The Twelve Try to Row Back. Jesus Walks Upon the Water	Mt 14:22-36	Mk 6:45-56		Jn 6:15-21
64. Discourse on Spiritual Food and True Discipleship. Peter's Confession. (At the synagogue in Capernaum)				Jn 6:22-71
PART SIX: FROM THE LORD'S THIRD PASSOVER UNTIL OUR LORD'S ARRIVAL AT BETHANY.				
65. Jesus Fails to Attend the Third Passover: Scribes Reproach Him for Disregarding Tradition (Galilee, probably Capernaum, Spring, A.D. 29)	Mt 15:1-20	Mk 7:1-23		Jn 7:1
66. Second Withdrawal from Herod's Territory	Mt 15:21	Mk 7:24		
67. Healing a Phoenician Woman's Daughter (Region of Tyre and Sidon)	Mt 15:22-28	Mk 7:25-30		
68. Another Avoiding of Herod's Territory	Mt 15:29	Mk 7:31		
69. The Deaf Stammerer Healed and Four Thousand Fed	Mt 15:30-38	Mk 7:32-8:9		
70. Third Withdrawal from Herod's Territory				
A. Pharisaic Leaven. A Blind Man Healed	Mt 15:39-16:12	Mk 8:10-26		
B. The Great Confession Made by Peter (Near Caesarea Philippi, Summer, A.D. 29)	Mt 16:13-20	Mk 8:27-30	Lu 9:18-21	
C. Passion Foretold. Peter Rebuked	Mt 16:21-28	Mk 8:31-9:1	Lu 9:22-27	
D. The Transfiguration. Concerning Elijah (At Mount Hermon, near Caesarea Philippi)	Mt 17:1-13	Mk 9:2-13	Lu 9:28-36	
E. Healing the Demoniac Boy (Region of Caesarea Philippi)	Mt 17:14-20	Mk 9:14-29	Lu 9:37-43	
71. Return to Galilee. The Passion Foretold	Mt 17:22,23	Mk 9:30-32	Lu 9:43-45	
72. Jesus Pays the Tribute Money (Capernaum, Autumn, A.D. 29)	Mt 17:24-27			
73. False Ambition Versus Childlikeness (Capernaum, Autumn, A.D. 29)	Mt 18:1-14	Mk 9:33-50	Lu 9:46-50	
74. Sin and Forgiveness Between Brethren (Autumn, A.D. 29)	Mt 18:15-36			
75. Jesus' Brothers Advise Him to Go to Jerusalem (Galilee, probably Capernaum)				Jn 7:2-9

76. The Private Journey to Jerusalem (Through Samaria. Probably September, A.D. 29)			Luke 9:51-56	Jn 7:10
77. As to Sacrifice for Christ's Service (Samaria. Probably September, A.D. 29)			Luke 9:57-62	
78. In the Temple at the Feast of Tabernacles (October, A.D. 29)				Jn 7:11-52
79. The Story of the Adulteress (Jerusalem)				Jn 7:53-8:11
80. Messianic Claims Met by Attempt to Stone Jesus (Jerusalem. October, A.D. 29)				Jn 8:12-59
81. Contention Over the Man Born Blind (Jerusalem)				Jn 9:1-41
82. Discourse on the Good Shepherd (Jerusalem, December, A.D. 29)				Jn 10:1-21
83. Mission and Return of the Seventy (Probably in Judea, October, A.D. 29)			Luke 10:1-24	
84. Parable of the Good Samaritan (Probably Judea)			Luke 10:25-37	
85. Jesus the Guest of Martha and Mary (Bethany, near Jerusalem)			Luke 10:38-42	
86. Prayer Taught and Encouraged (Probably Judea)			Luke 11:1-13	
87. Sabbath Healing. Mustard Seed and Leaven (Probably Perea)			Luke 13:10-21	
88. Feast of the Dedication. The Jews Attempt to Stone Jesus and He Retires to Perea (Jerusalem and beyond Jordan) Dec. 14-21. Feast of Lights.				Jn 10:22-42
89. The Strait Gate. Warned Against Herod (Perea)			Luke 13:22-35	
90. Dining with a Pharisee. Sabbath Healing and 3 Lessons Suggested by the Event (Probably Perea)			Luke 14:1-24	
91. Cost of Discipleship Must Be Counted (Probably Perea)			Luke 14:25-35	
92. Second Great Group of Parables (Probably in Perea)				
A. Introduction			Luke 15:1,2	
B. Parable of the Lost Sheep			Luke 15:3-7	
C. Parable of the Lost Coin			Luke 15:8-10	
D. Parable of the Lost Son			Luke 15:11-32	
E. Parable of the Unrighteous Steward			Luke 16:1-18	

F. Parable of the Rich Man and Lazarus			Luke 16:19-31	
G. Concerning Offenses, Faith, and Service			Luke 17:1-10	
93. Perea to Bethany. Raising of Lazarus				Jn 11:1-46
94. Retiring Before the Sanhedrin's Decree (Jerusalem and Ephraim in Judea)				Jn 11:47-54
95. Journey to Jerusalem. Ten Lepers. Concerning the Kingdom (Borders of Samaria and Galilee)			Luke 17:11-37	
96. Parable of the Importunate Widow			Luke 18:1-8	
97. Parable of the Pharisee and Publican			Luke 18:9-14	
98. Journey to Jerusalem. Concerning Divorce	Mt 19:1-12	Mk 10:1-12		
99. Blessing Children. Concerning Childlikeness. (In Perea)	Mt 19:13-15	Mk 10:13-16	Lu 18:15-17	
100. The Rich Ruler. Peril of Riches. Reward of Sacrifice. Parable of the Laborers in the Vineyard (In Perea)	Mt 19:16-20:16	Mk 10:17-31	Lu 18:18-30	
101. Foretelling His Passion . Rebuking Ambition (In Perea)	Mt 20:17-28	Mk 10:32-45	Lu 18:31-34	
102. Bartimaeus and His Companion Healed (At Jericho)	Mt 20:29-34	Mk 10:46-52	Lu 18:35-43	
103. Zacchaeus. Parable of the Pounds. Journey to Jerusalem (Jericho)			Luke 19:1-28	

PART SEVEN: LAST WEEK OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY, THE FOURTH PASSOVER, THE CRUCIFIXION.				
105. Jesus' Triumphal Entry into Jerusalem (From Bethany to Jerusalem & back, Sunday , Apr 2, A.D. 30)	Mt 21:1-12,14-17	Mk 11:1-11	Lu 19:29-44	Jn 12:12-19
106. Barren Fig-Tree. Temple Cleansed (Road from Bethany and Jerusalem . Monday , April 3, A.D. 30)	Mt 21:18,19,12,13	Mk 11:12-18	Lu 19:45-48	
107. Finding the Fig-Tree Withered (Road from Bethany to Jerusalem , Tuesday , April 4, A.D. 30)	Mt 21:20-22	Mk 11:19-25	Lu 21:37,38	
108. In Reply to the Questions as to His Authority, Jesus Gives the Third Great Group of Parables (In the Court of the Temple. Tuesday, April 4, A.D. 30)				
A. Introduction	Mt 21:23-27	Mk 11:27-33	Lu 20:1-8	
B. Parable of the Two Sons	Mt 21:28-32			
C. Parable of the Wicked Husbandmen	Mt 21:33-46	Mk 12:1-12	Lu 20:9-19	
D. Parable of the Marriage of the King's Son	Mt 22:1-14			
109. Jewish Rulers Seek to Ensnare Jesus (Court of the Temple. Tuesday, April 4, A.D. 30)				

A. Pharisees and Herodians Ask About Tribute	Mt 22:15-22	Mk 12:13-17	Lu 20:20-26	
B. Sadducees Ask About the Resurrection	Mt 22:23-33	Mk 12:18-27	Lu 20:27-39	
C. A Lawyer Asks About the Great Commandment	Mt 22:34-40	Mk 12:38-34	Lu 20:40	
D. Jesus' Question Which None Could Answer	Mt 22:41-46	Mk 12:35-37	Lu 20:41-44	
110. Jesus' Last Discourse. Denunciation of Scribes and Pharisees (In the court of the Temple. Tuesday, Apr 4, A.D. 30)	Mt 23:1-39	Mk 12:38-40	Lu 20:45-47	
111. Observing the Offerings and Widow's Mites (In the Temple. Tuesday, April 4, A.D. 30)		Mk 12:41-44	Lu 21:1-4	
112. Greeks Seek Jesus. He Foretells He Shall Draw All Men Unto Him. (In the Temple. Tues., April 4, A.D. 30)				Jn 12:20-50
113. Destruction of Jerusalem Foretold	Mt 24:1-28	Mk 13:1-23	Lu 21:5-24	
114. The Second Coming of Christ	Mt 24:29-51	Mk 13:24-37	Lu 21:25-37	
115. Conclusion of Our Lord's Discourse. Parables of Virgins and Talents. The Final Judgment. (Mount of Olives. Tuesday, April 4, A.D. 30)	Mt 25:1-46			
116. Jesus Predicts, the Rulers Plot for, and Judas Bargains for His Death (Mount of Olives, Bethany, and Jerusalem. Tuesday after sunset, which Jews regarded as the beginning of Wednesday)	Mt 26:1-5, 14-16	Mk 14:1,2,10 ,11	Lu 22:1-6	
117. Preparation for Passover. Disciples Contend for Precedence (Bethany to Jerusalem. Thursday afternoon and, after sunset, beginning of Friday)	Mt 26:17- 20	Mk 14:12- 17	Lu 22:7- 18,24-30	
118. The Paschal Meal. Jesus Washes the Disciples' Feet (Thursday evening of the beginning of Friday)				Jn 13:1-20
119. Judas' Betrayal and Peter's Denial Foretold (Jerusalem. Evening before the crucifixion)	Mt 26:21- 25,31- 35	Mk 14:18- 21,27- 31	Lu 22:21- 23,31-38	Jn 13:21- 38
120. The Lord's Supper Instituted (Jerusalem. Evening before the crucifixion)	Mt 26: 26-29	Mk 14:22- 25	Lu 22:19,20	1Co 11:23-26
121. Farewell Discourse to Disciples (Jerusalem. Evening before the crucifixion)				Jn 14:1- 16:33
122. The Lord's Prayer (Jerusalem. Thursday night)				Jn 17:1-26
123. Going to Gethsemane, and Agony Therein (A garden between the brook Kidron and the Mount of Olives. Late Thursday night.)	Mt 26:30 36-46	Mk 14:26 32-42	Lu 22:39-46	Jn 18:1

124. Jesus Betrayed, Arrested, and Forsaken (Gethsemane. Friday, several hours before dawn)	Mt 26:47-56	Mk 14:43-52	Lu 22:47-53	Jn 18:2-11	
125. First Stage of Jewish Trial. Examination by Annas (Friday before dawn)				Jn 18:12-14,19-23	
126. Second Stage of Jewish Trial. Jesus Condemned by Caiaphas and the Sanhedrin (Palace of Caiaphas. Friday)	Mt 26:57 59-68	Mk 4:53, 55-65	Lu 22:54, 63-65	Jn 18:24	
127. Peter Thrice Denies the Lord (Court of the high priest's residence. Friday before and about dawn)	Mt 26: 58,69-75	Mk 14:54 ,66-72	Lu 22:54-62	Jn 18:15-18,25-27	
128. Third Stage of Jewish Trial. Jesus Formally Condemned by the Sanhedrin (Jerusalem. Fri. > dawn)	Mt 27:1,2	Mk 15:1	Lu 22:66-23:1	Jn 18:28	
129. First Stage of the Roman Trial. Jesus Before Pilate for the First Time (Jerusalem. Early Friday morning)	Mt 7:11-14	Mk 15:2-5	Lu 23:2-5	Jn 18:28-38	
130. Second Stage of the Roman Trial. Jesus Before Herod Antipas (Jerusalem. Early Friday morning)			Luke 23:6-12		
131. Third Stage of the Roman Trial. Pilate Reluctantly Sentences Him to Crucifixion (Friday. Toward sunrise)	Mt 7:15-30	Mk 15:6-19	Lu 23:13-25	Jn 18:39-19:16	
132. Remorse and Suicide of Judas (In the temple and outside the wall of Jerusalem. Friday morning)	Mt 27:3-10				Ac 1:18,19
133. The Crucifixion					
A. On the Way of the Cross (Within and without Jerusalem. Friday morning)	Mt 7:31-34	Mk 15:20-23	Lu 23:26-33	Jn 19:17	
B. Jesus Crucified and Reviled. His Three Sayings During First Three Hours (Friday morn, nine o'clock till noon)	Mt 7:35-44	Mk 15:24-32	Lu 23:33-43	Jn 19:18-27	
C. Darkness Three Hours. After Four More Sayings, Jesus Expires. Strange Events Attending His Death	Mt 7:45-56	Mk 15:33-41	Lu 23:44-49	Jn 19:28-30	
D. Jesus Found to Be Dead. His Body Buried and Guarded in the Tomb	Mt 7:57-66	Mk 15:42-47	Lu 23:50-56	Jn 19:31-42	

PART EIGHT: OUR LORD'S RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES, AND ASCENSION.
(Judea and Galilee. Forty days, Spring, A.D. 30)

134. Angels Announce the Resurrection to Certain Women. Peter and John Enter the Empty Tomb. (Joseph's Garden. Sunday, very early)	Mt 28:1-8	Mk 16:1-8	Lu 24:1-8, 12	Jn 20:1-10	
135. First and Second Appearances of the Risen Christ. The Resurrection Reported to the Apostles. (Jerusalem. Sunday morning)	Mt 28:9,10	Mk 16:9-11	Lu 24:9-11	Jn 20:11-18	
136. Some of the Guards Report to the Jewish Rulers	Mt 28:11-15				
137. Third and Fourth Appearances of Jesus (Sunday afternoon)		Mk 16:12,13	Lu 24:13-35		1Co 15:5
138. Fifth Appearance of Jesus (Jerusalem. Sunday evening)		Mk 16:14	Lu 24:36-43	Jn 20:19-25	
139. Sixth Appearance of Jesus (Sunday, one week after the resurrection)				Jn 20:26-31	1Co 15:5
140. Seventh Appearance of Jesus (Sea of Galilee)				Jn 21:1-25	
141. Eight Appearance of Jesus (A mountain in Galilee)	Mt 28:16,17				1Co 15:6
142. The Great Commission Given (Time and place same as last section)	Mt 28:18-20	Mk 16:15-18	Lu 24:46,47		
143. Ninth and Tenth Appearances of Jesus (Jerusalem)			Lu 24:44-49		Ac 1:3-8, 1Co 15:7
144. The Ascension (Olivet, between Jerusalem and Bethany)		Mk 16:19,20	Lu 24:50-53		Ac 1:9-12
145. Our Lord Appears After His Ascension					1Co 15:8

Mankind are on one of three roads when we give up our spirit (expires or breathes out):

1st Christian - lying (LOW ROAD)

Acts 4:1-5:11 (5:1) But a certain man named **Ananias, with Sapphira his wife**, sold a possession, (5:5) And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and **gave up the ghost**: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

2nd Christian - victorious (HIGH ROAD)

Acts 7:1-60 (59-60) And they stoned **Stephen**, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, **receive my spirit**. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, **Lord, lay not this sin to their charge**. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

3rd Non-Christian - blasphemy (NO ROAD) John 14:6

Acts 12:1-23(1) Herod the king stretched forth [his] hands to vex certain of the church (23) And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and **gave up the ghost**.

The disciples challenge. Psalm 22 contains the seven sayings of the cross. Can you find them?

THE SEVEN SAYINGS OF JESUS ON THE CROSS

[New Testament Gems](#)

Bible TOC

Sayings 1 to 3 occur from 9:00AM TO 12:00AM and are TOWARD OTHERS Mark 15:25

1st **FATHER, FORGIVE THEM; THEY DON'T KNOW WHAT THEY DO.** Luke 23:34. **(Padre, perdonalos, porque no saben lo que hacen)** Forgive one another as I have forgiven you, Colossians 3:15.

2nd **TODAY YOU SHALL BE WITH ME IN PARADISE.** Luke 23:43. **(De cierto te dije que hoy estaras conmigo en el paraíso)** Two thieves, 1 believed in his heart, by faith - 1 knew in mind, by knowledge. What a difference! Yes, one can hear and see God, but not believe in their heart. Romans 10:9,10 We can hear the words of God (from the bible and others) and see the works of God (in nature and others) - but don't believe in God, from our heart. Faith and repentance are inseparable.

3rd **WOMAN, BEHOLD YOUR SON! DISCIPLE, BEHOLD YOUR MOTHER!** John 19:26-27. **(Mujer, he ahí tu hijo. Despues dijo al discipulo, He ahí tu madre)** Jesus gives the beloved apostle John and his mother Mary, to share the mother-son relationship. Jesus calls his mother "woman". Who is my mother or brethren or family? Those who do the will of God. Mark 3:31-35

Sayings 4 to 7 occur from 12:00 AM TO 3:00 PM or immediately after 3:00 PM and are TOWARD GOD Mark 15:33, Mathew 27:45 [there was darkness upon the earth as in the 9th judgment of Pharaoh Exodus 10:21]

4th about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **ELI, ELI, LAMA SABACHTHANI? that is to say, MY GOD, MY GOD, WHY HAVE YOU FORSAKEN ME?** Matthew 27:45-46, Mark 15:34-36. (near 3:00 - sayings 5,6,7 follow promptly) **(Clamo a gran voz, diciendo: Dios mio, Dios mio, porque me has desamparado?)** Why - as in Job or in Habakkuk. Separated from God this one time in eternity, He became the sacrificial lamb of the Old Testament religion of Isreal, He took upon Himself the past, present and future sin of humanity. A holy God could not look upon His Son Jesus when he took the sin of the world upon himself.

5th **I THIRST.** John 19:28. **(Tengo sed)** A great thirst. He took the vinegar drink of soldiers. Fulfilled prophecy of Psalm 69:21. * Earlier, when offered wine with myrrh, a narcotic drink to relieve pain, Jesus refused. Mark 15:23.

6th **IT IS FINISHED.** John 19:30. **(Consumado es)** The mission is complete. Fulfilled Genesis 3:15.

7th Jesus cried with a loud voice **FATHER, INTO THY HANDS I COMMEND MY SPIRIT**, and having said thus, he gave up the ghost (spirit). Matthew 27:50 Mark 15:37 Luke 23:46. **(Clamando a gran voz, dijo: Padre, en tus manos encomiendo mi espiritu. Y expiro)** This is the cry of victory!!!

* I have finished what I came to do. I'm going home! (Victory - to be absent from the body is present with the Lord, 2 Corinthians 5). Into thy hands - metaphor, created in his image, God is spirit. Commend my spirit. GENESIS 2:7 And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became a living soul.

	# 12 Apostles chosen, 27 AD			
1	Lamp Under a Basket (Light & Salt) 2nd) (Light & Darkness).	5:13-16	4:21,22	8:16,17
2	A Wise Man Builds on Rock and a Fool on Sand 3rd)	7:24-27	.	11:33-36
3	New Cloth on and Old Garment 1st)	9:16	2:21	6:47-49
4	New Wine in Old Wineskins 1st)	9:17	2:22	5:36
5	The Sower 5th)	13:3-23	4:2-20	5:37,38
6	The Tares (Weeds) 6th)	13:24-30	.	8:4-15
7	The Mustard Seed 7th)	13:31,32	4:30-32	.
8	The Leaven 8th)	13:33	.	13:18,19
9	The Hidden Treasure 9th)	13:44	.	13:20,21
10	The Pearl of Great Price 10th)	13:45,46	.	.
11	The Dragnet 11th)	13:47-50	.	.
12	The Householder 12th) # 12 sent out 28 AD	13:52 18:12-	.	.
13	The Lost Sheep 13th)	14	.	Lu 9 15:3-7
14	The Unforgiving Servant 14th) # 70 sent out 29 AD	18:23-35	.	Lu 10
15	The Workers in the Vineyard	20:1-16	.	.
16	The Two Sons	21:28-32	.	.
17	The Wicked Tenants	21:33-45	12:1-12	20:9-19
18	The Wedding Feast	22:2-14	.	14:16-24
19	The Fig Tree	24:32-44	13:28-32	21:29-33
20	The Ten Virgins	25:1-13	.	.
21	The Talents	25:14-30	.	.
22	The Growing Seed	.	4:26-29	.
23	The Watchful Porter	.	13:33-37	.
24	The Creditor and Two Debtors 4th)	.	.	7:41-43
25	The Good Samaritan 15th)	.	.	10:30-37
26	A Friend in Need	.	.	11:5-13
27	The Rich Fool	.	.	12:16-21
28	The Faithful and Wise Servant	.	.	12:35-40
29	Faithful and Wicked Steward	24:45-51	.	12:42-48
30	The Barren Fig Tree			13:6-9
31	The Lowest Seat			14:7-11
32	Building a Tower and Making War			14:25-35
33	The Lost Coin			15:8-10
34	The Lost Son			15:11-32
35	The Shrewd Manager			16:1-13
36	The Rich Man and Lazarus			16:19-31
37	Unprofitable Servants			17:7-10
38	The Persistent Widow			18:1-8
39	The Pharisee and the Tax Collector			18:9-14
40	The Minas (Pounds)			19:11-27
	<u>Updated: October 15, 2020 (WH)</u>			

Nature Miracles (9)	Matt	Mark	Luke	John
1. Stilling the Storm	8:23	4:35	8:22	
2. Feeding the 5000	14:13	6:30	9:10	6:1
3. Walking on the Water	14:25	6:48		6:19
4. Feeding the 4000	15:32	8:1		
5. Temple Tax in the Fish's Mouth	17:24			
6. Withering the Fig Tree	21:18	11:12		
7. Draught of Fish			5:1	
8. Turning Water into Wine				2:1
9. Second Draught of Fish				21:1
Healing Miracles (27)	Matt	Mark	Luke	John
General Healings (20)				
1. Cleansing of a Leper	8:2	1:40	5:12	
2. Healing a Centurion's Servant	8:5		7:1	
3. Healing Peter's Mother-in-law	8:14	1:30	4:38	
4. Healing the Sick at evening	8:16	1:32	4:40	
5. Healing a paralytic	9:2	2:3	5:18	
6. Healing the Hemorrhaging woman	9:20	5:25	8:43	
7. Healing Two Blind Men	9:27			
8. Healing a Man's Withered Hand	12:9	3:1	6:6	
9. Healing the Gentile Woman's Daughter	15:21	7:24		
10. Healing the Epileptic Boy	17:14	9:17	9:38	
11. Healing a Blind Men	20:30	10:46	18:35	
12. Healing a Deaf Mute		7:31		
13. Healing a Blind Man at Bethsaida		8:22		
14. Healing the Infirm, Bent Woman			13:11	
15. Healing the Man with Dropsy			14:1	
16. Cleansing the Ten Lepers			17:11	
17. Restoring a Servant's Ear			22:51	
18. Healing the Nobleman's Son (of fever)				4:46
19. Healing an Infirm Man at Bethesda				5:1
20. Healing the Man born blind				9:1
Resurrections (3)				
1. Raising the Ruler's Daughter	9:18,23	5:22,35	8:40,49	
2. Raising of a Widow's Son at Nain			7:11	
3. Raising of Lazarus				11:43
Casting out Demons (4)				
1. Demons entering a herd of swine	8:28	5:1	8:26	
2. Curing a Demon-possessed Mute	9:32			
3. Casting Out an Unclean Spirit		1:23	4:33	
4. Curing a Demon-possessed, Blind and Mute man	12:22		11:14	

Matthew	Mark	Luke	John	Comment
BEGINNING				
Genealogy from Abraham	No genealogy	Genealogy from Adam	Eternal	Different perspectives looking at the beginning of Christ's life on earth. The 4 faces of Jesus Christ. Same order in Rev 4:7; OT: Ez 1:10. 10:14
The Lion	The Ox (Cherub)	The Man	The Eagle	
Son of David	Son of none	Son of man	Son of God	
Disciple-ship	Servant-hood	Man-kind	God-head	
BODY				
3:1-12	1:1-8	3:1-18	Nothing	John the Baptist
3:13-4:11	1:9-11 (14)	3:21-4:13	Nothing	Baptism & temptation – Fall 25 AD
			2:13-25	1 st Passover – Spring 26 AD
4:12	1:14	4:19-20	4:1-4	Reason for retiring to Galilee
5-7 Sermon on the Mount	Nothing	6:20-49	Nothing	Knowledge – doctrine in our mind. Expository method of study.
10:1-42 (sending out the 12 to Israel)	6:6-13 (sending out the 12 to Israel)	9:1-6 (sending 12 to Israel) 10 (sending 70 to the ekklesia)	Nothing	Witness – by faith for God's glory. Compare and Contrast method of study.
			5:1-47	2 nd Passover – Spring 27 AD
13:1-52 Parables 1-4, 8 the ekklesia. Parables 5-7 future Israel	4:30-32 Parable 3	8:4-18 Parables 1,3 13:18-20 Parable 4	Nothing	Wisdom – understanding that promotes stability in Christ. Expository and Comparative method of study.
15:1-20	7:1-23		7:1	3 rd Passover – Spring 28 AD
18 :1-14, Salvation (opposition) 18:15-34, Sanctification	9:33-37, 42-48	9:46-48 15:4-7	Nothing	Our heart's practice of love toward others. Expository method of study.
19:1-20:34	10:1-10:52	17:10-19-28	11:1-11:54	His last trip to Jerusalem– Spring 29AD
24-25 (Prophecy for Israel)	13 (Prophecy for Israel)	17:10-47 (for Israel). 21 (prophecy for the ekklesia)	Nothing	Hope in prophecy, is God's love revealed toward us. Compare and Contrast methods of study.
21:1-27:66 7 chapters	11:1-15:47 5 chapters	19:29-23:56 < 5 chapters	11:55-19:42 >8 chapters	Last week of Jesus' life
ENDING				
28:1-15 . His resurrection	16:19-20 His ascension	24:49-53 His promise	21:20-25 His return	Different perspectives looking at the end of Christ's life on earth (during the time of his resurrection, appearances and ascension for 40 days, in Judea and Galilee).
28:16-20 (to the ekklesia for the entire dispensation)	16:16-20 (to the ekklesia, near future) Peter's influence	Paul's influence, apostle of this dispensation.	The beloved Disciple.	
28:1-15 Positive context.	16:1-14, 15-18 Negative context	24:1-48 Positive context.	20:1-21:19 Positive context	
Nothing	I & II Peter	Acts or Luke II 14 books	I, II, III John & Revelation	
Wrote by a Hebrew Apostle for Israel.	Wrote for Israel and the ekklesia.	Wrote by a gentile for the ekklesia.	Wrote for the world.	
The most Jewish gospel.	The most Roman gospel.	The most gentile gospel.	The most spiritual gospel.	

Legend: Blue – for Israel, Yellow – for both Israel and the Ekklesia, Green – for the Ekklesia, Brown – for all people of all time

Matthew (28-166, 2.4 hr) 2022

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28

12 Witnesses of the Lion (King) of Judah

Key verse: Matthew 5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets:
I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill the law.

Themes: Kingdom of heaven, 32x, and nowhere else in the Bible. Kingdom of God (5x),
My Father in heaven, 15x. Son of David, 10x. Right, righteous, righteousness, 24x.

A child of the King has the privilege to:

	Scripture
1) Give gifts or crowns to the King (when he returns)	2:11
2) Understand the work of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit	3:16-17
3) Know the 3 areas of sin and not fall to temptation	4:3-10
4) Obey the higher calling of the New Testament	5-7
5) Understand & Trust in Christ's authority over them	8:8-10
6) Rest in the resurrected Jesus Christ daily	12:8
7) Understand the mysteries of the parables	13:33-35
8) Know God's love for the individual lost sheep	18:10-14
9) Follow right procedures with disobedient believers	18:15-16
10) Be angry at man and blessed by God at the same time	21:12-13
11) Give their best for our Lord Jesus Christ	26:7-9
12) Disciple men and women for future generations	28:18-20

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Matthew 5:43-44	Supplication	Forgive OT-NT difference	Lazy to forgive	Example of Jesus	Enemy, for those who spitefully use you
Matthew 6:5-13	Supplication Prayer	OT Religion NT Pattern	Lazy to be seen by God alone	Prayer closet	Our Father in heaven
Matthew 8:1-4	Conversation	Healing. Jewish.		Little faith	Jesus Christ prays. Leper
Matthew 8:5-13	Conversation	Healing. Gentile. Understood authority		Great faith	Jesus Christ prays. Roman centurion.
Matthew 9:37-38	Supplication	Laborers Book of Acts	Lazy in Labor	Lord to Send	Intercession / Harvest
Matthew 15:21-28	Conversation	Demon deliverance			Jesus Christ prays
Matthew 24:20	Supplication	Wisdom	Lazy in the Word	Belief in the Word	Prophecy to Israel
Matthew 27:46 Mark 15:34	Conversation Supplication	Fulfill promise as the Lamb of God			My God, my God, Why have you forsaken me?

Application for today. We should be a disciple or disciple others for our Lord Jesus Christ. 2 Timothy 2:2

Outline I of Matthew "Gift of the Lord"

Background. The purpose of this book is to link the Old and New Testaments. Levi is his name from his looked down upon and sinful past as a tax collector before he followed Jesus Christ. His being a Levite, bookkeeper, and conversion testimony are relevant throughout his account. Matthew continues where Malachi stopped 400 years before, with the promise of a Messiah and a messenger sent before him, who is John the Baptist.

Old Testament: > 270 references including 53 quotes & 13 prophecies of Christ's 1st coming

		<u>Matthew</u>
Part 1) The King's Coming (Introduction)		1-4
Birth	1-2	
Entry to public ministry	3-4	
Part 2) The King's Authority		5-9
Discourse 1: Sermon on the mount (OT / NT difference)	5-7	
Authenticating miracles (10)	8-9	
Part 3) The King's Agenda		10-12
Discourse 2: Commission of the 12 disciples	10	
Mission of the King	11-12	
Part 4) The King's Adversaries		13-17
Discourse 3: The Kingdom parables (from rejection to acceptance)	13:1-52	
The Kingdom conflict	13:53-17:27	
Part 5) The King's Administration		18-23
Discourse 4: Childlikeness of the obedient believer	18	
The Jerusalem ministry	19-23	
Part 6) The King's Atonement		24-27:15
Discourse 5: The Mount Olivet discourse (before Christ's return)	24-25	
The crucifixion and resurrection	26:1-28:15	
Part 7) The King's Assignment (Conclusion)		28:16-20

Matthew Chapter 1

1:1-16 **The Genealogy of Jesus Christ** (born of God – in the flesh the son of David)

(1) ¹ The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the **son of David**, the **son of Abraham**.
² **Abraham** begat **Isaac**; and Isaac begat **Jacob**; and Jacob begat **Judah** and his brethren;
³ And Judah begat **Phares** and Zara of ^a **Thamar**; and Phares begat **Esrom**; and Esrom begat **Aram**;
⁴ And Aram begat **Aminadab**; and Aminadab begat **Naasson**; and Naasson begat **Salmon**;
⁵ And Salmon begat **Boaz** of Rachab; and Boaz begat **Obed** of ^a **Ruth**; and Obed begat **Jesse**;
⁶ And Jesse begat **David the king**; and **David** the king begat **Solomon** of ^a her [that had been the wife] of Urias;
⁷ And Solomon begat **Roboam**; and Roboam begat **Abia**; and Abia begat **Asa**;
⁸ And Asa begat **Josaphat**; and Josaphat begat **Joram**; and Joram begat **Ozias**;
⁹ And Ozias begat **Joatham**; and Joatham begat **Achaz**; and Achaz begat **Ezekias**;
¹⁰ And Ezekias begat **Manasses**; and Manasses begat **Amon**; and Amon begat **Josias**;
¹¹ And Josias begat **Jechonias** and his brethren, about the time they were carried away **to Babylon**.
¹² And after they were brought to Babylon, **Jechonias** begat **Salathiel**; and Salathiel begat **Zorobabel**;
¹³ And Zorobabel begat **Abiud**; and Abiud begat **Eliakim**; and Eliakim begat **Azor**;
¹⁴ And Azor begat **Sadoc**; and Sadoc begat **Achim**; and Achim begat **Eliud**;
¹⁵ And Eliud begat **Eleazar**; and Eleazar begat **Matthan**; and Matthan begat **Jacob**;
¹⁶ And Jacob begat **Joseph** the husband of ^a Mary, of whom was born **Jesus**, who is called Christ.

¹⁷ So all the generations from Abraham to David are **fourteen generations**, and from David until the carrying away into Babylon are **fourteen generations**, and from the carrying away into Babylon to Christ are **fourteen generations**.

^a Four women in the genealogy of Jesus the Christ

An Angel tells Joseph to keep Mary (dream 1)

(2) ¹⁸ Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as His mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. ¹⁹ Then Joseph her husband, being a just [man], and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privately. ²⁰ But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared to him in a ^a dream, saying, **Joseph, you son of David, fear not to take to you Mary your wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.** ²¹ **And she shall bring forth a Son, and you shall call His name JESUS: for He shall save His people from their sins.** ²² Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the ^b prophet, saying, ²³ **Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call His name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.** ²⁴ Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took to him his wife: ²⁵ And knew her not till she had brought forth her firstborn Son: and he called His name JESUS.

^a 1st of 5 dreams, 4 to Joseph and 1 to the wise men.

The law of Moses gave two options for Joseph when he found Mary pregnant before marriage; he and the village of Nazareth could stone her to death (Deuteronomy 22:23-24) or he could give her a letter of divorce (Deuteronomy 24:1). Joseph being a just man in his heart, let his mind and community practice consider a letter of divorce. As Joseph struggled on what to do, God sent an angel in a dream to give clear direction. Something similar can happen in the Christ follower today.

^b Isaiah 9:6.

Wise Men Worship Jesus, King of the Jews (Micah 5:2, a child in a home & antichrist)

(3) ¹ Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, ² Saying, Where is He that is born King of the Jews? for **we have seen His star in the east**, and are come to worship Him. ³ When Herod the king had heard [these things], he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. ⁴ And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. ⁵ And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet, ⁶ **And you Bethlehem, [in] the land of Judah, are not the least among the princes of Judah: for out of you shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel.** ⁷ Then Herod, when he had privately called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. ⁸ And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the Young Child; and when ye have found [Him], bring me word again, that I may come and worship Him also.

The Wisemen give Gold, Incense, and Myrrh to the Young Child in the House

(4) ⁹ When they had heard the king, they departed; and, look, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the Young Child was. ¹⁰ When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. ¹¹ And when they were come into the house, they saw the Young Child with Mary His mother, and fell down, and worshipped Him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto Him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.

Note: Timing and Time, Flattery and Deception, and Worship recognize Jesus as King, Priest, and Prophet. Look back to the three offices of Christ as Prophet (his death), Priest (He and us), and King (His return).

The Wisemen Another Way Flee and Joseph Flees from King Herod to Egypt (dreams 2 & 3)

(5) ¹² **And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.** ¹³ And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appears to Joseph in a dream, saying, **Arise, and take the Young Child and His mother, and flee into Egypt, and be you there until I bring you word: for Herod will seek the Young Child to destroy Him.** ¹⁴ When he arose, he took the Young Child and His mother by night, and departed into Egypt: ¹⁵ And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, **Out of Egypt I have called My Son.**

Jesus at 2 years age Escapes Herod's Slaying

(6) ¹⁶ Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding angry, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men. ¹⁷ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, ¹⁸ **In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping [for] her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.**

Joseph and Family Move from Egypt to Nazareth (dreams 4 and 5)

(7) ¹⁹ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appears in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, ²⁰ Saying, **Arise, and take the young child and His mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the Young Child's life.** ²¹ And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. ²² But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, **being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:** ²³ And He came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, **He shall be called a Nazarene.**

Note on Matthew chapters 2-3. Six times the right direction to travel was provided by God (twice to the wisemen and four to Joseph by an angel in a dream) to fulfill five prophecies given by the prophets (Mt 1:22 – Isa 7:14, Mt 2:5 – Mic 5:2, Mt 2:15 – Hos 11:1, Mt 2:17 – Jer 31:15, Mt 2:23 – Nu 6, Judges 13:5, 1 Sam 1:11, Isa 11:1, 14:19, 53:2-3, 7-9, 12; Jer 23:5, Am 2:11-12, Zec 3:8, 6:12, Ps 22:1). 2:23 see Matthew Henry's Whole Bible Commentary.

Jesus' Chronological Comparison Chart - birthday and early life (easy & difficult things)

2 Pet 3:16	Matthew 1-3	Comments	Luke 1-3	Comments
	Joseph	husband of Mary	Mary	3:23a
Lineage	Son of David (King)	Israel / OT Holy - judgment Father role (Hebrews 11-12) Difficult things	Son of Man (Adam)	Gentiles / NT Love - grace Mother role Easy things Apostle Paul Luke 3:23b-38
	Royalty		Humanity	
	Abraham to David (14)		Joseph to Adam	
	David to Babylon (14)			
Babylon to Christ (14)	Matthew 1:1-17			
<u>No mention of</u> John's early life			Zechariah & Elizabeth	& Mary 1:1-56
<u>No mention of</u> a baby or manger			John born and grew	1:57-80
<u>No mention of</u> circumcision or purification			Tax-Bethlehem - inn	2:1-7
			Shepherds-angel-host-manger	2:8-20 (2:20) Glorify God
			8 days - circumcision	2:21
			40 days - purify 2:24	2:22-35 & 2:36-38
			Simeon & Anna	
Wise men Daniel 2:48 (advisor in kings court of Babylon & Persia, 605-535 BC)	from east to Jerusalem	2:1 (gentiles)	No mention of wisemen visiting, King Herod (Esau - Edomite - Amalek - Doeg - Haman - Obadiah), chief priests or scribes. Looking back: myrrh (past prophet's death, 1 Th 2:15), frankincense (present priest), gold (future king) (to Herod, but go another way home)	
	born King of the Jews	2:2		
	Seen star - worship	2:2		
	Star went before them	2:9		
	Came into a house	2:11		
	Fell down - worship	2:11		
	Gold, incense, myrrh	2:11 gifts		
Warned not to return	2:12 dream			
Young child	2:8,9,10,11,13,14,20,21	8 x, with mother	Not a baby in the manger	
Herod	Troubled	2:3	Herod , King of Judea (the Great)	1:5
(king in Jerusalem, an Edomite)	Time star appeared	2:7	Herod, being tetrarch of Galilee	3:1-20
	I want to worship Him	2:8 Bethlehem		
	Slew children 2 years	2:16 (& under)		
Angels	take Mary as your wife	1:20, dream	to Zechariah-Gabriel	1:5-25
Hos 11:1	Flee to Egypt (Joseph)	2:13-15 dream	to Mary-Gabriel	1:26-38
	Go to Israel (Joseph)	2:19-21 dream	to shepherds	2:8-20
(no ángel)	Go to Nazareth, 4 years	2:22-23 dream	(with heavenly host)	2:13-14
Prophecies	A special star - Balaam	Nu 24:17 mix	No mention of prophecy fulfilled However many are fulfilled (Genesis 3:15 born of woman, 2 Chr 6:16 come as a king, Daniel 7:13 come as God and man, Is 53:10 come to die)	
Is 7:14	a virgin with child	1:23 Emmanuel		
Micah 5:2	Bethlehem - Governor	2:4-6 rule Israel		
Jer 31:15	Rachel weeping for her	2:18 (children)		
Ex 4:22	Out of Egypt my Son	2:15 Hos 11:1		
Zech 12:10	Called a Nazarene	2:23 prophets		
Gifts (Time, Talents, and Treasure): Matthew 7:11, Acts 20:35, Revelation 11:12				
Jesus' Youth at Nazareth (4 to around 30 years old)			Passover annually	2:39-52
			Jesus 12 years	2:42
John (3:26-35)	Preached baptized Jesus	3:1-17	Preached (Lu 7:24-35)	3:1-23a John in prison
Jesus (devil)	fasted 40 days & nights	4:1-11 (3 tempt)	wilderness 40 days	4:1-13 (3 tempt)

Matthew Chapter 3

3:1-5 John Baptizes those who Repent of their Sins

(8) ¹ In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judaea, ² And saying, "Repent ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. ³ For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight." ⁴ And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leather girdle about his loins; and his food was locusts and wild honey. ⁵ Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan, ⁶ And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

John Refuses to Baptize the Religious Leaders because of their lack of Repentance

(9) ⁷ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, "O generation of vipers, who has warned you to **flee from the wrath to come?** ⁸ **Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:** ⁹ And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to [our] father: for I say to you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children to Abraham. ¹⁰ And now also the ax is laid to the root of the trees: therefore every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ¹¹ I indeed baptize you with water to repentance: but He that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: **He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and [with] fire:** ¹² Whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His floor, and gather His wheat into the garner; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire."

John Baptizes Jesus who Committed no Sins

(10) ¹³ Then comes Jesus from Galilee to Jordan to John, to be baptized of him. ¹⁴ But John forbad Him, saying, "I have need to be baptized of You, and come You to me?" ¹⁵ And Jesus answering said unto him, "**Allow [it to be so] now: for thus it becomes us to fulfill all righteousness.**" Then he permitted Him. ¹⁶ And Jesus, when He was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, look, the heavens were opened to Him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon Him: ¹⁷ And look a voice from heaven, saying, "**This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.**"

Matthew 2 – The Best Gifts of Worship

<p>Matthew 2:11</p> <p>Gold is for Kings</p> <p>Born King of the Jews</p> <p>Past</p> <p>Frankincense is for Priests</p> <p>Representing People to God</p> <p>Present</p>		<p>Myrrh is for Prophets</p> <p>Death as a Prophet</p> <p>Future</p> <p>Looking back over 2000 years ago in Reverse</p> <p>Jesus died as a prophet, lives as a priest, and returns as a king.</p>
--	--	--

4:1-4 Temptation 1 – Lust of the Flesh (hungry-bread) Deut 8:3

(11) ¹ Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the **devil**. ² And when He had **fasted forty days and forty nights**, He was afterward hungry. ³ And **when** the tempter came to Him, He said, "If You be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread." ⁴ But He answered and said, "**It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God.**"

Note: 40 day fast – Moses, Elijah, and Jesus. Gen 3:6, Lu 4:1-13, & 1 Jn 2:16 order is flesh-eyes-pride.

4:5-7 Temptation 2 – Pride of Life (temple-angels-jump) Ps 91:11a-12, Deut 6:16

(12) ⁵ Then the devil takes Him up into the holy city, and sets Him on a pinnacle of the temple, ⁶ And says unto Him, "If You be the Son of God, cast Yourself down: for it is written, **He shall give His angels charge concerning You: and in [their] hands they shall bear You up, lest at any time You dash Your foot against a stone.**" ⁷ Jesus said unto him, "**It is written again, You shall not tempt the Lord your God.**"

Note: Pinnacle is highest place. Temple mount. Ps 91:11b adds, "He shall keep thee in all thy ways".

4:8-11 Temptation 3 – Lust of the Eyes (kingdoms-worship) Deut 6:13

(13) ⁸ Again, the devil takes Him up into an exceeding high mountain, and shows Him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; ⁹ And says unto Him, "All these things will I give You, if You will fall down and worship me." ¹⁰ Then says Jesus unto him, "**Get you hence, Satan: for it is written, You shall worship the Lord Your God, and Him only shall you serve.**" ¹¹ Then the devil leaves Him, and, **behold, angels came and ministered unto Him.**

Note: Gen 1:28-30, Is 14:13-14, 2 Cor 4:4, Ja 4:7-10, Hebrews 1:4 (angels minister)

4:12-17 Turnover - John Decreases and Jesus Increases (Isaiah 9:1-2, light vs darkness)

(14) ¹² Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, He departed into **Galilee**; ¹³ And **leaving Nazareth**, He came and **dwelt in Capernaum**, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim: ¹⁴ That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, "¹⁵ **The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, [by] the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; ¹⁶ The people which sat in **darkness saw great light**; and to them which sat in the region and **shadow of death light is sprung up.**" ¹⁷ **From that time Jesus began to preach**, and to say, "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.**"**

Note: John 1-4 early Judean ministry, 8 months later. John the baptizer, Mt 3:2. Heaven 33x, God 5x.

4:18-22 Turnover – Four Fishermen Surrender All to Follow Jesus (John 1:35-51, Luke 6:12-16)

(14) ¹⁸ And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, **casting a net** into the sea: for they were fishers. ¹⁹ And He says unto them, "**Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men.**" ²⁰ And they **straightway left [their] nets, and followed Him.** ²¹ And going on from there, He saw other two brethren, James [the son] of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, **mending their nets**; and He called them. ²² And they **immediately left the ship and their father, and followed Him.**

Note: The disciples have 3 phases: Salvation – John 1:35-51, Surrender – Matthew 4:18-22, then Sanctification or their Apostleship, Luke 6:12-16 & Matthew 10:2-4. Luke is in chronological order.

4:23-25 Jesus Teaches, Preaches, and Heals multitudes who come to Him in Galilee

(15) ²³ And Jesus went about all Galilee, **teaching** in their synagogues, and **preaching** the **gospel of the kingdom**, and **healing all** manner of **sickness** and **all** manner of **disease** among the people. ²⁴ And His fame went throughout all **Syria**: and they brought to Him **all sick people** that were taken with **diverse diseases and torments**, and those which were **controlled by demons**, and those which were **lunatic**, and those that were **paralyzed**; and **He healed them.** ²⁵ And there followed Him **great multitudes of people** from Galilee, and [from] Decapolis, and [from] Jerusalem, and [from] Judaea, and [from] beyond Jordan.

Note: The order is teaching, preaching, and healing. Healing today is sin sickness, mental-emotional. Cessationism versus continuationism? Both true when the Apostles role is understood in Acts.

5:1-12 **The Eight Blessings** (beatitudes are within 3-6, without 7-9, persecution 10-12)

(16) ¹ And seeing the **multitudes**, He went up into a mountain: and when He was set, his **disciples** came to Him: ² And He opened His mouth, and **taught** them, saying,

Notes: Four foundational truths to understand about the Sermon on the Mount in Matthew 5-7. This discourse: (1) shows the differences between the Old Testament and the New Testament. (2) Is a message for the church – not for the future 1000 year reign of Christ. (3) is in a divine order grounded in the beatitudes. (4) The beatitudes in Luke 6:17 seem to be later “standing in the plain.”

³ Blessed are the **poor in spirit**: for theirs is the **kingdom of heaven**.

⁴ Blessed are they that **mourn**: for they shall be comforted.

⁵ Blessed are the **meek**: for they shall inherit the earth.

⁶ Blessed are they which do **hunger and thirst after righteousness**: for they shall be filled

Notes: The first 4 blessings come from **within ourselves**. vs 4 comforted, Revelation 21:4. vs 5 inherit the earth, Matthew 11:29. vs 6 hunger and thirst after righteousness, Romans 6:13-20, 8:4, 10.

(17) ⁷ Blessed are the **merciful**: for they shall obtain mercy.

⁸ Blessed are the **pure in heart**: for they shall see God.

⁹ Blessed are the **peacemakers**: for they shall be called the children of God.

Notes: The 5th to 7th blessings go **without our selves** as a witness to others, 1 Corinthians 3:12-15. vs 8 see God, Acts 15:9, 1 Peter 1:22. vs 9 children of God, Ephesians 6:12. Also the first seven blessings center is to “thirst and hunger after righteousness”, the cause of persecution is vs 10-12.

(18) ¹⁰ Blessed are they which are **persecuted for righteousness' sake**: for theirs is the **kingdom of heaven**. ¹¹ Blessed are ye, when [men] shall **revile** you, and **persecute** [you], and shall say all manner of evil against you **falsely, for my sake**. ¹² Rejoice, and be exceedingly glad: for **great is your reward in heaven**: for so **persecuted** they the prophets which were before you.

Notes: The 8th blessing follows the other 7 in sequential order. This blessing does not bring joy and is not of God unless the other 7 are reality in our lives. Jesus Christ is our example as written in John 13-17. vs 12 all believers are intended to be prophets in the New Testament, 1 Corinthians 14.

5:13-16 **Two Effects of the Eight Blessings - Salt (13) and the Light of the World (14-16)**

(19) ¹³ Ye are the **salt of the earth**: but if the salt have lost his flavor, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. ¹⁴ Ye are the **light of the world**. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. ¹⁵ Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it gives light to all that are in the house. ¹⁶ Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Notes: vs 14 ye are the light of the world, John 8:12.

5:17-20 **Christ Fulfills the Law, Teachers are Least of Great in the Kingdom of Heaven**

(20) ¹⁷ Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. ¹⁸ For verily I say unto you, “Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. ¹⁹ Whosoever therefore shall **break one of these least commandments**, and shall **teach men** so, he shall be called the **least in the kingdom of heaven**: but whosoever shall **do and teach** them, the same shall be called **great in the kingdom of heaven**.”

²⁰ For I say unto you, “That except your righteousness shall exceed [the righteousness] of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.”

Notes: vs 20 exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, Speaking of our salvation, not our sanctification, 2 Corinthians 5:21.

5:21-48 Six New & Better Ways with Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit since Acts 2**5:21-26 Kill versus Anger (1st of 6)**

(21) ²¹ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not ^a kill; and whosoever shall murder shall be in danger of the judgment: ²² But I say unto you, "That whosoever is angry with his **brother without a cause** shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his **brother,** ^b *Raca,* shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, ^c **You fool,** shall be in danger of ^d hell fire. ²³ ^e Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your **brother** has anything against you; ²⁴ Leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your **brother,** and then come and offer your gift. ²⁵ Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and you be cast into prison. ²⁶ Verily I say to you, You shall by no means come out there, till you have paid the uttermost farthing."

^a The first murder in the Bible is when Cain murdered Abel in Genesis 9:6. It is prohibited in Exodus 20:13 and Deuteronomy 5:17. Vs 22 "without a cause" is missing in most modern versions.

^b Empty one, an expression of contempt and abuse.

^c Calling your brother a fool is a severe offense to God. This is the first time "fool" is used in the New Testament. When fool or foolishness are used in other passages they always refer the lost or the believer in relation to this world, never about a brother calling a brother a fool. Luke 12:20, 1 Cor 1:18, 1:21, 1:23, 1:25, 2:14, 3:19, 5:18, 15:36, About Paul - 2 Cor 11:16, 11:23, 12:6, 12:11.

^d Hellfire. The original of this is, "the GEHENNA of ore." The worn GEHENNA, commonly translated hell, is made up of two Hebrew words and signifies the valley of Hinnom. This was formerly a pleasant valley, near to Jerusalem, on the south, [or southeast.] A small brook or torrent usually ran through this valley, and partly encompassed the city. This valley the idolatrous Israelites devoted formerly to the horrid worship of Moloch, 2Ki 16:3; 2Ch 28:3. In that worship the ancient Jewish writers inform us that the idol of Moloch was of brass, adorned with a royal crown, having the head of a calf, and his arms extended as if to embrace anyone. When they offered children to him, they heated the statue within by a great fire; and when it was burning hot, they put the miserable child into his arms, where it was soon consumed by the heat; and, in order that the cries of the child might not be heard, they made a great noise with drums and other instruments about the idol. These drums were called Toph, and hence a common name of the place was TOPHET, Jer 7:31-32. Used 12x in the New Testament. Matthew 7x, Mark 3x and James 1x.

^e 1 Corinthians 11:16

5:27-30 Adultery versus Desire in Heart (2nd of 6)

(22) ²⁷ Ye have heard that it was said by them of ^a old time, You shall not commit adultery: ²⁸ But I say to you, That whosoever looks on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in his heart. ²⁹ And ^b if your right eye offend you, pluck it out, and cast [it] from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not [that] your whole body should be cast into hell. ³⁰ And if your right hand offend you, cut it off, and cast [it] from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish, and not [that] your whole body should be cast into hell.

^a Exodus 20:14, Deut 5:18, 2 Peter 2:14

^b Strict self-discipline for denying self and taking up our cross to follow Jesus. The temporary is used to emphasize the eternal effects of our actions on earth in this body.

Notes: Sermon on the Mount in Matthew chapters 5-7 **Title:** "A New & Better Way" from Hebrews 12:24.

Chapter Headings: 5 – Knowledge, 6 - Understanding, 7 – Wisdom; reveal the superior wisdom of Jesus.

Chapters by Archbishop of Canterbury Stephen Langton, completed over 20 years in 1228 for university theology. 1st used by Wycliffe in 1382. He drafted the Magna Carta for King John of England in 1215.

Passage Headings: Led to chapter headings, then sermon heading. Bill Heath & Holy Spirit, 1 Jn 2:27.

Matthew Chapter 5

Knowledge for the New & Better Way

5:31-32 **Divorce and Remarriage** (3rd of 6)

³¹ It has been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, ^a let him give her a writing of divorcement:
³² But I say to you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, ^b saving for the cause of fornication, causes her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced commits adultery.

^a Duet 22:22, 24:1-4, dislike or incompatibility. 1 Corinthians 7 provides New Testament insight.

^b Exception clause not found in Matthew 19:9, Mark 10:11-12, Luke 16:18, 1 Corinthians 7:12-16

5:33-37 **Oaths verses No Oaths** (4th of 6)

(23) ³³ Again, ye have heard that it has been said by them of ^a old time, You shall not commit perjury, but shall perform to the Lord your oaths: ³⁴ But I say to you, ^b Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: ³⁵ Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. ³⁶ Neither shall you swear by your head, because you cannot make one hair white or black.
³⁷ But let your communication be, Yes, yes; No, no: for whatsoever is more than these comes of evil.

^a Leviticus 19:12, Numbers 30:2, Deut 23:21 are verses of old time. Now the law is dead in this regard, Romans 7:2-3. Matthew 19:4-6, Malachi 2:16.

^b This is referring to personally. Not applicable to the court of the land or the court of God as our witness. Matthew 26:63, 2 Corinthians 1:23, Galatians 1:20

5:38-42 **Dollar for Dollar verses Go the Extra Mile** (5th of 6)

(24) ³⁸ Ye have heard that it has been said, An ^a eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: ³⁹ But I say to you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite you on your right cheek, turn to him the other also.
⁴⁰ And if any man will sue you at the law, and take away your coat, let him have [your] cloke also.
⁴¹ And whosoever shall compel you to go a mile, go with him twain. ⁴² Give to him that asks you, and from him that would borrow of you turn not you away.

^a Exodus 21:26, Leviticus 24:20, Deut 19:21

5:43-48 **Hate your Enemy verses Love your Enemy** (6th of 6)

(25) ⁴³ Ye have heard that it has been said, You shall love your neighbor, and ^a hate your enemy.
⁴⁴ But I say to you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; ⁴⁵ That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he makes his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. ⁴⁶ For if ye love them which love you, **what reward have ye?** do not even the publicans the same? ⁴⁷ And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more [than others]? do not even the publicans so? ⁴⁸ Be ye therefore ^b perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

^a even so in several Psalms – Psalm 139:21-22

^b perfect can always be translated fully mature or ripe. This is stated for those who lack understanding about our sanctification process and purpose.

Notes on the Sermon on the Mount. An Old Testament shadow of the New Testament substance, beginning with Acts 2 written for our learning, (Heb 12:24, 8:5, 10:1, Col 3: 2:17, Ro 15:4) and the wisdom is due to the Holy Spirit which is Christ in every true believer (1 Cor 1:30-31, Mt 11:25-26).

1. On a mound, not a mountain. The longest teaching of Jesus.
2. Began with Jesus sitting with the disciples among a multitude, and ended with the people listening.
3. Some Scripture is repeated in Luke 6 or other Scripture. Luke 6 is to a different set of circumstances and much shorter

Matthew Chapter 6 **Understanding for the New & Living Way** (Hebrews 12:24) (5 min read)

Five Contrasts between Serving Man and Serving God

6:1-4 **Give Money Publicly before Men verses Give Money Privately before God** (1st of 5)

(26) ¹ Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have **no reward** of your ^a Father which is in heaven. ² Therefore when you do [your] alms, do not sound a trumpet before you, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say to you, They have **their reward**. ³ But when you do alms, let not your left hand know what your right hand does: ⁴ That your alms may be in secret: and your Father which sees in secret himself shall **reward you openly**.

^a First of 10 times mentioned in chapter 6:1-18

6:5-8 **Pray Publicly before Men verses Privately before our Father in Heaven** (2nd of 5)

(27) ⁵ And when you pray, you shall not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say to you, They have **their reward**. ⁶ But you, when you pray, enter into your closet, and when you have shut your door, ^a pray to your Father which is in secret; and **your Father which sees in secret shall reward you openly**. ⁷ But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen [do]: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. ⁸ Be not ye therefore like to them: for your Father knows what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

^a This does not prohibit right public prayer: Acts 2:42, 12:12, 13:3, 14:23, 20:23

6:9-15 **A Pattern for Private Prayer to our Father in Heaven**

(28) ⁹ After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name. ¹⁰ Your kingdom come. Your will be done in earth, as [it is] in heaven. ¹¹ Give us this day our daily bread. ¹² And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. ¹³ And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: **For your is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, forever. Amen.** ¹⁴ ^a For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: ¹⁵ But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

^a Explanatory note to verse 12, showing the vital importance of forgiveness. 5:13b is omitted, in the footnote, or in brackets in the Critical Text, but included in the Textus Receptus and the Majority Text. Compare with Luke 11.

6:16-18 **Fast Publicly before Men versus Privately before our Father in Heaven** (3rd of 5)

(29) ¹⁶ Moreover ^a when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear to men to fast. Verily I say to you, They have **their reward**. ¹⁷ But you, when you fast, anoint your head, and wash your face; ¹⁸ That you appear not to men to fast, but to your Father which is in secret: and **your Father, which sees in secret, shall reward you openly**.

^a Fasting is not commanded but strongly encouraged. It loses value when imposed from an outside or wrong motive. Luke 18:12, 14. Fasting may be voluntary: Matthew 9:14-15, Luke 2:37, Acts 14:23; or involuntary: Acts 27:33, 2 Corinthians 11:27.

6:19-24 **Save Treasures on Earth versus Save Treasures in Heaven** (4th of 5)

(30) ¹⁹ Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust does corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: ²⁰ But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust does corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: ²¹ For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. ²² The light of the body is the eye: if therefore your eye be single, your whole body shall be full of light. ²³ But if your eye be evil, your whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you be darkness, how great is that darkness! ²⁴ No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

Matthew Chapter 6

Understanding for the New & Living Way

6:25-34 **Do Not Worry, but Seek and Trust in our Heavenly Father's Provision** (5th of 5)

(31) ²⁵ Therefore I say to you, **Take no thought for your life**, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than food, and the body than raiment? ²⁶ Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet ^a your heavenly Father feeds them. Are ye not much better than they? ²⁷ Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit to his stature? ²⁸ And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: ²⁹ And yet I say to you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. ³⁰ Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is cast into the oven, [shall he] not much more [clothe] you, O ye of little faith? ³¹ Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? ³² (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knows that ye have need of all these things. ³³ **But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added to you.** ³⁴ **Take therefore no thought for the next day: for the next day shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient to the day is the evil thereof.**

^a This is no excuse for laziness, 2 Thessalonians 3:10

Matthew Chapter 7

Wisdom for the New & Living Way (Hebrews 12:24)

(4 min read)

7:1-6 **Judge Not** (1-2), **Judge Self** (3-5a), **Judge Brother** (5b), **Judge Not the Unsaved** (6)

(32) ^{1a} Judge not, that ye be not judged. ² For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. ³ And why behold you the splinter that is in your **brother's eye**, but consider not the beam that is in your own **eye**? ⁴ Or how will you say to your **brother**, Let me pull out the splinter out of your **eye**; and, behold, a beam is in your own **eye**? ⁵ You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own **eye**; and then shall you **see** clearly to cast out the splinter out of your **brother's eye**. ^{6b} Give not that which is **holy** to the **dogs**, neither cast ye your **pearls** before **swine**, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and tear you.

^a This is not a prohibition to judge, but directions on how to judge rightly, first ourselves – then other believers, for our and their eternal benefit. Some examples of evil and good judgment in the greater context of the New Testament follow:

Judge not because it is Evil

In appearance (poor)	John 7:24, James 2:1-4
Wrongly to weaker brethren	Romans 14:1-5
Service of another believer	1 Cor 4:3-5
Your brother	James 4:11-12

Judge because it is Good

1 Corinthians 6:1-8 (angels, not court)
Mt 18:15-17, 1 Cor 5:12-13
Mt 7:15-20 (fruit), 1 Cor 14:29, 1 John 4:1
2 Corinthians 6:14
1 Timothy 3:1-13 (pastor and deacon)
1 Thessalonians 5:14

To judge right we must know what the Bible says. In the Old Testament, only the kings sat in the gates for judgment. **Now in the New Testament, all believers are called to judge, discerning good and evil (Hebrews 5:14);** for our sanctification and preparation to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Judge not the unregenerate (1 Tim 5:24, Titus 3:5).

^b That which is holy and precious as a pearl is our righteous judgment. The dogs and swine are the unbelievers who reject the Savior, therefore they do not know of the new life in Christ. The true Christian needs discernment to distinguish a swine of dog and make a judgment when and how this verse is applicable, with wisdom from above (James 3:13-18).

Note: Judgment of mercy and truth require prayer as in Matthew 7:7-11 & Lu 11. Judgment in the Old Testament: Gen 4 Cain and Abel; Job 29:7, 31:21 in the gates; Ex 11:1-25 Moses and 70 elders; Judges until Samuel, Good Kings and Prophets for Mercy & Truth Ps 25:10, 85:10, 89:14, 115:1; Pr 3:3, 14:22, 16:6, 20:28; Is 16:5, Hos 4:1 Mic 7:20. The shadows of the substance (Col 2:17) and for our learning (Ro 15:4). Judgment in the New Testament: New Testament 2 John 3, not the Sanhedrin or priests..

7:7-12 **Ask, Seek, and Knock** (a call to prayer and action, Luke 11:9-13)

(33) ⁷ ^a Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: ⁸ For everyone that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened. ⁹ Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? ¹⁰ Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? ¹¹ If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give **good things** to them that ask Him?

^a **This passage is directly taught with prayer in Luke 11:9-10, 11-13.** How do we have the wisdom to judge ourselves, repent and be cleansed (1 John 1:9), and then judge others? By prayer, which gives us wisdom from above. vs 11: Psalm 84:11, Isaiah 63:7. Good things is the **Holy Spirit** in Luke 11:13.

(34) ¹² ^a Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should **do** to you, **do** ye even so to them: for ^b this is the law and the prophets.

^a This is known as the "golden rule" or royal law (James 2:8). To follow Christ is not only abstinence from sin, it is goodness toward others; believers as the household of God first, but also toward unbelievers and our enemy..

^b We can fulfill the law and the prophets in Christ and Christ in us. Galatians 2:20, Romans 8:4. This heavenly truth is not taught well from many pulpits and teachers. May the Holy Spirit speak to the heart of the believer who thirsts and hungers after God's righteousness.

7:13-14 **The Wide Gate to Death or the Straight Narrow Gate to Life** (or, 1st of 3)
(7:13-14 sets the stage for 7:15-27 warnings)

(35) ¹³ ^a Enter ye in at the **straight gate**: for **wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and many there be which go in there** at: ¹⁴ Because **straight is the gate, and narrow is the way**, which leads unto **life**, and **few there be that find it**.

^a This is a definite change of thought and a link between the proceeding and the following teachings. The Pharisees and scribes, and false religious systems, and philosophies of men which are unsaved, can influence the believer's blessings on earth and eternal rewards in heaven. Warnings follow until the end of chapter 7. (Rev 2-3 to the 7 churches, "He that overcomes is truly saved.")

7:15-20 **Evil Fruit from a Evil Tree or Good Fruit from a Good Tree** (or, 2nd of 3)

(36) ¹⁵ ^a Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but **inwardly they are ravening wolves**. ¹⁶ Ye shall know them by their **fruits**. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? ¹⁷ Even so every **good tree** brings forth **good fruit**; but a **corrupt tree** brings forth **evil fruit**. ¹⁸ A **good tree** cannot bring forth **evil fruit**, neither [can] a **corrupt tree** bring forth **good fruit**. ¹⁹ Every **tree** that brings not forth **good fruit** is **hewn down, and cast into the fire**. ²⁰ **Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them**.

^a These people are called false teachers in 2 Peter 2:1 and their ways in the rest of chapter 2 and Jude; as well as 1 John 4:1, Ez 22:27, John 10:12, Acts 20:29. It is appropriate for Jesus to conclude his first teaching in this manner. John spoke of trees and fruit as good or evil in Matthew 3:10 and Luke 3:9

Note: Jeremiah 24 figs in two baskets. James 3:12 fruits. John15:1-8 fruit and being cast into the fire.

7:21-23 **Many "Christians" Never Knew the Lord Jesus Christ**

(37) ²¹ Not everyone that says to Me, "Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven." ²² Many will say to Me in that day, "Lord, Lord, have we not **prophesied in Your name?** and in Your name have **cast out demons?** and in Your name done **many wonderful works?** ²³ And ^a then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity."

^a Revelation 20:11-15. A miracle is by supernatural divine or satanic power.

Matthew Chapter 7

Wisdom for the New & Living Way

7:24-27 *Build Your House upon the Rock or Build Your House on the Sand* (3rd of 3)

(38) ²⁴ Therefore whosoever ^a **hears** these sayings of Mine, and ^b **does them**, I will liken him unto a **wise man**, which **built his house upon a rock**: ²⁵ And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; **and it fell not**: for it was founded upon a rock. ²⁶ And everyone that **hears** these sayings of Mine, and **does them not**, shall be likened to a **foolish man**, which **built his house upon the sand**: ²⁷ And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: **and great was the fall of it**.

^a 3 similar activities of the wise & foolish man: Hear – House – Havoc.

^b 3 different activities and consequences of the wise & foolish: do/do not – rock/sand – fell not/fell.

The one that hears and does builds his house upon the rock. The teachings of Jesus Christ and obedience to those teachings are the solid rock, John 13:17. Consider reading this passage in present tense verbs.

7:28-29 *Conclusion and Teaching with Authority*

²⁸ And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the **people** were astonished at His doctrine:

²⁹ For He **taught** them as [one] having ^a authority, and not as the scribes.

^a This authority will cause us to be bold after we receive the Holy Spirit, John 1:12. "Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marveled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus" **Acts 4:13**. Being with Jesus through knowing and doing what is written in Scripture gives us authority. Teach, Preach, Heal – Mt 4:23-5:1.

Note: The scribes taught while subject to the priests, whom interpreted and enforced the law.

Matthew Chapter 8

8:1-3 *Jesus Cleanses the Leper*

(39) ¹ When he was coming down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. ² And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if You will, You can make me clean. ³ And Jesus put forth [His] hand, and touched him, saying, **I will; be clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed**.

⁴ And Jesus says unto him, **See you tell no man; but go your way, show yourself to the priest, and offer the gift that ^a Moses commanded, for a testimony to them**.

^a First of 80x Moses referred to in the New Testament. The law of priest verifying cleanness in Leviticus 14

8:4-13 *Jesus Heals the Centurion's Servant*

(40) ⁵ Now when Jesus had entered into Capernaum, there came to him a centurion, beseeching him, ⁶ And saying, Lord, my servant lies at home paralyzed, grievously tormented. ⁷ And Jesus says unto him, **I will come and heal him**. ⁸ The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that you should come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed. ⁹ For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this [man], Go, and he goes; and to another, Come, and he comes; and to my servant, Do this, and he does [it]. ¹⁰ When Jesus heard [it], he marveled, and said to them that followed, **Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel**. ¹¹ **And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven**. ¹² **But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth**. ¹³ And Jesus said unto the centurion, **Go your way; and as you have believed, [so] be it done unto you**. And his servant was healed in the selfsame hour.

8:14-17 *Peter's Mother is Healed and Serves*

(41) ¹⁴ And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. ¹⁵ And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered to them. ¹⁶ When the even was come, they brought to him many that were controlled by demons: and he cast out the spirits with [his] word, and healed all that were sick: ¹⁷ That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, **Himself took our infirmities, and bare [our] sicknesses**.

Matthew Chapter 8

8:18-27 *Jesus is Weeding Out the False from the True Disciples (Luke 9:57-58)*

(42) ¹⁸ Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart to the other side. ¹⁹ And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow you whithersoever you goes. ²⁰ And Jesus says to him, **The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air [have] nests; but the Son of Man has no where to lay [His] head.** ²¹ And another of His disciples said unto Him, Lord, allow me first to go and bury my father. ²² But Jesus said unto him, **Follow Me; and let the dead bury their dead.**

(43) ²³ And when He was entered into a ship, His disciples followed Him. ²⁴ And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but He was asleep. ²⁵ And His disciples came to [Him], and awoke Him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish. ²⁶ And He says unto them, **Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then He arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.** ²⁷ But the men marveled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey Him!

8:28-34 *Demons Go into Herd of Pigs and then Run off Cliff to Drown*

(44) ²⁸ And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two controlled by demons, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. ²⁹ And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with you, Jesus, you Son of God? are you come hither to torment us before the time? ³⁰ And there was a good way off from them a herd of many swine feeding. ³¹ So the demons begged him, saying, If you cast us out, allow us to go away into the herd of swine. ³² And He said unto them, **"Go."** And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and, behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters. ³³ And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told everything, and what was befallen to those ^a controlled by the demons. ³⁴ And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they begged [him] that he would depart out of their coasts.

Matthew Chapter 9

9:1-8 *Forgiveness of Sins is the Greatest Miracle*

(45) ¹ And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. ² And, behold, they brought to him a man paralyzed, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the paralyzed; **Son, be of good cheer; your sins be forgiven you.** ³ And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This [man] blasphemeth. ⁴ And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, **Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? ⁵ For whether is easier, to say, [Your] sins be forgiven you; or to say, Arise, and walk? ⁶ But that ye may know that the Son of Man has authority on earth to forgive sins,** (then says He unto the paralyzed,) **Arise, take up your bed, and go to your house.** ⁷ And he arose, and departed to his house. ⁸ But when the multitudes saw [it], they marveled, and glorified God, which had given such authority to men.

9:9-17 *Follow Me New Bottles with New Wine: Eat with Sinners, Teach those in Error, and Fasting*

(46) ⁹ And as Jesus passed forth from there, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and He says unto him, **Follow me. And he arose, and followed Him.** ¹⁰ And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at food in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with Him and His disciples. ¹¹ And when the Pharisees saw [it], they said to His disciples, Why eat your Master with publicans and sinners? ¹² But when Jesus heard [that], He said unto them, **They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. ¹³ But go ye and learn what [that] means, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.** ¹⁴ Then came unto him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but your disciples fast not? ¹⁵ And Jesus said unto them, **"Can the children of the bride chamber mourn, as long as the Bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the Bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then they will fast."**

(47) ¹⁶ **No man puts a piece of new cloth to an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up takes from the garment, and the tare is made worse. ¹⁷ Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runs out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.**

Matthew Chapter 9

9:18-26 *Jesus Raises a Dead Girl and Heals a Bleeding Woman*

(48) ¹⁸ While he spoke these things to them, behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay your hand upon her, and she shall live. ¹⁹ And Jesus arose, and followed him, and [so did] his disciples. ²⁰ And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind [him], and touched the hem of his garment: ²¹ For she said within herself, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole. ²² But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, **Daughter, be of good comfort; your faith has made you whole.** And the woman was made whole from that hour. ²³ And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise, ²⁴ He said unto them, **"Give place: for the maid is not dead, but sleeps."** And they laughed Him to scorn. ²⁵ But when the people were put forth, He went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose. ²⁶ And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

9:27-31 *Jesus Heals 2 Blind Men*

(49) ²⁷ And when Jesus departed there, two blind men followed Him, crying, and saying, "[You] Son of David, have mercy on us." ²⁸ And when He was come into the house, the blind men came unto him: and Jesus says unto them, **"Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto Him, "Yes, Lord."** ²⁹ Then touched He their eyes, saying, **"According to your faith be it to you."** ³⁰ And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straightly charged them, saying, See [that] no man know [it]. ³¹ But they, when they were departed, spread abroad His fame in all that country.

9:32-38 *Jesus Sends a Demon out of a Man (32-34), teaching, preaching, and healing (35-37)*

(50) ³² As they went out, behold, they brought to Him a dumb man controlled by a demon. ³³ And when the demon was cast out, the dumb spoke: and the multitudes marveled, saying, "It was never so seen in Israel." ³⁴ But the Pharisees said, "He casts out demons through the prince of the demons."

(51) ³⁵ And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, **teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people.** ³⁶ But when He saw the multitudes, He was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. ³⁷ Then says He unto His disciples, **"The harvest truly is plenteous, but the laborers are few; ³⁸ Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that He will send forth laborers into His harvest."**

Matthew Chapter 10

Gems

10:1-4 *Jesus Appoints 12 Disciples as Apostles (Mark 3:13-19, Luke 6:12-16 prayed all night)*

(52) ¹ And when He had called to [Him] **His twelve disciples**, He gave them **authority** [against] unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease. ² Now the names of the **twelve apostles** are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James [the son] of Zebedee, and John his brother; ³ Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James [the son] of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddaeus; ⁴ Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed Him.

10:5-42 *Jesus Sends Out the 12 Apostles to Israel*

⁵ These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, **"Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into [any] city of the Samaritans enter ye not: ⁶ But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. ⁷ And as ye go, **preach**, saying, "The kingdom of heaven is at hand." ⁸ Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out demons: freely ye have received, freely give. ⁹ Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, ¹⁰ Nor scrip for [your] journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his food. ¹¹ And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go there. ¹² And when ye come into a house, salute it. ¹³ And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return unto you. ¹⁴ And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet. ¹⁵ Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the Day of Judgment, than for that city."**

Matthew Chapter 10

Fear Not Religion (17), nor Government (18-20), nor Family (21, 35-37), nor Men's (22-23) Hate for the Gospel

(53) ¹⁶ Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. ¹⁷ But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; ¹⁸ And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. ¹⁹ But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. ²⁰ For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaks in you. ²¹ And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against [their] parents, and cause them to be put to death. ²² And ye shall be hated of all for my name's sake: but he that endures to the end shall be saved. ²³ But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

(54) ²⁴ The disciple is not above [his] master, nor the servant above his lord. ²⁵ It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more [shall they call] them of his household? ²⁶ **Fear them not therefore:** for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. ²⁷ What I tell you in darkness, [that] speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, [that] preach ye upon the housetops. ²⁸ And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but **rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.** ²⁹ Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. ³⁰ But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. ³¹ Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. ³² Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father which is in heaven. ³³ But whosoever shall deny Me before men, him will I also deny before My Father which is in heaven. ³⁴ **Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.** ³⁵ For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. ³⁶ And a man's foes [shall be] they of his own household. ³⁷ He that loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me: and he that loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. ³⁸ **And he that takes not his cross, and follows after Me, is not worthy of Me.** ³⁹ He that finds his life shall lose it: and he that loses his life for My sake shall find it.

Receive prophet, righteous man, disciple for a Reward

(55) ⁴⁰ He that receives You receives Me, and he that receives Me receives Him that sent Me. ⁴¹ He that receives a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a **prophet's reward**; and he that receives a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a **righteous man's reward**. ⁴² And whosoever shall give to drink to one of these little ones a cup of cold [water] only in the name of a **disciple**, verily I say unto you, he shall in **no wise lose his reward**.

Note: The pastor or elder is lead prophet, righteous man, and disciple - for the flock. 1 Tim 4:8.

Matthew Chapter 11 11:1-19 ***He Must Increase, but I Decrease*** (John 3:30)

11:1-6 ***Jesus Comforts John the Baptist*** (who is in prison)

(56) ¹ And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding **His twelve** disciples, He departed there to **teach** and to **preach** in their cities. ² Now when John had heard in prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, ³ And said unto Him, "Are You He that should come, or do we look for another?" ⁴ Jesus answered and said unto them, "Go and show John again those things which ye do hear and see: ⁵ The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel **preached** to them. ⁶ And blessed is whosoever shall not be offended in Me."

Note: verse 5 is Isaiah 35:5 around 1.5 years into Jesus' ministry. John dies in Mt 14:1-12.

Matthew Chapter 11

11:7-15 **Jesus Exalts John the Baptist** (*Is 40:3, Malachi 3:1, 4:5, Mark 1:2, Luke 7:27*)

(57) ⁷ And as they departed, Jesus began to **say unto the multitudes concerning John**, "What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind? ⁸ But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft [clothing] are in kings' houses. ⁹ But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yes, I say unto you, and **more than a prophet.** ¹⁰ For this is [he], of whom it is written, **Behold, I send My messenger before Your face, which shall prepare Your way before You.** ¹¹ Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there has not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. ¹² And **from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force.** ¹³ For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. ¹⁴ And if ye will receive [it], this is Elijah, which was for to come. ¹⁵ He that has ears to hear, let him hear.

Note: Ears-hear: 1st of 22x, 18 spiritual, 4 Israel (Ro 11:8). Messenger is a man (5x) or angel (181x). John begins "Repent for your sins, bring fruit worthy of repentance" Satan is violent and enraged, Luke 11:21-22 when the 70 disciples sent to the gentiles to prepare the way, return.

11:16-19 **The Unsaved will always Complain, Exalt Wisdom**

(58) ¹⁶ But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like to children sitting in the markets, and **calling** unto their fellows, ¹⁷ And saying, **We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.** ¹⁸ For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, he has a demon. ¹⁹ The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But **wisdom** is justified of her children.

Note: vs 17 Brandon in Play the Flute thinks students do not hear him. Raise the white flag to surrender.

11:20-24 **Day of Judgment More Severe with More Light** (*John 9:1-5, miracles by Apostles*)

(59) ²⁰ Then began He to upbraid the cities wherein most of His **mighty works** were done, because they repented not: ²¹ **Woe** to you, **Chorazin!** woe to you, **Bethsaida!** for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in **Tyre and Sidon**, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. ²² But I say unto you, It shall be **more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon** at the **Day of Judgment**, than for you. ²³ And you, **Capernaum**, which are exalted to heaven, shall be brought down to ^a Hades: for if the mighty works, which have been done in you, had been done in **Sodom**, it would have remained until this day. ²⁴ But I say unto you, That it shall be **more tolerable for the land of Sodom** in the **Day of Judgment, than for you.**

^a Greek "hades," or place of the dead, corresponds with the word translated "hell," *she'ol* in context of *Old Testament passages*. Gehenna used 12x is translated hell in context of eternal torment and fire, waiting for the lake of fire in Revelation 19:20, 20:10, 20:14, 20:15, 21:8. Day of Judgment, Heb 9:27, Rev 21:27. The Constitution of the U.S.A. limits man's government while recognizing God's government.

11:25-30 **Jesus Prays** (25-27, *Lu 11:21-22*) **then Comforts those who Learn of Him** (28-30)

(60) ²⁵ At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank you, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because You have **hid** these things from the wise and prudent, and have **revealed** them unto babes. ²⁶ Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in Your sight. ²⁷ All things are delivered unto Me of My Father: and no man knows the Son, but the Father; neither knows any man the Father, save the Son, and to whomsoever the **Son will reveal [Him].** ²⁸ **Come unto Me**, all [ye] that **labor** and are **heavy laden**, and I will **give you rest.** ²⁹ **Take My yoke** upon you, and **learn of Me**; for I am **meek and lowly in heart**: and ye shall find **rest** unto your **souls.** ³⁰ For **My yoke** is **easy**, and **My burden** is **light.**"

Note: Are you experiencing the easy and light way to follow Jesus, or are you laboring and burdened. Take his yoke upon you where Jesus is the other ox with you. All, includes the gentiles and the church. (Matthew 4:15, Isaiah 11:10). Mercy is more with more light. John 3:30 – Phil 4:13, Jn 5:30, 15:5. Learn of Me: OT – Deut 7x, Hear, learn (fear God 4x), keep, do, teach. NT: Phil 4:9, 2 Tim 3:14.

Matthew Chapter 12

12:1-8 *The Past Sabbath and the Law (1-5) or the Present Lord of the Sabbath (6-8)*

(61) ¹ At that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and His disciples were a hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. ² But when the **Pharisees** saw [it], they said unto Him, Behold, Your disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day. ³ But He said unto them, "Have ye not read what David did, when he was a hungered, and they that were with him; ⁴ How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the showbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? /Deut 23:25/ ⁵ Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? /Nu 28:9-10/ ⁶ But I say unto you, That in this place is [One] **greater than the temple.** ⁷ But if ye had known what [this] means, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, /Hosea 6:6/ ye would not have condemned the guiltless. ⁸ For the Son of Man is Lord even of the sabbath day." /NT Sabbath: Col 2:16-17, Heb 4/

12:9-13 *Jesus Heals a man's Withered Hand on the Sabbath in their (13:54) Synagogue*

(62) ⁹ And when He was departed there, He went into their synagogue: ¹⁰ And, behold, there was a man which had [his] hand withered. And they asked Him, saying, "Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath days?" **that they might accuse Him.** ¹¹ And He said unto them, "What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift [it] out? ¹² How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath days. ¹³ Then says He unto the man, "Stretch forth your hand. And he stretched [it] forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other."

12:14-21 *Jesus the Meek and Lowly King withdraws from Israel (Isaiah 41:9, 42:1-4)*

(63) ¹⁴ Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against Him, how they might destroy Him. ¹⁵ But when Jesus knew [it], He withdrew Himself from there: and great multitudes followed Him, and He healed them all; /Jesus in Ps 103:3, Mt 4:23-24, 8:16, 9:35, 10:1, 15:30-31, Mk 16:17-18, Acts 5:15-16 & 10:38 Peter, 8:6-8 Philip, 19:11-12 Paul, 1 Cor 12:9 gifts/ ¹⁶ And charged them that they should not make Him known: ¹⁷ That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, ¹⁸ Behold My Servant, whom I have chosen; My beloved, in whom My soul is well pleased: I will put My Spirit upon Him, /at baptism/ and He shall show judgment to the Gentiles. /when/ ¹⁹ He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear His voice in the streets. ²⁰ A bruised reed shall He not break, and smoking flax shall He not quench, till He send forth judgment to victory /tribulation to 2nd coming/. ²¹ And in His name shall the Gentiles trust. /Acts 10- Rev 4/

12:22-37 *Miraculous Healing / Blasphemy against the Works of the Holy Spirit by Jesus Christ*

(64) ²² Then was brought to Him one controlled by a demon, blind, and dumb: and He healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spoke and saw. ²³ And all the people were amazed, and said, "Is not this the **Son of David?**" ²⁴ But when the **Pharisees heard** [it], they said, "This [Fellow] does not cast out demons, but by Beelzebub the prince of the demons." ²⁵ And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, "Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: ²⁶ And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? ²⁷ And if I by Beelzebub cast out demons, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. ²⁸ But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. ²⁹ Or else how can one enter into a **strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man?** and then he will spoil his house. ³⁰ He that is not with Me is against Me; and he that gathers not with Me scatters abroad." ³¹ Wherefore I say unto you, "All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy [against] the Spirit shall not be forgiven unto men. ³² And whosoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaks against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the [world] to come. /the last straw is when the Pharisees heard Jesus was the Son of David/

(65) ³³ Either make the **tree good**, and his **fruit good**; or else make the **tree corrupt**, and his **fruit corrupt**: for the **tree** is known by [his] **fruit.** ³⁴ **O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things?** for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. ³⁵ A good man out of the good treasure of the heart brings forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things. ³⁶ But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the **day of judgment.** ³⁷ For by your words you shall be justified, and by your words you shall be condemned." /fruit & tree in Matthew 6. Condemned – unbelievers, Loss of reward - believers/

Matthew Chapter 12

12:38-45 ***Jonah and Solomon have less Judgment than "this Wicked Generation"***

(66) ³⁸ Then certain of the **scribes and of the Pharisees** answered, saying, "Master, we would see a sign from You." ³⁹ But He answered and said unto them, "An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah: ⁴⁰ For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. ⁴¹ The **men of Nineveh** shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and, behold, a **greater than Jonah is here.** /2 partial days according to Jewish thought, any part of day expressed as a full day. Same as brother./

(67) ⁴² The **queen of the south** shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a **greater than Solomon is here.** ⁴³ When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walks through dry places, seeking rest, and finds none. ⁴⁴ Then he says, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he finds [it] empty, swept, and garnished. ⁴⁵ Then goes he, and takes with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last [state] of that man is worse than the first. **Even so shall it be also to this wicked generation."**

Note: This refers to the Nation of Israel, rejecting Jesus Christ unto death. Jesus is greater than the temple and Sabbath Day (the Law), greater than Jonah (the prophets), greater than Solomon (wisdom); this is the blasphemy of the Holy Spirit unto their own generation's spiritual death.

12:46-50 ***Jesus Uses His Family for a Teaching Moment*** (Psalm 69:8, Mark 3:21, 31-35)

(68) ⁴⁶ While He yet talked to the people, behold, [His] mother and His brethren stood outside, desiring to speak with Him. ⁴⁷ Then one said unto Him, "Behold, Your mother and Your brethren stand outside, desiring to speak with You." ⁴⁸ But He answered and said unto him that told Him, "**Who is My mother? and who are My brethren?"** ⁴⁹ And He stretched forth His hand toward His disciples, and said, "Behold My mother and My brethren! ⁵⁰ For whosoever shall do the will of My Father which is in heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother."

Note: Jesus had 4 biological brothers named in Mark 6:3. Jesus' mother Mary is equal to all other women that believe Jesus is the Christ and the only Son of God. The New Testament in Greek makes this clear.

Matthew Chapter 13 Seven Parables: 1st Four to multitudes and last 3 to Disciples

Outline

13:1-9 ***1 - Parable of the Sower, the Seed and 4 Types of Soil***

(69) ¹ The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the seaside. ² And great multitudes were gathered together to him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. ³ And he spoke many things to them in ^a parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; ⁴ And when he sowed, some [seeds] fell by the **wayside**, and the fowls came and devoured them up: ⁵ Some fell upon **stony places**, where they had not much earth: and immediately they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: ⁶ And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. ⁷ And some fell among **thorns**; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: ⁸ But other fell into **good ground**, and brought forth fruit, some a hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. ⁹ Who has ears to hear, let him hear.

^a To understand a parable we must understand the spiritual laws of context and expositional consistency.

Here we have the main characters and 4 types of soil:

Sower – Jesus or those in Christ (vs 37)

Seed – the Bible message about Jesus Christ's life, death, resurrection, and return (vs 19)

Wayside – those who won't hear, the Pharisees (vs 19), Fowls (birds) – the devil and his demons (vs 19)

Stony places – those who hear with joy, without repentance; then trials come (vs 20-21)

Thorns – those who time allows only for the cares of this world and delight in riches (vs 22)

Good ground – those who are saved, or regenerated, evidenced by bearing fruit (vs 23, Gal 5:22-23)

Matthew Chapter 13

13:10-17 ***The Purpose of Parables Explained***

(70) ¹⁰ And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speak you to them in parables? ¹¹ He answered and said unto them, Because it is given to you to **know the ^a mysteries of the kingdom of heaven**, but to ^b them it is not given. ¹² For whosoever has, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever has not, from him shall be taken away even that he has. ¹³ Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. ¹⁴ And in them is ^c fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which says, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: ¹⁵ For this people's heart is waxed gross, and [their] ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with [their] eyes, and hear with [their] ears, and should understand with [their] heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. ¹⁶ But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. ¹⁷ For verily I say to you, That many prophets and righteous [men] have desired to see [those things] which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear [those things] which ye hear, and have not heard them.

^a A mystery in the New Testament is a fact never known about man, which man could never learn apart from divine revelation, but which is now revealed. This mystery covers the hidden valley between the prophetic mountains of Christ's 1st coming and Mount Calvary and his 2nd coming to the Mount of Olives.

^b them are those who are in the multitude and reject Christ because they are not poor in spirit (Matthew 5:3)

^c Isaiah 6:9-10. This is the same as Jesus says at the end of each letter to the 7 churches, "he that has an ear to hear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the church."

13:18-23 ***Jesus Interprets the Parable of the Sower, the Seed and 4 Types of Soil***

(71) ¹⁸ ^a Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. ¹⁹ When any one hears the word of the kingdom, and understands [it] not, then comes the wicked [one], and catches away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the **way side**. ²⁰ But he that received the seed into **stony places**, the same is he that hears the word, and anon with joy receives it; ²¹ Yet has he not root in himself, but endures for a while: for when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, by and by he is offended. ²² He also that received seed among the **thorns** is he that hears the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. ²³ But he that received seed into the **good ground** is he that hears the word, and understands [it]; which also bears fruit, and brings forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

^a The interpretation of the first parable is foundation and key to all the rest of the parables in Matthew

13:24-30 ***2 - Parable of the Wheat and Tares***

(72) ²⁴ Another parable put he forth to them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened to a man which sowed good seed in his field: ²⁵ But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. ²⁶ But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. ²⁷ So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, did not you sow good seed in your field? from whence then has it tares? ²⁸ He said to them, An enemy has done this. The servants said unto him, Will you then that we go and gather them up? ²⁹ But he said, ^a No; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. ³⁰ Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

^a Generally we must wait for the reapers to gather the tares at the end. However, in our own family and local ministry, we must protect the sheep as Paul did with the false apostles and Judiazers in 2 Corinthians and Galatians, as well as Peter in 2 Peter 2 against the false teachers within the vineyard of the Lord.

Matthew Chapter 13

13:31-32 3 – Parable of the Mustard Seed and Birds

(73) ³¹ Another parable put he forth to them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: ³² Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the great among herbs, and becomes a tree, so that the ^a birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

^a The fowls and birds of the air are both representative of evil, which is consistent in context and in the whole of Scripture.

13:33-35 4 – Parable of the Leaven Hidden in Bread

(74) ³³ Another parable spoke he to them; The kingdom of heaven is like to ^a leaven, which a ^b woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. ³⁴ All these things spoke Jesus to the multitude in parables; and without a parable spoke he not to them: ³⁵ That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the ^c prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will ^d utter things which have been kept secret from the ^e foundation of the world.

^a Leaven represents the evil doctrines

^b Woman is the wicked false teacher, like spiritual Babylon, Jezebel, Mary Eddy Baker. Most leaders of cultic religious systems are women. Revelation 2:20, 1 Corinthians 14:34, 1 Timothy 2:12

^c Psalm 78:2

^d God does this when Jesus speaks in parables.

^e Matthew 25:34, Luke 11:50, Hebrews 11:3, 9:6, Rev 13:8, 17:8 (7x)

13:36-43 Parable of the Wheat and Tares Explained

(75) ³⁶ Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came to him, saying, Declare to us the parable of the tares of the field. ³⁷ He answered and said to them, He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; ³⁸ The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked [one]; ³⁹ The enemy that sowed them is the demon; the harvest is the end of the ^a age; and the reapers are the angels. ⁴⁰ As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. ⁴¹ The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; ⁴² And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. ⁴³ Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. ^b Who has ears to hear, let him hear.

^a World ^{KJV}, Matthew 3:24, Hebrews 9:26. The wheat and tares appear the same when they begin, and not a noticeable difference until time reveals.

^b The same spiritual law of the 7 churches in Revelation 2-3.

13:44- 5 - Parable of the Man that buys a Field for the Treasure

(76) ⁴⁴ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to ^a treasure hid in a ^b field; the which when a man has found, he hides, and for joy thereof goes and sells all that he has, and buys that field.

^a The treasure cannot be our salvation, it is free and Christ paid the price as our redeemer, Eph 2:8-9.

^b The field is the world, 13:38, 2 Corinthians 8:9

13:45-46 6 - Parable of the Merchant Buying a Great Pearl

(77) ⁴⁵ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to a merchant man, ^a seeking goodly pearls: ⁴⁶ Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

^a The pearl of great price is Jesus Christ. The pearl is an unclean food to the Jew, but precious to God and the gentiles, representing the gentile. The merchant man is Jesus Christ, the same as in the previous parable, but sequentially after in time.

Matthew Chapter 13

13:47-50 **7 – Parable of the Separation of the Good from the Bad Fish**

(78) ⁴⁷ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like to a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: ⁴⁸ Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. ⁴⁹ So shall it be at the end of the age: the ^a angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, ⁵⁰ And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

^a Speaking of at the end of the great tribulation when Jesus Christ returns to Mount Olivet and reigns on the earth from Jerusalem. Revelation 19:11-16.

^b We can say yes today as the disciples said yes then. However, with more confidence like they had after Acts 2 when they received the Holy Spirit.

13:51-52 **8 - Parable of the Scribe's Treasure**

(79) ⁵¹ Jesus says to them, *Have ye understood all these things?* They say to him, ^a Yes, Lord. ⁵² Then said he to them, *Therefore every scribe [which is] instructed on the kingdom of heaven is like to a man [that is] a ^b householder, which brings forth out of his treasure [things] new and old.*

^a We can say yes today as the disciples said yes then. However, with more confidence like they had after Acts 2 when they received the Holy Spirit.

^b The house is all 66 books of the Bible. New Testament (revealed mysteries) and Old Testament (concealed mysteries).

Parable 1 Wisdom for Today

Parable 2 Judgment coming in the end

Parable 3-4 Wisdom for the body of Christ

Parable 5-6 Wisdom of God in Christ

Parable 7 Judgment coming in the end

Parable 8 Wisdom for Today

13:53-58 **Jesus Returns to Nazareth and is Rejected**

(80) ⁵³ And it came to pass, [that] when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed there. ⁵⁴ And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence has this [man] this wisdom, and [these] mighty works? ⁵⁵ Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, ^a James, and Joses, and Simon, and ^b Jude? ⁵⁶ And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then has this [man] all these things? ⁵⁷ And they were offended in him. But Jesus said to them, *A prophet is not without honor, save in his own country, and in his own house.* ⁵⁸ And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.

^a James was a leader in the early congregation in Acts 15, and wrote the letter of James.

^b Jude wrote the letter of Jude, the last book before Revelation.

Matthew Chapter 14

14:1-12 *John the Baptist's Death by Herod*

(81) ¹ At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, ² And said to his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore mighty works do show forth themselves in him. ³ For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put [him] in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife. ⁴ For John said unto him, It is not lawful for you to have her. ⁵ And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet. ⁶ But when Herod's birthday was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod. ⁷ Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask. ⁸ And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptist's head in a charger. ⁹ And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded [it] to be given [her]. ¹⁰ And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. ¹¹ And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought [it] to her mother. ¹² And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

14:13-14 *Jesus Continues His Servanthood*

(82) ¹³ When Jesus heard [of it], he departed there by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard [thereof], they followed him on foot out of the cities. ¹⁴ And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

(83) ¹⁵ And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves food. ¹⁶ **But Jesus said to them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat.** ¹⁷ And they say to him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes. ¹⁸ **He said, Bring them hither to me.** ¹⁹ **And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to [his] disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.** ²⁰ And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full. ²¹ And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

(84) ²² And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him to the other side, while he sent the multitudes away. ²³ And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone. ²⁴ But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary. ²⁵ And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went to them, walking on the sea. ²⁶ And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear. ²⁷ But straightway Jesus spoke to them, saying, **Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.** ²⁸ And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be you, bid me come to you on the water. ²⁹ **And he said, Come.** And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. ³⁰ But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. ³¹ And immediately Jesus stretched forth [his] hand, and caught him, and said unto him, **O you of little faith, wherefore did you doubt?** ³² And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased. ³³ Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, of a truth you are the Son of God.

(85) ³⁴ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret. ³⁵ And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about, and brought to him all that were diseased; ³⁶ And begged him that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

Matthew Chapter 15

(86) ¹ Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, ² Why do your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. ³ But he answered and said to them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? ⁴ For God commanded, saying, Honor your father and mother: and, He that curses father or mother, let him die the death. ⁵ But ye say, Whosoever shall say to [his] father or [his] mother, [It is] a gift, by whatsoever you might be profited by me; ⁶ And honor not his father or his mother, [he shall be free]. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. ⁷ [Ye] hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying, ⁸ This people draws near to me with their mouth, and honors me with [their] lips; but their heart is far from me. ⁹ But in vain they do worship me, teaching [for] doctrines the commandments of men.

(87) ¹⁰ And he called the multitude, and said to them, Hear, and understand: ¹¹ Not that which goes into the mouth defiles a man; but that which comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man. ¹² Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Know you that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying? ¹³ But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father has not planted, shall be rooted up. ¹⁴ Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. ¹⁵ Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare to us this parable. ¹⁶ And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding? ¹⁷ Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever enters in at the mouth goes into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? ¹⁸ But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. ¹⁹ For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: ²⁰ These are [the things] which defile a man: but to eat with unwashed hands defiles not a man.

15:21-28 Mercy to the Gentile Daughter by her Mother's Faith

(88) ²¹ Then Jesus went there, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. ²² And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried to him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, [you] Son of David; my daughter is grievously controlled by a demon. ²³ But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and begged him, saying, Send her away; for she cries after us. ²⁴ But he answered and said, I am not sent but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. ²⁵ Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. ²⁶ But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast [it] to dogs. ²⁷ And she said, Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table. ²⁸ Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is your faith: be it to you even as you will. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

(89) ²⁹ And Jesus departed from there, and came near to the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. ³⁰ And great multitudes came to him, having with them [those that were] lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them: ³¹ Insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

(90) ³² Then Jesus called his disciples [to him], and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. ³³ And his disciples say to him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude? ³⁴ And Jesus says to them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few little fishes. ³⁵ And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground. ³⁶ And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude. ³⁷ And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken [meat] that was left seven baskets full. ³⁸ And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children. ³⁹ And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

Matthew Chapter 16

(91) ¹ The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would show them a sign from heaven. ² He answered and said to them, When it is evening, ye say, [It will be] fair weather: for the sky is red. ³ And in the morning, [It will be] foul weather today: for the sky is red and gloomy. O [ye] hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not [discern] the signs of the times? ⁴ A wicked and adulterous generation seeks after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonah. And he left them, and departed. ⁵ And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

(92) ⁶ Then Jesus said to them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. ⁷ And they reasoned among themselves, saying, [It is] because we have taken no bread. ⁸ [Which] when Jesus perceived, he said to them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread? ⁹ Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? ¹⁰ Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? ¹¹ How is it that ye do not understand that I spoke [it] not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? ¹² Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

16:13-20 *The Retreat to Mount Hermon, A Conversation and Teaching*

(93) ¹³ When Jesus came into the coasts of Caesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, **Whom do men say that I the Son of man am?** ¹⁴ And they said, Some [say that you are] John the Baptist: some, Elijah; and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. ¹⁵ He says to them, **But whom say ye that I am?** ¹⁶ And Simon Peter answered and said, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. ¹⁷ And Jesus answered and said unto him, **Blessed are you, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood has not revealed [it] unto you, but My Father which is in heaven.** ¹⁸ And I say also unto you, That you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My congregation; and the gates of ^a Hades shall not prevail against it. ¹⁹ And I will give unto you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. ²⁰ Then He charged His disciples that they should tell no man that He was Jesus the Christ.

^a Greek *αἴης Hades*, "hades," or place of the dead. It corresponds with the word translated "hell," *שׁאול she'ol* in context of Old Testament passages; its usual signification, among the Hebrews, was "the lower world, the region of departed spirits." Used 11x in the New Testament; Matthew 2x, Mark 2x, Acts 2x, 1 Corinthians 1x, Revelation 4x. Gehenna is used 12x and translated hell in context to eternal torment and fire, waiting for the lake of fire in Revelation 20:14.

(94) ²¹ From that time forth began Jesus to show unto His disciples, how that He must go to Jerusalem, and allow many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. ²² Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from you, Lord: this shall not be to you. ²³ But He turned, and said unto Peter, **Get you behind Me, Satan: you are an offence unto Me: for you savor not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.**

16:24-28 *Teaching to Come after Jesus, Deny Self, Take up Our Cross and Follow Him*

(95) ²⁴ Then said Jesus to his disciples, **If any [man] will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me.** ²⁵ For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it. ²⁶ For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? ²⁷ For the Son of man shall come in the glory of His Father with His angels; and then He shall reward every man according to his works. ²⁸ Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in His kingdom.

Matthew Chapter 17

17:1-13 *On Mount Hermon: The Appearance of Moses and Elijah*

(96) ¹ And after six days Jesus takes Peter, James, and John his brother, and brings them up into a high mountain ^a by themselves, ² And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light. ³ And, behold, there appeared to them Moses and Elijah talking with him. ⁴ Then answered Peter, and said to Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if you will, let us make here three tabernacles; one for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. ⁵ While he yet spoke, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, **This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him.** ⁶ And when the disciples heard [it], they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. ⁷ And Jesus came and touched them, and said, **Arise, and be not afraid.** ⁸ And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only. ⁹ **And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.** ¹⁰ And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come? ¹¹ And Jesus answered and said to them, **Elijah truly shall first come, and restore all things.** ¹² **But I say unto you, That Elijah is come already, and they knew him not, but have done to him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man allow of them.** ¹³ Then the disciples understood that he spoke to them of John the Baptist.

^a Apart in KJV. Apart may seem to focus on the mountain, rather than the 2 original Greek works being translated by themselves which refers to people. The context indicates the location is MT Hermon mountain range up north in the Golan Heights and near where Jesus was, Caesarea Philippi (Mt 16:13).

17:14-21 *Down below a Multitude come to Jesus Disappointed with his Disciples; he Delivers the son*

(97) ¹⁴ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a [certain] man, kneeling down to him, and saying, ¹⁵ Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is lunatic, and sore vexed: for often times he falls into the fire, and oft into the water. ¹⁶ And I brought him to your disciples, and they could not cure him. ¹⁷ Then Jesus answered and said, **O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I allow you? bring him hither to me.** ¹⁸ And Jesus rebuked the demon; and he departed out of him: and the child was cured from that very hour. ¹⁹ Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out? ²⁰ And Jesus said unto them, **Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say to this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible to you.** ²¹ Howbeit this kind goes not out but by prayer and fasting.

(98) ²² And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, **The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men: ²³ And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.**

(99) ²⁴ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tax [money] came to Peter, and said, Does not your master pay tax? ²⁵ He says, Yes. **And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What think you, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tax? of their own children, or of strangers?** ²⁶ Peter says to him, Of strangers. Jesus says to him, **Then are the children free.** ²⁷ **Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go you to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first comes up; and when you have opened his mouth, you shall find a piece of money: that take, and give to them for me and you.**

The Backslider: Prevention and Recovery**18:1-4 *Part 1 – Conversion (Be saved: born again)***

(100) ¹ At the same time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? ² And Jesus called a little child to him, and set him in the midst of them, ³ And said, **Verily I say to you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.** ⁴ Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is great in the kingdom of heaven.

18:5-10 *Part 2 – Sin and Punishment (Beware: unsaved and saved)*

(101) ⁵ And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receives me. ⁶ But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and [that] he were drowned in the depth of the sea. ⁷ Woe to the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence come! ⁸ Wherefore if your hand or your foot offend you, cut them off, and cast them from you: it is better for you to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. ⁹ And if your eye offend you, pluck it out, and cast [it] from you: it is better for you to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire. ¹⁰ Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say to you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

18:11-14 *Parable of the Backslidden (stray) Sheep*

(102) ¹¹ For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. ¹² How think ye? if a man have a hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, does he not leave the ninety and nine, and goes into the mountains, and seeks that which is gone astray? ¹³ And if so be that he find it, verily I say to you, he rejoices more of that [sheep], than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. ¹⁴ Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

18:15-20 *Part 3 - Sin and Forgiveness (Be holy: saved to saved)*

(103) ¹⁵ Moreover if your brother shall sin against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone: if he shall hear you, you have gained your brother. ¹⁶ But if he will not hear [you, then] take with you one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. ¹⁷ And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell [it] to the congregation: but if he neglect to hear the congregation, let him be to you as a heathen man and a publican. ¹⁸ Verily I say to you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. ¹⁹ Again I say to you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as concerning anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. ²⁰ For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

18:21-33 *Parable of the Unforgiving Servant*

(104) ²¹ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? ²² Jesus says unto him, **I say not unto you, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.** ²³ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened to a certain king, which would take account of his servants. ²⁴ And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought to him, which owed him ten thousand talents. ²⁵ But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. ²⁶ The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay you all. ²⁷ Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. ²⁸ But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him a hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took [him] by the throat, saying, Pay me that you owe. ²⁹ And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and begged him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay you all. ³⁰ And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. ³¹ So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told to their lord all that was done. ³² Then his lord, after that

Matthew Chapter 18

he had called him, said unto him, O you wicked servant, I forgave you all that debt, because you desired me: ³³ Should not you also have had compassion on your fellowservant, even as I had pity on you?

³⁴ And his lord was angry, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due to him.

³⁵ So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also to you, if ye from your hearts forgive not everyone his brother their sins.

Matthew Chapter 19

(105) ¹ And it came to pass, [that] when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judaea beyond Jordan; ² And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there. ³ The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him, and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ⁴ And he answered and said unto them, **Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female,** ⁵ **And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh?** ⁶ **Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.** ⁷ They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? ⁸ He says unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts permitted you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. ⁹ And I say to you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except [it be] for fornication, and shall marry another, commits adultery: and whoso marries her which is put away does commit adultery.

(106) ¹⁰ His disciples say to him, If the case of the man be so with [his] wife, it is not good to marry.

¹¹ But he said unto them, All [men] cannot receive this saying, save [they] to whom it is given.

¹² For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from [their] mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive [it], let him receive [it].

(107) ¹³ Then were there brought to him little children, that he should put [his] hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. ¹⁴ But Jesus said, **Allow little children, and forbid them not, to come to me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.** ¹⁵ And he laid [his] hands on them, and departed there.

19:16-22 *The Rich Young Man asks about Eternal Life and Goes Away Sorrowful*

(108) ¹⁶ And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? ¹⁷ And he said unto him, **Why call you me good? ^a there is none good but one, [that is], God: but if you will enter into life, keep the commandments.** ¹⁸ He says to him, Which? Jesus said, ^b You shall not murder, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness, ¹⁹ Honor your father and [your] mother: and, You shall love your neighbor as thyself.

²⁰ The young man says unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what do I lack?

²¹ Jesus said unto him, **If you will be perfect, go [and] sell what you have, and give to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come [and] follow me.** ²² But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

^a Here Jesus put God the father superior to himself as the divine authority and source of all that is good.

^b Jesus clearly states 5 of the 10 commandments of Moses, omits the first 4 which he was doing as a good religious Jew, then states the 10th commandment as to "love your neighbor as thyself" by selling what you have and giving it to the poor. This was the same commandment "Thou shall not covet" that convicted Paul of his need in Romans 7: 7-9. Note the timing and wisdom of Jesus to deal with this man's sin first. In this case, it was a good, rich & even religious person.

(109) ²³ Then said Jesus to his disciples, Verily I say to you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven. ²⁴ And again I say to you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. ²⁵ When his disciples heard [it], they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved? ²⁶ **But Jesus beheld them, and said to them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.**

Matthew Chapter 19

(110) ²⁷ Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed you; what shall we have therefore? ²⁸ And Jesus said to them, Verily I say to you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. ²⁹ And everyone that has forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life. ³⁰ But many [that are] first shall be last; and the last [shall be] first.

Matthew Chapter 20

(111) ¹ For the kingdom of heaven is like to a man [that is] a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard. ² And when he had agreed with the laborers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. ³ And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, ⁴ And said to them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. ⁵ Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. ⁶ And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and says to them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? ⁷ They say to him, Because no man has hired us. He says to them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, [that] shall ye receive. ⁸ So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard says to his steward, Call the laborers, and give them [their] hire, beginning from the last to the first. ⁹ And when they came that [were hired] about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. ¹⁰ But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. ¹¹ And when they had received [it], they murmured against the goodman of the house, ¹² Saying, These last have worked [but] one hour, and you have made them equal to us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. ¹³ But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do you no wrong: did not you agree with me for a penny? ¹⁴ Take what is yours, and go your way: I will give to this last, even as to you. ¹⁵ Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? Is your eye evil, because I am good? ¹⁶ So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

(112) ¹⁷ And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them, ¹⁸ Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed to the chief priests and to the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, ¹⁹ And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify [him]: and the third day he shall rise again. ²⁰ Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping [him], and desiring a certain thing of him. ²¹ And he said unto her, **What will you?** She says unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on your right hand, and the other on the left, in your kingdom. ²² But Jesus answered and said, **Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?** They say to him, We are able. ²³ And he says to them, **Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not my to give, but [it shall be given to them] for whom it is prepared of my Father.** ²⁴ And when the ten heard [it], they were moved with indignation against the two brethren. ²⁵ But Jesus called them [to him], and said, **Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.** ²⁶ But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; ²⁷ And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: ²⁸ Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered to, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

(113) ²⁹ And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. ³⁰ And, behold, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, [you] Son of David. ³¹ And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, [you] Son of David. ³² And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, **What will ye that I shall do to you?** ³³ They say to him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. ³⁴ So Jesus had compassion [on them], and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed Him.

Matthew Chapter 21 1-11 **The Common People Sing Praise to the Humble Son of David**

(114) ¹ And when they drew near to Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, to the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples, ² Saying unto them, **Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find a donkey tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them to me.** ³ **And if any [man] say anything to you, ye shall say, The Lord has need of them; and straightway he will send them.**

⁴ All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, ⁵ Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, your King comes to you, meek, and sitting upon a donkey, and a colt the foal of a donkey. ⁶ And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them, ⁷ And brought the donkey, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set [him] thereon. ⁸ And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way. ⁹ And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest. ¹⁰ And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? ¹¹ And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

21:12-17 **Jesus is Displeased, Prayer and Scripture are Taught in the Temple**

(115) ¹² And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, ¹³ And said to them, **It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.** ¹⁴ And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them. ¹⁵ And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased, ¹⁶ And said unto him, Hear you what these say? And Jesus says to them, **Yes; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings you have perfected praise?** ¹⁷ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany; and he lodged there.

21:18-22 **The Miracle of the Fig Tree that Withers Immediately (sign of judgment)**

(116) ¹⁸ Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered. ¹⁹ And when he saw a fig tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said to it, **Let no fruit grow on you henceforward forever. And presently the fig tree withered away.** ²⁰ And when the disciples saw [it], they marveled, saying, How soon is the fig tree withered away! ²¹ Jesus answered and said to them, **Verily I say to you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this [which is done] to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say to this mountain, Be you removed, and be you cast into the sea; it shall be done.** ²² **And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.**

21:23-27 **Wisdom to Trump Man's Authority by God's Authority**

(117) ²³ And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came to him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority do you these things? and who gave you this authority? ²⁴ And Jesus answered and said to them, **I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things.** ²⁵ **The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men?** And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say to us, Why did ye not then believe him? ²⁶ But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet. ²⁷ And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said to them, **Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.**

Matthew Chapter 21 **Parable of the Two Sons (belief and unbelief)**

20:28-32 **Jesus refers to John the Baptist's Life and Witness Again**

(118) ²⁸ But what think ye? A [certain] man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work today in my vineyard. ²⁹ He answered and said, **I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.** ³⁰ **And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I [go], sir: and went not.** ³¹ **Whether of them twain did the will of [his] father?** They say to him, The first. **Jesus says to them, Verily I say to you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.** ³² **For John came to you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen [it], repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.**

Matthew Chapter 21

21:33-46 *Parable of the Vineyard Master, Farmers, Servants, and other Nation*

(119) ³³ Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country: ³⁴ And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it. ³⁵ And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. ³⁶ Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did to them likewise. ³⁷ But last of all he sent to them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. ³⁸ But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance. ³⁹ And they caught him, and cast [him] out of the vineyard, and slew [him]. ⁴⁰ When the lord therefore of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those husbandmen? ⁴¹ They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out [his] vineyard to other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. ⁴² Jesus says unto them, Did ye never read in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes? ⁴³ Therefore say I to you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. ⁴⁴ And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. ⁴⁵ And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spoke of them. ⁴⁶ But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

Matthew Chapter 22

22:1-14 *Parable of the Wedding Guest without Wedding Garments*

(120) ¹ And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables, and said, ² The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, ³ And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. ⁴ Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and [my] fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage. ⁵ But they made light of [it], and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: ⁶ And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. ⁷ But when the king heard [thereof], he was angry: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. ⁸ Then says he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. ⁹ Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. ¹⁰ So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. ¹¹ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: ¹² And he says to him, Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. ¹³ Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast [him] into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ¹⁴ For many are called, but few are chosen.

22:15-22 *The Pharisees with the Herodians Try to Trick Jesus in Words*

(121) ¹⁵ Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in [his] talk. ¹⁶ And they sent out to him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that you are true, and teach the way of God in truth, neither care you for any [man]: for you regard not the person of men. ¹⁷ Tell us therefore, What think you? Is it lawful to give tax to Caesar, or not? ¹⁸ But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, **Why tempt ye me, [ye] hypocrites?** ¹⁹ **Show me the tax money. And they brought to him a penny.** ²⁰ And he says to them, **Whose is this image and superscription?** ²¹ They say to him, Caesar's. Then says he to them, **Render therefore to Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and to God the things that are God's.** ²² When they had heard [these words], they marveled, and left him, and went their way.

Matthew Chapter 22

22:23-33 *Truths of the Resurrection are Taught to the Sadducees*

(122) ²³ The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, ²⁴ Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed to his brother. ²⁵ Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife to his brother: ²⁶ Likewise the second also, and the third, to the seventh. ²⁷ And last of all the woman died also. ²⁸ Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her. ²⁹ Jesus answered and said to them, **Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.** ³⁰ For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. ³¹ But as concerning the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken to you by God, saying, ³² I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. ³³ And when the multitude heard [this], they were astonished at his doctrine.

22:34-40 *The Greatest Two Commandments are to Love God and Others*

(123) ³⁴ But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. ³⁵ Then one of them, [which was] a lawyer, asked [him a question], tempting him, and saying, ³⁶ Master, which is the great commandment in the law? ³⁷ Jesus said unto him, **You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind.** ³⁸ This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹ And the second is like to it, You shall love your neighbor as thyself. ⁴⁰ On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

22:41-46 *The Wisdom of Jesus Causes His Enemies to Be Silent*

(124) ⁴¹ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, ⁴² Saying, **What think ye of Christ? whose son is he?** They say to him, [The Son] of David. ⁴³ He says to them, **How then does David in spirit call him Lord, saying,** ⁴⁴ The LORD said to my Lord, Sit you on my right hand, till I make your enemies your footstool? ⁴⁵ If David then call him Lord, how is he his son? ⁴⁶ And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any [man] from that day forth ask him anymore [questions].

Matthew Chapter 23

Tuesday during Passion Week, Matthew chapters 23-25

Judgment on the Scribes and Pharisees, this Generation, and Jerusalem

23:1-12 *Jesus Contrasts the Scribes & Pharisees and His Way of Humble Service*

(125) ¹ Then spoke Jesus to the multitude, and to His disciples, ² Saying, **The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:** ³ All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, [that] observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. ⁴ For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they [themselves] will not move them with one of their fingers. ⁵ But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, ⁶ And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, ⁷ And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. ⁸ But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, [even] Christ; and all ye are brethren. ⁹ And call no [man] your Father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. ¹⁰ Neither be ye called Masters: for one is your Master, [even] Christ. ¹¹ But he that is great among you shall be your servant. ¹² And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

Matthew Chapter 23

23:13-33 **8 Woes unto the Scribes and Pharisees**

(126) ¹³ But **woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in [yourselves], neither allow ye them that are entering to go in. ¹⁴ **Woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. ¹⁵ **Woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. ¹⁶ **Woe** to you, blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor! ¹⁷ Fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifies the gold? ¹⁸ And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever swears by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. ¹⁹ Fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifies the gift? ²⁰ Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, swears by it, and by all things thereon. ²¹ And whoso shall swear by the temple, swears by it, and by him that dwells therein. ²² And he that shall swear by heaven, swears by the throne of God, and by Him that sits thereon. ²³ **Woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier [matters] of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. ²⁴ Blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. ²⁵ **Woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. ²⁶ Blind Pharisee, cleanse first that [which is] within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. ²⁷ **Woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like to whited sepulchers, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead bones, and of all uncleanness. ²⁸ Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous to men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. ²⁹ **Woe** unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchers of the righteous, ³⁰ And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. ³¹ Wherefore ye be witnesses to yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. ³² Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. ³³ Serpents, generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

23:34-36 **The Blood of the Righteous from Abel to Zacharias are Upon This Generation**

(127) ³⁴ Wherefore, behold, I send to you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: [some] of them ye shall kill and crucify; [some] of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city: ³⁵ That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. ³⁶ Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

23:37-39 **Jesus Laments Over Jerusalem**

(128) ³⁷ O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, [you] that kill the prophets, and stone them which are sent unto you, how often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her chickens under [her] wings, and ye would not! ³⁸ Behold, your house is left to you desolate. ³⁹ For I say unto you, Ye shall not see Me henceforth, till ye shall say, **BLESSED IS HE THAT COMES IN THE NAME OF THE LORD.**

Notes: vs 37, Matthew 5:12, Ruth 2:12. Vs 38, 1 Kings 9:7, Jeremiah 22:5. Vs 39, Psalm 118:26, Matthew 21:9. Vs 38, Jerusalem the capital of the nation Israel, will continue under the rule of the Gentiles, which began with Babylon and king Nebuchadnezzar, and continued until May 14, 1948. The temple that was rebuilt during the time of Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther and the prophets Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi, then expanded by Herod the Great and Herod Antipas for 40 years, from 20 BC to 20 AD. This was while under the rule of the Roman Empire, until destroyed in 70 AD by General Titus. The Roman Emperors during this period were: Caesar Augustus, 31 BC-14 AD (Micah 5:2, Luke 2:1), Tiberius, 14-37 AD, (Luke 3:1), Nero, 54-68 AD, (1st Jewish-Roman War, 66-73 AD), Vespasian, 69-79 AD; Titus, 79-81 AD (destroyed temple in 70 AD).

After this passage Jesus departs the temple, then his disciples ask him about the temple in Jerusalem which leads into Matthew 24.

24:1-3 **Judgment on the Temple and the Disciples Two Questions** (when and what sign)

(129) ¹ And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and His disciples came to [him] for to show him the buildings of the temple. ² And Jesus said unto them, "See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down." ³ And as He sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, "Tell us, **when** shall these things be? and **what** [shall be] the **sign of Your coming**, and of the **end of the world?**" /2 Pet 3:11-18/

Notes: vs 2, Jeremiah 26:18 and John 2:19-20 foretell the destruction of the temple in three days & rebuilding without hands. Vs 3, world as known; both point to Christ's return and reign from Jerusalem.

24:4-14 **Sign: Tribulation of Israel & the World** (Revelation 6:1-11, 1st 3 ½ years)
deception, wars, famines, pestilences, earthquakes, & persecution

(130) ⁴ And Jesus answered and said unto them, "**Take heed that no man deceive you.** ⁵ For many shall come in My name, saying, I am Christ; and shall **deceive many.** ⁶ And ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all [these things] must come to pass, but the end is not yet. ⁷ For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in diverse places. ⁸ All these are the **beginning of sorrows.** ⁹ **Then** they will deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for My name's sake. ¹⁰ And **then** shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. ¹¹ And many **false prophets** shall rise, and shall deceive many. ¹² And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall grow cold. ¹³ But he that shall **endure** to the end, the same shall be saved. ¹⁴ And **this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness to all nations; and then shall the end come.**

24:15-31 **Sign: Great Tribulation of Israel & the World** (Jer 30:7, Rev 6:12-17, 7-18, 2nd 3 ½ years)

(131) ¹⁵ **When ye therefore shall see the ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso reads, let him understand:)** ¹⁶ **Then** let them which be in Judaea **flee** into the mountains: ¹⁷ Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take anything out of his house: ¹⁸ Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. ¹⁹ And woe to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! ²⁰ But pray ye that your flight be not in the **winter**, neither on the **sabbath day**: ²¹ For **then** shall be **great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be**

Note: vs 15, Daniel 9:27, 11:31, 12:11. Vs 21, Daniel 12:1, Joel 2:2. 1-2 Thes, 1 Cor 15:51-57.

Sign: The Coming (Mt 24:3, 27, 37, 39) **of the Son of Man for His Elect** (Ro 11:25, Rev 7 & 14)

(132) . ²² And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for **the elect's sake** those days shall be shortened. ²³ **Then** if any man shall say to you, Look, here is Christ, or there; believe [it] not. ²⁴ For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show **great signs and wonders**; insomuch that, if [it were] possible, they shall deceive **the very elect.** ²⁵ Behold, I have told you before. ²⁶ Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, [he is] in the secret chambers; believe [it] not. /false teachers, 2 Peter 2:1, face to face – paroosea, 24x/

(133) ²⁷ For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even to the west; so shall also the **coming** of the **Son of Man** be. ²⁸ For wherever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together. ²⁹ Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: ³⁰ And **then** shall appear the **sign of the Son of Man in heaven**: and **then** shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man **coming** in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. ³¹ And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall **gather together His elect** from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other. /return w/saints, Zech 14:5/

Notes: vs 28, Job 39:30, Ez 39:17, Hab 1:8, Luke 17:37. Vs 31, Matthew 13:41, 24:22, Ex 19:16, Deut 30:4, Is 27:13, Zec 2:6, 9:14, 1 Cor 15:21, 1 Thes 4:16, Heb 12:19, Rev 7:1, 8:2, 11:15, Daniel 7:2

Matthew Chapter 24

24:32-35 **When? The Parable of the Fig Tree**

(134) ³² **Now** learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and puts forth leaves, ye know that summer is near: ³³ So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, [even] at the doors. ³⁴ Verily I say unto you, This **generation** shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled. ³⁵ **Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.**

Notes: The fig tree is Israel. Generation is fulfillment of prophecies for Jews & Gentiles; the world.

24:36-39 **When? Only God Knows the Day and Hour When Jesus Will Return**

(135) ³⁶ But of that day and hour knows no [man], no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only. ³⁷ But as the **days of Noah** [were], so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be. ³⁸ For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, ³⁹ And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of Man be. /1 Thes 4:16-17, 2 Thes 2:3-4, coming, Luke 17 includes Sodom/

Notes: vs 37, Genesis 6:5, 7:6-23. Living life as everything is normal. Also as days of Sodom, Luke 17.

24:40-51 **Parable of the Wise Servant (45-47, left behind) and the Evil Servant (48-51, taken)**

(136) ⁴⁰ **Then** shall two be in the field; the **one shall be taken, and the other left.** ⁴¹ Two [women shall be] grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ⁴² Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord does come. ⁴³ But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have permitted his house to be broken up. ⁴⁴ Therefore be ye also ready: for in such a hour as ye think not the Son of man comes. ⁴⁵ Who then is a **faithful and wise servant**, whom his lord has made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? ⁴⁶ Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. ⁴⁷ Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. ⁴⁸ But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; ⁴⁹ And shall begin to smite [his] fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; ⁵⁰ The lord of that servant shall come in a **day** when he looks not for [him], and in a **hour** that he is not aware of, ⁵¹ And shall cut him asunder, and appoint [him] his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. /waiting for the books, Rev 20:10-15/

Note: At the end of the world the wise will "left" on earth with Christ. The evil are "taken" down to hell.

The Earthquake is for Witnessing the Wisdom and Salvation of God (L)

His glory is revealed in the perfectness and consistency of creation in the big and little things. We will compare and contrast three events in Japan from March 11 to April 11, 2011.

Cherry Blossom Creation	Earthquake Tsunami (water-71% of earth)	Nuclear Reactor Release (atom – smallest particle)
CREATION		
Beautiful		Beastly
Wonderful		Disastrous
Annual and Known		Unknown
Scheduled Event		Emergency
Visible	Visible	Invisible
1 week – bloom	1 day – a few years to recover	1 day – many years to recover
Many small flowers	Large bodies of land & water	Microscopic atoms
Natural	Natural	Man-made, Zechariah 14:12-15
RESULTS		
Life – celebration	Death – mourning (20,000 died, 300,000 lost home)	
Depends on country	Known areas (ring of fire)	Depends on country
Praise	Trials – unavoidable	Trials – avoidable
Good	Neutral (acts of God)	Good and Evil
WITNESS (Psalm 46:1-3, 4-11)		
John 4:4-42 The Story of the Woman at the Well. Relate, create, draw, decide. Jude 22-23.		

Title: The Sign of Earthquakes – Acts of a Loving (L) and Holy (H) God

Earthquakes are a sign of the creator in control of the creation, from the beginning to the end.

Recently in Puerto Rico, a magnitude 6.5 earthquake shook the south coast on January 7, 2020 at 08:24, followed by a flurry of more than 1200 tremors. This was the strongest since 1918 with a magnitude 7.1.

In Japan, a magnitude 9.0 earthquake hit the East coast on March 11, 2011 at 14:46 and lasted for 5-11 minutes. The tsunami waves were 100 feet high moving at 100 mph; followed by earth waves and the Fukushima nuclear reactor release.

A Sign during Creation for Mankind (L)

Genesis 1:1 In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. **Genesis 1:2** And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. (**Gen 1:8-9**, on day 3 the land and sea are created)

Psalms 148:5 Let them praise the name of the LORD: for he commanded, and they were created. (Ps 148:1-14)

Genesis 7:11 In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.

Job 38:4 Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if you have understanding.

Isaiah 40:21 Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the beginning? have ye not understood from the foundations of the earth? **Isa 40:22** [It is] he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof [are] as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain,

A Sign in the Old Testament for Israel (H)

Exodus 19:18 And mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the LORD descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly. (Hebrews 12:18-21)

Numbers 16:32 And the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that *appertained* unto Korah, and all *their* goods. Jude 11, woe to the way of Cain, Balaam, and Core.

Joshua 6:20a So the people shouted when *the priests* blew with the trumpets: and it came to pass, when the people heard the sound of the trumpet, and the people shouted with a great shout, that the wall fell down flat (Jericho battle)

1 Samuel 14:15 And there was trembling in the host, in the field, and among all the people: the garrison, and the spoilers, they also trembled, and the earth quaked: so it was a very great trembling. (Jonathan battle)

1 Kings 19:11-12 At Mount Horeb (Sinai) God spoke to Elijah in a still small voice; not by wind, earthquake, or fire.

Amos 1:1b two years before the earthquake. (Magnitude 8.2, 750 BC) Isaiah 2:10-21 (day of the Lord), Micah 3:1-6

A Sign at the First Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ (L) for the Ekklesia

Matthew 27:51-54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

Matthew 28:2 And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

A Sign of God's Power and the Elect's Hope (L)

Acts 4:31 And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the Word of God with boldness.

Acts 16:26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were loosed.

Heb 12:26 Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. **Heb 12:27** And this [word], Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.

Heb 12:28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear:

Psalm 46:2 Therefore we will not fear, though the earth be removed, and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea

Paul Gives us Understanding of Earthquakes (Romans 1-2, 6-8) of Earthquakes (L)

Ro 8:19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. **Ro 8:20** For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected [the same] in hope,

Ro 8:21 Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. **Ro 8:22** For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now.

Ro 8:23 And not only [they], but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, [to wit], the redemption of our body. **Galatians 4:19** My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, (**John 16:20-22**, about sorrow-travail, & joy)

Future (H) for Israel and the World

A Sign at the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ

Matthew 24:3b what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

Matthew 24:7b there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in diverse places.

Matthew 24:8 All these *are* the **beginning of sorrows (birth pangs)**.

Mark 13:8b and there shall be earthquakes in diverse places, and there shall be famines and troubles: these *are* the **beginnings of sorrows (birth pangs)**.

Luke 21:11 And great earthquakes shall be in diverse places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

A Sign of the Judgment of Gog in Israel (Ezekiel 38-39)

Eze 38:19 For in my jealousy [and] in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel; **Eze 38:20** So that the fishes of the sea, and the fowls of the heaven, and the beasts of the field, and all creeping things that creep upon the earth, and all the men that [are] upon the face of the earth, shall shake at my presence, and the mountains shall be thrown down, and the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground.

A Sign of Judgment during the 70th week of Daniel (9:24-27)

Matthew 24:15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)

Revelation 6:12 the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; (Rev 8:5, 11:13, 11:19)

Re 16:18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, [and] so great. **Re 16:20** And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

A Sign at the Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ (Micah 1:3-4, Revelation 19-20)

Zechariah 14:4 And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which [is] before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, [and there shall be] a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.

Matthew Chapter 25

25:1-13 Parable of the 10 Virgins (5 had oil / 5 possess & 5 no oil / profess)

(137) ¹ Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened to ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. ² And five of them were wise, and five [were] foolish. ³ They that [were] foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: ⁴ But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. ⁵ While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. ⁶ And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go ye out to meet him. ⁷ Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. ⁸ And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. ⁹ But the wise answered, saying, [Not so]; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. ¹⁰ And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. ¹¹ Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. ¹² But he answered and said, Verily I say to you, I know you not. ¹³ Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man comes.

25:14-30 Parable of the 5-2-1 Talents (2 possess & 1 profess)

(138) ¹⁴ For [the kingdom of heaven is] as a man traveling into a far country, [who] called his own servants, and delivered to them his goods. ¹⁵ And to one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. ¹⁶ Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. ¹⁷ And likewise he that [had received] two, he also gained other two. ¹⁸ But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. ¹⁹ After a long time the lord of those servants comes, and reckons with them. ²⁰ And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, you delivered to me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. ²¹ His lord said unto him, Well done, [you] good and faithful servant: you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things: enter you into the joy of your lord. ²² He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, you delivered to me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. ²³ His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things: enter you into the joy of your lord. ²⁴ Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew you that you are a hard man, reaping where you have not sown, and gathering where you have not strawed: ²⁵ And I was afraid, and went and hid your talent in the earth: look, [there] you have [that is] yours. ²⁶ His lord answered and said unto him, [You] wicked and slothful servant, you knew that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: ²⁷ You ought therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and [then] at my coming I should have received my own with usury. ²⁸ Take therefore the talent from him, and give [it] to him which has ten talents. ²⁹ For to everyone that has shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that has not shall be taken away even that which he has. ³⁰ And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

25:31-46 Parable of the Sheep and Goats (1 group possess & 1 group profess)

(139) ³¹ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: ³² And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides [his] sheep from the goats: ³³ And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. ³⁴ Then shall the King say to them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: ³⁵ For I was a hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: ³⁶ Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came to me. ³⁷ Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we you a hungered, and fed [you]? or thirsty, and gave [you] drink? ³⁸ When saw we you a stranger, and took [you] in? or naked, and clothed [you]? ³⁹ Or when saw we you sick, or in prison, and came to you? ⁴⁰ And the King shall answer and say to them, Verily I say to you, Inasmuch as ye have done [it] to one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done [it] to me. ⁴¹ Then shall he say also to them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: ⁴² For I was a hungered, and ye gave me no food: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: ⁴³ I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. ⁴⁴ Then they will also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we you a hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister to you? ⁴⁵ Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say to you, Inasmuch as ye did [it] not to one of the least of these, ye did [it] not to me. ⁴⁶ And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

26:1-5 The Plot to Kill Jesus

(140) ¹ And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, He said unto His disciples, ² **Ye know that after two days is [the feast of] the passover, and the Son of Man is betrayed to be crucified.** ³ Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, to the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, ⁴ And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtlety, and kill [Him]. ⁵ But they said, Not on the feast [day], lest there be an uproar among the people.

26:6-13 A Woman Anoints Jesus with Precious Ointment

(Mark 14:3-9, Wednesday. Not Mary on Saturday in John 12:1-8, or sinner earlier in Luke 7:36-50)

⁶ Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, ⁷ There came to Him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on His head, as He sat [at meat]. ⁸ But when His disciples saw [it], they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste? ⁹ For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor. ¹⁰ When Jesus understood [it], He said unto them, **Why trouble ye the woman? for she has performed a good work upon Me.** ¹¹ **For ye have the poor always with you; but Me ye have not always.** ¹² **For in that she has poured this ointment on My body, she did [it] for My burial.** ¹³ **Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, [there] shall also this, that this woman has done, be told for a memorial of her.**

26:14-16 Judas Betrays Jesus (Mark 14:10-11, Exodus 21:32, 30 pieces of silver)

(141) ¹⁴ Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went to the chief priests, ¹⁵ And said, What will ye give me, and I will deliver Him to you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. ¹⁶ And from that time he sought opportunity to betray Him.

26:17-25 Jesus and the Disciples Eat the Passover

(142) ¹⁷ Now the first [day] of the [feast of] unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto Him, Where will You that we prepare for You to eat the passover? ¹⁸ And He said, **Go into the city to such a man, and say to him, The Master says, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at your house with My disciples.** ¹⁹ And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them; and they made ready the passover.

(142) ²⁰ Now when the evening was come, He sat down with the twelve. ²¹ And as they did eat, he said, **Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray Me.** ²² And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto Him, Lord, is it I? ²³ And He answered and said, **He that dips [his] hand with Me in the dish, the same shall betray Me.** ²⁴ **The Son of Man goes as it is written of Him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.** ²⁵ Then Judas, which betrayed Him, answered and said, Master, "is it I?" He said unto him, **You have said.**

26:26-30 Jesus Institutes His Holy Supper

(143) ²⁶ And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed [it], and brake [it], and gave [it] to the disciples, and said, **Take, eat; this is My body.** ²⁷ And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave [it] to them, saying, **Drink ye all of it;** ²⁸ **For this is My blood of the ^a new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.** ²⁹ **But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom.** ³⁰ And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

^a The New Testament begins with the death of Jesus on the cross. Hebrews 9:15-17.

26:31-35 Jesus Predicts Peter's Denial

(144) ³¹ Then says Jesus unto them, **All ye shall be offended because of Me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.** ³² **But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.** ³³ Peter answered and said unto him, Though all [men] shall be offended because of you, [yet] will I never be offended. ³⁴ **Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto you, That this night, before the rooster crow, you shall deny Me thrice.** ³⁵ Peter said unto Him, Though I should die with You, yet will I not deny You. Likewise also said all the disciples.

Matthew Chapter 26

26:36-46 Jesus Prays in Gethsemane

(145) ³⁶ Then comes Jesus with them to a place called Gethsemane, and says unto the disciples, **Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.** ³⁷ And He took with Him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. ³⁸ Then says He unto them, **My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even to death: tarry ye here, and watch with Me.**

(146) ³⁹ And He went a little further, and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, **O My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from Me: nevertheless not as I will, but as You [will].** ⁴⁰ And He comes to the disciples, and finds them asleep, and says unto Peter, **What, could ye not watch with Me one hour?** ⁴¹ **Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.** ⁴² He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, **O My Father, if this cup may not pass away from Me, except I drink it, Your will be done.** ⁴³ And He came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. ⁴⁴ And He left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. ⁴⁵ Then comes He to His disciples, and says unto them, **Sleep on now, and take [your] rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of Man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.** ⁴⁶ **Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that does betray Me.**

26:47-75 Jesus is Betrayed with a Kiss

(147) ⁴⁷ And while He yet spoke, look, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people. ⁴⁸ Now he that betrayed Him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is He: hold Him fast. ⁴⁹ And immediately he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master; and kissed Him. ⁵⁰ And Jesus said unto him, **Friend, wherefore are you come?** Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took Him. ⁵¹ And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out [his] hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest's, and smote off his ear. ⁵² Then said Jesus unto him, **Put up again your sword into its place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.** ⁵³ **Think you that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?** ⁵⁴ **But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?** ⁵⁵ In that same hour said Jesus unto the multitudes, **Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take Me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on Me.** ⁵⁶ But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook Him, and fled.

(148) ⁵⁷ And they that had laid hold on Jesus led [Him] away to **Caiaphas the high priest**, where the scribes and the elders were assembled. ⁵⁸ But Peter followed Him afar off to the high priest's palace, and went in, and sat with the servants, to see the end. ⁵⁹ Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put Him to death; ⁶⁰ But found none: yes, though many false witnesses came, [yet] found they none. At the last came two false witnesses, ⁶¹ And said, This [Fellow] said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. ⁶² And the high priest arose, and said unto Him, Answer you nothing? what [is it which] these witness against You? ⁶³ But Jesus held His peace. And the high priest answered and said unto Him, I adjure you by the living God, that you tell us whether you be the Christ, the Son of God. ⁶⁴ Jesus says unto him, **You have said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.** ⁶⁵ Then the high priest tore his clothes, saying, He has spoken blasphemy; what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard His blasphemy. ⁶⁶ What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death. ⁶⁷ Then did they spit in His face, and buffeted Him; and others smote [Him] with the palms of their hands, ⁶⁸ Saying, Prophecy to us, you Christ, Who is he that smote You?

(149) ⁶⁹ Now Peter sat outside in the palace: and a damsel came to him, saying, You also was with Jesus of Galilee. ⁷⁰ But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what you say. ⁷¹ And when he was gone out into the porch, another [maid] saw him, and said unto them that were there, This [fellow] was also with Jesus of Nazareth. ⁷² And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man. ⁷³ And after a while came to [him] they that stood by, and said unto Peter, Surely you also are [one] of them; for your speech betrays you. ⁷⁴ Then began he to curse and to swear, [saying], I know not the man. And immediately the rooster crew. ⁷⁵ And Peter remembered the word of Jesus, which said unto him, **Before the rooster crow, you shall deny Me thrice.** And he went out, and wept bitterly.

Matthew Chapter 27

27:1-10 Jesus' 3rd trial by Sanhedrin (1-2) and the Sorrowful Death of Judas (3-10)

(150) ¹ **When the morning was come**, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put Him to death: ² And when they had bound Him, they led [Him] away, and delivered Him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

(151) ³ Then Judas, which had betrayed Him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, ⁴ Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What [is that] to us? see you [to that]. ⁵ And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. ⁶ And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood. ⁷ And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. ⁸ Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day. ⁹ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of Him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; ¹⁰ And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

Notes: vs 1, before sunrise. vs 3, repent to death, Peter 26:75, 2 Cor 7:10. vs 9-10, Zechariah 11:12-13, Matthew probably referred to the first book of the prophets in the Hebrew Bible, Jeremiah.

27:11-23 Jesus' 4th (11-14) and 6th (15-19) Trial before Pilate (Luke 23:6-12 5th before Herod)

(152) ¹¹ And Jesus stood before the governor: and the governor asked Him, saying, **Are you the King of the Jews?** And Jesus said unto him, **You say.** ¹² And when He was accused of the chief priests and elders, He answered nothing. ¹³ Then said Pilate unto Him, Hear You not how many things they witness against You? ¹⁴ And He answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marveled greatly.

(153) ¹⁵ Now at [that] feast the governor was custom to release to the people a prisoner, whom they would. ¹⁶ And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. ¹⁷ Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release to you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ? ¹⁸ For he knew that for envy they had delivered Him. ¹⁹ When he was set down on the judgment seat, his wife sent to him, saying, **Have you nothing to do with that Just Man:** for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of Him.

27:20-25 Jesus' 7th Trial before the People

(154) ²⁰ But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. ²¹ The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas. ²² Pilate says unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ? [They] all say unto him, Let Him be crucified. ²³ And the governor said, Why, what evil has He done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let Him be crucified. ²⁴ When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but [that] rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed [his] hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this Just Person: see ye [to it]. ²⁵ Then answered all the people, and said, His blood [be] on us, and on our children.

27:26-34 Jesus is Mocked and Beat (Friday, less than 3 hours within 6-9, Hebrews 12:1-4)

(155) ²⁶ Then he released Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered [Him] to be crucified. ²⁷ Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered to Him the whole band [of soldiers]. ²⁸ And they stripped Him, and put on Him a scarlet robe.

(156) ²⁹ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put [it] upon His head, and a reed in His right hand: and they bowed the knee before Him, and mocked Him, saying, **Hail, King of the Jews!** ³⁰ And they spit upon Him, and took the reed, and smote Him on the head. ³¹ And after that they had mocked Him, they took the robe off from Him, and put His own raiment on Him, and led Him away to crucify. ³² And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear His cross. ³³ And when they were come to a place called **Golgotha**, that is to say, a place of a skull, ³⁴ They gave Him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted [thereof], He would not drink.

Notes: vs 16, Barabbas is son of the father. vs 24, wash hands as in Deut 21. vs 31, walk to Golgotha around 40 minutes. vs 33, Golgotha is Calvary in Latin. vs 34, drink clouds, desensitizes mind.

Matthew Chapter 27

27:35-50 **Jesus is Crucified** (Friday between 9-3)

(157) ³⁵ And they crucified Him, and parted His garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, **They parted My garments among them, and upon My vesture did they cast lots.**

³⁶ And sitting down they watched Him there; ³⁷ And set up over His head His accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. ³⁸ Then were there two thieves crucified with Him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

(158) ³⁹ And they that passed by reviled Him, wagging their heads, ⁴⁰ And saying, You that destroy the temple, and build [it] in three days, save Thyself. If You be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

⁴¹ Likewise also the chief priests mocking [Him], with the scribes and elders, said, ⁴² He saved others; Himself He cannot save. If He be the King of Israel, let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe Him. ⁴³ He trusted in God; let Him deliver Him now, if He will have Him: for He said, I am the Son of God. ⁴⁴ The thieves also, which were crucified with Him, cast the same in His teeth.

(159) ⁴⁵ Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land to the ninth hour. ⁴⁶ And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?** that is to say, My God, My God, why have You forsaken me? ⁴⁷ Some of them that stood there, when they heard [that], said, This [man] calls for Elijah. ⁴⁸ And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled [it] with vinegar, and put [it] on a reed, and gave Him to drink. ⁴⁹ The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elijah will come to save Him. ⁵⁰ **Jesus, when He had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the Spirit.**

Notes: vs 35, 39, 43, 46; Psalm 22. Vs 44, later 1 thief (Luke 23:43). Vs 48, Psalm 69. Vs 38, Isaiah 58. Vs 37, King of the Jews written in Hebrew, Latin, & Greek. 4th saying. Vs 46, Eli in Hebrew. Immediately after 12-3 pm, 3 hours of darkness. 5th saying, Vs 48, I thirst (John 19:28). 6th saying, It is finished (John 19:30). 7th saying, Vs 50, Father, into thy hands I commend my Spirit (Luke 23:46).

27:51-56 **Jesus' Body Dies; Temple Veil and Resurrection Miracles** (before Sunset Friday, 3-6)

(160) ⁵¹ And, behold, the veil of the temple was tore in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks tore; ⁵² And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, ⁵³ And came out of the graves after His resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared to many. ⁵⁴ Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God. ⁵⁵ And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto Him: ⁵⁶ Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

27:57-66 **Jesus' Burial** (57-61, after sunset) **and Romans Protect the Tomb** (62-66, Saturday)

(161) ⁵⁷ When the evening was come, there came a rich man of Arimathaea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: ⁵⁸ He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. ⁵⁹ And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, ⁶⁰ And laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulcher, and departed. ⁶¹ And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulcher.

(162) ⁶² Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together to Pilate, ⁶³ Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while He was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. ⁶⁴ Command therefore that the sepulcher be made sure until the third day, lest His disciples come by night, and steal Him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. ⁶⁵ Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make [it] as sure as ye can. ⁶⁶ So they went, and made the sepulcher sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

Notes: vs 57 Joseph of Arimathaea of the Sanhedrin was a Sadducee and did not consent to Jesus' death, Mark 15:43, Luke 23:50-56. He was a rich man that gave his tomb for Jesus, located near Golgotha.

28:1-10 Women - Minister (1-4), Obey (5-8), and Worship (9-10)

(163) ¹ In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first [day] of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the tomb. ² And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. ³ His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: ⁴ And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead [men]. ⁵ And the angel answered and said unto the women, **Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. ⁶ He is not here: for He is risen, as He said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. ⁷ And go quickly, and tell His disciples that He is risen from the dead; and, behold, He goes before you into Galilee; there shall ye see Him: look, I have told you.** ⁸ And they departed quickly from the sepulcher with fear and great joy; and did run to bring His disciples word. ⁹ And as they went to tell His disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, **All hail.** And they came and held Him by the feet, and worshipped Him. ¹⁰ Then said Jesus unto them, **Be not afraid: go tell My brethren that they go into Galilee, and there they will see Me.**

Note: Mary Magdalene - The woman sinner who wiped her tears from his feet with her hair and anoints the feet of Jesus (Luke 7:36-50) is probably the same woman called Mary Magdalene, delivered of seven devils (8:1-3). This is at least one year before Mary of Bethany anoints Jesus' feet 6 days before the Passover, or Saturday, in John 12:1-8. Then the woman who anoints Jesus' head 2 days before the Passover, or Wednesday, in Matthew 26:6-13 and Mark 14:3-9. Next Joseph and Nicodemus prepared Jesus' body with linen and spices for burial (John 19:39-40). Women came to add more sweet spices and anoint Jesus' body on Sunday morning (Mark 16:1). "All hail" is proper for a king, also translated "rejoice."

Eve restored: In addition, the nature of women to be gregarious, faithful, and loving is by design in Genesis 1-3, before the fall. Eve is restored as she follows Jesus, the last Adam (1 Cor 15:45), evidenced by appearing to women before men. Read George Whitfield's message, "Christ, the Best Husband."

28:11-15 Sin - Jewish Elders Bribe the Soldiers to Lie for Money (they will coverup)

(164) ¹¹ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and showed to the chief priests all the things that were done. ¹² And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money to the soldiers, ¹³ Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole Him [away] while we slept. ¹⁴ And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. ¹⁵ So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

28:16-17 Sin - some of the 11 Apostles Doubt

(165) ¹⁶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. ¹⁷ And when they saw Him, they worshipped Him: but **some doubted.**

Note: The apostles still doubt, even though they were told (28:6) by Jesus in John 2:18-22, Matthew 12:39-40, 16:21, Jesus' authority in John 10:17-18, and common knowledge, Matthew 27:62-64. They still need the Holy Spirit power in Acts 2 to change their hearts and minds (Ephesians 3:14-21).

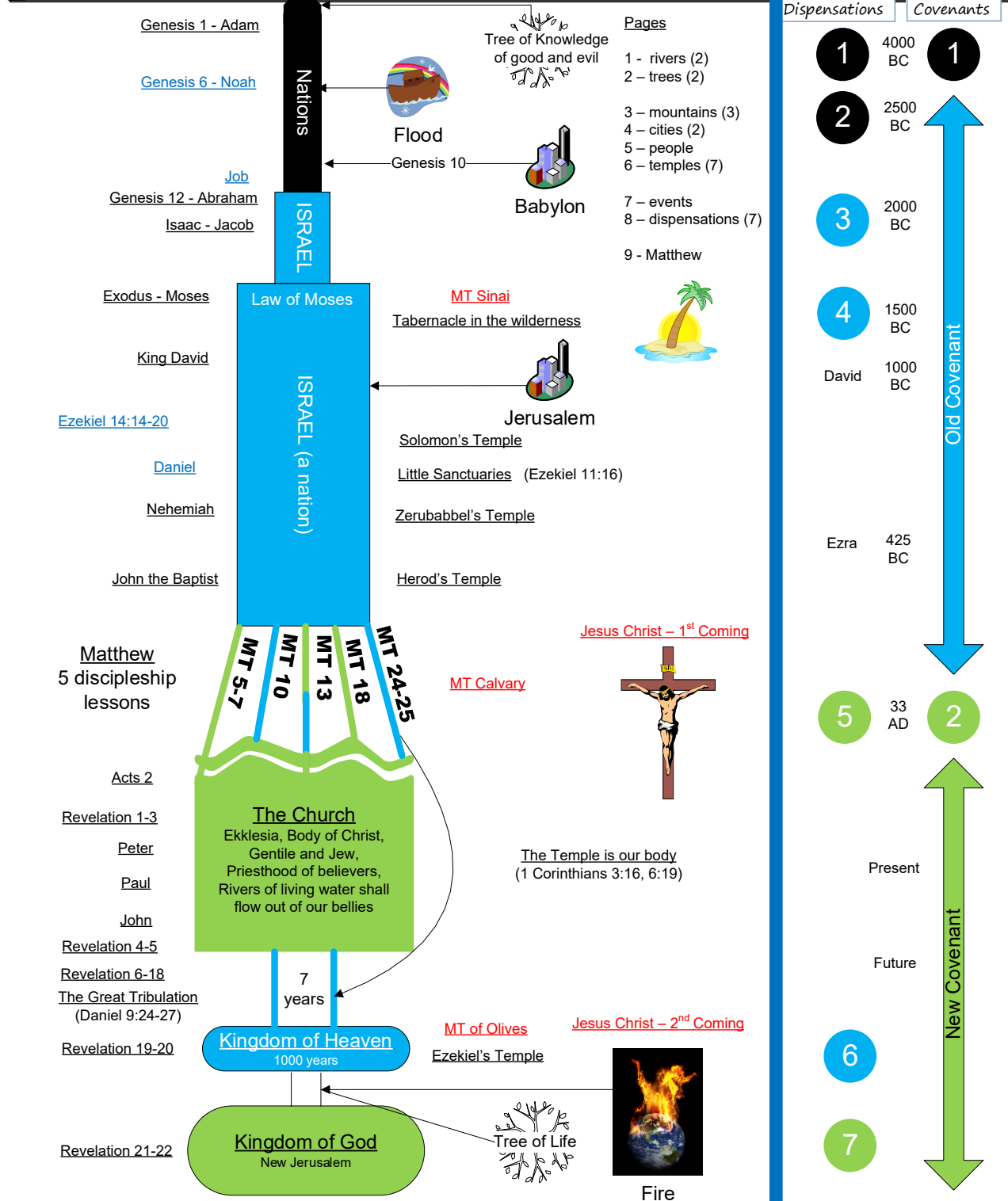
28:18-20 Men - Long Term Authority Charge (authority - go disciple & teach - security)

(165) ¹⁸ And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, **All ^a authority is given unto Me in heaven and on earth. ¹⁹ Go ye therefore, and ^b disciple all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: ²⁰ ^b Teaching them to observe all things, whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you always, [even] unto the end of the ^d world. Amen.**

^a power ^{KJV}. ^b teach ^{KJV} Teach is matheteuo 4x, mathetes (disciple) 254x, and mathano (learn) 31x. Teaching is didasko (teach) 99x. ^c behold. ^d world includes the church age and the tribulation period, until Christ returns to reign on earth (Revelation 19-20, Ezekiel 40-48).

Note: This is the long term charge of authority to the men in the church and family, while Mark 16:14-20 is short term during the life of the 12 Apostles. Lo is look at my eyes and listen, or possibly read my lips.

MATTHEW THE GREAT LINK
 Saturday, September 17, 2022
 52
 Theme: discipleship, Key verse: 13:51-



Matthew Gems

12 Unique things to Understand the Lion King of the Gospel of Matthew

- 1) Matthew is the first book of the New Testament and first gospel.
- 2) Matthew is the link between the Old and New Testament and more Hebraic in style than the other 3 gospels, he often grouped his material into sections of 3, 5, 6, or 7.
- 3) Matthew referred to the Old Testament 129 times, more than the other gospels.
- 4) Matthew's ancestry of Jesus goes back to Abraham, the father of the Jewish race.
- 5) Matthew gave exclusive use to the term "Kingdom of Heaven", 31x.
- 6) Matthew has more references to money than the other three gospels - his job was a tax collector.
- 7) Matthew is the least chronological of the four gospels.
- 8) Matthew uses the word discipline "*matheteuo*" (13:52, 27:57, 28:19, Acts 14:21).
- 9) Matthew alone spoke of the church (13:3-33, 16:18, 18:17).

10) Purpose: To reach the nation of Israel in the lifetime of Jesus. So they may repent and the kingdom of heaven begin. Repent is *matanoeo* or change of mind, rather than *metamelomai* or change of behavior. Change of mind will eventually change the behavior, not vice versa.

11) Key Passage: Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Kingdom of heaven represents the sovereign reign of the perfect king on earth.

Matthew's discourses To who For who Message

The narrative in chapters 1-4: Jesus' birth and youth, preaching and baptism by John, and temptation.

5-7 Knowledge Multitude the church Prepare for the kingdom of heaven

Lesson: Difference between Old & New Testament. Higher standards and more grace.

Key verse, 6:1-18.

The narrative in chapters 8-9: Jesus is authenticated by 10 miracles.

10 Evangelize 12 apostles Israel Preach the kingdom of heaven

Lesson: The 12 apostles are appointed and sent out. Later 70 disciples are sent into every city, Lu 10

The narrative in chapters 11-12: Jesus speaks of John in prison. Warnings and persecution.

13 Wisdom Multitude/disciples the church Parables of the kingdom of heaven

Lesson: The Kingdom of Heaven Mystery is Revealed in Seven Parables. The key verse is 13:34-35.

The narrative in chapters 14-17: Jesus' 2nd rejection at Nazareth. John's death. Miracles and conflict.

18 Discipleship Disciples the church Prevent and recover stray sheep

Lesson: How to prevent and recover the stray sheep. The key verse is 18:11.

The narrative in chapters 19-23: The Judea and Jerusalem ministry. Miracles, parables, and Warnings.

24-25 Hope Disciples the church Prophecy of Jesus return & reign

Lesson: Signs of Jesus' return and the end of the world. The fig tree, Noah, and deceivers. Be watchful.

The narrative in chapters 26-28: The crucifixion and resurrection. Power and Discipleship for today at 28:18-20.

12 Lessons to Discern the Differences Between the Old and New Testament

Background: This passage is the most extensive teaching of Jesus Christ recorded in the Bible. It is commonly called the Sermon on the Mount. Jesus returns from Jerusalem as written in John chapter 5, which is a high-level mountain top view, to Galilee, as written in Matthew chapters 5-7 with a detailed valley view.

Purpose: Know the **higher standards** and greater grace of the New Testament

Scripture

Part 1. My position before God in Christ is blessed as I

5:1-20

- 1) am poor in spirit, mourn, meek, thirst & hunger after righteousness,
Am merciful, pure in heart, and a peacemaker 5:3-9
- 2) am persecuted, salt & light; keep the commandments, and teach others 5:10-20

Part 2. and my mind understands the changes from the old to the new

5:21-48

- | | | |
|-------------------------------|--|---|
| <u>Old (hard, cold heart)</u> | <u>New (soft, warm, sensitive heart)</u> | |
| 3) murder | versus | to brother: angry without a cause or call a fool 5:21-22 |
| 4) adultery | versus | looks to lust from his heart 5:27-28 |
| 5) take oaths | versus | not take oaths: yes=yes & no=no, anything more is evil 5:33-37 |
| 6) hate enemy | versus | love enemy: bless them, do good, pray for them 5:43-48 |

Part 3. and my actions are not as the religious scribes and Pharisees

6:1-34

- | | | |
|--|--------|--|
| <u>Religious (seen of men, outward)</u> | | <u>Christ-like (seen of God, inward)</u> |
| 7) Prayer: public-many words-repetitive | versus | private-few words 6:5-15 |
| 8) Fasting: sad, disfigured face-public | versus | normal face-private 6:16-18 |
| 9) Money: save treasures on earth | versus | treasures in heaven 6:19-21 |
| 10) Seek first the kingdom of God, and His righteousness | | 6:33-34 |

Part 4. then I can put the New Testament into practice

7:1-29

- 11) by judging self first, then other believers – to obey the golden rule 7:1-12
- 12) finally, I have knowledge and grace to build my house on the Christ the Rock 7:13-27

Prayers:

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Matthew 6:5-13	Supplication	Pattern of prayer		Instruction	Luke 11:1-13
Matthew 7:7-11	Supplication			Promise	Luke 11:1-13

Matthew & Luke	Mark & John	Comment
Matthew 5:1-7:29 Luke 6:20-49	Nothing	5:1. Earlier. Privately to many disciples - on a mountain. 6:17-19. Later. Publicly to the 12 apostles, many disciples, and a multitude - on a plain.

Cadence to Sermon on the Mount

Blessing 1 to 7 cause persecution 8 and 9,
Salt, light and the Law are mine.

Say no to anger, lust, an eye for an eye,
Say yes to love your enemy as I.

I choose to serve God openly,
To gain treasure for eternity.

Judge yourself first, ask-seek and knock,
Build your home on Christ the Rock.

The Sermon on the Mount in Matthew 5-7 is Chiastic

Chiastic thinking is a Hebrew mind method of expressing and understanding truth. Recognizing a chiasm helps interpret subunits within a chiasm by the interplay of other subunits. For example, A-A` play off each other thematically by contrast or comparison; and, identifying the purpose or climax of the chiastic unit.

The Greater Works and Greater Grace of the New Testament

A 5:3-16 **Blessed (9)** = Actions (7) + Persecutions (2), or How to be Salt and Light

Blessed works (7)

Poor in spirit
Mourn
Meek
Thirst & hunger after righteousness
Merciful
Pure in heart
Peacemaker

Eternal Promises

kingdom of heaven
comforted
inherit the earth
filled
obtain mercy
see God
children of God

Persecutions (2)

For doing right kingdom of heaven
Others revile and persecute you great reward in heaven (rejoice & be exceedingly glad)
say evil against you falsely, for Christendom

B 5:17-20 Christ came **to fulfill the Law and the prophets** (perfectly and forever)

C 5:21-48 **more works in us** – (6) contrasts

Law in the old testament

Do not kill
Adultery
Divorce
Oaths
Retaliation
Hate enemy

Today in the new testament (works)

Anger at his brother
Lust in mind and heart
Puts away without cause
Yes or no
Go the extra mile
Love enemy

D 6:1-18 **Secretly work for** our Father in Heaven

Give
Pray > a pattern of prayer
Fast

C 6:19-34 **more works from us:** Store-up treasure in heaven / Seek first His Kingdom

B 7:1-12 Judge self then other believers, then ask-seek-knock **to fulfill the Law and the prophets**

A 7:13-27 **Blessed** eternal works (3) to do and teach for rewards (7:17)

Saved

Straight gate, narrow way
Good fruit
Build on the Rock

Lost

not the wide gate, wide way
not evil fruit from false prophets > final judgment
not on the sand

Conclusion: You are blessed by being salt and light after Christ fulfilled the Law and the prophets. You choose the greater works of Christ. My secret work for our Father in Heaven enables greater works, so I will fulfill the Law and be eternally blessed.

Questions and Learning

Chapter 5:1-20 (part I – present inward character)

- 1) How many blessings are there in chapter 5:1-12? 9
- 2) What does “poor in spirit” mean?
- 3) List the 7 faith actions we take to be a blessing.
- 4) List the 7 results of our faith actions.
- 5) Why are the last 2 blessings after the first 7 blessings?
- 6) Why are the 9 blessings in the order they are? Categorize the blessings into 3 groups.
- 7) What does our Father in heaven call believers in Christ?
- 8) What are some of the uses of salt?
- 9) Why does salt come before light?
- 10) Does grace replace the law or does it raise the standard?
- 11) What complete category of the law is NOT required to obey today? Why?

Chapter 5:21-48 (part II – past outward religious system)

- 12) How many contrasts are there between the time of the law before and grace today? 6
- 13) List as many as you can. Write one sentence about each on your list.
- 14) List some general differences between the religious and Christ-like ways.

Chapter 6:1-34 (part III – past and present outward religious system)

- 15) How many wrong verses right religious practices are mentioned? 4
- 16) List as many as you can. Write one sentence about each.
- 17) What is the correct word for “kill” in today’s language?
- 18) Does the teaching on prayer mean that we should not pray publicly?
- 19) When is it right to take an oath?
- 20) Why is the teaching on the pattern of prayer shorter in Matthew 6:9-15, than Luke 11:1-13?
- 21) How often should a believer seek the kingdom of God and being right in God’s eyes?

Chapter 7:1-28 (part IV – present privileges, for others)

- 22) What is the sequence of right judgment?
- 23) List times we should not judge. Provide supporting Scripture if known.
- 24) List times we should judge. Provide supporting Scripture if known.
- 25) Why is judgment described as holy and pearls?
- 26) Who do the dogs and pigs represent?
- 27) What is the golden rule in 7:12?
- 28) Why is the golden rule mentioned now toward the end of His teachings?

- 29) What are you building your house on, the rock or sand?
- 30) What is the rock?
- 31) List 3 similarities between the wise and foolish man.
- 32) List 3 differences between the wise and foolish man.
- 33) Is the man building upon the sand a believer, unbeliever, or either?
- 34) What is another word for doctrine?
- 35) Describe the authority that Jesus had.
- 36) Do you have this same authority today?

Gems of Matthew 10

Comparisons and Contrasts in Witnessing of the 12 and the 70

Matthew 10:1-42 (12)	Mark 6:7-13 (12)	Luke 9:1-6, 10 (12)	Luke 10:1-27 (70)	Compare
10:1 Jesus called his twelve disciples	6:7 Jesus called the twelve	9:1a Then he called his twelve disciples together	10:1 The Lord appointed other seventy also (Genesis 10 - 70 nations, Numbers 11:6-Moses)	Luke (70) different
	6:7 sent forth two by two		10:1 sent them two by two	The same
10:5-6 Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into [any] city of the Samaritans: ⁶ But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.			10:1 sent into every city and place Jesus would visit later	Luke (70) different
10:6b he gave them power over unclean spirits and to heal all sickness and disease 10:7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. 10:8 raise the dead	6:7b, 13 he gave them power over unclean spirits (demons)	9:1b and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases. 9:2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.	10:2 Therefore said he to them, The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth laborers into his harvest. ⁸ And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: ^{10:9, 11b} And heal the sick that are therein, and say to them, The kingdom of God is come near to you.	Luke (70) different focus and priority
10:16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.			10:3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.	The same
10:9-15 Go with no extra clothing, or money trusting God to provide, Let your peace rest or return to you. Shake dust off feet to those who will not listen. Their justice is coming and it will be more tolerable for Sodom than the cities who refuse Christ.	6:11 It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrhah in the day of judgment, than for that city.	9:3 And he said to them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither have two coats apiece.	10:4-15 Go with no extra clothing, or money trusting God to provide, Let your peace rest or return to you. Shake dust off feet to those who will not listen. Their justice is coming and it will be more tolerable for Sodom than the cities who refuse Christ.	The same
10:17-39 councils, synagogues, governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But he that endures to the end shall be saved. over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come. Fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. ³³ But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. ³⁴ Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. ⁴⁰⁻⁴² Rewards for receiving and helping the Jews during the Great Tribulation period, in the future. Genesis 12:3	6:12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.	9:6 And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing everyone. 9:10 And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done.	10:16 He that hears you hears me; and he that despises you despises me; and he that despises me despises him that sent me. ^{10:17-24} And the seventy returned again with joy, Jesus saw Satan as lightning fall from heaven . . . rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven. ²¹ In that hour Jesus rejoiced ^{10:25-37} Parable of the Good Samaritan. Then said Jesus to him, Go, and do you likewise (Priest-Levite-Samaritan)	Different MT 10 and Mark 6 (witnessing) are like MT 24-25 and Mark 13 (hope)
To nation Israel, in the near and far future, like Matthew 24-25.	To the gentiles and us today, until the rapture. Luke is influenced by the Apostle to the Gentiles, Paul.			

[Luke](#) Chapter 10 The Seventy Sent Out to Witness the Kingdom of God – 12 Points of Witnessing for Today

(64) ¹ After these things **(1) the Lord appointed** (John 15:5) other seventy also, and

(2) sent them two and two (Ecclesiastes 4:12)

(3) before his face into every city and place, where he himself would come. ² Therefore said he to them,

(4) The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth laborers into his harvest. (Matthew 9:36-38)

³ **(5) Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.** ⁴ Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.

⁵ **(6) And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace [be] to this house.** ⁶ And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. ⁷ And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the laborer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. ⁸ And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: ⁹ And heal the sick that are therein, and say to them, The kingdom of God is come near to you. ¹⁰ But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, ¹¹ Even the very dust of your city, which cleaves on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come near to you. ¹² But I say to you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. ¹³ Woe to you, Chorazin! woe to you, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. ¹⁴ But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. ¹⁵ And you, Capernaum, which are exalted to heaven, shall be thrust down to ^a hell.

¹⁶ **(7) He that hears you hears me; and he that despises you despises me; and he that despises me despises him that sent me.** (Gen 12:3)

The 70 Rejoice and Jesus' Prayer Thanks to his Father

(65) ¹⁷ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject to us through your name. ¹⁸ And he said to them, ^a **(8) I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.** ¹⁹ Behold, I give to you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

(9) ²⁰ **Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject to you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.** ²¹ **In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank you, O Father,** Lord of heaven and earth, that

(10) you have hid these things from the wise and prudent, and has (1 Corinthians 1:23-31)

(11) revealed them to babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in your sight. (1 Peter 1:3-12)

²² All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knows who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and [he] to whom the Son will reveal [him].

²³ And he turned him to [his] disciples, and said privately, **(12) Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see:** ²⁴ For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. (Revelation 1:3)

^a Jesus tells of Satan's fall as lightning due to the works of the 70 disciples. At the end Satan is cast down from heaven to earth by God, Revelation 12:1-12; and finally to the Lake of Fire in 19:11-21; then eternal judgment in 20:1-3.

12 Truths of the Kingdom of Heaven "Now" in the Parables from Matthew 13

Purpose: The Key to the gospel of Matthew, so that we may understand the Kingdom of Heaven as applicable to the ekklesia (a congregation of called-out ones). The Kingdom of Heaven has 5 phases:

- 1) Before, in Old Testament prophecy referring to the reign of Christ on earth (Rev 19-20)
- 2) Before, when Christ walked on the earth; "at hand" (Matthew, Luke, Mark, John)
- 3) **Now**, between the rejection and return of the Messiah; God's rule is acknowledged by (1) outward profession or (2) inner reality. (Acts 2 to Rev 4:1, Ro 14:17-19)
- 4) Future, when Christ returns to earth to reign from Jerusalem as prophesied (Rev 19-20)
- 5) Future, during the final everlasting kingdom (Revelation 21)

Key Passage: I will say things that have been kept secret since the foundation of the world (13:35)

Background: Matthew is the doorway between the Old and New Testament. The Kingdom of Heaven applies to Christendom or Churchianity in this series of parables. Jesus is on the Sea of Galilee teaching a multitude from a boat. Similar to his manifesto in the sermon on the Mount in Matthew 5-7. Rejection, the sign of Jonah and the bond of unity in Christ, outside of family and race leads into chapter 13. These parables are a response to Israel's rejection of her king, "on that day", (13:1a).

<u>The kingdom of heaven "now" compares to</u>	<u>Scripture (parable)</u>
1) seed is thrown on 4 types of soil along a path: wayside, stony, thorny & good	13:8, 23 (1)
2) a new truth that only the believer can understand	13:11
3) good seed producing wheat among tares in the field	13:30 (2)

4) begins small and grows great with wickedness living in it	13:31-32 (3)
5) sin that grows by the teachings of women; as leaven that raises in bread	13:33 (4)
6) a new truth that was kept secret from the foundation of the world	13:35
7) a personal relationship with Jesus Christ so we can understand the parables	13:36

8) a man that sells all with joy, to buy a treasure hid in the field	13:44 (5)
9) a merchantman that finds a great pearl, then sells all he had to buy the pearl	13:45-46 (6)

10) a great net with good and bad fish to be separated at the end (Mark 16:15)	13:47 (7)

11) truth that is understood as we grow in Christ and by the Holy Spirit	13:51
12) the truths revealed in the new testament and concealed in the old testament	13:52

Today's application: Parable in Greek is parabole, "to throw beside." A parable is an earthly story that teaches a heavenly truth. What was hidden or a mystery from creation to the time of Jesus Christ is revealed to us as individuals in the body of Christ today; Ephesians 3:5, Colossians 1:26.

False teachings: Certain groups in this century are bringing in the kingdom now. The orthodox church or catholic church is the kingdom of heaven.

Parables (20)	Mark-9 Luke-27 John-0	Miracles (21)	H-10, N-6, D-5
5:14-16 Lamp under a basket	Mk 4:21-22 Lu 8 / 11	8:2 Healed leper (faith)	(H)
7:24-27 Build house on rock or sand	Lu 6:47-49	8:5 Healed centurion's servant (faith)	(H)
9:16 * New cloth on old garment	Mk 2:21 Lu 5:36	8:14 Healed Peter's mother-in-law	(H)
9:17 * New wine in old wineskins	Mk 2:22 Lu 5:37-38	8:16 Healed many sick at evening	(H)
13:3-23 The 4 soils (sowing seed)	Mk 4:2-20 Lu 8:4-15	8:23 Quieting the storm	(N)
13:24-30 The wheat & weeds (36-43)	(1)	8:28 Demons enter herd of pigs	(D)
13:31-32 The mustard seed (birds)	Mk 4:30-31 Lu 13:18-19	9:2 Healed a paralytic	(H)
13:33 The leaven (34-35)	OT-70x, NT-28x Lu 13:20-21	9:20 Healed hemorrhaging woman (12 yrs.)	(H)
13:44 The hidden treasure (Israel)	(2)	9:23 Raised ruler's daughter (12 yrs.)	(H)
13:45-46 The pearl (tribulation saints)	(3)	9:27 Healed two blind men	(H)
13:47-50 The fish separated (return)	(4)	9:32 Demon-possessed, mute man	(D)
18:12-14 The lost sheep	Lu 15:3-7	12:9 Healed man's withered hand	(H)
18:23-35 The unforgiving servant	(5)	12:22 Demon-possessed, blind & mute man	(D)
20:1-16 * Workers in the vineyard	(6)	14:13 Feeding 5,000 (all 4 gospels)	(N)
21:28-32 * The 2 sons	(7)	14:25 Walking on the sea	(N)
21:33-45 * The wicked farmers	Mk 12:1-12 Lu 20:9-19	15:21 Delivered gentile woman's daughter	(D)
22:2-14 * The wedding feast	(8)	15:32 Feeding 4,000	(N)
24:32-44 > The fig tree	Mk 13:28-32 Lu 21:29-33	17:14 Delivered epileptic man	(D)
25:1-13 > The 10 virgins	(9)	17:24 Temple tax in fish's mouth	(N)
25:14-30 > The talents (75 #, 16 yrs.)	(10)	20:30 Healed two blind beggars	(H)
Red – signs of the times and mercy to the gentiles		21:18 Withering the fig tree	(N)
* OT-NT difference, > Future	(10) Unique to Matthew	H-Healing, N-Nature, D-Demons	

PARABLE, CHURCH, AND AGE COMPARISON CHART

Matthew 13	Revelation 2-3 churches	Ages
1st Four Soils Sow seed on soils of the heart	Ephesus (2:1-6) "lost 1 st love"	30-100 AD Early Church – Acts 2-28
2nd Wheat & Weeds Weeds – poisonous, deadly Look same until mature	Smyrna (2:7-11)	100-312 AD Persecution
3rd Birds (mustard seed grows) Tree – kingdom/christendom Birds – false pastors	Pergamos (2:12-17) "Balaam, Nicolaitans" Marries the world - pervert	312-605 AD Emperor Constantine – Rome
4th Leaven (bread grows) Woman - false doctrine Leaven - sin, corruption	Thyatira (2:18-29) "Jezebel, prophetess"	605-1520 AD Eastern Orthodox and Roman Middle or Dark Ages
5th Hidden Treasure Treasure - salvation Purchaser – Jesus Christ	Sardis (3:1-6) "remember . . . and repent"	1520-1750 AD Reformation - Enlightenment 1 st Great Awakening
6th Pearl of Great Price Pearl – salvation Natural growth w/irritation	Philadelphia (3:7-13) "open door, and no man can shut" Rapture – 1000 year reign of Christ	1750-1900 AD 2 nd Great Awakening, abolitionist, temperance (1917-1933), & mission movements
7th Good & Bad Fish Net – all people of all times Daniel 12:4	Laodiceans (3:14-22) "Lukewarm" buy of me gold tried in the fire, and white raiment, and anoint your eyes with eyesalve	1900-Present (1962-1980) Higher criticism – Dead Sea Scrolls Evolution – hippies – Info age – sexual promiscuity – World govt

Tools for the diligent Christ follower: 1 Peter 1:5-7

Hermeneutics lesson - Expository consistency of the content of Matthew chapter 13, in the context of	
1 – The immediate text	(7 parables in Matthew 13)
2 – Before immediate text	(chapters 11-12, increasing enemy verbal rhetoric, resistance, and accusation)
3 – After immediate text	(chapters 13:53-16:12, increasing enemy verbal rhetoric, resistance, and accusation)
4 – The complete book	(chapters 1-28)
5 – More by the same writer	(None for Matthew) Paul-14, John-5, Peter-2, Moses-5, Solomon-3, Jeremiah-2
6 – The four gospels	(Matthew, Luke, Mark & John)
7 – The New Testament	(23 books)
8 – The Bible	(66 books) 39 Old Testament plus 27 New Testament

Matthew Gems of Matthew 18- 12 Lessons on Discipleship: (1-14) Humility & Offenses
(15-35) Trespasses & Forgiveness IRT Sanctification

Matthew 18:1-35	Mark 9:33-50	Luke 9:46-50	Notes
<p>(1) ¹⁻⁵ ¹ At the same time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is the great in the kingdom of heaven? ² And Jesus called a little child to him, and set him in the midst of them, ³ And said, Verily I say to you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.</p> <p>⁴ Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is great in the kingdom of heaven. ⁵ And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receives me.</p> <p>(3) ⁶⁻⁹ ⁶ But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and [that] he were drowned in the depth of the sea. ⁷ Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! ⁸ Wherefore if your hand or your foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. ⁹ And if your eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.</p> <p>¹⁰⁻¹¹ ¹⁰ Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say to you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. ¹¹ For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.</p>	<p>(1) ^{9:33-37} ³³ And he came to Capernaum: and being in the house he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way? ³⁴ But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who [should be] the great. ³⁵ And he sat down, and called the twelve, and says to them, If any man desire to be first, [the same] shall be last of all, and servant of all. ³⁶ And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said to them, ³⁷ Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receives me: and whosoever shall receive me, receives not me, but him that sent me.</p> <p>(2) ^{9:38-40} ³⁸ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in your name, and he follows not us: and we forbad him, because he follows not us. ³⁹ But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. ⁴⁰ For he that is not against us is on our part.</p> <p>(3) ^{9:41-47} ⁴¹ For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. ⁴² And whosoever shall offend one of [these] little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea. ⁴³ And if your hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. And if your foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. And if your eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched.</p> <p>^{9:49-50} ⁴⁹ For everyone shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.</p>	<p>(1) ^{9:46-48} ⁴⁶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be great. ⁴⁷ And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, ⁴⁸ And said to them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receives me: and whosoever shall receive me receives him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.</p> <p>(2) ^{9:49-50} And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in your name; and we forbad him, because he follow not with us. And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us is for us.</p>	<p>Similar in all 3, not in John.</p> <p>Pride and humility, or least and great. How to enter Salvation.</p> <p>Another time and place. Luke 17:1-4. 15:4-7 Parable of the 1 lost sheep</p> <p>Resisting Salvation</p> <p>Angels- Heb 1:14 In Capernaum, Westside of the Sea of Galilee. <u>Jesus's life</u> Autumn 29 AD. ½ yr. to go. 2 ½ yrs. since baptism</p>

<p>12-14 Parable of the 1 lost sheep.</p>	<p>⁵⁰ Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.</p>		
<p>Matthew 18:15-20</p> <p>15 Moreover if your brother shall trespass against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone: if he shall hear you, you have gained your brother. 16 But if he will not hear [you, then] take with you one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. 17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell [it] to the congregation: but if he neglect to hear the congregation, let him be to you as a heathen man and a publican. 18 Verily I say to you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 19 Again I say to you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as concerning anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. 20 For where two or three are gathered together unto my name, there am I in the midst of them.</p> <p>(congregation = ekklesia or congregation of called-out ones, 3 x in 4 gospels, other in MT 16:17 – Peter’s confession) Acts 7:38</p>		<p>Sanctification (Trespases)</p> <p>Between brethren</p>	
<p>Matthew 18:21-35</p> <p>21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? 22 Jesus says to him, I say not to you, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.</p> <p>(fullness of the king’s forgiveness toward Israel exemplified 4 times in the Old Testament; Abraham to Exodus, Exodus to temple – 1 Kings 8, temple to Artaxerxes – Nehemiah 2:45, Artaxerxes to Messiah – 69 of 70 weeks, Daniel 9:24-27, Jeremiah 70 yrs. – 490 yrs. / 7 = 70 years of captivity – 2 Chronicles 36:21, concerning the Sabbath rest of the land, ... and now from individual to individual among believers in the New Testament)</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Parable of the Forgiving King</p> <p>23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened to a certain king, which would take account of his servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought to him, which owed him ten thousand talents. 25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay you all. 27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which owed him a hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took [him] by the throat, saying, Pay me that you owe. 29 And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and begged him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay you all. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. 31 So when his fellow servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told to their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O you wicked servant, I forgave you all that debt, because you desired me: 33 Should not you also have had compassion on your fellow servant, even as I had pity on you? 34 And his lord was angry, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due to him. 35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also to you, if ye from your hearts forgive not everyone his brother their trespases.</p>		<p>Sanctification (Forgiving)</p> <p>Talent = 4 Roman Denarius (3 month wages)</p> <p>Luke 17:3-4</p> <p>Eph 4:32 Col 3:13 Repentance of offender</p>	

Gems of Matthew 24 Comparisons and Contrasts in the Mount of Olives

Bible TOC

Matthew 24-25	Mark 13	Luke 21	Compare
23:37-39 <u>Jerusalem shall be desolate</u>	12:41-44 poor widow gave all	21:1-4 poor widow gave all	Matthew different
24:1-2 Departed temple – not 1 stone standing	13:1-2 departed temple – not 1 stone standing	21:5-6 some spoke – not 1 stone standing	Luke different
24:3 Mt of Olives. disciples asked privately, when-what/what sign?	13:3-4 Mt of Olives. <u>Peter</u> , James, <u>John</u> & Andrew asked privately, when-what sign?	21:7 They asked, Master, when-what sign?	All 3 different
24:4-5 Beware of deceivers	13:5-6 Beware of deceivers	21:8 Beware of deceivers	Same
24:6-8 Wars, famines, pestilences, earthquakes. Beginning of sorrows. Mt 24:9-28	13:7-8 Wars, earthquakes, famines. Beginning of sorrows. Mt 24:9-28	21:9-11 Wars, earthquakes, famines, pestilences, fearful sights and great signs from heaven. Mt 24:29-30.	Luke different
24:9-31 <u>Then</u> . . . Many offended, betray, hate, love grow cold. Endure to the end shall be saved. <u>Gospel to all nations.</u> <u>Daniel 9:27 Flee Jerusalem, not on Sabbath day.</u> <u>Great tribulation</u> , many false Christs-deceivers, great signs and wonders. Immediately after sun darkened & Son of man appear in the clouds with power and great glory. Angels trumpet shall gather the elect.	13:9-27 Deliver to councils and in the synagogues beaten, before rulers and kings. Holy Spirit will help. <u>Gospel to all nations.</u> <u>Daniel 9:27 Flee Jerusalem, not on Sabbath day.</u> <u>Great tribulation</u> , many false Christs-deceivers, great signs and wonders. Immediately after sun darkened & Son of man appear in the clouds with power and great glory. Angels trumpet shall gather the elect.	21:12-24 <u>Before</u> . . . Persecute in synagogues, prisons, before kings and rulers. Many shall betray. Mouth of wisdom. Jerusalem encompassed with armies. Flee or the sword or captivity into all nations will come. <u>Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.</u> (This occurred in 70 AD with the Roman army under Emperor Titus – escape to Pella).	Luke very different (Luke is past & Mt/Mk are future. Similar to Mk 16 past and Mt 28 Present to future. Micro and macro plans)
24:32-35 Parable of the fig tree . . . near, even at the doors. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.	13:28-31 Parable of the fig tree. . . near, even at the doors. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.	21:29-33 Parable of the fig tree, and all the trees . . . heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.	Almost the same (trees are new nations)
24:36-51 Only the Father knows that day and hour. Compared to the days of Noah. Two in the field; one shall be “taken” & one left. 24:42-51. Watch and be ready. 25:1-13. Parable of 10 virgins. 25:14-30. Parable of 5-2-1 talents. 25:31-46 Story of the sheep and the goats.	13:32 Only the Father knows that day and hour. 33-36. 1 st Parable: House owner on a journey, watch and pray – watch. Note: Jesus is away until his return. Same time period at Matthew 24:21-25:46. Mark follows Matthew – not Luke.	21:34-38 Beware of hearts, cares of this life Note: Parable of the 4 soils in Matthew 13, which takes place now in the ekklesia). <u>Watch and pray always.</u> Jesus taught in the temple at day before the crowds and his disciples at night at the Mount of Olives.	Same, but different lengths and emphasis “when-who taken where? End of Tribulation Unsaved - hell”
26:1 After 2 days was the feast of the Passover	14:1 After 2 days was the feast of the Passover.	22:1 The feast of passover drew near.	Same
Matthew to the nation Israel (Last 3 parables in Mt 13)	Mark (Peter) to Israel & the gentiles	Luke (Paul) to the gentiles & Israel. See Luke 17:20-37	John to the world

Mark (16-103, 1.5 hr) 2020

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Q & A

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16

12 Witnesses of the Son of None (the holy servant that suffers)

Patterns: Mark is a disciple of Peter. You can sense Peter's strong influence in this Gospel when compared to Acts and 1 & 2 Peter.

Chapter's 1-8 move very quick over almost 3 years, chapters 9-16 slow down for the last trip to Jerusalem and chapters 11-16 the last week of our Lord's life. The detailed chronology of "evenings" and "mornings", the overnight stays at Bethany, and two days before the Passover feast, reveal Jesus was crucified on Friday afternoon.

Mark is written to the Jewish and Gentile believers at Rome.

Holiness

Scripture

- | | |
|---|---------|
| 1) Baptisms give us the ability to be holy, serve and suffer for Christ | 1:8 |
| 2) An unclean spirit recognizes the Holy One of God (1 st deliverance from unclean spirit) | 1:23-24 |
| 3) Peter overcame his weakness of self-love, and teaches others self-denial | 8:38 |
| 4) Saltiness and peace with one another is relative to our degree of personal holiness | 9:50 |

Servanthood

- | | |
|---|---------|
| 5) Repent and believe the gospel (1 st teaching by Jesus) | 1:14-15 |
| 6) Peter's mothers is healed; to serve (1 st healing in Mark) | 1:30-31 |
| 7) The Sabbath day is used as an example of the new way of following Christ | 2:27-28 |
| 8) The servant is the greatest in the kingdom of God | 9:35 |

Suffering

- | | |
|--|-----------|
| 9) Their heart was hardened, before being purified by the Holy Spirit in Acts 2 | 6:52 |
| 10) The disciples did not understand before Acts 2 | 8:21 |
| 11) The 1 st of 3 major prophecies to the disciples of His future suffering | 8:31-33 |
| 12) The suffering of unbelief by those who should believe | 16:11, 14 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Mark 1:35	Prayer	Seek Father's will	None	Early morn. Prayer	Jesus Occasion, Periodic
Mark 6:46	Prayer	Seek Father's will	None	Away from crowds, on a hill	Jesus Occasion, Periodic
Mark 9:29	Intercession	Demons	Eating food, Gluttony	Fasting, MT 17:21	Jesus Occasion, Periodic
Mark 11:15-21 (verse 17)	All	Right Anger	Money	OT Place of Prayer - temple	Jesus End of Jesus Ministry

Application for today. The Christ like leader is a servant to the Body of Christ. The servant and example is underneath pushing others upward to be more like Christ. The symbol representing this activity is an inverted pyramid.

Gems

Outline of Mark:

<u>Part</u>	<u>Description</u>	<u>Mark</u>
<i>Fast moving</i>		
1	Introduction	1:1-13
2	The Servant's Early Galilean Ministry	1:14-3:6
3	The Servant's Later Galilean Ministry	3:7-6:6
4	The Servant's Self-revelation to the Disciples	6:7-8:30
<i>Slow moving</i>		
5	The Servant's Last Trip to Jerusalem	8:31-10:52
6	The Servant's Last Week in Jerusalem	11:1-13:37
7	The Servant's Last Day in Jerusalem	14:1-15:47
8	The Servant's Resurrection around Jerusalem	16:1-20

The gospel of Mark contains:

58 teachings (includes parables)

22 narratives

23 miracles

last miracle is the Barren Fig Tree at Mark 11:12-14

Mark compared to Matthew, Luke and John:

1. Uses the title "son of God" the least in frequency in all aspects.
2. Mark uses "kingdom of God" like other three gospels and New Testament 69x. Only Matthew uses "kingdom of heaven" 32x.

(1) ¹ The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God; ² As it is written in the prophets,
^a Behold, I send my messenger before your face, which shall prepare your way before you.
³ ^b The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.
⁴ John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.
⁵ And there went out to him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins. ⁶ And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey; ⁷ And preached, saying, There comes one mightier than I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.
⁸ I indeed have baptized you with water: but ^c he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

^a Malachi 3:1a Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me:
^b Isaiah 40:3 The voice of him that cries in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a highway for our God. Isaiah 42:1.
^c Matthew 3:7-10 and Luke 3:10-14 say Jesus would baptize "with the Holy Spirit and fire" fulfilled beginning in Acts 2 with the mighty wind and cloven tongues of fire on each head. The single article before the two nouns in the Greek text indicates a single baptism with the Holy Spirit and fire. These are 2 of 5 baptisms that begin at the entry point of our salvation.

Baptism is *baptisma* or immersion in Greek. Baptism is used in four settings in Mark.

- 1) Baptize hands and cups (7:4) outside in Old Testament
- 2a) Baptism of many – by John, in water for remission of sins (1:4-5, 11:30) Prepared the way for the Son of God
- 2b) Baptism of Jesus – by John (1:8) same as many and "to fulfill all righteousness", Matthew 3:15, 1st of 85x
- 3) Baptism of Holy Spirit – wait for power from on high (Lu 24:49 and Acts 2) inward in the New Testament
- 4) Baptized in the name of Jesus
- 5) Baptized into the body of Christ (1 Corinthians 12)
- 6) Baptized into the death of Christ (Romans 6)
- 7) Baptism by suffering (10:38-39) inward in the New Testament. Trials as Job experienced. Purge as fire does silver. Baptism of fire.

Hebrews 6:1-2 should cover the doctrine of baptisms in this manner. Two Old Testament baptisms (things to set apart for the LORD's use, and by John the baptizer in water for inward repentance, remission of sins, and prepare the way for the Savior) and six New Testament baptisms (Five are spiritual baptisms at the beginning of salvation and continually: the name of Jesus, body of Christ, Holy Spirit, Fire, and Jesus' death; and one is physical in water that is after salvation and one time).

1:9-11 **Beginning of Christ's Ministry (wilderness and temptations) and the Triune God**

(2) ⁹ And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan. ¹⁰ And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him: ¹¹ And ^a there came a voice from heaven, [saying], **You are my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.**

^a Mathew 3:17, 17:5 and Luke 3:22, and 2 Peter 1:7 share the same words. Hebrews 5:5. Psalm 2:7.

Part 2: The Servant's Early Galilean Ministry (1:14-3:6)

Teaching (1) Repent & Believe the Gospel

(3) ¹² And immediately the Spirit drives him into the wilderness. ¹³ And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered to him.

^a *metaneo* (*met-an-o-eh'-o*) in Greek. to think differently or afterwards, i.e. reconsider (morally, feel compunction):--repent. Mk 1:15, 6:12. Mankind needs to repent for salvation and sanctification: Acts 2:38, 17:30, 26:20 Romans 2:4, 2 Cor 12:21, Rev 2:5, 2:16, 2:21-22, 3:3, 3:19. They repented not during the Great Tribulation: Revelation 9:20-21, 16:9, 16:11.

Mark Chapter 1

1:14-20 Narrative (2) Jesus Calls 4 Disciples

(4) ¹⁴ Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, ¹⁵ And saying, **The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.** ¹⁶ Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers. ¹⁷ And Jesus said to them, **Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.** ¹⁸ And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him. ¹⁹ And when he had gone a little further there, he saw James the [son] of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets. ²⁰ And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

1:21-22 Teaching (2) on Sabbath in Synagogue

(5) ²¹ And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught. ²² And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

1:23-28 Miracle (1) Man Delivered from Unclean Spirit in Synagogue

²³ And there was in their synagogue a man with an ^a unclean spirit; and he cried out, ²⁴ Saying, Let [us] alone; what have we to do with you, you Jesus of Nazareth? are you come to destroy us? I know you who you are, the Holy One of God. ²⁵ And Jesus rebuked him, saying, **Hold your peace, and come out of him.** ²⁶ And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him. ²⁷ And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commands he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him. ²⁸ And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

^a This is the first of ten times the description unclean is used. Unclean is used 30x in the NT. 10x in Mark. 1:23, 26-27; 3:11, 3:30; 5:2, 5:8, 5:13; 7:25; Rev 18:2, 1 Peter 1Pe 1:12,15-16; 2:5,9; 3:5 Holy Spirit, be ye holy, priesthood, nation, women (not routine part of Old Testament teachings and way) 2Pe 1:18,21; 2:21; 3:2,11 mount, men, Spirit, commandment, prophets conversation. (14x) The contrast of unclean and clean or unholy and holy is unique to Peter.

1:29-31 Miracle (2) Healing of Peter's Mother-in-law

(6) ²⁹ And immediately, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. ³⁰ But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her. ³¹ And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered to them.

1:32-34 Miracle (3) Many Diseased are Healed and Demons are Cast Out by Jesus Christ

(7) ³² And at even, when the sun did set, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were controlled by demons. ³³ And all the city was gathered together at the door. ³⁴ And he healed many that were sick of diverse diseases, and cast out many demons; and permitted not the demons to speak, because they knew him.

1:35-36 Teaching (3) on Morning Prayer

(8) ³⁵ And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed. ³⁶ And Simon and they that were with him followed after him.

1:37-39 Teaching (4) in Synagogues and Miracle (4) Demons Cast Out

³⁷ And when they had found him, they said unto him, All [men] seek for you. ³⁸ And he said to them, **Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.** ³⁹ And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out demons.

Mark Chapter 1

1:40-45 **Miracle (5) Healing of Leprous Man**

(9) ⁴⁰ And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying to him, If you will, you can make me clean. ⁴¹ And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth [his] hand, and touched him, and says to him, **I will; be you clean.** ⁴² And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed. ⁴³ And he straightly charged him, and immediately sent him away; ⁴⁴ And says to him, **See you say nothing to any man: but go your way, show thyself to the priest, and offer for your cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.** ⁴⁵ But he went out, and began to publish [it] much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was outside in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

Mark Chapter 2

2:1-2 **Teaching (5) at a Full Home in Capernaum**

(10) ¹ And again he entered into Capernaum after [some] days; and it was noised that he was in the house. ² And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word to them.

2:3-12 **Miracle (6) Healing of Paralyzed Man (the scribes challenge)**

³ And **they** come to him, bringing one paralyzed, which was borne of **four**. ⁴ And when **they** could not come near to him for the press, **they** uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken [it] up, **they** let down the bed wherein the paralyzed lay. ⁵ **When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the paralyzed, Son, your sins be forgiven you.** ⁶ But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, ⁷ Why does this [man] thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? ⁸ And immediately when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said to them, **Why reason ye these things in your hearts?** ⁹ **Whether is it easier to say to the paralyzed, [Your] sins be forgiven you; or to say, Arise, and take up your bed, and walk?** ¹⁰ **But that ye may know that the Son of man has authority on earth to forgive sins, (he says to the paralyzed,) I say to you, Arise, and take up your bed, and go your way into your house.** ¹² And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, **We never saw it on this fashion.**

2:13-17 **Teaching (6) The Self-righteous versus the Sinner (to the scribes and pharisees)**

(11) ¹³ And he went forth again by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted to him, and he taught them. ¹⁴ And as he passed by, he saw Levi the [son] of Alphaeus sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, **Follow me.** And he arose and followed him. ¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, **as Jesus sat to eat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.** ¹⁶ And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said to his disciples, How is it that he eats and drinks with publicans and sinners? ¹⁷ When Jesus heard [it], he says to them, **They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**

2:18-20 **Teaching (7) Fasting (to the disciples of John and the pharisees)**

(12) ¹⁸ And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come and say to him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but your disciples fast not? ¹⁹ And Jesus said unto them, **Can the children of the bride chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast.** ²⁰ **But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then they will fast in those days.**

Mark Chapter 2

2:21-22 **Teaching (8) Parables of Old and New Cloths and Old and New Wine Bottles**

(13) ²¹ No man also sews a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up takes away from the old, and the tear is made worse. ²² And no man puts new wine into old bottles: else the new wine does burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

2:23-28 **Teaching (9) Plucking Corn on the Sabbath Defended** (to the Pharisees)

(14) ²³ And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. ²⁴ And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful? ²⁵ And he said to them, **Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was a hungered, he, and they that were with him?** ²⁶ How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the showbread, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him? ²⁷ And he said to them, **The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:** ²⁸ Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

Note on the sabbath made for man and Christ as the Lord of the Sabbath. We must not traditionalize outward forms of religion for spirituality. While ill in body and mind we understand God will accomplish his will with or without us. We must be faithful to seek, submit, surrender, and serve.

Mark Chapter 3

3:1-6 **Miracle (7) and Teaching (10) on Healing on the Sabbath Defended** (to the Pharisees and Herodians)

(15) ¹ And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. ² And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him. ³ And he says to the man which had the withered hand, **Stand forth.** ⁴ And he says to them, **Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill?** But they held their peace. ⁵ And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he says to the man, **Stretch forth your hand.** And he stretched [it] out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. ⁶ And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

Notes on Mark 3:7 to 4:34 – a principle to know, understand and obey sections of the Scriptures.

<u>People</u>		<u>Location(s)</u>		<u>Event(s)</u>	<u>Connectivity</u>
Jesus	(3:7-4:34)	Shore (Bethsaida)	(3:7-12, 4:1-9)	Miracles/Teaches	
Disciples	(3:7-4:34)	Sea (of Galilee)	(3:9)	Parables	4:10-12, 4:33-34
12 Apostles	(3:13-19a)	Mountain (Arbel)	(3:13-19a)	Select/Parables	4:10-12, 4:33-34
					4:35
Multitude	(3:19b-4:9)	Shore (Sower's Cove)	(3:7-12, 3:20-4:9)	Hear/Miracles	
Scribes	(3:22-30)	House	(3:22-30)	Blaspheme Holy Spirit	
Jesus' family	(3:31-35)	House	(3:31-35)	Visit	

Mark Chapter 3

Part 3: The Servant's Later Galilean Ministry (3:7-6:6; 1 ½ to 2 years into Jesus Ministry)

3:7-12 Miracle (8) Many Healed Near the Sea of Galilee

(16)⁷ But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples **to the sea**: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,⁸ And from Jerusalem, and from Idumaea, and [from] beyond Jordan; and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came to him. ⁹ And he spoke to his disciples, that a **small ship should wait** on him because of the multitude, lest they should throng him. ¹⁰ For he had healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. ¹¹ And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, You are the Son of God. ¹² **And he straightly charged them that they should not make him known.**

3:13-21 Narrative (3) 12 Apostles Ordained to Preach (primary); Heal & Cast Out Demons (secondary)

(17)¹³ And **he goes up into a^a mountain**, and calls [to him] whom he would: and they came to him. ¹⁴ And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, ¹⁵ And to have authority to heal sicknesses, and to cast out demons: ¹⁶ And Simon he surnamed Peter; ¹⁷ And James the [son] of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder: ¹⁸ And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the [son] of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus, and Simon the Canaanite, ¹⁹ And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and **they went into a house.** ²⁰ And the multitude comes together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. ²¹ And when his friends heard [of it], they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

^a Mount Arbel has a beautiful view of Galilee, the Great Commission of Matthew 28:16-20 was here also. Below and toward Magda and Capernaum is Sower's Cove.

3:22-30 Teaching (11) on Blasphemy of the Holy Spirit (by the scribes)

(18)²² And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, He has Beelzebub, and by the prince of the demons casts he out demons. ²³ And he called them [to him], and said to them in parables, **How can Satan cast out Satan?** ²⁴ **And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand.** ²⁵ **And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.** ²⁶ **And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but has an end.** ²⁷ **No man can enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house.** ²⁸ **Verily I say to you, All sins shall be forgiven to the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:** ²⁹ **But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost has never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation:** ³⁰ **Because they said, He has an unclean spirit.**

3:31-35 Teaching (12) "Who is My Mother or My Brethren?"

(19)³¹ There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing outside, sent to him, calling him. ³² And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, your mother and your brethren outside seek for you. ³³ And he answered them, saying, **Who is my mother, or my brethren?** ³⁴ And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, **Behold my mother and my brethren!** ³⁵ **For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.**

Mark Chapter 4

Parables of the Seed and A Miracle on the Same Day (Mt 13, Lu 8)

4:1-20 **Teaching (13) Parable of the Sower (Believer), Seed (Word), and Four Grounds (Heart)**

(20) ¹ And he began **again to teach by the sea side**: and there was gathered to him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land. ² And he taught them many things by parables, and said to them in his doctrine, ³ **Hearken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow**: ⁴ And it came to pass, as he sowed, **some fell by the way side**, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. ⁵ And **some fell on stony ground**, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth: ⁶ But when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away. ⁷ And **some fell among thorns**, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. ⁸ And **other fell on good ground**, and did **yield fruit that sprang up and increased**; and brought forth, **some thirty, and some sixty, and some a hundred**. ⁹ And he said to them, **He that has ears to hear, let him hear**.

(21) ¹⁰ And when **he was alone**, they that were about him with **the twelve asked of him the parable**. ¹¹ And he said to them, To you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but to them that are without, all [these] things are done in parables: ¹² That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; **lest at any time they should be converted, and [their] sins should be forgiven them**. ¹³ And he said to them, ¹⁴ **Don't ye know this parable? and how then will ye know all parables? The sower sows the word**. ¹⁵ And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan comes immediately, and takes away the word that was sown in their hearts. ¹⁶ And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness; ¹⁷ And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution arises for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. ¹⁸ And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, ¹⁹ And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. ²⁰ And these are they which are **sown on good ground; such as hear the word, and receive [it], and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred**.

Note: Mark 4 has 5 parables. MT 13 – 8 parables, 4 different; LU 8 – 1 parable, the Seed. The 30-60-100 fruit includes (a) salvation and spiritual growth, (b) myself and other believers, (c) changes in times and location, and (d) being led of the Spirit, not my will, but your will.

- | | | |
|---|---------|------------------------|
| 1. The good ground heart is born again, | 4:1-20 | Acts 2 to Revelation 3 |
| 2. is a candle on a candlestick , | 4:21-22 | Acts 2 to Revelation 3 |
| 3. has wisdom , | 4:23-25 | Acts 2 to Revelation 3 |
| 4. is the church , (Lord of the harvest, Mt 9:38, Lu 10:2) | 4:26-29 | Acts 2 to Revelation 3 |
| 5. has a future inheritance in the kingdom of God , | 4:30-32 | Acts 2 to Revelation 3 |

4:21-22 **Teaching (14) on the Seed (Word of God) is a Candle designed for a Candlestick**

(22) ²¹ And he said to them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick? ²² For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was anything kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

4:23-25 **Teaching (15) on the Hearers Wisdom due to the Seed on Good Ground**

(Ja 3:13-18, Mk 9:33-50)

²³ If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. ²⁴ And he said to them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and to you that hear shall more be given. ²⁵ For he that has, to him shall be given: and he that has not, from him shall be taken even that which he has.

Mark Chapter 4

4:26-29 **Teaching (16) The Growing Seed of the Ekklesia** (from the good ground)

(23) ²⁶ And he said, **So is the kingdom of God**, as if a man should cast seed into the ground;
²⁷ And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knows not how.
²⁸ For the earth brings forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.
²⁹ But when the fruit is brought forth, **immediately he puts in the sickle**, because the harvest is come.

4:30-34 **Teaching (17) The Growth of the Kingdom of God as a Mustard Seed** (on good ground)

(24) ³⁰ And he said, **Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God?** or with what comparison shall we compare it? ³¹ [It is] like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: ³² But when it is sown, it grows up, and becomes greater than all herbs, and shoots out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

³³ And with many such parables spoke he the word to them, as they were able to hear [it].

³⁴ But without a parable spoke he not to them: and **when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.**

4:35-41 **Miracle (9) The Storm Calmed (with his disciples) / 4:39 & 1:25 peace, be still**

(25) ³⁵ And the same day, when the even was come, he says to them, Let us pass over to the other side.
³⁶ And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship. And there were **also with him other little ships.** ³⁷ And there arose a great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full. ³⁸ And he was in the hinder part of the ship, **asleep on a pillow:** and they awake him, and say to him, **Master, care you not that we perish?** ³⁹ And he arose, and **rebuked** the wind, and said to the sea, **Peace, be still.** And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. And he said to them, **Why are ye so fearful? how is it that ye have no faith?** ⁴¹ And **they feared exceedingly,** and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?

Mark Chapter 5

Miracle (10) Demons Cast into 2000 Pigs of Gadarenes

(26) ¹ And they came over to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. ² And when he was come out of the ship, **immediately** there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit,
³ Who had [his] dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: ⁴ Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any [man] tame him. ⁵ And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. ⁶ But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him, ⁷ And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with you, Jesus, [you] Son of the most high God? I adjure you by God, that you torment me not. ⁸ For he said unto him, **Come out of the man, [you] unclean spirit.** ⁹ And he asked him, ^a **What is your name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.** ¹⁰ And he begged him much that he would not send them away out of the country. ¹¹ Now there was there near to the mountains a great herd of swine feeding. ¹² And all the demons begged him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. ¹³ And **immediately** Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand;) and were choked in the sea. ¹⁴ And they that fed the swine fled, and told [it] in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done. ¹⁵ And they come to Jesus, and see him that was controlled by a demon, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and **they were afraid.** ¹⁶ And they that saw [it] told them how it befell to him that was controlled by a demon, and [also] concerning the swine. ¹⁷ And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts. ¹⁸ **And when he was come into the ship, he that had been controlled by a demon prayed him that he might be with him.** ¹⁹ Howbeit Jesus permitted him not, but says to him, **Go home to your friends, and tell them how great things the Lord has done for you, and has had compassion on you.** ²⁰ And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and all [men] did marvel.

^a the demon answered with a lie or half-truth to Jesus.

Mark Chapter 5

5:21-34 **Miracle (11) Woman Healed** (12 yrs. with issue of blood, outcast)

(27) ²¹ And when Jesus was passed over again by ship to the other side, much people gathered to him: and he was near to the sea. ²² And, behold, there comes one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet, ²³ And begged him greatly, saying, My little daughter lies at the point of death: [I pray you], come and lay your hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live. ²⁴ And [Jesus] went with him; and much people followed him, and thronged him. ²⁵ And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, ²⁶ And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, ²⁷ When she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched his garment. ²⁸ For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole. ²⁹ And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in [her] body that she was healed of that plague. ³⁰ And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that power had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, **Who touched my clothes?** ³¹ And his disciples said unto him, You see the multitude thronging you, and say you, Who touched me? ³² And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing. ³³ But **the woman fearing and trembling**, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth. ³⁴ And he said unto her, **Daughter, your faith has made you whole; go in peace, and be whole of your plague.**

Note: vs 30, KJV virtue, Greek dynamis.

5:35-43 **Miracle (12) Ruler's Daughter Healed** (12 yrs. old, known)

(28) ³⁵ While he yet spoke, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's [house certain] which said, Your daughter is dead: why trouble you the Master any further? ³⁶ As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he says to the ruler of the synagogue, **Be not afraid, only believe.** ³⁷ And he permitted no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. ³⁸ And he comes to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and sees the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly. ³⁹ And when he was come in, he says to them, **Why make ye this fuss, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleeps.** ⁴⁰ And **they laughed him to scorn.** But when he had put them all out, he takes the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and enters in where the damsel was lying. ⁴¹ And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, ^a **Talitha cumi;** which is, being interpreted, **Damsel, I say to you, arise.** ⁴² And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was [of the age] of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. ⁴³ And he charged them straightly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

^a Talitha is Hebrew for a little girl's name, Talitha; or it may mean "little lamb" as a term of endearment. Strong's Number H2924 in Hebrew is "taleh" occurring 2 times in 2 verses, 1 Samuel 7:9, and Isaiah 65:25. The ending -a is a Hebrew feminine diminutive.

Cumi is definitely female where Cum is male for arise. Cumi is used in the majority text and Textus Receptus (KJV, NKJV, Darby, ERV, Webster's, YLT, Latin-Vulgate, Douay-Rheims). Today in modern Hebrew cumi is always feminine and commonly used to speak with people and animals for arise or get up. Cum is arise for masculine. The Hebrew in Jesus day was Mishnaic Hebrew commonly spoke everywhere. Hebrew has changed through time the same as English, but are still Hebrew and English.

Whereas cum is used in the eclectic text which refers to the older Vaticanus and Sinaiticus (Westcott and Hort, NASB, NAS 1977, NET Bible, NIV, Holman Christian Standard Bible, Good News Translation, Berean Study Bible, etc.), The reason Aramaic is stressed by Catholic and old Protestant scholars is due to a low view of the Hebrew nation and therefore language, and Israel's place in the present and future for prophecy. .

Note: The Textus Receptus (Latin, "Received Text") is the Greek text originally compiled by Erasmus around 1516. Though the earliest work was prepared by Desiderius Erasmus, his work was later revised by Robert Estienne (or, Stephanus) and further revised by Theodore Beza. The text produced by each is substantially the same, aside from some minor variations. The Blue Letter Bible utilizes Stephanus' edition from 1550.

Mark Chapter 6

6:1-6 Teaching (18) Rejected at Nazareth and Miracle (13) a Few Healed

(29) ¹ And he went out from there, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him. ² And when the sabbath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing [him] were astonished, saying, From whence has this [man] these things? and what wisdom is this which is given to him, that even such mighty works are performed by his hands? ³ Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Judah, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him. ⁴ But Jesus said to them, **A prophet is not without honor, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.** ⁵ And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. ⁶ And he marveled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages, teaching.

Part 4: The Servant's Self-revelation to the Disciples (6:7-8:30)

6:7-13 Teaching (19) 12 Apostles Sent to Teach Israel (also cast out demons and healed many)

(30) ⁷ And he called [to him] the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and gave them authority over unclean spirits; ⁸ And commanded them that they should **take nothing for [their] journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in [their] purse:** ⁹ **But [be] shod with sandals; and not put on two coats.** ¹⁰ And he said to them, **In what place soever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye depart from that place.** ¹¹ **And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart there, shake off the dust under your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say to you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.** ¹² And they went out, and preached that men should repent. ¹³ And they cast out many demons, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

Note: Challenge – compare and contrast with same accounts in Matthew and Luke; especially the sending of the 70 to the gentiles in Luke.

6:14-29 Narrative (4) King Herod Thinks Jesus is John the Baptist Risen from the Dead

(31) ¹⁴ And king Herod heard [of him]; (for his name was spread abroad:) and he said, That John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do show forth themselves in him. ¹⁵ Others said, That it is Elijah. And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets. ¹⁶ But when Herod heard [thereof], he said, It is John, whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead. ¹⁷ For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her. ¹⁸ For John had said unto herod, It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife. ¹⁹ Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not: ²⁰ For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and a holy, and observed him; and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. ²¹ And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief [estates] of Galilee; ²² And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod and them that sat with him, the king said to the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever you will, and I will give [it] you. ²³ And he swore to her, Whatsoever you shall ask of me, I will give [it] you, to the half of my kingdom. ²⁴ And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist. ²⁵ And she came in straightway with haste to the king, and asked, saying, I will that you give me by and by in a charger the head of John the Baptist. ²⁶ And the king was exceeding sorry; [yet] for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her. ²⁷ And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison, ²⁸ And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother. ²⁹ And when his disciples heard [of it], they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

Mark Chapter 6

6:30-31 Narrative (5) Apostles Share their Miracles and Teachings

(32) ³⁰ And the apostles gathered themselves together to Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. ³¹ And he said to them, **Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while:** for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

6:32-44 Teaching (20) and Miracle (14) Feeding of 5000 (12 baskets leftover)

(33) ³² And they departed into a desert place by ship privately. ³³ And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together to him. ³⁴ And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were **as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.** ³⁵ And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came to him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed: ³⁶ Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat. ³⁷ He answered and said to them, **Give ye them to eat.** And they say to him, Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat? ³⁸ He says to them, **How many loaves have ye? go and see.** And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes. ³⁹ And he commanded them to **make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.** ⁴⁰ And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties. ⁴¹ And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all. ⁴² And they did all eat, and were filled. ⁴³ And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes. ⁴⁴ And they that did eat of the loaves were about five thousand men.

Note: Same event in Matthew 14:13, Luke 9:10, & John 6:1. Compare & contrast with feeding the 5k. Mk 6:30-8:30 covers a thread of bread, food, and eating. Mk 9-10 cover fasting & last trip to Jerusalem.

6:45-52 Teaching (21) on Prayer and Miracle (15) of Walk on Water

(34) ⁴⁵ And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before to Bethsaida, while he sent away the people. ⁴⁶ And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray. ⁴⁷ And when evening was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. ⁴⁸ And he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary to them: and about the fourth watch of the night he comes to them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them. ⁴⁹ But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out: ⁵⁰ For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and says to them, **Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.** ⁵¹ And he went up to them into the ship; and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered. ⁵² For they considered not [the miracle] of the loaves: for their heart was hardened.

6:53-56 Miracle (16) of Many Healed at Gennesaret

(35) ⁵³ And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore. ⁵⁴ And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him, ⁵⁵ And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was. ⁵⁶ And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and begged him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him were made whole.

Mark Chapter 7

7:1-23 The Pharisees Traditions

7:1-3 Teaching (22) Exposes Elders Tradition of Washing of Hands and Eating Devices

(36) ¹ Then came together to him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. ² And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault. ³ For the Pharisees, and all the Jews,

Mark Chapter 7

except they wash [their] hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. ⁴ And [when they come] from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, [as] the washing of cups, and pots, brazen vessels, and of tables. ⁵ Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not your disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? ⁶ He answered and said to them, **Well has Isaiah prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honors me with [their] lips, but their heart is far from me.** ⁷ **Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching [for] doctrines the commandments of men.** ⁸ **For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, [as] the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.** ⁹ And he said to them, **Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.** ¹⁰ **For Moses said, Honor your father and your mother; and, Whoso curses father or mother, let him die the death:** ¹¹ **But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, [It is] Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever you might be profited by me; [he shall be free].** ¹² **And ye suffer him no more to do anything for his father or his mother;** ¹³ **Making the Word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.**

7:14-23 **Teaching (23) of the Parable of Man's Heart**

(37) ¹⁴ And when he had called all the people [to him], he said to them, **Hearken to me everyone [of you], and understand:** ¹⁵ **There is nothing from outside a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.** ¹⁶ **If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.** ¹⁷ And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. ¹⁸ And he says to them, **Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from outside enters into the man, [it] cannot defile him;** ¹⁹ **Because it enters not into his heart, but into the belly, and goes out into the draught, purging all meats?** ²⁰ And he said, **That which comes out of the man, that defiles the man.** ²¹ **For^a from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,** ²² **Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness:** ²³ **All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.**

^a Truth of the evil from the natural man's heart has 13 characteristics revealed in verses 21-22. Evil has a progressive order: Heart – Mind – Words – Actions – Habits – Character

7:24-30 **Miracle (17) A Syrophenician (nation) Woman's Wisdom to Heal Daughter (15-mile trip)**

(38) ²⁴ And from there he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house, and would have no man know [it]: but he could not be hid. ²⁵ For a [certain] woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet: ²⁶ The woman was a Greek, a **Syrophenician by nation;** and she begged him that he would cast forth the demon out of her daughter. ²⁷ But Jesus said unto her, **Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast [it] to the dogs.** ²⁸ And she answered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: **yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.** ²⁹ And he said unto her, **For this saying go your way; the demon is gone out of your daughter.** ³⁰ And when she was come to her house, she found the demon gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

7:31-37 **Miracle (18) of Deaf and Dumb Man Healed**

(39) ³¹ And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came to the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis. ³² And they bring to him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. ³³ And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue; ³⁴ And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and says to him, ^a **Ephphasa, that is, Be opened.** ³⁵ And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spoke plain. ³⁶ And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published [it]; ³⁷ And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He has done all things well: he makes both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

^a Ephphasa is Hebrew and not Aramaic. The Greek transliteration of Ephphatha is Ephphata in Hebrew and **Etphataa** in Aramaic. In English "be opened".

Mark Chapter 8 Preparing for the Servants Last Trip to Jerusalem (8:1-30)

8:1-9 Miracle (19) of 4000 Fed (7 baskets of bread leftover)

(40) ¹ In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples [to him], and says to them, ² **I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:** ³ **And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for diverse of them came from far.** ⁴ And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these [men] with bread here in the wilderness? ⁵ And he asked them, **How many loaves have ye?** And they said, Seven. ⁶ And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them; and they did set them before the people. ⁷ And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them. ⁸ So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken [bread] that was left seven baskets. ⁹ And they that had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away.

8:10-12 Teaching (24) Seeking a Sign (to the Pharisees)

(41) ¹⁰ And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha. ¹¹ And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him. ¹² And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and says, **Why does this generation seek after a sign? verily I say to you, There shall no sign be given to this generation.**

8:13-21 Teaching (25) of the Parable of the Leavened Bread (reproof to 12 apostles) Mt 15:39

(42) ¹³ And he left them, and entering into the ship again departed to the other side. ¹⁴ Now [the disciples] had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf. ¹⁵ And he charged them, saying, **Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and [of] the leaven of Herod.** ¹⁶ And they reasoned among themselves, saying, [It is] because we have no bread. ¹⁷ And when Jesus knew [it], he says to them, ^a **Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened?** ¹⁸ **Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?** ¹⁹ **When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up?** They say to him, Twelve. ²⁰ **And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up?** And they said, Seven. ²¹ And he said to them, ^a **How is it that ye do not understand?**

^a vs 17-18, 21 Jesus scolds the 12 Apostles for not hearing, seeing or understanding-their hardened hearts
 Note: Also in Matthew 15:32. Below consider the contrasts with feeding the 5,000 at Mark 6:32-44.

Mark	Fed 5000 (Mark 6:32-44)	Fed 4000 (Mark 8:1-9)
	Desert place – end of 1 day	From far away – there for 3 days
	Compassion – taught multitude much	Compassion – taught the 12 apostles
	Multitude had 5 loaves & 2 fish	Disciples have 7 loaves & a few fish
	Command multitude to sit by groups of 50	Command multitude to sit
	Jesus prayed – blessed	Jesus prayed – gave thanks
	12 baskets leftover	7 baskets leftover
Before	6:30-31 Return of the 12 sent out in Galilee, they did many miracles & taught	7:31-38 Multitude publish a miracle by Jesus in Galilee (following Jesus)
After	6:45-52 ship - prayed alone at mountain Walk on water – spoke - storm ceased	6:10-21 Teachings to the 12. Forgot bread. Leaven (deceit) of pharisees & Herod

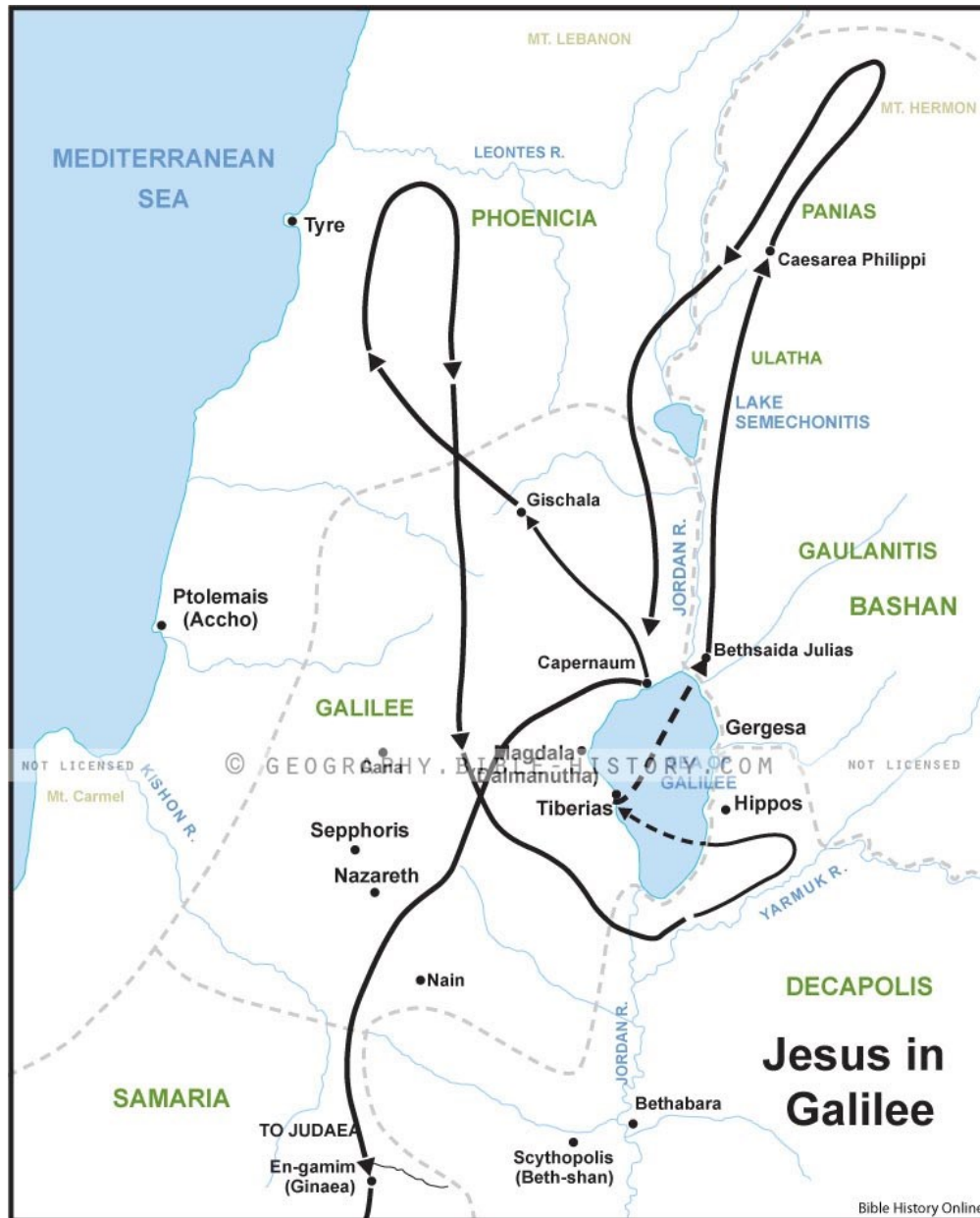
8:22-26 Miracle (20) of Blind Man Healed

(43) ²² And he comes to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man to him, and begged him to touch him. ²³ And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw anything. ²⁴ And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking. ²⁵ After that he put [his] hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. ²⁶ And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell [it] to any in the town.

Mark Chapter 8

8:27-33 **Teaching (26) of Apostles Confirm Christ's Identity (27-30) and Peter's Rebuke (31-33)**

(44) ²⁷ And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of Caesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying to them, **Whom do men say that I am?** ²⁸ And they answered, John the Baptist: but some [say], Elijah; and others, One of the prophets. ²⁹ And he says to them, **But whom say ye that I am?** And Peter answers and says to him, You are the Christ. ³⁰ And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.



Part 5: The Servant's Last Trip to Jerusalem (8:31-10:52)

³¹ ^a And he began to teach them, that **the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and [of] the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.** ³² And he spoke that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. ³³ But when he had turned about and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, **Get you behind me, Satan: for you mind not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.**

^a The first of three major prophecies of Jesus' passion, same time as Matthew 16:21 and Luke 9:22.

Mark Chapter 8

8:34-38 **Teaching (27) on Denial of Self to Follow Christ**

(45) ³⁴ And when he had called the people [to him] with his disciples also, he said to them,
^a **Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.**
³⁵ **For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it.** ³⁶ **For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?** ³⁷ **Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?** ³⁸ **Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he comes in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.** ^{9:1} **And he said to them, Verily I say to you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.**

^a Harmony of the gospels – Time of retreat at Mount Hermon

Event / Theme of Gospel	Son of David (to Israel)	Son of None (to Roman)	Son of Man (to gentile)	Son of God (to all)
Conversation: Jesus asks, who do people say I am? Disciples give 5 responses. Peter replies, the Christ, Son of the living God. Jesus says to not tell anyone; speaks of death. Peter defends Jesus. Jesus rebukes Peter.	Matthew 16:13-23.	Mark 8:27-33	Luke 9:18-22 (Jesus was praying alone)	John 21:21-22 (Jesus did much more and all we need to know is written, i.e., John does not write what Mt-Mk-Lu says)
Teaching: Jesus exhorts all to come after him, self-denial, taking up their cross and following him.	Matthew 16:24-28(24)	Mark 8:34-9:1(34)	Luke 9:23-27(23)	
Miracle: After 6 days, Jesus, Peter, James and John go to a higher mountain alone. Moses and Elijah appear and Jesus change into glory. Peter's mistake. Jesus talk with the three disciples as they were descending the mountain. Do not tell anyone.	Matthew 17:1-13	Mark 9:2-13	Luke 9:28-36	

Recommend to see: The Gospel According to Luke (KJV) from the JESUS Film Project (4 hour video, free)

International Standard Bible Encyclopedia. ASHAMED - confusion or abashment through consciousness of guilt or of its exposure. Often include a sense of terror or fear because of the disgrace connected with the performance of some action. Capacity for shame indicates that moral sense (conscience) is not extinct.

Mark Chapter 9

9:2-10 **Teaching (28) on Christ's Rising from the Dead (God's Voice & Glory at the Mountain)**

(46) ² And after six days Jesus takes [with him] Peter, and James, and John, and leads them up into a high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them. ³ And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them. ⁴ And there appeared to them ^a Elijah with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus. ⁵ And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. ⁶ For he knew not what to say; for they were sore afraid. ⁷ And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, **This is my beloved Son: hear him.**
⁸ And suddenly, when they had looked round about, they saw no man anymore, save Jesus only with themselves. ⁹ And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead. ¹⁰ And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

^a Two Witnesses of Revelation 11:3-12 or Zechariah Governor and Priest?

Mark Chapter 9

9:11-13 **Teaching (29) on Elijah Must Precede Christ** (John the Baptist)

(47) ¹¹ And they asked him, saying, Why say the scribes that ^a Elijah must first come?
¹² And he answered and told them, **Elijah verily comes first, and restores all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nothing.** ¹³ But I say to you, That Elijah is indeed come, and they have done to him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

^a Elijah is John the Baptist! Matthew 17:9-13, Malachi 4:5-6.

9:14-29 **Miracle (21) Dumb & Deaf Spirit Cast Out of a Father's Son** **Teaching (30) Prayer & Fasting**

(48) ¹⁴ And when he came to [his] disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them. ¹⁵ And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to [him] saluted him. ¹⁶ And he asked the scribes, **What question ye with them?**
¹⁷ And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought to you my son, which has a dumb spirit; ¹⁸ And wheresoever he takes him, he tears him: and he foams, and gnashes with his teeth, and pines away: and I spoke to your disciples that they should cast him out; and they could not.
¹⁹ He answers him, and says, **O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I allow you? bring him to me.** ²⁰ And they brought him to him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming. ²¹ And he asked his father, **How long is it ago since this came to him?** And he said, Of a child. ²² And oftentimes it has cast him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him: but if you can do anything, have compassion on us, and help us. ²³ Jesus said unto him, **If you can believe, all things are possible to him that believes.** ²⁴ And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help you my unbelief. ²⁵ When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying to him, **[You] dumb and deaf spirit, I charge you, come out of him,** and enter no more into him. ²⁶ And [the spirit] cried, and tore him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead. ²⁷ But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he arose. ²⁸ And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out? ²⁹ And he said to them, **This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer ^a and fasting.**

^a Most newer Bible versions omit "and fasting" referring to the Westcott and Hort family of manuscripts. Exceptions include the NKJV, HCSB, ISV, Aramaic Bible in Plain English, Douay-Rheims, WEB, and YLT.

9:30-32 **Teaching (31) to Disciples about His Death & Resurrection**

(49) ³⁰ And they departed there, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know [it]. ³¹ ^a For he taught his disciples, and said to them, **The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.** ³² But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

^a The second of three major prophecies of Jesus' passion. The same time as Matthew 17:22-23 and Luke 9:43-45.

9:33-34 **Teaching (32 to 35) to 12 on War and Peace among themselves (33-50)**

(50) ³³ And he came to Capernaum: and being in the house he asked them, ^a **What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way?** ³⁴ But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who [should be] the great.

- ^a 1) Disputing among themselves – No (33-34)
2) Serving – Yes (35-37)
3) Disputing with other believers – No (38-42)
4) Offenses by Hand, Foot or Eye – No (43-49a)
5) Flavored with Salt – Yes (49b-50). Context - end of Galilean Ministry.

Mark Chapter 9

9:35-42 **Teaching (33) to 12 on War and Peace among other believers**

(51) ³⁵ And he sat down, and called the twelve, and says to them, **If any man desire to be first, [the same] shall be last of all, and servant of all.** ³⁶ And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said to them, ³⁷ **Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receives me: and whosoever shall receive me, receives not me, but him that sent me.** ³⁸ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out demons in your name, and he follows not us: and we forbad him, because he follows not us. ³⁹ But Jesus said, **Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.** ⁴⁰ For he that is not against us is on our part. ⁴¹ For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say to you, **he shall not lose his reward.** ⁴² And whosoever shall offend one of [these] little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

9:43-49 **Teaching (34) Offenses among Believers** (Romans 14, 1 Cor 3, 2 Cor 5:10-11, Eph 1-3)

(52) ⁴³ And if your ^a hand offend you, cut it off: it is better for you to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: ⁴⁴ Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁵ And if your ^a foot offend you, cut it off: it is better for you to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: ⁴⁶ Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁷ And if your ^a eye offend you, pluck it out: it is better for you to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: ⁴⁸ Where their worm dies not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁹ For everyone shall be salted with fire,

^a Hand = what we do, foot = where we go, eye = what we set our mind on.

Teaching (35) on Saltiness and Peace among Believers

and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. ⁵⁰ Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

^a Are You a Salty Sailor (Navigator)?

Mark Chapter 10

10:1-12 **Teaching (36) on Having a Hard Heart & Adultery (to Pharisees)**

(53) ¹ And he arose from there, and comes into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort to him again; and, as he was custom, he taught them again. ² And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, ^a Is it lawful for a man to put away [his] wife? tempting him. ³ And he answered and said to them, What did Moses command you? ⁴ And they said, Moses permitted to write a bill of divorcement, and to put [her] away. ⁵ And Jesus answered and said to them, **For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.** ⁶ **But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.** ⁷ For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; ⁸ And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. ⁹ What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder. ¹⁰ And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same [matter]. ¹¹ And he says to them, **Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, commits adultery against her.** ¹² And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she commits adultery.

^a Genesis 1:27,2:24. Mark 10:9 is added by Jesus. Matthew 5:27-32, 1 Corinthians 7.

Mark Chapter 10

10:13-16 Teaching (37) Salvation by Being as a Child (Psalm 131:2)

(54) ¹³ And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and [his] disciples rebuked those that brought them. ¹⁴ But when Jesus saw [it], he was much displeased, and said to them, **Allow the little children to come to me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.** ¹⁵ Verily I say to you, **Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.**

¹⁶ And he took them up in his arms, put [his] hands upon them, and blessed them.

10:17-22 Teaching (38) on Salvation is Not by Being or Doing Good (Romans 3:10, 23)

(55) ¹⁷ And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? ¹⁸ And Jesus said unto him, **Why call you me good? there is none good but one, [that is], God.** ¹⁹ You know the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honor your father and mother. ²⁰ And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these I have observed from my youth.

²¹ Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, **One thing you lack: go your way, sell whatsoever you have, and give to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me.** ²² And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

10:23-27 Teaching (39) Salvation is Difficult due to Worldly Riches (James 4:4, I John 2:15-17)

(56) ²³ And Jesus looked round about, and says to his disciples, **How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!** ²⁴ And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answers again, and says to them, **Children, how hard it is for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!** ²⁵ **It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.** ²⁶ And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? ²⁷ And Jesus looking upon them says, **With men [it is] impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.**

10:28-31 Teaching (40) Discipleship Requires us to Forsake All for Christ (Romans 14:17-18)

(57) ²⁸ Then Peter began to say to him, Look, we have left all, and have followed you.

²⁹ And Jesus answered and said, **Verily I say to you, There is no man that has left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's,** ³⁰ **But he shall receive a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions;** and in the world to come eternal life. ³¹ But many [that are] first shall be last; and the last first.

Mark Chapter 10

10:32-34 **Teaching (41) on the Death of Jesus – 3rd and final time** (Psalm 22, Mark 9:30-32)

(58) ^{32 a} And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen to him, ³³ [Saying], Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered to the chief priests, and to the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles: ³⁴ And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him: and the third day he shall rise again.

^a The third and final major prophecy of Jesus' passion. The same time as Matthew 20:17-19 and Luke 18:31-34.

Matthew	Mark	Luke	John	Comments
			2:19-22 To the Jews	Total picture 1 st Passover
16:21-23 ((24-28) Disciples-Peter	8:31-33 (34-38) Disciples-Peter	9:22 (23-27) Omits rebuke		Peter rebuked (take cross daily)
17:22-23 Disciples-Galilee Exceeding sorry	9:30-32 Disciples-Galilee Understood not	9:43-45 Disciples- hid/fear Understood not		Luke 18:34 same as Luke 9:45 -fear "neither knew"
20:17-19 To Jerusalem 12 disciples	10:32-34 To Jerusalem The Twelve	18:31-34 To Jerusalem The Twelve		After: Teach – greatest is servant Luke omits
After Jesus is Crucified				
27:63 to Pilate Guard tomb				Roman soldiers Jesus a deceiver
		24:6-8 (24:1-12) Women at tomb		They remembered his words
		24:46 (36-53) 11 Apostles		Fear-peace Opened their eyes

10:35-40 **Teaching (42) Request for High Positions in Heaven?** and Drink the Cup and Baptism with Jesus

(59) ³⁵ And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come to him, saying, Master, we would that you should do for us whatsoever we shall desire. ³⁶ And he said to them, **What would ye that I should do for you?** ³⁷ They said unto him, Grant to us that we may sit, one on your right hand, and the other on your left hand, in your glory. ³⁸ But Jesus said to them, **Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?** ³⁹ And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said to them, ^a **Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:** ⁴⁰ **But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but [it shall be given to them] for whom it is prepared.**

^a In order of Scripture, Martyrdom of Jesus, James in Acts 12:2 and all 12 apostles except John; then 50 days the 12 apostles are baptized by the Spirit in Acts 2.

10:41-45 **Teaching (43) on The Greatest Shall be the Servant of All**

(60) ⁴¹ And when the ten heard [it], they began to be much displeased with James and John. ⁴² But Jesus called them [to him], and says to them, **Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.** ⁴³ **But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:** ⁴⁴ **And whosoever of you will be the chief, shall be servant of all.** ^{45 a} **For even the Son of man came not to be ministered to, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.**

^a Key passage describing Jesus' and our duty as servants, not Lords over others. Philippians 2:5-11.

Mark Chapter 10

10:46-52 **Miracle (22) of Blind man Healed**

(61) ⁴⁶ And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people, blind Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, sat by the highway side begging. ⁴⁷ And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, [you] Son of David, have mercy on me. ⁴⁸ And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, [You] Son of David, have mercy on me. ⁴⁹ And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called. And they call the blind man, saying to him, Be of good comfort, rise; he calls you. ⁵⁰ And he, casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus. ⁵¹ And Jesus answered and said unto him, **What will you that I should do to you?** The blind man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight. ⁵² And Jesus said unto him, **Go your way; your faith has made you whole.** And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

Mark Chapter 11 Part 6: The Servant's Last Week in Jerusalem (11:1-13:37)

11:1-11 **Narrative (6) Jesus Rides a Donkey into Jerusalem (Palm Sunday) Zach 9:9, Ps 25**

(62) ¹ And when they came near to Jerusalem, to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sends forth two of his disciples, ² And says to them, **Go your way into the village over against you: and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring [him].** ³ **And if any man say to you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord has need of him; and straightway he will send him hither.** ⁴ And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door outside in a place where two ways met; and they loose him. ⁵ And certain of them that stood there said to them, What do ye, loosing the colt? ⁶ And they said to them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go. ⁷ And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him; and he sat upon him. ⁸ **And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strawed them in the way.** ⁹ **And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna; Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord:** ¹⁰ **Blessed [be] the kingdom of our father David, that comes in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.** ¹¹ And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and **now the eventide was come, he went out to Bethany with the twelve.** // all 4 gospels //

11:12-14 **Miracle (23) of the Barren Fig Tree (Monday)**

(63) ¹² And on the **next day, when they were come from Bethany,** he was hungry: ¹³ And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if perhaps he might find anything thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not [yet]. ¹⁴ And Jesus answered and said to it, **No man eat fruit of you hereafter forever.** And his disciples heard [it].

11:15-19 **Narrative (7) Jesus Drives the Moneychangers Out of the Temple (house of prayer)**

(64) ¹⁵ So they came to Jerusalem: then Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves; ¹⁶ And would not allow that any man should carry [any] vessel through the temple. ¹⁷ And he taught, saying to them, **Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.** ¹⁸ And the scribes and chief priests heard [it], and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine. ¹⁹ And **when evening was come, he went out of the city.**

11:20-26 **Teaching (44) Faith in God, Belief in Jesus, and Prayer and Forgiveness (Tuesday)**

(65) ²⁰ Now **in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots.** ²¹ And Peter calling to remembrance says to him, Master, behold, the fig tree which you cursed is withered away. ²² And Jesus answering says to them, **Have faith in God.** ²³ **For verily I say to you, That whosoever shall say to this mountain, Be you removed, and be you cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he says shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he says.** ²⁴ **Therefore I say to you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.** ²⁵ **And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have anything against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.** ²⁶ **But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.**

Mark Chapter 11

11:27-33 **Teaching (45) on Authority from God or Man (Wednesday)**

(66) ²⁷ Then **they come again to Jerusalem**: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders, ²⁸ And say to him, By what authority do you these things? and who gave you this authority to do these things? ²⁹ And Jesus answered and said to them, **I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.** ³⁰ **The baptism of John, was [it] from heaven, or of men? answer me.** ³¹ And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? ³² But if we shall say, Of men; they feared the people: for all [men] counted John, that he was a prophet indeed. ³³ So they answered and said to Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering says to them, **Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.**

Note: Parable of the 2 sons is next according to Matthew 11:28-32, the 1st of a series of 3 parables.

Mark Chapter 12

12:1-12 **Teaching (46) on Jews Loss and Gentile Gain (parable)**

(67) ¹ And he began to speak to ^a them by parables. **A [certain] man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about [it], and digged [a place for] the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.** ² And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard. ³ And they caught [him], and beat him, and sent [him] away empty. ⁴ And again he sent to them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded [him] in the head, and sent [him] away shamefully handled. ⁵ And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some. ⁶ Having yet therefore one son, his well-beloved, he sent him also last to them, saying, They will reverence my son. ⁷ But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. ⁸ And they took him, and killed [him], and cast [him] out of the vineyard. ⁹ What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard to others. ¹⁰ And have ye not read this Scripture; The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner: ¹¹ This was the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes? ¹² And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

^a them refers to the priests, scribes and elders in 11:27. Also titled "Parable of the Wicked Husbandman". Next is the 3rd in series, "Parable of the Wedding Garment" in Mt 22:1-14 and Luke 14:16-24.

12:13-17 **Teaching (47) on Honoring Both the Government and God**

(68) ¹³ And **they send to him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to catch him in [his] words.** ¹⁴ And when they were come, they say to him, Master, we know that you are true, and care for no man: for you regard not the person of men, but teach the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tax to Caesar, or not? ¹⁵ Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said to them, **Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see [it].** ¹⁶ And they brought [it]. And he says to them, **Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Caesar's.** ¹⁷ And Jesus answering said to them, **Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's.** And they marveled at him.

12:18-27 **Teaching (48) on the Nature of our Resurrected Bodies (Sadducees confused) 1 Cor 6:1-6**

(69) ¹⁸ Then come to him the **Sadducees**, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, ¹⁹ Master, Moses wrote to us, If a man's brother die, and leave [his] wife [behind him], and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed to his brother. ²⁰ Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed. ²¹ And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed: and the third likewise. ²² And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also. ²³ In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife. ²⁴ And Jesus answering said to them, **Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God? ²⁵ For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven.** ²⁶ And as

Mark Chapter 12

concerning the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spoke to him, saying, I [am] the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? ²⁷ He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do **greatly err**.

12:28-34 **Teaching (49) on Reasoning with Unbelievers (Luke 10:27)**

(70) ²⁸ And **one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together**, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all? ²⁹ And Jesus answered him, **The first of all the commandments is,** ^a **Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:** ³⁰ **And you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength:** this is the first commandment. ³¹ **And the second is like, [namely] this, You shall love your neighbor as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these.** ³² And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, you have said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: ³³ **And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love [his] neighbor as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.** ³⁴ **And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, You are Nnot far from the kingdom of God.** And no man after that dared ask him [any question].

^a Deuteronomy 6:4-5 heart, soul, and strength. Matthew 23:7 heart, soul, and mind; omits strength. Hebrews 4:12 soul and heart, like Deut 30:2, 6, 10; Joshua 22:5; Proverbs 2:10.

12:35-40 **Teaching (50) on the Importance of the Details of Doctrine**

(71) ³⁵ And Jesus answered and said, **while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the Son of David?** ³⁶ ^a **For David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit you on my right hand, till I make your enemies your footstool.** ³⁷ **David therefore himself calls him Lord; and whence is he [then] his son?** And the common people heard him gladly. ³⁸ And he said to them in his doctrine, **Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and [love] salutations in the marketplaces,** ³⁹ **And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:** ⁴⁰ **Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.**

^a Psalm 110

12:41-44 **Teaching (51) on Giving Quality, not Quantity**

(72) ⁴¹ And **Jesus sat over against the treasury**, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. ⁴² And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. ⁴³ And he called [to him] his disciples, and says to them, **Verily I say to you, That this poor widow has cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury:** ⁴⁴ **For all [they] did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, [even] all her living.**

Mark Chapter 13 (Matthew 24-25, Luke 21)

13:1-4 **Teaching (52) on the Future of the Temple and the Nation Israel in Tribulation (13:1-23)**

(73) ¹ And **as he went out of the temple**, one of his disciples says to him, Master, see what manner of stones and what buildings [are here]! ² And Jesus answering said unto him, **See you these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.** ³ And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, ⁴ **Tell us, when shall these things be? and what [shall be] the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?**

13:5-8 **Deception, Wars, Earthquakes, Famines, and Troubles**

(74) ⁵ And Jesus answering them began to say, **Take heed lest any [man] deceive you:** ⁶ **For many shall come in my name, saying, I am [Christ]; and shall deceive many.** ⁷ **And when ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars, be ye not troubled: for [such things] must needs be; but the end [shall] not [be] yet.** ⁸ **For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in diverse places, and there shall be famines and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrows.**

Mark Chapter 13

13:9-13 Persecution and Hatred

(75) ⁹ But take heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them. ¹⁰ And the gospel must first be published among all nations. ¹¹ But when they shall lead [you], and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. ¹² Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son; and children shall rise up against [their] parents, and shall cause them to be put to death. ¹³ And ye shall be hated of all [men] for my name's sake: but he that shall endure to the end, the same shall be saved.

13:14-23 Great Calamities Shall Befall the Jews

(76) ¹⁴ But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (^a let him that reads understand,) then let them that be in Judea flee to the mountains: ¹⁵ And let him that is on the housetop not go down into the house, neither enter [therein], to take anything out of his house: ¹⁶ And let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment. ¹⁷ But woe to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! ¹⁸ And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter. ¹⁹ For [in] those days shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created to this time, neither shall be. ²⁰ And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he has chosen, he has shortened the days. ²¹ And then if any man shall say to you, Look, here is Christ; or, look, [he is] there; believe [him] not: ²² For false Christs and false prophets shall rise, and shall show signs and wonders, to seduce, if [it were] possible, even the elect. ²³ But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

^a Speaking to the Jews in the future during the tribulation

13:24-27 Jesus Foretells the Manner of His Visible Second Coming (13:24-37)

(77) ²⁴ But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, ²⁵ And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken. ²⁶ And then they will see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory. ²⁷ And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

13:28-31 The Parable of the Fig Tree

(78) ²⁸ Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When her branch is yet tender, and puts forth leaves, ye know that summer is near: ²⁹ So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is near, [even] at the doors. ³⁰ Verily I say to you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done. ³¹ Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

13:32-37 Watch and Pray

(79) ³² But of that day and [that] hour knows no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. ³³ Take ye heed, **watch and pray**: for ye know not when the time is. ³⁴ [For the Son of man is] as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to **watch**. ³⁵ Watch ye therefore: for ye know not when the master of the house comes, at evening, or at midnight, or at the roostercrowing, or in the morning: ³⁶ Lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. ³⁷ And what I say to you I say to all, **Watch**.

14:1-2 Narrative (8) The Passover in Two Days (Friday after 6 pm)

(80) ¹ **After two days was [the feast of] the passover, and of unleavened bread:** and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put [him] to death. ² But they said, Not on the feast [day], lest there be an uproar of the people.

14:3-9 Teaching (53) on Discernment of Times (Wednesday night)

(81) ³ And **being in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper**, as he sat at food, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of spikenard very precious; and she brake the box, and poured [it] on his head. ⁴ And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made? ⁵ For it might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured against her. ⁶ And Jesus said, **Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she has performed a good work on me.** ⁷ **For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always.** ⁸ **She has done what she could: she is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.** ⁹ **Verily I say to you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, [this] also that she has done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.**

Note: Some of the 12 or the disciples had indignation and murmured against the woman. The disciples would include the 12 or were only the 12, John 12:4. Only Judas spoke loudly and acted upon it. The woman is Mary the sister of Martha, who anoints his head. The similar story is earlier when another Mary anoints Jesus feet with her hair and oil because she is thankful for forgiveness of sin, John 12:1-8.

14:10-11 Narrative (9) Judas Betrays Jesus

(82) ¹⁰ And Judas Iscariot, 1 of the 12, went to the chief priests, to betray him to them. ¹¹ When they **heard** [it], they were **glad**, and promised to **give him money**. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

14:12-16 Narrative (10) The Upper Room Prepared on the Day of the Passover

(83) ¹² And **the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover**, his disciples said unto him, Where will you that we go and prepare that you may eat the passover? ¹³ And he sends forth two of his disciples, and says to them, **Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.** ¹⁴ **And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The Master says, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?** ¹⁵ **And he will show you a large upper room furnished [and] prepared: there make ready for us.** ¹⁶ And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said to them: and they made ready the passover.

14:17-21 Narrative (11) Discernment among the Twelve of His Betrayal (Thursday evening)

(84) ¹⁷ And **in the evening he comes with the twelve.** ¹⁸ And as they sat and did eat, Jesus said, **Verily I say to you, One of you which eats with me shall betray me.** ¹⁹ And they began to be sorrowful, and to say to him one by one, [Is] it I? and another [said, Is] it I? ²⁰ And he answered and said to them, **[It is] one of the twelve, that dips with me in the dish.** ²¹ **The Son of man indeed goes, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.**

14:22-25 Teaching (54) on the New Testament: His Death, Departure and Return

(85) ²² And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake [it], and gave to them, and said, **Take, eat: this is my body.** ²³ And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave [it] to them: and they all drank of it. ²⁴ And he said to them, **This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.** ²⁵ **Verily I say to you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.**

Mark Chapter 14

14:26-31 **Narrative (12) Peter's Pride and Foretelling of his Three Denials**

(86) ²⁶ And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives. ²⁷ And Jesus says to them, **All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.** ²⁸ **But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.** ²⁹ But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet [will] not I. ³⁰ And Jesus says to him, **Verily I say to you, That this day, [even] in this night, before the rooster crow twice, you shall deny me thrice.** ³¹ But he spoke the more vehemently, If I should die with you, I will not deny you in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

14:32-42 **Teaching (55) on Watching and Praying (3 times)**

(87) ³² And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane: and he says to his disciples, **Sit ye here, while I pray.** ³³ And he takes with him Peter and James and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy; ³⁴ And says to them, **My soul is exceeding sorrowful to death: tarry ye here, and watch.**

(88) ³⁵ And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. ³⁶ And he said, **Abba, Father, all things are possible to you; take away this cup from me: nevertheless not what I will, but what you will.** ³⁷ And he comes, and finds them sleeping, and says to Peter, Simon, **sleep you? could not you watch one hour?** ³⁸ **Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation. The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.** ³⁹ And again he went away, and prayed, and spoke the same words. ⁴⁰ And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy,) neither knew they what to answer him. ⁴¹ And he comes the third time, and says to them, **Sleep on now, and take [your] rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.** ⁴² **Rise up, let us go; look, he that betrays me is at hand.**

14:43-52 **Teaching (56) on the Fulfillment of Prophecy**

(89) ⁴³ And **immediately**, while he yet spoke, comes Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. ⁴⁴ And he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, and lead [him] away safely. ⁴⁵ And **as soon as** he was come, he goes **straightway** to him, and says, Master, master; and kissed him. ⁴⁶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him. ⁴⁷ And one of them that stood by drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. ⁴⁸ And Jesus answered and said to them, **Are ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and [with] staves to take me?** ⁴⁹ **I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.** ⁵⁰ And they all forsook him, and fled. ⁵¹ And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about [his] naked [body]; and the young men laid hold on him: ⁵² And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

14:53-65 **Teaching (57) on Enduring False Accusations (trial) and Timing**

(91) ⁵³ And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes. ⁵⁴ And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire. ⁵⁵ And the chief priests and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found none. ⁵⁶ For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together. ⁵⁷ And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying, ⁵⁸ We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands. ⁵⁹ But neither so did their witness agree together. ⁶⁰ And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answer you nothing? what [is it which] these witness against you? ⁶¹ But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Are you the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? ⁶² And Jesus said, **I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of authority, and coming in the clouds of heaven.** ⁶³ Then the high priest tore his clothes, and says, What need we any further witnesses? ⁶⁴ Ye have heard the blasphemy: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death. ⁶⁵ And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say to him, Prophecy: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

Mark Chapter 14

14:66-72 **Narrative (13) Peter's Three Denials Completed**

(92) ⁶⁶ And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there comes one of the maids of the high priest:
⁶⁷ And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And you also was with Jesus of Nazareth. ⁶⁸ But he denied, saying, ^a I know not, neither understand I what you say. And he went out into the porch; and the rooster crew. ⁶⁹ And a maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by, This is [one] of them. ⁷⁰ And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely you are [one] of them: for you are a Galilean, and your speech agree [thereto]. ⁷¹ But he began to curse and to swear, [saying], I know not this man of whom ye speak. ⁷² And the second time the rooster crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the rooster crow twice, you shall deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

^a Peter's lack of understanding is great.

Mark Chapter 15

15:1-5 **Narrative (14) Not Replying to Pilate with a Purpose (trial, Friday morning)**

(93) ¹ **And straightway in the morning** the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried [him] away, and delivered [him] to Pilate.
² And Pilate asked him, Are you the King of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, **You say [it]**.
³ And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing. ⁴ And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answer you nothing? behold how many things they witness against you. ⁵ But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marveled.

15:6-14 **Narrative (15) Pilate finds no Evil in Jesus (trial)**

(94) ⁶ Now at [that] feast he released to them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired. ⁷ And there was [one] named Barabbas, [which lay] bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection. ⁸ And the multitude crying aloud began to desire [him to do] as he had ever done to them. ⁹ But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release to you the King of the Jews? ¹⁰ For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy. ¹¹ But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas to them. ¹² And Pilate answered and said again to them, What will ye then that I shall do [to him] whom ye call the King of the Jews? ¹³ And they cried out again, Crucify him. ¹⁴ Then Pilate said to them, Why, what evil has he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him.

15:15-23 **Narrative (16) Roman Soldiers Mock and Simon Helps Jesus**

(95) ¹⁵ And [so] Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas to them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged [him], to be crucified. ¹⁶ And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Praetorium; and they call together the whole band. ¹⁷ And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his [head], ¹⁸ And began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews!
¹⁹ And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing [their] knees worshipped him. ²⁰ And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him. ²¹ And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross. ²² And they bring him to the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. ²³ And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received [it] not.

Mark Chapter 15

15:24-39 Narrative (17) The King of the Jews is Crucified

(96) ²⁴ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take. ²⁵ And it was the third hour, and they crucified him. ²⁶ And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS. ²⁷ And with him they crucify two thieves; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left. ²⁸ And the Scripture was fulfilled, which says, And he was numbered with the transgressors. ²⁹ And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, you that destroy the temple, and build [it] in three days, ³⁰ Save thyself, and come down from the cross. ³¹ Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others; himself he cannot save. ³² Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified with him reviled him. ³³ And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. ³⁴ And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, **Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?** ³⁵ And some of them that stood by, when they heard [it], said, Behold, he calls Elijah. ³⁶ And one ran and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put [it] on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone; let us see whether Elijah will come to take him down. ³⁷ And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the Spirit. ³⁸ ^a And the veil of the temple was tore in twain from the top to the bottom. ³⁹ And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the Spirit, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

^a Hebrews 9:8, 24; 10:19-22.

15:40-41 Narrative (18) Mary Magdalene and the Women Followers (15:40 – 16:11)

(97) ⁴⁰ There were also women looking on ^a afar off: among whom was ^b Mary Magdalene, and ^c Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome; ⁴¹ (Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered to him;) and many other women which came up with him to Jerusalem.

^a Prophesied in Psalm 38:11

^b Mary Magdalene is the most mentioned woman in this passage, 4 times. Also in John 19:23-25, 20:11-17, Luke 8:2.

^c Mary the mother of James and Joses (John), sons of Zebedee. Matthew 15:40 and 27:56. This indicates that Mary the mother of Jesus was the sister of Mary the mother of James and John, the sons of thunder; therefore putting Jesus the cousin of James and John.

Note the character, nature, and duties of the women who followed Jesus in 15:40 to 16:11. There is much to learn of the God-given complimentary roles between male and female from Genesis 1-3 through the Scriptures. The women, no men were around at this time. Why?

We learn from each other to be fully blessed as male-female, brother-sister, husband-wife, inside the church-outside the church. Men are missing female character and women are missing male character. We compliment each other and enjoy the differences.

15:42-47 Joseph of Arimathaea boldly asks for the Body of Jesus

(98) ⁴² And now when the evening was come, because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath, ⁴³ Joseph of Arimathaea, a honorable counselor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly to Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus. ⁴⁴ And Pilate marveled if he were already dead: and calling [to him] the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead. ⁴⁵ And when he knew [it] of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph. ⁴⁶ And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulcher which was hewn out of a rock, and rolled a stone to the door of the sepulcher.

⁴⁷ And Mary Magdalene and Mary [the mother] of Joses beheld where he was laid.

Part 8: The Servant's Resurrection in Jerusalem (16:1-20)

16:1-8 Narrative (19) An Angel Appears to the Women at the Tomb

(99) ¹ And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the [mother] of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him. ² And very early in the morning the first [day] of the week, they came to the sepulcher at the rising of the sun. ³ And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulcher? ⁴ And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great. ⁵ And entering into the sepulcher, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment; and they were affrighted. ⁶ And he says to them, **Be not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold the place where they laid him. ⁷ But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter that he goes before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said to you.** ⁸ And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulcher; for they trembled and were amazed: neither said they anything to any [man]; for they were afraid.

16:9-11 Narrative (20) Jesus Appears to Mary Magdalene

(100) ⁹ ^a Now when [Jesus] was risen early the first [day] of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven demons. ¹⁰ [And] she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept. ¹¹ And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

^a Verses 9-20 are missing in the oldest manuscripts, Sinaiticus and Vaticanus; but quoted by the Church fathers Irenaeus and Hippolytus in the second and third century. 16:1-8 is in all four gospels.

16:12-13 Narrative (21) Jesus Appears to 2 Disciples

(101) ¹² After that he appeared in another form to two of them, as they walked, and went into the country. ¹³ And they went and told [it] to the residue: neither believed they them.

16:14-18 Teaching (58) or Command to the 11 Apostles

(102) ¹⁴ Afterward he appeared to the eleven as they sat at food, and ^a upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen. ¹⁵ And he said to them, **Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.** ¹⁶ **He that believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believes not shall be damned.** ¹⁷ **And these signs shall follow them that believe; In My name they will cast out demons; they shall speak with new languages; ¹⁸ They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.**

^a Apostles scolded due to their continual unbelief and hardness of heart. This was for the immediate future.

^a 16:19-20 **Narrative (22) Teaching (primary) and confirming signs (secondary)**

(103) ¹⁹ So then after the Lord had spoken to them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. ²⁰ And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

^a Summary of Teachings, Miracles and Narratives. Teachings (58): In 1:14 to 10:45 are (43) teachings, therefore they are balanced in flow. Miracles (23): In 1:22 to 11:14 are all (23) miracles, ending with the barren fig tree. No miracles occur afterwards in this book that has more miracles than the other 3 gospels. The focus changes to narrative during the last week of Jesus. Narratives (22): In 11:15 to 16:20 are (16) narratives, which compose most of the rest of Mark. An exception is the teaching in Mark 13.

Level 1 – Basic (content)

- 2) What are the 4 books covering the life of Jesus? MT, MK, LU, JN
- 3) Who are the two pairs of brothers chosen by Jesus? Peter & Andrew, James & John
- 4) List the 12 apostles. Peter, James, John – Andrew, Philip, Bartholomew – Matthew, Thomas, James – Thaddaeus, Simon, Judas Iscariot
- 5) List the miracles of Jesus. 9 each, listed below
- 6) List the teachings of Jesus. 12 each, listed below
- 7) Describe the narrative of the birth of Jesus. There is nothing to describe.
- 8) Did the multitudes come to hear or be healed in 3:13-21?

Level 2 – Intermediate (immediate context)

- 2) Divide the chapters into sections and give titles to each section (1:1-11. The Three Baptisms)
- 3) Which did Mark write more about? The miracles or teachings of Jesus. Teachings
- 4) Can anything be inferred by the type and order of the miracles? Type – healings and miracles
- 5) What did Jesus normally do in the synagogue? Taught. Were there exceptions? Some miracles
- 6) Who were the enemies of Jesus and why? The scribes and Pharisees
- 7) What do the two parables of Mark 2:21-22 teach us? The new will break the old.
- 8) Why did Jesus reverse the order of people in his response to the question in 3:31-35?

Level 3 – Advanced (far context and concise word in original language)

- 1) What is the Greek word for baptism and where is it used in the New Testament (definition, list and categorize)? Baptizo is “to immerse in.” Mk 1:4-5,8-9; 6:14; 7:4; 10:38-39; 16:16
- 2) What is the Greek word for repent and where is it used in the New Testament (definition, list of verses and categorize)? *Metanoeo*. Divide list into salvation and sanctification.
- 3) What is the Old Testament use of baptism? Outward washing of the flesh or dying cloth.
- 4) How is the Sabbath day used? Teach that Jesus replaced the Old Testament Sabbath.
- 5) How does Mark 3:9-19 relate to Matthew 10? Jesus sends 12 out to witness to Israel.
- 6) When is Mark 3:31-35 in relation to Matthew 12:46-50? Before the parables of the kingdom of heaven. How do Mark 4 and Matthew 13 compare? 2 vs 8 and 2 additional parables. Why the difference? The inspiration of God. Next Friday we cover Mark chapters 4-7.

Luke (24-153, 2.6 hr) 2017

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21

Jesus' last days: 22 23 24

12 Witnesses of the Son of Man

Background: Luke was the physician that accompanied the Apostle Paul on parts of his 2nd and 3rd missionary journey (Acts 16:9, 20:5). He is the only gentile writer in the Bible.

Unique things: His story of Jesus includes 18 parables not in the other three gospels. He portrays Jesus as the perfect man, while referring to Him as Lord "Kurios" 95x of 166x in the 4 gospels. This is the longest book; along with Acts it composes 27% of the New Testament, with Matthew being the 2nd longest.

Introduction: 1:1-4 correlate with the introduction to the book of Acts 1:1-2

The Son of man:

Scripture

Part A: Ministry as a son of Adam and the Son of God **1:5-4:13**

- 1) Preparation by - the birth, ministry and imprisonment of John the Baptist (Mal 4:4-6)
- 2) Experience in - His birth, childhood, baptism, genealogy and temptations

Part B: Ministers in Galilee (3 yrs., Capernaum-Nazareth-Galilee-Mt Hermon) **4:14-9:50**

- 3) Jesus began his public teaching quoting Isaiah 61:1 4:16-21
- 4) Save the nations (gentiles) as Elijah saved Zarephath and Elisha healed Naaman
These are 2 witnesses represent the prophets 4:25-27

Part C: Ministers on the way to Jerusalem (last 6 months, 17 of 18 unique parables) **9:51-19:27**

- 5) Examples of self-denial to follow Jesus 9:57-62
- 6) The cost of discipleship 10:25-35
- 7) Discipleship: Doing what is our duty and expected 17:1-10
- 8) Preparing for the return of Christ 17:22-18:8

Notes: Sending of the *12 Apostles* to Israel (Mt 10:1-42, Mk 6:6-13) 9:1-6
Feast of Tabernacles John 7 9:51
Sending of the *70 disciples*: to "every city Jesus would go" 10: 1-24
70 nations: from Noah to Abraham, Genesis 10:1-32
70 nations: Adoni-Bezek after Joshua, Judges 1:1-8
Feast of Dedication John 10:22 (winter) 13:22-34
Feast of Passover (spring) 17:1

Part D: Ministers in Jerusalem (last week, crucified on Wednesday) **19:28-24:53**

- 9) Jesus spoke to the people at daytime in the temple 21:5, 37
Jesus spoke to the apostles at evening in the Mount of Olives (Mt 24, Mk 13)
- 10) Time of the Gentiles 21:21, 24
Pray your flight be not in the winter, nor the Sabbath (Mt 24:20)
- 11) Carousing, drunkenness, and cares of this life - watch and pray 21:34-36
Giving and taking in marriage as in the days of Noah (Mt 24:36-39)

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Luke 2:37	Supplication	Fasting and Prayer	Anna a prophetess	Wait on the Lord	Jesus' dedication at temple
Luke 6:12-16	Supplication	Chose 12 Apostles		Season (all night)	Season, Jesus Prayed
Luke 9:28-36	Supplication	His death		Moses & Elijah	MT of Transfiguration
Luke 11:1-4	Supplication Praise	Basic pattern for prayer	Unforgiveness	Discipleship	Well known Mathew 6:9-15
Luke 11:5-8	Supplication	Fulfill Need	Giving up	Persistence	Need bread for family
Luke 11:9-10	Supplication	Fulfill Need	Laziness	Divine sequence	Ask-Seek-Knock
Luke 11:11-13	Supplication	Fulfill Need	Lack of faith	Example of father-son relationship	Bread-stone, Fish-serpent, Egg-scorpion Give Holy Spirit
Luke 15:17-19	Supplication	Repentance	Satisfied	Not Worthy	Prodigal Son
Luke 16:27 (19-31)	Conversation	Urgent request	Richness	Lazarus	Richman / I pray you
Luke 18:1-8	Supplication	Personal need		Persistence	Judge and God
Luke 18:9-14	Supplication	Repentance	Hypocrite	Humility	Pharisee and Publican
Luke 23:34	Intercession	Forgiveness		Mathew 6:12-15	Jesus on the Cross



(1) ¹ Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us, ² Even as they delivered them to us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses, and ministers of the word; ³ It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write to you in order, most excellent Theophilus, ⁴ That you might know the certainty of those things, wherein you have been instructed.

1:5-25 Zacharias & Angel Gabriel Meet in the Temple
(24 courses, 50 priests, 2x year, 1 week, 4 lots, 1 Chr 9:22)

(2) ⁵ There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judaea, **a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.** ⁶ **And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.** ⁷ And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were well stricken in years. ⁸ And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, ⁹ According to the custom of the priest's office, **his lot was to burn incense** when he went into the temple of the Lord. ¹⁰ And the whole multitude of the people were praying outside at the time of incense. ¹¹ And there appeared to him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. ¹² And when Zacharias saw [him], **he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.**

¹³ But the angel said unto him, **Fear not, Zacharias: for your prayer is heard; and your wife Elisabeth shall bear you a son, and you shall call his name John.** ¹⁴ **And you shall have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth.** ¹⁵ **For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.** ¹⁶ **And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.** ¹⁷ **And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.** ¹⁸ And Zacharias said to the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. ¹⁹ And the angel answering said unto him, **I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak to you, and to show you these glad tidings.** ²⁰ **And, behold, you shall be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because you believe not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.**

²¹ And the people waited for Zacharias, and **marveled that he tarried so long in the temple.** ²² And when he came out, he could not speak to them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckoned to them, and remained speechless. ²³ And it came to pass, that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house. ²⁴ And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and **hid herself five months,** saying, ²⁵ Thus has the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on [me], to take away my reproach among men.

Note: Zacharias and Elisabeth were of priestly heritage in Aaron. John born 9 months, 8+ days later.

1:26-38 Jesus' Birth Announcement

(3) ²⁶ And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, ²⁷ To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. ²⁸ And the angel came in to her, and said, **Hail, [you that are] highly favored, the Lord is with you: blessed are you among women.** ²⁹ And when she saw [him], she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be. ³⁰ And the angel said unto her, **Fear not, Mary: for you have found favor with God.** ³¹ **And, behold, you shall conceive in your womb, and bring forth a son, and shall call his name JESUS.** ³² **He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give to him the throne of his father David:** ³³ **And he shall reign over the house of Jacob forever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.**

(4) ³⁴ Then said Mary to the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? ³⁵ And the angel answered and said unto her, **The Holy Ghost shall come upon you, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.** ³⁶ **And, behold, your cousin Elisabeth, she has also conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her, who was called barren.** ³⁷ **For with God nothing shall be impossible.** ³⁸ And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it to me according to your word. And the angel departed from her.

Luke Chapter 1

1:39-45 *Mary Visits Elisabeth – Elisabeth prophesies*

(5) ³⁹ And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah;
⁴⁰ And entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. ⁴¹ And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost: ⁴² And she spoke out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the fruit of your womb. ⁴³ And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?
⁴⁴ For, look, as soon as the voice of your salutation sounded in my ears, the baby leaped in my womb for joy. ⁴⁵ And blessed is she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

Note: Elisabeth is of a highly esteemed family, Luke 1:5 "the daughters of Aaron," more than her husband Zacharias.

1:46-56 *Mary Praises her Savior*

(6) ⁴⁶ And Mary said, My soul does magnify the Lord, ⁴⁷ And my spirit has rejoiced in God my Savior.
⁴⁸ For he has regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. ⁴⁹ For he that is mighty has done to me great things; and holy is his name.
⁵⁰ And his mercy is on them that fear him from generation to generation. ⁵¹ He has shown strength with his arm; he has scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. ⁵² He has put down the mighty from [their] seats, and exalted them of low degree. ⁵³ He has filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he has sent empty away. ⁵⁴ He has helped his servant Israel, in remembrance of [his] mercy;
⁵⁵ As he spoke to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed forever. ⁵⁶ And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

1:57-66 *Elisabeth (57-61) and Zacharias (62-80) Rejoice at John's Birth and at the Temple*

(7) ⁵⁷ Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son.
⁵⁸ And her neighbors and her cousins heard how the **Lord had showed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.** ⁵⁹ And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the baby; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. ⁶⁰ And his mother answered and said, Not [so]; but he shall be called John. ⁶¹ And they said unto her, There is none of your kindred that is called by this name. ⁶² And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. ⁶³ And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marveled all. ⁶⁴ **And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue [loosed], and he spoke, and praised God.** ⁶⁵ **And fear came on all that dwelt round about them:** and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judaea. ⁶⁶ **And all they that heard them laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.**

1:67-79 *John the Baptist's Youth and Preparation*

(8) ⁶⁷ And his father **Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied,** saying,
⁶⁸ **Blessed [be] the Lord God of Israel;** for he has visited and redeemed his people, ⁶⁹ And has raised up a horn of salvation for us in the **house of his servant David;** ⁷⁰ As he spoke by the mouth of his **holy prophets,** which have been since the world began: ⁷¹ That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; ⁷² To perform the mercy [promised] to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant; ⁷³ The **oath which he swore to our father Abraham,** ⁷⁴ That he would grant to us, that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies might serve him without fear, ⁷⁵ In holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. ⁷⁶ **And you, child, shall be called the prophet of the Highest: for you shall go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways;** ⁷⁷ **To give knowledge of salvation to his people by the remission of their sins,** ⁷⁸ **Through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the dayspring from on high has visited us,** ⁷⁹ **To give light to them that sit in darkness and [in] the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.**

⁸⁰ And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his showing to Israel.

Note: 1:71-75 prophesy of Christ's reign on earth at his return; the Abrahamic covenant. Malachi 4:5-6.

Luke Chapter 2

2:1-7 *The Birth of Jesus*

(9) ¹ And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. ² (this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.)
³ And all went to be taxed, everyone into his own city. ⁴ And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judaea, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because he was of the house and lineage of David:) ⁵ To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.
⁶ And so it was, that, while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered.
⁷ And she brought forth her firstborn son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

Note: Zacharias (Luke 1:20) and Joseph (Matthew 1:19) are similar in their unbelief, as Elisabeth and Mary are similar in their belief.

Jesus was born in September – October.

2:8-14 *Angels Visit the Shepherds*

(10) ⁸ And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. ⁹ And, look, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were very afraid. ¹⁰ And the angel said to them, **Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.** ¹¹ **For to you is born this day in the city of David a Savior, which is Christ the Lord.** ¹² **And this [shall be] a sign to you; Ye shall find the baby wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.** ¹³ **And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,** ¹⁴ **a** **Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.**

^a Upward from man to God in the highest, outward toward others on earth with peace, and downward from God to man with the gift of His Son being born in the flesh. This is another triune truth.

2:15-20 *Shepherds Visit Jesus*

(11) ¹⁵ And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go then to Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord has made known to us. ¹⁶ And they came with haste, and found Mary, and Joseph, and the baby lying in a manger. ¹⁷ And when they saw, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. ¹⁸ And all they that heard [it] wondered at things which were told them by the shepherds.
¹⁹ But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart. ²⁰ And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told to them.

2:21-24 *The Circumcision of Jesus on the Eighth Day and Purification of Mary after 40 Days*

(12) ²¹ And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the baby, His name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before He was conceived in the womb. ²² And when the days of her purification according to the Law of Moses were accomplished, they brought Him to Jerusalem, to present [Him] to the Lord; ²³ (As it is written in the Law of the Lord, **EVERY MALE THAT OPENETH THE WOMB SHALL BE CALLED HOLY TO THE LORD;**) ²⁴ And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the Law of the Lord, **A PAIR OF TURTLEDOVES, OR TWO YOUNG PIGEONS**

Note: Lev 12, 40 days male, a burnt offering and a sin offering,, priest offers atonement to the Lord. A female was purified after 80 days.

Luke Chapter 2

2:1-38 *New Worship in the Holy Spirit with Simeon and Anna*

(13) ²⁵ And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name [was] Simeon; and the same man [was] just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. ²⁶ And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. ²⁷ And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for Him after the custom of the law, ²⁸ Then took he Him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said, Lord, ²⁹ now let You Your servant depart in peace, according to Your word: ³⁰ For my eyes have seen Your salvation, ³¹ Which You have prepared before the face of all people; ³² A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of Your people Israel. ³³ And Joseph and His mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of Him. ³⁴ And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary His mother, Behold, this [*child*] is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against; ³⁵ (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

References for Luke 2:32 - Isa 49:6; 42:6, 51:4-5; 60:1-3; Joh 8:12; Ac 13:47; 26:23; 1Pe 2:9

Note: Simeon in verse 25 is just, devout, and waiting for the consolation of Israel. Just is used 76x in the New Testament and of several men (Noah, Job, Habakkuk 2:4, Joseph, Jesus, Cornelius) carries the weight of being equal, fair, and right in the Old and New Testament. Devout is used 3x – careful, devout, and religious. Consolation is used 28x, is related to comfort or exhort but carries the factor of distress in context, as the nation of Israel.

Also of benefit is to compare and contrast the nature of Simeon and Anna, man and woman. Lastly we who believe in the Scriptures can (1) WAIT on Jesus' 2nd Coming, (2) when we will SEE him, and (3) WORSHIP him; like Simeon and Anna did.

(14) ³⁶ And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher: she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity; ³⁷ And she [was] a widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served [*God*] with fastings and prayers night and day. ³⁸ And she coming in that instant gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of Him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

2:39-40 *Jesus Grows in Nazareth (2:52)*

(15) ³⁹ And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth. ⁴⁰ And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon Him.

2:41-52 *Visit to Jerusalem for the Passover when Jesus was 12 Years Old and Every Year*

(16) ⁴¹ Now His parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. ⁴² And when He was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast. ⁴³ And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and His mother knew not [of it]. ⁴⁴ But they, supposing Him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought Him among [their] kinsfolk and acquaintance. ⁴⁵ And when they found Him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking Him. ⁴⁶ And it came to pass, that after three days they found Him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. ⁴⁷ And all that heard Him were astonished at His understanding and answers. ⁴⁸ And when they saw Him, they were amazed: and His mother said unto Him, Son, why have you thus dealt with us? behold, your father and I have sought you sorrowing. ⁴⁹ And He said unto them, **How is it that ye sought Me? knew ye not that I must be about My Father's business?** ⁵⁰ And they understood not the saying which He spoke to them.

(17) ⁵¹ And He went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject to them: but His mother kept all these sayings in her heart. ⁵² And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man.

Luke Chapter 3

3:1-8 *John the Baptist's Clear Witness*

(18) ¹ Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judaea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Ituraea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene, ² Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the Word of God came to John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. ³ And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins; ⁴ As it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, saying,

The voice of one crying in the wilderness:

“Prepare ye the way of the Lord,
make his paths straight.

⁵ Every valley shall be filled,
and every mountain and hill shall be brought low;
and the crooked shall be made straight,
and the rough ways [shall be] made smooth;

⁶ And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.”

⁷ Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come? ⁸ Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to [our] father: for I say to you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children to Abraham.

3:9-20 *John's Warnings to the People (10-11), Publicans (12-13) and Soldiers (14)*

(19) ⁹ And now also the axe is laid to the root of the trees: every tree therefore which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ¹⁰ And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then? ¹¹ He answers and says to them, He that has two coats, let him impart to him that has none; and he that has food, let him do likewise. ¹² Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do? ¹³ And he said to them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you. ¹⁴ And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said to them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse [any] falsely; and be content with your wages. ¹⁵ And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not; ¹⁶ John answered, saying to them all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I comes, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire: ¹⁷ Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable. ¹⁸ And many other things in his exhortation preached he to the people.

¹⁹ But ^a Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done, ²⁰ Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

^a This event takes time later. Luke inserts here for continuity of the subject.

3:21-22 *John Baptizes Jesus in the Jordan River*

(20) ²¹ Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, ²² And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, **You are my beloved Son; in you I am well pleased.**

Luke Chapter 3

3:23-38 **THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST (BORN OF GOD-IN THE FLESH)**

(21) ²³ And Jesus himself began to be about ^a thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph,

^b of Heli,

²⁴ of Matthat, of Levi, of Melchi, of Janna, of Joseph,

²⁵ of Mattathias, of Amos, of Naum, of Esli, of Nagge,

²⁶ of Maath, of Mattathias, of Semei, of Joseph, of Judah,

²⁷ of Joanna, of Rhesa, of Zorobabel, of Salathiel, of Neri,

²⁸ of Melchi, of Addi, of Cosam, of Elmodam, of Er,

²⁹ of Jose, of Eliezer, of Jorim, of Matthat, of Levi,

³⁰ of Simeon, of Judah, of Joseph, of Jonan, of Eliakim,

³¹ of Melea, of Menan, of Mattatha, of **Nathan**, of **David**,

³² of Jesse, of Obed, of Boaz, of Salmon, of Naasson,

³³ of Aminadab, of Aram, of Esrom, of Phares, of **Judah**,

³⁴ of Jacob, of Isaac, of **Abraham**,

of Thara, of Nachor, ³⁵ of Saruch, of Ragau, of Peleg, of Heber, of Sala,

³⁶ of Cainan, of Arphaxad, of Shem, of Noah, of Lamech,

³⁷ of Mathuselah, of Enoch, of Jared, of Maleleel, of Cainan,

³⁸ of Enos, of Seth, of Adam, of **God**.

^a A priest entered public ministry at 30 years old and the ceremony for this event was baptism in water, Numbers 4:3 (a descendant of Aaron beginning from age 30 to 50) and Exodus 29:4 (washing in water). Jesus did this to fulfill all righteousness of the law of Moses, Matthew 3:15.

^b Of Heli traces the lineage of Jesus through his biological mother Mary. Mary goes back to King David, but through David's son Nathan; not Solomon, from whom Joseph traces his lineage. Both Mary and Joseph go back to Abraham and the tribe of Judah.

For more information of the genealogy of Jesus Christ go to the beginning of New Testament notes.

Luke Chapter 4

4:1-13 **Jesus is full of, and led by the Holy Spirit into 40 day fast and 3 temptations**

(22) ¹ And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, ² Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

1st Temptation (compared to Eve in Genesis 3 - the desire of the flesh or body)

³ And the devil said unto him, If you be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

⁴ And Jesus answered him, saying, ^a **It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word of God.**

^a Deuteronomy 8:3, by every word of Scripture

2nd Temptation (compared to Eve in Genesis 3 - the desire of the eyes)

⁵ And the devil, taking him up into a high mountain, showed to him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. ⁶ And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give you, and the glory of them: for that is delivered to me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. ⁷ If you therefore will worship me, all shall be yours. ⁸ And Jesus answered and said unto him, ^a **Get behind me, Satan: for it is written, You shall worship the Lord your God, and him only shall you serve.**

^a Deuteronomy 6:13, 10:20

Luke Chapter 4

3rd Temptation (compared to Eve in Genesis 3 – the pride of life)

⁹ And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If you be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: ¹⁰ For it is written, ^a He shall give his angels charge over you, to keep you: ¹¹ And in [their] hands they shall bear you up, lest at any time you dash your foot against a stone. ¹² And Jesus answering said unto him, ^b **It is said, You shall not tempt the Lord your God.** ¹³ And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

^a John Gill's Exposition of the Entire Bible. For it is written,... In Ps 91:11 "He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee; and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash your foot against a stone." It is an observation made long ago by Jerome, on Ps 91:11 that Satan, in citing this text, has left out the middle clause,

^b Abbott New Testament Commentary. By comparing this passage with the one which our Savior quotes, (De 6:16,) which refers to the conduct of the Israelites at Massah or Meribah, (Ex 17:2,7,) it seems that the expression *tempt God* is applied to the sin of presumptuously calling for or expecting miraculous interpositions from him. Compare to the three temptations account in Matthew 4: 1-12.

4:14-15 **Jesus Accepted in Galilee** (public ministry begins in Galilee)

(23) ¹⁴ And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. ¹⁵ And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

4:16-30 **The Welcome Home and Rejection of Jesus of Nazareth**

Background: Jesus lived in the village of Nazareth almost his whole life. When 30 years old he was baptized, full of the Holy Spirit and led by the Holy Spirit into a 40-day fast and 3 temptations. After this he went to Cana, Jerusalem, and Samaria. After a few months he begins the great Galilean ministry and Cana, then returns to his hometown Nazareth.

Jesus is Welcome Home after being away several months (context of Isaiah 60-63)

(24) ¹⁶ And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read. ¹⁷ And there was delivered to him the book of the ^a prophet Isaiah. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, ¹⁸ **The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he has anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he has sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,** ¹⁹ **To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.** ²⁰ And he closed the book, and he gave [it] again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

^a Isaiah 61:1-3 The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and **the opening of the prison to them that are bound**; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, //and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified.

Jesus says he is the Christ (Matthew 16:20)

²¹ **And he began to say to them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.** ²² And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? ²³ **And he said to them, Ye will surely say to me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in your country.** ²⁴ **And he said, Verily I say to you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.**

Luke Chapter 4 Jesus uses the Prophets to Teach about God's Mercy to the Gentiles

²⁵ But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; ²⁶ But to none of them was Elijah sent, save to Sarepta, [a city] of ^b Sidon, to a woman [that was] a widow. ²⁷ And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving ^a Naaman the Syrian.

^b Both, the woman from Sidon and Naaman the Syrian, were Gentiles. Also the truth was established by 2 witnesses.

Compare: Stories from Elijah (1 Kings 17:8-24) and Elisha (2 Kings 5) in the **time** of the prophets. (1) **Time** of the law, then prophets, and now Christ. (2) Truth to the people and land of Israel; about the consequences of sin and disobedience to what is written in the law of Moses. (3) God's blessings, then and now (Romans 10), extends to the Gentiles.

Contrast: (1) The Poor Widow verses the Rich General concerning position, ability, and money; (2) The people's relationship with the Poor Widow verses the Rich General; (3) God's prophet relationship in time (first mentioned) and honor (face to face), with the Poor Widow verses the Rich General. The New Testament shows the same contrast in 1 Corinthians 1:26-31 (29).

Jesus is Rejected from his hometown of Nazareth

²⁸ And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, ²⁹ And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him to the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down headlong. ³⁰ But ^c he passing through the midst of them went his way,

^c We see the protection of God and wisdom of Jesus.

Jesus Sets up Headquarters at Capernaum

4:31-37 **Teaching in the Synagogue at Capernaum** (Matthew, Luke)

(25) ³¹ And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath days.

³² And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with ^a authority.

Rebuking a Demon in the Synagogue at Capernaum (Matthew, Luke)

³³ And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean demon, and cried out with a loud voice, ³⁴ Saying, Let [us] alone; what have we to do with you, Jesus of Nazareth? are you come to destroy us? I know you who you are; the Holy One of God. ³⁵ And Jesus rebuked him, saying, **Hold your peace, and come out of him.** And when the demon had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not. ³⁶ And they were all amazed, and spoke among themselves, saying, What a word is this! for with authority and ^b power he commands the unclean spirits, and they come out. ³⁷ And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

^a authority ^b dunamis

Note: We see the religious knowledge of the demons and Jesus power in the verses above and below, 4:40-41

4:38-39 **Peter's mother-in-law healed at Peter's House** (Matthew, Luke, Mark)

(26) ³⁸ And He arose out of the synagogue, and entered into Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother was taken with a great fever; and they begged him for her. ³⁹ And He stood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her: and immediately she arose and ministered to them.

4:40-41 **All Healed and Delivered at Capernaum** (Matthew, Luke, Mark)

(27) ⁴⁰ Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with diverse diseases brought them to him; and He laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. ⁴¹ And demons also came out of many, crying out, and saying, You are Christ the Son of God. And He rebuking them permitted them not to speak: for they knew that He was Christ.

4:42-44 **Jesus Must Depart Capernaum and preach the kingdom of God throughout Galilee**
(Matthew, Mark, Luke)

⁴² And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came to him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them. ⁴³ And he said to them, **I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.** ⁴⁴ And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

Luke Chapter 5

5:1-11 The Great Catch and Calling of Four Fishermen

(28) ¹ And it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him **to hear the Word of God**, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret, ² And saw two boats standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing [their] nets. ³ And he entered into one of the boats, which was **Simon's**, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. **And he sat down, and taught the people out of the boat.** ⁴ Now when he had left speaking, he said to Simon, **Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.** ⁵ And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at your word I will let down the net. ⁶ And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fish: and their net broke. ⁷ And they beckoned to [their] partners, which were in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink.

⁸ When Simon Peter saw [it], **he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord.** ⁹ For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken: ¹⁰ And so was also **James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon.** And Jesus said to Simon, **Fear not; from henceforth you shall catch men.** ¹¹ **And when they had brought their boats to land, they forsook all, and followed him.**

Questions for the diligent Bible believer:

Question 1: What was the first reason the people were there? Vs 1 Answer: to hear the Word of God

Question 2: How many movements of the boats was there? Vs 2-7, 11 Answer: 5

Question 3a: Why doesn't Luke mention Andrew, the brother of Peter while Matthew 4:18-22 and Mark 1:16-20 do?

Question 3b: Why does John the Apostles mention Andrew different than Matthew, Mark, and Luke? (John 1:40, 6:8, 12:22)

Question 4: What are the three eternal spiritual laws for a man coming to God through Jesus Christ? Vs 8, 10-11.

Answer: Humility, personal sin, and forsake all - then follow Jesus

5:12-16 Jesus Heals a Leper, Multitudes Come, and Jesus Withdraws to Pray

(29) ¹² And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold a man full of leprosy: who seeing Jesus fell on [his] face, and begged him, saying, Lord, if you will, you can make me clean. ¹³ And he put forth [his] hand, and touched him, saying, **I will: be you clean. And immediately the leprosy departed from him.** ¹⁴ **And he charged him to tell no man: but go, and show thyself to the priest, and offer for your cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony to them.** ¹⁵ But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities. ¹⁶ **And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.**

5:17-26 Jesus Heals a Paralytic Man who Comes by Friends Through the Roof

(30) ¹⁷ And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judaea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was [present] to heal them. ¹⁸ And, behold, men brought in a bed a man which was paralyzed: and they sought [means] to bring him in, and to lay [him] before him. ¹⁹ And when they could not find by what [way] they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went upon the housetop, and let him down through the tiling with [his] couch into the midst before Jesus. ²⁰ And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, **Man, your sins are forgiven you.** ²¹ And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaks blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone? ²² But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said to them, **What reason ye in your hearts? ²³ Whether is easier, to say, Your sins be forgiven you; or to say, Rise up and walk? ²⁴ But that ye may know that the Son of man has power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said to the paralyzed,) I say to you, Arise, and take up your couch, and go into your house.** ²⁵ And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God. ²⁶ And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things today.

Luke Chapter 5

5:27-39 **The Call of Matthew** (Matthew 9:9-17, Mark 2:13-22)

Background: Compare and contrast the calling of Matthew with the calling of Peter in Luke 5:1-11. Matthew is in the city of Capernaum. Matthew wrote the first book in the New Testament. *This passage is evangelistic for those who need Christ as their Savior, and discipleship for those who possess Christ as their Savior.*

CALLING - Matthew the Tax Collector is Called, then Throws a Party

(31) ²⁷ And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican, **named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom:** and he said unto him, **Follow Me.** ²⁸ And he left all, rose up, and followed him. ²⁹ And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of publicans and of others that sat down with them.

COMPLAINT - The Disciples of the Pharisees ask Jesus about Eating and Drinking with Publicans and Sinners

³⁰ But **their** scribes and Pharisees murmured against **his disciples**, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? ³¹ And Jesus answering said to them, **They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick.** ³² **I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.**

CONCERN - The Disciples of John the Baptist ask Jesus about Fasting

³³ And **they** said unto him, Why do the **disciples of John** fast often, and make prayers, and likewise [**the disciples**] of the Pharisees; but yours eat and drink? ³⁴ And he said to them, **Can ye make the** ^a **children of the bride chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?** ³⁵ But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and ^b then they will fast in those days.

^a Marriage supper—John 2:1, Bride & Bridegroom; friend of Bridegroom—John 3:29, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than John the Baptist—Luke 7:28, invite many to the wedding—Matthew 22:1-14, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God is come—Luke 22:17, a great mystery, Christ and the church—Ephesians 5:31-32, drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death until he come—1 Cor 11:25, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb—Revelation 19:19.

^b The days of fasting are from the ascension of Christ to the rapture of the body of Christ when the bride joins the bridegroom.

CONTRAST - Parable to Contrast the New and the Old (cloth, bottles and wine) Testaments

(32) ³⁶ And he spoke also a parable to them; **No man puts a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwise, then both the new makes a tare, and the piece that was [taken] out of the new agrees not with the old.** ³⁷ And no man puts **new wine** into **old bottles;** else the **new wine will burst the bottles,** and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. ³⁸ But ^a **new wine** must be put into **new bottles;** and both are preserved. ³⁹ No man also having drunk **old** [wine] straightway desires **new:** for he says, The **old** is better.

Questions for the diligent Bible believer to renew their mind (Romans 12:1-2):

Question 1: Are Levi and Matthew the same person? (Acts 1:13)

Answer 1: Yes, Matthew is his Greek name (Matthew 9:9) and Levi is his Hebrew name (Mark 2:9, Luke 5:27).

Question 2: What is the difference between Matthew and the other tax-collector Zacchaeus (Luke 19:1-10)?

Question 3: What is the contrast of the calling of Peter and Matthew?

Answer 3A: Peter sees a great catch of fish, is humble, repents of personal sin, and told to catch men - then forsakes all, and follows Jesus.

Answer 3B: Matthew hears Jesus say, "follow me", left all and follows Jesus - then hosts a great feast, invites co-workers and sinners, hears Pharisees and disciples complaints and hears parables on the old and new testaments.

Luke Chapter 6

6:1-5 *Disciples Defended for Picking Grain on the Sabbath*

(33) ¹ And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields; and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in [their] hands. ² And certain of the Pharisees said to them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath days? ³ And Jesus answering them said, **Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was a hungered, and they which were with him;** ⁴ **How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the showbread, and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat but for the priests alone?** ⁵ And he said to them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6:6-11 *A Withered Hand Healed on the Sabbath*

(34) ⁶ And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. ⁷ And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him. ⁸ But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, **Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth.** ⁹ **Then said Jesus to them, I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the sabbath days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy [it]?** ¹⁰ **And looking round about upon them all, he said to the man, Stretch forth your hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.** ¹¹ And they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

6:12-16 *After Prayer the 12 Apostles are Selected*

(35) ¹² And it came to pass in those days, that **he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.** ¹³ And when it was day, he called [to him] his disciples: and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named apostles; ¹⁴ Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, ¹⁵ Matthew and Thomas, James the [son] of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes, ¹⁶ And ^a Jude [the brother] of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitor.

^a The Judas that later wrote the book of Jude. See John 14:22-24.

6:17-19 *Multitudes Heard and Healed*

(36) ¹⁷ And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judaea and Jerusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; ¹⁸ And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. ¹⁹ And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went power out of him, and healed them all.

Note: vs 19, KJV virtue, Greek dynamis.

Luke Chapter 6

6:20-26 **Sermon on the Mount – to Disciples** (same time and place as Matthew 5-7)

(37) ²⁰ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed [be ye] poor: for yours is the kingdom of God. ²¹ Blessed [are ye] that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed [are ye] that weep now: for ye shall laugh. ²² Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you [from their company], and shall reproach [you], and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. ²³ Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers to the prophets. ²⁴ But woe to you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. ²⁵ Woe to you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe to you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. ²⁶ Woe to you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

6:27-36 **Love Your Enemies, Do Good to them that Hate You, Bless them that Curse you**

(38) ²⁷ But I say to you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, ²⁸ Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. ²⁹ And to him that smites you on the [one] cheek offer also the other; and him that takes away your cloke forbid not [to take your] coat also. ³⁰ Give to every man that asks of you; and of him that takes away your goods ask them not again. ³¹ And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. ³² For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. ³³ And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. ³⁴ And if ye lend [to them] of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. ³⁵ But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind to the unthankful and [to] the evil. ³⁶ Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

6:37-45 **Judge Not, Condemn Not – Forgive, Give**

(39) ³⁷ Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: ³⁸ Give, and it shall be given to you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. ³⁹ And he spoke a parable to them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? ⁴⁰ The disciple is not above his master: but everyone that is ^a perfect shall be as his master. ⁴¹ And why behold you the mote that is in your brother's eye, but perceive not the beam that is in your own eye? ⁴² Either how can you say to your brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in your eye, when you thyself behold not the beam that is in your own eye? You hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of your own eye, and then shall you see clearly to pull out the mote that is in your brother's eye. ⁴³ For a good tree brings not forth corrupt fruit; neither does a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. ⁴⁴ For every tree is known by his own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. ⁴⁵ A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart brings forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaks.

^a Perfect may be better translated: mended, repaired, perfectly joined together. In Greek - katartizo

6:46-49 **Parable of a House Built on the Solid or Missing Foundation**

(40) ⁴⁶ And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? ⁴⁷ **Whosoever comes to me, and hears my sayings, and does them, I will show you to whom he is like:** ⁴⁸ He is like a man which built a house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. ⁴⁹ But he that hears, and does not, is like a man that without a foundation built a house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.

Luke Chapter 7

Two Ways that Jesus Meets Needs

7:1-10 **First: Healing the Centurion's Servant at Capernaum** (upon Gentiles humble request)

(41) ¹ Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum. ² And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear to him, was sick, and ready to die. ³ And when he heard of Jesus, he sent to him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant. ⁴ And when they came to Jesus, they begged him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this: ⁵ For he loves our nation, and he has built us a synagogue. ⁶ Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying to him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that you should enter under my roof: ⁷ Wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come to you: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed. ⁸ For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say to one, Go, and he goes; and to another, Come, and he comes; and to my servant, Do this, and he does [it]. ⁹ When Jesus heard these things, he marveled at him, and turned him about, and said to the people that followed him, **I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.** ¹⁰ And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

7:11-17 **Second: Raising the Widow's Son from Death at Nain** (upon Jesus' compassion)

(42) ¹¹ And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. ¹² Now when he came near to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. ¹³ And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, **Weep not.** ¹⁴ **And he came and touched the coffin: and they that bare [him] stood still. And he said, Young man, I say to you, Arise.** ¹⁵ And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother. ¹⁶ And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God has visited his people. ¹⁷ And this rumor of him went forth throughout all Judaea, and throughout all the region round about.

7:18-35 **John the Baptist's Inquiry and Jesus' Praise of John**

(43) ¹⁸ And the disciples of John showed him of all these things. ¹⁹ And John calling two of his disciples sent them to Jesus, saying, Are you he that should come? or look we for another? ²⁰ When the men were come to him, they said, John [the] Baptist has sent us to you, saying, Are you he that should come? or look we for another? ²¹ **And in that same hour he cured many of [their] infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits; and to many [that were] blind he gave sight.**

²² Then Jesus answering said to them, **Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.** ²³ **And blessed is [he], whosoever shall not be offended in me.** ²⁴ **And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak to the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind? ²⁵ But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously appareled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts. ²⁶ But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yes, I say to you, and much more than a prophet. ²⁷ This is [he], of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before your face, which shall prepare your way before you. ²⁸ **For I say to you, Among those that are born of women there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.** ²⁹ And all the people that heard [him], and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. ³⁰ But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him. ³¹ **And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like? ³² They are like to children sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped to you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept. ³³ For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, He has a demon. ³⁴ The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! ³⁵ But wisdom is justified of all her children.****

Luke Chapter 7

7:36-50 **Jesus' Feet Anointed in a Pharisee's House** (complete worship)

(44) ³⁶ And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to food. ³⁷ And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that [Jesus] sat at a meal in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, ³⁸ And stood at his feet behind [him] weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. ³⁹ Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw [it], he spoke within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman [this is] that touches him: for she is a sinner.

(45) ⁴⁰ And Jesus answering said unto him, **Simon, I have something to say to you.** And he says, Master, say on. ⁴¹ **There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.** ⁴² **And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?** ⁴³ Simon answered and said, I suppose that [he], to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, **You have rightly judged.** ⁴⁴ And he turned to the woman, and said to Simon, **See you this woman? I entered into your house, you gave me no water for my feet: but she has washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.** ⁴⁵ **You gave me no kiss: ^a but this woman since the time I came in has not ceased to kiss my feet.** ⁴⁶ **My head with oil you did not anoint: but this woman has anointed my feet with ointment.** **⁴⁷ Wherefore I say to you, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, [the same] loves little.** ⁴⁸ And he said unto her, **Your sins are forgiven.** ⁴⁹ And they that sat at food with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgives sins also? ⁵⁰ And he said to the woman, **Your faith has saved you; go in peace.**

^a The complete worship of this woman is compared to the partial worship or half-way worship of believer and congregations today.



Luke Chapter 8

8:1-3 *Jesus and 12 Travel Proclaiming and Healing*

(46) ¹ And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and showing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve [were] with him, ² And ^a certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven demons, ³ And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered to him of their substance.

^a This unique circumstance notes the 12 apostles and several women that traveled together, and the women ministered onto Jesus; all in purity of relationship.

8:4-15 *Parable of the Seed and the 4 Grounds*

(47) ⁴ And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spoke by a parable: ⁵ A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. ⁶ And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. ⁷ And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. ⁸ And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit a hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that has ears to hear, let him hear. ⁹ And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be? ¹⁰ And he said, To you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand. ¹¹ Now the parable is this: The seed is the Word of God. ¹² Those by the way side are they that hear; then comes the demon, and takes away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. ¹³ They on the rock [are they], which, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away. ¹⁴ And that which fell among thorns are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of [this] life, and bring no fruit to perfection. ¹⁵ But that on the ^a good ground are they, which in a honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep [it], and bring forth fruit with patience.

^a Three of the four conditions of ground have no fruit that endures. Verses 8 and 15 describe the good ground. Fruit is the fruit of the new life in Christ evidenced by the fruit of the Holy Spirit.

8:16-18 *The Parable of the Lamp*

(48) ¹⁶ No man, when he has lighted a candle, covers it with a vessel, or puts [it] under a bed; but sets [it] on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. ¹⁷ For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither [anything] hid, that shall not be known and come abroad. ¹⁸ Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever has, to him shall be given; and whosoever has not, from him shall be taken even that which he seems to have.

8:19-21 *Teaching on Who are our Mother and Brethren*

(49) ¹⁹ Then came to him [his] mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press. ²⁰ And it was told him [by certain] which said, Your mother and your brethren stand outside, desiring to see you. ²¹ And he answered and said to them, **My mother and my brethren are these which hear the Word of God, and do it.**

8:22-25 *The Storm is Stilled from Violence*

(50) ²² Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said to them, Let us go over to the other side of the lake. And they launched forth. ²³ But as they sailed he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they were filled [with water], and were in jeopardy. ²⁴ And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm. ²⁵ And he said to them, **Where is your faith?** And they being afraid wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commands even the winds and water, and they obey him.

Luke Chapter 8

8:26-40 *Jesus Delivers a Man from a Legion of Demons to a Sound Mind*

(51) ²⁶ And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee. ²⁷ And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had demons long time, and wore no clothes, neither abode in [any] house, but in the tombs. ²⁸ When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, **What have I to do with you, Jesus, Son of God most high?** I beseech you, torment me not. ²⁹ (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.) ³⁰ And Jesus asked him, saying, **What is your name?** And he said, Legion: because many demons were entered into him. ³¹ And they begged him that he would not command them to go out into the deep. ³² And there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they begged him that he would allow them to enter into them. And he permitted them. ³³ Then went the demons out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked. ³⁴ When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told [it] in the city and in the country. ³⁵ Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the demons were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. ³⁶ They also which saw [it] told them by what means he that was possessed of the demons was healed. ³⁷ Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about begged him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again. ³⁸ Now the man out of whom the demons were departed begged him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying, ³⁹ **Return to your own house, and show how great things God has done to you.** And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done to him. ⁴⁰ And it came to pass, that, when Jesus was returned, the people [gladly] received him: for they were all waiting for him.

^a by 1 or more demons or being demonized, Greek is daimonizomai.

The Trilogy of 3 Twelves (Luke 8:41 to 9:6)

8:41-56 *Jarius' Daughter (12 years old and dead) and Invalid Woman (12 years ill) Healed on Same Day*

(52) ⁴¹ And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and begged him that he would come into his house: ⁴² For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay dying. But as he went the people thronged him. ⁴³ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any, ⁴⁴ **Came behind [him], and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stopped.** ⁴⁵ And Jesus said, **Who touched me?** When all denied, Peter and they that were with him said, Master, the multitude throng you and press [you], and you say, Who touched me? ⁴⁶ And Jesus said, **Somebody has touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.** ⁴⁷ And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared to him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately. ⁴⁸ And he said unto her, **Daughter, be of good comfort: your faith has made you whole; go in peace.**

⁴⁹ While he yet spoke, there comes one from the ruler of the synagogue, saying to him, Your daughter is dead; trouble not the Master. ⁵⁰ But when Jesus heard [it], he answered him, saying, **Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.** ⁵¹ And when he came into the house, he permitted no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the child. ⁵² And all wept, and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not; she is not dead, but sleeps. ⁵³ And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. ⁵⁴ And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, **maid, arise.** ⁵⁵ And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her food. ⁵⁶ And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no one what was done.

Luke Chapter 9

9:1-6 The 12 Disciples Instructed and Sent Forth

(53) ¹ Then he called his **twelve disciples** together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, and to cure diseases. ² And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. ³ And he said to them, **Take nothing for [your] journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece.** ⁴ **And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and there depart.** ⁵ **And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.** ⁶ And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing everywhere.

9:7-9 Herod Thinks Jesus is John

⁷ Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead; ⁸ And of some, that Elijah had appeared; and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again. ⁹ And Herod said, John I have beheaded: but who is this, of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

9:10-17 Feeding the 5000 (12 baskets of fragments leftover)

(54) ¹⁰ And **the apostles, when they were returned**, told him all that they had done. And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place belonging to the city called Bethsaida. ¹¹ And the people, when they knew [it], followed him: and he received them, and spoke to them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing. ¹² And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get food: for we are here in a desert place. ¹³ But he said to them, **Give ye them to eat.** And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy food for all this people. ¹⁴ For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company. ¹⁵ And they did so, and made them all sit down. ¹⁶ Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and **looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.** ¹⁷ And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them twelve baskets.

9:18-22 Peter's Confession of Christ

(Jesus Foretells His Death and Resurrection – 1st time; at hills of Mount Hermon)

(55) ¹⁸ And it came to pass, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, **Whom say the people that I am?** ¹⁹ They answering said, John the Baptist; but some [say], Elijah; and others [say], that one of the old prophets is risen again. ²⁰ He said to them, **But whom say ye that I am?** Peter answering said, The Christ of God. ²¹ **And he straightly charged them, and commanded them to tell no man that thing;** ²² **Saying, The Son of man must allow many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.**

9:23-27 The Cost of Discipleship

(56) ²³ And he said to them all, **^a If anyone will come after me, let him deny self, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.** ²⁴ For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. ²⁵ For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away? ²⁶ For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and [in his] Father's, and of the holy angels. ²⁷ But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.

^a If anyone will come after me
let him deny self
and take up his cross **daily**
and **follow me** (9:57-62, to many followers)

This 4-part command is repeated in Matthew 16:24 and Mark 8:34 in the same time, only here is the word "daily".

Luke Chapter 9

9:28-36 *Moses and Elijah Appear During Prayer at Mountain in Hermon*

(57) ²⁸ **And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings**, he took Peter and John and James, and **went up into a mountain to pray**. ²⁹ And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white [and] glistening. ³⁰ And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elijah: ³¹ Who appeared in glory, and spoke of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem. ³² But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. ³³ And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: not knowing what he said. ³⁴ While he thus spoke, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud. ³⁵ And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, **This is my beloved Son: hear him**. ³⁶ And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept [it] close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.

9:37-42 *Jesus Rebukes the Unclean Spirit in a Boy*

(58) ³⁷ And it came to pass, that on the next day, when ^a **they were come down from the hill**, much people met him. ³⁸ And, behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech you, look upon my son: for he is my only child. ³⁹ And, look, a spirit takes him, and he suddenly cries out; and it rears him that he foams again, and bruising him hardly departs from him. ⁴⁰ And I begged your disciples to cast him out; and they could not. ⁴¹ And Jesus answering said, **O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and allow you? Bring your son hither**. ⁴² And as he was yet a coming, the demon threw him down, and tare [him]. **And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.**

^a Jesus and 12 apostles go up north to a hill near the Mount Hermon range, are at a hill, go further up into a mountain, come back down to a hill, then back into the crowds of people. The retreat is finished. The faithless and perverse generation includes his 12 disciples.

9:43-45 *Jesus' Betrayal Foretold* (2nd time – before and after mountain experience in 9:28-36)

(59) ⁴³ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered everyone at all things which Jesus did, he said to his disciples, ⁴⁴ **Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men**. ⁴⁵ ^a But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.

^a This was the blindness of the old testament period to the messiah

9:46-62 *Jesus our Teacher Corrects 4 Problems*

***Correction 1: The Apostles' Pride is Corrected by Meekness* (new way)**

(60) ⁴⁶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be great. ⁴⁷ And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, ⁴⁸ And said to them, **Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receives me: and whosoever shall receive me receives him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.**

***Correction 2: The Apostles' Separateness is Corrected by Inclusiveness* (new way)**

(61) ⁴⁹ And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out demons in your name; and we forbid him, because he follows not with us. ⁵⁰ And Jesus said unto him, **Forbid not: for he that is not against us is for us.**

DISCIPLESHIP LESSONS FROM THE PARABLES IN LUKE 9:51 TO 19:27

Background: The last trip to Jerusalem covered a period of 4-6 months from 9:51 to 19:28. During this period Jesus taught his disciples 19 parables unique to Luke. A parable is an earthly story or illustration with a heavenly importance. Parables are for the believer to understand the character and plan of God. As we understand in our mind, we can live from the heart.

<u>No.</u>	<u>Passage</u>	<u>Title of Parable</u>	<u>Discipleship Lesson</u>	<u>Related Passages</u>
1.	10:25-37	the Good Samaritan	(1) Love each other	Deut 6:5, Lev 19:8
2.	11:5-10	a Friend in Need	(2) Prayer – God’s nature, our trust	
3.	11:11-13	our Earthly Father	(2) Prayer – God’s nature, our trust	
4.	11:33-36	the Light & Darkness	(3) Pride – darkness, man’s nature	
5.	12:13-21	the Rich Fool	(3) Money – darkness, man’s nature	
6.	12:35-40	the Watchful Servant	(4) Discipleship – light, believer’s guide	
7.	12:42-48 (49-53)	the Faithful & Unfaithful	(4) Discipleship – light, believer’s guide	
Mt 24:45-51 - contrasts				
8.	13:6-9	the Barren Fig Tree	(5) Present Israel	Romans 9-11
9.	13:18-19	the Mustard Seed	(5) Future Church – birds, evil	
Mt 13:30-31, Mk 4:30-32				
10.	13:20-21 (22-35)	the Leaven	(5) Future Church – leaven, sin	Mt 13:32
11.	14:7-24	the Great Supper	(6) Future rewards – honor & guests	1 Cor 3:13-15, 2 Tim 2:21
12.	14:25-35	being Christ’s Disciple	(7) Discipleship - count the cost	
13.	15:1-7	the Lost Sheep	(8) Foolishness - food & clothing, one sinner found	
14.	15:8-10	the Lost Coin	(8) Carelessness – money, one sinner found	
15.	15:11-32	the Lost Son	(8) Selfishness – life, one son / brother found	
16.	17:1-10	our Servanthood	(10) Servanthood - our expected and reasonable labors	
17.	18:1-8	a Judge and God	(11) Prayer. Justice will come – God will avenge his elect	
18.	18:9-14	the Pharisee & Publican	(11) Prayer. Self-exaltation and self-abasement	
19.	19:11-27	the Pounds	(12) Love God	

Notes: The chiastic structure of the parables:

	<u>Passage</u>	<u># parables</u>	
A – Love	parable 1	9:51-10:42	1
B – Prayer	parables 2-3	11:1-13	2
C – Discipleship	parables 4-7	11:14-12:59	4
D – Prophecy	parables 8-10	13:1-13:45	3
C – Discipleship	parables 11-17	14:1-17:10	7
B – Prayer	parables 18-19	17:11-18:17	2
A – Love	parable 20	18:18-19:27	1

Five (5) phases of discipleship: Salvation
 Grounding in the faith
 Character development
 Service (deacon)
 Disciple others (elder/pastor/bishop)

Further study and application: The 3 parables that are similar in other gospels: Lu 12:42-48 stated later in Mt 24:45-51. Lu 13:18-19 stated earlier in Mt 13:30-31, Mk 4:30-32. Lu 13:20-21 stated earlier in Mt 13:32. Look at setting of Lu 8-9.

- (1) What % of words in this section of Luke are devoted to parables?
- (2) Study passages surrounding 3 similar parables in Matthew and Mark for time, audience, context and interpretation.
- (3) Compare to frequency of miracles and teachings in this time period, and compare with Matthew and Mark.
- (4) Relate to discipleship taught and experienced in your life.

Jesus' Ministry on the Way to Jerusalem 9:51 – 19:27

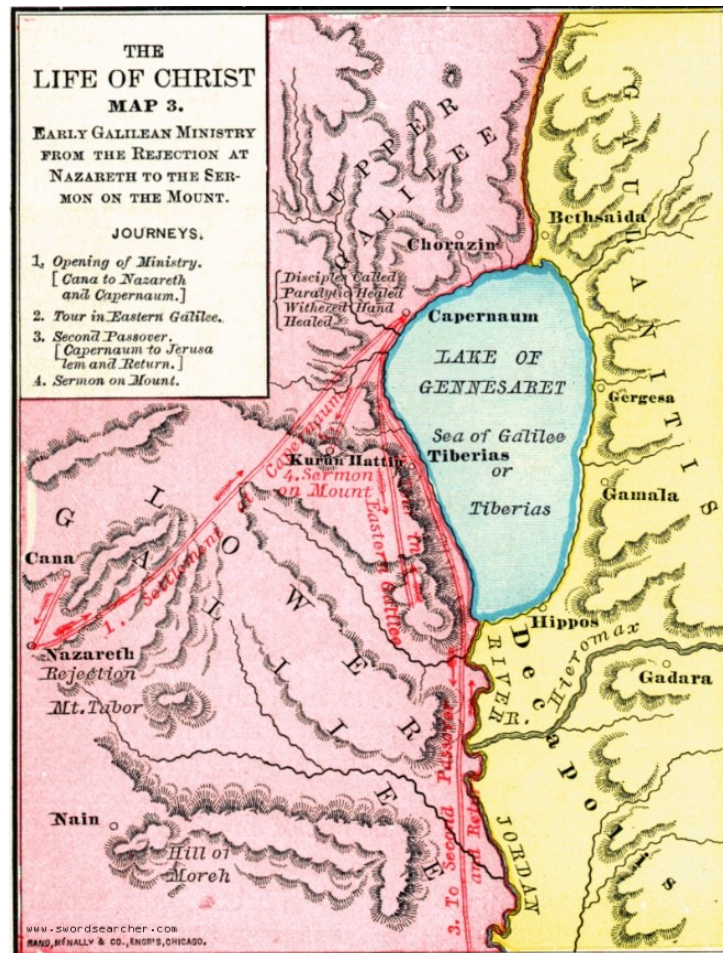
Correction 3: The Apostles' Personal Anger is Corrected by Peace (new way)

(62) ⁵¹ And it came to pass, when **the time was come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,** ⁵² And sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. ⁵³ And they did not receive him, because **his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.** ⁵⁴ And when his disciples James and John saw [this], they said, Lord, will you that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elijah did? ⁵⁵ **a But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.** ⁵⁶ **For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.**

^a "Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of" is omitted in the NIV.

Correction 4: Two Half-way Offers to Follow Jesus are Corrected (new way)

(63) ⁵⁷ And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a man said unto him, Lord, **I will follow you** wherever you go. ⁵⁸ **And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air [have] nests; but the Son of man has no where to lay [his] head.** ⁵⁹ And he said to another, **Follow me.** But he said, Lord, allow me first to go and bury my father. ⁶⁰ Jesus said unto him, **Let the dead bury their dead: but go you and preach the kingdom of God.** ⁶¹ And another also said, Lord, **I will follow you;** but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house. ⁶² And Jesus said unto him, **No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.**



Luke Chapter 10

10:1-16 **The Seventy Sent Out to Prepare the Way for Jesus to Come**

(64) ¹ After these things the Lord **appointed a different seventy** also, and sent them two and two before his face into **every city and place**, where he was about to come. ² Therefore said he to them, **The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth laborers into his harvest.** ³ Go your ways: behold, I send you forth **as lambs among wolves.** ⁴ Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and ^a **salute no man by the way.** ⁵ And into whatever house ye enter, first say, Peace to this house. ⁶ And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. ⁷ And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the laborer is worthy of his hire. **Go not from house to house.** ⁸ And into whatever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: ⁹ And heal the sick that are therein, and say to them, The kingdom of God is come near to you.

¹⁰ But into whatever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, ¹¹ Even the very dust of your city, which cleaves on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come near to you.

¹² But I say to you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. ¹³ Woe to you, Chorazin! woe to you, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. ¹⁴ But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. ¹⁵ And you, Capernaum, which are exalted to heaven, shall be thrust down to Hades.

¹⁶ ^c He that hears you hears me; and he that despises you despises me; and he that despises me despises him that sent me.

^a They was an expediency and purpose with a specific mission as they were not to make special preparation, and that they were to give their time and attention wholly to their work, and not engage in social enjoyments such as the lengthy cultural exchange of courtesies. Related is staying in a house rather than going from house to house, without being led of the Spirit. This mission of the seventy was for a local and temporary purpose, and not a binding pattern for future application. However, the spirit may lead to parts or all elements of this mission.

^b Greek αἴδης *Hades*, "hades," or place of the dead. It corresponds with the word translated "hell," שאול *she'ol* in context of *Old Testament passages*; its usual signification, among the Hebrews, was "the lower world, the region of departed spirits." Used 11x in the New Testament; Matthew 2x, Mark 2x, Acts 2x, 1 Corinthians 1x, Revelation 4x. Gehenna is used 12x and translated hell in context to eternal torment and fire, waiting for the lake of fire in Revelation 20:14.

^c Jeremiah 15:19, 2 Chronicles 36:16, Matthew 10:40-42.

Luke Chapter 10

10:17-24 **The 70 Rejoice and Jesus' Prayer of Thanks to his Father**

(65) ¹⁷ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the demons are subject to us through your name. ¹⁸ And he said to them, ^a **I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.** ¹⁹ Behold, I give to you authority to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. ²⁰ Notwithstanding in this **rejoice not, that the spirits are subject to you; but rather rejoice, because** ^b **your names are written in heaven.** ²¹ In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, **I thank you, O Father,** Lord of heaven and earth, that you have hid these things from the wise and prudent, and has revealed them to babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in your sight. ²² All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knows who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and to whom the Son will reveal. ²³ And he turned to his disciples, and said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see: ²⁴ For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

^a Jesus tells of Satan's fall as lightning due to the works of the 70 disciples. They got his attention. At the end Satan is cast down from heaven to earth by God, Revelation 12:7-12. A fall is voluntary by Satan; cast down is directed by God. Isaiah 14:2, John 12:31, 16:11, Ephesians 6:12, Hebrews 2:14, 1 John 3:8, Jude 1:6, Revelation 20:2.

^b "your names are written" **Ex 32:32; Ps 69:28; Isa 4:3; Da 12:1; Php 4:3; Heb 12:23; Re 13:8; 20:12; 21:27.**

10:25-37 **Parable of the Good Samaritan - Parable 1**

(66) ²⁵ And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? ²⁶ He said unto him, **What is written in the law? how read you?** ²⁷ And he answering said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as thyself. ²⁸ And he said unto him, **You have answered right: this do, and you shall live.** ²⁹ But he, willing to justify himself, said to Jesus, And who is my neighbor? ³⁰ And Jesus answering said, **A certain [man] went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded [him], and departed, leaving [him] half dead.** ³¹ And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. ³² And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked [on him], and passed by on the other side. ³³ But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion [on him], ³⁴ And went to [him], and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. ³⁵ And on the next day when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever you spend more, when I come again, I will repay you. ³⁶ Which now of these three, think you, was neighbor to him that fell among the thieves? ³⁷ And he said, He that showed mercy on him. Then said Jesus to him, **Go, and do you likewise.**

10:38-42 **The Guest of Mary and Martha**

(67) ³⁸ Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. ³⁹ And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. ⁴⁰ But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, do you not care that my sister has left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. ⁴¹ And Jesus answered and said unto her, **Martha, Martha, you are careful and troubled about many things:** ⁴² **But one thing is needful: and Mary has chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.**

Luke Chapter 11

11:1-13 **Five Foundations of Prayer from Luke**

*Ask about prayer (11:1), then follow the basics of prayer (11:2-4):
with friends (11:5-8), with actions (11:9-10), and with the Holy Spirit (11-13).*

11:1 Foundation #1: Humility before God and man (Luke 2:52, Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man)

¹ And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, **one of his disciples** said unto him, Lord, **teach us** to pray, as **John also taught his disciples**.

11:2-4 Foundation #2: Basic doctrine of prayer (1 Corinthians 11:16, 34; 14:40 Let all things be done decently and in order) Mt 6:9-13. The pattern of prayer has five areas addressed in five lines::

² And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our **Father** which art in **heaven, Hallowed** be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.

³ Give us day by day our daily bread.

⁴ And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

THREE STORIES (wisdom of parables) WITH THREE LESSONS

11:5-8 Foundation #3 (3 friends) most common with friends (1 Thessalonians 5:17 Pray without ceasing, context of 1 Thes. 5)

STORY 1 ⁵ And he said unto them, Which of **you** shall have a **friend**, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, **Friend**, lend me **three loaves**; ⁶ For a **friend** of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him? ⁷ And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

LESSON ⁸ I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is **his friend**, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

Note: Importunity is the opposite of opportunity, based on friendship & love.

11:9-10 Foundation #4 (3 actions) A.S.K. God (on earth: Genesis 3:9-13, Luke 2:3, Matthew 5, Acts 1:14, Jude 1:20) Matthew 7:7-8

STORY 2 ⁹ And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be **given** you; seek, and ye shall **find**; knock, and it shall be **opened** unto you.

LESSON ¹⁰ For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

11:11-13 Foundation #5 (3 foods) compare our earthly father to our heavenly father; Mt 7:9-11

STORY 3 ¹¹ If a son shall **ask** bread of any of you that is a father, will he **give** him a stone? /caution-tempt/ or if [he **ask**] a fish, will he for a fish **give** him a serpent? /danger-sin/

¹² Or if he shall **ask** an egg, will he **offer** him a scorpion? /warning-death/

LESSON ¹³ If ye then, being evil, know how to **give good gifts** unto your children: how much more shall [your] heavenly Father **give the Holy Spirit** to them that **ask** Him?

Note: Ask & give. Give can be stated hand, and offer is same as give or hand.

Holy Spirit – authority and power as children of God. Continual need, grieve not – Eph 4:30 /quench not – 1 Thes 5:19. Hinder not – Gal 5:7: Self or Others in temptation (1 Cor 10) turning into sin (1 John), or the devil 1 Thes 2:18. The Holy Spirit makes us children of God in power and authority.

Luke Chapter 11

11:14-23 *The Beelzebub Discussion*

(71) ¹⁴ And he was casting out a demon, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the demon was gone out, the dumb spoke; and the people wondered. ¹⁵ But some of them said, He casts out demons through Beelzebub the chief of the demons. ¹⁶ And others, tempting [him], sought of him a sign from heaven. ¹⁷ But he, knowing their thoughts, said to them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and a house [divided] against a house falls. ¹⁸ If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out demons through Beelzebub. ¹⁹ And if I by Beelzebub cast out demons, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore they will be your judges. ²⁰ But if I with the finger of God cast out demons, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you. ²¹ When a strong man armed keeps his palace, his goods are in peace: ²² But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he takes from him all his armor wherein he trusted, and divides his spoils. ²³ He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathers not with me scatters.

11:24-28 *The Sign of Jonah*

(72) ²⁴ When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walks through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he says, I will return to my house whence I came out. ²⁵ And when he comes, he finds [it] swept and garnished. ²⁶ Then goes he, and takes [to him] seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last [state] of that man is worse than the first. ²⁷ And it came to pass, as he spoke these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare you, and the paps which you have sucked. ²⁸ But he said, Yes rather, blessed are they that hear the Word of God, and keep it.

11:29-32 *Jesus Greater than The Sign of Jonah and Wisdom of Solomon*

(73) ²⁹ And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonah the prophet. ³⁰ For as Jonah was a sign to the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. ³¹ The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. ³² The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and, behold, a greater than Jonah is here.

11:33-36 *Parable of Light & Darkness – parable 4 (Mt 5:13-16)*

(74) ³³ No man, when he has lighted a candle, puts [it] in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. ³⁴ The light of the body is the eye: therefore when your eye is single, your whole body also is full of light; but when [your eye] is evil, your body also is full of darkness. ³⁵ Take heed therefore that the light which is in you be not darkness. ³⁶ If your whole body therefore [be] full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle does give you light.

11:37-44 *Woe to the Scribes and Pharisees (climax of the Pharisees Opposition)*

(75) ³⁷ And as he spoke, a certain Pharisee begged him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to eat. ³⁸ And when the Pharisee saw [it], he marveled that he had not first washed before dinner. ³⁹ And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. ⁴⁰ [Ye] fools, did not he that made that which is outside make that which is within also? ⁴¹ But rather give alms of such things as ye have; and, behold, all things are clean to you. ⁴² But woe to you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. ⁴³ Woe to you, Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. ⁴⁴ Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them are not aware [of them].

Luke Chapter 11

11:45-54 **Woe to the Lawyers and Politicians**

(76) ⁴⁵ Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying you reproach us also. ⁴⁶ And he said, **Woe to you also, [ye] lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.** ⁴⁷ **Woe to you! for ye build the sepulchers of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.** ⁴⁸ **Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchers.** ⁴⁹ **Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and [some] of them they shall slay and persecute:** ⁵⁰ **That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation;** ⁵¹ **From the blood of Abel to the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say to you, It shall be required of this generation.** ⁵² **Woe to you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.** ⁵³ **And as he said these things to them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge [him] vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things:** ⁵⁴ **Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.**

Luke Chapter 12

12:1-12 **Fearless Confessions**

(77) ¹ In the meantime, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say to his disciples first of all, **Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy.** ² **For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.** ³ **Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.** ⁴ **And I say to you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do.** ⁵ **But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he has killed has authority to cast into hell; yes, I say to you, Fear him.** ⁶ **Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?** ⁷ **But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows.** ⁸ **Also I say to you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God:** ⁹ **But he that denies me before men shall be denied before the angels of God.** ¹⁰ **And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but to him that blasphemeth against the ^a Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven.** ¹¹ **And when they bring you to the synagogues, and [to] magistrates, and authorities, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:** ¹² **For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.**

^a The Holy Spirit's roles are taught. John 16:8-10 "reproves the world of sin, righteousness and judgment"

12:13-21 **Parable of the Rich Fool – parable 5**

(78) ¹³ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. ¹⁴ And he said unto him, **Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you?** ¹⁵ **And he said to them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consists not in the abundance of the things which he possesses.**

(79) ¹⁶ And he spoke a parable to them, saying, **The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:** ¹⁷ **And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?** ¹⁸ **And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.** ¹⁹ **And I will say to my soul, Soul, you have much goods laid up for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, [and] be merry.** ²⁰ **But God said unto him, [You] fool, this night your soul shall be required of you: then whose shall those things be, which you have provided?** ²¹ **So is he that lays up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.**

Luke Chapter 12

12:22-34 **God's Provisions for Disciples**

(80) ²² And he said to his disciples, Therefore I say to you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. ²³ The life is more than food, and the body [is more] than raiment. ²⁴ Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feeds them: how much more are ye better than the fowls? ²⁵ And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? ²⁶ If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? ²⁷ Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say to you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. ²⁸ If then God so clothe the grass, which is today in the field, and tomorrow is cast into the oven; how much more [will he clothe] you, O ye of little faith? ²⁹ And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. ³⁰ For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knows that ye have need of these things. ³¹ But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added to you. ³² Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. ³³ Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which grow not old, a treasure in the heavens that fails not, where no thief approaches, neither moth corrupts. ³⁴ For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

12:35-40 **Parable of the Watchful Servant – parable 6**

(81) ³⁵ Let your loins be girded about, and [your] lights burning; ³⁶ And ye yourselves like to men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that ^a when he comes and knocks, they may open to him immediately. ³⁷ Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he comes shall find watching: verily I say to you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. ³⁸ And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those servants. ³⁹ And this know, that if the goodman of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have permitted his house to be broken through. ⁴⁰ Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man comes at a hour when ye think not.

^a do not be like the Shulamite woman with Solomon, a type of the bride-bridegroom relationship. Song 5:1-9

12:41-48 **Parable of the Faithful & Wise Steward vs Unfaithful & Wicked Servant – parable 7** (Mt 24:45-51)

(82) ⁴¹ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speak you this parable to us, or even to all? ⁴² And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise **steward**, whom [his] lord shall make ruler over his household, to give [them their] portion of meat in due season? ⁴³ Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. ⁴⁴ Of a truth I say to you, that he will make him ruler over all that he has. ⁴⁵ But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; ⁴⁶ The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looks not for [him], and at a hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. ⁴⁷ And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not [himself], neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many [stripes]. ⁴⁸ But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few [stripes]. For to whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

Matthew 24: ⁴⁵ Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord has made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? ⁴⁶ Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. ⁴⁷ Verily I say to you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. ⁴⁸ But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; ⁴⁹ And shall begin to smite [his] fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; ⁵⁰ The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looks not for [him], and in a hour that he is not aware of, ⁵¹ And shall cut him asunder, and appoint [him] his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Luke Chapter 12

Compare

1) Matthew 24:45-51a and Luke 12:42-46a are very similar because we must always be watchful and ready, no matter what dispensation we live in.

2) Matthew – servant 4x: faithful and wise 1x, blessed 1x, evil 1x. Luke – * steward 1x, servant 3x: blessed 1x.

* Steward is oikonomos in Greek. Used 10x: Lu 12:24, 16:1,3,8, Ro 16:23, 1 Cor 4:1-2, Gal 4:2, Titus 1:7, 1 Pet 4:10

Matthew 24:49 – fellow servants (relation to Israel as a nation)
maidens (individuals)

Luke 12:45 – menservants and

Contrast

1a) Matthew 24:51b **with the hypocrites**: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Weeping and gnashing of teeth is used 5x: Matthew 8:12, 22:13, 24:51, 25:30 and Luke 13:28.

1b) Luke 12:46b-48 **with the unbelievers**. ⁴⁷ And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not [himself], neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many [stripes]. ⁴⁸ But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few [stripes]. For to whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. Plus 49-53 concerning baptism of death and division.

2a) Matthew 24 – to the 12 disciples privately at Mt of Olives during His last (passion) week. Spoken after the parable of the fig tree; to Israel during the tribulation of Revelation. This is a period of judgment and mercy.

2b) Luke 12:1, 41, 54 - to Peter among a multitude, outside, during his last journey to Jerusalem. Weeks to a few months before Matthew 24. This is written for the believer during the dispensation of grace, which ends before the time of Mt 24.

12:49-59 ***The Coming Crisis of Divided Families & Persecution***

(83) ⁴⁹ I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? ⁵⁰ But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I narrowed till it be accomplished! ⁵¹ Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, No; but rather division: ⁵² For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. ⁵³ The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. ⁵⁴ And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There comes a shower; and so it is. ⁵⁵ And when [ye see] the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it comes to pass. ⁵⁶ [Ye] hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time? ⁵⁷ Yes, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? ⁵⁸ When you go with your adversary to the magistrate, [as you are] in the way, give diligence that you may be delivered from him; lest he hale you to the judge, and the judge deliver you to the officer, and the officer cast you into prison. ⁵⁹ I tell you, you shall not depart there, till you have paid the very last mite.

Luke Chapter 13

13:1-5 A Call for Sinners to Repent or Perish

(84) ¹ There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. ² And Jesus answering said to them, **Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?** ³ I tell you, No: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. ⁴ Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? ⁵ I tell you, No: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

13:6-9 Parable of the Barren Fig Tree – parable 8

(85) ⁶ He spoke also this parable; **A certain [man] had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.** ⁷ Then said he to the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumberest thou the ground? ⁸ And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung [it]: ⁹ And if it bear fruit, [well]: and if not, [then] after that you shall cut it down.

13:10-17 Woman Healed on the Sabbath (sick for 18 years)

(86) ¹⁰ And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. ¹¹ And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up [herself]. ¹² And when Jesus saw her, he called [her to him], and said unto her, **Woman, you are loosed from your infirmity.** ¹³ And he laid [his] hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. ¹⁴ And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said to the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. ¹⁵ The Lord then answered him, and said, **[You] hypocrite, does not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or [his] donkey from the stall, and lead [him] away to watering?** ¹⁶ And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan has bound, look, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? ¹⁷ And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

13:18-19 Parable of the Mustard Seed – parable 9 (Mt 13:30-31, Mk 4:30-32)

(87) ¹⁸ Then said he, **To what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?** ¹⁹ It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden; and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

13:20-21 Parable of Leaven – parable 10 (Mt 13:32)

²⁰ And again he said, **Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?** ²¹ It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

John Gill's Exposition

It is like leaven,... Which is small in quantity, but is of a swelling, spreading quality; and fitly expresses the small beginnings of the Gospel ministry, and its increase, also the state and case of Gospel churches, and the nature of the grace of God; unless false doctrine should rather be meant, which privately, secretly, and by little and little, got into the churches of Christ, the kingdom of God, and spread itself all over them, as in the times of the papacy:

which a woman took; Christ, and his ministers, Wisdom, and her maidens, understanding the Gospel; but if the leaven of error is intended, that woman, Jezebel, is meant, who calls herself a prophetess, and teaches, and seduces the servants of God, **Re 2:20**

and hid in three measures of meal: among a few of God's people at first, both among Jews and Gentiles,

Luke Chapter 13

till the whole was leavened; until all the elect of God are gathered in, and evangelized by it; even the whole fullness of the Gentiles, and all the people of the Jews, which shall be saved in the latter day; but if the parable is to be understood of the false doctrine and discipline of the Antichristian and apostate church of Rome, it may denote the small beginnings of the mystery of iniquity, which began to work in the apostle's time by the errors and heresies then propagated, and the manner in which the man of sin was privately introduced; whose coming is after the working of Satan, with signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, first among a few, and then more, until at length the whole world wondered after the beast, **2 Th 2:7**.

13:22-30 **The Strait Gate**

(88) ²² And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem. ²³ Then said one to him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said to them, ²⁴ **Strive to enter in at the straight gate: for many, I say to you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.** ²⁵ **When once the master of the house is risen up, and has shut to the door, and ye begin to stand outside, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not whence ye are:** ²⁶ **Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in your presence, and you have taught in our streets.** ²⁷ **But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all workers of iniquity.** ²⁸ **There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves thrust out.** ²⁹ **And they shall come from the east, and [from] the west, and from the north, and [from] the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.** ³⁰ **And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.**

13:31-35 **Warning of Death – the place and time are not right**

(89) ³¹ The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying to him, Get you out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill you. ³² And he said to them, **Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out demons, and I do cures today and tomorrow, and the third [day] I shall be perfected.** ³³ **Nevertheless I must walk today, and tomorrow, and the [day] following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.**

(90) ³⁴ **O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which kills the prophets, and stones them that are sent to you; how often would I have gathered your children together, as a hen [does gather] her brood under [her] wings, and ye would not!** ³⁵ **Behold, your house is left to you desolate: and verily I say to you, Ye shall not see me, until [the time] come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord.**

Note: Goes with Luke 14:25-35

_____ Church _____
_____ Work _____
_____ Acts 1:8 _____
_____ God _____
_____ Family _____
_____ Community _____
_____ Self _____

DISCIPLESHIP DISCUSSION EXERCISE – Heart and time priorities

Luke Chapter 14

14:1-24 **Dining with a Chief Pharisee and Parable of a Great Supper**

(91) ¹ And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day, that they watched him. ² And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. ³ And Jesus answering spoke to the ^a lawyers and Pharisees, saying, **Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?** ⁴ And they held their peace. And he took [him], and healed him, and let him go; ⁵ And answered them, saying, **Which of you shall have a donkey or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?** ⁶ And they could not answer him again to these things.

^a Lawyers (8x, Zenas) accompany the Pharisees (95x, Nicodemus and Paul). At other times the scribes (68x), priests (118x), publicans (22x, Matthew) or Sadducees (14x). All these titles except for priest and scribe arose during the 400 silent years between Malachi and John the Baptist. These Pharisees or teachers of the Law supplanted the place of the father in the home, teaching communities as trained, hired professionals. Today this has evolved into the Rabbi or Pastor in Judaism and Christianity. The apostle Paul worked as a tentmaker for income. There is no evidence of a full-time salaried professional in the early church. Paul calls his past in this system "dung" (Philippians 3:4-8) and Peter and James were the contrary in Acts 4:13. What we need is more time learning from the master in Scripture, prayer and obedience. These religious titles are 99% negative and mostly disappear after Acts, except for priest, used of Jesus as our Great High Priest (Heb 4:14-16) and the priesthood of believers (1 Peter 2:9).

Parable of a Great Supper (Honor, Seats and Guests) parable 11 (vs 7-24)

(92) ⁷ And he put forth a parable to those which were invited, when he **marked** how they chose out the chief rooms; saying to them, ⁸ **When you are invited of any [man] to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; unless a ^a more honorable man than you be invited of him;** ⁹ And he that invites you and him come and say to you, Give this man place; and you begin with **shame** to take the lowest room. ¹⁰ But when you are invited, **go and sit down in the lowest room;** that when he that invites you comes, he may say to you, Friend, **go up higher: then shall you have worship** in the presence of them that sit at food with you. ¹¹ For whosoever exalts himself shall be abased; and he that humbles himself shall be exalted. ¹² Then said he also to him that invited him, When you make a dinner or a supper, call not your friends, nor your brethren, neither your kinsmen, nor rich neighbors; unless they also invite you again, and a recompense be made you. ¹³ But when you make a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: ¹⁴ And you shall be blessed; for they cannot recompense you: for you shall be recompensed at the **resurrection of the just.**

^a Although said with the Pharisees in the scene, this is a discipleship lesson for believers. We can learn from the Pharisees and go in the opposite direction in lifestyle. The issue is degrees of honor in God's eyes. We must prevent pride (Romans 12: 3a), especially since we live in a time of abundant grace. This is a basic illustration for the believer to keep growing in Christ. John 13. 2 Timothy 2:21, 1 Corinthians 3:13-15. It will all be fully understood by all believers at the resurrection of the just, when Christ returns.

(93) ¹⁵ ^a And when one of them that sat at food with him heard these things, he said unto him, **Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.** ¹⁶ Then said he to him, **A certain man made a great supper, and invited many:** ¹⁷ And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were invited, **Come; for all things are now ready.** ¹⁸ And they all with one [consent] began to make excuse. **The first** said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray you have me excused. ¹⁹ And **another said**, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray you have me excused. ²⁰ And **another said**, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. ²¹ So that servant came, and showed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being **angry** said to his servant, **Go out quickly** into the streets and lanes of the city, and **bring in** here the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. ²² And the servant said, Lord, it is done as you have commanded, and yet there is room. ²³ And the lord said to the servant, **Go out** into the highways and hedges, and **compel them to come in**, that my house may be filled. ²⁴ For I say to you, That none of those men which were invited shall **taste of my supper.**

Luke Chapter 14

^a This is the only interactive parable where a person participates in the continuance of a parable. One who was "one of them that sat at food with him". Was it one of the disciples, say Peter, was it one of the Pharisees? Note the 3 sequential steps of "say" then 3 excuses (16-20), "go out quickly, bring in" (21-22), and "go out, compel them to come in" (23-24). Sitting down at food represents the "marriage supper of the Lamb" in Revelation 19:7-9. This is also a 3-part parable. Great lessons on how to prepare for this great time.

14:25-35 **Parable of Being Christ's Disciple – parable 12**

(94) ²⁵ And ^a there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said to them, ²⁶ **If anyone come to me, and ^b hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be **my** disciple. ²⁷ And whosoever does not bear **his** cross, and come after me, cannot be **my** disciple. ²⁸ For which of you, ^c intending to build a tower, sits not down first, and counts the cost, whether he have [sufficient] to finish [it]? ²⁹ Lest haply, after he has laid the foundation, and is not able to finish [it], all that behold [it] begin to mock him, ³⁰ Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. ³¹ Or what king, ^c going to make war against another king, sits not down first, and consults whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that comes against him with twenty thousand? ³² Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sends an ambassage, and desires conditions of peace. ³³ So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsakes not all that he has, he cannot be **my** disciple. ³⁴ ^d Salt is good: but if the salt has lost its ^e taste, wherewith shall it be seasoned? ³⁵ It is **neither fit for the land**, nor yet for the dunghill; [but] ^f **men** cast it out. ^g He that has ears to hear, let him hear.**

^a There is a change in audience (hearers), location and time from the parable of the Great Supper. The only evidence of where and when; it was in chronological order of time and on His way to Jerusalem as researched and written by Luke the physician.

^b Hate not. Hate in Greek is Miso – to detest, misos – hatred. It is always translated hate, 38x. Contrast hate with love, as sinful with holy, as dirty with clean. The Biblical definition of hate is captured by the apostle of Love, John: 15:18-19, 23-25, 1 John 2:9--11, 3:13-15 and further aspects of hate in Ephesians 5:29 regarding marriage and Romans 9:13 regarding Jacob and Esau. In summary, hate is the absence of love.

^c Building a tower is defensive, while going to make war is offensive. Both require to me to sit down first and consider if I can finish what I begin. Both require commitment, diligence, and focus. All believers can finish this race set before us, if we're willing to forsake all that we have; therefore becoming a disciple of Christ. Have you ever committed your life to Christ in this way? This is the continual, daily working out our salvation in the death and resurrection power of Jesus Christ, not some belief and experience in the past (Romans 6:1-8:17a).

- To sit down is a position to rest, reflect and resolve.
- To finish a tower requires a high degree of skill, experience and planning.
- To win a battle with 10,000 men against 20,000 requires a high degree of training, readiness and unity.

^d Matthew 5:13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

^e Savor ^{KJV}

^f John 15:6 "If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned."

^g In the Hebraic sense our ears represent hearing God's word. We can have heavy ears, stop our ears from listening, and even deaf ears (Micah 7:16), spiritually speaking. This is the only parable that ends with the strong warning. Matthew 13:16, 43; Acts 28:27 and Romans 11:8 (referring to the nation Israel), Matthew 4:9, 11:15, Luke 8:8, 14:35, 1 Corinthians 2:9, Revelation 2-3.

An unbeliever is in no position to hear anything from God. A believer may be in the position to hear, but does not hear what the Spirit says, unless he becomes a disciple.

Luke Chapter 15

15:1-7 **Parable of One Lost Sheep – parable 13**

(95) ¹ Then drew near to him all the **publicans and sinners** for to hear him. ² And the **Pharisees and scribes** murmured, saying, This man receives sinners, and eats with them. ³ And he spoke this parable to them, saying, ⁴ What man of you, having a hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, does not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? ⁵ And when he has found [it], he lays [it] on his shoulders, rejoicing. ⁶ And when he comes home, he calls together [his] friends and neighbors, saying to them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. ⁷ I say to you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repents, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

15:8-10 **Parable of One Lost Coin – parable 14**

(96) ⁸ Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, does not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find [it]? ⁹ And when she has found [it], she calls [her] friends and [her] neighbors together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. ¹⁰ Likewise, I say to you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repents.

15:11-32 **Parable of One Lost Son – parable 15**

(97) ¹¹ And he said, A certain man had two sons: ¹² And the younger of them said to [his] father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falls [to me]. And he divided to them [his] living. ¹³ And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there was his substance with riotous living. ¹⁴ And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. ¹⁵ And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. ¹⁶ And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave to him. ¹⁷ And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! ¹⁸ I will arise and go to my father, and will say to him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before you, ¹⁹ And am no more worthy to be called your son: make me as one of your hired servants. ²⁰ And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. ²¹ And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in your sight, and am no more worthy to be called your son.

(98) ²² But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put [it] on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on [his] feet: ²³ And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill [it]; and let us eat, and be merry: ²⁴ For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. ²⁵ Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew near to the house, he heard music and dancing. ²⁶ And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. ²⁷ And he said unto him, Your brother is come; and your father has killed the fatted calf, because he has received him safe and sound. ²⁸ And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and entreated him. ²⁹ And he answering said to [his] father, Look, these many years I serve you, neither transgressed I at any time your commandment: and yet you never gave me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: ³⁰ But as soon as this your son was come, which has devoured your living with harlots, you have killed for him the fatted calf. ³¹ And he said unto him, Son, you are ever with me, and all that I have is yours. ³² It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this **your brother was dead, and is alive again;** and was lost, and is found.

Comparative notes: Younger = son of Adam-man, age of abundant grace (present), elder son = son of Abraham, age of grace / law (past), father = God.

<u>What</u>	<u>Total</u>	<u>Lost</u>	<u>Found</u>	<u>Rejoicing</u>	<u>Joy</u>
Sheep (sacrificial)	100	1 (4)	1 (5)	tells others (6)	in heaven (7a) 1 repents (7b)
Silver (redemption)	10	1 (8)	1 (9a)	tells others (9b)	in heaven (10a) 1 repents (10b)
Son	2	1 (11-16)	1 (17 -21)	within family (22-32a)	on earth 1 repents (32b)

(mankind, John 1:12) decision, freewill inheritance, elder and younger sons (1 Cor 10:32, Ro 9-11)

Luke Chapter 16

16:1-13 ***Parable of Discipleship as Stewardship – parable 16***

Wisdom of the natural

(99) ¹ And he said also **to his disciples**, There was a **certain rich man, which had a steward**; and the same was accused to him that he had wasted his goods. ² And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of you? give an account of your stewardship; for you may be no longer steward. ³ Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord takes away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. ⁴ I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, **they may receive me into their houses**. ⁵ So he called every one of his lord's debtors [to him], and said to the first, How much owe you to my lord? ⁶ And he said, A hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take your bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. ⁷ Then said he to another, And how much owe you? And he said, A hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take your bill, and write fourscore. ⁸ And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

Application of the Spiritual

⁹ And I say to you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may **receive you into everlasting habitations**. ¹⁰ **He that is faithful** in that which is least is faithful also in much: and **he that is unjust** in the least is unjust also in much. ¹¹ If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true [riches]? ¹² And if ye have **not been faithful** in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is **your own**? ¹³ **No servant can serve two masters**: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. **Ye cannot serve God and mammon**.

^a Luke 12:33, 1Ti 6:17; Lu 12:33; Mt 6:19; 19:21. We must learn to use unrighteous mammon wisely to inherit eternal riches. Least is on earth and much in heaven, another man's is on earth and our own is what we are rewarded with in heaven.

^b Mt 6:24. The same passage and context as the Sermon on the Mount, which is evidence that it was also for this age. "cannot serve God and mammon" Ga 1:10; 2Ti 4:10; Jas 4:4.

16:14-18 ***Parable of Poor Wisdom Giving 2 Coins vs Covetous Pharisees***

(100) ¹⁴ And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him. ¹⁵ And he said to them, **Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knows your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God**. ¹⁶ The law and the prophets [were] until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presses into it. ¹⁷ And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.

(101) ¹⁸ **Whosoever puts away his wife, and marries another, commits adultery: and ^a whosoever marries her that is put away from [her] husband commits adultery**.

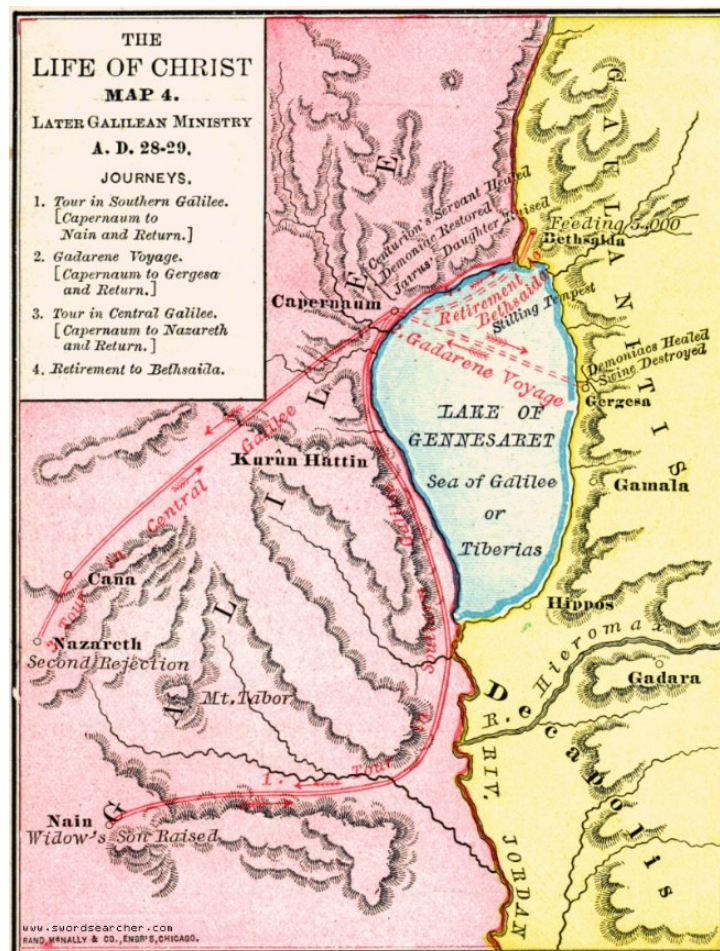
^a 1 Corinthians 7:39-40, not to remarry until death of original person.

Luke Chapter 16

16:19-31 *A Rich man and Poor man – story*

(102) ¹⁹ There was a **certain rich man**, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: ²⁰ And there was a **certain beggar named Lazarus**, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, ²¹ And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. ²² And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; ²³ And in Hades he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and sees Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. ²⁴ And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. ²⁵ But Abraham said, Son, remember that you in your lifetime receives your good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and you are tormented. ²⁶ And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that [would come] from there. ²⁷ Then he said, I pray you therefore, father, that you would send him to my father's house: ²⁸ For I have five brethren; that he may testify to them, lest they also come into this place of torment. ²⁹ Abraham says to him, **They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them.** ³⁰ And he said, No, father Abraham: but if one went to them from the dead, they will repent. ³¹ And he said unto him, If they **hear not** Moses and the prophets, neither will they be **persuaded**, though one rose from the dead.

^a Greek *αἴδης Hades*, "hades," or place of the dead. It corresponds with the word translated "hell," *שׁאוֹל she'ol*, has not the same meaning that we now attach to that word; its usual signification, among the Hebrews, was "the lower world, the region of departed spirits." 19-22a (story), 22b (reward), 22c-31 (punishment)



Luke Chapter 17

17:1-6 **Concerning Offenses from Anyone (1-2), Forgiveness of Saved (3-4), & Faith for Self (5-6)**

(103) ¹ Then said he to the **disciples**, It is impossible but that ^a offences will come: but woe through whom they come! ² It were better for him that a millstone were hanged around his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. ³ **Take heed to yourselves:** If your brother trespass against you, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. ⁴ And if he trespass against you seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to you, saying, I repent; you shall forgive him. ⁵ And the apostles said to the Lord, **Increase our faith.** ⁶ And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say to this sycamore tree, Be you plucked up by the root, and be you planted in the sea; and it should obey you.

^a Matthew 5:23-24 in context of 5:21-26 concerning prayer

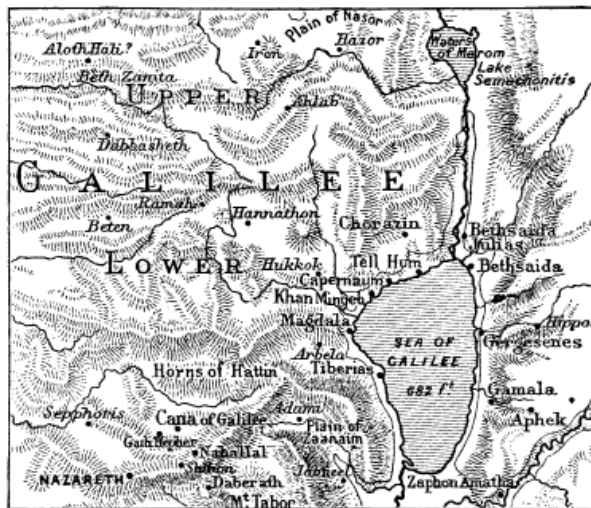
17:7-10 **Parable of the Servants Reasonable, Expected Service – parable 17**

(104) ⁷ But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say to him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to eat? ⁸ And will not rather say to him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, until I have ate and drank; and afterward you shall eat and drink? ⁹ Does he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I think not. ¹⁰ **So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are ^a unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.**

^a Unprofitable means that we cannot add to our expected duties. Verses 1-10 link to 11-19, leading to 20-37. This is the balance for the often quoted “well done, good and faithful servant” Matthew 25:21, 23

17:11-19 **10 Lepers Healed and 1 Gentile Made Whole**

(105) ¹¹ And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. ¹² And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: ¹³ And they lifted up [their] voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. ¹⁴ And when he saw them, he said to them, **Go show yourselves to the priests.** And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed. ¹⁵ And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, ¹⁶ And fell down on [his] face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. ¹⁷ And Jesus answering said, **Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?** ¹⁸ **There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.** ¹⁹ And he said unto him, **Arise, go your way: your faith has made you whole.**



MAP OF THE SEA OF GALILEE.

Luke Chapter 17

17:20-21 *The Return of Jesus Christ to Israel (Matthew 24)*

(106) ²⁰ And when he was demanded of the **Pharisees**, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, **The kingdom of God comes not with observation:** ²¹ Neither shall they say, Look here! or, look there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is among you. /KJV within/

17:22-37 *Judgment and Warning (Matthew 24)*

(107) ²² And he said to the **disciples**, **The days** will come, when ye shall desire to see **one of the days of the Son of man**, and ye shall not see [it]. ²³ And they shall say to you, See here; or, see there: go not after them, nor follow them. ²⁴ For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one [part] under heaven, shines to the other [part] under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be **in his day**. ²⁵ But first must he allow many things, and be rejected of this generation. ²⁶ And as it was in the **days of Noah**, so shall it be also in the **days of the Son of man**. ²⁷ They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, **until the day** that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. ²⁸ Likewise also as it was in the **days of Lot**; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built; ²⁹ But **the same day** that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. ³⁰ Even thus shall it be **in the day when the Son of man is revealed**. ³¹ **In that day**, he which shall be upon the housetop, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. ³² **Remember Lot's wife**. ³³ Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. ³⁴ I tell you, **in that night** there shall be two in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. ³⁵ Two shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ³⁶ Two shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ³⁷ And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said to them, Wheresoever the body is, there will the eagles be gathered together.



Luke Chapter 18

18:1-8 **Parable on Prayer, Contrasting a Judge and God – parable 18**

(108) ¹ And he spoke a parable to them, **that men ought always to pray, and not to faint;**
² Saying, **There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man:** ³ And there was a widow in that city; and she came to him, saying, **Avenge me of my adversary.** ⁴ And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, **Though I fear not God, nor regard man;** ⁵ Yet because this widow troubles me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. ⁶ And the Lord said, **Hear what the unjust judge says.** ⁷ **And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night to him, though he bear long with them?** ⁸ **I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man comes, shall he find faith on the earth?**

18:9-14 **Parable of the Pharisee and Tax Collector – parable 19**

(109) ⁹ And he spoke this parable to certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: ¹⁰ **Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican.** ¹¹ **The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank you, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.** ¹² **I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.** ¹³ **And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as [his] eyes to heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.** ¹⁴ **I tell you, this man went down to his house justified [rather] than the other: for everyone that exalts himself shall be abased; and he that humbles himself shall be exalted.**

18:15-17 **Blessing Children (wisdom)**

(110) ¹⁵ And they brought to him also infants, that he would touch them: but when [his] disciples saw [it], they rebuked them. ¹⁶ But Jesus called them, and said, **Allow little children to come to me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.** ¹⁷ **Verily I say to you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein.**

18:18-30 **The Young Rich Ruler's Sorrow (wisdom – salvation/sanctification)**

(111) ¹⁸ And a certain ruler asked him, saying, **Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?** ¹⁹ And Jesus said unto him, **Why call you me good? none is good, save one - God.** ²⁰ **You know the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honor your father and your mother.** ²¹ **And he said, All these I have kept from my youth up.** ²² **Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lack you one thing: sell all that you have, and distribute to the poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.** ²³ **And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich.** ²⁴ **And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!** ²⁵ **For it is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.** ²⁶ **And they that heard [it] said, Who then can be saved?** ²⁷ **And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God.** ²⁸ **Then Peter said, Look, we have left all, and followed you.** ²⁹ **And he said to them, Verily I say to you, There is no man that has left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,** ³⁰ **Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.**

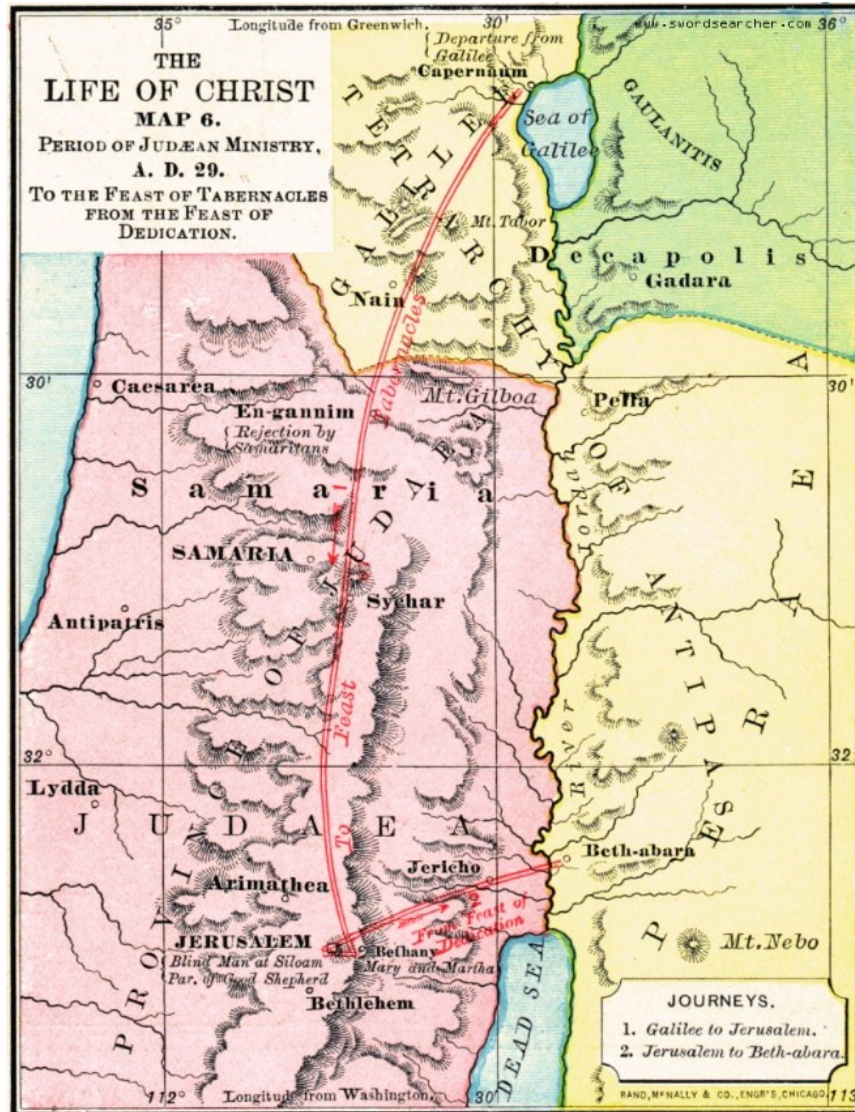
Luke Chapter 18

18:31-34 *Suffering Foretold and Disciples Lack of Understanding* (prophecy)

(112) ³¹ Then he took [to him] the twelve, and said to them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. ³² For he shall be delivered to the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on: ³³ And they shall scourge [him], and put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again. ³⁴ And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

18:35-43 *A Blind Man Healed*

(113) ³⁵ And it came to pass, that as he was come near to Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way side begging: ³⁶ And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant. ³⁷ And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passes by. ³⁸ And he cried, saying, Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me. ³⁹ And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more; Son of David, have mercy on me. ⁴⁰ And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought to him: and when he was come near, he asked him, ⁴¹ Saying, What will you that I shall do to you? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. ⁴² And Jesus said unto him, Receive your sight: your faith has saved you. ⁴³ And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw [it], gave praise to God.



Luke Chapter 19

19:1-10 **Zacchaeus Meets Jesus** (*wisdom – salvation, moments of enlightenment*)

(114) ¹ And [Jesus] entered and passed through Jericho. ² And, behold, [there was] a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. ³ And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. ⁴ And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that [way]. ⁵ And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, **Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for today I must abide at your house.** ⁶ And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. ⁷ And when they saw [it], they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. ⁸ And Zacchaeus stood, and said to the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken anything from any man by false accusation, I restore [him] fourfold. ⁹ And Jesus said unto him, **This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.** ¹⁰ **For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.**

19:11-27 **Parable of the 10 Pounds – parable 20**
(*rewards, lack of reward, and punishment*)

(115) ¹¹ And as they heard these things, he added and spoke a parable, because he was near to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear. ¹² He said therefore, **A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return.** ¹³ **And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said to them, **Occupy till I come.**** ¹⁴ **But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this [man] to reign over us.** ¹⁵ **And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called to him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.** ¹⁶ **Then came the first, saying, Lord, your pound has gained ten pounds.** ¹⁷ **And he said unto him, Well, you good servant: because you have been faithful in a very little, have you authority over ten cities.** ¹⁸ **And the second came, saying, Lord, your pound has gained five pounds.** ¹⁹ **And he said likewise to him, Be you also over five cities.** ²⁰ **And another came, saying, Lord, behold, [here is] your pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin:** ²¹ **For I feared you, because you are an austere man: you take up that you lay not down, and reaps that you did not sow.** ²² **And he says to him, Out of your own mouth will I judge you, [you] wicked servant. You knew that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:** ²³ **Wherefore then gave not you my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required my own with usury?** ²⁴ **And he said to them that stood by, **Take from him the pound, and give [it] to him that has ten pounds.**** ²⁵ **(And they said unto him, Lord, he has ten pounds.)** ²⁶ **For I say to you, That to everyone which has shall be given; and from him that has not, even that he has shall be taken away from him.** ²⁷ **But those my enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring here, and slay them before me.**

Gospel of salvation, vs 12-15

12: far country = heaven (after the cross, "It is finished"), resurrection and return to earth. Nobleman = Jesus Christ.
13: ten servants to occupy until He comes (be watchful and ready). Not offensive, but rest with alertness and zeal.
Ten = perfection or fullness of divine order. 10 generations to flood. 10 plagues. 10 commandments. Ps 119 has 10 terms for His Word: Way, Testimony, Precepts, Commandments, Laying, Law, Judgment, Righteousness, Statutes, Word. 10 toes or horns of prophecy in Daniel and Revelation. 10 virgins - represent the whole of the nation of Israel (as distinct from the elect remnant, which is the Bride). Matthew 25:1-13.

14: His citizens = Jews rejected Him

15: rapture of the called-out ones

Judgment Seat of Christ, vs 16-26

16-17: 1 + 9 = 10 pounds (abundant grace benefited)

18-19: 1 + 4 = 5 pounds (grace benefited)

20-21: 1 + 0 = 1 pound (unfruitful)

22-26: Punishment to unfruitful believer (1 Corinthians 3:12-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10)

27: Condemnation to unsaved, vs 14

Luke Chapter 19

19:28-40 *The Triumphant Entry into Jerusalem*

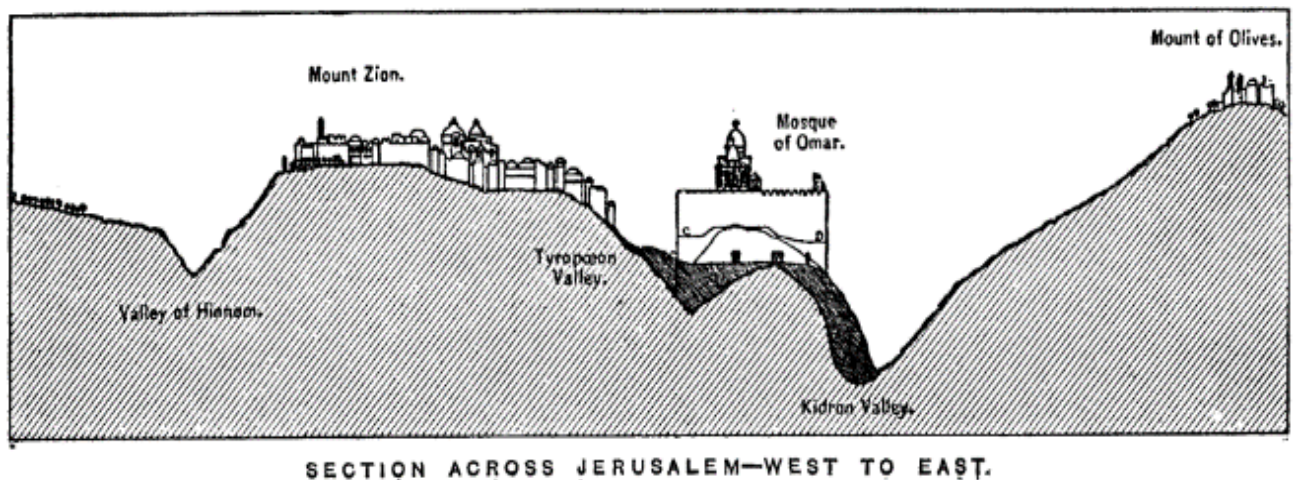
(116) ²⁸ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem. ²⁹ And it came to pass, when he was come near to Bethlehem and Bethany, at the mount called [the mount] of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, ³⁰ Saying, *Go ye into the village over against [you]; in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring [him hither].* ³¹ *And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose [him]? thus shall ye say to him, Because the Lord has need of him.* ³² And they that were sent went their way, and found even as he had said to them. ³³ And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said to them, Why loose ye the colt? ³⁴ And they said, The Lord has need of him. ³⁵ And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon. ³⁶ And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way. ³⁷ And when he was come near, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen; ³⁸ Saying, Blessed [be] the King that comes in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest. ³⁹ And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke your disciples. ⁴⁰ And he answered and said to them, *I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.*

19:41-44 *Sorrow over Jerusalem Know the Time*

(117) ⁴¹ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, ⁴² Saying, *If you had known, even you, at least in this your day, the things [which belong] to your peace! but now they are hid from your eyes.* ⁴³ *For the days shall come upon you, that your enemies shall cast a trench about you, and compass you round, and keep you in on every side,* ⁴⁴ *And shall lay you even with the ground, and your children within you; and they shall not leave in you one stone upon another; because you knew not the time of your visitation.*

19:45-48 *Cleansing of the Temple*

(118) ⁴⁵ And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought; ⁴⁶ Saying to them, *It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves.* ⁴⁷ And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the chief of the people sought to destroy him, ⁴⁸ And could not find what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.



Luke Chapter 20

20:1-8 Controversy Over Authority

(119) ¹ And it came to pass, [that] on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon [him] with the elders, ² And spoke to him, saying, Tell us, by what authority do you these things? or who is he that gave you this authority? ³ And he answered and said to them, I will also ask you one thing; and answer me: ⁴ **The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men?** ⁵ And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not? ⁶ But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a prophet. ⁷ And they answered, that they could not tell whence [it was]. ⁸ And Jesus said to them, **Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.**

20:9-18 Parable of the Wicked Tenant Farmer

(120) ⁹ Then began he to speak to the people this parable; **A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time.** ¹⁰ And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent [him] away empty. ¹¹ And again he sent another servant: and they beat him also, and entreated [him] shamefully, and sent [him] away empty. ¹² And again he sent a third: and they wounded him also, and cast [him] out. ¹³ Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence [him] when they see him. ¹⁴ But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. ¹⁵ So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed [him]. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do to them? ¹⁶ He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard [it], they said, God forbid. ¹⁷ And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? ¹⁸ Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

20:19-26 Question of Tribute to Caesar

(121) ¹⁹ And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them. ²⁰ And they watched [him], and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him to the power and authority of the governor. ²¹ And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that you say and teach rightly, neither accept you the person [of any], but teach the way of God truly: ²² Is it lawful for us to give tax to Caesar, or no? ²³ But he perceived their craftiness, and said to them, **Why tempt ye me?** ²⁴ **Show me a penny. Whose image and superscription has it?** They answered and said, Caesar's. ²⁵ And he said to them, **Render therefore to Caesar the things which be Caesar's, and to God the things which be God's.** ²⁶ And they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marveled at his answer, and held their peace.

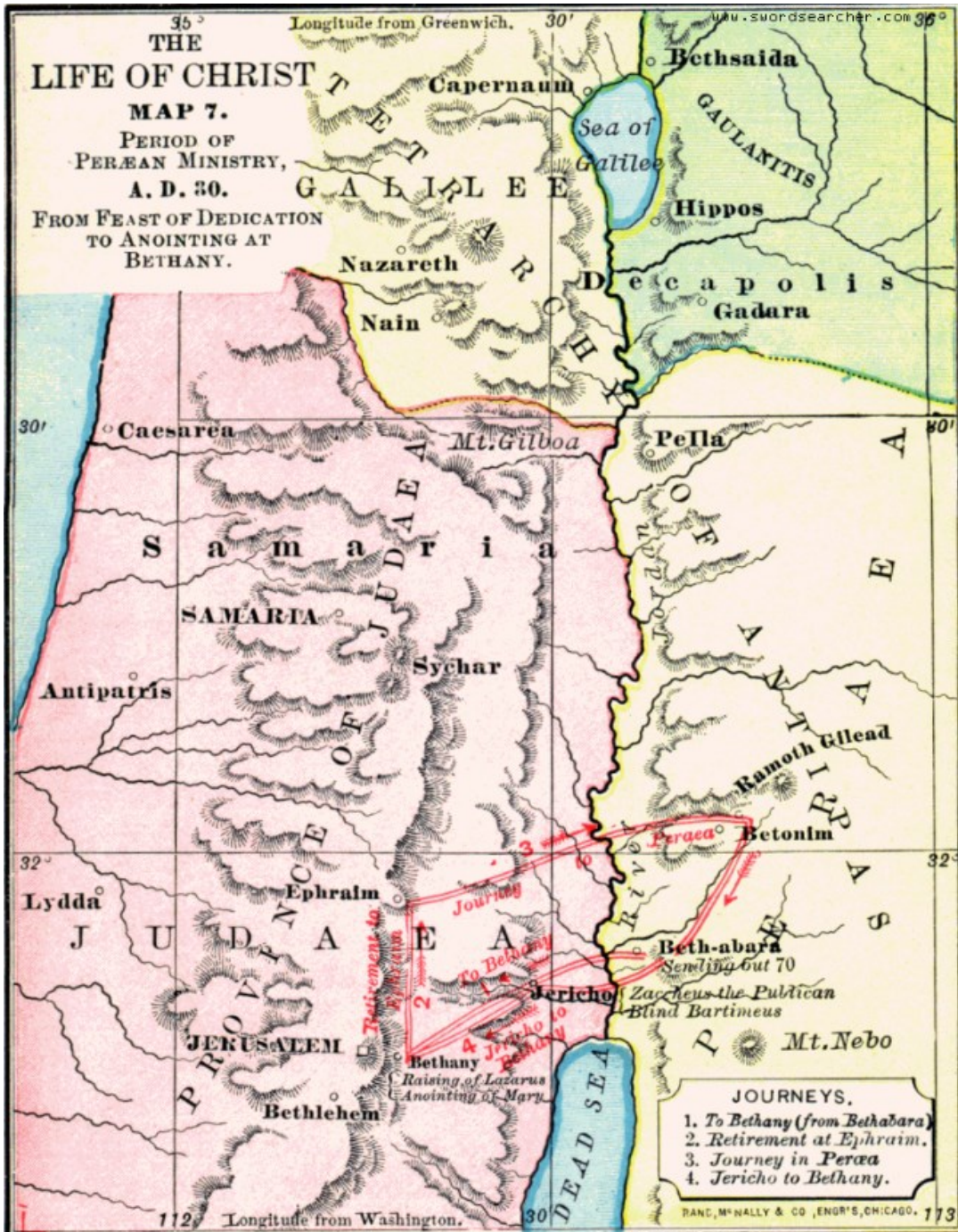
20:27-38 Sadducees ask about the Resurrection

(122) ²⁷ Then came to [him] certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection; and they asked him, ²⁸ Saying, Master, Moses wrote to us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed to his brother. ²⁹ There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children. ³⁰ And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. ³¹ And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children, and died. ³² Last of all the woman died also. ³³ Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife. ³⁴ And Jesus answering said to them, **The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:** ³⁵ **But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage:** ³⁶ **Neither can they die anymore: for they are equal to the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.** ³⁷ Now that the dead are raised, even Moses showed at the bush, when he calls the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. ³⁸ For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live to him.

Luke Chapter 20

20:39-47 **The Scribes ask how Christ is David's son** (Psalm 110, Melchizedik)

(123) ³⁹ Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, you have well said. ⁴⁰ And after that they dare not ask him any [question at all]. ⁴¹ And he said to them, **How say they that Christ is David's son?** ⁴² **And David himself says in the book of Psalms, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit you on my right hand,** ⁴³ **Till I make your enemies your footstool.** ⁴⁴ David therefore calls him Lord, how is he then his son? ⁴⁵ Then in the audience of all the people he said to his disciples, ⁴⁶ Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts; ⁴⁷ Which devour widows' houses, and for a show make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.



Luke Chapter 21

21:1-4 *The Poor Widow's Offering*

(124) ¹ And he looked up, and saw the rich casting their gifts into the treasury. ² And he saw also a certain poor widow casting therein two mites. ³ And he said, **Of a truth I say to you, that this poor widow has cast in more than they all:** ⁴ For all these have of their abundance cast in to the offerings of God: but she of her poverty has cast in all the living that she had.

21:5-28 *Teaching about the Destruction of the Temple, hate, patience, & Times of the Gentiles*

(125) ⁵ And as some spoke of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and gifts, he said, ⁶ **[As for] these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.** ⁷ And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what sign [will there be] when these things shall come to pass? ⁸ And he said, **Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am [Christ]; and the time draws near: go ye not therefore after them.** ⁹ But when ye shall hear of wars and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to pass; but the end is not by and by. ¹⁰ Then said he to them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: ¹¹ And great earthquakes shall be in diverse places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights and great signs shall there be from heaven.

(126) ¹² But ^a **before all these**, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute [you], delivering [you] up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my name's sake. ¹³ And it shall turn to you for a testimony. ¹⁴ Settle [it] therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: ¹⁵ For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to oppose nor resist. ¹⁶ And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and [some] of you they will cause to be put to death. ¹⁷ And ye shall be hated of many for my name's sake. ¹⁸ But there shall not a hair of your head perish. ¹⁹ In your patience possess ye your souls.

^a Luke is speaking to gentile believers. Foretelling the fall of Jerusalem in 70 AD.. Addressing the first generation of believers. Luke does not mention the Great Tribulation.

(127) ²⁰ And when ye shall see **Jerusalem compassed with armies**, then know that the desolation thereof is near. ²¹ Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it **depart** out; and let not them that are in the countries **enter** thereinto. ²² For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. ²³ But woe to them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. ²⁴ And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and **Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.** ²⁵ And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; ²⁶ Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. ²⁷ And then they will see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. ²⁸ And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draws near.

21:29-38 *Parable of the Fig Tree, and all the Trees*

(128) ²⁹ And he spoke to them a parable; **Behold the fig tree, and all the trees**; ³⁰ When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now near at hand. ³¹ So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is near at hand. ³² Verily I say to you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. ³³ Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

(129) ³⁴ And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and [so] that day come upon you unawares. ³⁵ For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. ³⁶ Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the **Son of man.** ³⁷ And in the **day time he was teaching in the temple; and at night he went out**, and abode in the mount that is called [the mount] of Olives. ³⁸ And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

Luke Chapter 22

22:1-6 The Plot to Kill Jesus

(130) ¹ Now the feast of unleavened bread drew near, which is called the Passover. ² And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people. ³ Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. ⁴ And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him to them. ⁵ And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money. ⁶ And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him to them in the absence of the multitude.

22:7-13 Preparations for the Passover Meal

(131) ⁷ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed. ⁸ And he sent Peter and John, saying, **Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.** ⁹ And they said unto him, Where will you that we prepare? ¹⁰ And he said to them, **Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house where he enters in.** ¹¹ **And ye shall say to the goodman of the house, The Master says to you, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples?** ¹² **And he shall show you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.** ¹³ And they went, and found as he had said to them: and they made ready the passover.

22:14-23 In the Upper Room with the 12 Apostles (the last night)

(132) ¹⁴ And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. ¹⁵ And he said to them, **with desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I allow:** ¹⁶ **For I say to you, I will not anymore eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.** ¹⁷ **And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide [it] among yourselves:** ¹⁸ **For I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.** ¹⁹ **And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake [it], and gave to them, saying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.** ²⁰ **Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.** ²¹ **But, behold, the hand of him that betrays me is with me on the table.** ²² **And truly the Son of man goes, as it was determined: but woe to that man by whom he is betrayed!** ²³ And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

22:24-30 Strife among the Apostles of Who Should be the Greatest

(133) ²⁴ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the great. ²⁵ And he said to them, **The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors.** ²⁶ **But ye [shall] not [be] so: but he that is great among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that does serve.** ²⁷ **For whether is greater, he that sits at food, or he that serves? is not he that sits at food? but I am among you as he that serves.** ²⁸ **Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.** ²⁹ **And I appoint to you a kingdom, as my Father has appointed to me;** ³⁰ **That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.**

22:31-34 Announcement of Peter's Denial

(134) ³¹ And the Lord said, **Simon, Simon, behold, Satan has desired [to have] you, that he may sift [you] as wheat:** ³² **But I have prayed for you, that your faith fail not: and when you are converted, strengthen your brethren.** ³³ And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with you, both into prison, and to death. ³⁴ And he said, **I tell you, Peter, the rooster shall not crow this day, before that you shall thrice deny that you know me.**

22:35-38 Preparing His Disciples for the Future

(135) ³⁵ And he said to them, **When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye anything?** And they said, Nothing. ³⁶ Then said he to them, **But now, he that has a purse, let him take [it], and likewise [his] scrip: and he that has no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.** ³⁷ For I say to you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me, **And he was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end.** ³⁸ And they said, Lord, **behold, ^a here are two swords.** And he said to them, It is enough.

^a Luke 9:1-10, 12 apostles sent out. Is 53:12, Hebrews 7:26. Before Pentecost – “here are 2 swords,” Lu 22:49-51.

Luke Chapter 22

22:39-46 Prayer and the Arrest Of Jesus at the Mount of Olives

(136) ³⁹ And he came out, and went, as he was custom, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. ⁴⁰ And when he was at the place, he said to them, **Pray that ye enter not into temptation.** ⁴¹ And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, ⁴² Saying, **Father, if you be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.** ⁴³ **And there appeared an angel to him from heaven, strengthening him.** ⁴⁴ And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground. ⁴⁵ And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow, ⁴⁶ And said to them, **Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.**

22:47-53 Judas' Betrayal

(137) ⁴⁷ And while he yet spoke, behold a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near to Jesus to kiss him. ⁴⁸ But Jesus said unto him, **Judas, betray you the Son of man with a kiss?** ⁴⁹ When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword? ⁵⁰ And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear. ⁵¹ And Jesus answered and said, **Allow ye thus far.** And he touched his ear, and healed him. ⁵² Then Jesus said to the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him, **Be ye come out, as against a thief, with swords and staves?** ⁵³ **When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me:** but this is your hour, and the authority of darkness.

The Trials of Jesus (22:54-23:25)

22:54-62 Peter's Denial of Jesus

(138) ⁵⁴ Then took they him, and led [him], and brought him into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar off. ⁵⁵ And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them. ⁵⁶ But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him. ⁵⁷ And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not. ⁵⁸ And after a little while another saw him, and said, You are also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not. ⁵⁹ And about the space of one hour after another confidently affirmed, saying, of a truth this [fellow] also was with him: for he is a Galilean. ⁶⁰ And Peter said, Man, I know not what you say. And immediately, while he yet spoke, the rooster crew. ⁶¹ **And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter.** And Peter remembered the Word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the rooster crew, you shall deny me thrice. ⁶² And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

22:63-65 The Mockery of the Soldiers

(139) ⁶³ And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote [him]. ⁶⁴ And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy, who is it that smote you? ⁶⁵ And many other things blasphemously spoke they against him.

22:66-71 Trail Before the Sanhedrin

(140) ⁶⁶ And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, saying, ⁶⁷ Are you the Christ? tell us. And he said to them, **If I tell you, ye will not believe:** ⁶⁸ **And if I also ask [you], ye will not answer me, nor let [me] go.** ⁶⁹ **Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.** ⁷⁰ Then said they all, Are you then the Son of God? And he said to them, **Ye say that I am.** ⁷¹ And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

Luke Chapter 23

23:1-7 The First Appearance before Pilate

(141) ¹ And the whole multitude of them arose, and led him to Pilate. ² And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this [fellow] perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tax to Caesar, saying that he himself is Christ a King. ³ And Pilate asked him, saying, Are you the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said, **You say [it]**. ⁴ Then said Pilate to the chief priests and [to] the people, I find no fault in this man. ⁵ And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirs up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place. ⁶ When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. ⁷ And as soon as he knew that he belonged to Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

23:8-12 Appearance Before Herod (Pilate and Herod become friends)

(142) ⁸ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long [season], because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. ⁹ Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. ¹⁰ And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him. ¹¹ And Herod with his men of war set him at nothing, and mocked [him], and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate. **¹² And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves.**

23:13-25 Second Appearance before Pilate

(143) ¹³ And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers and the people, ¹⁴ Said to them, Ye have brought this man to me, as one that perverts the people: and, behold, I, having examined [him] before you, have found no fault in this man concerning those things whereof ye accuse him: ¹⁵ No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, look, nothing worthy of death is done to him. ¹⁶ I will therefore chastise him, and release [him]. ¹⁷ (For of necessity he must release one to them at the feast.) ¹⁸ And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this [man], and release to us Barabbas: ¹⁹ (Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.) ²⁰ Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spoke again to them. ²¹ But they cried, saying, Crucify [him], crucify him. ²² And he said to them the third time, Why, what evil has he done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let [him] go. ²³ And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed. ²⁴ And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required. ²⁵ And he released to them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

23:26-31 Events on the Way to Golgotha (prophecy of the Great Tribulation)

(144) ²⁶ And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon, a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the cross, that he might bear [it] after Jesus. ²⁷ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him. ²⁸ But Jesus turning to them said, **Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but ^a weep for yourselves, and for your children.** ²⁹ **For, behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.** ³⁰ **Then they will begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.** ³¹ **For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?**

^a Same with David's prophecy to his first wife Michel, when she corrected him for dancing as a fool, with nakedness, before other women - as a king. An anti-type of Christ, in character of holiness.

23:32-38 Jesus Crucified Between Two Criminals

(145) ³² And there were also two other, malefactors, led with him to be put to death. ³³ And when they were come to the place, which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left. ³⁴ Then said Jesus, **Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.** And they parted his raiment, and cast lots. ³⁵ And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also with them derided [him], saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God. ³⁶ And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar, ³⁷ And saying, If you be the king of the Jews, save thyself. ³⁸ And a superscription also was written over him in letters of **Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.**

Luke Chapter 23

23:39-43 *The Criminal Believes*

(146) ³⁹ And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If you be Christ, save thyself and us. ⁴⁰ But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Do not you fear God, seeing you are in the same condemnation? ⁴¹ And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man has done nothing amiss. ⁴² And he said to Jesus, Lord, remember me when you come into your kingdom. ⁴³ And Jesus said unto him, **Verily I say to you, Today shall you be with me in paradise.**

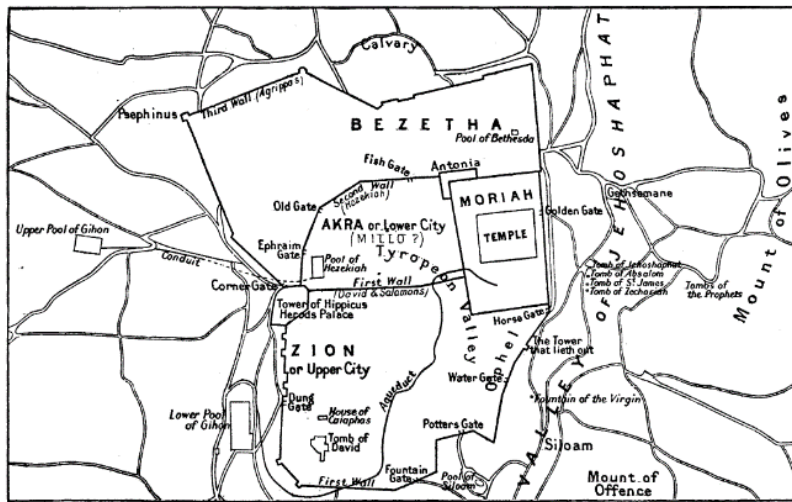
Note: The three die either (1) In sin, (2) From sin, (3) For sin

23:44-49 *Jesus' 7th Saying on the Cross*

(147) ⁴⁴ And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour. ⁴⁵ And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was tore in the midst. ⁴⁶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, **Father, into your hands I commend my spirit:** and having said thus, he gave up the Spirit. ⁴⁷ Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man. ⁴⁸ And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned. ⁴⁹ And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

23:50-56 *The Burial of Jesus in the tomb of Joseph of Arimathaea*

(148) ⁵⁰ And, behold, [there was] a man named Joseph, a counselor; [and he was] a good man, and a just: ⁵¹ (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them;) [he was] of Arimathaea, a city of the Jews: who also himself waited for the kingdom of God. ⁵² This [man] went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus. ⁵³ And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulcher that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid. ⁵⁴ And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on. ⁵⁵ And the women also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulcher, and how his body was laid. ⁵⁶ And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment.



Luke Chapter 24

24:1-12 *The Resurrection of Jesus*

(149) ¹ Now upon the first [day] of the week, very early in the morning, they came to the sepulcher, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain [others] with them. ² And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulcher. ³ And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. ⁴ And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: ⁵ And as they were afraid, and bowed down [their] faces to the earth, they said to them, **Why seek ye the living among the dead? ⁶ He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spoke to you when he was yet in Galilee, ⁷ Saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.** ⁸ And they remembered his words, ⁹ And returned from the sepulcher, and told all these things to the eleven, and to all the rest. ¹⁰ It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary [the mother] of James, and other [women that were] with them, which told these things to the apostles. ¹¹ And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not. ¹² Then arose Peter, and ran to the sepulcher; and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

24:13-35 *Appearance to Disciples Walking to Emmaus*

(150) ¹³ And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem [about] threescore furlongs. ¹⁴ And they talked together of all these things which had happened. ¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, while they communed [together] and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. ¹⁶ But their eyes were held that they should not know him. ¹⁷ And he said to them, **What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad?** ¹⁸ And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering said unto him, Are you only a stranger in Jerusalem, and has not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? ¹⁹ And he said to them, **What things?** And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: ²⁰ And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. ²¹ But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, today is the third day since these things were done. ²² Yes, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulcher; ²³ And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. ²⁴ And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulcher, and found [it] even so as the women had said: but him they saw not. ²⁵ Then he said to them, **O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: ²⁶ Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? ²⁷ And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself.** ²⁸ And they drew near to the village, where they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. ²⁹ But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. ³⁰ And it came to pass, as he sat at food with them, he took bread, and blessed [it], and brake, and gave to them. ³¹ And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. ³² And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the Scriptures? ³³ And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, ³⁴ Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and has appeared to Simon. ³⁵ And they told what things [were done] in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

Luke Chapter 24

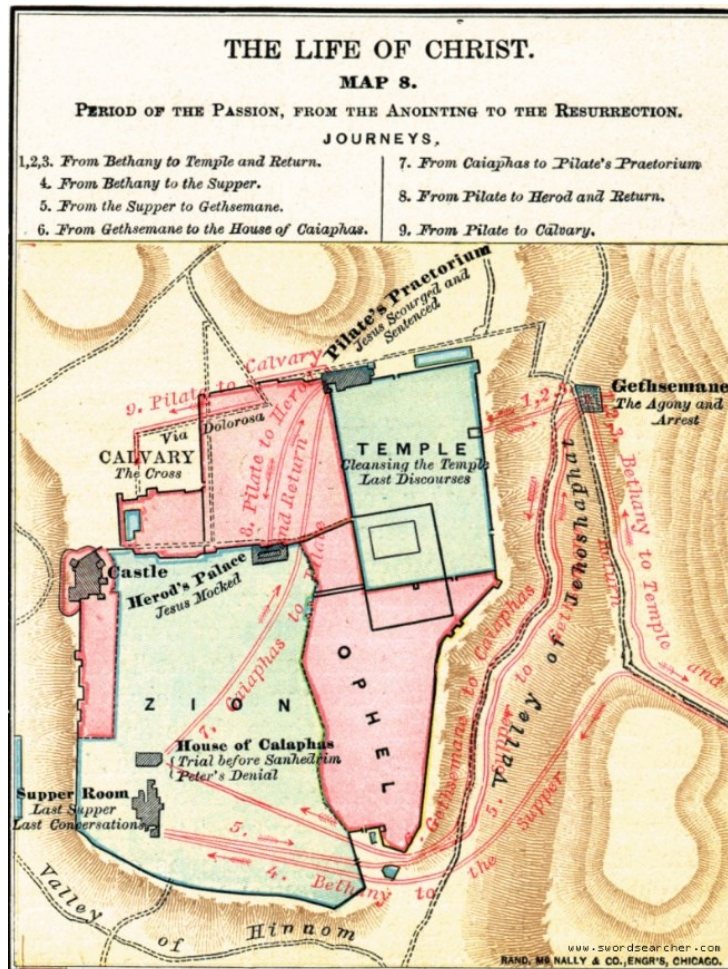
24:36-49 *Appearances to the Disciples in Jerusalem*

(151) ³⁶ And as they thus spoke, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and says to them, **Peace [be] to you.** ³⁷ But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. ³⁸ And he said to them, **Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?** ³⁹ Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. ⁴⁰ And when he had thus spoken, he showed them [his] hands and [his] feet. ⁴¹ And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said to them, **Have ye here any meat?** ⁴² And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of a honeycomb. ⁴³ And he took [it], and did eat before them.

(152) ⁴⁴ And he said to them, **These are the words which I spoke to you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and [in] the prophets, and [in] the psalms, concerning me.** ⁴⁵ Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, ⁴⁶ And said to them, **Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to allow, and to rise from the dead the third day:** ⁴⁷ **And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.** ⁴⁸ And ye are witnesses of these things. ⁴⁹ **And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.**

24:50-53 *The Ascension of Jesus at Bethany*

(153) ⁵⁰ And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. ⁵¹ And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. ⁵² And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy: ⁵³ And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.



John (21-112, 2 hr) 2021

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

Jesus' 3 + years: 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

Jesus' last days: 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21

12 Witnesses of the Son of God

Text: John 1-21. Ezekiel 1:10, Revelation 4:7 – a creature with 4 faces (face of an eagle)

Purpose: Doctrine, Reproof, Correction & Instruction (2 Timothy 3:16-17)

Key verse: John 20:31

Key Words: I am 27x. Verily, verily 25x

Chapters 1-12 First 3+ years of Jesus' work where he meets the needs of sinners (public).

"I am the" (8 - I am) (8 sign miracles)

- | | | | |
|----------|--------------------------------|--------------|---|
| 1) 1-5 | Word | 1:1 | Birth from before time, 1:1-18. |
| 2) | Forgiver of Sin | 1:29 | The Lamb of God takes away the sin of the world. |
| | | 2:1 | First miracle of Jesus foretells his marriage feast |
| | | | not to justify Christians drinking alcohol. |
| | | 3:3 | Nicodemus. Ye must be born again, 3:16. |
| | Living Water | 4:10 | Jesus witnesses to the woman at the well. |
| | | 4:24 | We must worship God in spirit and truth. |
| | | 4:46 | Rich son healed of a fever. Time & distance factors. |
| | | 5:14 | Poor man crippled 38 yrs. healed. Sin no more. |
| 3) 6 | Bread of Life | 6:19 | Jesus walks on water foretells glorified body. |
| | | 6:35 | Jesus provides for 5,000 with 5 loaves of bread. |
| | Rivers of Living Water | 7:38 | At the Feast of Tabernacles. Conflict escalates. |
| | | 8:11 | Go and sin no more - a woman caught in adultery. |
| 4) 7-9 | Light of the World | 8:12 | John 1:4-9, Genesis 1:8, Proverbs 119:105. |
| 5) | I am | 8:58 | Before Abraham was, I am. Exodus 3:14. |
| | | 9:25 | The blind man healed. Sin an issue. |
| 6) 10 | Door | 10:7 | Man has many doors, but God has only 1 door. |
| 7) | Good Shepherd | 10:11 | Many are hirelings who flee in time of trouble. |
| 8) 11-12 | Resurrection & Life | 11:25 | Lazarus raised after 4 days. Foretells our future. |
| | Seed of Life | 12:24 | A seed must die before it gives life.12:1, 6 days! |

Chapters 13-21 The last day of Jesus' work where he meets the need of his own (private).

- | | | | |
|-----------|-----------------------------|---------------------------|---|
| 9) 13-14 | Servant | 13:5 | An eternal example of humility as a leader. |
| | Way, Truth, and Life | 14:6 | Love one another. 4x in 13-15. |
| 10) 15 | Vine | 15:5 | Ye are the branches, abide in me, and I in you. |
| 11) 16-17 | Giver of the Holy Spirit | 15:26; 16:7, 13; 17:17-23 | prayer for future Believers. |
| 12) 18-19 | Whole Burnt Offering | 19:17 | Fulfilled law of Moses. It is finished. 19:30. |

20 The resurrection & appearances
21 Epilogue for the Apostle Peter

20:29 Mary Magdalene, Peter & John, disciples, Thomas.
21:11 Catch of 153 fish. Peter reinstated 3x.

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
John 2:1-10	Conversation	Need	Self-Sufficiency	Helplessness	1 st Miracle, Water-Wine
John 2:12-24		Right Anger	Money	House of Prayer	Beginning of Jesus Ministry
John 4:20-24	All			NT place of prayer	Worship in Spirit & truth
John 14:13-17	Supplication Conversation				In Jesus name Jesus prays (vs 16)
John 15:7	Supplication Conversation	God's Will	Not Abide in Christ	Abide in Christ	Individual(s)
John 15:16	Supplication	Bring forth fruit Our fruit remain			In Jesus name
John 16:23-24	Supplication	Our joy may be full			In Jesus name
John 16:26	Supplication	Need			In Jesus name
John 17:1-26	Supplication				Jesus prayer for future believers
John 18:1-9					

Notes: The efficacy of the blood of Christ to forgive sin – Is it totally sufficient for all time. Efficacy is acceptable or unacceptable depending on the evaluation and experience of a group of prescribers and users, backed up with empirical data.

John is 90% unique compared to the Gospel, according to Matthew, Mark, and Luke. John focuses on the Judean ministry, rather than the Galilean ministry. Written around 66 AD. John disciplined Polycarp, and Polycarp disciplined Irenaeus, an indicator of his way of being used.

John 7:1-10:21 Two days in the life of Jesus.

There is only 1 parable in John 10; and 8 "sign" miracles: The first 7 say, "Go to Jesus for all our needs," the last miracles says "Jesus provides for my needs." Belief is addressed 101x and know 92x, faith is 0x.

1. CHANGING WATER INTO WINE. (John 2:1-11). At Cana, Jesus turned the water into wine, a symbol of joy and of the New Covenant (Luke 22:20), where wine represents the blood of Messiah shed for sin.
2. Healing a Ruler's Son. (John 4:46-54) At Capernaum, Jesus heals the sick son of a royal official.
3. HEALING A DISABLED MAN. (John 5:1-16). In Jerusalem, after waiting at the pool of Bethesda 38 years. Israel wandered in the wilderness for a further 38 years after God had found them guilty of their sin (Deuteronomy 2:14). Zechariah 13:1, "In that day there shall be a fountain opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness."
4. FEEDING A LARGE CROWD. (John 6:5-14)
5. WALKING ON THE SEA. (John 6:16-21). On the Sea of Galilee at night after calming a storm.
6. HEALING THE MAN BORN BLIND. (John 9:1-41). In Jerusalem at the end of the feast of Tabernacles.
7. RAISING A DEAD MAN. (John 11:1-44). On the way to Jerusalem, after four days Lazarus was raised from the dead.
8. THE MIRACULOUS CATCH OF FISH. (John 21:1-14 and Luke 5:1-11) At the Sea of Galilee in the morning after fishing all night, their nets were empty. In the morning Jesus stood on the shore and instructed them to cast their nets again, this time on the other side of the boat. They caught 153 large fish. On bringing the catch to shore, they were invited to a breakfast of bread and fish that had already been prepared. In the first sign, Jesus provided wine. Here, at the lakeside, He provided bread. Bread and wine symbolically represent the body and blood of Christ (1 Cor. 10:16).

The Apostle John wrote 5 books in the New Testament, which can be summarized as:

- The gospel of John – Believe
- 1, II, III John – Be sure
- Revelation – Be ready

(1) ¹ In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ² The same was in the beginning with God. ³ All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made. ⁴ In Him was life; and the life was the light of men. ⁵ And the light shines in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

1:6-14 John the Baptist is Witness to the Light

(2) ⁶ There was a man sent from God, whose name was John. ⁷ The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all [men] through Him might **believe**. ⁸ He was not that Light, but [was sent] to bear witness of that Light. ⁹ [That] was the true Light, which lights every man that comes into the world. ¹⁰ He was in the world, and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not. ¹¹ He came to His own, and His own received Him not. ¹² **But as many as received Him, to them gave He authority to become the sons of God, [even] to them that believe on His name:** ¹³ Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. ¹⁴ And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

1:15-18 John the Baptist Declares Grace and Truth from Jesus Builds upon the Law from Moses

(3) ¹⁵ John bare witness of Him, and cried, saying, This was He of whom I spoke, He that comes after me is preferred before me: for He was before me. ¹⁶ And of His fullness have all we received, and grace for grace. ¹⁷ For the law was given by Moses, [but] grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. ¹⁸ No man has seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he has declared [Him].

1:19-28 John the Baptist Cries "make straight the way of the Lord"

(4) ¹⁹ And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who are you? ²⁰ And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. ²¹ And they asked him, What then? Are you Elijah? And he says, I am not. Are you that prophet? And he answered, No. ²² Then said they to him, Who are you? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What say you of thyself? ²³ He said, I [am] the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Isaiah. ²⁴ And they which were sent were of the Pharisees. ²⁵ And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptize you then, if you be not that Christ, nor Elijah, neither that prophet? ²⁶ John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there stands One among you, whom ye know not; ²⁷ He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose. ²⁸ These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

1:29-34 John the Baptist Reveals that Jesus is the Lamb of God

(5) ²⁹ The next day John sees Jesus coming to him, and says, Behold the Lamb of God, which takes away the sin of the world. ³⁰ This is He of whom I said, After me comes a man which is preferred before me: for He was before me. ³¹ And I knew Him not: but that He should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water. ³² And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon Him. ³³ And I knew Him not: but He that sent me to baptize with water, the same said to me, Upon whom you shall see the Spirit descending, and remaining on Him, the same is He which baptizes with the Holy Ghost. ³⁴ And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

1:35-42 John the Baptist Gives Andrew and Peter to the Lamb of God

(6) ³⁵ Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples; ³⁶ And looking upon Jesus as He walked, he says, Behold the Lamb of God! ³⁷ And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. ³⁸ Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and says to them, **What seek ye?** They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwell you? ³⁹ He says to them, **Come and see.** They came and saw where He dwelt, and abode with Him that day: for it was about the tenth hour. ⁴⁰ One of the two which heard John [speak], and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. ⁴¹ He first finds his own brother Simon, and says to him, We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. ⁴² And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, **You are Simon the son of Jona: you shall be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.**

John Chapter 1

1:43-51 **Philip and Nathanael Follow Jesus**

(7) ⁴³ The day following Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and finds Philip, and says to him, **Follow me.** ⁴⁴ Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. ⁴⁵ Philip finds Nathanael, and says to him, We have found Him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. ⁴⁶ And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip says to him, Come and see. ⁴⁷ Jesus saw Nathanael coming to Him, and said of him, **Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile!** ⁴⁸ Nathanael says to Him, Whence know you me? Jesus answered and said unto him, **Before that Philip called you, when you was under the fig tree, I saw you.** ⁴⁹ Nathanael answered and says to Him, Rabbi, you are the **Son of God; you are the King of Israel.** ⁵⁰ Jesus answered and said unto him, **Because I said unto you, I saw you under the fig tree, believe you? you shall see greater things than these.** ⁵¹ And He said to him, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.**

John Chapter 2

2:1-11 **The 1st Miracle of Changing water into Wine at the Marriage Feast in Cana of Galilee**

(8) ¹ And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: ² And both Jesus was called, and His disciples, to the marriage. ³ And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus said unto him, They have no wine. ⁴ Jesus said unto her, **Woman, what have I to do with you? My hour is not yet come.** ⁵ His mother said to the servants, Whatsoever he says to you, do [it]. ⁶ And there were set there six water pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. ⁷ Jesus says unto them, **Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.** ⁸ And he says unto them, **Draw out now, and bear to the governor of the feast.** And they bare [it]. ⁹ When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, ¹⁰ And says to him, Every man at the beginning does set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: [but] you have kept the good wine until now. ¹¹ This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth His glory; and **His disciples believed on him.**

2:12-17 **The Zeal of Jesus at His First Passover Feast as the Revealed Son of God (Psalm 69:9a)**

(9) ¹² After this He went down to Capernaum, He, and His mother, and His brethren, and His disciples: and they continued there not many days. ¹³ And the **Jews' passover was at hand**, and Jesus went up to **Jerusalem**, ¹⁴ And found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: ¹⁵ And when He had made a whip of small cords, He drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables; ¹⁶ And said unto them that sold doves, **Take these things hence; make not My Father's house a house of merchandise.** ¹⁷ And His disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of Your house has eaten Me up.

2:18-25 **Jesus Speaks of His Future Death and Resurrection in 3 Days at Passover**

(10) ¹⁸ Then answered the Jews and said unto Him, What sign show you to us, seeing that you do these things? ¹⁹ Jesus answered and said unto them, **Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.** ²⁰ Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and will You rear it up in three days? ²¹ But He spoke of the temple of His body. ²² When therefore He was risen from the dead, His disciples remembered that He had said this unto them; and they believed the Scripture, and the word which Jesus had said. ²³ Now when He was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast [day], **many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles** which he did. ²⁴ But Jesus did not commit Himself to them, because He knew all [men], ²⁵ And needed not that any should testify of man: for He knew what was in man.

John Chapter 3

3:1-21 **Nicodemus Secretly Seeks to Know Jesus Better** (water = the Word)

(11) ¹ There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: ² The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto Him, Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that you do, except God be with him. ³ Jesus answered and said unto him, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.** ⁴ Nicodemus says to Him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? ⁵ Jesus answered, **Verily, verily, I say to you, Except a man be born of water and [of] the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.** ⁶ That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is **born of the Spirit is spirit.** ⁷ Marvel not that I said to you, Ye must be born again. ⁸ The wind blows where it lists, and you hear the sound thereof, but **cannot tell whence it comes, and where it goes: so is everyone that is born of the Spirit.**

Jesus Tells Nicodemus he must Believe on the Son of Man

(12) ⁹ Nicodemus answered and said unto Him, How can these things be? ¹⁰ Jesus answered and said unto Him, **Are you a master of Israel, and know not these things?** ¹¹ **Verily, verily, I say unto you, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness.** ¹² **If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you [of] heavenly things?** ¹³ **And no man has ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, [even] the Son of man which is in heaven.**

(13) ¹⁴ **And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:** ¹⁵ **That whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life.** ¹⁶ **For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.** ¹⁷ **For God sent not His Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through Him might be saved.** ¹⁸ **He that believes on Him is not condemned: but he that believes not is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.** ¹⁹ **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.** ²⁰ **For everyone that practices evil hates the light, neither comes to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.** ²¹ **But he that does truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are worked in God.**

3:22-30 People are Going to John and Jesus - Christ Must Increase and John Decrease

(14) ²² After these things came Jesus and His disciples into the land of Judaea; and there He tarried with them, and baptized. ²³ And John also was baptizing in Aenon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. ²⁴ For John was not yet cast into prison. ²⁵ Then there arose a question between [some] of John's disciples and the Jews about purifying. ²⁶ And they came to John, and said unto him, Rabbi, He that was with you beyond Jordan, to whom you bare witness, behold, the same baptize, and all [men] come to him. ²⁷ John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. ²⁸ Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before Him. ²⁹ He that has the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which stands and hears Him, rejoices greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. ³⁰ **He must increase, but I decrease.**

Note: RV 1960 ,pero que yo mengue. YLT ,and me to become less. Most other translations keep

3:31-36 God Gave the Spirit without Measure to Jesus who is from Heaven and Above All

(15) ³¹ He that comes from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaks of the earth: He that comes from heaven is above all. ³² And what He has seen and heard, that He testifies; and no man receives His testimony. ³³ He that has received His testimony has set to **his seal** that God is true. ³⁴ For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God: for God gives not the Spirit by measure [to him]. ³⁵ The Father loves the Son, and has given all things into His hand. ³⁶ He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abides on him.

John Chapter 4 4:1-42 The "I AM" Witness (4:26, the Samaritan woman at the well)

4:1-3 **Background** (*Jesus departs from Jerusalem to Galilee through Samaria*)

(16)¹ When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, ² (Though Jesus Himself baptized not, but His disciples,) ³ He left Judaea, and departed again into Galilee.

Note: This is after a few months of ministry. Compare with Nicodemus in John 3.

4:4-6 **Divine Encounter #1:** *The Right Time and the Right Place and the Right Person*

⁴ And He must needs go through Samaria. ⁵ Then He comes to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. ⁶ Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with [his] journey, sat thus on the well: [and] it was about the sixth hour.

Note: Sychar is Shechem, one of the capitals of Samaria in the divided kingdom of Israel. Is this encounter human freewill or divine providence? The sixth hour is 12am Roman time.

4:7-9 **Relate** (*across race, gender, religious, and cultural barriers*)

(17)⁷ There comes a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus said unto her, **Give Me to drink.** ⁸ (For His disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.) ⁹ Then said the woman of Samaria unto Him, How is it that You, being a Jew, ask drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans.

Note: Jesus begins and ends the conversation speaking 7x and the woman 6x.

4:10-15 **Create** (*interest comparing natural water and spiritual water*)

¹⁰ Jesus answered and said unto her, **If you knew the gift of God, and who it is that said unto you, Give Me to drink; you would have asked Him, and He would have given you living water.** ¹¹ The woman said unto Him, Sir, You have nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from where then have You that living water? ¹² Are You greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? ¹³ Jesus answered and said unto her, **Whosoever drinks of this water shall thirst again: ¹⁴ But whosoever drinks of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.** ¹⁵ The woman said unto Him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come here to draw.

4:16-20 **Convict** (*the sin sick – by whose stripes ye were healed, 1 Peter 2:24*)

(18)¹⁶ Jesus said unto her, **Go, call your husband, and come here.** ¹⁷ The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, **You have well said, I have no husband: ¹⁸ For you have had five husbands; and he whom you now have is not your husband: in that you said truly.** ¹⁹ The woman said unto Him, Sir, I perceive that You are a prophet. ²⁰ Our fathers worshipped in this mountain /Gerizim/; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

4:21-26 **Reveal** (*false and true worship of God in Spirit and truth*)

²¹ Jesus said unto her, **Woman, believe Me, the hour comes, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. ²² Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. ²³ But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. ²⁴ God [is] a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship [Him] in spirit and in truth.** ²⁵ The woman said unto Him, I know that Messiah comes, which is called Christ: when He is come, He will tell us all things. ²⁶ Jesus said unto her, **I that speak unto you AM.**

John Chapter 4

Note: I Am is the title of the God of Israel first mentioned in Exodus 3:1-13. Moses is with his family in the desert at a mountain, an angel appears and God speaks to Moses at a burning bush that is not consumed. God tells Moses to take off his shoes because he is standing on holy ground, then replies to Moses question, who shall I say sent me? 3:14 And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

Ex 33:⁸ And it came to pass, when Moses went out unto the tabernacle, [that] all the people rose up, and stood every man [at] his tent door, and looked after Moses, until he was gone into the tabernacle.

4:27 His Disciples Return with Meat

(19)²⁷ And upon this came His disciples, and marveled that He talked with the woman: yet no man said, What do You seek? or, Why do You talk with her?

4:28-30 The Woman's Witness Adds Many Believers (also 39-42, 1 Thessalonians 1)

²⁸ The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and said unto the men, ²⁹ Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ? ³⁰ Then they went out of the city, and came unto Him.

4:31-38 Witnessing Discipleship (sow and reap, wages and fruit, Luke 10:2, 1 Corinthians 3:6-15)

(20)³¹ Meanwhile His disciples prayed Him, saying, Master, eat. ³² But He said unto them, **I have meat to eat that ye know not of.** ³³ Therefore said the disciples one to another, Has any man brought Him [anything] to eat? ³⁴ Jesus said unto them, **My meat is to do the will of Him that sent Me, and to finish His work.** ³⁵ **Say not ye, There are yet four months, and [then] comes harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest.** ³⁶ **And he that reaps receives wages, and gathers fruit unto life eternal: that both he that sows and he that reaps may rejoice together.** ³⁷ **And herein is that saying true, one sows, and another reaps.** ³⁸ **I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labor: other men labored, and ye are entered into their labors.**

Note: verse 34 "work" is ergon in Greek for the end goal, compared with "labor" in verse 38 for toil, weariness in body and mind from work. Works is occupation or trade..

4:39-42 Jesus' Witness Adds Many More Believers (1st evangelistic campaign - to the gentiles)

³⁹ And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on Him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did. ⁴⁰ So when the Samaritans were come unto Him, they besought Him that He would tarry with them: and He abode there two days. ⁴¹ And many more believed because of His own word; ⁴² And said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of your saying: for we have heard [Him] ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Savior of the world.

4:43-54 Divine Encounter #2 - Jesus Heals a Nobleman's Son - the 2nd Miracle at Cana of Galilee

(22)⁴³ Now after two days He departed thence, and went into Galilee. ⁴⁴ For Jesus Himself testified, that a prophet hath no honor in his own country. ⁴⁵ Then when He was come into Galilee, the Galileans received Him, having seen all the things that He did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast. ⁴⁶ So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where He made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. ⁴⁷ When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judaea into Galilee, he went to Him, and begged Him that He would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death. ⁴⁸ Then said Jesus unto him, **Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.** ⁴⁹ The nobleman says unto Him, Sir, come down ere my child die. ⁵⁰ Jesus says unto him, **Go your way; your son lives.** And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken to him, and he went his way. ⁵¹ And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told [him], saying, Your son lives.

John Chapter 4

⁵² Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. ⁵³ So the father knew that [it was] at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Your son lives: and himself believed, and his whole house. ⁵⁴ This is again the second miracle [that] Jesus did, when He was come out of Judaea into Galilee.

Q – Does healing have to be done with the laying on of hands?

A – No, this is a tradition developed from selecting certain verses from the Bible.

Application: I know that Jesus can heal, and the grace of God is sufficient if no healing. I know that lifestyle and genetic predisposition are also factors to consider.

John Chapter 5

Divine Encounter #3

5:1-9 ***A Lame Man is Made Whole at the Pool of Bethesda on the Sabbath*** (3rd of 8 miracle signs)

(23) ¹ After this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. ² Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep [market] a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. ³ In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. ⁴ For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. ⁵ And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. ⁶ When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time [in that case], He says unto him, **Will you be made whole?** ⁷ The impotent man answered Him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steps down before me. ⁸ Jesus says unto him, **Rise, take up your bed, and walk.** ⁹ And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

5:10-16 ***The Lame Man told to Sin no More, unless a Worse Thing come Upon Him***

(26) ¹⁰ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day: it is not lawful for you to carry [your] bed. ¹¹ He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said to me, Take up your bed, and walk. ¹² Then they asked him, What man is that which said to you, Take up your bed, and walk? ¹³ And he that was healed knew not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed Himself away, a multitude being in [that] place. ¹⁴ Afterward Jesus finds him in the temple, and said unto him, **Behold, you are made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come to you.** ¹⁵ The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole. ¹⁶ And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay Him, because He had done these things on the sabbath day.

Q1: Why did Jesus heal only one person who was lame for 38 years, with hundreds present? (5:5)

A: It took 38 years for the generation of soldiers to die due to their unbelief at Kadesh-barnea until the nation crossed the Brook of Zered. (Numbers 13-14, Deuteronomy 2:14, Psalm 95:7-11, 1 Corinthians 10:1-13, and Hebrews 3).

Q2: Does the Law of Moses permit doing good on the Sabbath.

A: Yes, but the Rabbi's Mishnah has 23 pages of commentary on how to rest during the sabbath and added to the law of Moses.

Q3: Why does Jesus say "sin no more" as connected with being "made whole?"

A: He is holy and desires we live holy lives. We do not know if this man believed or did not believe.

John Chapter 5

Jesus Claims to be Equal with His Father God and the Jews Desire to Kill Him

5:17-20 **1st – past miraculous works of Jesus**

(27)¹⁷ But Jesus answered them, **My Father works thus far, and I work /occupation-trade/.** ¹⁸ Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill Him, because He not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making Himself equal with God. ¹⁹ Then answered Jesus and said unto them, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He sees the Father do: for what things soever He does, these also does the Son likewise.** ²⁰ For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him all things that Himself does: and He will show Him greater works /ergon/ than these, that ye may marvel.

5:21-24 **2nd -present words of life the people hear**

²¹ For as the Father raises up the dead, and quickens them; even so the Son quickens whom He will. ²² For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son: ²³ That all [men] should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He that honors not the Son honors not the Father which has sent Him. ²⁴ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that hears My word, and believes on Him that sent Me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death to life.

5:25-30 **3rd – future words of judgment at the resurrection of life & resurrection of damnation**

(28)²⁵ Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. ²⁶ For as the Father has life in Himself; so has He given to the Son to have life in Himself; ²⁷ And has given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of Man. ²⁸ Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice, ²⁹ And shall come forth; they that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation. /Daniel 12:2, OT, NT, Trib unbelievers, Rev 20:7-15. "done evil" may be translated "practiced evil" with same effect. Only a faith in Jesus Christ makes the differene./ ³⁰ I can of My own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and My judgment is just; because I seek not My own will, but the will of the Father which has sent Me.

Note: 1 Cor 2 spiritual man judges all things. 1 Cor 6:2-3, shall judge this world and the fallen angels/

5:31-47 **The 5 Witnesses – from Least to Most Important**

5:31 **Witness 1 – Self** (alone this witness is not valid, Deuteronomy 17:6)

(29)³¹ If I bear witness of Myself, My testimony is not true.

5:32-35 **Witness 2 – Others** (the witness of John the Baptist, Luke 3:22 - temporary)

³² There is another that bears witness of Me; and I know that the testimony which he witnesses of Me is true. ³³ Ye sent to John, and he bare witness unto the truth. ³⁴ But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved. ³⁵ He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

John Chapter 5

5:36 **Witness 3 – Jesus** (the witness of Jesus' miracles - temporary)

³⁶ But I have greater witness than [that] of John: for the works /ergon/ which the Father has given Me to finish, the same works /ergon/ that I do, bear witness of Me, that the Father has sent Me.

5:37 **Witness 4 – God** (the witness of God's Spirit and Voice - eternal)

³⁷ And the Father Himself, which has sent Me, has borne witness of Me. Ye have neither heard His voice at any time, nor seen His shape. /His Spirit that descended as a dove at his baptism, later voice at the mount of transfiguration, Paul's on the Road to Damascus/

5:38-47 **Witness 5 – Scripture** (the witness of the Holy Scriptures - eternal)

(30) ³⁸ And ye have not His word abiding in you: for whom He has sent, Him ye believe not. ³⁹ Search the Scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which witness of Me. ⁴⁰ And ye will not come to Me, that ye might have life. ⁴¹ I receive not honor from men. ⁴² But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. ⁴³ I am come in My Father's name, and ye receive Me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. ⁴⁴ How can ye believe, which receive honor one of another, and seek not the honor that [comes] from God only? ⁴⁵ Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is [one] that accuses you, [even] Moses, in whom ye trust. ⁴⁶ For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed Me: for he wrote of Me. ⁴⁷ But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe My words?

Q1 – What is the most critical witness for believers today? (5:31-39)

A1 – In order of importance: (1) Scripture, (2) God, (3) Jesus, (4) Others, (5) Self.

A2 – The word witness in Greek is *martyría*. *Martyría* has two derivatives, *martureo* and *marturia*. In John 5:31-39 *martureo* is a verb used 7 times for the outward witness to hear and see. *Marturia* is a noun used 4 times for a judicial court witness in the sense of divine justice required in the law of Moses, Deuteronomy 17:6, translated as testimony.

Q2 – What other names do people honor come to (5:40-44)

A – In 132-135 AD, the second Jewish revolt from the Roman empire, Simon ben Kosevah claimed to be the Messiah of David's line. Matthew 24:24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very elect. False Christianity merges with secularism.

Q3 – How can the Jews believe in Moses but not in Jesus? (5:45-47)

A1 – The Jews understanding of the law of Moses was distorted by their own writings, additions, and commentaries.

A2 – Moses wrote of Jesus in types and shadows in the Tabernacle, the ceremonial laws, Deuteronomy 18:15, the six cities of refuge in Joshua 20, etc.

John Chapter 6

I am the Bread of Life (1-71, 6:35, 48, 51)

6:1-15 ***Fed the 5,000 at Sea of Galilee***

(Matthew >10-15K, 5 Barley Loaves & 2 Small Fish, only miracle in 4 gospels)

(31) ¹ After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is [the sea] of Tiberias. ² And a great multitude followed Him, because they saw His miracles which He did on them that were diseased.

³ And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there He sat with His disciples. ⁴ And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was near. ⁵ When Jesus then lifted up [His] eyes, and saw a great company come unto Him, he said unto **Philip**, **Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?** ⁶ And this He said to prove him: for

John Chapter 6

He Himself knew what He would do. ⁷ Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little. ⁸ One of His disciples, **Andrew**, Simon Peter's brother, said to Him, ⁹ There is a lad here, which has five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many? ¹⁰ And Jesus said, **Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.** ¹¹ And Jesus took the loaves; and when He had given thanks, He distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and

likewise of the fishes as much as they would. ¹² When they were filled, He said unto His disciples, **Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.** ¹³ Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above to them that had eaten. ¹⁴ Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world. ¹⁵ When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take Him by force, to make him a king, He departed again into a mountain Himself alone.

Note: The time setting. John 6 is when Jesus is at the height of popularity in Galilee, over 2 years into his 3 ½ year ministry; over a year after John 4 and around 6 months after John 5. This is near the time of the 3rd Passover. Herod the Tetrarch rules Galilee from Tiberias. He just killed John the Baptist and desires to see Jesus (Luke 9:7-9) and the 12 disciples just returned from their 1st missionary trip. Jesus healed everyone who came to him in the day at a location south of Bethsaida (Luke 9:10-12).

Q1 – What can the 12 baskets of bread left over signify?

A – The perfect government & provision of God. 12 apostles & the 12 children of Israel. (Rev 21:12-14)

Q2 - Who is the prophet that should come into the world? (John 6:14)

A - Jesus Christ spoke of himself (Duet 18:15) as a prophet, as the woman at the well. He died as a prophet, now is priest, and returns as king.

6:16-21 **Disciples Go on Boat to Capernaum and Jesus Walks on Water**

(32) ¹⁶ And when evening was [now] come, His disciples went down to the sea, ¹⁷ And entered into a boat, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them. ¹⁸ And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew. ¹⁹ So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing near to the boat: and they were afraid. ²⁰ But He said unto them, **It is I; be not afraid.** ²¹ Then they willingly received Him into the boat: and immediately the boat was at the land where they went.

Note: The dark was during the 4th watch or between 3 to 6 am, Jewish time. Here the sea is around 7 miles wide. They were going to Capernaum but landed in Gennesaret (Matthew 14:34-36).

6:22-29 **Believing that God Sent Jesus (whom God sealed) is More Important than Miracles**

(33) ²² The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was no other boat there, save that one where into His disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with His disciples into the boat, but [that] His disciples were gone away alone; ²³ (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias near to the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:)

²⁴ When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither His disciples, they also took boats, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus. ²⁵ And when they had found Him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when came you here? ²⁶ Jesus answered them and said, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek Me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.** ²⁷ **Labor not for the meat which perishes, but for that meat which endures to everlasting life, which**
John Chapter 6

the Son of Man shall give unto you: for Him has God the Father sealed. ²⁸ Then said they unto Him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? ²⁹ Jesus answered and said unto them, **This is the work of God, that ye believe on Him whom He has sent.**

Note: 6:27-30 work is ergon/Labor is ergazomai that includes trade. 6:27 sealed, Ephesian 1:13, 4:30.

6:30-40 **The Father Gave us the Bread of Life and Promise to Rise on the Last Day**

(34) ³⁰ They said therefore unto Him, What sign show You then, that we may see, and believe You? what do You work? ³¹ Our fathers did eat **manna** in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. ³² Then Jesus said unto them, **Verily, verily, I say to you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but My Father gives you the true bread from heaven.** ³³ For the bread of God is He which comes down from heaven, and gives life to the world. ³⁴ Then said they unto Him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. ³⁵ And Jesus said unto them, **I am the bread of life: he that comes to Me shall never hunger; and he that believes on Me shall never thirst.** ³⁶ But I said to you, That ye also have seen Me, and believe not. ³⁷ All that the Father gives Me shall come to Me; and him that comes to Me I will in no wise cast out. ³⁸ For I came down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him that sent Me. ³⁹ And this is the Father's will which has sent Me, that of all which He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. ⁴⁰ And this is the will of Him that sent Me, that everyone which sees the Son, and believes on Him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

Note: 6:31. It is written in Exodus 16:14-15 and Psalm 78:24-25.

6:41-50 ***Jesus is the Bread from Heaven - The Father Draws Us to Jesus and Teaches Us***

(35) ⁴¹ The Jews then murmured at Him, because He said, **I am the bread** which came down from heaven. ⁴² And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he says, I came down from heaven? ⁴³ Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, **Murmur not among yourselves.** ⁴⁴ No man can come to Me, except the Father which has sent Me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁴⁵ It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that has heard, and has learned of the Father, comes to Me. ⁴⁶ Not that any man has seen the Father, save He which is of God, He has seen the Father. ⁴⁷ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believes on Me has everlasting life. ⁴⁸ **I am that bread of life.** ⁴⁹ Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. ⁵⁰ This is the bread which comes down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

Note: 6:45. Taught of God refers to the church age and the millennium: Isaiah 54:13-14, Micah 4:1-4, Jeremiah 31:31-34, and 1 Thessalonians 4:9

6:51-59 ***Jesus Invites Us to Eat His Flesh and Drink His Blood so We can Dwell in Him and He can Dwell in Us***

(36) ⁵¹ I Am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give is My flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. ⁵² The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us [His] flesh to eat? ⁵³ Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say to you, Except ye eat the flesh of the **Son of Man**, and drink His blood, ye have no life in you. ⁵⁴ Whoso eats My flesh, and drinks My blood, has eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁵⁵ For My flesh is meat indeed, and My blood is drink indeed. ⁵⁶ He that eats My flesh, and drinks My blood, dwells in Me, and I in him. ⁵⁷ As the living Father has sent Me, and I live

John Chapter 6

by the Father: so he that eats Me, even he shall live by Me. ⁵⁸ This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eats of this bread shall live forever. ⁵⁹ These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

6:60-71 ***Jesus' Words of Truth Turns Many Disciples Away from Following Him***

(37) ⁶⁰ Many therefore of His disciples, when they had heard [this], said, This is a hard saying; who can hear it? ⁶¹ When Jesus knew in Himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, **Does this**

offend you? ⁶² [What] and if ye shall see the **Son of Man** ascend up where He was before? ⁶³ It is the Spirit that quickens; the flesh profits nothing: the words that I speak unto you, [they] are spirit, and [they] are life. ⁶⁴ But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray Him. ⁶⁵ And he said, **Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come to Me, except it were given to him of my Father.** ⁶⁶ From that [time] many of His disciples went back, and walked no more with Him. ⁶⁷ Then said Jesus to the twelve, **Will ye also go away?** ⁶⁸ Then **Simon Peter** answered Him, Lord, to whom shall we go? you have the words of eternal life. ⁶⁹ And we believe and are sure that You are that Christ, the Son of the Living God. ⁷⁰ Jesus answered them, **Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a demon?** ⁷¹ He spoke of **Judas Iscariot** [the son] of Simon: for he it was that should betray Him, being one of the twelve.

John Chapter 7

Two Days in the Life of Jesus (John 7:1-10:21)

7:1-9 Jesus Tells His Brothers that His Time to Reveal Himself is Not Yet

(38) ¹ After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for He would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill Him. ² Now the Jews' **feast of tabernacles** was at hand. ³ His brethren therefore said unto Him, Depart hence, and go into Judaea, that your disciples also may see the works that you do. ⁴ For there is no man [that] does anything in secret, and he himself seeks to be known openly. If you do these things, show thyself to the world. ⁵ For **neither did His brethren believe in Him.** ⁶ Then Jesus said unto them, **My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready.** ⁷ **The world cannot hate you; but Me it hates, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.** ⁸ **Go ye up to this feast: I go not up yet to this feast; for My time is not yet full come.** ⁹ When He had said these words unto them, He abode [still] in Galilee.

Q – Is there a known time for events in our lives?

A – Yes, as we follow Christ as the children of God, there is a divine timing for special events in our lives.

Application: I will have those close to me who project their will and understanding of God's upon me. They may be my family, carnal saints, or the unbeliever. I must wait for the king's orders as a good soldier of the faith and not go ahead of God's time. Every day, person and circumstance is a time to learn, coach and teach with increasing wisdom from above.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us give God the glory with the victories and sorrows associated with following the Lord Jesus Christ.

7:10-24 Jesus Goes Privately to the Feast of Tabernacles

(39) ¹⁰ But when His brethren were gone up, then went He also up to the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret. ¹¹ Then the Jews sought Him at the feast, and said, Where is He? ¹² And there was much murmuring among the people concerning Him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, No; but He deceives the people. ¹³ Howbeit no man spoke openly of Him for fear of the Jews. ¹⁴ Now about the midst

John Chapter 7

of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. ¹⁵ And the Jews marveled, saying, How knows this man letters, having never learned? ¹⁶ Jesus answered them, and said, **My doctrine is not Mine, but His that sent Me .** ¹⁷ **If any man will do His will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or [whether] I speak of Myself.** ¹⁸ **He that speaks of himself seeks his own glory: but He that seeks His glory that sent Him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in Him.** ¹⁹ **Did not Moses give you the law, and [yet] none of you keeps the law? Why go ye about to kill Me?** ²⁰ The people answered and said, You have a demon: who goes about to kill you? ²¹ Jesus answered and said unto them, **I have done one work, and ye all marvel.** ²² **Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the**

fathers;) and ye on the sabbath day circumcise a man. ²³ If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at Me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath day? ²⁴ Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

Q – Why are the Jews in error about healing on the Sabbath day?

A – Since the time Jesus healed the lame man on Saturday in John chapter 5, the Jews sought to kill Jesus. Religion without Godly character and righteousness is a leaking cistern. The spiritual blindness of religion causes man to maximize and get stuck on specific events and not continue on.

Application: I must keep my eyes on Christ alone. We worship in spirit and truth, and not going back to the bondage of religion regarding a specific day or place or hierarchy of religion. Galatians 2:16-21.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us give God the glory with the victories and sorrows associated with following the Lord Jesus Christ. Jesus Speaks Boldly at the Feast of Tabernacles

7:25-36 **Jesus Continues to Teach in the Temple at the Feast of Tabernacles**

(40) ²⁵ Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this He, whom they seek to kill? ²⁶ But, look, He speaks boldly, and they say nothing to Him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ? ²⁷ Howbeit we know this man whence He is: but when Christ comes, no man knows whence He is. ²⁸ Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, **Ye both know Me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of Myself, but He that sent Me is true, whom ye know not.** ²⁹ **But I know Him: for I am from Him, and He has sent Me.** ³⁰ Then they sought to take Him: but no man laid hands on Him, because His hour was not yet come. ³¹ And **many of the people believed on Him**, and said, When Christ comes, will He do more miracles than these which this [Man] has done? ³² The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning Him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take Him. ³³ Then said Jesus unto them, **Yet a little while am I with you, and [later] I go to Him that sent Me.** ³⁴ **Ye shall seek Me, and shall not find [Me]: and where I am, ye cannot come.** ³⁵ Then said the Jews among themselves, Where will He go, that we shall not find Him? will He go to the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? ³⁶ What [manner of] saying is this that He said, Ye shall seek Me, and shall not find [Me]: and where I am, ye cannot come?

Q – Why did the Jews not understand where Jesus came and where Jesus is going?

A – Because their minds were blinded. The same as all unbelievers today.

Application: I must be patient and show mercy on those who are blind to the truth of where Jesus came from and is going to. I must witness by lifestyle and words of truth boldly as Jesus did.

7:37-44 **If any Thirst, Go to Jesus & Receive the Holy Spirit** (from belly shall rivers of living water)

(41) ³⁷ In the last day, that great [day] of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, **If any man thirst, let him come unto Me, and drink.** ³⁸ **He that believes on Me, as the Scripture has said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.** ³⁹ (But this spoke he of the Spirit, which they that **believe on Him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet [given]; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.**)

⁴⁰ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the **Prophet.**

John Chapter 7

⁴¹ Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? ⁴² Has not the Scripture said, That Christ comes of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

⁴³ So there was a division among the people because of Him. ⁴⁴ And some of them would have taken Him; but no man laid hands on Him.

Q – What is the process to have rivers of living water come from within in?

A – To thirst after truth and righteousness, believe in Jesus and receive the Holy Spirit. When we thirst after truth and righteousness in this world and within ourselves.

Application: I know that there will be division because of who we think Jesus is, mostly from those who have never received the Holy Spirit but have a form of Godliness.

7:45-53 **Nicodemus Speaks to Defend Jesus** (2 years after John 3)

(42) ⁴⁵ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said to them, Why have ye not brought him? ⁴⁶ The officers answered, Never man spoke like this man. ⁴⁷ Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived? ⁴⁸ **Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him?** ⁴⁹ But this people who knows not the law are cursed. ⁵⁰ **Nicodemus says to them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,) ⁵¹ Does our law judge [any] man, before it hear him, and know what he does? ⁵² They answered and said unto him, Are you also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee arises no prophet. ⁵³ And every man went to his own house.**

Q – Why do the religious Pharisees refer in error to Old Testament Scripture? (7:52)

A – Because due to their higher education, position, and pride, the religious leaders do not know the Holy

Scriptures in content or in context. The prophet Jonah is referred to in 2 Kings 14:25, and the prophet Jesus Christ is referred to in Isaiah 9:1.

Application: I must know the content of the Bible alone before I can understand the context and interpretation. Then I can apply the Bible to my personal life by faith in the living God.

John Chapter 8

I Am the Light of the World (8:12, 9:5)

8:1-11 **Woman Caught in Adultery is Told to Sin No More** (the scribes and pharisees, 1-29)

(43) ¹ Jesus went unto the mount of Olives. ² And early in the morning He came again into the temple, and all the people came unto Him; and He sat down, and taught them. ³ And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto Him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, ⁴ They say unto Him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. ⁵ Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what say You? ⁶ This they said, tempting Him, that they might have to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down, and with [His] finger wrote on the ground, [as though He heard them not]. ⁷ So when they continued asking Him, He lifted up Himself, and said unto them, **He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.** ⁸ And again He stooped down, and wrote on the ground. ⁹ And they which heard [it], being convicted by [their own] conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, [even] unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. ¹⁰ When Jesus had lifted up Himself, and saw none but the woman, He said unto her, **Woman, where are those your accusers? has no man condemned you?** ¹¹ She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, **Neither do I condemn you: go, and sin no more.** /Unknown if believer/

Q – What did Jesus write on the ground the first time, then the second time?

A – Something that spoke to the conscience of the scribes and pharisees. All have sinned except for Jesus

John Chapter 8

Christ. The woman may be named "The Unknown Believer" since the Scripture is silent if she repented and believed. I must be wise and bold with the religious & sinners. Did the woman obey? We do not know.

Note: 7:53-8:11 is included in the Textus Receptus and majority of the Greek manuscripts, as well as the Aethiopic, and the Arminian manuscripts. The internal and external evidence fit the culture at the time of Jesus and reactions in the early church. The pharisees and scribes not knowing the Scriptures (Lev 20:10, Deut 22:22, Ez 23:43-47) and the bill of divorce for minor reasons. Jesus's wisdom is clear. In error, many versions of the Bible omit or marginalize 7:53 to 8:11 as not inspired, and therefore removed.

8:12-20 **I Am the Light of the World**

(44) ¹² Then spoke Jesus again unto them, saying, **I AM the light of the world:** he that follows Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. ¹³ The Pharisees therefore said unto Him, You bear record of Yourself; Your record is not true. ¹⁴ Jesus answered and said unto them, **Though I bear record of Myself, [yet] My record is true: for I know whence I came, and where I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and where I go.** ¹⁵ Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. ¹⁶ And yet if I judge, My judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent Me. ¹⁷ It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. ¹⁸ I am one that bear witness of Myself, and the Father that sent Me bears witness of Me. ¹⁹ Then said they to Him, Where is Your Father? Jesus answered, **Ye neither know Me, nor My Father: if ye had known Me, ye should have known My Father also.** ²⁰ These Words spoke Jesus in the treasury, as He taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on Him; for His hour was not yet come.

Notes: Record, testimony, and witness in the KJV are variations of the same Greek words "martyria" or "martyreo". Generally, the strength of the English language and the context drive the different English words. The true light in John 1:1-9 verses the angel of light in 1 Cor 11, true vs not true – record 8:14, judgment 8:16, Father 8:26, worshippers 4:22-23. Later in 8:32 the truth shall set you free; free from what? Slavery to sin.

8:21-29 **Ye Shall Die in Your Sins** (Jesus to the scribes and Pharisees)

(45) ²¹ Then said Jesus again to them, **I go My way, and ye shall seek Me, and shall die in your sins: where I go, ye cannot come.** ²² Then said the Jews, Will He kill Himself? because He says, Where I go, ye cannot come. ²³ And He said unto them, **Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world.** ²⁴ I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I AM, ye shall die in your sins. ²⁵ Then said they unto Him, Who are You? And Jesus said unto them, **Even [the same] that I said unto you from the beginning.** ²⁶ I have many things to say and to judge of you: but He that sent Me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of Him. ²⁷ They understood not that he spoke to them of the Father. ²⁸ Then said Jesus unto them, **When ye have lifted up the Son of Man, then shall ye know that I AM, and [that] I do nothing of Myself; but as My Father has taught Me, I speak these things.** ²⁹ And He that sent Me is with Me: the Father has not left Me alone for I do always those things that please Him.

8:30-36 *The **Truth** shall make you **Free** from the Slavery of **Sin** /the Jews (31) Abraham's see (33)/*

(46) ³⁰ **As He spoke these Words, many believed on Him.** ³¹ Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on Him, **If ye continue in My Word, [then] are ye My disciples indeed;** ³² **And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.** ³³ They answered Him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how say You, Ye shall be made free? ³⁴ Jesus answered them, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin.** ³⁵ **And the servant abides not in the house forever: [but] the Son abides ever.** ³⁶ **If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.**

John Chapter 8

Q – Is everyone that commits sin a servant of sin? (the servant of sin abides not in the house of God the Father forever)

A – Yes, and the only way to be free from the slavery of sin is by believing in the words of the Lord Jesus Christ. The is an example of the false believer. Psalm 23:6.

Application: I know that that I am saved because I desire to please the Father, continue in His word, and am free from the penalty and power of sin. As Christ grows in me, I sin less and less. (Gal 1:6-9)

8:37-47 *Who is Your **Spiritual Father**, God or the **Devil**? /Abraham 37, 39, 40/*

(47) ³⁷ I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill Me, because My Word has no place in you.
³⁸ I speak that which I have seen with My Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.
³⁹ They answered and said unto Him, Abraham is our father. Jesus says unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. ⁴⁰ But now ye seek to kill Me, a man that has told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. ⁴¹ Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they unto him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, [even] God. ⁴² Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love Me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but He sent Me. ⁴³ Why do ye not understand My speech? [even] because ye cannot hear My word.
⁴⁴ Ye are of [your] father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. ⁴⁵ And because I tell [you] the truth, ye believe Me not.
⁴⁶ Which of you convinces Me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe Me? ⁴⁷ He that is of God hears God's Words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

Q – Does everyone have a spiritual father?

A – Yes, whether they realize it or not. The modern worldly culture cries out, you are judging me.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us stay meek and know everyone is a child of God or of the devil.

8:48-59 *The **Jews** Accuse Jesus of Having a **Demon***
/Jews 48, 52, 57. Abraham 52, 53, 56, 57, 58. so passed by 59/

(48) ⁴⁸ Then answered the Jews, and said unto Him, Say we not well that you are a Samaritan, and have a demon? ⁴⁹ Jesus answered, I have not a demon; but I honor My Father, and ye do dishonor Me. ⁵⁰ And I seek not My own glory: there is One that seeks and judges. ⁵¹ Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep My saying, he shall never see death. ⁵² Then said the Jews unto Him, Now we know that you have a demon. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and You say, If a man keep My saying, he shall never taste of death. ⁵³ Are you greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom make You Thyself? ⁵⁴ Jesus answered, If I honor Myself, My honor is nothing: it is My Father that honors Me; of whom ye say, that He is your God: ⁵⁵ Yet ye have not known Him; but I know Him: and if I should say, I know Him not, I shall be a liar like to you: but I know Him, and keep His saying. ⁵⁶ Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day: and he saw [it], and was glad /Hebrews 11:13/. ⁵⁷ Then said the Jews to Him, You are not yet fifty years old, and have You seen Abraham? ⁵⁸ Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am. ⁵⁹ Then took they up stones to cast at Him: but Jesus hid Himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

John Chapter 8

Father, a family relationship term is most used in the Gospel of John: 111 verses (Matthew:55 verses)

8:16 Judgment: Jesus and Father One
 8:18-19 Witness: Jesus and Father One
 8:28-29 Teach: Father and Jesus One
 8:54 Honor: Father and Jesus One

John Chapter 9

9:1-7 ***I am the Light of the World**, A Blind Man is Healed (witness 1 of 6)*

(49) ¹ And as [Jesus] passed by, he saw a man which was blind from [his] birth. ² And His disciples asked Him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? ³ Jesus answered, Neither has this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.
⁴ I must work the works of Him that sent Me, while it is day: the night comes, when no man can work.

⁵ As long as I am in the world, I AM the light of the world. ⁶ When He had thus spoken, He spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay, ⁷ And said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing. /known true believer/

Note: Work(s) is the Greek noun "ergon" which is God working in and through us, or the Greek verb "ergazomai" which is work as a trade that involves labor, toil, and weariness. Was the man blind from his parents' sin? No when referring to Ezekiel 18:20. Night is physical death of all bodies, in context speaking of Jesus' crucifixion. Hymn.

Q – What can be 3 wrong perspectives of the relationship of sin and illness by Jew, Gentile, and Christian? (John 9:2)

A1 – Jews, generational curse.

A2 – Gentiles, Babylonian, Assyrian, and Greek religions taught re-incarnation.

A3 – Christians, "Why Do Christians Shoot Their Wounded?" by Dwight L. Carlson.

Application: The disciple's culture, parents and teachers taught them about sin and suffering differently than Jesus taught them. Jesus is teaching a new way, which goes back to Job. Ezekiel 18:1-4, 10-20, Exodus 32:30-32. Jeremiah 31:30, Gal 6:5, Romans 14:4, 2 Corinthians 5:10, Revelation 2-3..

QT hint: Daily Scripture and prayer help us to not mix the surrounding culture into our belief and practice, which results in sin. God, Jesus, the Holy Spirit, and the Bible transcends cultures of all places and all time.

John Chapter 9

9:8-12 **Public** witness the Blind Man's testimony (witness 2 of 6) *I am 9:9*

(50) ⁸ The **neighbors** therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? ⁹ Some said, This is he: others [said], He is like him: [but] he said, I am [he]. ¹⁰ Therefore said they unto him, How were your eyes opened? ¹¹ He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed my eyes, and said to me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. ¹² Then said they to him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

9:13-17 **Pharisees** witness the Blind Man's testimony (witness 3 of 6) *A prophet 9:17*

¹³ **They brought to the Pharisees him** that before was blind. ¹⁴ And it was the sabbath day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. ¹⁵ Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. ¹⁶ Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keeps not the sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them. ¹⁷ They said to the blind man again, What say you of Him, that He has opened your eyes? He said, **He is a prophet.**

Note: He is a prophet. This 3rd I AM repeats the I AM as a prophet (John 4:19 woman, John 6:14 bread, and Light)

9:18-23 **Parents** witness their son's testimony (witness 4 of 6) *Jews 9:18, 22*

(51) ¹⁸ But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. ¹⁹ And they asked them, saying, Is this your

son, who ye say was born blind? how then does he now see? ²⁰ His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: ²¹ But by what means he now sees, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. ²² These [words] spoke his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that He was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. ²³ Therefore said his parents, he is of age; ask him.

9:24-34 **Personal** witness to the pharisees (witness 5 of 6) *Teach 9:33-34*

²⁴ Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. ²⁵ He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner [or no], I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. ²⁶ Then said they unto him again, What did He to you? how opened He your eyes? ²⁷ He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear [it] again? will ye also be His disciples? ²⁸ Then they reviled him, and said, You are His disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. ²⁹ We know that God spoke to Moses: [as for] this [fellow], we know not from where He is.

³⁰ The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvelous thing, that ye know not from whence He is, and [yet] He has opened mine eyes. ³¹ Now we know that God hears not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and does His will, him He hears. ³² Since the world began it was not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. ³³ If this Man were not of God, He could do nothing. ³⁴ They answered and said unto him, You was altogether born in sins, and do you teach us? And they cast him out.

Note: John 4 Ye know not what ye worship.

John Chapter 9

9:35-38 **Son of God's** witness the spiritual sight (witness 6 of 6) *Pharisees 9:40*

³⁵ Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said unto him, **Do you believe on the Son of God?** ³⁶ He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on Him? ³⁷ And Jesus said unto him, **You have both seen Him, and it is He that talks with you.** ³⁸ And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped Him. ³⁹ And Jesus said, **For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind.** ⁴⁰ And [some] of the Pharisees which were with Him heard these words, and said unto Him, Are we blind also? ⁴¹ Jesus said unto them, **If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remains.**

Q – Why does being blind relate to sin?

A – Because the person in their sin nature (Adam) is spiritually blind to their need of Jesus Christ to forgive their sin. Notice the word sin is singular, representing our sin nature from birth in Adam. All our sins are the result of this sin nature inherited from the first Adam (Romans 5:12). The blind man is a true believer.

Application: I know the time from when Jesus reveals himself to the time I believe is unique for myself and each person that is saved. Initial salvation is a process with the blind man, the same as the lame man that was healed at the temple earlier - Jesus went back to him later. Glory to God.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us have wisdom from above to interact with other people and say things they do not want to hear and remain faithful to God.

9:1-7 **Personal** witness of physical sight

(witness 1 of 6) *blind man 9:7*

9:8-12 **Public** witness the Blind Man's testimony

(witness 2 of 6) *received sight 9:11*

9:13-17 **Pharisees** witness the Blind Man's testimony (witness 3 of 6) *A prophet 9:17*
 9:18-23 **Parents** witness their son's testimony (witness 4 of 6) *Jews 9:18, 22*
 9:24-34 **Personal** witness to the pharisees (witness 5 of 6) *Teach 9:33-34*
 9:35-38 **Prophet's** witness of spiritual sight (witness 6 of 6) *Pharisees 9:40*

John 9 Chart – Contrasts Between Honor and Dishonor or Light and Darkness

Honor	Dishonor	1-2-3 John	Comments
Sin No More (8:11)	Die in your Sins (8:21, 8:24, 8:24)	1 John 1:7-10	John 5:14 sin no more – lame man healed. Believed ?
Light of life (8:12)	Walk in darkness (8:12)	1 John 1:5, 2:8-9	Walk is a verb that is future tense and active voice
Record true (8:13)	Record not true (8:13)	3 John 12	
Know from where come and where go (8:14)	Know not from where come or where go (8:14)	3 John 12	
Judgment true (8:16, 8:26, 8:50)	Judgment after the flesh (8:15)	1 John 4:17	
Not of this World (8:23)	Of this World (8:23)	1 John 2:15	
Father God (8:42, 54) Jesus has not a demon (8:49)	Father devil (8:44) Jesus has a demon (8:48)	1 John 2:18, 2:22, 4:3	2 John 3,4,9
Believe (9:35, 9:36, 9:38)	Believe not (8:24, 30-31, 45-46, 9:18)	1 John 5:10-13	Difference from believe and know
See (9:39-41)	Blind (9:39-41)		

John Chapter 10

10:1-10 I am the Door of the Sheep (2, 7, 8)

Sheep 9x, Door 5x, Voice-Hear-Call 5x, Thief 3x, Shepherd 1x, Porter 1x

(53) ¹ Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that enters not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbs up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. ² But he that enters in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. ³ To Him the porter opens; and the sheep hear his voice: He calls His own sheep by name, and leads them out. ⁴ And when He puts forth His own sheep, He goes before them, and the sheep follow Him: for they know His voice. ⁵ But a stranger they will not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. ⁶ This parable spoke Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which He spoke unto them. ⁷ Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I Am the Door of the Sheep. ⁸ All that ever came before Me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. ⁹ I Am the Door: by Me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. ¹⁰ The thief comes not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have [it] more abundantly.

Application: I am a sheep or child of God. I enjoy the liberty of going in (word & prayer) and out, and finding pasture (witness & works). I rejoice in eternal life and the abundant life. Them are Pharisees (9:40) scribes, Jews – all listen.

10:11-21 I am the Good Shepherd of the Sheep (11, 14)

Sheep 8x, Shepherd 5x, Give his life 6x, Voice 1x, Hireling 3x, Father 3x

(54) ¹¹ I Am the Good Shepherd: the Good Shepherd gives His life for the sheep. ¹² But he that is a hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, sees the wolf coming, and leaves the sheep, and flees: and the wolf catches them, and scatters the sheep. ¹³ The hireling flees, because he is a hireling, and cares not for the sheep. ¹⁴ I am the Good Shepherd, and know My [sheep], and am known

of Mine. ¹⁵ As the Father knows Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My life for the sheep. ¹⁶ And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear My voice; and there shall be one fold, [and] one shepherd. ¹⁷ Therefore does My Father love Me, because I lay down My life, that I might take it again. ¹⁸ No man takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to take it again. This commandment I have received of My Father. ¹⁹ There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings. ²⁰ And many of them said, He has a demon, and is mad; why hear ye him? ²¹ Others said, These are not the words of him that is demonized. Can a demon open the eyes of the blind?

Note: John 9 blind man healed on the Sabbath, John 5 lame man healed on the Sabbath

10:22-30 **My Sheep Hear My Voice and Follow Me (2-3 months later) 7:1-10:21 two days**

Sheep 6x, Father 4x, Eternal life-5x, Believe not 1x

(55) ²² Now it was at Jerusalem the ^a feast of the dedication, and it was winter. ²³ And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch. ²⁴ Then came the Jews round about Him, and said unto Him, How long do you make us to doubt? If you be the Christ, tell us plainly. ²⁵ Jesus answered them, **I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in My Father's name, they bear witness of Me.** ²⁶ But ye believe not, because ye are not of My sheep, as I said unto you. ²⁷ My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow me: ²⁸ And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall anyone pluck them out of My hand. ²⁹ My Father, which gave them Me, is greater than all; and no [one] is able to pluck them out of My Father's hand. ³⁰ I and [My] Father are one.

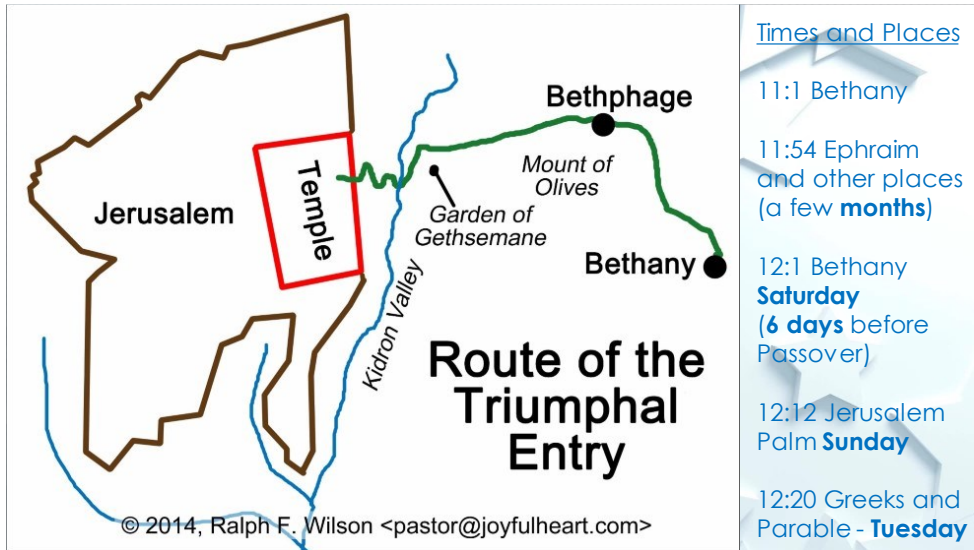
John Chapter 10

10:31-42 **The Jews Attempt to Stone Jesus (31, 39)**

(56) ³¹ Then the Jews took up stones again to stone Him. ³² Jesus answered them, **Many good works. I have shown you from My Father; for which of those works do ye stone Me?** ³³ The Jews answered Him, saying, For a good work we stone you not; but for blasphemy; and because that you, being a man, make thyself God. ³⁴ Jesus answered them, ^b **Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?** ³⁵ **If He called them gods, to whom the Word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken;** ³⁶ **Say ye of Him, whom the Father has sanctified, and sent into the world, You blaspheme; because I said, I am the Son of God?** ³⁷ **If I do not the works of My Father, believe Me not.** ³⁸ **But if I do, though ye believe not Me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in Me, and I in Him.** ³⁹ Therefore they sought again to take Him: but he escaped out of their hand, ⁴⁰ And went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John at first baptized; and there He abode. ⁴¹ And many resorted to Him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spoke of this man were true. ⁴² And many believed on Him there.

^a In 167 BC the temple and city were taken by Antiochus Epiphanes. . He slew 40K inhabitants and sold 40K more as slaves. In addition to this, he sacrificed a sow on the altar of burnt offerings, and a broth being made of the sow he sprinkled all over the temple. Three years later, in 164 BC a feast was instituted by Judas Maccabaeus. Jerusalem and the temple were recovered by Judas Maccabaeus, and the temple was *purified* with great pomp and solemnity. The ceremony of purification continued through eight days, during which Judas presented magnificent victims, and celebrated the praise of God with hymns and psalms (Josephus, Ant., b. xii. ch. 11). On this account it was called the feast of renovation or dedication. Josephus calls it the **feast of lights** because the city was illuminated, as expressive of joy. The feast began on **fifteenth day of December**. The festival continued for eight days, with continual demonstrations of joy. See Daniel 8:1-14 where the Greek Kingdom of Alexander the Great breaks into 4 kingdoms. Antiochus Epiphanes is a figure of the Antichrist during Daniel 9:24-27 and Revelation 6-18.

^b Verses 34-36. *In your law.* The word *law* here is used to include the Old Testament. Psalms 82:6-7, "I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the Most High. But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes. *I said.* The Psalmist said, or God said by the Psalmist. *Ye are gods.* This was said of *magistrates* on account of the dignity and honor of their office, and it shows that the word translated "god" in that place *might* be applied to man. Such a use of the word is, however, rare. See instances in Ex 7:1; 4:16.



John 10 Chart - Contrasts between a Thief among the Sheep and the Shepherd of the Sheep

10:1-10	A Thief among the Sheep	I AM the Door of the Sheep
1-6	Parable they understood not (10:6)	
1	Enters not by the door into the sheepfold (10:1)	Enters in by the door (10:2)
2	Climbs up some other way (10:1)	Shepherd of the sheep (10:2)
3	Thief and Robber (10:1)	Porter opens <i>the door</i> (10:3)
4		Sheep hear his voice (10:3)
5		He calls his own sheep by name (10:3)
6		He leads them out (10:3)
7		He puts forth his own sheep (10:4)
8		He goes before them (10:4)
9		His sheep follow him (10:4)
10		His sheep know his voice (10:4)
11		Stranger they will not follow (10:5)
12		Flee from him (10:5)
13		Know not the voice of strangers (10:5)
7-10	They did not Understand, so Jesus Clarified the Parable	
14		I AM the Door of the sheep (10:7)
17	All before me are thieves and robbers (10:8a)	Sheep did not hear them (10:8b)
18		I AM the Door (10:9)
19		By me, if any man enter, he shall be saved (10:9)
20		He shall go in and out, and find pasture (10:9)
21	Thief comes to steal, to kill, to destroy (10:10a)	Jesus comes for life, life more abundant (10:10b)
10:11-21	A Hireling and Wolf among the Sheep	I AM the Good Shepherd of the Sheep
		Good Shepherd gives his life for the sheep (10:11) Shepherd gives life, 6x in 10:11-18. LOVE

	Hireling , sees the wolf , leaves the sheep , wolf catches and scatters the sheep . Cares not for the sheep . (10:12-13)	I AM the Good Shepherd , and know my sheep, and am known of mine . Father knows me and I know Father (10:11-18). Jesus' words cause division among the Jews (10:19-21)
		Other sheep not of this fold, hear my voice. One fold and one shepherd. Therefore my Father loves me. I lay down my life and take it again (16-18)
10:22-30	Ye Believe not, because ye are Not My Sheep	My Sheep Hear my Voice and they Follow Me
	Ye believe not, because ye are not my sheep (10:26)	My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me (10:27)
		I give them eternal life. Never perish, none pluck from My hand. My Father which gave them Me is greater than all. None pluck from My Father's hand. (10:28-29) <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Sheep have eternal life, 5x SECURITY
		I and Father are one (10:30)
10:31-42	The Jews try to stone Jesus to death (10:31-39)	Jesus went to place where John baptized (10:40)
	Know & believe that the Father is in Me * I in Him	Many believed on Jesus there. (10:41-42)
<p><u>Other Scripture on shepherds, sheep, and wolves.</u> I choose to be a sheep and follow the voice of the Shepherd.</p> <p>Past: He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, like a dumb lamb he opened not his mouth (Acts 8:32). Behold the lamb of God that takes away the sin of the world (Jn 1:29). Psalm 23. Is past and present (Old & New Testament).</p> <p>Present: The parable of the 99 sheep (Mt 18:12). Shepherd and Bishop of my soul (1 Peter 2:25). The great Shepherd of the sheep through the blood of the everlasting covenant (Heb 13:20). We are killed all day long, we are accounted as sheep to the slaughter (Ro 8:36). Wolves in sheep clothing (Mt 7:15), sheep among wolves – be wise as serpents and harmless as doves (Mt 10:16), sent as lambs among wolves (Lu 10:3), grievous wolves enter, not sparing the flock (Ac 20:29). Pastors and Teachers: Feed my sheep (John 21).</p> <p>Future: Lamb in Revelation > 20x. The chief Shepherd returns with a crown of glory that fades not away (1 Pe 5:4) All nations will appear before Christ when he returns, he divides the sheep from the goats (Mt 24:31-46)</p>		

John Chapter 11

Family Love is 11:1-45

11:1-16 Lazarus Dies at Bethany & Thomas is Confused

(57) ¹ Now a certain [man] was sick, [named] Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha. ² (It was [that] Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) ³ Therefore his sisters sent to Him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom You love is sick. ⁴ When Jesus heard [that], He said, **This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.** ⁵ Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. ⁶ When He had heard therefore that he was sick, He abode two days still in the same place where He was. ⁷ Then after that says He to [His] disciples, **Let us go into Judaea again.** ⁸ [His] disciples say unto Him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone You; and go You thither again? ⁹ Jesus answered, **Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbles not, because he sees the light of this world.** ¹⁰ **But if a man walk in the night, he stumbles, because there is no light in him.** ¹¹ These things said He: and after that He says unto them, **Our friend Lazarus sleeps; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.** ¹² Then said His disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well. ¹³ Howbeit Jesus spoke of His death: but they thought that He had spoken of taking of rest in sleep. ¹⁴ Then said Jesus unto them plainly, **Lazarus is dead.** ¹⁵ **And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go to him.** ¹⁶ Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, to his fellow disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with Him.

Note: Bethany is 2 miles or less than one hour east of Jerusalem. Thomas speaks 3x in John: John 11:16 confused Thomas, 14:5 questioning Thomas, and 20:24-29 doubting Thomas.

11:17-27 **I am the Resurrection and Life** (Job 19:23-27, Old Testament saints)

(58) ¹⁷ Then when Jesus came, He found that he had [lain] in the grave four days already. ¹⁸ Now Bethany was near to Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off: ¹⁹ And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. ²⁰ Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met Him: but Mary sat [still] in the house. ²¹ Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if You had been here, my brother had not died. ²² But I know, that even now, whatsoever You will ask of God, God will give [it] You. ²³ Jesus said unto her, **Your brother shall rise again.** ²⁴ Martha said unto Him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. ²⁵ Jesus said unto her, **I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:** ²⁶ **And whosoever lives and believes in Me shall never die. Do you believe this?** ²⁷ She says unto Him, Yes, Lord: I believe that You are the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

11:28-37 ***Jesus Wept with Others***

(59) ²⁸ And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calls for you. ²⁹ As soon as she heard [that], she arose quickly, and came to Him. ³⁰ Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met Him. ³¹ The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily and went out, followed her, saying, She goes to the grave to weep there. ³² Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw Him, she fell down at His feet, saying to Him, Lord, if you had been here, my brother had not died. ³³ When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, He groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, ³⁴ And said, **Where have ye laid him?** They said unto Him, Lord, come and see. ³⁵ **Jesus wept.** ³⁶ Then said the Jews, Behold how He loved him! ³⁷ And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?

Application: I know there will be times to weep with others. John 9 the blind man opens his eyes.

John Chapter 11

11:38-45 ***Jesus Raises Lazarus from the Dead***

(60) ³⁸ Jesus therefore again groaning in Himself comes to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. ³⁹ Jesus said, **Take ye away the stone.** Martha, the sister of him that was dead, says unto Him, Lord, by this time he stinks: for he has been [dead] four days. ⁴⁰ Jesus says unto her, **Said I not unto you, that, if you would believe, you should see the glory of God?** ⁴¹ Then they took away the stone [from the place] where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up [His] eyes, and said, **Father, I thank You that You have heard Me.** ⁴² **And I knew that You hear Me always: but because of the people which stand by I said [it], that they may believe that You have sent Me.** ⁴³ And when He thus had spoken, He cried with a loud voice, **Lazarus, come forth.** ⁴⁴ And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus said unto them, **Loose him, and let him go.** ⁴⁵ Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on Him.

11:46-54 ***The Political Climate and the High Priest's Prophecy of Jesus' Death***

(61) ⁴⁶ But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done. ⁴⁷ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man does many miracles. ⁴⁸ If we let Him thus alone, all will believe on Him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. ⁴⁹ And one of them, [named] Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, ⁵⁰ Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. ⁵¹ And this spoke he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; ⁵² And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. ⁵³ Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put Him to death. ⁵⁴ Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence to a country near to the wilderness, into a city called

Ephraim, and there continued with His disciples. ⁵⁵ And the Jews' passover was near at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves. ⁵⁶ Then sought they for Jesus, and spoke among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that He will not come to the feast? ⁵⁷ Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where He were, he should show [it], that they might take Him.

Q – Why did the political climate compliment the prophecy of Caiaphas?

A – Because God is in control of governments, leaders, and true prophecies. Expedient, Like Balaam's donkey?

Application: I know that Jesus gathers together that which is spread abroad.

John Chapter 12

12:1-11 *Mary (sister of Lazarus) Worships Jesus with Precious Ointment (Saturday)*

(62) ¹ Then Jesus six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom He raised from the dead. ² There they made Him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with Him. ³ Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped His feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odor of the ointment. ⁴ Then says one of His disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's [son], which should betray

John Chapter 12

Him, ⁵ Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor? ⁶ This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. ⁷ Then said Jesus, **Let her alone: against the day of My burying has she kept this.** ⁸ **For the poor always ye have with you; but Me ye have not always.** ⁹ Much people of the Jews therefore knew that He was there: and they came not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom He had raised from the dead. ¹⁰ But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death; ¹¹ Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

Anointings: 1st sinful woman anoints feet, sin forgiven Luke 7:36-50, followed by parable of 2 debtors.

2nd Mary anoints feet, worship, sister of Lazarus, Judas complains, Saturday, John 12 1-8.

3rd woman anoints head, prepare for burial, disciples complain, Wed., Matthew 26:6-13 and Mark 14:3-9.

12:12-19 *The Triumphant Entry into Jerusalem (Palm Sunday) sitting on a donkey, Zech 9:9*

(63) ¹² On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, ¹³ Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet Him, and cried, Hosanna: Blessed is the King of Israel that comes in the name of the Lord. ¹⁴ And Jesus, when He had found a young donkey, sat thereon; as it is written, ¹⁵ Fear not, daughter of Zion: behold, **YOUR KING COMES, SITTING ON AN ASS'S COLT.** ¹⁶ These things understood not His disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of Him, and [that] they had done these things to Him. ¹⁷ The people therefore that was with Him when He called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. ¹⁸ For this cause the people also met Him, for that they heard that He had done this miracle. ¹⁹ The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after Him.

12:20-26 *The Corn of Wheat Must Fall to the Ground and Die to Bring Forth Fruit (Tuesday)*

(64) ²⁰ And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast: ²¹ The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. ²² Philip comes and tells Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. ²³ And Jesus answered them, saying, **The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.** ²⁴ **Verily, verily, I say unto you,**

Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abides alone: but if it die, it brings forth much fruit.

²⁵ He that loves his life shall lose it; and he that hates his life in this world shall keep it to life eternal.

²⁶ If any man serve Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there shall also My servant be: if any man serve Me, him will [My] Father honor.

Note: First mention of Greeks as a group coming to see Jesus, Mark 7:25-30 records the a Greek woman to heal her daughter of the devil. The Greco-Roman culture and the Greek language are dominant, Latin is rising.

Q – How are we to hate our life in this world?

A – We must understand the Biblical definition of hate. Hate is the absence of love.

Application: As the Greeks ask to see Jesus for the first time. My first time was when I was saved on July 7, 1976, and now it is daily I see Jesus in the Bible, prayer and in my heart and mind. This is a growing experience until I put off this earthly tabernacle.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us be a corn of wheat that falls into the ground.

John Chapter 12

12:27-36 *Believe and Walk in the Light to be the Children of Light*

(65) ²⁷ Now is My soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save Me from this hour: but for this cause came I to this hour. ²⁸ Father, glorify Your name. Then came there a voice from heaven, [saying], I have both glorified [it], and will glorify [it] again. ²⁹ The people therefore, that stood by, and heard [it], said that it thundered: others said, An angel spoke unto Him. ³⁰ Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of Me, but for your sakes. ³¹ Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. ³² And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all [men] to Me. ³³ This He said, signifying what death He should die. ³⁴ The people answered Him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abides forever: and how say You, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of Man? ³⁵ Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walks in darkness knows not where he goes. ³⁶ While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spoke Jesus, and departed, and did hide Himself from them.

12:37-41 *Three of Isaiah's Prophecies Fulfilled*

(66) ³⁷ But though He had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on Him: ³⁸ That the saying of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spoke, ^a **LORD, WHO HAS BELIEVED OUR REPORT? AND TO WHOM HAS THE ARM OF THE LORD BEEN REVEALED?** ³⁹ Therefore they could not believe, because that Isaiah said again, ⁴⁰ ^b **HE HAS BLINDED THEIR EYES, AND HARDENED THEIR HEART; THAT THEY SHOULD NOT SEE WITH [THEIR] EYES, NOR UNDERSTAND WITH [THEIR] HEART, AND BE CONVERTED, AND I SHOULD HEAL THEM.** ⁴¹ These things said Isaiah, ^c **WHEN HE SAW HIS GLORY, AND SPOKE OF HIM.**

Q – Why is Isaiah quoted at this time near the end of Christ's life? ^a Isaiah 53:1, ^b Isaiah 6:10, ^c Is 6:1-9

A – Because Isaiah reveals more of the 1st and 2nd coming of Jesus and the character of God than any of the prophets. The suffering and purity of Jesus are near the end of his physical life.

12:42-50 *The Pharisees Love the Praise of Men and The Words of Jesus and the Father are One*

(67) ⁴² Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess [Him], lest they should be put out of the synagogue: ⁴³ For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. ⁴⁴ Jesus cried and said, **He that believes on Me, believes not on Me, but on Him that sent Me.** ⁴⁵ **And he that sees Me sees Him that sent Me.** ⁴⁶ **I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believes on Me should not abide in darkness.** ⁴⁷ **And if any man hear My words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.** ⁴⁸ **He that rejects Me, and receives not My words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.** ⁴⁹ **For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me, He gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.** ⁵⁰ **And I know that His commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said to Me, so I speak.**

Application: I know that when I speak truth to others, their reaction is not toward me, but toward God. My concern is to live a life that honors God daily, with each circumstance and person I come in contact with in my path of life. Word-say-speak: 9x, Judge: 4x.

John Chapter 13 Jesus Teaches His Disciples Seven Times at the Upper Room (chapters 13-14)

(Jesus begins the teaching) 13:1-5 **The Master Washes the Servants Feet** (including Judas Iscariot)

(68) ¹ Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that His hour was come that He should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved His own which were in the world, He loved them unto the end. ² And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's [son], to betray Him; ³ Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He was come from God, and went to God; ⁴ He rises from supper, and laid aside His garments; and took a towel, and girded Himself. ⁵ After that He pours water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith He was girded.

(Q1) 13:6-20 **Peter Asks, "Lord, do you wash my feet?"** (Judas Iscariot's betrayal announced)

(69) ⁶ Then comes He to Simon Peter: and Peter says unto Him, Lord, do you wash my feet?
⁷ Jesus answered and said unto him, **What I do you know not now; but you shall know hereafter.**
⁸ Peter says unto Him, You shall never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, **If I wash you not, you have no part with Me.** ⁹ Simon Peter says unto Him, Lord, not my feet only, but also [my] hands and [my] head.
¹⁰ Jesus says unto him, **He that is washed needs not save to wash [his] feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.** ¹¹ For He knew who should betray Him; therefore said He, **Ye are not all clean.**
¹² So after He had washed their feet, and had taken His garments, and was set down again, He said unto them, **Know ye what I have done unto you?** ¹³ **Ye call Me Master and Lord: and ye say well; for [so] I AM.**
¹⁴ **If I then, [your] Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet.**
¹⁵ **For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done unto you.** ¹⁶ **Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than His lord; neither He that is sent greater than He that sent Him.**
¹⁷ **If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.**

(Jesus continues teaching) Psalm 41:9

¹⁸ **I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, HE THAT EATS BREAD WITH ME HAS LIFTED UP HIS HEEL AGAINST ME.** ¹⁹ Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may **believe** that **I AM.** ²⁰ **Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receives whomsoever I send receives Me; and he that receives Me receives Him that sent Me.**

(Q2) 13:21-30 **Peter Asks John, John asks "Lord, who is it?"** (Judas Iscariot departs)

(70) ²¹ When Jesus had thus said, **He was troubled in spirit,** and testified, and said, **Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray Me.** ²² Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom He spoke. ²³ Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of His disciples, whom Jesus loved.
²⁴ Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom He spoke.

²⁵ He then lying on Jesus' breast says unto Him, **Lord, who is it?** ²⁶ Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped [it]. And when He had dipped the sop, He gave [it] unto Judas Iscariot, [the son] of Simon. ²⁷ And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, **That you do, do quickly.** ²⁸ Now no man at the table knew for what intent He spoke this unto him. ²⁹ For some [of them] thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy [those things] that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. ³⁰ He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

Note: Jesus was troubled, Trails cause trouble and temptations (James 1:5, and 1 Peter 1:6). Dec 1, 2021 Pastor Marvin Harris. 1. Trouble unifies, 2. Trouble is common, 3. Trouble deepens us spiritually, 4. Trouble glorifies God. Trails are tribulation.

The sop is a serving of bread, the dip goes with the bread. Some say the host offering others bread with sop is an act of friendship and love. Later Peter asks Jesus, "What about this man?" John 21:20-22.

John Chapter 13

(Jesus continues teaching) 13:31-35 **A New Commandment is Given – Love One Another**

(71) ³¹ Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of Man glorified, and God is glorified in Him. ³² If God be glorified in Him, God shall also glorify Him in Himself, and shall **straightway** glorify Him. ³³ **Little children,** yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek Me: and as I said unto the Jews, Where I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you. ³⁴ **A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.** ³⁵ **By this shall all [men] know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another.**

Note: 1st of 10 commandments to love one another (15:12, 15:17, 1 John 3:11, 3:23, 4:7, 4:11, 4:12, 2 John 1:5).

(Q4) 13:36-14:4 **Peter Asks, "Lord, where are you going?"**

(72) ³⁶ Simon Peter said unto Him, Lord, where are you going? Jesus answered him, **Where I go, you cannot follow Me now; but you shall follow Me afterwards.** ³⁷ Peter said unto Him, Lord, why cannot I follow you now? I will lay down my life for your sake. ³⁸ Jesus answered him, **Will you lay down your life for My sake? Verily, verily, I say unto you, The rooster shall not crow, till you have denied Me thrice.**

John Chapter 14 (Jesus continues teaching) **I AM the Way, the Truth, and the Life (14:6)**

¹ Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in Me. ² In My Father's house are many mansions: if [it were] not [so], I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. ³ And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto Myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. ⁴ And where I go ye know, and the way ye know.

Note: Mansions - the mansions are in heaven and described in Revelation 21-22. This is our inheritance as children of God in the dispensation of the grace of God (Ephesians 3:2). The same word in Greek is used at John 14:23 by translated as "abode" due to context. See Isaiah 63:15, 2 Cor 5:1, Ps 11:4. Receive us as in 1-2 Thess, 1 Cor 15.

(Q5) 14:5-7 **Thomas Asks, "Lord, we know not where you go; and how can we know the way?"**

(73) ⁵ Thomas says unto Him, Lord, we know not where you go; and how can we know the way? ⁶ Jesus says unto him, **I AM the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man comes to the Father, but by Me.** ⁷ If ye had known Me, ye should have known My Father also: and from henceforth ye know Him, and have seen Him.

Note: Christ is the sinner's Way to the Father and to heaven. The Truth is all that is written in the Scriptures. The Life is the life-giving Spirit the dead in sin are made alive by. Doubting, confused, or reasoning Thomas?

(Q6) 14:8-21 ***Philip Says, "Lord, show us the Father, and it satisfies us"*** (prayer 13:13-14)

(74) ⁸ Philip says unto Him, Lord, show us the Father, and it satisfies us. ⁹ Jesus says unto him, I have been so long time with you, and yet have you not known Me, Philip? he that has seen Me has seen the Father; and how say you [then], Show us the Father? ¹⁰ Believe you not that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of Myself: but the Father that dwells in Me, He does the works. ¹¹ Believe Me that I [am] in the Father, and the Father in Me: or else believe Me for the very works' sake. ¹² Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believes on Me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater [works] than these shall he do; because I go to My Father. ¹³ And whatsoever ye shall ask in My name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴ If ye shall ask anything in My name, I will do [it]. ¹⁵ If ye love Me, keep My commandments.

John Chapter 14

(Jesus continues teaching) about the Comforter (1st mention of the Holy Spirit)

¹⁶ And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever; ¹⁷ [Even] the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees Him not, neither knows Him: but ye know Him; for He dwells with you, and shall be in you. ¹⁸ I will not leave you an orphan: I will come unto you. ¹⁹ Yet a little while, and the world sees Me no more; but ye see Me: because I live, ye shall live also. ²⁰ At that day ye shall know that I [am] in My Father, and ye in Me, and I in you. ²¹ He that has My commandments, and keeps them, he it is that loves Me: and he that loves Me shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to him.

Q – What are the greater works that followers of Jesus Christ shall do? (14:12)

A – The greater works are not miracles, but the saved that "do and teach" as Jesus began to do in discipleship with those the Father gave him. (Acts 1:1). Greater works in Luke 10 when the 70 return. Rev 20 books and the book.

Application: I must not apply the disciples of Jesus examples before they received the power of Christ in them through the gift of the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost (Acts 2) because they were still under the Old Covenant. I will teach others this truth so they cannot justify personal sin using examples from the disciples of Jesus before they received the gift of the Holy Spirit. See 2 Timothy 2:2 teaching, Acts 1:8, 2 and 1 Corinthians 14.

(Q7) 14:22-31 ***Judas Asks, "Lord, what is the cause that you will show yourself to us & not to the world?"***

(75) ²² ^a Judas says unto Him, not Iscariot, Lord, what is the cause that you will show yourself to us, and not to the world? ²³ Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love Me, he will keep My words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him. ²⁴ He that loves Me not keeps not My sayings: and the word which ye hear is not Mine, but the Father's which sent Me. ²⁵ These things I have spoken unto you, being [yet] present with you. ²⁶ But the Comforter, [which is] the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. ²⁷ Peace I leave with you, My peace I give unto you: not as the world gives, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

(Jesus ends the conversation) *the prince of this world has nothing in Jesus*

(76)²⁸ Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come [again] unto you. If ye loved Me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for My Father is greater than I. ²⁹ And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. ³⁰ Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world comes, and has nothing in Me. ³¹ But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave Me commandment, even so I do. ^b Arise, let us go from here.

^a Judas or Jude is the brother of James, who is mentioned in a list of apostles names in Mt 10:3, Mk 3:18, Lu 6:16, Acts 1:13. Only here does he speak. Judas discerned judgment coming, which leads toward understanding his writing the book of Jude. He is a cousin of Jesus Christ. Lastly, being the 4th to speak and with such depth, he a type of Elihu in the book of Job who spoke after the other three.

^b Jesus and the apostles now rose from the supper and went to the Mount of Olives in chapters 15-16-17.

John Chapter 15 Jesus' Last Teachings to His 11 Apostles at the Mount of Olives (15-17)

15:1-17 ***In Jesus: Abide (11x), Fruit (8x), Love (7x), & Friends (3x)***

I AM the True Vine / I AM the Vine

(78) ¹ I AM the True Vine, and My Father is the Husbandman. ² Every [branch] in Me that bears not fruit He takes away: and every [branch] that bears fruit, He prunes it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

³ Now ye are clean through the Word which I have spoken unto you. ⁴ Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in Me. ⁵ I AM the Vine, ye are the branches: He that abides in Me, and I in him, the same brings forth much fruit: for without Me ye can do nothing. ⁶ If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. ⁷ If ye abide in Me, and My Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you ⁸ Herein is My Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be My disciples.



Note: **What is fruit?** 15:2 fruit, 15:5 more fruit, 15:8 much fruit, 15:16 fruit should remain. John 12:24 seed die. (1) Christ likeness (love), (2) God likeness (holy), (3) Fruit of the Holy Spirit (Gal 5:22-23), (4) souls, John 4:31-38. Branches receive 15:5, Disciples follow 15:8, Friends fellowship 15:15.

15:9-12 Jesus Commands Us to Love one Another

(79) ⁹ As the Father has loved Me, so I have loved you: continue ye in My love. ¹⁰ If ye keep My commandments, ye shall abide in My love; even as I have kept My Father's commandments, and abide in His love. ¹¹ These things I have spoken unto you, that My joy might remain in you, and [that] your joy might be full. ¹² This is My commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

15:13-17 Jesus Calls Us His Friends and Ordains Us to Have Fruit that Remains

(80) ¹³ Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. ¹⁴ Ye are My friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. ¹⁵ Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knows not what his lord does: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of My Father I have made known unto you. ¹⁶ Ye have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye

should go and bring forth fruit, and [that] your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in My name, He may give it you. ¹⁷ These things I command you, that ye love one another.

15:18-16:4 **Jesus Predicts the World's Hatred of Believers** (*good words and works expose sin*)

(81) ¹⁸ If the world hate you, ye know that it hated Me before [it hated] you. ¹⁹ If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hates you. ²⁰ Remember the Word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept My saying, they will keep yours also. ²¹ But all these things will they do to you for My name's sake, because they know not Him that sent Me. ²² If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. ²³ He that hates Me hates My Father also. ²⁴ If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both Me and My Father. ²⁵ But [this comes to pass], that the Word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, ^a They hated Me without a cause.

^a **Psalm 35:19** Let not them that are my enemies wrongfully rejoice over me: *neither* let them wink with the eye that hate me without a cause. Love not the world 1 John 2:15.

John Chapter 15

15:26-27 **Jesus Says the Father will Send the Comforter** (*parakletos – John 4x, advocate 1Jn 1x*)

(82) ²⁶ And when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, [even] the Spirit of truth, which proceeds from the Father, He shall testify of Me: ²⁷ And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with Me from the beginning.

John Chapter 16

16:1-4 **Jesus Cautions of Hate and Killing of Believers**

(83) ¹ These things I have spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. ² They shall put you out of the synagogues: yes, the time comes, that whosoever kills you will think that he does God service. ³ And these things will they do to you, because they have not known the Father, nor Me. ⁴ But these things I have told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

16: 5-15 **The Holy Spirit's 3-Fold Work** (*reprove the world of sin-righteousness-judgment*)

(84) ⁵ But now I go My way unto Him that sent Me; and none of you ask Me, Where are you going? ⁶ But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow has filled your heart. ⁷ Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send Him unto you. ⁸ And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: ⁹ Of sin, because they believe not on Me; ¹⁰ Of righteousness, because I go unto My Father, and ye see Me no more; ¹¹ Of judgment, because the ^a prince of this world is judged. ¹² I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. ¹³ Howbeit when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, [that] shall He speak: and He will show you things to come. ¹⁴ He shall glorify Me: for He shall receive of Mine, and shall show [it] unto you. ¹⁵ All things that the Father has are Mine: therefore said I, that He shall take of Mine, and shall show [it] unto you.

^a Prince of this world is Satan. John 12:31 and 14:30. Luke 9-10 The 12 apostles sent, and the 70 disciples sent. Satan fell like lightning from the sky.

16:16-22 **The Eleven Apostles Sorrow Will Turn into Joy**

(85) ¹⁶ A little while, and ye shall not see Me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see Me, because I go to the Father. ¹⁷ Then said [some] of His disciples among themselves, What is this that He says unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see Me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see Me: and, Because I go unto the Father? ¹⁸ They said therefore, What is this that He says, A little while? we cannot tell what he says. ¹⁹ Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask Him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see Me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see Me? ²⁰ Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. ²¹ A woman when she is in travail has sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembers no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. ²² And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man takes from you.

Note: Trials or troubles. 1 Peter 1:6-7, James 1:2-8. Four points: Dec 1, 2021 Pastor Marvin Harris. 1. Trouble unifies, 2. Trouble is common, 3. Trouble deepens us spiritually, 4. Trouble glorifies God.

John Chapter 16

16:25-33 ***The Eleven Apostles will Pray Directly to the Father*** (Acts 2, 6:4, Heb 2:14-16, 4:16-18)

(86) ²³ And in that day ye shall ask Me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in My name, He will give [it] you. ²⁴ Thus far have ye asked nothing in My name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. ²⁵ These things I have spoken to you in proverbs: but the time comes, when I shall no more speak to you in proverbs, but I shall show you plainly of the Father. ²⁶ At that day ye shall ask in My name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: ²⁷ For the Father Himself loves you, because ye have loved Me, and have believed that I came out from God. ²⁸ I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father. ²⁹ His disciples said unto Him, Look, now You speak plainly, and speak no proverb. ³⁰ Now we are sure that You know all things, and need not that any man should ask You: by this we believe that You came forth from God. ³¹ Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? ³² Behold, the hour comes, yes, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave Me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with Me. ³³ These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have peace. ^a In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

^a This sets the context of chapter 17. "I have overcome the world," as we abide in Christ, we can overcome the world also. Ro 12:21, Rev 2-3. Overcomers in each church age, each local church, and each individual is salvation & fruit.

John Chapter 17

Jesus' High Priestly Prayer (a pattern of prayer)

17:1-5 ***First for His Work*** (works, Heb 10:24-25, Rev 2-3)

(87) ¹ These words spoke Jesus, and lifted up His eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify Your Son, that Your Son may also glorify You: ² As you have given Him authority over all flesh, that He should give eternal life to as many as you have given Him. ³ And this is life eternal, that they might know You the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom You have sent. ⁴ I have glorified You on the earth: I have finished the work which You gave Me to do. ⁵ And now, O Father, glorify You Me with Your own self with the glory which I had with You before the world was.

Q – Why does Jesus begin this prayer with Himself?

A – Review Ephesians 1:4, 2:10. As we abide in Christ, we enter into the good works God ordained before the foundation of the world and prepare for the future kingdom of God. The pattern of prayer is ourselves, our disciples, and others – 2 Tim 2:2.

Application: I must not hold to a traditional and/or legalistic form of prayer. At different times my pattern of prayer may change.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us learn how to pray as the need, and the Holy Spirit leads us. Ephesians 1:4, 2:10, as we abide in Christ we enter into the works ordained before the foundation of the world.

17:6-19 **Second for His Eleven Apostles Sanctification**

(88)⁶ I have manifested Your name to the men which You gave Me out of the world: Yours they were, and You gave them unto Me; and they have kept your word. ⁷ Now they have known that all things whatsoever You have given Me are of You. ⁸ For I have given unto them the Words which You gave Me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from You, and they have believed that You did send Me. ⁹ I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which You have given Me; for they are Yours. ¹⁰ And all Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine; and I am glorified in them. ¹¹ And now

John Chapter 17

I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come unto You. Holy Father, keep through Your own name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one, as We are. ¹² While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Your name: those that You gave Me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

(89)¹³ And now I come unto You; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have My joy fulfilled in themselves. ¹⁴ I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. ¹⁵ I pray not that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil. ¹⁶ They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. ¹⁷ Sanctify them through Your truth: Your Word is truth. ¹⁸ As You have sent Me into the world, even so I have also sent them into the world. ¹⁹ And for their sakes I sanctify Myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

Note: Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil, Luke 11. Rev 1, 21-22.

Apostles: 76x refers only to the 12 apostles (15:27), and Paul. 4x the word sent used in context, there are no apostles today.

17:20-26 **Third for all Future Disciples Oneness**

(90)²⁰ Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on Me through their Word; ²¹ That they all may be one; as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You, that they also may be one in Us: that the world may believe that You have sent Me. ²² And the glory which You gave Me I have given them; that they may be one, even as We are one: ²³ I in them, and You in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and has loved them, as You have loved Me. ²⁴ Father, I will that they also, whom You have given Me, be with Me where I am; that they may behold My glory, which You have given Me: for You loved Me before the foundation of the world. ²⁵ O righteous Father, the world has not known You: but I have known You, and these have known that You have sent Me. ²⁶ And I have declared to them Your name, and will declare [it]: that the love wherewith You have loved Me may be in them, and I in them.

John Chapter 18

18:1-10 ***Soldiers Fall Backward and Jesus Arrested by Religious Leaders***

(91) ¹ When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with His disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which He entered, and His disciples. ² And Judas also, which betrayed Him, knew the place: for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with His disciples. ³ Judas then, having received a band [of men] and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, comes thither with lanterns and torches and weapons. ⁴ Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon Him, went forth, and said unto them, **Whom seek ye?** ⁵ They answered Him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus says unto them, **I Am.** And Judas also, which betrayed Him, stood with them. ⁶ As soon then as He had said unto them, **I AM,** they went backward, and fell to the ground. ⁷ Then asked He them again, **Whom seek ye?** And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. ⁸ Jesus answered, **I have told you that I Am: if therefore ye seek Me, let these go their way:** ⁹ **That the saying might be fulfilled, which He spoke, Of them which you gave Me I have lost none.** ¹⁰ Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. ¹¹ Then said Jesus unto Peter, **Put up your sword into the sheath: the cup which My Father has given Me, shall I not drink it?**

Q – Why did the soldiers fall backward when Jesus replied: “I am”?

A – Because the identity of “I am” belongs to God during the time of Moses. (Exodus 3:14) There is power in these words of truth.

John Chapter 18

Application: I know God has given me to Jesus, and Jesus protects me as he did his disciples (18:8-9).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us trust God who has given us to Jesus and know our time will come to drink of the cup of suffering according to our Father's will and to His glory.

18:12-14 ***Jesus is Delivered to the Religious Leader Annas***

(92) ¹² Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound Him, ¹³ And led Him away to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year. ¹⁴ Now Caiaphas was he, which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

18:15-18 ***The Disciple Peter Denies Knowing Jesus the First Time***

(93) ¹⁵ And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and [so did] another disciple: that disciple was known to the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. ¹⁶ But Peter stood at the door outside. Then went out that other disciple, which was known to the high priest, and spoke to her that kept the door, and brought in Peter. ¹⁷ Then says the damsel that kept the door to Peter, Are not you also [one] of this man's disciples? He says, I am not. ¹⁸ And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals; for it was cold: and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

18:19-24 ***Jesus' Answer of a Public Life to the High Priest***

(94) ¹⁹ The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine. ²⁰ Jesus answered him, **I spoke openly to the world; I even taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, where the Jews always resort; and in secret I have said nothing.** ²¹ **Why ask you Me? ask them which heard Me, what I have said to them: behold, they know what I said.** ²² And when He had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answer you the high priest so? ²³ Jesus answered him,

If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smite you Me? ²⁴ Now Annas had sent Him bound to Caiaphas the high priest.

Q – Should believers protect or separate our life with the public?

A – No, there is no private life for the Christ-following believer, except for private prayer and reading of the Bible. The privacy of personal life requires wisdom from above.

Application: I must have boldness in my public teaching of the truths of God.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us know what is private and alone for our communications with God and what is public for truth and holiness.

18:25-27 Peter Denies His Lord Twice More and the Rooster Crows

(95) ²⁵ And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Are not you also [one] of his disciples? He denied [it], and said, I am not. ²⁶ One of the servants of the high priest, being [his] kinsman whose ear Peter cut off, says, Did not I see you in the garden with Him? ²⁷ Peter then denied again: and immediately the rooster crew.

Q – Why did the rooster crow precisely at the time Peter denied the Lord the third time?

A – God moved to fulfill the prophecy of Jesus by having the timing and number of people ask Peter if he knew Jesus and the rooster crowed at the usual time of daybreak.

Application: I believe God moves all people in His time to accomplish His will. I must continue in the high calling of God to experience the fullness of joy and peace in trusting His time.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us mature in Christ to trust God's timing.

John Chapter 18

18:28-37 Jesus is led from the prison at Caiaphas House (Psalm 88) to be Judged by Pilate

(96) ²⁸ Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas to the hall of judgment: and it was early; and they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover. ²⁹ Pilate then went out to them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man? ³⁰ They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up to you. ³¹ Then said Pilate to them, Take ye Him, and judge Him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: ³² That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which He spoke, signifying what death He should die. ³³ Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto Him, Are you the King of the Jews? ³⁴ Jesus answered him, **Say you this thing of thyself, or did others tell it you of Me?** ³⁵ Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Your own nation and the chief priests have delivered You to me: what have You done? ³⁶ Jesus answered, **My kingdom is not of this world: if My kingdom were of this world, then would My servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is My kingdom not from hence.** ³⁷ Pilate therefore said unto Him, Are you a king then? Jesus answered, **You say that I am a king. To this end I was born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Every one that is of the truth hears My voice.**

Q – Why do only the people who are of the truth hear the truth?

A – Because their ears are deaf to the truth of God in His Son Jesus Christ (John 14:6).

Application: I should not be offended or defend myself when I am judged wrongly for speaking the truth.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer comforts us that our kingdom is not of this world but a kingdom from heaven in the future.

18:38-40 The Jews Chose the Robber Barabbas Before the King of the Jews Jesus

(97) ³⁸ Pilate says unto Him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again to the Jews, and says unto them, I find in Him no fault [at all]. ³⁹ But ye have a custom, that I should release to you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release to you the King of the Jews? ⁴⁰ Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

Q – Why did Pilate refer to Jesus as the King of the Jews?

A – Because Pilate believed Jesus was a special person and possibly the king of the Jews.

Application: I should not be offended or defend myself when an evil person is given favor over myself.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer encourages us when we do right and are not recognized, but instead put at a disadvantage for doing right as we follow Jesus.

John Chapter 19

Jesus is Crucified

19:1-4 *Jesus Whipped, Mocked, and Beat*

(98) ¹ Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged [Him]. ² And the soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put [it] on His head, and they put on Him a purple robe, ³ And said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they smote Him with their hands. ⁴ Pilate therefore went forth again, and says unto them, Behold, I bring Him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in Him.

Q – Why did Jesus not resist mockery and suffering?

A – Because it was the Father’s will to become the sacrifice for the sins of mankind.

Application: I glory in the mockery and suffering that comes into my life from the loving hand of our Father in heaven.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer gives us hope and strength for the sever trials that God allows.

John Chapter 19

19:5-15 *Pilate Persuaded to Crucify the Jews King Jesus*

(99) ⁵ Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And [Pilate] says unto them, Behold the man! ⁶ When the chief priests therefore and officers saw Him, they cried out, saying, Crucify [Him], crucify [Him]. Pilate says unto them, Take ye Him, and crucify [Him]: for I find no fault in Him. ⁷ The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law He ought to die, because he made Himself the Son of God. ⁸ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; ⁹ And went again into the judgment hall, and says unto Jesus, Where are You from? But Jesus gave him no answer. ¹⁰ Then says Pilate unto Him, Speak You not to me? know You not that I have power to crucify You, and have power to release You? ¹¹ Jesus answered, **You could have no authority [at all] against Me, except it were given you from above: therefore he that delivered Me unto you has the greater sin.** ¹² And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release Him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If you let this man go, you are not Caesar's friend: whosoever makes himself a king speaks against Caesar. ¹³ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. ¹⁴ And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he says to the Jews, Behold your King! ¹⁵ But they cried out, Away with [Him], away with [Him], crucify Him. Pilate says unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Caesar.

Q – Are there degrees of sin?

A – Yes, the Jews committed the greater sin than Pilate when they chose to crucify Jesus.

Application: I know that sin is sin when compared to God’s perfection and holiness. I also know that there are degrees of sin and punishment with justice. Jesus gave his life so I can have forgiveness of sin, for salvation, then continually for sanctification.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us fear God and hate sin, as well as recognize the degrees of sin.

19:16-24 *The Crucifixion of the King of the Jews*

(100) ¹⁶ Then he delivered Him unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led [Him] away.

¹⁷ And He bearing His cross went forth into a place called [the place] of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha: ¹⁸ Where they crucified Him, and two other with Him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst. ¹⁹ And Pilate wrote a title, and put [it] on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS. ²⁰ This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was near to the city: and **it was written in Hebrew, [and] Greek, [and] Latin.** ²¹ Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that He said, I am King of the Jews. ²² Pilate answered, What I have written I have written. ²³ Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took His garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also [His] coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. ²⁴ They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which says, **THEY PARTED MY RAIMENT AMONG THEM, AND FOR MY VESTURE THEY DID CAST LOTS.** These things therefore the soldiers did.

Q – Why is Psalm 22:18 quoted? (19:24)

A – Because Psalm 22 is the most precise prophecy speaking of Christ's past ministry in death.

John Chapter 19

19:25-27 *Jesus Requests the Disciple John and not the Family to Care for His Mother Mary*

(101) ²⁵ Now there stood by the cross of Jesus His mother, and His mother's sister, Mary the [wife] of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. ²⁶ When Jesus therefore saw His mother, and the disciple standing by, whom He loved, He says to His mother, **Woman, behold your son!** ²⁷ Then says He to the disciple, **Behold your mother!** And from that hour that disciple took her to his own [home].

Q – Why did Jesus favor John over the family of Jesus to care for Mary?

A – Because the relationship in Christ is stronger than relationship with family if they are not believers. Also Mary was a widow, so the family of God is responsible for her care.

Application: I love my family. I love my family more when they share the same salvation and service to God. I love widows because the Bible and logic tell me this is right. (1 Timothy 5:3-16)

19:28-30 *The Finished Work of Christ on the Cross* (^a Psalm 69:21)

(102) ²⁸ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, says, **I THIRST.** ²⁹ Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put [it] upon hyssop, and put [it] to his mouth. ³⁰ When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, He said, **It is finished:** and He bowed His head, and gave up the spirit.

Q – What does the finished work of Christ mean for believers?

A1 – All the works of Christ are consummated, never needing repeat.

A2 – The Old Testament sacrificial, ceremonial, and priestly system are abolished.

A3 – Christ became our sacrifice and priest.

A4 – The maturing believer learns to rest in the completed work of Christ.

Application: I learn to rest and walk in the completed work of Christ. I disciple younger believers how to rest and walk in the finished work of Christ.

19:31-37 *Old Testament Scripture and Prophecy Fulfilled Immediately after the Death of Christ*

(103) ³¹ The Jews therefore, because it was the ^a preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross [that] they might be taken away. ³² Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. ³³ But when they came to Jesus, and saw that He was dead already, they brake not His legs: ³⁴ But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced His side, and immediately came there out blood and water. ³⁵ And he that saw [it] bare record, and his record is true: and he knows that he says true, that ye might believe. ³⁶ For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, ^b **A BONE OF HIM SHALL NOT BE BROKEN.** ³⁷ And again another Scripture says, ^c **THEY SHALL LOOK ON HIM WHOM THEY PIERCED.**

^a Deuteronomy 22:23-24 requires the body not be left overnight to keep the next day holy. John 19:14, coinciding with the Passover, it was a day of double sacredness and solemnity.

^b Referring to the paschal lamb in Exodus 12:46 and Numbers 9:12, which John the Baptist called the lamb of God who takes away the sin of the world. Christ is our Passover, 1 Corinthians 5:7.

^c Zechariah 12:10

John Chapter 19

19:38-42 ***The Burial of Christ by Joseph of Arimathaea and Nicodemus (John 3 and 8)***

(104) ³⁸ And after this Joseph of Arimathaea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, begged Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave [him] leave. He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus. ³⁹ And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pound [weight]. ⁴⁰ Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury. ⁴¹ Now in the place where He was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulcher, wherein was never man yet laid. ⁴² There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation [day]; for the sepulcher was near at hand.

John Chapter 20

Jesus is Resurrected

20:1-10 ***Mary Magdalene, Peter and John at the Empty Tomb***

(105) ¹ The ^a first [day] of the week comes Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, to the tomb, and sees the stone taken away from the tomb. ² Then she runs, and comes to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and says unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we know not where they have laid Him. ³ Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the tomb. ⁴ So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the tomb. ⁵ And he stooping down, [and looking in], saw the linen clothes lying; yet he went not in. ⁶ Then comes Simon Peter following him, and went into the tomb, and sees the linen cloths lying, ⁷ And the napkin, that was about His head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. ⁸ Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the tomb, and he saw, and believed. ⁹ For as yet ^b they knew not the Scripture, ^c that He must rise again from the dead. ¹⁰ Then the disciples went away again to their own home.

^a In Greek is sabbaton, translated "on the first sabbath". Same in John 20:19, Acts:20:7, 1 Cor 16:2.

^b **they.** Mt 16:21-22; Mk 8:31-33; 9:9-10,31-32; Lu 9:45; 18:33; 24:26,44-46

^c **that.** Ps 16:9-10 is primary reference. Related passages are: 22:15,22-31; Isa 25:8; 26:19; 53:10-12; Ho 13:14; Ac 2:25-32; 13:29-37; 1Co 15:4.

20:11-16 ***Mary Magdalene Stays at the Tomb and Sees the Risen Lord Jesus***

(106) ¹¹ But Mary stood outside at the tomb weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, [and looked] into the tomb, ¹² And sees two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. ¹³ And they say to her, Woman, why do you weep? She says to them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid Him. ¹⁴ And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. ¹⁵ Jesus says unto her, **Woman, why weep you? Whom seek you?** She, supposing Him to be the gardener, says unto Him, Sir, if you have borne Him hence, tell me where you have laid Him, and I will take Him away. ¹⁶ Jesus says unto her, **Mary.** She turned herself, and says unto Him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master. ¹⁷ Jesus says to her, **Touch Me not; for I am not yet ascended to My Father: but go to My brethren, and say unto them, I ascend to My Father, and your Father; and [to] My God, and your God.**

John Chapter 20

¹⁸ Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and [that] He had spoken these things unto her.

20:19-23 *The Disciples See Jesus the same Day (an interim pledge, until Pentecost)*

(107) ¹⁹ Then the same day at evening, being the first [day] of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and says unto them, **Peace to you.** ²⁰ And when He had so said, He showed them [His] hands and His side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord. ²¹ Then said Jesus to them again, **Peace to you: as [My] Father has sent Me, even so send I you.** ²² And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and says to them, **Receive ye the Holy Ghost:** ²³ **Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; [and] whose soever [sins] ye retain, they are retained.**

20:24-29 *After Eight Days Thomas Sees Jesus and Believes*

(108) ²⁴ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. ²⁵ The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said to them, Except I shall see in His hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into His side, I will not believe. ²⁶ And after eight days again His disciples were within, and Thomas with them: [then] came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, **Peace to you.** ²⁷ Then says He unto Thomas, Reach hither your finger, and behold My hands; and reach hither your hand, and thrust [it] into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. ²⁸ And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. ²⁹ Jesus says to him, **Thomas, because you have seen Me, you have believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and [yet] have believed.**

20:30-31 *John Wrote so We Can Believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God*

(109) ³⁰ And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of His disciples, which are not written in this book: ³¹ But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through His name.

John Chapter 21

Jesus' Farewell to Disciples

21:1-14 *The Disciples Practice Holiness and Enjoy Fellowship with Jesus*

(110) ¹ After these things Jesus showed Himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise showed He [Himself]. ² There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the [sons] of Zebedee, and two other of His disciples. ³ Simon Peter says unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with you. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. ⁴ But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. ⁵ Then Jesus says to them, **Children, have ye any meat?** They answered Him, No. ⁶ And He said to them, **Cast the net on the right side of the**

ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. ⁷ Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved says unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt [his] fisher's coat [to him], (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea. ⁸ And the other disciples came in a little ship; (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes. ⁹ As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. ¹⁰ Jesus says unto them, **Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.** ¹¹ Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken. ¹² Jesus says to them, **Come [and] dine.** And none of the disciples dared ask Him, Who are you? knowing that it was the Lord. ¹³ Jesus then comes, and takes bread, and gives them, and fish likewise. ¹⁴ This is now the third time that Jesus showed Himself unto His disciples, after that He was risen from the dead.

John Chapter 21

21:15-19 *Jesus Commands Peter to Feed His Sheep, Deny Self and Follow Him*

(111) ¹⁵ So when they had dined, Jesus says unto Simon Peter, **Simon, [son] of Jonah, love you Me more than these?** He says unto Him, Yes, Lord; you know that I love you. He says unto him, **Feed My lambs.** ¹⁶ He says unto him again the second time, **Simon, [son] of Jonah, love you Me?** He says unto Him, Yes, Lord; you know that I love You. He says to him, **Feed my sheep.** ¹⁷ He says to him the third time, **Simon, [son] of Jonah, love you Me?** Peter was grieved because he said unto Him the third time, Love you Me? And he said unto him, Lord, you know all things; you know that I love you. Jesus says to him, **Feed My sheep.** ¹⁸ **Verily, verily, I say unto you, When you was young, you girded thyself, and walked where you would: but when you shall be old, you shall stretch forth your hands, and another shall gird you, and carry [you] where you would not.** ¹⁹ This spoke He, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when He had spoken this, He says to him, **Follow Me.**

21:20-23 *Lesson to Peter: You Follow Me – Don't be Concerned about My Will for Others*

(112) ²⁰ Then Peter, turning about, sees the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned on His breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrays You? ²¹ Peter seeing him says unto Jesus, Lord, and what [shall] this man [do]? ²² Jesus says unto him, **If I will that he tarry till I come, what [is that] to you? You follow Me.** ²³ **Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what [is that] to you?**

21:24-25 *Final Words in John's Heart and Mind*

²⁴ This is the disciple which testifies of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true. ²⁵ And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written everyone, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

John 1-21	Believe 72x Know 63x Life 39x	Believe not 26x Know not 26x Not life 6x (15%)	John 20:31 1 John 5:11-13	John 8-12 Light, 13-17 Love, 18-21 Life Revelation 1-18 Light 19-20 Love, 21-22 Life 1 John 1:1-2:11 Light 2:5-5:3 Love, 5:6-19 Life	
	I AM (4-17 = 20x, 18 - 1x) + (Rev = 5x) = 26x		Who	When (appx)	Where
John 1-3	the beginning – the foundation Lamb of God -Adam Light (life) 1:4-5, 7-9, 3:19-21 Darkness (death) sin Love & Life (3:16)		John the baptizer, disciples	1-7 months Passover 1	Jordan, Cana, Capernaum, Jerusalem
John 4-5 Prophet	<i>I AM (the witness) (4:26)</i> I have meat to eat that ye know not of (4:32-34)	living water, Never thirst 4:10-11, 13-15 Light 5:35	Woman at the Well /Lame man	8-18 months Sabbath Passover 2, 5:1	Samaria Galilee, Jerusalem
John 6-7 Prophet	<i>I AM the Bread of Life</i> (6:35, 6:51) I am manna (6:41, 6:48)	If any thirst , Rivers of living water (7:37-39)	Ed Multitude Heal 1, Taught	2 ½ - 3 years Passover 3 Tabernacles	Galilee, Jerusalem
John 8-9 Prophet	<i>I AM the Light of the World</i> (8:12, 9:5) I AM (8:24, 8:28)	<i>before Abraham was, I AM</i> (8:58) Contrast Chart – 1 John	Blind man healed (9:1-41)	Tabernacles 2 days, 7:1-10:21	Mount of Olives
John 10 Priest	<i>I AM the Door of the Sheep</i> (10:7, 10:9) - thief & robber	<i>I AM the Good Shepherd of the Sheep</i> (10:11, 10:14) - thief flees from wolf	My Sheep hear my Voice	3 yr 3 mo December 24	Feast of Dedication (Lights) 10:22 Jerusalem
John 11-12 Priest	<i>I AM the Resurrection and the Life</i> (11:25) Seed die – fruit (12:24)	the Light of this World (11:9-10, 12:35-36, 12:46) Night-stumble-no light-dark	family – funeral Love - emotion Others hate	3 yr, 4 mo Jn 12:1 Palm Sunday	Bethany, Ephraim, Bethany, Jerusalem
John 13-14 Priest	<i>I AM the Way, the Truth, and the Life</i> (14:6)	I AM (13:13, 13:19) Discipleship-- 6 questions Supper-wash feet-betrayal	Judas departed 13:31 11 disciples	Thursday night before Passover 4	Jerusalem Upper Room
John 15-17 Priest	<i>I AM the True Vine</i> (15:1) <i>I AM the Vine</i> (15:5)	Abide 8x Abide not 1x. Fruit 6x, No fruit 1x. World-Hates 15:18-25	11 disciples	Late Thursday- 3 yr, 6 mo	Mount of Olives (en route to Gethsemane)
John 18-21	the ending – the cross <i>I AM</i> (18:6) at Gethesamane	Betrayal by Judas 4 trials 4 appearances	11 disciples, Jews, Romans 1 Cor 15:1-11	Early Friday morning-evening 40 days Acts 1:3	18 Gethsemane 19 Golgotha 20-21 appears
Revelation King	<i>I AM Alpha & Omega, the beginning & the ending</i> (1:8, 21:6) I Am (22:16)	<i>I AM Alpha & Omega, First & the Last</i> (1:11) + Beginning & End (22:13)	Jesus-lamb, John-angels, beasts, elders	96 AD (98 AD?) 1-2-3 John)	Island of Patmos (Ephesus?) The World

The Eight Mountaintop Revelings of the I AM by the Apostle John

I AM = I EXIST (Exodus 3:13-15, John 8:58. Greek = ego eimi)

Alpha & Omega
Rev 1, 21-22

Complimentary I Am (7)
Above the line

Physical basics of life
Water & Bread, & Light
(4:14, 19, 44, 6:14,
7:37-39, 40, 52, 9:17)



Matthew 28:18-20
authority-go-teach-baptize

Vine
15-17

Way
13-14

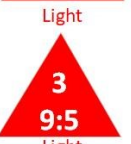
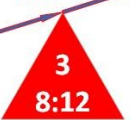
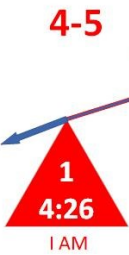
Resurrection
11-12

Shepherd
10

Bread
6-7

Light
8-9

witness
4-5



Imperative I AM (19)
Priority 2 Doctrine

Matthew 2:11 (three gifts)
gold > frankincense > myrrh



PROPHET
(myrrh/past)

PRIEST
(frankincense/present)

KING
(gold/future)

Comparisons of the "I Am" to the Tabernacle in the Wilderness

Scripture	Tabernacle Furnishings: fixed (f) & variable (v)
	<u>Outside the Tabernacle</u>
I am that I am (Ex 3:14)	Curtains around the perimeter of the Tabernacle (f) (Removed by Christ: the barrier between Jew and Gentile)
I am the Door (10)	Curtain at the entrance of the tabernacle area (f)
I am the Good Shepherd (10)	The Altar of Sacrifice (f) (the lamb was slain for us as John the Baptist proclaimed)
I am the Water of Life (4)	The Wash Basin for Cleansing (v) (no dimensions, mirrors, the Scriptures - John 17:17)
	<u>Inside the Tabernacle</u>
I am the Way, Truth & Life (14)	Curtain at the entrance to the Holy Place (f)
I am the Bread of Life (6)	The Table of Showbread (f) (fresh weekly, 12 loaves. Represents fellowship)
I am the Light of the World (7)	The Candlestick (f) (Daily, prepare in the morning – light at night, 7 candles. Oil represents the Holy Spirit)-----
"A new and living way"	The altar of incense (v)
Hebrews 10:20	(just outside the Most Holy Place, offered morning & evening daily, a sweet fragrance representing the prayers of the obedient)
I am that I am (Ex 3:14)	The curtain between the Holy Place and Most Holy Place (f) (torn by God after the death of His Son on the cross)
I am the Vine (15)	The Ark of the Covenant (f) (inside: 10 commandments, Aaron's budded rod and bowl of manna, & Mercy Seat)
I am the Resurrection (11)	The Ark of the Covenant with the Mercy Seat and Cherubims in God's presence (f)
Brass – Judgment	
Gold – King and honor	
Silver – redemption	
Wood – Man	
Overhead Coverings	Animal skins, outside or top covering dyed in red (representing blood of the Lamb of God)

THE SEVEN SAYINGS OF JESUS ON THE CROSS

Introduction. Passion week is the last week of Jesus' life. The last two days are written in the gospel of Saint John. Saint John wrote more of these last 2 days than the other gospel writers; Mathew, Mark, and Luke. Probably because he was closer to Jesus than the other apostles. It is Thursday evening. In John chapter 13, we read of the washing of disciples' feet and the Last Supper. Chapters 14 to 17 reveal His last message for humanity, (some call this the Lord's high priestly prayer). Chapters 18 and 19 tell of the Garden of Gethsemane prayer, the betrayal by Judas, Jesus' several trials before the Romans, Greeks, and Jews, then the journey to be crucified at Mount Calvary. While on the cross at Mount Calvary the Lord spoke seven times.

Sayings 1 to 3 occur from 9:00AM TO 12:00AM and are TOWARD OTHERS Mark 15:25

1. FATHER, FORGIVE THEM; they don't know what they do, Luke 23:34
(Padre, perdonalos, porque no saben lo que hacen)

The Lord's Prayer, "forgive us our sins, as we forgive those who sin against us." Luke 11:4 paraphrased To Forgive supplies, replenishes life. Not to forgive takes away, drains life.

Forgive one another as I have forgiven you, Colossians 3:15.

2. TODAY YOU SHALL BE WITH ME IN PARADISE LU 23:43
(De cierto te dije que hoy estaras conmigo en el paraiso)

Two thieves, 1 believed in his heart, by faith - One knew in mind, by knowledge. What a difference! Yes, one can hear and see God, but not believe in their heart. Romans 10:9,10 We can hear the words of God (from the bible and others) and see the works of God (in nature and others) - but don't believe in God, from our heart. Faith and repentance are inseparable. Remember Tuesday's study by PO Grimes. Faith and repentance are inseparable. Luke 23:39-43 The "If" is full of disbelief, irrelevance, selfish, disdain.

3. WOMAN, BEHOLD YOUR SON! Disciple, behold your mother! JN 19:26,27
(Mujer, he ahi tu hijo. Despues dijo al discipulo, He ahi tu madre)

Jesus gives the beloved apostle John and his mother Mary, to share the mother-son relationship. Jesus calls his mother "woman." Mary's body was a vessel to carry the God-man Jesus. This was a great privilege and honor. But only for the purpose that God's Son could come to live among us and experience all life's relationships, joys, and sorrows in the family, community, work, and religion, without sin. That is why Jesus is an arbitrator between man and God. 1 Timothy 2:5 He can identify with us when we call upon God for His mercy. 1 Corinthians 10:13.

Who is my mother or brethren or family? Those who do the will of God. Mark 3:31-35

Sayings 4 to 7 occur from 12:00 AM TO 3:00 PM or immediately after 3:00 PM and are TOWARD GOD

Mathew 27:45 [there was darkness upon the earth as in the 9th judgment of Pharaoh Exodus 10:21]

4. MY GOD, MY GOD, WHY has thou forsaken me MT 27:45,46 MK 15:34-36
(near 3:00 - cries 5,6,7 follow promptly)
(Clamo a gran voz, diciendo: Dios mio, Dios mio, ¿porque me has desamparado?)

Why - as in Job or in Habakkuk. Separated from God this one time in eternity, He became the sacrificial lamb of the Old Testament religion of Israel. He took upon Himself the past, present and future sin of humanity. A holy God could not look upon His Son Jesus when he took the sin of the world upon himself. He was sacrificed once and for all.

5. I THIRST JN 19:28
(Tengo sed)

Human, physical identity. 1 Cor 10:13 A great thirst. He took the vinegar drink of soldiers.

* When offered wine with myrrh, narcotic drink to relieve pain, Jesus refused. Mark 15:23

6. IT IS FINISHED JN 19:30

(Consumado es)

The finality of the mission, complete. Fulfilled Gen 3:15. This is the central point of our history and our calendar.

7. FATHER, INTO YOUR HANDS I COMMEND MY SPIRIT, MT 27:50 MK 15:37 LU 23:46 JN 19:30

Jesus cried with a loud voice FATHER, INTO YOUR HANDS I COMMEND MY SPIRIT, and having said thus, he gave up the ghost (spirit is the same, referring to the holy spirit)

(Clamando a gran voz, dijo: Padre, en tus manos encomiendo mi espiritu. Y expiro)

Cry of Victory!!! I have finished what I came to do. I'm going home! (Victory - to be absent from the body is present with the Lord, 2 Corinthians 5). LU 23:46 Complete saying. Different writers are complimentary.

* Soon after 1. Temple veil was torn in two from top to bottom. Mark 15:38

2. An Earthquake occurred. Matthew 27:52-53

3. The Old Testament saints were raised from the graves. Matthew 27:52,53

* Also 1. Smashed bones of legs to two thieves, Jesus already dead. Numbers 9:12, Psalm 34:20

This added suffering before mercy death by the sword into the heart. Usually hung on cross 2 to 3 days.

2. Pierced heart to ensure dead. Jesus' heart produced blood and water. (study)

Into your hands - metaphor, created in his image, God is spirit. I commend my spirit - 3 X in NT WE WILL SEE THREE Different ways to expire. GIVE UP - EXPIRE OR BREATHE OUT IN HEBREW. GENESIS 2:7 And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and man became a living soul.

The Last Seven Days of Jesus in his human body**1st and 2nd Coming of Jesus Christ**

Da 9:24 Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city (Jerusalem), to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy. ([Acts 2 to Revelation 3 is between the 69th and 70th week](#))

1st Coming of Jesus Christ (as the Lamb of God)

Da 9:25 Know therefore and understand, [that] from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem unto the Messiah the Prince [shall be] seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times. **Da 9:26** And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; ([Roman Empire, General Titus, 70 AD](#))

2nd Coming of Jesus Christ (as the King of Kings)



and the end thereof [shall be] with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.




Da 9:27 And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make [it] desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.

Ephesians 4:9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?)

Passover >Unleavened Bread >Firstfruit (Spring) Pentecost (Summer) Trumpets >Atonement >Tabernacles (Fall)

Note: The Jewish mind understands 3 partial days and nights. Genesis 42:17-18, Esther 4:16-5:1, 1 Samuel 30:12-13, 2 Chronicles 5-12. Three literal days and nights as Jonah was in the fish "forces" a death on Wednesday and not the context.

Daniel 9:25a, c Know therefore and understand, [that] from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.	Daniel 9:25b. unto the Messiah the Prince [shall be] seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: (69 weeks x 360 day years = 173, 880 days, Jesus's triumphant entry into Jerusalem as a king.)		Matthew 21-26 Mark 11-14 Lu 19:29-22:6 John 12:12-50 Lament over Jerusalem 2 nd cleansing of Temple Healing in the Temple Curse-Death of Fig Tree 3 parables: wedding dinner Jewish rulers 4 questions Olivet discourse of Return Mary anoints Jesus feet Judas betrays Jesus	John 13-17 
Ezra 7:11-28	Matthew 21:4-5 Zechariah 9:9	Sunday	Monday-Wednesday	Thursday
March 14, 445 BC	April 6, 32 AD	Day 1 (April 6, 32 AD)	Days 2-4	Day 5

 Mt 27:51-53	Ge 2:3 And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. Jesus is our rest Hebrews 4:10 (3:18-4:16)	Up from the grave Christ's body arose 	The empty tomb 	7x7+1=50 days 2 nd coming as King of kings
Friday (< 6 pm)	Saturday (> 6pm)	Sunday	Sunday	Season / 70 th week
Day 6	Day 7	Day 8 or First Day	Feast of Pentecost	Feast of Tents

The I Am in the four Gospels comparison table

	Matthew		Mark		Luke		John		Total
I AM	0		1	14:62 High Priest	0		19	100% (includes Jn 4:26 Greek)	20
I Am	1	22:32, Ex 3 Sadducees	1	12:26, Ex 3 Sadducees	1	22:70 Pilate	8	100%	11
I am	22		9		18		28		77
Other	0		0		0		4	I am not, Jn 1-3 John 8:24 believe not I AM	4
Sub-total	23		11		19		59		112
Total			53				59		112

*** ROAD TO DAMASCUS - ROAD OF LIFE**

1ST Christian - lying (LOW ROAD)

Acts 5:5 And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

Acts 5:10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying [her] forth, buried [her] by her husband.

1 Cor 11:26-32 Lords supper and judging ourselves.

Romans 13:11 And that, knowing the time, that now [it is] high time to awake out of sleep: for now [is] our salvation nearer than when we believed.

2ND Christian - victorious (HIGH ROAD)

Acts 7:59, 60 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

Romans 13:14 Put on the Lord Jesus Christ.

I Thessalonians 5:6 Therefore let us not sleep, as [do] others; but let us watch and be sober.

I Thes 5:10 Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him. 5:4-11

I Thessalonians 5:23 I pray to God that your spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless until the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ.

3RD Nonchristian - blasphemy (NO ROAD) John 14:6

Acts 12:23 And immediately, the angel of the Lord smote him because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

Series: New Worship in the New Testament – before Jesus’ Public Ministry

<u>Passage</u>	<u>Title</u>	<u>Jesus’ age</u>	<u>Angels</u>
1. John 1:1-5	New Worship – in the Beginning – with God	in Heaven	Yes
2. Luke 1:5-25	New Worship - in Silence - with Zacharias (John)	in Heaven	Yes
3. Luke 1:26-38	New Worship – in Obedience – with Mary	in Heaven	Gabriel
4. Luke 1:39-45	New Worship – in Joy - with Elisabeth (John)	3 mo - womb	No
5. Luke 1:46-56	New Worship – in Praise – with Mary	3 mo - womb	Yes
6. Luke 1:57-66	New Worship – in Witness – with John	6 mo - womb	No
7. Luke 1:67-80	New Worship – in Witness - with Zacharias	6 mo - womb	No
8. Luke 2:8-20	New Worship – in Simplicity – with Shepherds	birthday - Oct	Yes
9. Luke 2:21-38	New Worship – in Holy Spirit – w/ Simeon & Anna	8 /40 days	No
10. Matthew 2:1-18	New Worship – in Giving – with Wise Men	> 1 year	Yes
11. Matthew 2:19-23	New Worship – in Time & Place – with Joseph	2-4 years	Yes
12 Lu 2:39-40, 51-52	New Worship – in Nazareth – with Joseph & Mary	4-30 years	No
13. Lu 2:41-50	New Worship – in Teaching – with Joseph & his Mother	12 years	No
14. Mt 3:1-16, Lu 3:1-14, Jn 1:6-28	New Worship – in Witness – with John	29 years	No
15. Mk 1:1-13, Lu 3:15-23, Jn 1:29-33	New Worship – in Baptism – with John	30 years	God
16. Mt 4:1-11, Lu 4:1-13	New Worship – in Scripture – with Jesus & Satan	30 years	Yes

Jesus ` Public Ministry of 3 ½ years. His death was in April 3, AD 33. (Monk error by 4 years, 29 A.D.)

Harmony of the Gospels at the garden of Gethsemane

Apostle Matthew 26:³⁰ And having sung a hymn, they went forth to the mount of the Olives;

1st³¹⁻³⁵ Peter's and the other 10 disciples promise not to deny Jesus

2nd³⁶ Then came with them Jesus to a place called Gethsemane, and he said to the disciples, 'Sit ye here, till having gone away, I shall pray yonder.'³⁷ And having taken Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, he began to be sorrowful, and to be very heavy;³⁸ then says he to them, 'Exceedingly sorrowful is my soul--unto death; abide ye here, and watch with me.'³⁹ And having gone forward a little, he fell on his face, praying, and saying, 'My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as Thou.'⁴⁰ And he comes unto the disciples, and finds them sleeping, and he says to Peter, 'So! ye were not able one hour to watch with me!⁴¹ watch, and pray, that ye may not enter into temptation: the spirit indeed is forward, but the flesh weak.'⁴² Again, a second time, having gone away, he prayed, saying, 'My Father, if this cup cannot pass away from me except I drink it, Your will be done;'⁴³ and having come, he finds them again sleeping, for their eyes were heavy.⁴⁴ And having left them, having gone away again, he prayed a third time, saying the same word;⁴⁵ then cometh he unto his disciples, and says to them, 'Sleep on henceforth, and rest! lo, the hour has come nigh, and the Son of Man is delivered up to the hands of sinners.⁴⁶ Rise, let us go; lo, he has come nigh who is delivering me up.'

Disciple Mark 14:²⁶ And having sung an hymn, they went forth to the mount of the Olives,

1st²⁷⁻³¹ Peter's and the other 10 disciples promise not to deny Jesus

2nd³² And they come to a spot, the name of which is Gethsemane, and he says to his disciples, 'Sit ye here till I may pray;' ³³ and he takes Peter, and James, and John with him, and began to be amazed, and to be very heavy, ³⁴ and he says to them, 'Exceeding sorrowful is my soul--to death; remain here, and watch.'³⁵ And having gone forward a little, he fell upon the earth, and was praying, that, if it be possible the hour may pass from him, ³⁶ and he said, 'Abba, Father; all things are possible to Thee; make this cup pass from me; but, not what I will, but what Thou.'³⁷ And he comes, and finds them sleeping, and says to Peter, 'Simon, you did sleep! you was not able to watch one hour! ³⁸ Watch ye and pray, that ye may not enter into temptation; the spirit indeed is forward, but the flesh weak.'³⁹ And again having gone away, he prayed, the same word saying; ⁴⁰ and having returned, he found them again sleeping, for their eyes were heavy, and they had not known what they might answer him. ⁴¹ And he cometh the third time, and says to them, 'Sleep on henceforth, and rest--it is over; the hour did come; lo, the Son of Man is delivered up to the hands of the sinful; ⁴² rise, we may go, lo, he who is delivering me up has come nigh.'

Note: Abba – Romans 8:15, Galatians 4:6 (3x), in context. a heart cry to God, Chaldean or Aramaic word. Father is pater in Greek (372x).

Disciple Luke 22:³⁹ And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. ⁴⁰ And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation. ⁴¹ And he was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, ⁴² Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but your, be done. ⁴³ And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. ⁴⁴ And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground. ⁴⁵ And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow, ⁴⁶ And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

Apostle John 18:1 When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples.

Harmony of the Gospels at the garden of Gethsemane

Common

Matthew	Mark	Luke	John
1- Sung hymn	sung hymn	N/A	N/A
2- N/A	N/A	N/A	Jn 14-17, Left upper room
3- Peter/all 12 promise not to deny Jesus		N/A	N/A
4- Mount of Olives	Mount of Olives	Mount of Olives	garden
5- Cup/ cup	cup	cup	N/A
6- Not my will, but your will, 3x	not my will, but your will, 2x	not my will, but your will, 1x	N/A
7- Sleepy	sleepy	sleepy / sorrow	N/A
Eyes heavy	eyes heavy/no answer	N/A	N/A

Different

Matthew	Mark	Luke / Acts	John
1. Son of David	Son of None	Son of Man	Son of God
2. OT link	suffering servant	discipleship	truth
3. N/A	Peter's influence	Paul's influence	N/A
4. Fullest account	shorter account	shortest account (summary)	N/A
5. Jew (earthly promises)	half Jew (Rome)	Gentile	Jew (heavenly p.)
6. Peter & 2 sons of Zebedee	Peter, James & John	disciples	disciples
7. Pray, 5x (252 words)	pray, 4x (238 words)	pray, 5x (122 words)	N/A
8. Fell to face to pray	fell to ground to pray Kneeled down & prayed	stones cast	N/A
9. 3 separate temptations	3 separate temptations	3 to 1 merged temptation	N/A
10. Watch & pray – temptation	watch & pray – temptation	pray – temptation	N/A
11. Spirit willing/flesh weak	spirit willing/flesh weak	N/A	N/A
12. Rise	rise	rise and pray	N/A
13. N/A	N/A	Adds angel strengthened	N/A
14. N/A	N/A	Adds sweat as drops of blood	N/A

- Mark the disciple
- Mark was the nephew of Barnabas, who was cousin to Peter's wife.
- Mark was one of the servants at the wedding feast at Cana who poured out the water that Jesus turned to wine. This is Jesus' first public miracle, however it is not related in the *Gospel of Mark*.
- Mark was one of the Seventy Apostles sent out by Christ; he was the servant who carried water to the house of Simon the Cyrenian, where the Last Supper took place; and Mark was the one who hosted the disciples in his house after the death of Jesus, and into whose house the resurrected Jesus Christ came, although all the doors were shut.
- The New Testament sources for the life of John Mark are slender and need interpreting. The John Mark in *Acts* (xii, 12, 25; xv, 37) mentioned as John (xiii, 5, 13) and as Mark (xv, 39) is surely the Mark mentioned by Paul (*Colossians.*, iv, 10; *II Tim.*, iv, 11; *Philem.*, 24) and by Peter in *I Peter*, v, 13.
- Mark of the Pauline Letters was the cousin (*anepsios*) of Barnabas (*Colossians.*, iv, 10), to whom Mark of Acts seems to have been bound by some special tie (*Acts*, xv, 37, 39).
- Mark's mother was a prominent member of the earliest group of Christians in Jerusalem; it was to her house that Peter turned on his release from prison; the house was approached by a porch (pulon), there was a slave girl (*paidiske*) to open the door, and the house was a meeting-place for the brethren, "many" of whom were praying there the night St. Peter arrived from prison (*Acts*, xii, 1)

Acts (28-122, 2.25 hr) 2021

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12
13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28

12 Historical Acts of the Holy Spirit

Some historical and time specific acts of the Holy Spirit

Scripture

Chapters 1-12 focus on the Apostle Peter and Israel

- 1) Jesus commanded the Apostles through the Holy Spirit for 40 days 1:2
- 2) Peter said, Ananias why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Spirit 5:3
- 3) Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit - - did great wonders and miracles 6:5, 8
- 4) Then the Spirit said to Philip, Go near, and join yourself to the chariot 8:29
- 5) While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold three men seek you. 10:19
- 6) Agabus stood up, and signified by the Spirit that there should be great dearth throughout all the world. 11:28

Chapters 13-28 focus on the Apostle Paul and the Gentiles

- 7) As they ministered to the Lord and fasted, the Holy Spirit said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work I have called them.... So they, being sent forth by the Holy Spirit... Then Saul, (or Paul) filled with the Holy Spirit set his eyes on him and said 13:2,4,9
 - 8) Paul and Barnabas said, "we turn to the Gentiles", then persecution arose – disciples filled with joy and with the Holy Spirit. 13:52
 - 9) God, which knows the hearts... gave the Gentiles the Holy Spirit... purifying their hearts by faith 15:8-9
 - 10) Paul and Timothy were forbidden of the Holy Spirit to preach the word in Asia... then the Spirit Forbid their going into Bithynia... Then Paul had a vision in the night of a man standing and saying "Come over into Macedonia and help us." (2nd missionary journey, Acts 15:36-18:22) 16:6-7, 9
 - 11) later in Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the Spirit, and testified to the Jews Jesus Christ 18:5
 - 12) disciples said to Paul through the Spirit, "you should not go to Jerusalem. A prophet Agabus Took Paul's clothes and tied his hands and feet, and said, so shall the Jews at Jerusalem do to you 21:4,11
- Pauls' trials 21:15-26:23
- Paul's trip to Rome 27-28

During his 1st Roman imprisonment for 2 years he wrote 4 letters: Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Philemon . Then after being free for a year he was imprisoned again for around a year when he wrote 2 Timothy. Paul was martyred by the Roman Emperor Nero around 68 AD.

Related Scripture: Ephesians 2:20, Hebrews 2:4-5, 2 Peter 3:1

History of the Early Church – the spreading of the revelation from the Jews to the Gentiles

Background: The writer is Luke the physician, who must give account of the early church from many eyewitnesses. Luke is the only gentile writer in the Bible. We know not of his life before joining with Paul on his 2nd and 3rd missionary journeys (Acts 16:10). His perspective and purpose of writing is not to teach, exhort, correct, or discipline – but to write an accurate historical account.

Key Verse is Acts 1:8 But ye shall receive **authority, after the Holy Spirit is come upon you**: and **ye shall be witnesses to me** in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and to the uttermost part of the earth.

Pattern: Prayer – Authority – Proclaim - Persecution – More Prayer

Part 1: Chapters 1-7 Witness in Jerusalem 33 AD

People saved (5 times): 2:4?, 2:41, 3:16, 4:4, 5:14

Luke 24	Christ was crucified, resurrected and showed himself alive for	40 days	
(1) 1	Preparation for Pentecost	9 days	
(2) 2	Feast of Pentecost, Peter's Witness, 3000 souls saved	1 day (months in-between)	
(3) 3:1-5:42	Lame Man Healed and Effects: 5000 saved & imprisonment	2 days (months in-between)	
(4) 6:1-7	More Spiritual Leaders needed	1 day (months in-between)	
(5) 6:8-8:3	Stephen's Witness, the first Disciple Martyred – Saints Scattered	1 day	34 AD

Part 2: Chapters 8-12 Witness Extends to Samaria and Judea

People saved (7 times): Samaria **8:14-17**, 8:36, 9:35, 9:42 Judea **10:44-47**, 11:21, 12:24

(6) 8:4-8:40	Philip's Witness in Samaria to Sorcerer & Ethiopian (map)		
(7) 9:1-31	Jesus Witnesses to Saul (from Persecutor to Peace-maker)	1 day	35 AD
(8) 9:32-11:18	Peter's Witness in Judea to Cornelius (The Gentile Pentecost)	2 days	36 AD
(9) 11:19-12:25	Barnabas and Saul Unite, James Martyred & Peter Imprisoned		

Part 3: Chapters 13-28 Witness Extends to uttermost part of the earth 45 AD

People saved (9 times): 13:48, 14:21-23, 16:1, 17:4, 17:12, 17:31, 18:26, **19:4-6** and 28:24

(10) 13-14	1 st Witnessing Journey of Saul (Paul) & Barnabas (map)	< 2 years	46-48 AD
(11) 15	Council at Jerusalem (James) Galatians - 1 50 AD, Gal 2:1		49 AD
(12) 15:36-18:22	2 nd Witnessing Journey of Paul & Silas (map) 1 & 2 Thes – 2 & 3, 18:5, from Corinth, 51 AD	3 years	49-52 AD
(13) 18:23-21:14	3 rd Witnessing Journey of Paul & Timothy (map)	4 years	53-58 AD
	1 Cor - 4, 19:22, from Ephesus, 56 AD. 2 Cor - 5, Ro - 6, from Macedonia		57 AD
(14) 21:15-23:35 24:1 - 26:23	Paul's Witness in Jerusalem to a mob & the Sanhedrin Paul's Witness in Caesarea to Felix, Festus & Agrippa	7 days >2 years	58-59 AD
(15) 27-28	Paul's Witness on Trip to Rome (map)	4 months	59 AD

2 years in prison: **Ephesians 7, Philippians - 8, Colossians-9, Philemon 10 (1 Peter) 60-62 AD**

4th Witnessing Journey: **1 Timothy - 11 & Titus - 12 (Hebrews - 13, 2 Peter) 63-66 AD**

2nd Roman imprisonment: **2 Timothy - 14 and martyred by Nero 67-68 AD**

(1,2,3 John & Revelation)

Part 4: Personal Reflection and Application

(16) [Acts 29 to today](#) **68 AD to Present**

(17) My Acts by the Holy Spirit **Past-Present & Future**

Lesson: As we understand Luke the interpretation and application of Acts takes an unique and appropriate meaning. I recall as a young believer being set in circumstances where I read from Romans to Jude in three days; not until later knowing the Holy Spirit led to begin in Romans instead of Acts or even Matthew or Genesis, in order to get grounded in the doctrine of Christ.

Note that the Apostle John was not an evangelist or church builder, but only an elder that knows what is happening in the church and a revelation.

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Acts 1:14	Prayer & Supplication	Waiting for power		All in one accord	In upper room
Acts 1:24	Prayer	Choice		Cast lots	Chose Matthias for Judas
Acts 2:42	Prayers	Continue		Outpouring of Spirit	1-18 manifestations of Spirit
Acts 3:1 (1-11)	Prayer	9 th hour		Regular time, temple	Healed lame man
Acts 4:29-31	Supplication	Boldness			Whole place shook
Acts 6:1-4	Prayer	Select servants	Church division		Leaders need time in Word & prayer
Acts 6:6	Prayer	Select servants			Laid hands on them
Acts 7:59-60	Intercession	Forgiveness		Lord, lay not charge	Stephen stoned to death
Acts 8:34	Conversation	Understand text			Eunuch-Phillip / I pray you
Acts 9:11	Supplication				Saul praying
Acts 9:40 (36-43)	Supplication	Tabitha			Peter raised from death
Acts 12:5 (1-19)	Supplication	Peter in prison		Angel of the Lord	w/o ceasing by the congregation
Acts 14:23	Supplication	Ordain elders		Fasting	
Acts 16:9	Conversation			Man of Macedonia	Vision of Paul
Acts 23:18	Conversation	Paul's deliverance		Young man helped	
Acts 24:4	Conversation				Paul-Felix / I pray you

33 AD (Luke and Paul, Gal 1:15-20, collect and order data for Luke-Acts, 35-66 AD)

1:1-5 **Introduction & Review**, *Jesus Speaks for 40 Days about the Kingdom of God (Luke 1:1-4, 24)*

(1) ¹ The former treatise I have made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began to do and teach, ² Until the day in which He was taken up, after that He through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom He had chosen: ³ To whom also He showed Himself alive after His passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God: ⁴ And, being assembled together with them, **commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, [says He], ye have heard of Me.** ⁵ For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

Note: Theophilus in Greek is God lover. In Luke he was "most excellent", a high political Roman position

1:6-11 **Apostles Question of the Kingdom to Israel (1:6-8) Jesus Ascends into Heaven (1:9-11)**

(2) ⁶ When they therefore were come together, they asked of Him, saying, Lord, will you at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? ⁷ And He said unto them, **It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father has put in His own^a authority.** ⁸ **But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto Me in both Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and to the uttermost part of the earth.** ⁹ And when He had spoken these things, while they beheld, He was taken up; and a cloud received Him out of their sight. ¹⁰ And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; ¹¹ Which also said, **Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.**

^a Power ^{KJV} ^b Dunamis. The 2 men are 2 angels as in Luke 24:4-7 at the day of his resurrection.

1:12-14 **Prayer in the Upper Room (15 men, plus Mary and the women of Luke 24:10, all from Galilee)**

(3) ¹² Then returned they to Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey. ¹³ And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode Peter, James, John, Andrew, Philip, Thomas, Bartholomew, Matthew, James [the son] of Alphaeus, Simon Zelotes, and Judas [the brother] of James. ¹⁴ These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with His brethren.

Notes: Sabbath day's journey is 900 meters or one-half mile. Lu 24:47-53, Jerus-Bethany-Galilee-Jerus-Mt Olivet. Accord is used 12x: 11x in Acts and 1x in Romans 15:16 (mind). Greek = homothumadon, homo = same / thumadon = passion or warmly in heart and mind. Totally there and in tune, accordian. Good or evil united in the same manner.

1:15-26 **Judas' Suicide (1:15-20, Matthew 27:3-10/\$, Luke/Medical) Replaced by Matthias (1:21-26)**

(4) ¹⁵ And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about a hundred and twenty,) ¹⁶ Men [and] brethren, this Scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the ^a Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spoke before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus. ¹⁷ For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry. ¹⁸ Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. ¹⁹ And it was known to all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in their own ^b language, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood. ²⁰ For it is written in the book of Psalms, **LET HIS HABITATION BE DESOLATE, AND LET NO MAN DWELL THEREIN: AND HIS^c BISHOPRIC LET ANOTHER TAKE.** ²¹ Which of these men have accompanied us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, ²² Beginning from the baptism of John, to that same day that He was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of His resurrection. ²³ And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. ²⁴ And they prayed, and said, You, Lord, which

Acts Chapter 1

²⁵ That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place. ²⁶ And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

^a Psalm 69:25 and 109:8. ^b Tongue KJV, Dialektos in Greek. 6x in Acts: 1:19, 2:6, 2:8, 21:40, 22:2, 26:14. Refers directly to known understood language. ^c Same as Elder or Overseer or Episkope, 1 Timothy 3:1, Church govt.

Acts Chapter 2

The Birth of the Church

33 AD

2:1-13 **Sound from Heaven, Fire and Speak the Wonderful Works of God (120 Galileans)**

(5) ¹ And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. ² And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. ³ And there appeared to them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. ⁴ And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. ⁵ And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. ⁶ Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own tongue. ⁷ And they were all amazed and marveled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans? ⁸ And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born? ⁹ Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, ¹⁰ Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, ¹¹ Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God. ¹² And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What means this? ¹³ Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine.

Note: Tongues = Known Understood Languages. Greek = glossa, used 48x, signifies unnaturally acquired. Acts 11 & 19. 1 Cor 12 and 14, The least of the gifts to some. 1 Cor 14:21-22, sign of judgment. True & false tongues mixed. The tongues as of fire is a sign to the Jews, not the eternal fire of Matthew 3.

2:14-36 **Peter's First Message – 10 Points Speak the Wonderful Works of God**

(6) ¹⁴ But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judaea, and all [ye] that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: ¹⁵ For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is [but] the third hour of the day. ¹⁶ But ^a this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; ¹⁷ **AND IT SHALL COME TO PASS IN THE LAST DAYS, SAYS GOD, I WILL POUR OUT OF MY SPIRIT UPON ALL FLESH: AND YOUR SONS AND YOUR DAUGHTERS SHALL PROPHECY, AND YOUR YOUNG MEN SHALL SEE VISIONS, AND YOUR OLD MEN SHALL DREAM DREAMS: ¹⁸ AND ON MY SERVANTS AND ON MY HANDMAIDENS I WILL POUR OUT IN THOSE DAYS OF MY SPIRIT; AND THEY SHALL PROPHECY: ¹⁹ ^b AND I WILL SHOW WONDERS IN HEAVEN ABOVE, AND SIGNS IN THE EARTH BENEATH; BLOOD, AND FIRE, AND VAPOR OF SMOKE: ²⁰ THE SUN SHALL BE TURNED INTO DARKNESS, AND THE MOON INTO BLOOD, BEFORE THAT GREAT AND NOTABLE DAY OF THE LORD COME: ²¹ AND IT SHALL COME TO PASS, [THAT] WHOEVER SHALL CALL ON THE NAME OF THE LORD SHALL BE SAVED.**

^a Joel 2:28-32. Vs 17-18 began fulfillment then and vs 17-20 are fulfilled in the future. Last days includes the 1st and 2nd coming, in context. Acts 1:3 kingdom of God, 1:6 kingdom to Israel. Peter and 12 Apostles understood later; Acts 10, Acts 15, Galatians 2:12 (11-21), Heb 2:3-4. 1 & 2 Peter.

(7) ²² Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a Man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by Him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know: ²³ Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: ²⁴ Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that He should be held of it. ²⁵ For David speaks concerning Him, ^a **I FORESAW ²⁶ THEREFORE DID MY HEART REJOICE, AND MY TONGUE WAS GLAD; MOREOVER ALSO MY FLESH SHALL REST IN HOPE: ²⁷ BECAUSE YOU WILL NOT LEAVE MY SOUL IN HADES, NEITHER WILL YOU ALLOW YOUR HOLY ONE TO SEE**

Acts Chapter 2

CORRUPTION. ²⁸ **YOU HAVE MADE KNOWN TO ME THE WAYS OF LIFE; YOU SHALL MAKE ME FULL OF JOY WITH YOUR COUNTENANCE.** ²⁹ Men [and] brethren, let me freely speak to you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulcher is with us unto this day. ³⁰ Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, He would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; ³¹ He seeing this before spoke of the resurrection of Christ, that **HIS SOUL WAS NOT LEFT IN HADES, NEITHER HIS FLESH DID SEE CORRUPTION.** ³² This Jesus has God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. ³³ Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he has shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. ³⁴ For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he says himself, ^b **THE LORD SAID TO MY LORD, SIT ON MY RIGHT HAND,** ³⁵ **UNTIL I MAKE YOUR FOES YOUR FOOTSTOOL.** ³⁶ Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God has made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

Note: *10 point message:* Jesus' Life (22), Death (23), Burial (23), Resurrection (24), fulfillment of prophecy (25-29), Ascension (30-32), Exaltation (33a), Father sends Holy Spirit (33b), Return as king (34-35), sin revealed (36).

^a Psalm 16:8-11. Explanation of vs 25-28 given in vs 29-34.

^b Psalm 110:1. Most quoted Psalm in the New Testament. Matthew 24: 43, Mark 12:36, Luke 20:42 in debate with Pharisees at the temple. Jehovah said to Adonai. Psalm 110:4 refers to King-Priest Melchizedek.

^c Greek *αδης Hades*, or place of the dead. It corresponds with the word translated "hell," *שאוּל she'ol* in context of Old Testament passages; its usual signification, among the Hebrews, was "the lower world, the region of departed spirits." Used 11x in the New Testament; Matthew 2x, Mark 2x, Acts 2x, 1 Corinthians 1x, Revelation 4x. Gehenna is used 12x and translated hell in context to eternal torment and fire, waiting for the lake of fire in Revelation 20:14.

2:37-41 3,000 Jews Repent, are Baptized, and Receive the Holy Spirit

(8) ³⁷ Now when they heard [this], they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men [and] brethren, what shall we do? ³⁸ Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. ³⁹ For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, [even] as many as the Lord our God shall call. ⁴⁰ And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. ⁴¹ Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added [to them] about three thousand souls.

Note: Holy Spirit convicts (37), Man Repents and baptized for the remission of sins – John the Baptizer's water baptism for Israel (38), Gift of Holy Spirit received (38-39) 12 men, 60 per hour = 4 ½ hours for 3000 baptisms. Mizpeh/baptismal pools at the southern gate of temple.

2:42-47 16 Manifestations of the Holy Spirit

(9) ⁴² And they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. ⁴³ And ^a fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signs were done by the apostles. ⁴⁴ And all that believed were together, and had all things common; ⁴⁵ And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all [men], as every man had need. ⁴⁶ And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their food with gladness and singleness of heart, ⁴⁷ Praising God, and having favor with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

Acts Chapter 2

Note: Fellowship and the communion service are closely related.

^a phobos *fo*b'-os, from a primary phebomai (to be put in fear); alarm or fright:--be afraid, + exceedingly, fear, terror. Acts 5:5, 11; 9:31 "Then had the churches rest throughout all Judaea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified; and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Spirit, were multiplied."

3,000 Jews hear the gospel (2:14-36), repent, are baptized, receive the Holy Spirit (2:37-41) show 16 manifestations of the Holy Spirit (2:42-47)

1. "they continued steadfastly **in the apostles' doctrine** and (vs 42)
2. in **fellowship**, and the (vs 42)
3. breaking of **bread**, and (vs 42)
4. **prayers**. And (vs 42)
5. **fear** came upon every soul: (vs 43)
6. and many **wonders & signs** were done **through the apostles** (vs 43) And Heb 2:3-4, Eph 2:20
7. all who believed were **together**, and (vs 44)
8. had **all things common**, and (vs 44)
9. **sold their possessions** and goods, and (vs 45)
10. **divided** them among all, as everyone had **need**. (vs 45)
11. And they, continuing **daily with one accord** in the **temple**, and (vs 46)
12. breaking **bread in houses**, (vs 46)
13. ate their food with **gladness** and **singleness of heart**, (vs 46)
14. **praising God**, and (vs 47)
15. having **favor** with all the people. And (vs 47)
16. the **Lord added** those who were being **saved daily** to the church." (vs 47)

Cause: Four manifestations 1-4 still apply the same today (necessary for spiritual growth)

Effect: Five manifestations 5 and 11-14 still apply the same today (revival)

Circumstantial: Seven manifestations 6-10 and 15-16 do not apply the same today

Acts Chapter 3

33 AD

3:1-11 **Peter & John go to Pray at the Temple & Heal A Lame Man** (pray 3pm-jail 6pm)

(10) ¹ Now Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, [being] the ninth [hour]. ² And a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple; ³ Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple asked for alms. ⁴ And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with John, said, Look on us. ⁵ And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them. ⁶ Then Peter said, Silver and gold I have none; but such as I have give I you: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk. ⁷ And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up: and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength. ⁸ And he leaping up stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple; walking, and leaping, and praising God. ⁹ Then all the people saw him walking and praising God: ¹⁰ And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: so they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him. ¹¹ As the lame man which was healed held Peter and John, all the people ran together to them in the porch that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

Acts Chapter 3

3:12-18 Peter Preaches the Providence of God in Israel and Jesus

(11) ¹² And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, "Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk? ¹³ The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied Him in the presence of Pilate, when He was determined to let him go. ¹⁴ But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; ¹⁵ Then killed the Prince of life, whom God has raised from the dead; whereof we are witnesses. ¹⁶ And His name, through faith in His name is this man made strong, whom ye see and know: yes, the faith which is by Him has given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all. ¹⁷ And now, brethren, I know that through ignorance ye did it, as [did] also your rulers. ¹⁸ But those things, which God before had showed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should allow, He has so fulfilled.

Note: Through ignorance they crucified Jesus, as Joseph's brothers; it worked out for the good of many, Gen 50:20.

3:19-4:4 The Invitation & Results of Peter's Second Message

(12) ¹⁹ Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord; ²⁰ And He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: ²¹ Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God has spoken by the mouth of all His holy prophets since the world began. ²² For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up to you of your brethren, like unto me; Him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever He shall say unto you. ²³ And it shall come to pass, [that] every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people. ²⁴ Yes, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days. ²⁵ Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying to Abraham, And in your seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed. ²⁶ Unto you first God, having raised up His Son Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities."

Notes: 3:22-25 Jesus is a prophet like Moses, in the midst of false prophets (Deuteronomy 18:15-22). This is a nations message. KJV and earlier versions use Son instead of Servant (3:13, 26) which is a stronger word choice for translating into English and the context of the deity of Jesus Christ.

Acts Chapter 4

33 AD

5,000 Believe and Persecution by the Sanhedrin

(13) ¹ And as they spoke unto the people, the priests, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them, ² Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead. ³ And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold to the next day: for it was now eventide. ⁴ Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed; and the number of the men was about five thousand.

4:5-22 Peter and John Proclaim Jesus Christ of Nazareth (vs 11, Psalm 118:22)

(14) ⁵ And it came to pass on the next day, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes, ⁶ And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem. ⁷ And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name, have ye done this? ⁸ Then Peter, filled with the Holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel, ⁹ If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole; ¹⁰ Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, [even] by Him does this man stand here before you whole.

Acts Chapter 4

¹¹ This is the stone which was set at nothing of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

¹² Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

(15) ¹³ Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marveled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

¹⁴ And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

¹⁵ But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves,

¹⁶ Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle has been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem; and we cannot deny [it]. ¹⁷ But that it spread no further among the people, let us straightly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.

¹⁸ And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Jesus.

¹⁹ But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken to you more than to God, judge ye. ²⁰ For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

²¹ So when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all glorified God for that which was done. ²² For the man was above forty years old, on whom this miracle of healing was showed.

4:23-37 12 Apostles Pray, Power, and Proclaim Jesus Christ (vs 25-26 Psalm 2:1-2)

(16) ²³ And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said to them. ²⁴ And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, You are God, which has made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is:

²⁵ Who by the mouth of your servant David has said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things? ²⁶ The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. ²⁷ For of a truth against Your holy child Jesus, whom You have anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were gathered together, ²⁸ For to do whatsoever Your hand and Your counsel determined before to be done. ²⁹ And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant to Your servants, that with all boldness they may speak Your word,

³⁰ By stretching forth Your hand to heal; and that signs and wonders may be done by the name of Your holy child Jesus. ³¹ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spoke the Word of God with boldness.

³² And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any [of them] that anything of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common.

³³ And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all. ³⁴ Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, ³⁵ And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need. ³⁶ And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, [and] of the country of Cyprus, ³⁷ Having land, sold [it], and brought the money, and laid [it] at the apostles' feet.

(17) ³² And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one soul: neither said any [of them] that anything of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things common.

³³ And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all. ³⁴ Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, ³⁵ And laid them down at the apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need. ³⁶ And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The son of consolation,) a Levite, [and] of the country of Cyprus, ³⁷ Having land, sold [it], and brought the money, and laid [it] at the apostles' feet.

Acts Chapter 5 5:1-16 Ananias & Sapphira Let Satan Fill their Hearts & Lie (1/2 truth) 33 AD

(18) ¹ But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, ² And kept back [part] of the price, his wife also being privy [to it], and brought a certain part, and laid [it] at the apostles' feet.

³ But Peter said, Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back [part] of the price of the land? ⁴ While it remained, was it not your own? and after it was sold, was it not in your own authority? why have you conceived this thing in your heart? you have not lied to men, but unto God.

⁵ And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the Spirit: and great fear came on all them that heard these things. ⁶ And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried [him] out, and buried [him].

⁷ And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

Acts Chapter 5

⁸ And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yes, for so much. ⁹ Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried your husband are at the door, and shall carry you out. ¹⁰ Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the Spirit: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying [her] forth, buried [her] by her husband. ¹¹ And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.

Note: John Calvin described the evil behind the lie or half-truth: contempt of God, sacrilegious defrauding, perverse vanity and ambition, lack of faith, corrupting of good and holy order, hypocrisy. They are putting new wine into old bottles, 2022 is the Year of the New Bottle of me and my wife.

Believers - Multitudes of Men and Women are Added to the Lord

(19) ¹² And by the hands of the apostles were many signs and wonders worked among the people; (and they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch. ¹³ And of the rest dared no man join himself to them: but the people magnified them. ¹⁴ And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.) ¹⁵ Insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them. ¹⁶ There came also a multitude [out] of the cities round about to Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed everyone.

Note: 4:30, 5:12, Lame man healed-whose faith-Acts 3:16 Jesus Christ, Hebrews 2:1-4, Eph 2:20, John 17, Rejoice names written in heaven, Gal 2:20, Rev 3 Laodicea, time management – priorities.

5:17-42 The 12 Apostles are Persecuted (in jail overnight) and Proclaim Jesus Christ

(20) ¹⁷ Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees,) and were filled with indignation, ¹⁸ And laid their hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison. ¹⁹ But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said, **²⁰ Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.** ²¹ And when they heard [that], they entered into the temple early in the morning, and taught. But the high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought. ²² But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told, ²³ Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing outside before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man within. ²⁴ Now when the high priest and the captain of the temple and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow. ²⁵ Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

We Must Obey God Rather than Man

(21) ²⁶ Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned. ²⁷ And when they had brought them, they set them before the council: and the high priest asked them, ²⁸ Saying, Did not we straightly command you that ye should not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us. ²⁹ Then Peter and the other Apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men. ³⁰ The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree. ³¹ Him has God exalted with His right hand to be a Prince and a Savior, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins. ³² And we are His witnesses of these things; and [so is] also the Holy Ghost, whom God has given to them that obey Him. ³³ When they heard, they were cut [to the heart], and took counsel to slay them.

Note: "vs 13 "raised up Jesus", incarnation-John Gill, seed of David, holy child Jesus and Acts 3:13.

Acts Chapter 5

Gamaliel a Pharisee Defends the Apostles (pharisee: human wisdom-mercy-still blind)

(22) ³⁴ Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a little space; ³⁵ And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as concerning these men.

³⁶ For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be somebody; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themselves: who was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nothing. ³⁷ After this man rose up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished; and all, [even] as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

³⁸ And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nothing: ³⁹ But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God. ⁴⁰ And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go. ⁴¹ And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for His name. ⁴² And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

Acts Chapter 6

33 AD

6:1-7 *The 12 Apostles Lay Hands on 7 Greek Speaking Helpers for the Grecian Widows*

(23) ¹ And in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations. ² Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples [unto them], and said, It is not reason that we should leave the Word of God, and serve tables. ³ Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the Holy Ghost and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business. ⁴ But we will give ourselves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word. ⁵ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch: ⁶ Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid [their] hands on them. ⁷ And the Word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

Note: Hellenistic Jews. Why 7? (1) Jesus fed 5,000 in Matthew 14 with 12 baskets of bread leftover. Later Jesus fed 4,000 in Matthew 15 with 7 baskets of bread leftover. (2) Jesus send the 12 Apostles to only the Jews of Israel in Luke 9. Later Jesus sends 70 disciples to all Israel including gentiles.

6:8-15 *False Witnesses Accuse Stephen of Blasphemy against Moses and God*

(24) ⁸ And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people. ⁹ Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called [the synagogue] of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia and of Asia, disputing with Stephen. ¹⁰ And they were not able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spoke. ¹¹ Then they suborned men, which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and [against] God. ¹² And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon [him], and caught him, and brought [him] to the council, ¹³ And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceases not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law: ¹⁴ For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered us. ¹⁵ And all that sat in the council, looking steadfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

Note: Council is the Sanhedrin; 71 priests, Sadducees, Pharisees, Scribes, and Elders. They are the Hebrew religious supreme court, after the pattern of Moses in the Wilderness in Exodus 18 when 70 men were selected to help Moses govern Israel.

7:1-8 *The Story of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob* (circa 2100 BC)

(25) ¹ Then said the **high priest**, Are these things so? ² And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken; The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Haran, ³ And said unto him, Get you out of your country, and from your kindred, and come into the land which I shall show you. ⁴ Then came he out of the land of the Chaldaeans, and dwelt in Haran: and from there, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land, wherein ye now dwell. ⁵ And he gave him no inheritance in it, no, not [so much as] to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when he had no child. ⁶ And God spoke on this wise, That his seed should sojourn in a strange land; and that they should bring them into bondage, and **treat them evil** ^a **four hundred years**. ⁷ And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God: and after that they will come forth, and serve me in this place. ⁸ And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so Abraham became the father of Isaac, and circumcised him the ^b eighth day; and Isaac Jacob; and Jacob the twelve patriarchs.

^a Genesis 15:13 prophesied. 430 years of Exodus 12:40 and Galatians 3:17 includes 30 years of peace and blessing under the first Pharaoh that knew Joseph.

^b Genesis 17:12.

7:9-18 *Joseph was Rejected by His Brethren, then Blessed of God* (1800 BC)

(26) ⁹ And the patriarchs, moved with envy, sold **Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him**, ¹⁰ And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he made him governor over Egypt and all his house. ¹¹ Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction: and our fathers found no sustenance. ¹² But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first. ¹³ **And at the second [time] Joseph was made known to his brethren; and Joseph's kindred was made known to Pharaoh.** ¹⁴ Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to [him], and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls. ¹⁵ So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, he, and our fathers, ¹⁶ And were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulcher that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor [the father] of ^a Sychem. ¹⁷ But when the time of **the promise drew near**, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt, ¹⁸ Until another king arose, which knew not Joseph.

^a At Hebron, where Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were Buried.

Note: 7:14, disregard the inferior Septuagint which states 70 which is only another way of numbering the family at this instance.

7:19-29 *Moses Raised in Egypt* (1st 40 years of Moses life) (circa 1525 BC)

(27) ¹⁹ The same dealt subtly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live. ²⁰ In which time Moses was born, and was exceedingly fair, and nourished up in his father's house three months: ²¹ And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son. ²² And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds. ²³ **And when he was full forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.** ²⁴ And seeing one [of them] allow wrong, he defended [him], and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian: ²⁵ For he supposed his brethren would have understood how that God by his hand would deliver them: but they understood not. ²⁶ And the next day he showed himself to them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong one to another? ²⁷ But he that did his neighbor wrong thrust him away, saying, Who made you a ruler and a judge over us? ²⁸ Will you kill me, as you did the Egyptian yesterday? ²⁹ Then Moses fled at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Midian, where he became the father of two sons.

Acts Chapter 7

7:30-41 **Moses Delivers Israel from Egypt & the Law given** (2nd and 3rd 40 years of Moses life)

(28) ³⁰ And **when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sinai an angel of the Lord, in a flame of fire in a bush.** ³¹ When Moses saw [it], he wondered at the sight: and as he drew near to behold [it], the voice of the Lord came unto him, ³² [Saying], **I [AM] THE GOD OF YOUR FATHERS, THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, AND THE GOD OF ISAAC, AND THE GOD OF JACOB.** Then Moses trembled, and dared not behold. ³³ Then said the Lord to him, **PUT OFF YOUR SHOES FROM YOUR FEET: FOR THE PLACE WHERE YOU STAND IS HOLY GROUND.** ³⁴ **I HAVE SEEN, I HAVE SEEN THE AFFLICTION OF MY PEOPLE WHICH IS IN EGYPT, AND I HAVE HEARD THEIR GROANING, AND AM COME DOWN TO DELIVER THEM. AND NOW COME, I WILL SEND YOU INTO EGYPT.** ³⁵ This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made you a ruler and a judge? the same did God send [to be] a ruler and a ^a deliverer **by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.** ³⁶ He brought them out, after that he had showed **wonders and signs** in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and **in the wilderness forty years.** ³⁷ This is that Moses, which said to the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like to me; him shall ye hear. ³⁸ This is he, that was in the church in the wilderness with the **angel which spoke to him in the mount Sinai**, and [with] our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us: ³⁹ **To whom our fathers would not obey**, but thrust [him] from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt, ⁴⁰ Saying to Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we know not what is become of him. ⁴¹ And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice to the idol, and rejoiced in the works of their own hands.

Notes on Old Testament prophecies: 7:32, Exodus 3:3. 7:33-34, Exodus 3:15. Wonders and signs increased when God changes his way of revealing truth to mankind 5 times: Moses (law) Elijah and Elisha (prophets), the 4 gospels (Jesus), the 12 apostles and Stephen and Philip (Acts or 1st century church), and the 7 year tribulation in Revelation 6-18 (the nation Israel and the world).

^a In Greek, Lutrotes: Redeemer. To set free by paying a ransom. The ransom Moses paid was choosing to suffer with the people of God rather than enjoy the riches of Egypt for a season; Hebrews 11:23-29.

7:42-50 **From Joshua to Babylon Captivity of Israel** (circa 1405 to 722/586-70=516 BC)

(29) ⁴² Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets, **O YE HOUSE OF ISRAEL, HAVE YE OFFERED TO ME SLAIN BEASTS AND SACRIFICES [BY THE SPACE OF] FORTY YEARS IN THE WILDERNESS?** ⁴³ **YES, YE TOOK UP THE TABERNACLE OF MOLOCH, AND THE STAR OF YOUR GOD REMPHAN, FIGURES WHICH YE MADE TO WORSHIP THEM: AND I WILL CARRY YOU AWAY BEYOND BABYLON.** ⁴⁴ Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking to Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen. ⁴⁵ Which also our fathers that came after brought in with Joshua into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drove out before the face of our fathers, to the days of David; ⁴⁶ Who found favor before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. ⁴⁷ But Solomon built him a house. ⁴⁸ Howbeit the Most High dwells not in temples made with hands; as says the prophet, ⁴⁹ **HEAVEN IS MY THRONE, AND EARTH IS MY FOOTSTOOL: WHAT HOUSE WILL YE BUILD ME? SAYS THE LORD: OR WHAT IS THE PLACE OF MY REST?** ⁵⁰ **HAS NOT MY HAND MADE ALL THESE THINGS?**

Notes on Old Testament prophets: 7:42, Amos 5:25-26. The Hebrews treated the 12 minor prophets as one book. 7:43, Joshua 24:20 and Jeremiah 20:6. 7:48, Isaiah 66:1-2

7:51-54 **Stephen Concludes His Message and Enrages the Sanhedrin**

(30) ⁵¹ Ye stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, **ye do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers [did], so [do] ye.** ⁵² Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which showed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers: ⁵³ Who have received the law by the **disposition of angels**, and have not kept [it]. ⁵⁴ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with [their] teeth.

Acts Chapter 7

7:55-60 **Stephen Sees Jesus in Heaven, Stoned to Death, Heaven and Falls Asleep** (circa 35 AD)

(31) ⁵⁵ But he, **being full of the Holy Ghost**, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, ⁵⁶ And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. ⁵⁷ Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord, ⁵⁸ And cast [him] out of the city, and stoned [him]: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul. ⁵⁹ And they stoned Stephen, calling upon [God], and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit. ⁶⁰ And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

Note: It seems like Stephen is being transformed from glory to glory by the Spirit of the Lord, 2 Cor 3:18.

Acts Chapter 8 Revival leads to Believers preaching the word and rejoicing 34 AD

8:1-4 **Saul Persecutes the Believers in Jerusalem and they Scatter Abroad Preaching the Word**

(32) ¹ And Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judaea and Samaria, except the apostles. ² And devout men carried Stephen [to his burial], and made great lamentation over him. ³ As for Saul, he made havoc of the church, entering into every house, and hauling men and women, committed them to prison. ⁴ Therefore they that were scattered abroad went everywhere preaching the word.

8:5-25 **Philip (5-8, 12, 14-17, 25) Preaches to Samaria (Simon the Sorcerer, 9-11, 13, 18-24)**

(33) ⁵ Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. ⁶ And the people with one accord gave heed to those things which Philip spoke, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did. ⁷ For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed [with them]: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed. ⁸ And there was great joy in that city. ⁹ But there was a certain man, called Simon, which before time in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one: ¹⁰ To whom they all gave heed, from the least to the great, saying, This man is the great power of God. ¹¹ And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries. ¹² But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. ¹³ Then Simon himself believed also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

Note: Simon is a false disciple. 8:13b Miracles and signs by the Apostles, Stephen, and Philip. Read *Miraculous Gifts, are they for today?* By Thomas R. Edgar, professor of New Testament Studies at Capital Bible Seminary for 43 years. Went to be with Jesus on December 1, 2021. He also wrote *Satisfied by the Promise of the Holy Ghost, Affirming the Fullness of God's Provision for Spiritual Living*.

Peter and John go to Samaria so they can Receive the Holy Ghost

(34) ¹⁴ Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the Word of God, they sent to them Peter and John: ¹⁵ Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost: ¹⁶ (For as yet He was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) ¹⁷ Then laid they [their] hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. ¹⁸ And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered them money, ¹⁹ Saying, Give me also this authority, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. ²⁰ But Peter said unto him, Your money perish with you, because you have thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. ²¹ You have neither part nor lot in this matter: for your heart is not right in the sight of God. ²² Repent therefore of this your wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of your heart may be forgiven you.

Acts Chapter 8

²³ For I perceive that you are in the gall of bitterness, and [in] the bond of iniquity. ²⁴ Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me. ²⁵ And they, when they had testified and preached the Word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.

Note: Simony is the buying or selling of a spiritual office, act, or privilege; especially from the 5th to 11th century. The motive is for personal gain. Two common examples are the sale of indulgences and relics; or today selling holy oil, prayer cloths or giving money for healing. 8:12, 16 The water baptism of John for repentance.

8:26-40 **Philip Teaches the Ethiopian** (Isaiah 53:7b-8a, missing 7a & 8b. 8 steps to rejoice.)

(35) ²⁶ And the angel of the Lord spoke to Philip, saying, **Arise, and go toward the south to the way that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza, which is desert.** ²⁷ And he arose and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship, ²⁸ Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Isaiah the prophet. (1st) ²⁹ Then the Spirit said to Philip, Go near, and join yourself to this chariot. ³⁰ And Philip ran thither to [him], and (2nd) heard him read the prophet Isaiah, and said, Do you understand what you read? ³¹ And he said, (3rd) How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up and sit with him.

(36) ³² The place of the Scripture which he read was this, **HE WAS LED AS A SHEEP TO THE SLAUGHTER; AND LIKE A LAMB DUMB BEFORE HIS SHEARER, SO OPENED HE NOT HIS MOUTH: ³³ IN HIS HUMILIATION HIS JUDGMENT WAS TAKEN AWAY: AND WHO SHALL DECLARE HIS GENERATION? FOR HIS LIFE IS TAKEN FROM THE EARTH.**

³⁴ And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray you, of whom speaks the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man? (4th) ³⁵ Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached unto him Jesus. ³⁶ And as they went on [their] way, they came to a certain water: and the eunuch said, See, [here is] water; what does hinder me to be baptized? ³⁷ And Philip said, If you (5th) believe with all your heart, you may. And he answered and said, (6th) I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. ³⁸ And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and (7th) they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him. ³⁹ And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing (8th). ⁴⁰ But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through he preached in all the cities, till he came to Caesarea.

Note: Philip stayed at Caesarea, Acts 21:7-14. True disciple - eight steps to salvation and rejoicing.

Acts Chapter 9

9:1-9 **Paul's Conversion from Persecutor to Peace-maker**

(37) ¹ And Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and ^a slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest, ² And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this **way**, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound to Jerusalem. ³ And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: ^b and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven: ⁴ And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying to him, **Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?** ⁵ And he said, Who are you, Lord? And the Lord said, **I am Jesus whom you persecute: it is hard for you to kick against the pricks.** ⁶ And he trembling and astonished said, **Lord, what will you have me to do?** And the Lord said unto him, **Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told you what you must do.** ⁷ And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man. ⁸ And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus. ⁹ And he was **three days** without sight, and **neither did eat nor drink.**

^a Murder: used 10 x in the New Testament (9x translated murder). Phonos in Greek. Acts 26:10-11.

^b Paul gives conversion testimony later, Acts 22:6-12, 26:12-18.

Acts Chapter 9

9:10-16 Disciple Ananias and Saul Have Visions

(38) ¹⁰ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named **Ananias**; and to him said the Lord in a **vision**, 'Ananias.' And he said, 'Behold, I am here Lord.' ¹¹ And the Lord said unto him, 'Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas for one called **Saul, of Tarsus**: for, behold, ^a he prays, ¹² And has seen in a **vision** a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.' ¹³ Then Ananias answered, 'Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he has done to your ^b saints at Jerusalem: ¹⁴ And here he has authority from the chief priests to bind all that call on your name.' ¹⁵ But the Lord said unto him, 'Go your way: for he is a chosen vessel to me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel: ¹⁶ For I will show him how great things he must suffer for my name's sake.'

^a Seven prayers of Paul: Ephesians 1:17-23, 3:14-21, Philippians 1:9-10, Colossians 1:9-11, 1 Thessalonians 3:10-13, 2 Thessalonians 1:11-12, 2:16-17. Paul made several comments and instructions on prayer in his 14 letters.

^b Saints = Hagios in Greek. Most holy one, sacred. First time used of 60 x in the New Testament. Used more often than brother – 45 x, disciples – 32 x, Christians – 3 x (in a derogatory manner), believers – 2 x. Brethren is used 195 x.

9:17-22 Saul's Beginning as a Brother in Christ

(39) ¹⁷ And Ananias went his way, and entered into the house; and putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul, the Lord, [even] Jesus, that appeared to you in the way as you came, has sent me, that you might receive your sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost. ¹⁸ And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales: and he received sight speedily, and arose, and was baptized. ¹⁹ And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. ^a Then was Saul certain days with the disciples which were at Damascus. ²⁰ And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God. ²¹ But all that heard were amazed, and said; Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound to the chief priests? ²² But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is Christ.

^a Galatians 1:16-18.

9:23-31 Saul's First Persecution – Fleeing in a Basket from Damascus

(40) ²³ And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him: ²⁴ But their laying await was known of Saul. And they watched the gates day and night to kill him. ²⁵ ^a Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket. ²⁶ And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple. ²⁷ But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared to them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus. ²⁸ And he was with them coming in and going out at Jerusalem. ²⁹ And he spoke boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him. ³⁰ [Which] when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Caesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus. ³¹ Then had the congregations rest throughout all Judea and Galilee and Samaria, and were **edified; and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, were multiplied.**

^a This is the first of Saul's persecutions. 2 Corinthians 11:23-33, (32-33).

Acts Chapter 9

9:32-35 **Peter Heals a Man Paralyzed for Eight Years**

(41) ³² And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all [quarters], he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda. ³³ And there he found a certain man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was paralyzed. ³⁴ And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ makes you whole: arise, and make your bed. And he arose immediately. ³⁵ And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron saw him, and turned to the Lord.

9:36-43 **Peter Raises Dorcas from Death at Joppa**

(42) ³⁶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named ^a Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works and alms deeds which she did. ³⁷ And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. ³⁸ And forasmuch as Lydda was near to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent to him two men, desiring that he would not delay to come to them. ³⁹ Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and showing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them. ⁴⁰ But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. ⁴¹ And he gave her [his] hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive. ⁴² And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many believed in the Lord. ⁴³ And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

^a Dorcas and Tabitha both mean Gazeelle.

Acts Chapter 10

The Gentile Pentecost (4 days)

33 to 40 AD

10:1-8 **Cornelius the Centurion has a Vision from an Angel to Hear Peter**

(43) ¹ There was a certain man in Caesarea called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian [band], ² A devout [man], and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God always. ³ He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth hour of the day an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, **Cornelius.** ⁴ And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, **Your prayers and your alms are come up for a memorial before God.** ⁵ **And now send men to Joppa, and call for [one] Simon, whose surname is Peter:** ⁶ **He lodges with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell you what you ought to do.** ⁷ And when the angel which spoke unto Cornelius was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him continually; ⁸ And when he had declared all [these] things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

10:9-23 **Peter's Vision of Unclean Animals, then goes to Caesarea to meet Cornelius**

(44) ⁹ On the next day, as they went on their journey, and drew near unto the city, Peter went up upon the housetop to ^a pray about the sixth hour: ¹⁰ And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance, ¹¹ And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth: ¹² Wherein were all manner of four footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. ¹³ And there came a voice to him, **Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.** ¹⁴ But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten anything that is common or unclean. ¹⁵ And the voice spoke unto him again the second time, **What God has cleansed, [that] call not common.** ¹⁶ This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven. ¹⁷ Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen should mean, behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius had made enquiry for Simon's house, and stood before the gate, ¹⁸ And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, was lodged there.

^a Devout Jews often prayed 3 times a day; morning, noon and night (9am, 12am, 3pm). Psalm 55:17.

Acts Chapter 10

Note: 10:11. Other times the third heaven is opened in the New Testament: Mt 3:16-Mr 1:10-Lu 3:21 when Jesus baptized by John, Acts 7:56 when Stephen martyred, Acts 10:11 when 1st gentile added to the church, Re 4:1 when church is raptured, Re 11:19 before wrath during the tribulation, Re 19:11 when Jesus Christ returns.

(45) ¹⁹ While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, **Behold, three men seek you.**

²⁰ **Arise therefore, and get you down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.**

²¹ Then Peter went down to the men which were sent to him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come? ²² And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that fears God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by a holy angel to send for you to come into his house, and to hear words of you. ²³ Then he called them in, and lodged them. And on the next day Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

10:24-33 *Peter and Cornelius Share their Visions at Caesarea*

(46) ²⁴ And the next day after they entered into Caesarea. Now Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends. ²⁵ And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped [him]. ²⁶ But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up; I myself also am a man. ²⁷ And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together. ²⁸ And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come to one of another nation; but God has showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean. ²⁹ Therefore I came promptly, as soon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me? ³⁰ And Cornelius said, Four days ago I was fasting until this hour; and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and, behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing, ³¹ And said, Cornelius, your prayer is heard, and your alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God. ³² Send therefore to Joppa, and call here Simon, whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of [one] Simon a tanner by the sea side: who, when he comes, shall speak to you. ³³ Immediately therefore I sent to you; and you have well done that you are come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded you of God.

10:34-48 *Peter Witnesses Jesus Christ to the First Gentiles (prejudice overcome, Col 3:11)*

(47) ³⁴ Then Peter opened [his] mouth, and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: ³⁵ But in every nation, he that fears Him, and works righteousness, is accepted with Him. ³⁶ The word which [God] sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ: (He is Lord of all:) ³⁷ That word, [I say], ye know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached; ³⁸ How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him. ³⁹ And we are witnesses of all things which He did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they slew and hanged on a tree: ⁴⁰ Him God raised up the third day, and showed Him openly; ⁴¹ Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God, [even] to us, who did eat and drink with Him after He rose from the dead. ⁴² And He commanded us to preach to the people, and to testify that it is He which was ordained of God [to be] the Judge of the living and dead. ⁴³ To Him give all the prophets witness, that through His name whosoever believes in Him shall receive remission of sins.

(48) ⁴⁴ While Peter yet spoke these words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

⁴⁵ And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that ^a on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost. ⁴⁶ For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnify God. Then answered Peter, ⁴⁷ Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? ⁴⁸ And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

^a For the 3rd time Peter uses the "the keys to the Kingdom of Heaven", as the rock of salvation in Matthew 16:18-19, Acts 2:14, 8:14-15, and 10:44 - Eph 3:6. Known languages, Acts 2, sign, 1 Cor 14:21-22a

11:1-18 Peter Tells Jerusalem Brethren of His Vision of Clean and Unclean Animals

(49) ¹ And the apostles and brethren that were in Judea heard that the Gentiles had also received the Word of God. ² And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him, ³ Saying, **You went in to men uncircumcised, and did eat with them.** ⁴ But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and ^a expounded it by order unto them, saying, ⁵ I was in the city of Joppa **praying: and in a trance I saw a vision**, A certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to me: ⁶ Upon the which when I had fastened my eyes, I considered, and saw four footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air. ⁷ And I heard a voice saying unto me, **Arise, Peter; slay and eat.** ⁸ But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean has at any time entered into my mouth. ⁹ But the voice answered me again from heaven, **What God has cleansed, [that] call not common.** ¹⁰ And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

^a The careful setting in order of facts is always an important part of our testimony. Used 2 other times in Acts 18:26 when Priscilla and Aquila explained a more perfect way to Apollos, and in Acts 28:23 when Paul explained the kingdom to his countrymen in Rome.

(50) ¹¹ And, behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Caesarea unto me. ¹² And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover these six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house: ¹³ And he showed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, **Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter;** ¹⁴ **Who shall tell you words, whereby you and all your house shall be saved.** ¹⁵ And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning. ¹⁶ Then remembered I the Word of the Lord, how that He said, **John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost.** ¹⁷ Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as [He did] unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? ¹⁸ When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then has God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

Note: 11:16, Acts 1:5. Hearing and speaking the wonderful words of life involves the right people, right place and right time. God's will, not man's will.

11:19-21 Those Scattered Preach Jesus to Jews Only – then to Grecians that turned to the Lord

(51) ¹⁹ Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen traveled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but unto the Jews only. ²⁰ And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which, when they were come to ^a Antioch, spoke unto the ^b Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus. ²¹ And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number believed, and turned to the Lord.

^a Antioch will become the home of the early church outside of Jerusalem, plus the home of the Majority Text, family of best reliable manuscripts of the New Testament. Acts 11:26, 15:22, 35.

^b John 12:20-32, Acts 6:1, 9:29 address the Grecians which could be linked to give insight to this group of people.

Acts Chapter 11

11:22-30 **Jerusalem Congregation Sends Barnabas to Antioch, Paul Joins Barnabas**

(52) ²² Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch. ²³ Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord. ²⁴ For he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord. ²⁵ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul: ²⁶ And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people. And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch. ²⁷ And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. ²⁸ And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to pass in the days of Claudius Caesar. ²⁹ Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea: ³⁰ Which also they did, and sent it to the ^b elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

^a Prophets in Acts early church, Eph 2:20, 4:11. Claudius Caesar 41-54 AD, 2nd famine in Judea, 45 AD.

^b An elder is a spiritually mature believer in Christ. Not all older believers are mature. Also named Presbyter. Acts 2:17, 11:30, 14:23, 15:2, 4, 6, 22-23; 16:4, 20:17, 21:18, 1 Timothy 5:1-2, 17, 19; Titus 1:5-6,7; Hebrews 11:2; James 5:14; 1 Peter 5:1, 5; 3 John 1.

Note: Barnabas "sought" Saul like Jesus parents when lost at 12 in Jerusalem. 2x in the New Testament.

Acts Chapter 12

12:1-5 **Herod Kills James and Imprisons Peter (man's government) 44 AD**

(53) ¹ Now about that time Herod the king stretched forth [his] hands to vex certain of the church. ² And he killed ^a James the brother of John with the sword. ³ And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also. **(Then were the days of unleavened bread.)** ⁴ And when he had apprehended him, he put [him] in prison, and delivered [him] to four ^b quaternions of soldiers to keep him; intending after ^c **Easter** to bring him forth to the people. ⁵ Peter therefore was kept in prison prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.

^a The inner 3 were John, James and Peter.

^b 4 sets of 4 or 16, 4 shifts of 6 hours each. 2 inside the cell and 2 outside the cell door.

^c Days of Unleavened Bread includes the Passover. Passover 28x and Easter 1x. Passover is always the first day of unleavened bread (Ex 12:1-8, 15 13:7 Lev 2:11, Nu 28:16-18, Deut 16:1-6, II Chr 8:13. The Sabbath after the 7th day of unleavened bread is the Feast of First-fruits. The Tyndale Bible, Great Bible, and Bishop's Bible translate 12:4 Easter. Easter, known as a fertility Goddess of Spring is a pagan fertility God which Herod celebrated. They are close in date range. Easter is Ishtar or Ostara. In England and Europe the term was/is Easter.

12:6-19 **Peter Delivered from Prison by An Angel**

(54) ⁶ And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains: and the keepers before the door kept the prison. ⁷ And, behold, an angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, **Arise up quickly.** And his chains fell off from his hands. ⁸ And the angel said unto him, **Gird thyself, and bind on your sandals.** And so he did. And he says unto him, **Cast your garment about you, and follow me.** ⁹ And he went out, and followed him; and knew not that it was true which was done by the angel; but thought he saw a vision. ¹⁰ When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leads unto the city; which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street; and immediately the angel departed from him. ¹¹ And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord has sent His angel, and has delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

Acts Chapter 12

(55) ¹² And when he had considered [the thing], he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark; where many were gathered together praying. ¹³ And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda. ¹⁴ And when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate. ¹⁵ And they said unto her, You are mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel. ¹⁶ But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened [the door], and saw him, they were astonished. ¹⁷ But he, beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go show these things unto ^a James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place. ¹⁸ Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter. ¹⁹ And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that [they] should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Caesarea, and [there] abode.

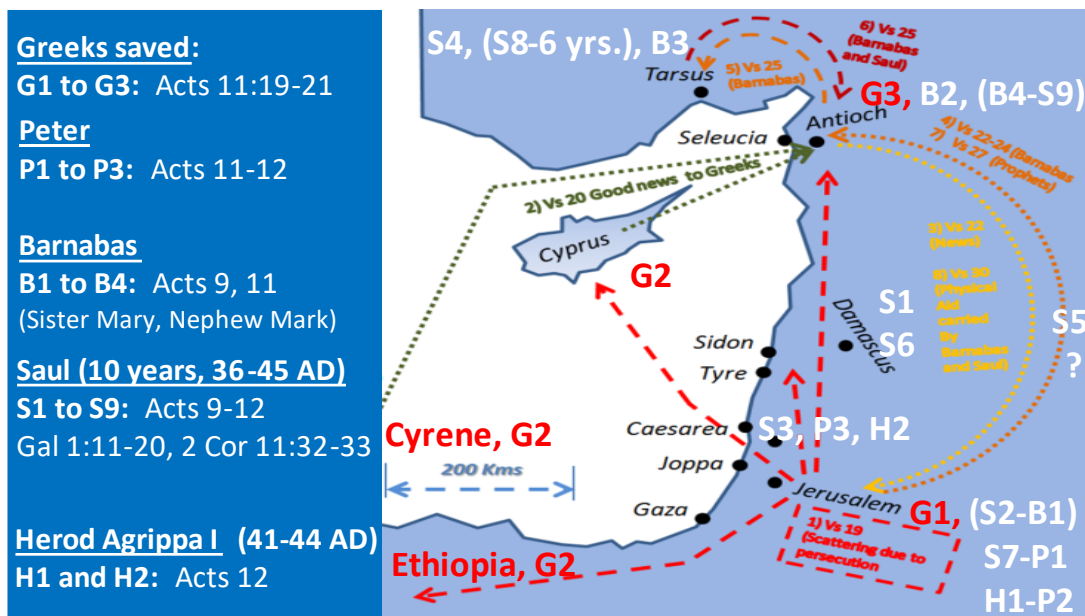
^a James the leader of the Jerusalem congregation (Acts 15), he later wrote the book of James.

12:20-25 *Herod Dies in Caesarea*

(56) ²⁰ And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus the king's chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their country was nourished by the king's [country]. ²¹ And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. ²² And the people gave a shout, [saying, It is] the voice of a god, and not of a man. ²³ And immediately an angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the spirit. ²⁴ But the Word of God grew and multiplied. ²⁵ And Barnabas and Saul returned ^a from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled [their] ministry, and took with them John, whose surname was Mark.

^a from Jerusalem "to Antioch" in Tyndale & Geneva Bible, not "to" in Bishops & Legacy Standard Bible

Note: Josephus writes Herod Agrippa I worms (maggots) caused death in 5 days. His great grandfather Herod the Great died a similar death. Mark 9:44, 46, 48, Is 66:24, 51:8 & Is 14:11 "where the worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. Job is near hell with his worms; Job 17:14, 24:20, 25:6.



Acts 13 & 14 The First Missionary Journey of Paul and Barnabas

(up to 2 years, 12 cities – 7 going & 5 return)



Acts Chapter 13

13:1-3 *At Antioch the Holy Ghost Sends Barnabas and Saul to Witness*

(57) ¹ Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul. ² As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the **Holy Ghost** said, "Separate Me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them." ³ And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid [their] hands on them, they sent them away.

Note: Barnabas and Saul were teachers, the other three are probably prophets.

13:4-13 *Saul Called Paul at Paphos (after he rebukes the sorcerer, then Paul takes lead)*

(58) ⁴ So they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed to Seleucia; and from there they sailed to Cyprus. ⁵ And when they were at Salamis, they spoke the Word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they also had ^a Mark as their servant. ⁶ And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was ^b Bar-jesus: ⁷ Which was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man; who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the Word of God. ⁸ But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith. ⁹ Then Saul, (who also [is called] Paul,) filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, ¹⁰ And said, "O full of all subtlety and all mischief, [you] son of the devil, [you] enemy of all righteousness, will you not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord?" ¹¹ And now, behold, the hand of the Lord is upon you, and you shall be blind, not seeing the sun for a season." And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness; and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand. ¹² Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord. ¹³ Now when ^c Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and ^d Mark departing from them returned to Jerusalem.

Acts Chapter 13

^a Mark who later wrote the inspired Gospel of Mark. Mark also wrote the historical "Acts of Barnabas" returning to the Island Cyprus, the home of Barnabas, to preach the good news and eventual martyrdom by fire, led by Bar-jesus.

^b Bar-jesus is translated "son of jesus", vs 6 is the same as Elymas the sorcerer, vs 8. He is the spiritual advisor of the Roman magistrate of Cyprus (a 1 year term).

^c Saul's 1st miracle, a divine judgment. Saul is a Jewish name for Paul in Roman. Paul takes the lead and Barnabas follows hereafter. A definitive time where Paul faces the devil in ministry.

^d This possibly causes the sharp division between Paul and Barnabas in Acts 15:38-39. Mark was restored 10 years later, evidence in 2 Timothy 4:11.

13:14-43 Paul Teaches the Jews the History of Israel and Jesus Christ at Antioch in Pisidia

(59) ¹⁴ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and sat down. ¹⁵ And after the reading of the law and the prophets the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, [Ye] men [and] brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on. ¹⁶ Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with [his] hand said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience. ¹⁷ The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with a high arm He brought them out of it. ¹⁸ And about the time of forty years He endured their habits in the wilderness. ¹⁹ And when He had destroyed ^a seven nations in the land of Canaan, He divided their land to them by lot. ²⁰ And after that He gave [unto them] judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet. ²¹ And afterward they desired a king: and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years. ²² And when He had removed him, He raised up to them David to be their king; to whom also He gave testimony, and said, I have found David the [son] of Jesse, ^b a man after my own heart, which shall fulfill all my will. ²³ Of this man's seed has God according to [his] promise raised to Israel a Savior, Jesus:

^a Deuteronomy 7:1, Hittites, Girgashites, Amorites, Canaanites, Perizzites, Hivites, and Jebusites

^b When compared to Saul and the fulfillment of a type as victorious king and judge for Christ's 2nd coming to reign on earth.

(60) ²⁴ When John had first preached before His coming the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. ²⁵ And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom think ye that I am? I am not He. But, behold, there comes one after me, whose shoes of his feet I am not worthy to loose. ²⁶ Men [and] brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you fears God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. ²⁷ For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew Him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning Him. ²⁸ And though they found no cause of death [in Him], yet desired they Pilate that He should be slain. ²⁹ And when they had fulfilled all that was written of Him, they took [Him] down from the tree, and laid [Him] in a sepulcher. ³⁰ But God raised Him from the dead: ³¹ And He was seen many days of them which came up with Him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people. ³² And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers, ³³ God has fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, You are My Son, this day I have begotten You. ³⁴ And as concerning that He raised Him up from the dead, [now] no more to return to corruption, He said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David. ³⁵ Wherefore He says also in another psalm, You shall not allow Your Holy One to see corruption. ³⁶ For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: ³⁷ But He, whom God raised again, saw no corruption.

Note: 13:33 & 35 refers to Psalm 2:7 directly (only time a specific Psalm is referred to) & Psalm 16:10.

Acts Chapter 13

(61) ³⁸ Be it known unto you therefore, men [and] brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: ³⁹ And by Him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses. ⁴⁰ Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken of in the prophets; ⁴¹ ^a Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.

^a Habakkuk 1:5.

13:42-52 Paul and Barnabas Turn from the Jews to the Gentiles, then Persecuted by the Jews

(62) ⁴² And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles begged that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath. ⁴³ Now when the ^a congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God. ⁴⁴ And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the Word of God. ⁴⁵ But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spoke against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

^a Greek word *synagogue*, which is translated as "synagogue" in all 56 other places, transition translation which shows the synagogue is now a congregation of believers. Similar to James 2:2.

(63) ⁴⁶ Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the Word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting life, look, we turn unto the Gentiles. ⁴⁷ For so has the Lord commanded us, [saying], ^a I have set you to be a light of the Gentiles, that you should be for salvation unto the ends of the earth. ⁴⁸ And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the Word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed. ⁴⁹ And the Word of the Lord was published throughout all the region. ⁵⁰ But the Jews stirred up the devout and honorable women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. ⁵¹ But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came to Iconium. ⁵² And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghost.

^a Isaiah 42:6-7

Acts Chapter 14

Paul and Barnabas, 1st Missions Trip

14:1-6 At Iconium they Preach (1, 3), then are Persecuted and Flee (2, 4-6)

(64) ¹ And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spoke, that a great multitude both of the Jews and also of the Greeks believed. ² But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil affected against the brethren. ³ Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony to the word of His grace, and granted signs and wonders to be done by their hands. ⁴ But the multitude of the city was divided: and part held with the Jews, and part with the apostles. ⁵ And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them, ⁶ They were aware of [it], and fled to Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and to the region that lies round about:

Note: The word apostle is used 79x in the New Testament: 73x for the 12 with Matthias and Paul (sent by Jesus Christ). 3x for false apostles in 2 Cor 11:13 and Rev 2:2 (sent by Satan). 1x for Christ Jesus in Hebrews 3:1 (sent by God). Apostles (sent by the church in Acts 13:1-3) are only used for Barnabas with Paul in 14:4, 14 which is a missionary since the original 14 apostles died. The word apostle is most used by Luke and Paul in 1 & 2 Corinthians.

Acts Chapter 14

14:7-20 **At Lystra they Preach (7), Heal & Worshipped (8-18), then Persecuted (19-20)**

(65) ⁷ And there they preached the gospel. ⁸ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked: ⁹ The same heard Paul speak: who steadfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, ¹⁰ Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on your feet. And he leaped and walked. ¹¹ And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lifted up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men. ¹² And they called ^a Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker. ¹³ Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands to the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people. ¹⁴ [Which] when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard [of], they tore their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out, ¹⁵ And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein: ¹⁶ Who in times past permitted all nations to walk in their own ways. ¹⁷ Nevertheless He left not Himself without witness, in that He did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness. ¹⁸ And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them. ¹⁹ And there came thither [certain] Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who persuaded the people, and, having ^a stoned Paul, drew [him] out of the city, supposing he had been dead. ²⁰ Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city: and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

^a Jupiter in Roman is Zeus in Greek. Mercurius in Roman is Hermes in Greek.

Note: 14:16 cross-references in Acts 17:30 (today New Testament), Psalm 81:12 (past Old Testament), Mic 4:5 (future New Testament).

14:21-28 **Derbe, Lystra, Iconium, Antioch/P & Perga (21-25); then Return to Antioch/S (26-28)**

(66) ²¹ And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and [to] Iconium, and Antioch, ²² Confirming the souls of the disciples, [and] exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God. ²³ And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed. ²⁴ And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia. ²⁵ And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia: ²⁶ And there sailed to Antioch, from where they had been recommended to the grace of God for the work which they fulfilled. ²⁷ And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how He had opened the door of faith to the Gentiles. ²⁸ And there they abode long time with the disciples.

^a Since Paul died he could have went to the third heaven at this time as described in 2 Corinthians 12:12.

Notes: 14:22. Kingdom of God. Who-believers. When-I die (Hebrews 9:27, 1 Cor 15). Where Jesus is (Rev 21-22). We shall judge angels and return with Christ to reign with Him during the millennium. 14:21-23 is similar to Colossians 1:28-29 and the prayers in Ephesians 1 and 3. Timothy and Paul met, most likely at Derbe or one of the 3 cities of persecution before, 2 Timothy 2:11.

Elders: same as pastors, bishops, and overseers or presbytery or under shepherds. The local church is autonomous.

Acts Chapter 15 Church Leaders Solving the Culture of Mixing OT Error into NT Truth

15:1-5 Christian Pharisees Add to the Gospel, for Gentiles to Circumcise and Keep the Law

(67) ¹ Then certain men which came down from Judea taught the brethren, [and said], "Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved." ² When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem to the apostles and elders about this question. ³ And being brought on their way by the congregation, they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy to all the brethren. ⁴ And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and [of] the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them. ⁵ But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, "That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses."

15:6-12 Peter then Paul say Salvation for Gentiles and Jews is the Same (2 witnesses)

(68) ⁶ And the apostles and elders came together to consider this matter. ⁷ And when there had been much disputing, ^a Peter rose up, and said unto them, "Men [and] brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and believe. ⁸ And God, which knows the hearts, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as [He did] to us; ⁹ And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith. ¹⁰ Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? ¹¹ But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they." ¹² Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had worked among the Gentiles by them.

^a Peter while at Antioch earlier had a great dispute with Paul on this issue. Galatians 2:11-21. Acts 10,13 yrs ago. The last time Peter, Paul, and James were together was in Galatians 1:18-19. Romans 7:1-4.

15:13-21 James Defends Peter with Scripture from the Prophets and a Reasonable Solution

(69) ¹³ And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, "Men [and] brethren, hearken to me: ¹⁴ Simeon has declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for His name. ¹⁵ And to this agree the words of the prophets; as ^a it is written, "**AFTER THIS I WILL RETURN, AND WILL BUILD AGAIN THE TABERNACLE OF DAVID, WHICH IS FALLEN DOWN; AND I WILL BUILD AGAIN THE RUINS THEREOF, AND I WILL SET IT UP: THAT THE RESIDUE OF MEN MIGHT SEEK AFTER THE LORD, AND ALL THE GENTILES, UPON WHOM MY NAME IS CALLED, SAYS THE LORD, WHO DOES ALL THESE THINGS.**" ¹⁸ Known to God are all His works from the beginning of the world. ¹⁹ Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God: ²⁰ But that we write to them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and [from] fornication, and [from] things strangled, and [from] blood. ²¹ For Moses of old time has in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day."

^a Amos 9:11-12, context of Amos 8-9. David built a tabernacle for the Ark, 1 Chr 19. Future hope for Israel. Romans 11. "After this" refers to the "fullness of the gentiles." Christ's coming as king and judge to rule from the throne of David in Jerusalem.

15:22-35 Barnabas & Paul Return to Antioch with a Letter, then Teach and Preach

(70) ²² Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; [namely], Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren: ²³ And they wrote [letters] by them after this manner; "The apostles and elders and brethren [send] greeting to the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia: ²⁴ Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, [Ye must] be circumcised, and keep the law: to whom we gave no [such] commandment: ²⁵ It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men to you

Acts Chapter 15

with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, ²⁶ Men that have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁷ We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell [you] the same things by mouth.

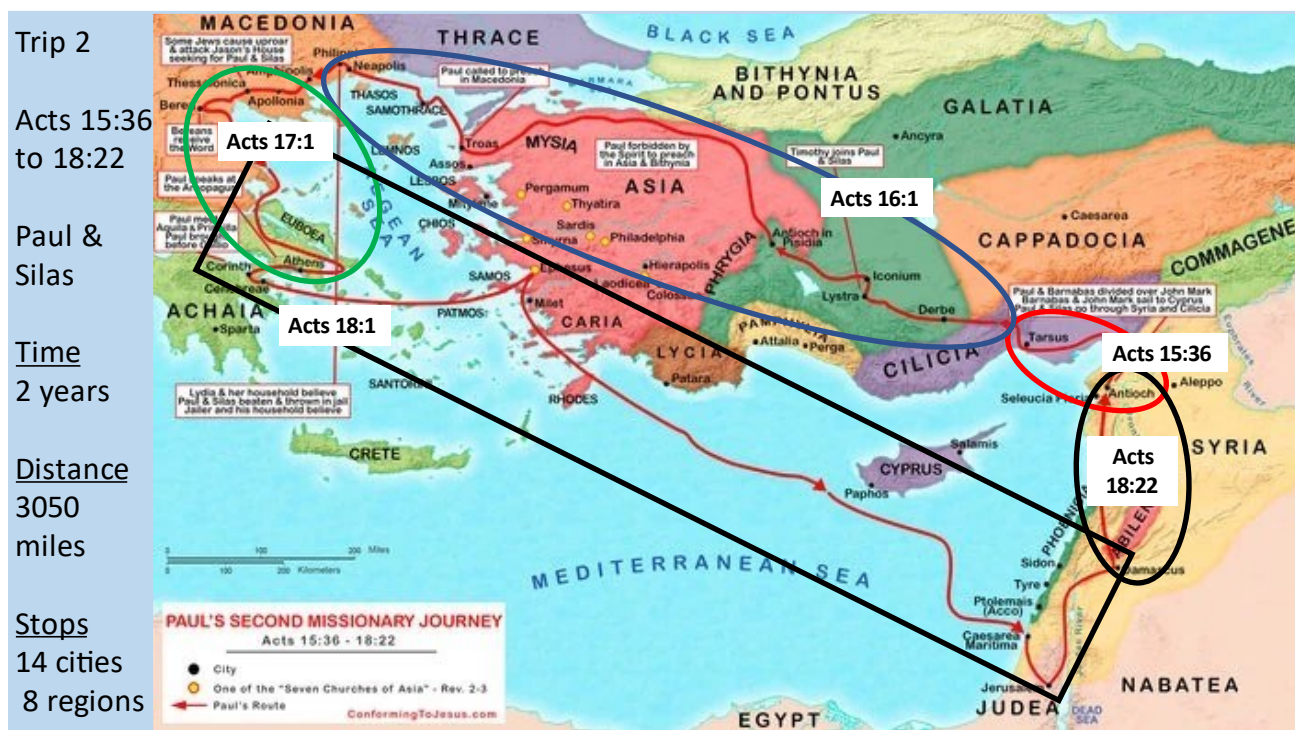
²⁸ For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things; ²⁹ That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well."

(71) ³⁰ So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the letter: ³¹ [Which] when they had read, they rejoiced for the consolation.

³² And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them. ³³ And after they had tarried [there] a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren to the apostles. ³⁴ Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still. ³⁵ Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the Word of the Lord, with many others also.

Note: These 4 commands are appropriate for the times. Noahide laws derived today in messianic groups is not necessary, and an unnecessary burden or substitute for the liberty New Testament believers have. Prophets in the apostolic age were associated with the apostles, they spoke words for direction of the church in transition from Old Testament to New Testament Scriptures being written (Acts 11:27), or wisdom from above. (1 Corinthians 13:10, Hebrews 2:1-4, Eph 2:20 or 2:11-22). Only James is written.

15:36-41 *Paul Separates from Barnabas for the Right Reason, Begins the 2nd Missions Trip*



(72) ³⁶ And some days after Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren in every city where we have preached the Word of the Lord, [and see] how they do. ³⁷ And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Mark. ³⁸ But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work. ³⁹ And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed to Cyprus; ⁴⁰ And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren to the grace of God. ⁴¹ And he went through Syria and Cilicia, ^a confirming the churches.

Note: Mark was the cousin of Barnabas and both from Cyprus.

Acts Chapter 16

6:1-5 Paul Meets Timothy

(73) ¹ Then came he to Derbe and Lystra: and, behold, a certain disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewess, and believed; but his father was a Greek: ² Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium. ³ Him would Paul have to go forth with him; and took and circumcised him because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek. ⁴ And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, that were ordained of the apostles and elders which were at Jerusalem. ⁵ And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

16:6-10 The Holy Ghost Forbids (Asia, Bithynia) then Permits Paul Where to go (Macedonia)

(74) ⁶ Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia, ⁷ After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit permitted them not. ⁸ And they passing by Mysia came down to Troas. ⁹ And a vision appeared to Paul in the night; There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, "Come over into Macedonia, and help us." ¹⁰ And after he had seen the vision, immediately ^a we endeavored to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel to them.

^a First of three instances where Luke identifies himself with Paul in Acts.

16:11-15 In Philippi – a Business Woman (Lydia) & Her Household are Saved and Baptized

¹¹ Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next [day] to Neapolis; ¹² And from there to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, [and] a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain days. ¹³ And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, ^a where prayer was custom to be made; and we sat down, and spoke to the women which resorted [thither]. ¹⁴ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard [us]: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended to the things which were spoken of Paul. ¹⁵ And ^b when she was baptized, and her household, she begged [us], saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house, and abide [there]. And she constrained us.

^a Gathering to meet for prayer at an appropriate location when you have no synagogue or building, or other specifics is needful. Lydia was a God-fearer.

^b Household is all under her care due to her being a widow or single.

16:16-24 In Philippi – A Fortune Teller Loses Her Ability and Paul & Silas Persecuted

(75) ¹⁶ And it came to pass, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a spirit of divination met us, which brought her masters much gain by ^a prophesying: ¹⁷ The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which show to us the way of salvation. ¹⁸ And this did she many days. But Paul, being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command you in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour. ¹⁹ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the marketplace to the rulers, ²⁰ And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men, being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our city, ²¹ And teach customs, which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romans. ²² And the multitude rose up together against them: and the magistrates tore off their clothes, and commanded to beat them. ²³ And when they had **laid** many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the jailor to keep them safely: ²⁴ Who, having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

^a To predict or foretell. Prophecy in Old Testament sense as Samuel. Soothsaying ^{KJV} or diviner in Old Testament Hebrew. Demons can tell the truth, but they do it for their own purposes.

Acts Chapter 16

Note: Learning from Caleb Planet. One time a young homeless man came into our congregation, sat in the front row, had crosses on his hands, and strange behavior saying he was Christ. I invited him home to eat – he had a great appetite. We found out that he was mentally ill. While giving him a ride, a high gust of wind arose. The pastor and I knew it was supernatural, but not of Christ or the Holy Ghost.

16:25-34 *In Philippi – Paul and Silas Sing in Prison and the Jailer with His Family are Saved*

(76) ²⁵ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and ^a sang praises to God: and the prisoners heard them. ²⁶ And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doors were opened, and everyone's bands were loosed. ²⁷ And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled. ²⁸ But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thyself no harm: for we are all here. ²⁹ Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas, ³⁰ And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved? ³¹ And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved, and your house. ³² And they spoke to him the Word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house. ³³ And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed [their] stripes; and was baptized, he and all his, straightway. ³⁴ And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in God with all his house.

^a Praising God in adversity. David did this in 1 Samuel 30:6.

(77) ³⁵ And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go. ³⁶ And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace. ³⁷ But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast [us] into prison; and now do they thrust us out privately? no verily; but let them come themselves and fetch us out. ³⁸ And the sergeants told these words to the magistrates: and they feared, when they heard that they were Romans. ³⁹ And they came and begged them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the city. ⁴⁰ And they went out of the prison, and entered into [the house of Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

Acts Chapter 17

17:1-9 *Rejection by Jews at Thessalonica*

(78) ¹ Now when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews: ² And Paul, as his manner was, went in to them, and three sabbath days reasoned with them out of the Scriptures, ³ Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach to you, is Christ. ⁴ And some of them believed, and consorted with Paul and Silas; and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few. ⁵ But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took to them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people. ⁶ And when they found them not, they drew Jason and certain brethren to the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down are come hither also; ⁷ Whom Jason has received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there is another king, [one] Jesus. ⁸ And they troubled the people and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things. ⁹ And when they had taken ^a security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

17:10-15 *Reception of Bible Students at Berea*

(79) ¹⁰ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night to Berea: who coming [thither] went into the synagogue of the Jews. ¹¹ These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, ^a whether those things were so.

Acts Chapter 17

¹² Therefore many of them believed; also of honorable women which were Greeks, and of men, not a few. ¹³ But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the Word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people. ¹⁴ And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timothy abode there still. ¹⁵ And they that conducted Paul brought him to Athens: and receiving a commandment to Silas and Timothy for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

^a The doctrine of Christ does not fear scrutiny. This is good training for Timothy.

17:16-34 **Religious Message to the Greek Philosophers at Athens on Mars Hill**

(80) ¹⁶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was ^a stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry. ¹⁷ Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him. ¹⁸ Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And some said, What will this babbler say? other some, He seems to be a setter forth of strange ^b demons: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. ¹⁹ And they took him, and brought him to Areopagus, saying, ^c May we know what this new doctrine, whereof you speak, is? ²⁰ For you bring certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean. ²¹ (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.)

^a Stirred or aroused is a strong word that implies violent excitement. The English word paroxysm comes from it.

^b to have a demon, Greek is echei daimonion. ^c The language is very polite.

(81) ²² Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars' hill, and said, [Ye] men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too ^a superstitious. ²³ For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, Him declare I to you. ²⁴ God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwells not in temples made with hands; ²⁵ Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though He needed anything, seeing He gives to all life, and breath, and all things; ²⁶ And has made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and has determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; ²⁷ That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: ²⁸ For in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. ²⁹ Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like to gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device. ³⁰ And the times of this ignorance ^b God winked at; but now commands all men everywhere to repent: ³¹ Because He has appointed a day, in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by [that] Man whom He has ordained; [whereof] He has given assurance to all [men], in that He has raised Him from the dead.

^a Very religious is a more accurate translation which would not offend the philosophers of god. No Scripture is used, only things observable to all.

^b "Winked at" today means to connive with.. Then it meant "to overlook with forbearance." Paul concludes with repentance and faith, including the resurrection and judgment to come.

(82) ³² And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will hear you again of this [matter]. ³³ So Paul departed from among them. ³⁴ Howbeit certain men clave to him, and believed: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

18:1-6 Paul Lives with Aquila & Priscilla; Departs from the Jews

(83) ¹ After these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth; ² And found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla; (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome:) and came to them. ³ And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and worked: for by their occupation they were tentmakers. ⁴ And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks. ⁵ And when Silas and Timothy were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews [that] Jesus was Christ. ⁶ And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook [his] raiment, and said unto them, Your blood [be] upon your own heads; I [am] clean: from henceforth I will go to the Gentiles.

Note: vs. 5, Paul was moved in the spirit after Silas and Timothy arrived. We need each other.

18:7-11 Paul Safe to Teach & Many Saved

(84) ⁷ And he departed there, and entered into a certain [man's] house, named Justus, [one] that worshipped God, whose house joined hard to the synagogue. ⁸ And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized. ⁹ Then spoke the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, ^a **Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not your peace:** ¹⁰ **For I am with you, and no man shall set on you to hurt you: for I have much people in this city.** ¹¹ And he continued [there] a year and six months, teaching the Word of God among them.

^a Paul was assured of God's protection in a violent world. At other times Paul fled. We must discern the difference. He personally baptized in water, only Crispus, 1 Corinthians 1:14.

18:12-17 Gallio is the New Deputy of Achaia, Persecution of Paul Turns Toward Sosthenes

(85) ¹² And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the ^a judgment seat, ¹³ Saying, This [fellow] persuades men to worship God contrary to the law. ¹⁴ And when Paul was now about to open [his] mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong or wicked lewdness, O [ye] Jews, reason would that I should bear with you: ¹⁵ But if it be a question of words and names, and [of] your law, look ye [to it]; for I will be no judge of such [matters]. ¹⁶ And he drove them from the judgment seat. ¹⁷ Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat [him] before the judgment seat. And Gallio cared for none of those things.

^a Same as Bema Seat used in 2 Corinthians 5:10. Gallio showed Roman impartiality and tolerance as long as peace was maintained.

18:18-23 Paul Leaves Aquila & Priscilla in Ephesus on way to Jerusalem

(86) ¹⁸ And Paul [after this] tarried [there] yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed there into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila; ^a having shorn [his] head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow. ¹⁹ And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews. ²⁰ When they desired [him] to tarry longer time with them, he consented not; ²¹ But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that comes in Jerusalem: but I will return again unto you, if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus. ²² And when he had landed at Caesarea, and gone up, and saluted the congregation, he went down to Antioch.

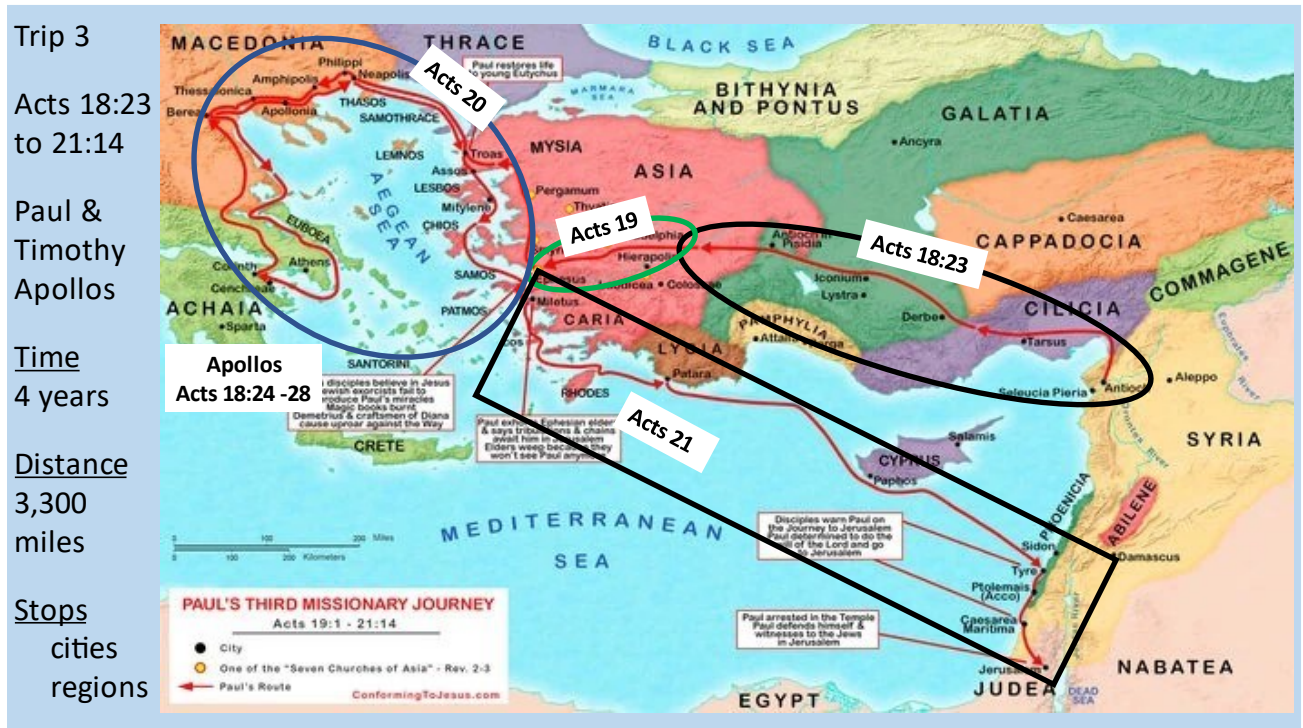
^a Cutting the hair marked the fulfillment of a vow, a common practice in the Jewish culture. Probably a short-term Nazarite vow which was complete when he returned to the temple in Jerusalem. He would purify himself for 7 days then burn his hair with the offerings. If he made the vow at the beginning of the trip his hair was over 3 years in growing. Possibly the filth of the sin of Corinth on the mind of Paul prompted him to reconsecrate his life after he departed from Corinth. See Numbers 6 for the Nazarite vow.

Acts Chapter 18

3rd Missionary Journey (Paul & Timothy)

²³ And after he had spent some time [there], he departed, and went over [all] the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, ^b strengthening all the disciples.

^b The primary purpose of this journey and the main city is Ephesus where he spent 3 years and wrote 1 Corinthians.



18:24-28 **In Ephesus Aquila & Priscilla Disciple Apollos in the Way of God More Perfectly**

(87) ²⁴ And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, [and] mighty in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus. ²⁵ This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spoke and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John. ²⁶ And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly. ²⁷ And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace: ²⁸ For he mightily convinced the Jews, [and that] publicly, showing by the Scriptures that Jesus was Christ.

Q1 – Was Apollos saved before he met Aquila and Priscilla? He knew only Joh's baptism of repentance.

A – No, Apollos was an intelligent gifted religious man, but he was not saved. Note they taught in their home only,

Q2 – What was the way of God more perfectly?

A – The message that Jesus was raised from the dead, or the resurrection, and the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Q3 – Why did Apollos change from teaching the Baptism of John to Jesus was the Christ?

A – Because he now understood that the man Jesus was anointed one sent from God. (1 Corinthians 1:12 and 3:4)

Application: Now I know the context teaches the Baptism of the Holy Ghost that happens the moment we are saved. This understanding helps me have more of the mind of Christ.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us discern the religious person like Apollos so we can teach them the way of God so they can know that Jesus was the Christ. At this time in Alexandria was the greatest library known.

19:1-7 **12 Disciples of John. 3rd and Last Time for the "sign" of tongues** (1 Cor 14:20-22)

(88) ¹ And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples, ² He said unto them, "Have ye received the Holy Ghost when ye believed?" And they said unto him, "We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost." ³ And he said unto them, "To what then were ye baptized?" And they said, "To John's baptism." ⁴ Then said Paul, "John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should //1. faith// believe on Him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus". ⁵ When they heard [this], //2. re-baptism, Acts 2:38, 8:16 & 19:5// they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. ⁶ And //3. Apostle hands, Acts 8, 10, 19// when Paul had laid [his] hands upon them, //4. Receive the H.S.// the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spoke with languages //Acts 2, 10, & 19// and prophesied //Acts 2 wonderful works of God, 10 magnify God, & 19 prophesied as in 1 Cor 14//. ⁷ And all the men were about twelve.

Note: 19:6, Languages is the same as in Acts 2 and 10; a known, understood foreign language, used as a sign of judgment against Israel (1 Cor 14:20-21). Another evidence that the household of Cornelius in Acts 10 did not include small children or babies, nor John's water baptism. Christians required the laying on of hands by the apostles Peter & John - Acts 8, Peter - Acts 10, and Paul in Acts 19 to confirm the spread of the Gospel (Acts 1:8).

BLB: At salv-C Missler, JV McGee, Bob Davis, Bill Foote, R Comfort. After salv-C Smith, J Courson, Joe Focht, R Ries

Past: OT Mizpah. John **Baptized** for repentance from sin to prepare the way for Jesus (Matthew 11:11).

Present: At the moment of our faith in Jesus the believer is (1) Born of the Spirit (John 3:3-8), (2) Indwelt by the Spirit (1 Cor 3:16, 6:19), (3) Sealed by the Holy Spirit (Ephesians 1:13), (4) Taught by the Holy Spirit (John 14:6) (5) Anointed by the Holy Spirit (1 John 2:20 & 27), and (6) **Baptized** by the Holy Spirit (John 1:33, Acts 1:5,8, 2:4, 10:47, 11:16), (7) **Baptized** by one spirit into the body of Christ (1 Cor 12:13, 1 Cor 10:2), (8) **Baptized** into the death of Jesus (**Ro 6:3**), and the **Baptism** of suffering (Mt 20:22-23, Mk 10:38-39, Lu 12:50, 1 Pe 1:6-7).

Then an act of faith and obedience to the Scriptures: **Baptized** in the name of the Lord Jesus (Acts 2:38, 8:16, 19:5) or the Father, Son, and the H.S. (Mt 28:18-20). Water baptism by immersion after the age of accountability.

Future: Finally, the unbeliever is **Baptized** by fire (Matthew 3:11-12, Rev 20:11-15).

19:8-22 **Paul Proclaims the Kingdom of God and Performs Special Miracles**

(89) ⁸ And he went into the synagogue, and spoke boldly for the space of three months, disputing and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God. ⁹ But when several were hardened, and believed not, but spoke evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus. ¹⁰ And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the Word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

(90) ¹¹ And God worked special miracles by the ^a hands of Paul: ¹² So that from his body were brought to the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them. ¹³ Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preaches. ¹⁴ And there were seven sons of Sceva, a Jew, [and] chief of the priests, which did so. ¹⁵ And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? ¹⁶ And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded. ¹⁷ And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified. ¹⁸ And many that believed came, and confessed, and showed their deeds. ¹⁹ Many of them also which used ^b curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all: and they counted the price of them, and found [it] fifty thousand [pieces] of silver. ²⁰ So mightily grew the Word of God and prevailed. ²¹ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome. ²² So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timothy and Erastus; but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

^a Around this time Paul wrote finished 1 Corinthians "But I will stay at Ephesus until Pentecost, because a great door for effective work has opened to me, and there are many who oppose me." 1 Corinthians 16:8-9. Relics class 1, 2, 3.

Plenary Indulgence, confession, experiences. ^b Ephesus was the largest city in Asia, a port city of over 200,000 people.

Acts Chapter 19

19:23-41 Paul Escapes Persecution from the Temple of Diana Idol Worshippers

(91) ²³ And the same time there arose no small stir about that way. ²⁴ For a certain [man] named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain to the craftsmen; ²⁵ Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, "Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth. ²⁶ Moreover ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul has persuaded and turned away much people, saying that they be no gods, which are made with hands: ²⁷ So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nothing; but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worships." ²⁸ And when they heard [these sayings], they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, ^a Great is Diana of the Ephesians. ²⁹ And the whole city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

(92) ³⁰ And when Paul would have entered in unto the people, the disciples permitted him not. ³¹ And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring [him] that he would not adventure himself into the theatre. ³² Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused; and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together. ³³ And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckoned with the hand, and would have made his defense to the people. ³⁴ But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours cried out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

^a The Temple of Diana is the 4th of 7 wonders of the ancient world designated in 225 BC by Philo of Byzantium. It was made of marble, 425' long x 220' wide and 60' high with 127 pillars of double and triple columns. It's size and beauty was awesome to see, as the Greeks said, "we would see Jesus in John 12:21 and John saw in Rev 21:1, may we have eyes that see and ears that hear.

The temple took 120 years to build and 1 night to destroy by an arsonist seeking publicity. The Goths destroyed it in 262 AD and today only 1 column was erected after evacuation. Today the old city of Ephesus is a huge archeological dig site and tourist attraction.

The statue of Diana in front of the temple is described in several different ways at different times. In 431 AD Roman Emperor Theodosius II called a council (The Ecumenical Council) to address if Mary was the mother of Jesus (Nostrius of Antioch) or the mother of God. Here the first church was dedicated to the Virgin Mary. At the same site an ancient temple of the Ionians worshipped a goddess called the "Great Mother".

^b Ekklesia in 19:32, 39 & 41. Only 3 of 115 times does ekklesia refer to non-believers

The theater is known for its greatness with a capacity was 25,000.

³⁵ And when the town clerk had appeased the people, he said, [Ye] men of Ephesus, what man is there that knows not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the [image] which fell down from Jupiter? ³⁶ Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly. ³⁷ For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess ³⁸ Wherefore if Demetrius, and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies: let them implead one another. ³⁹ But if ye enquire anything concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly. ⁴⁰ For we are in danger to be called in question for this day's uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse. ⁴¹ And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

Note: 19:37 Churches existed at Ephesus as many believers were there due to Paul's preaching and teaching for three full years.

20:1-5 **Ephesus to Troas and Support for the Saints at Jerusalem** (Acts 19:21)

(93) ¹ And after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto [him] **the disciples**, and embraced them, and departed for to go into **Macedonia**. ² And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them **much exhortation** //encourage to good works, 1 of 7 gifts in Ro 12:8 (4-8)//, he came into **Greece**, ³ And [there] abode three months. **And when the Jews laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia**. ⁴ And there accompanied him into Asia //7// Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus; and Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy; and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus. ⁵ These going before tarried for **us** at Troas.

Note: 2nd visit to Troas, 1st in Acts 16:6-8 after no-go 2x and go to Macedonia, (2 Cor 2:12) God inspired Paul to write Romans (20:2-3) and 2 Corinthians (20:3-6a). Seven men were entrusted with treasure to help the saints in Jerusalem ((Romans 15:7-33 (25-27)). All new travelers except Timothy. 1 Tim 1:3-4 Paul urged Timothy to remain in Ephesus to teach sound doctrine.

20:6-12 **At Troas Paul Preaches Until Midnight and Talks Until the Next Morning**

(94) ⁶ And **we** sailed away from Philippi after the days of unleavened bread, and came to them to **Troas** in five days //2 Tim 4:13//; where **we** abode seven days. ⁷ And upon the ^a first [day] of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, **Paul preached** //discuss, dispute or reason, 13x// **unto them, ready to depart on the next day; and continued his speech until midnight**. ⁸ And there were many lights in the upper chamber, where they were gathered together. ⁹ And there sat in a window a certain young man named **Eutychus**, being fallen into a deep sleep: and as Paul was **long preaching** //discuss, dispute, or reason//, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead. ¹⁰ And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing [him] said, Trouble not yourselves; for his life //soul, same as Elijah and Elisha did// is in him. ¹¹ When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked //be in company, 4x// a long while, even till break of day, so he departed. ¹² And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

^a Friday evening at 6 pm for the Jews. Saturday evening for the church as the first day of the week. Paul preached for least 6 hours until midnight. Luke wrote in Hebrew time. In Greek is sabbaton, which can be translated "on a certain sabbath". Same in 1 Cor 16:2, John 20:1, 19. Col 2:11-17.

20:13-16 **From Troas to Miletus, They Travel by Ship and Paul by Foot at Assos**

(95) ¹³ And **we** went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had **he** appointed, minding **himself** to go afoot //20 miles//. ¹⁴ And when **he** met with **us** at Assos, **we** took him in, and came to **Mitylene**. ¹⁵ And **we** sailed there, and came the next [day] over against Chios; and the next [day] **we** arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium; and the next [day] **we** came to Miletus. ¹⁶ For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost //1 Cor 16:8, Paul left his jacket, books, and scrolls at Troas (2 Tim 4:13)//.

20:17-38 **At Miletus, Paul's FAREWELL to the Ephesian Elders** (1st pastor's conference)

(96) ¹⁷ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and **called the elders** of the church.

Note: Elders-Bishops-Pastors. They are interchangeable fitting the context of Scripture. Elders – man (individual, presbyteros 67x, spiritually mature and trusted to do right for the church), Bishops – Ministry (overseer, episcopo a specific area of the church), Pastors – Method (shepherd, feed the flock). Jesus Christ is the Bishop and Shepherd of our souls, 1 Peter 2:25. Psalm 23, John 10.

(Msg 1 to Jews in Acts 13, Msg 2 to Gentiles in Acts 17, Msg 3 to the Church)

Paul's Life Style is a Pattern to Follow (Follow me as I follow Christ, the suffering servant)

¹⁸ And when they were come to him //36 miles//, he said unto them, Ye know, from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons, ¹⁹ Serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and with many tears, and **temptations**, which befell me by the lying in wait of the Jews: ²⁰ [And] how I kept back nothing that was profitable [unto you], but have showed you, and have taught you publicly, and from house to house, ²¹ Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, **repentance toward God //reversal, 24x//, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ //Heb 6:1//.** ²² And now, behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there: ²³ Save that the Holy Ghost witnesses in every city, saying that bonds and afflictions abide me. ²⁴ **But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.** ²⁵ And now, behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God //strongest sense, 2 Tim 4:1//, shall see my face no more. ²⁶ **Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I [am] pure from the blood of all [men].** ²⁷ For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

Paul's Warning to the Elders of Ephesus

²⁸ Take heed therefore **unto yourselves**, and to **all the flock**, over the which the Holy Ghost has made you bishops, **to feed the church of God**, which He has purchased with His own blood. ²⁹ For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock. ³⁰ Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

Paul's Pattern of Life Style to Follow

(97) ³¹ Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn //admonish// everyone night and day with **tears**. ³² And now, brethren, **I commend you to God, and to the word of His grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified //purify or consecrate, and set apart//.** ³³ I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel. ³⁴ Yes, ye yourselves know, that these hands have ministered to my necessities, and to them that were with me. ³⁵ I have showed you all things, how that so laboring //toil, weary, work hard// ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, **"It is more blessed to give than to receive."**

Note: Jesus said this is many parables such as the Good Samaritan, the woman who poured oil on Jesus feet then wiped with her hair and fragrance filled the room, and possibly directly to the Apostles as in John 21:25, and later to Paul while in the desert (Galatians 1:11-20) then returned to Damascus and went to Jerusalem for 15 days to confer with Peter and the James the brother of Jesus, after 3 years from his salvation in Acts 9.

A Sad Good-bye because they will no longer see Face to Face

³⁶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all. ³⁷ And they all wept sore, and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him, ³⁸ Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spoke, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

Note: Compare to the epistle to the Ephesians written when in prison in Rome and the first church in Revelation 2:1-7 where 30 years later false apostles entered and they lost their first love of God.

Acts Chapter 21

21:1-14 Paul's Trip from Miletus to Jerusalem

(98) ¹ And it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a straight course to Coos, and the [day] following to Rhodes, and from there to Patara: ² And finding a ship sailing over to Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth. ³ Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden. ⁴ And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days: who said to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusalem. ⁵ And when we had accomplished those days, we departed and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till [we were] out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed. ⁶ And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they returned home again. ⁷ And when we had finished [our] course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day. ⁸ And the next [day] we that were of Paul's company departed, and came to Caesarea: and we entered into the house of **Philip the evangelist, which was [one] of the seven;** and abode with him. ⁹ And the same man had **four daughters, virgins, which did prophesy.**

Agabus the Prophet Speaks of Paul's Near Future Bondage (only prophecy besides Jesus)

¹⁰ And as we tarried [there] many days, there came down from Judaea a certain **prophet, named Agabus.** ¹¹ And when he was come to us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, **Thus says the Holy Ghost,** So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owns this girdle, and shall deliver [him] into the hands of the Gentiles. ¹² And when we heard these things, both we, and they of that place, begged him not to go up to Jerusalem. ¹³ Then Paul answered, What mean ye to weep and to break my heart? **for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.** ¹⁴ And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

Paul's 5 Trials in Jerusalem and Caesarea (Acts 21:15-26:32) 58-60 AD

Paul's Testifies in Jerusalem Before the Mob & Sanhedrin (Acts 21:15-23:35) 12 days

21:15-26 Paul Follows the Advice of James and the Elders with a Vow for Peace

(99) ¹⁵ And after those days we took up our baggage, and went ^a up to Jerusalem. ¹⁶ There went with us also [certain] of the disciples of Caesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge. ¹⁷ And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly. ¹⁸ And the [day] following Paul went in with us to **James;** and all the **elders** were present. ¹⁹ And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had worked among the Gentiles by his ministry. ²⁰ And when they heard [it], they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, "**You see, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe; and they are all zealous of the law:** ²¹ And they are informed of you, that you teach all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise [their] children, neither to walk after the customs. ²² What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that you are come. ²³ Do therefore this that we say to you: We have four men which have a vow on them; ²⁴ Them take, and ^b purify thyself with them, and pay the charges with them, that they may shave [their] heads: and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed concerning you, are nothing; but [that] you thyself also walk orderly, and keep the law. ²⁵ As concerning the Gentiles which believe, we have written [and] concluded that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from [things] offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication." ²⁶ Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them entered into the temple, to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an **offering should be offered** for every one of them. ²¹ And they are informed of you, that you teach all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying that they ought not to circumcise [their] children, neither to walk after the customs. ²² What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will hear that you are come.

Acts Chapter 21

²³ Do therefore this that we say to you: We have four men which have a vow on them; ²⁴ Them take, and ^b purify thyself with them, and pay the charges with them, that they may shave [their] heads: and all may know that those things, whereof they were informed concerning you, are nothing; but [that] you thyself also walk orderly, and keep the law. ²⁵ As concerning the Gentiles which believe, we have written [and] concluded that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from [things] offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication." ²⁶ Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them entered into the temple, to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification, **until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.**

^a A 2-day trip. Were James and the elders fearful due to the cultural climate of Jerusalem, to make an offering of sacrificial animals? Leviticus 19:15.

^b A temporary Nazarite vow of separation to God. After 7 days purification (Numbers 19:12) an offering is brought to the temple (Numbers 6:13-15) then their cut off hair is burnt at the altar with the offering animals (Numbers 6:18), signifying release from the vow. Same as Paul did in Acts 18:18. Galatians.

21:27-40 **Paul Arrested Outside the Temple on False Accusations About the Vow**

(100) ²⁷ And when the seven days were almost ended, **the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,** ²⁸ **Crying out, "Men of Israel, help: This is the man, that teaches all everywhere against the people, and the law, and this place:** and further brought Greeks also into the temple, and has polluted this holy place."

²⁹ (For they had seen before with him in the city Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they **supposed** that Paul had brought into the temple.) ³⁰ And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him ^a out of the temple: and immediately **the doors were shut.** ³¹ **And as they went about to kill him,** tidings came to the chief captain of the battalion, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar.

³² Who immediately took soldiers and centurions, and ran down to them: and when they saw the chief captain and the soldiers, they left beating of Paul. ³³ Then the chief captain came near, and took him, and commanded [him] to be bound with two chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

³⁴ And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle. ³⁵ And when he came upon the stairs, so it was, that he was borne of the soldiers for the violence of the people. ³⁶ For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, "Away with him."

^a to the Court of the Gentiles which is outside the court of the Israelites and the women.

³⁷ Then as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said to the chief captain, "May I speak to you?" Who said, "**Can you speak Greek?**" ³⁸ Are not you that Egyptian, which before these days made an uproar, and led out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers?" ³⁹ But Paul said, "I am a man [which am] a Jew of Tarsus, [a city] in Cilicia, a citizen of no insignificant city: and, I beseech you, allow me to speak to the people." ⁴⁰ And when he had given him license, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckoned with the hand to the people. And when there was made a great silence, **he spoke to them in the ^a Hebrew dialect,** saying,

^a Paul spoke Greek to the Jews of the dispersion. He spoke Hebrew to the Jews in Jerusalem, not Aramaic. This is evidenced by the Dead Sea Scrolls.

Acts Chapter 22

22:1-21 Paul's Personal Testimony Before the Angry Mob – 1st Testimony

Part 1 – Before His Salvation in His Old Life (1-5)

(101) ¹ “Men, brethren, and fathers, **hear ye my defense** [which I make] now unto you. ² (And when they heard that he **spoke in the Hebrew dialect** to them, they kept the more silence: and he says,) ³ I am verily a man [which am] a Jew, born in Tarsus, [a city] in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, [and] taught according to the perfect manner of the **law of the fathers**, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day. ⁴ And **I persecuted^a this way to the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.** ⁵ As also the high priest does bear me witness, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters to the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there bound to Jerusalem, for **to be punished.**

^a A Jewish term he used, not to alienate his audience, Acts 9:2. Gamaliel, Acts 5:34-40, highest Rabbi.
Note: Men, brethren, and fathers used 3x, Acts 7:2, 22:1, 28:17.

Part 2A – Paul's Salvation Experience (6-16)

⁶ And it came to pass, that, as I made my journey, and was come near to Damascus about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me. ⁷ And I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me, **“Saul, Saul, why do you persecute Me?”** ⁸ And I answered, “Who are you, Lord?” And he said unto me, **“I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom you persecute.”** ⁹ And they that were with me saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spoke to me. ¹⁰ And I said, “What shall I do, Lord?” And the Lord said unto me, **“Arise, and go into Damascus; and there it shall be told you of all things which are appointed for you to do.”** ¹¹ And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus. ¹² And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt [there], ¹³ Came to me, and stood, and said to me, “Brother Saul, receive your sight.” And the same hour I looked up upon him. ¹⁴ And he said, “The God of our fathers has chosen you, that you should know his will, and see that Just One, and should hear the voice of his mouth. ¹⁵ For you shall be his witness to all men of what you have seen and heard. ¹⁶ And now why do you tarry? ^a arise, and be baptized, and wash away your sins, calling on the name of the Lord.”

^a In Greek and context: Get yourself baptized (in water) and wash away your sins having called on the name of the Lord. 1 Peter 3:20-21. Titus 3:5 declares salvation is the “washing of regeneration”
Note: The light shone to all and blinded only Paul who had scales on his eyes, Acts 9:10-16, 23:1-5, Gal 4:13-15, 6:11, 2 Cor 12:7. Followed by evidence applicable for content or audience of testimony.

Part 2B – Paul's Past Coming to Pray at the Temple in Jerusalem (17-21)

¹⁷ And it came to pass, that, when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance; ¹⁸ And saw Him saying unto me, **“Make haste, and get you quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive your testimony concerning Me.”** ¹⁹ And I said, “Lord, they know that I imprisoned and beat in every synagogue them that believed on You: ²⁰ And when the blood of Your martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting to his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.” ²¹ And He said unto me, **“Depart: for I will send you far hence to the Gentiles.”**

Note: The only time this event is in Scripture. Not to confuse with later in Galatians 1:17-19.

Acts Chapter 22

22:22-29 *Paul's Defense with His Roman Citizenship and the Soldier's Rescue*

(102) ²² And they gave him audience unto this word, and [then] lifted up their voices, and said, "Away with such a [fellow] from the earth: for it is not fit that he should live." ²³ And as they cried out, and cast off [their] clothes, and threw dust into the air, ²⁴ The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bade that he should be ^a examined by scourging; that he might know wherefore they **cried so against him**. ²⁵ And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, "Is it lawful for you to scourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?" ²⁶ When the centurion heard [that], he went and told the chief captain, saying, "Take heed What you do: for this man is a Roman." ²⁷ Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, "Tell me, are you a Roman?" He said, "Yes." ²⁸ And the chief captain answered, "With a great sum obtained I this freedom." And Paul said, "But I was [free] born." ²⁹ Then straightway they departed from him which should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid, after he knew that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

^a The Roman scourge was more severe than the Jewish 39 strikes. Jesus suffered a Roman scourge.

22:30-23:11 *Paul's Persecuted by the High Priest & the Sanhedrin and His Witness*

(103) ³⁰ On the next day, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was **accused of the Jews**, he loosed him from [his] bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

Acts Chapter 23 **Persecution is followed by Protection and Providence** **58 AD**

¹ And Paul, earnestly beholding the **council** said, "Men [and] brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day." ² And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him to smite him on the mouth. ³ Then said Paul unto him, "God shall smite you, [you] whited wall: for sit you to judge me after the law, and command me to be smitten contrary to the law?" ⁴ And they that stood by said, "Revile you God's high priest?" ⁵ Then said Paul, "I knew not, brethren, that he was the high priest: for it is written, **YOU SHALL NOT SPEAK EVIL OF THE RULER OF YOUR PEOPLE.**"

^a Exodus 22:28. Note the instant repentance of Paul when he realized he broke the law of Moses. Notes: Great Sanhedrin, 70 plus high priest, Mt 5:22, every town of 120 men as heads of families had a local court called a Council, smaller towns has 7 or 3 judges. Not fathers as before mob in 22:1. Ananias appointed by Herod Agrippa II around AD 48, he was known for being harsh and cruel. In AD 66, at the start of the first great Jewish Revolt, Ananias was assassinated by an angry mob of anti-Roman revolutionaries. Whitewash 2x, Mt 23:27. Similar to John 18:19-24 except Jesus was struck. Paul's sick eyes prevented recognition.

⁶ But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, "Men [and] brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: of the hope and resurrection of the dead I am called in question." ⁷ And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided. ⁸ For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, **neither angel, nor spirit**: but the Pharisees confess both. ⁹ And there arose a great cry: and the scribes [that were] of the Pharisees' part arose, and strove, saying, "We find no evil in this man: but if a spirit or an angel has spoken to him, let us not fight against God." ¹⁰ And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain, fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by ^a force from among them, and to bring [him] into the castle. ¹¹ And the night following the Lord stood by him, and said, "**Be of good cheer, Paul: for as you have testified of me in Jerusalem, so must you bear witness also at Rome.**"

Acts Chapter 23

^a Same word used for "caught up" or rapture of the saints, forcibly or violently seized. Harpazo in Greek. 1 Thessalonians 4:17. Used 13 times in the New Testament, always with the same concept.

Note: Jerusalem and Rome are purposed to Paul by the Spirit in Acts 19:21.

23:12-22 **A Vow (12-15), a Young Man, and a Soldier (16-22)**

(104) ¹² And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying that they would neither eat nor drink until they had killed Paul. ¹³ And they were more than forty which had made this conspiracy. ¹⁴ And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound ourselves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul. ¹⁵ Now therefore ye with the council signify to the chief captain that he bring him down to you tomorrow, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill him. ¹⁶ And when ^a Paul's sister's son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entered into the castle, and told Paul. ¹⁷ Then Paul called one of the centurions unto [him], and said, "Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he has a certain thing to tell him." ¹⁸ So he took him, and brought [him] to the chief captain, and said, "Paul the prisoner called me unto [him], and prayed me to bring this young man unto you, who has something to say unto you." ¹⁹ Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went [with him] aside privately, and asked [him], "What is that you have to tell me?" ²⁰ And he said, "The Jews have agreed to desire you that you would bring down Paul tomorrow into the council, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly. ²¹ But do not you yield to them: for there lie in wait for him of them more than forty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink until they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from you." ²² So the chief captain [then] let the young man depart, and charged [him, "See you] tell no man that you have showed these things to me."

^a Only mention of Paul's family. His nephew probably overheard talk from the adults in the family. Paul's family was probably well known in the Sanhedrin. This story is the providence of God.

23:23-35 **Paul Escorted by the Chief Captain with a Letter to Felix the Governor in Caesarea**

(105) ²³ And he called unto [him] two centurions, saying, "Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Caesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the ^a third hour of the night; ²⁴ And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring [him] safe unto Felix the governor."

^a 9 pm Jewish time 470 Roman soldiers safely escort Paul to Caesarea.

²⁵ And he wrote a letter after this manner: ²⁶ Claudius Lysias unto the most excellent governor Felix [sends] greeting. ²⁷ This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: ^a then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman. ²⁸ And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council: ²⁹ Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds. ³⁰ And when it was told me how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to you, and gave commandment to his accusers also to say before you what [they had] against him. Farewell. ³¹ Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought [him] by night to Antipatris. ³² On the next day they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle: ³³ Who, when they came to Caesarea, and delivered the letter to the governor, presented Paul also before him. ³⁴ And when the governor had read [the letter], he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that [he was] of Cilicia; ³⁵ "I will hear you," said he, "when your accusers are also come." And he commanded him to be kept in Herod's judgment hall.

^a The letter is highly biased in favor of the writer, as the world commonly enlarges the record of their accomplishments, which normally are circumstantial. Same term in Luke 1:3 to Theophilus, same as most noble Felix in 24:3 and Festus - in person, Acts 26:25.

Paul Trials in Caesarea Before Felix, Festus & Agrippa (Acts 24:1-26:32) 2 years, 58-60 AD

24:1-9 False Accusations by Tertullus Before Governor Felix (5-7)

(106) ¹ And **after five days Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and [with] a certain orator [named] Tertullus**, who informed the governor against Paul. ² And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse [him], saying, "Seeing that by you we enjoy great quietness, and that very worthy deeds are done to this nation by your providence, ³ We accept [it] always, and in all places, most noble ^a Felix, with all thankfulness. ⁴ Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious to you, I pray you that you would hear us of your clemency a few words. ⁵ For we have found this man [a] pestilent [fellow], and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes: ⁶ Who also has gone about to profane the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law. ⁷ But the chief captain Lysias came [upon us], and with great violence took [him] away out of our hands, ⁸ Commanding his accusers to come to you: by examining of whom thyself may take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him." ⁹ And the Jews also assented, saying that these things were so.

Q – What can believers learn from this passage?

A1 – Politically correct writing (Acts 23:26-30) aligns with politically correct speech or rhetoric when attacked from the enemy. Flattery is a modern term for the introduction to the rhetoric. Orator in Greek is rhetoros, a derivative of rhetoric.

A2 – God prepares his people for persecution as he prepared Paul in Acts 20:23-24, 21:10-14.

Application: I trust God to prepare me and the way for persecution, with wisdom from above and by using others.

^a Felix is the first slave to become a governor of a Roman province (Judea). Josephus records many Jews died or were mistreated under the rule of Felix, therefore Emperor Nero replaced him with Festus, Acts 24:27. James & elders persuaded Paul to purify himself with 4 other Jews, Acts 21:15-26.

24:10-21 Paul Defends Himself Before Governor Felix – 3rd Trial

(107) ¹⁰ Then Paul, after that the governor had beckoned to him to speak, answered, "Forasmuch as I know that you have been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for myself: ¹¹ Because that you may understand, that there are **yet but twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship**. ¹² And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the city: ¹³ Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me. ¹⁴ But this I confess to you, that **after the way which they call heresy**, so worship I the God of my fathers, believing all things which are written in the law and in the prophets: ¹⁵ And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust. ¹⁶ And herein do I exercise myself, **to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and [toward] men**. ¹⁷ Now after many years I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings. ¹⁸ Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult. ¹⁹ Who ought to have been here before you, and object, if they had anything against me. ²⁰ Or else let these same [here] say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the council, ²¹ Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day."

24:22-27 Paul Reasons with Governor Felix (Felix keeps Paul for > 2 years)

(108) ²² And when Felix heard these things, having **more perfect knowledge of [that] way**, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter. ²³ And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let [him] have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister or come to him. ²⁴ And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

²⁵ And as **he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled**, and answered, "Go your way for this time; when I have a convenient season, I will call for you." ²⁶ **He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him:** wherefore he sent for him the oftener, and communed with him. ²⁷ But **after two years Porcius Festus came into Felix' room:** and Felix, willing to show the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

Note: Felix was evil and waiting for turnover of duties. Festus was a more fair ruler. John 16:5-11.

Acts Chapter 25

25:1-12 **Paul's Defense Before Governor Festus & His Appeal to Caesar – Trial 4** (> 14 days)

(109) ¹ Now when **Festus** was come into the **province, after three days** he ascended from **Caesarea to Jerusalem**. ² Then the **high priest and the chief of the Jews** informed him **against Paul**, and begged for him, ³ And desired favor **against** him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, **laying wait in the way to kill him**. ⁴ But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at ^a Caesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly [thither]. ⁵ Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, go down with [me], and **accuse** this man, if there be any wickedness in him. ⁶ And when he had tarried among them **more than ten days, he went down to Caesarea**; and the **next day sitting on the judgment seat** commanded Paul to be brought. ⁷ And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem stood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints **against** Paul, which they could not prove. ⁸ **While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Caesar, I have ^a offended anything at all.** ⁹ But Festus, willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, "Will you go up to Jerusalem, and there be **judged** of these things before me?" ¹⁰ Then said Paul, **"I stand at Caesar's judgment seat**, where I ought to be **judged**: to the Jews I have done no wrong, as you very well know. ¹¹ For if I be an **offender**, or have committed anything worthy of death, **I refuse not to die**: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me to them. **I appeal to Caesar.**" ¹² Then Festus, when he had **conferred with the council**, answered, "Have you appealed to Caesar? to Caesar shall you go."

^a Caesarea was the Roman headquarters of the government in Judea.

^b In Greek translated sinned. Translated as sin in 38 other places. Paul always kept the law of Moses. Acts 16:1-3, 18:18, 18:19-21, 19:1, 20:16, 21:26. Caesar Nero killed wife, mother, and step-brother

25:13-25:27 **Paul Before King Agrippa – 5th Trial coordination** (around 30 days)

(110) ¹³ And **after certain days** ^a **king Agrippa and Bernice came to Caesarea to salute Festus**. ¹⁴ And when they had been there **many days**, Festus declared Paul's cause to the king, saying, "There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix: ¹⁵ About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have **judgment against him**. ¹⁶ To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, before that he which is **accused** have the **accusers face to face**, and have license to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him. ¹⁷ Therefore, when they were come hither, without any delay on the **next day** I sat on the **judgment seat**, and commanded the man to be brought forth. ¹⁸ **Against** whom when the **accusers** stood up, they brought no **accusation** of such things as I supposed: ¹⁹ But had certain questions **against** him of their **own superstition**, and of **one Jesus**, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive. ²⁰ And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked [him] whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be **judged of these matters**. ²¹ But when Paul had **appealed** to be reserved to the **hearing of Augustus**, I commanded him to be kept until I might send him to Caesar." ²² Then **Agrippa said to Festus**, "I would also **hear the man myself**. **Tomorrow**, said he, you shall **hear him**."

Acts Chapter 25

²³ And on the **next day**, when **Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp**, and was entered into the **place of hearing**, with the **chief captains, and principal men** of the city, at Festus' commandment Paul was brought forth. ²⁴ And Festus said, "**King Agrippa**, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and [also] here, crying that he ought not to live any longer. ²⁵ But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself has **appealed to Augustus**, I have determined to send him. ²⁶ Of whom **I have no certain thing to write to my lord**. Wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before you, O king Agrippa, that, after **examination** had, **I might have somewhat to write**. ²⁷ For it seems to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withal to signify the crimes [laid] against him."

^a King Agrippa was the last of the Herodian dynasty. The Herodians were ½ Jew and ½ Edumean. His ancestors were: Great grand-father Herod the Great (Matthew 2:1, who killed the babies boys), Great Uncle Antipas (beheaded John the Baptist), Father Agrippa I (executed James, imprisoned Peter, died in Caesarea, Acts 12).

Acts Chapter 26 A Complete Salvation Testimony (I, me, my 34x. To king Agrippa and leaders)

26:1-3 **Introduction**

(111) ¹ Then **Agrippa** said unto Paul, "You are permitted to speak for yourself." Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself: ² "**I think myself happy, king Agrippa**, because I shall answer for myself this day before you concerning all the things whereof I am **accused of the Jews**: ³ Especially [because I know] you to be **expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews**: /appointed high priest & oversaw temple activities/ wherefore **I beseech you to hear me patiently**."

26:4-12 **Part 1 – Life against Jesus of Nazareth (LOST)**

⁴ My manner of **life** from my **youth**, which was at the first among my own **nation at Jerusalem**, know all the Jews; ⁵ Which knew me from the beginning, if they would testify, that after the **most straightest sect of our religion I lived a Pharisee**. ⁶ And now I stand and am **judged** for the **hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers**: ⁷ To which [**promise**] **our twelve tribes, instantly serving [God] day and night, hope to come**. For which **hope's** sake, king Agrippa, I am **accused** of the Jews. ⁸ Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead? ⁹ I verily thought with myself, that I ought to do many things **contrary** to the name **of Jesus of Nazareth**. ¹⁰ Which thing I also did in Jerusalem: and many of the **saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests**; and **when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them**. ¹¹ And **I punished them often in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme; and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them** even unto strange cities. ¹² Whereupon as **I went to Damascus with authority and commission** from the chief priests,

Notes: vs 6 – hope = confidence or trust. vs 7 - The 12 tribes of Israel (**no lost tribes**) are verified in Matthew 19:28, Luke 2:26, 22:30, Acts 2:9, James 1:1, Revelation 7:4, 21:12. I was as they are – 1 Cor 6:9-11, such were some of you. What changed me? The chief of sinners.

26:13-18 **Part 2 – Experience the Lord Jesus (SAVED)**

(112) ¹³ At midday, O king, I saw in the way **a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun**, shining round about me and them which journeyed with me. ¹⁴ And when **we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me**, and saying in the **Hebrew dialect**, "**Saul, Saul, why do you persecute Me?**" [it is] **hard for you to kick against the pricks.**" ¹⁵ And **I said, "Who are you, Lord?"** And He said, "**I am Jesus** whom you persecute. /not body stolen/

Acts Chapter 26

¹⁶ But rise, and stand upon your feet: for I have appeared unto you for this purpose, **to make you a minister and a witness both of these things which you have seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto you;** ¹⁷ **Delivering you from** the people, and [from] the Gentiles, unto whom **NOW I send you,** ¹⁸ **To open their eyes, [and] to turn them from darkness to light, and [from] the authority of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me."**

Notes: What is your key verse when you were 1st saved? Mine is John 14:6. NOW in TR. vs 13 – Rev 1:16b. vs 14 - Hard sticks with sharp points "pricks" or "goads" to drive cattle in the direction you want. Today you may say, "like banging your head against a wall." The New Testament is written in Greek, except Matthew in Hebrew +293 words, Latin-80, & Aramaic-4.

26:19-23 Part 3 – **Life for Christ (CHANGED)**

(113) ¹⁹ "Whereupon, O **king Agrippa, I was not disobedient** unto the heavenly vision: ²⁰ But showed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judaea, and [then] to the Gentiles, /Acts 9:1-30/ that **they should repent and turn to God,** /change of mind-attitude, an about-face, 180-degree, **turn or return,** /200s, Wyman Fragment-Ro 5:1, 1500s, Erasmus/ **and do works meet for repentance.** /works-ergon, not for salv – because saved, meet-follow/

²¹ For these causes the **Jews** caught me in the temple, and went about to **kill** [me]. ²² Having therefore obtained **help of God,** /Roman Govt/ **I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great,** saying **none other things** than those which the **prophets and Moses did say should come:** ²³ That **Christ should allow,** /slain/ [and] that **He should be the first that should rise from the dead,** /Luke 24:27, 46 road to Emmaus, disciples, hear of Moses and prophets about Jesus death and resurrection/ and should **show light unto the people, and to the Gentiles."** /Acts 22:21 sent to the Gentiles/

Note: Sometimes witnessing includes my testimony. Sometimes only my testimony, other times only my witness.

26:24-32 Part 4 – **Reaction of Others (WITNESS)**

(114) ²⁴ And as he thus spoke for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, "Paul, ^a you are beside yourself; much learning does make you mad." ²⁵ But he said, "I am not mad, most noble Festus; but speak forth the words of truth and soberness. ²⁶ For the king knows of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am persuaded that none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner. ²⁷ King Agrippa, do you believe the prophets? I know that you believe." ²⁸ Then Agrippa said unto Paul, "You almost persuade me to be a Christian." ²⁹ And Paul said, "I would to God, that not only you, but **also all that hear me this day,** were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds." ³⁰ And when he had thus spoken, **the king rose up,** and the governor, and Bernice, and they that sat with them: ³¹ And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, "This man does **nothing worthy of death or of bonds."** ³² Then said **Agrippa unto Festus,** "This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed to Caesar." /Acts 19:21/

^a Paul as well as we must not be guilty of a crime, however being mad or thinking differently is no crime. Agrippa gets uncomfortable and says "enough-stop" to stop Paul from speaking.

Note: vs 28 & 29 - This reply is light-hearted, but not ironic. Paul's response is very revealing of a pure heart for the salvation of all people. Vs 30 to 32 - Agrippa had a weak or no written reason except mob hate and violence from the Jews. Therefore a light sentence from Caesar in Rome. 2 years of house arrest, no chains, allowing visitors.

(15) 27-28

Paul's Witness on Trip to Rome (map)

7 months

60 AD

Acts Chapter 27

27:1-8 The Voyage from Caesarea to Crete

(115) ¹ And when it was ^a determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners to [one] named **Julius, a centurion** of Augustus' band. ² And entering into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia; [one] Aristarchus, a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us. ³ And the next [day] we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave [him] liberty to go to his friends to refresh himself. ⁴ And when we had launched from there, we sailed under Cyprus, because the **winds were contrary**. ⁵ And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, [a city] of Lycia. ⁶ And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy; and he put us therein. ⁷ And when we had sailed slowly **many days**, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the wind not permitting us, we sailed under Crete, over against Salmone; ⁸ And, hardly passing it, came to a place which is called The fair havens; near whereunto was the city [of] Lasea.

^a In the late 19th century Scottish unbelievers set to expose errors in the journeys of Paul. Sir William Ramsey concluded that Luke was very accurate in every detail and became a believer, writing several books on Acts and Paul in defense of God's Word. This account of the trip to Rome is the best preserved from all classical literature of this time period for seamanship, weather and geography.

27:9-20 The Dangerous Storm at Sea

(116) ⁹ Now when **much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous**, because the **a fast was now already past**, Paul admonished them, ¹⁰ And said to them, "Sirs, ^b I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives."¹¹ Nevertheless the centurion believed the master and the owner of the ship, more than those things which were spoken by Paul. ¹² And because the haven was not commodious to **winter** in, the more part advised to depart there also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, [and there] to winter; [which is] a haven of Crete, and lies toward the south west and north west. ¹³ **And when the south wind blew softly**, supposing that they had obtained [their] purpose, loosing [there], they sailed close by Crete. ¹⁴ But not long after there arose against it **a tempestuous wind**, called ^c Euroclydon. ¹⁵ And when the ship was caught, and could not ^d bear up into the wind, we let [her] drive. ¹⁶ And running under a certain island which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat: ¹⁷ Which when they had taken up, they used cables, undergirding the ship; and, fearing lest they should fall into the ^c sandbars, strake sail, and so were driven. ¹⁸ And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next [day] they lightened the ship; ¹⁹ And the **third [day]** we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship. ²⁰ And when neither sun nor stars in many days appeared, and **no small tempest lay on [us], all hope that we should be saved was then taken away.**

^a The Day of Atonement was at the beginning of October when winter storms were imminent. By November 11 the Mediterranean was normally not sailed.

^b Paul was not only an experienced sea traveler, but more a prophet. Although not realized yet by the captain and centurion, from this point Paul is the one in charge.

^c The wind changed from a mild southerly breeze to a violent northeasterly wind as a typhoon. It pushed them toward the African coast sandbars of Syrtis, a location with sandbars. Wet and cold.

^d were being borne along relates to the doctrine of verbal inspiration of the Scripture, "men spoke from God, being borne along by the Holy Spirit," 2 Peter 1:21. Just as the ship could not resist the winds of the storm, so the apostles and prophets could not resist the words of the Holy Spirit, John 6:63.

27:21-26 **Paul Comforts the Crew**

(117) ²¹ But after long abstinence Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, **“Sirs, ye should have listened to me,** and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss. ²² And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no loss of [any man's] life among you, but of the ship. ²³ For there **stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,** ²⁴ Saying, Fear not, Paul; you must be brought before Caesar: and, look, God has given you all them that sail with you. ²⁵ Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me. ²⁶ Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain island.”

27:27-44 **The Shipwreck after 14 Nights of a Tempest**

²⁷ But when the **fourteenth night** was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria, about **midnight** the shipmen deemed that they drew near to some country; ²⁸ And sounded, and found [it] twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found [it] fifteen fathoms. ²⁹ Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day. ³⁰ And as the **shipmen were about to flee out of the ship,** when they had let down the boat into the sea, under color as though they would have cast anchors out of the foreship, ³¹ Paul said to the centurion and to the ^a soldiers, **“Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.”** ³² Then the soldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

(118) ³³ And while the day was coming on, Paul begged them all to take meat, saying, “This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried and continued fasting, having taken nothing. ³⁴ Wherefore I pray you to take [some] meat: for this is for your health: for there shall not a hair fall from the head of any of you.” ³⁵ And when he had thus spoken, **he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all:** and when he had broken [it], he began to eat. ³⁶ Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took [some] meat. ³⁷ And we were in all in the ship **two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.** ³⁸ And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea. ³⁹ And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship. ⁴⁰ And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed [themselves] to the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoised up the mainsail to the wind, and made toward shore. ⁴¹ And falling into a place where ^b two seas met, they **ran the ship aground;** and the forepart stuck fast, and remained unmovable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves. ⁴² And the soldiers' counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out, and escape. ⁴³ **But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from [their] purpose;** and commanded that they which could swim should cast [themselves] first [into the sea], and get to land: ⁴⁴ And the rest, some on boards, and some on [broken pieces] of the ship. And so it came to pass, that they escaped all safe to land.

^a The soldiers were needed to help beach the ship safely. The unbelievers and believers are working together. Here we see divine sovereignty and human responsibility come together.

^b The 2 seas are where two currents meet and develop a mud or sandbar. The seas were used to accomplish God's purpose, just as in Matthew 16:18.

28:1-10 **At Malta 3 Months: Kindness (1-2, 7, 10), Snake Bite (3-6), and Healing (8-10)**

(119) ¹ And when they were escaped, then they knew that the island was called ^a Malta. ² And the barbarous people showed us no little kindness: for they kindled a fire, and received us everyone, because of the **present rain**, and because of the **cold**. ³ And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand. ⁴ And when the barbarians saw the [venomous] beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a **murderer**, whom, though he has escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffers not to live. ⁵ And he **shook off the beast** into the fire, and felt no harm. ⁶ Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they **changed their minds**, and said that he was a **god**. ⁷ In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius; who received us, and lodged us **three days courteously**. ⁸ And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever and of a bloody flux: to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and ^b healed him. ⁹ So when this was done, others also, which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed: ¹⁰ Who also honored us with many honors; and when we departed, they laded [us] with such things as were necessary.

^a Malta is 60 miles south of Sicily, 18 miles long and 8 miles wide. KJV Melita. Publius is Popular.

Notes: The end of Mark, 16:9-20 speaks of being bit by poisonous snakes and not effected. This is true during the apostolic age and verified in Hebrews 2:1-4. This passage is omitted or noted in all modern translations of the New Testament. NU (N = Nestle-Aland 28th ed / U = United Bible Society 3rd ed, Gk NT).

Barbarous is non-Greek speaking. Fever and bloody flux could be dysentery or goat's milk bacteria.

28:11-15 **Trip to Rome: Paul finds Brethren and Brethren find Paul**

(120) ¹¹ And **after three months** we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Castor and Pollux. ¹² And landing at **Syracuse /80 miles/**, we tarried [there] **three days**. ¹³ And from there we **fetched a compass**, and came to **Rhegium**: and **after one day the south wind blew**, and we came the **next day to Puteoli**: **/180 miles/** ¹⁴ Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them **seven days**: and so we went toward Rome. ¹⁵ And from there, when the **brethren** heard of us, they **came to meet us** as far as Appii forum **/33 miles/**, and the three taverns: **/43 miles/** whom when Paul saw, he **thanked God**, and took **courage**.

Notes: Castor & Pollux are Twin brother gods thought to provide safety to sailors.

28:16-31 **At Rome 2 Years: An Appointment with the Jews and Liberty to Preach and Teach**

(121) ¹⁶ And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was permitted to dwell by himself with a soldier that kept him. ¹⁷ And it came to pass, that after three days Paul called the chief of the Jews together: and when they were come together, he said unto them, "Men [and] brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people, or customs of our fathers, yet I was delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans. ¹⁸ Who, when they had examined me, would have let [me] go, because there was no cause of death in me. ¹⁹ But when the Jews spoke against [it], I was constrained to appeal to Caesar; not that I had anything to accuse my nation of. ²⁰ For this cause therefore I have called for you, to see [you], and to speak with [you]: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain." ²¹ And they said unto him, "We neither received letters out of Judea concerning you, neither any of the brethren that came showed or spoke any harm of you. ²² But we desire to hear of you what you think: for as concerning this sect, we know that everywhere it is spoken against."

Acts Chapter 28

28:23-31 *Paul's Last Message to the Jews First*

(122) ²³ And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into [his] lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and [out of] the prophets, from morning till evening /Spring, 9am to 6pm/. ²⁴ And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not. ²⁵ And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spoke the Holy Ghost by ^a Isaiah the prophet to our fathers, ²⁶ Saying, **Go to this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: ²⁷ For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; unless they should see with [their] eyes, and hear with [their] ears, and understand with [their] heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.** ²⁸ Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and [that] they will hear it. ²⁹ And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

^a Isaiah 6:9-10. Jesus said the same when he began speaking parables to the Jews in Matthew 13:13-16, Mark 4:10-12, Luke 8:9-10, John 12:40-41, Acts 28:26-27, Romans 11:8. This is prophesied to continue until the last 3 ½ years of the future tribulation before the return of Christ, Romans 11:17-21. The failure to respond to the gospel is the failure to repent and believe. Convert is to turn or return.

Paul's last of 11 messages in Acts and last of 8 times to depart from the Jews to the Gentiles: Acts 9:15 – Jesus, 10 – Peter, 13:46 – Paul, 15 – 1st church council, 18:6 – Paul, 22:17-21 – Jesus, 26:17 – Jesus, 28:25-28 – God in Isaiah 6:9-10. 4th and final is same pattern as Amos, the judgment is sure.

Now in the church age this is also true in the 7 churches of Revelation 2-3. He that has an ear to hear let him hear what the Spirit says to the church. For the saved within the church age, Acts 2 through Rev 3.

³⁰ And Paul dwelt ^a **two whole years** in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him, ³¹ **Preaching** the kingdom of God, and **teaching** those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, ^b no man forbidding him.

^a During this time has had several visitors including Luke and Aristarchus most of the time and when he wrote to the Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Philemon (**4 prison epistles**). The beginning of the internal witness of the Scripture begins in each of our lives the moment we have ears that hear and eyes that see with our heart. The final attempt to go the Jews first and therefore the burden that compelled Paul to write the letter to the Hebrews, without directly identifying himself as the writer.

Notes: May we be imitators of Paul, as he imitated Christ (1 Corinthians 11:1) consistently seeking God's will, way and time. The rest of Paul's life is a mixture of Scripture and non-biblical historical writings.

4th Witnessing Journey

63-66 AD

Hebrews was probably written after Paul got out of jail and Timothy was in prison, Hebrews 13:23. When? We have no witness. **1 Timothy and Titus are written in this time period.**

Possible places Paul visited: Colosse & Ephesus (Phmn 22), Macedonia (1 Tim 3:1, Phil 1:25, 2:24), Ephesus (1 Tim 3:14), Spain (Romans 15:28), Crete (Titus 1:5), Corinth & Miletus (2 Tim 4:20), winter in Nicopolis (Titus 3:12), Troas (2 Tim 4:13).

The Great Fire in Rome. Emperor Nero blamed the Christians, then persecuted those in Rome **64 AD**

The Great Jewish Revolt (1st Jewish-Roman War, Masada fell in 73 AD)

66-73 AD

2nd Roman imprisonment **2 Timothy written**

67-68 AD

Paul was martyred by the Roman Emperor Nero. Beheaded. Eusebius and Tertullian.

Peter was martyred by Nero also. Crucified upside down. **(Peter wrote 2 Peter)**

John, 1,2,3 John & Revelation

85-95 AD



Detailed Outline and GEMS of the book of ACTS

Bible TOC

Doctrines: (1) Teaching, (2) Prayer, (3) Evangelism, (4) Fellowship, (5) Holy Spirit (Acts 2:42)

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION-DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
ACTS 1-12 (The Apostle Peter – later; James, Stephen and Phillip - and witness at Jerusalem, Judea and Samaria)					
1:1-3	From Luke to Theophilus- "Lover of God. Was Luke the man from Macedonia?	Intro to Book, continues from the Gospel of Luke, "All that Jesus BEGAN to Teach and Do, until the Day he was taken up". Theophilus - Luke's master and/or Roman Official to emperor in Paul's legal defense.	Written around 65 AD. I believe the last of the 3 synoptic gospels.	Luke the physician gave "an orderly account." They, them or we, us 16:10-17, 20:5, 21:18, 27:1, 28:16.	Luke 1:1-4
1:4-11	Jesus, 11 Apostles, 2 Angels	Last words of Jesus before ascension. (vs 4-8) Two angels talk to 11 apostles. (vs 9-11)	Mount Olivet. At end of 40 days of appearing at least 10 times to > 500 witnesses. 13 May 33 AD	Jesus ascends to heaven in a cloud, he shall return in the same way (vs 9-11)	1 Corinthians 15:1-11 Hebrews 4:11-16 (Jesus ministry today)
1:12-14	11 Apostles, Mary mother of Jesus & brothers	Wait for power on high, Jesus will continue work that he began.	Jerusalem - upper room. Wait for 10 Days, until day of Pentecost.		Leviticus 23:15-22 (Feast of Pentecost)
1:15-26	Peter-Matthias, 11 Apostles,	Choose to replace Judas. Lot fell on Matthias. Holy Spirit directs from now on, to know the will of God.	Jerusalem-upper room	Paul's unique ministry to the Gentiles. 12 Apostles to the nation of Israel.	vs 20. Ps 69:25, 109:8 Translation: Bishopric = Office

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION-DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
	120 Believers			Was Peter in the flesh?	
1:8 Key verse of Acts The Book of Hebrews is the theology of this transition	3)Witness - martyr, Not afraid to die for what he believes. A martyr while living. Your kingdom come. Acts 10 (Peter) spoke - no laying on of hands	2)Power - dynamic, dynamite To live for Jesus, understand Scripture and obey God, to witness. 1 Cor 14:21-22 Languages are a sign, "baptized in the name of Jesus" Acts 2,8,19 (Jews understood, as they were baptized into Moses in the wilderness) - Not in Acts 10 who were Gentiles!	4)Book of transition to ALL Jerusalem - Acts 2 (Jesus) Samaria - Acts 8 (Phillip) No languages Judea - Uttermost part of world - Acts 19 (Paul)	1)OT/prior to conversion -with us (sin-right-judge) NT-in us (John 14:17, 1 Cor 12:3, 6:19) NT-upon or overflows us The Holy Spirit empowers the church.	Great Commission of Matthew 28 and Mark 16. Which is more valid today? Matthew 28 Mark 16 - short view Transitions: a. Jesus to apostles b. Old covenant to New Covenant c. Witness-Israel to Church
1:14	Peter - 120	Waiting for power. All in one accord.	Jerusalem-upper room	Prayer	
1:24	Peter - 120	Chose Matthias for Judas. Cast lots - God knows hearts. Last time OT lots used. We no longer need.	Jerusalem-upper room	Prayer	
2:1-13 120 baptized with H.S.	Peter - 120 15 nations	Day of Pentecost (harvesting field and make wave offering where firstfruits were waved before God by priests)	Jerusalem Church founded, 23 May 33 AD	Holy Spirit outpoured on ALL flesh	Vs 21 "going in and out" John 10:9-10
2:14-41	Peter (3000 souls added at Pentecost)	1st Message (GOSPEL) 9 points of Jesus 1. Jesus' Life, vs 22 2. Jesus' Death, vs 23 3. Jesus' Burial, vs 23 4. Jesus' Resurrection, vs 24 5. Jesus' fulfillment of the Old Testament Prophecies, vs 25-30 6. Jesus' Ascension, vs 30-31 7. Jesus' Exaltation, vs 32-33 8. Jesus' promise of the Holy Spirit, vs 33, 39 (John 14:16) gift, vs 38 9. Jesus' Return, vs 35-36 (John 14:1-3) 1. Holy Spirit convicts man, vs 37 (John 16:7-11) 2. Man's Repentance, vs 38 (Mark 1:15) 3. Receive the gift of the Holy Spirit, vs 38 4. Gladly received word, were baptized vs 41		Teaching, 2:14-8:1, "with many other words Peter did testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation." vs 40 vs 41 BAPTIZED "name of Jesus" 1) spiritual - not physical or water 2)for Jew	Joel 2:28-32 (17-21) 1st-2nd Coming, Psalm 16:8-11 (25-28), Psalm 110:1 (35)
2:42-47		17. "they continued steadfastly in the apostles' teaching (doctrine) and (vs 42) 18. in fellowship , and the (vs 42) 19. breaking of bread , and (vs 42) 20. prayers . And (vs 42) 21. fear came upon every soul: (vs 43) 22. and many wonders and signs were done through the apostles. (vs 43) And 23. all who believed were together , and (vs 44) 24. had all things common , and (vs 44) 25. sold their possessions and goods, and (vs 45) 26. divided them among all, as everyone had need . (vs 45) 27. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple , and (vs 46) 28. breaking bread in houses , (vs 46) 29. ate their food with gladness and simplicity (singleness) of heart , (vs 46) 30. praising God , and (vs 47)		16 manifestations of Spirit. VS 42 Cause 1. Apostles doctrine 2. Fellowship 3. Breaking of bread 4. Prayer 5. Fear - Effect	

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
		31. having favor with all the people. And (vs 47) the Lord added those who were being saved daily to the congregation. " (vs 47)		Circumstantial 6-10 11-14) Effect 15-16) Circumstance	
2:30	Omission	"According to the flesh He raised up Christ"			
2:38		Baptized in the name of Jesus Christ. "into" the name of Jesus	Jerusalem	Doctrine. 1st of 3 times in Acts. Acts 8, 19.	
2:42		Church	Jerusalem	Prayers, continual	
3:1-11	Peter & John	Healed lame man. 1st healing	Jerusalem-Temple	Not by silver or gold, but "In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up & walk"	
3:12-26 4:1-4 4:4 5,000 saved	Peter 5000 saved at the temple	2nd Message (GOSPEL) To Jews present - divide message. 3:16 name	Jerusalem-Solomon's Porch soon after Pentecost	Teaching Vs 19-25, 1 st and 2 nd coming	
3:1	Peter & John	Prayer	Jerusalem - Temple	9 th hour - 3pm: Regular time, temple	
4:1-4	Peter & John	Arrested	Jerusalem	As they yet spoke	Psalms 118:22 (11)
4:5-12	Peter	3rd Message Preached to Sanhedrin			
4:13-22	Peter & John	The name of Jesus forbidden	Jerusalem		
4:23-30	Peter, John & own company	Prayer for boldness to witness	Jerusalem	Prayer. Last mention of John the Apostle until Johns writings.	Psalms 2:1-2
4:31-35	2:42-47 Same people and more, 2nd time filled.	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. "Now, Lord look on their threats, and grant to Your servants that with all boldness they may speak Your word. (vs 29) (CAUSE) 2. By stretching out Your hand to heal, and that signs and wonders may be done through the name of Your holy Servant Jesus. And (vs 30) Circumstantial/effect 3. when they had prayed, the place where they were assembled together was shaken; and they were (vs 31) Circumstantial/effect 4. all filled with the Holy Spirit, and (vs 31) Effect 5. they spoke the Word of God with boldness. Now the multitude of those who believed were of (vs 31) Effect 6. one heart and one soul; neither did anyone say that any of the things he possessed was his own, but they had (vs 32) Effect 7. all things in common. And with (vs 32) Effect 8. great power the Apostles gave witness to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus. And (vs 33) Effect 9. great grace was upon them all. Nor was there (vs 33) Effect 10. anyone among them who lacked; for all who were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and (vs 34) Circumstantial/effect 11. brought the proceeds of the things that were sold, and laid them at the Apostles' feet; and they (vs 35) Circumstantial/effect 12. distributed to each as anyone had need." (vs 35) Circumstantial/effect 			
4:36-37	Barnabas, Consolation	First mentioned. Sold land, & laid money at Apostles feet		named by Apostles	Chapter 4 - last mention of John
4:11	Manuscripts	KJV-"head of the corner" vs "capstone"		big difference - new age	

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
5:1-11	Ananias & Sapphira	Lying to the Holy Spirit and to God - demonstrates one	Jerusalem	great fear came upon all	
5:12-16 5:14 multitude of men and women saved	Peter Lame Man Healed	Miracles and wonders. Even the shadow of Peter fell on them. Many came to be healed and delivered from evil spirit from surrounding cities.	Jerusalem. Event not repeated! All who came were healed	5:13 ? None of the rich unconverted or saved joined themselves, yet growth of multitude.	
5:17-42	Peter & Apostles, Gamaliel	In prison, freed, on trial	Jerusalem	5:20, 5:42	
5:29	Translation KJV weak	KJV - We OUGHT to obey God rather than men.		Greek - We MUST obey God rather than men.	
6:1-8:40	Stephen, Philip	Prochorus, Nicanot, Timon, Parmenas, Nicolas	Jerusalem		
6:1-7 Word increased and disciples multiplied	7 chosen to serve, by all believers	Greeks were chosen to serve Grecians	Jerusalem	7 filled with the Holy Spirit & wisdom, good report	
6:8-8:3	Stephen	Full of faith and power. Great wonders and miracles.			
6:6		Select servants	Jerusalem	Laid hands on them, then Prayer	
6:18	Manuscripts	KJV-"Holy Ghost" vs "Spirit"			
7:1-60 2-53	Sermon	4th Message - to Sanhedrin Stephen the 1st Martyr Rightly divide	Jerusalem 33 AD	The Holy Spirit convicts of sin	Isaiah 66:1-2 (49-50)
7:30	Omission	of the Lord			
7:37	Omission	Him shall ye hear			
7:59-60	Intercession	Forgiveness Stephen stoned to death		Lord, not charge	
8:1-3	Saul	Saul Persecutes the Church	34 AD	8:2-40 Jews scattered abroad, outside of Jerusalem.	
8:4-25	Philip, Peter, Sorcerer	Peter had to lay hands on to receive power from on high, yet w/o sign of languages. Not like Acts 2, 10 or 19.	Samaria Apostles still at Jerusalem.	Simon the Sorcerer's Sin. Philip did many miracles, healed and set free from demons.	Did not need sign (1 Cor 14:20-22) because 1/2 Jews, Father Abraham the same. All knew same language and religion.
8:26-40	Philip & Ethiopian	Philip preached to Ethiopian He believed and was baptized in water. (immersion)		First time only - did they need apostles.	Isaiah 53:7-8 (32-33)
8:18		KJV-Holy Ghost vs Spirit		Manuscripts	
8:34	Conversation	Understand text		Eunuch-Phillip / I pray you	
8:37	Omission	I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God			
9:1-19	Saul - Ananias	Immediately Paul taught that Jesus was the Christ in the synagogues immediately. Strong background in Scripture.	Damascus, street called Straight 35 AD	Conversion of Saul, then 3 days w/o eating or drink and blind.	Ananias was not Apostle nor leader, but laid hands on Paul to heal.
9:20-25	Saul	Preached Christ was the Messiah	Damascus, synagogues	Jews seeked to kill Saul	Vs 21-22 Gap of 3 Years in Arabia . Galatians 1:17-18, 11-12 Taught directly

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
					by resurrected Christ.
9:26-29	Saul - Barnabas	Preached Christ - bold in the NAME of Jesus (vs 27)	Jerusalem	Grecians seeked to kill Saul	
9:30-31 Disciples multiplied	Saul & brethren	Judea, Galilee & Samaria disciples multiplies	Tarsus for 10 years		
9:32-35 vs 35- all turned to the Lord	Peter - Aeneas	Peter heals Aeneas Paralyzed for 8 years	Lydda	9:32-10:48, 36 AD	
9:36-43	Peter - Dorcas Simon the Tanner	Raised from the dead	Joppa		
9:5-6	Omission	"It is hard for you to kick against the pricks. And he trembling & astonished said, "Lord, what will you have me to do?" And the Lord said unto him			
9:11		Supplication Saul praying		Prayer	
9:40-41	Peter - Tabitha	Peter raised from death		Prayer - Supplication	
10:1-11:18 10:28-47 11:4-18	Peter - Cornelius	5th Message to Gentiles Gospel to the Gentiles, in Israel. 6th Message to Church at Jerusalem	Caesarea in Judea 41 AD	Angel appears to Cornelius. Peter's vision 3x of animals	
11:19-26 Much people added	Barnabas - Saul		Antioch 41 AD	11:22, 25	
11:27-30	Agabus Barnabas - Saul	Famine prophecy. Relief to Jerusalem	Jerusalem 41 AD	11:22, 25	
12:1-24 Word of God grew and multiplied	Herod, James & Peter	Persecution by Herod, Apostle James killed	Jerusalem Peter freed from prison, Herod's death	James the brother of John martyred, 12:2	(Inner 3 - Peter, James & John. Different missions later-Shiloh)
12:4	Translation	Easter vs Eastre			
12:5	Peter - Angel	Supplication, w/o ceasing by the church	In prison	Angel of the Lord	
	James	James the oldest half-brother of Jesus a leader, 12:17	45 AD		James written, 45 - 49 AD earliest letter
12:12	Mark	1st mentioned. Not Apostle mark			
ACTS 13-28 THE APOSTLE PAUL					
12:25-13:3	Barnabas & Saul Prophets and certain teachers, Simeon	Barnabas & Saul Appointed	Antioch 45 AD	The Holy Spirit calls to ministry Fasted and prayed, then laid their hands on. Ministered to the Lord and fasted.	
THE FIRST MISSIONARY JOURNEY (13:1-14:28 with Barnabas, Mark departed at Perga)					
13:4	Paul and Barnabas, Mark is their assistant (12:25)		Antioch 45 AD	Being sent by the Holy Ghost,	
			Seleucia, Cyprus	Traveled through	
13:5	Mark	Synagogues	Salamis	Preached the Word of God	
13:6-12	Sorcerer, a false prophet Bar-Jesus blinded by Paul		Paphos	Proconsul believed	

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
				Filled with the Holy Ghost (12)	
13:13	Mark departs and returns to Jerusalem		Perga		
13:14-41 (13:16-41)	Paul & Barnabas	7th Message to synagogue at Antioch	Antioch in Pisidia		
13:44-48	Paul & Barnabas	Next Sabbath went to the gentiles & whole city heard.		Persecuted by the Jews	
13:51-52	Disciples	Disciples filled with the Holy Spirit			
14:1-7 14:3?			Iconium		
14:8-20a		Paul healed lame man Paul preached and stoned	Lystra	Jews from Antioch and Iconium	
14:20b-25		strengthened believers, appointing elders	Derbe, Lystra, Iconium	.	
14:26-28			Antioch 45 AD	Stayed a long time	
14:23	Ordain elders	Supplication		Fasting	
15:1-6	James, 1/2 brother of Jesus. Apostles, Elders	The Jerusalem Council	Jerusalem, Paul's 3rd visit 51 AD	The Holy Spirit teaches	Paul wrote Galatians sometime after, Gal 2:1 51 AD
15:7-11 15:13-21	Peter (last hear of until the Letters of 1 and 2 Peter) James (last hear of until letter of James)	8th Message to Jerusalem Council. Turning point in Acts. 9th Message to Jerusalem Council.		Purified their (Gentiles) hearts as us (Jews) by faith	Peter referring to Acts 10 and not 8.
15:22-29	Prophets, Silas and Judas	First mention of Silas	Jerusalem	Vs 26 NAME of Jesus	
15:30-35	Silas	Preaching and teaching the Word of the Lord.	Antioch	Silas "pleased" to stay in Antioch	
THE SECOND MISSIONARY JOURNEY (15:36-18:22 with Silas, Timothy joins after Mark not permitted)					
15:36-39	Paul and Silas Barnabas and mark		Antioch	Dispute btwn Paul and Barnabas. Mark did not go with Paul.	
15:40-41		Went confirming churches	Syria & Cilcia		
16:1-5	Timothy	Churches established in faith and increased daily.	Derbe & Lystra To Bithynai	Delivered decrees from the Council at Jerusalem (15) Holy Spirit said NO	
16:6-10		Vision of man from Macedonia – Help us!	Phrygia, Mysia, Troas	Forbidden by Holy Spirit to go to Asia	
16:11			Samothrace, Neapolis		
16:12-40	Lydia, Philippian Jailer, Damsal with spirit of Divination	Paul received many stripes and was jailed. Paul and Silas sang at midnight.	Philippi / certain days 51 AD	Philippians	
16:9	Man of Macedonia	Luke-1st to meet Paul and begins (we)		Prayer-Conversation,	

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
				Vision of Paul	
16:31	Omission	"Christ"			
17:1			Amphipolis, Apollonia		
17:2-9			Thessalonica	Jews persecuted	
17:10-14			Berea	17:11	
17:15-34	Paul, Silas and Timothy	10th Message. Sermon on Mars Hill.	Athens		
17:22	Manuscripts	KJV-"Mars Hill" vs NKJV the "Areopagus"			
17:26	Omission	"blood"			
18:1-18a	Aquila and Priscilla	18:6 Your blood be upon your head, from hence I go to the Gentiles	Corinth, 18 months 54 AD	All Jews had to depart Rome?	Paul wrote 1 Thessalonians-51 AD, 2 Thes, a few months later
18:18b	Aquila & Priscilla joined		Syria, Cenchrea		
18:19-21	Aquila & Priscilla stayed	1st visit - short. Paul must keep feast at Jerusalem	Ephesus, 1 st visit 56 AD		Paul wrote to Corinthians, 1 Cor 7:1, letter lost (or 5:9) or 2 Cor 7:8
18:22a			Caesarea		
18:22b-23a			Antioch / sometime		
			Jerusalem ?		
THE THIRD MISSIONARY JOURNEY (18:23-21.16)					
18:23a			Antioch		
18:23b		strengthening disciples	Galatia & Phrygia in order		
18:24-28	Aquila and Priscilla, and Apollos	Apollos led into "a more excellent way." Baptism of Holy Spirit w/sign of languages.	Ephesus, 2nd visit nearly 3 years (20:31)	Tentmakers with Paul	Romans 6, 1 John 2:12-14 Enter into the Young Man stage of Christian relation.
19:1-41	Prophetess	2nd visit - arts and books burnt	Ephesus, 57 AD	? where - Prophetess loses talent after saved	Paul wrote 1 Cor, 55 AD, 2 Cor 56 AD
20:1-6a	Timothy and others		Greece region Phillipi 60 AD		
20:6b-12		Boy falls from hayloft, Paul taught all night.	Troas / 7 days		
20:13-14a			Assos		
20:14b		Paul sails toward Jerusalem for Pentecost	Mit		1 1/2 years at Corinth, 56AD Paul wrote Romans, 70 AD
20:15-16			Chios, Samos, Trogyllium		
20:17-38 (35)	Paul, Elders Vs 22-23 Holy Spirit witnesses in every city of bonds and afflictions that	11th Message Called for elders at Ephesus	Miletus 20:31 – 3 years	The Holy Spirit selects leaders.	

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
	wait in Jerusalem for Paul.				
20:25	Omission	"of God"			
20:28	Manuscripts	KJV-"Feed" vs "Shepherd" the flock			
20:32	Omission	"brethren"			
21:1			Cos		
21:2			Rhodes		
21:2			Patara		
21:3-7a		Warned in spirit not to go to Jerusalem	Tyre, 7 day visit		
21:7b-14	Philip the Evangelist, 1of 7. Agabus	4 prophesying daughters	Caesarea, many days	Agabus (11:28) foretold Jews delivers Paul to Gentiles	
THE TRIALS OF PAUL ON THE WAY TO ROME (21:17-28:31)					
21:15-25			Jerusalem		
21:26-36	Jews				
21:26-36	Lysias - Jews	Chief Captain-Lysias rescues Paul from mob	Jerusalem, 7 days	Purification in temple with 4 Nazarites	
21:37-22:29 22:1-21	Mob Paul	12th Message Paul addresses mob	Jerusalem	Roman citizenship	
22:30-23:10 23:1-6	Sanhedrin - Ananias Paul	The Sanhedrin divided. Paul smitten by Ananias the high priest 13th Message to Sanhedrin	Jerusalem	Paul did not recognize because of poor sight	Hebrews 13:18
23:11-35		Plot against Paul and sent to Felix	Jerusalem		
23:9	Omission	"let us not fight against God"			
23:18	Young man	Conversation Paul's deliverance		Prayer	
24:1-26	Felix the Governor	TRIAL (wife a Jewess-Drusilla)	Caesarea 2 years a prisoner	Trial - 5 days later	Paul narrates conversion 1st time
24:6-8	Omission	"and would have judged according to our law, but the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands commanding his accusers to come unto you"			
24:15	Omission	"of the dead"			
25:1-12	Festus the Governor	TRIAL - He replaced Felix (wife wicked)	Caesarea, 60 AD		Paul narrates conversion 2nd time
25:13-26:32 26:2-23	King Herod Agrippa Paul	TRIAL (wife Berenice) 14th Message to King Agrippa	Caesarea		Paul narrates conversion 3rd time
27:1-37	Centurion Julius, Luke, Aristarchus	TRIP TO ROME 2 week storm at sea	Sidon	Aristarchus-Col 4:10, Philemon 24	
27:38-28:10	Natives	Shipwrecked, Paul bit by poison snake.	Malta, 3 months	Bit by poisonous snake	
28:11-13a			Syracuse-Rhegium 3 days - 1 day		
28:13b-14	Brethren		Puteoli, 7 days		

SCRIPTURE	PEOPLE	EVENT	LOCATION- DATE	DOCTRINE	OT Quotation NT Book
28:15	Brethren	Paul thanked God, and took courage.	Appii Forum- Three Inns	Brief stops	
28:16-31 28:17-20	Paul	1st imprisonment in Rome 15th Message to Jewish leaders in Rome.	Rome		Isaiah 6:9-10 (26- 27)
	Luke	4 letters wrote. Luke finished his writing of Acts at this time. Abrupt ending.	60-62 AD	Paul wrote	Philemon, Ephesians & Colossians 60 AD, lastly Philippi ans 61 AD
	Luke	Wrote after 1st Roman imprisonment.	63-65 AD Corinth?	Paul desired to visit Rome on the way to Spain (15:23- 28)	1 Timothy 64 AD, then Titus 65 AD
	Luke		62-66 AD	Acts written between 2 imprisonments of Paul	Paul may have wrote Hebrews 66 AD during this time.
	Paul	During 2nd imprisonment	66-67 AD	shortly before being martyred	2 Timothy 67 AD
28:16	Omission	"the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard"			
28:29	Omission	"And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasonings among themselves"			
RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE BOOK OF ACTS					
1:8 But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.					
Location	Jew or Gentile	Languages	Baptized in the NAME of	References	
2 - Jerusalem	Jews - Jesus	Languages	Jesus Christ	Acts 3-4	
8 - Samaria	1/2 Jews - Peter & John	NO Languages	Jesus Christ	John 4:1-41	
10 - Judaea	Gentiles - Peter	Languages	the Lord	Acts 15:7-9	
19 - Uttermost part of the earth	Jews - Paul	Languages	the Lord Jesus	Acts 18:18-28	
1-28 Twenty-one accounts of salvation to individuals, small and large groups.	John the Baptist. Luke 3:1-18	1 Corinthians 14:20-22	1 Corinthians 10:1-6		
OTHER BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT					
Gospel of Mark	Apostle Mark	55-65 AD	Peter's letter?		
Gospel of Luke	Physician Luke	60-61 AD	Last of synoptic gospels!		
Letter of 1 Peter	Apostle Peter	63-65 AD		Apostle and servant	
Gospel of Matthew	Apostle Matthew	60-65 AD			
Letter of 2 Peter	Apostle Peter	66-68 AD	wrote before martyred by Emperor Nero	servant	
Letter of Jude	1/2 brother of Jesus	65-69 AD	4 brothers	Matthew 13:55, Mark 6:3	
Nero	Destroyed the temple	70 AD			
Gospel of John	Apostle John	85-90 AD			
Letters of I, II, III John	Apostle John	90-95 AD			
Revelation of Jesus	Apostle John	94-96 AD			

Romans (16-63, 1 hr) 2018

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book** **Gems**

Doctrine: 1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11

Practice: 12 13 14 15 16

12+ Sequential Truths of Being Right

Writer: The Apostle Paul Date: 57 AD Occasion: Systematic unfolding of the gospel

Purpose: Doctrine & Instruction (2 Timothy 3:16-17)

Key verse: 12:1-2

Key Words: We are called from Sin to Righteousness or Disobedience to Obedience

Romans is the bible within the Bible

<u>Outline</u>	<u>Passage</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Key verse</u>	<u>Lesson</u>
----------------	----------------	--------------	------------------	---------------

Introduction	1:1-17	To growing saints	1:8	1
--------------	--------	-------------------	-----	---

DOCTRINE (to obey with **our hearts**, Romans 6:17b and 10:9-10)

1-3 Sin of this world (man's poverty to be right)				
	1:18-32	Witness of creation	1:20, 25 (26-32)	2
	2:1-29	Witness of conscience	2:14-15	3
	3:1-30	Witness of Scripture	3:2b-4a (10, 23)	4

4-5 Salvation by Jesus Christ (God's provision to be right)				
	4:1-22	Faith, not works	4:16	5
	4:23-5:11	Faith brings joy	5:1-2 (8)	6
	5:12-21	Faith in Christ	5:19	7

6-8 Sanctification by the Holy Spirit (God's power to be right) (within our control / temptations)				
	6:1-10	Our identification with Christ	6:3-4	8 (1A)
	6:11-23	Your consecration to God	6:13, 19	9 (1B)
	7:1-25	Walk after the law of sin & death, or	7:6, 25	10 (2A)
	8:1-17a	Walk after the law of the Spirit of life	8:4	11 (2B)

(beyond our control / trials or tests)				
	8:17b-27	Our hope and help	8:26-2	12 (3A)
	8:28-39	Our confidence to continue	8:28, 37-39	13 (3B)

9-11 Sovereignty of God (God's purpose to be right)				
	9:1-33	Israel past (reject Jesus)	9:3	14 (3C)
	10:1-11:10	Israel present (need Jesus)	10:9-10, 17	
	11:11-36	Israel future (receive Jesus)	11:33-36	

PRACTICE (to do right with **our minds**, Romans 7:25a and 12:1-2)

12-16 Service to (do right, by my faith in what is written and by God's grace)				
Individual relationships: (97 rights)	12:1-21	God & others (w/ gifts , right & love)	12:1-2	15
	13:1-14	Government, neighbors, & self	13:8, 11	16
	14:1-15:7	Weaker brethren	14:17	17
Congregation relationships: (Paul's example)	15:8-21	Witness the gospel to the gentiles	15:14	18
	15:22-33	Plan and pray	15:30	19
	16:1-27	Fellowship	16:20	20

The Letter to the Romans

(New Testament systematic truth for Gentile and Jewish believers to know and grow)

Title: The gospel of God plus the gospel of Christ equals the gospel

Purpose: Romans is simple yet profound, like the gospel of John. As we understand the gospel, we see Christ clearer, know we are in God's will, and draw unbelievers and believers toward Jesus Christ, or rejection of Jesus Christ. The content, context, concise words in the book of Romans reveal the central concepts of the gospel in a systematic orderly manner. The 5S outline follows.

Learn priority by the quantity of times repeated in the original language (Greek) and context.

God 200x (Mostly in Romans 1-3, 9-11), **Jesus** 140x (Mostly in Romans 4-8, 12-16),
Holy Spirit 28x (Mostly in Romans 8:1-27, 19x)

Interpret by the quantity of times repeated in the original language (Greek) and context.

Law 77x (Mostly in Romans 2:1-29, 21x about our salvation, and 7:1-8:6, 27x about our sanctification),
Sin 44x (Mostly in Romans 5:12-21, 6x about our salvation, and 6:1-8:10, 35x about our sanctification),
Righteousness 39x (1-5,18x; 6 & 8, 7x; 9-11, 13x), **Flesh** 24x (Mostly in Romans 8:1-14, 14x).

Application: The 5S outline (1-3 Sin, 4-5 Salvation, 6-8 Sanctification, 9-11 Sovereignty, 12-16 Service) compliments the 7W or 7 Witness outline.

Q1 – What are the 7 witnesses in Romans?

- A1 – Creation: 1:18-2:8
- A2 – Conscience: 2:9-29
- A3 – Scripture: 3
- A4 – Jesus: 4-5
- A5 – Growth: 6-8
- A6 – Israel: 9-11
- A7 – Love: 12-16

Another outline: Faith in chapters 1-8, Hope in chapters 9-11, and Love in chapters 12-16 (1 Corinthians 13:13)

Doxology. ^{16:25} Now to Him that is able to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the **revelation of the mystery**, which was kept secret since the world began, ²⁶ But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the **obedience of faith: ²⁷ To God only wise, [be] glory through Jesus Christ forever.** Amen.

Hebrews 5:8 (Jesus learned obedience through suffering)

Key verse: Romans 12:1-2 I beseech you therefore, brethren, / by the mercies of God, / that ye present your bodies / **a living sacrifice**, / holy, acceptable to God, / which is your reasonable **service**, / and be not conformed / to this world: / but be ye transformed / by the **renewing of your mind**, / that ye may prove / what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, / **will of God.**

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Romans 8:26-27	Wordless	Depths of Heart	Sin	Spirit intercedes	Our heart's deep desire
Romans 10:1	Supplication	Israel's salvation			
Romans 10:9-10	Prayer	Salvation		Heart & righteousness	Christ raised
Romans 12:12	Prayer	Reminder		Continue instant	
Romans 15:30	Supplication				

Scripture	Commentary
<p style="text-align: center;"><i>The Power of Jesus (1:4)</i></p> <p>(1) ¹ Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called an apostle, separated to the gospel of God, ² (Which he had promised before by his prophets in the Holy Scriptures,) ³ Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; ⁴ And declared [to be] the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead:</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Our Obedience to the Faith (1:5)</i></p> <p>⁵ By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name: ⁶ Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ: ⁷ To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>God's Will is Before My Will (1:13a)</i></p> <p>(2) ⁸ First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world. ⁹ For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers; ¹⁰ Making request, if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come to you. ¹¹ For I long to see you, that I may impart to you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established; ¹² That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me. ¹³ Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come to you, (but was let thus far,) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><i>Power for Our Salvation and Faith</i></p> <p>(3) ¹⁴ I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the wise, and to the unwise. ¹⁵ So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also. ¹⁶ For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God to salvation to everyone that believes; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. ¹⁷ For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, the just shall live by faith.</p>	<p>Introduction: Position in canonized New Testament (Paul's first letter and to the gentiles, with 12 letters following and his 14th letter to the Hebrew believers). Romans is key to the 27 books of the New Testament – 4 gospels, Acts (1:8, 10 and 15), the 7 Hebrew letters and Revelation.</p> <p>Romans has five sections that are unique and progressive. This is important for the interpretation and enjoying God's grace for daily living. The five sections are divided into two parts, doctrine and practice:</p> <p><u>Doctrine</u> (1-11) 1:1-17, Introduction, Man's sin, (1-3) God's salvation, (4-5) Our sanctification, (6-8) God's sovereignty, (9-11) and</p> <p><u>Practice</u> (12-16) Our service</p> <p>1-5: Focus on Jesus</p> <p>1: gospel = good message. The gospel of God is "to know" Jesus Christ. John 3:3-8, 14:6 2: 1 Peter 1:8-12 3: flesh – from His mother Mary 4: power – dunamis in Greek, or dynamite 5: experiencing the process of sanctification will produce the spirit of holiness in us. Romans 6-8.</p> <p>5-7: Focus on saints</p> <p>7b: Grace always precedes peace of which God and Jesus are the unified source</p> <p>8-17: Focus on Paul I or my-17x</p> <p>8: faith as believers in Christ 9a: in "the gospel of his Son" – in "Jesus Christ" 9b-10: Practice of prayer and knowing the will of God 11: Gift in Greek is charisma. 1st of 17x in the New testament. 6x in Romans: 5:15-16, 6:23, 11:29 and 12:6. 7x in 1 Corinthians. 1 Peter 4:10 summarizes the purpose of charisma – salvation and service to others. 11-12: Established – even the faithful, growing congregations in Rome needed to be established or set fast, strengthened. See Ephesians 4:8-16. 14: Jews & Gentiles, Greeks & Barbarians, wise & unwise 15: preach gospel to the saved (vs. 9, 15-16) 16: power – dunamis in Greek, or dynamite 17: live by faith after initial salvation; progressive salvation or sanctification.</p> <p>Habakkuk 2:4. Context: The just (Ro 10:17), shall live (Gal 3:11), by faith (Heb 10:38)</p> <p>Faith – 5x, Power – 2x</p> <p>Godhead: God-11x, Jesus-9x, Spirit-0x</p>

Our Sin

(disobedience of gentile and Jew)

All Have Sinned

<u>Outline</u>	<u>Passage</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Key verse</u>	<u>Lesson</u>
1-3 Sin	1:18-2:8	Witness of creation	1:20, 2:14-15	2
	2:9-29	Witness of conscience	3:10	3
	3:1-30	Witness of Scripture	3:23	4

The Good News

- (1) The Law of Moses contains the "oracles of God" (3:2)
- (2) The Law bears witness to the righteousness of God in Christ (3:21-22)
- (3) The Law was given to result in life (Leviticus 18:5)

The Bad News

- (1) Knowing the Law apart from obeying its commands only makes one more guilty (1:32-2:29)
- (2) The Law cannot save man but can only condemn him (3:9-20)

Discussion on Sin

And although they know the ordinance of God, that those who practice such things are worthy of death, they not only do the same, but also give hearty approval to those who practice them (Romans 1:32).

This takes us back to the principle which Paul laid down in our text: apart from God's divine definition of sin in the law, we would not know sin to be sin.

If this is true—and it surely is—then the Law is of great importance, not only to those who have lived before us, but for Christians today. The Law of God points out sin which we would never have recognized as such apart from His revelation. This applies to sin, salvation and sanctification.

Cultural interpretation and consciousness of the Law of Moses as reflected in the 10 commandments will vary. Romans 14 addresses such issues and how to conduct ourselves in faith, and trusting God.

Let us pause to pursue the implications of what Paul has said about God's Law and our ability to recognize sin. The Law of God is necessary precisely because of our inability to recognize it in and of ourselves. The Law calls those attitudes and actions sin which we would not have understood to be sin.

Scripture	Commentary
<p>4) ¹⁸ For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; ¹⁹ Because that which may be known of God is shown among them; for God has shown [it] to them. ²⁰ For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, [even] his eternal power and divinity; so that they are without excuse: ²¹ Because that, when they knew God, they glorified [him] not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their reasonings, and their foolish heart was darkened. ²² Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, ²³ And changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. ²⁴ Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves: ²⁵ Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen. ²⁶ For this cause God gave them up to vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: ²⁷ And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. ²⁸ And even as they did not like to retain God in [their] knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not fit; ²⁹ Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, ³⁰ Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, ³¹ Without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: ³² Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which practice such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.</p>	<p>¹⁸⁻²⁰ Witness of creation 18: wrath-eternal, eschatological, calamity, consequential, abandonment 19: shown among-manifest in ^{KJV} 20: divinity-Godhead ^{KJV} Heb 11:1-3</p> <p>²¹⁻²³ rejected by man glorified not as God unthankful, imaginations ^{KJV} foolish heart darkened wise became fools made images of God</p> <p>²⁴⁻²⁸ leads to homosexuality 24: God gave them up (vs 26) 28: God gave them over uncleanness, lust of heart, dishonor bodies, serve creature more than creator, vile affections – women & men</p> <p>²⁹⁻³¹ and reprobate mind (23 qualities) Being filled with all: - unrighteousness, - fornication - wickedness (poneria in Greek) - covetousness, maliciousness - full of envy, murder - debate, - deceit, malignity (depravity) - whisperers, - backbiters - haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters - inventors of evil things - disobedient to parents - without understanding - covenant-breakers (faithless) - without natural affection - implacable (truceless), unmerciful</p>
<p>Romans Chapter 2 (5) ¹ Therefore you are inexcusable, O man, whosoever you are that judges: for wherein you judge another, you condemn yourself; for you that judge practice the same things. ² But we are sure that the judgment of God is according to truth against them which commit such things. ³ And think you this, O man, that judges them which practice such things, and do the same, that you shall escape the judgment of God? ⁴ Or do you despise the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leads you to repentance? ⁵ But after your hardness and impenitent heart treasures up to thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; ⁶ Who will render to every man according to his deeds: ⁷ To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor and immortality, eternal life: ⁸ But to them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath.</p>	<p>¹⁻⁵ Judgment of God</p> <p>⁶⁻⁸ is just contentious, indignation (passion, as breathing hard), wrath 7: contrast of the righteous</p> <p>Godhead: God-22x, Jesus-0x, Spirit-0x</p> <p>The Witness of Creation (1st of 7) Q – How is the witness of creation expressed in one sentence? A – The witness of creation (1:18-20) rejected by man (1:21-23) leads to homosexuality (1:24-28), a reprobate mind (1:29-31), and judgment (2:1-8).</p>

Scripture	Commentary
<p>(6) ⁹ Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that does evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; ¹⁰ But glory, honor, and peace, to every man that works good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:</p> <p>¹¹ For there is no respect of persons with God. ¹² For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; ¹³ (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. ¹⁴ For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law to themselves: ¹⁵ Which show the work of the <u>law written in their hearts</u>, their conscience also bearing witness, and [their] thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) ¹⁶ In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.</p> <p>(7) ¹⁷ Behold, you are called a Jew, and rest in the law, and make your boast of God, ¹⁸ And know [his] will, and approve the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law; ¹⁹ And are confident that you yourself are a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness, ²⁰ An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which has the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law. ²¹ You therefore which teach another, teach you not yourself? you that preach a man should not steal, do you steal? ²² You that say a man should not commit adultery, do you commit adultery? you that abhor idols, do you commit sacrilege? ²³ You that make your boast of the law, through breaking the law you dishonor God? ²⁴ For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles through you, as it is written. ²⁵ For circumcision verily profits, if you keep the law: but if you be a breaker of the law, your circumcision is made uncircumcision. ²⁶ Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision? ²⁷ And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the law, judge you, who by the letter and circumcision do transgress the law? ²⁸ For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither [is that] circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: ²⁹ But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision [is that] of the heart, in the spirit, [and] not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.</p>	<p>9-11 Doers of the Law</p> <p>9-10: To the Jew 1st – also to the gentile NO to law: Tribulation and anguish – evil works, or YES to law: Glory, honor and peace – good works</p> <p>11: God is just (Deu 10:17, Job 34:19) 12-13: Sin is disobedience the law NO to law: Judged by the law, or YES to law: Justified by the law What is the law? The law of Moses or Torah.</p> <p>14-16 Witness of conscience</p> <p>15-16: Written in our heart and thoughts NO to law: Accusing us, or YES to law: Excusing us</p> <p>16: Secrets revealed and judged by God according to gospel of Jesus Christ (Philippians 2:10-11, 1 Timothy 5:24-25)</p> <p>17-24 Hypocritical teachers</p> <p>19: <u>guide</u> the blind 19: <u>light</u> to those in darkness 20: <u>instructor</u> of foolish 20: <u>teacher</u> of babes 21: <u>teach</u> not yourself 21: <u>preach</u> don't steal 22: <u>say</u> no to adultery – commit the same 22: <u>say</u> no to idols – commit sacrilege 23: boast of the law, yet break the law 24a: blaspheme the name of God by witness among gentiles 24b: Is 52:5, 2 Sam 12:14, Ez 36:20</p> <p>25-29 Uncircumcised heart</p> <p>25-27: The religious works of the law are not recognized without obedience to the law. (6:13-10-2-1 rule of the law) 28: NO to the law – outward, physically in the body, for praise of men, by letter of the law, or 29: YES to the law – inward, spiritually from the heart, for praise of God, by spirit of the law</p> <p>John 4: worship in spirit and truth, 1 John 2:18</p> <p>Godhead: God-7x, Jesus-1x, Spirit-0x</p> <p>The Witness of Conscience (2nd of 7 witnesses)</p> <p>Q1 – What is the witness of conscience? A1 – The witness of conscience is written in our heart and thoughts, which can be accuse or excuse us before God. A2 – The law, in this case, is the 10 Commandments of Moses, also known as the moral law, the foundation for all other good laws. A3 – That which is inward from the heart and thoughts and not outward race, religion, or circumcision. A4 – People who have never had the opportunity to hear the Bible have the witness of their conscience before God and man. (2:14-16)</p> <p>Q2 – Can a person be saved without hearing the Bible or about the Lord Jesus Christ? A – Yes, by obeying the law in their God created conscience.</p>

Scripture	Commentary
<p>(8) ¹ What advantage then has the Jew? or what profit [is there] of circumcision? ² Much every way: chiefly, because that to them were committed the oracles of God.</p> <p>³ For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect? ⁴ God forbid: yes, let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written, That you might be justified in your sayings, and might overcome when you are judged. ⁵ But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? [Is] God unrighteous who takes vengeance? (I speak as a man)</p> <p>⁶ God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?</p> <p>⁷ For if the truth of God has more abounded through my lie to his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?</p> <p>⁸ And not [rather], (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just. ⁹ What then? are we better [than they]? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin; ¹⁰ As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: ¹¹ There is none that understands, there is none that seeks after God. ¹² They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that does good, no, not one. ¹³ Their throat is an open grave; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: ¹⁴ Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: ¹⁵ Their feet are swift to shed blood: ¹⁶ Destruction and misery are in their ways: ¹⁷ And the way of peace have they not known: ¹⁸ There is no fear of God before their eyes. ¹⁹ Now we know that what things soever the law says, it says to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God. ²⁰ Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.</p> <p>(9) ²¹ But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; ²² Even the righteousness of God [which is] by faith of Jesus Christ to all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: ²³ For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; ²⁴ Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus: ²⁵ Whom God has set forth [to be] a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; ²⁶ To declare, [I say], at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus. ²⁷ Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? No: but by the law of faith. ²⁸ Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law. ²⁹ [Is he] the God of the Jews only? [is he] not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also: ³⁰ Seeing [it is] one God, which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith. ³¹ Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yes, we establish the law.</p>	<p>¹⁻⁶ The oracles of God ^{2:} Oracles – actual words, speaking or utterance (Acts 7:38, Hebrews 5;12, 1 Peter 4:11) ^{5:} vengeance – wrath, anger (34x) ^{6:} basis for fair and right judgment</p> <p>^{7-8:} Cause Paul's criticism ^{8:} Jeremiah 17:6</p> <p>^{9-12:} None right or seek God ^{9:} before proved - by creation & conscience in Romans 1-2 ^{10-12:} (Psalm 14:1) ^{12:} unprofitable like rotten fruit</p> <p>^{13-18:} Character of ^{13:} throat-tongues (Ps 5:9, 140:3) ^{14:} mouth full of cursing (Ps 10:7) ^{15:} feet shed blood ^{16:} destruction & misery ^{17:} don't know peace ^{18:} no fear of God (Ps 36:1)</p> <p>^{19-20:} the law reveals ^{19:} to all under the law ^{19:} all guilty before God ^{20:} nobody justified ^{20:} knowledge of sin</p> <p>^{21-31:} Justified by faith Scripture bridge from sin to salvation Faith – 7x, law – 6x, righteousness - 4x Jesus Christ – salvation (5x)</p> <p>^{21:} witnessed by Old Testament ^{22:} faith of Jesus Christ ^{25:} faith in His blood ^{25:} for the remission of sins ^{27:} law of faith (for salvation) ^{28:} justified by faith ^{30:} by faith, through faith ^{31:} through faith</p> <p>Godhead: God-20x, Jesus-5x, Spirit-0x</p> <p>The Witness of Scripture (3rd of 7 witnesses)</p> <p>Q1 – What nation of people wrote the Bible? A – The Jewish people were chosen by God and inspired to write the Scriptures.</p> <p>Q2 – What are the oracles of God? A – Oracles are actual words spoken by God. (Acts 7:38, Hebrews 5;12, 1 Peter 4:11). Q3 – How do we know that none are right before God? (Ro 3:10-12) A – The oracles of God and human experience declare this truth. (Psalm 14:1)</p> <p>Q4 – How many people have sinned according to the oracles of God? A – All people of all times and locations have sinned and come short of the glory of God.</p> <p>Q5 – What 2 books of the Bible were not written by Jews, and why? A1 – The book of Job (before Jews and not in the lineage of Christ) and Luke/Acts (the gentile physician and travel mate of Paul) by Dr Luke. A2 – why? Because Job is the oldest book of the Bible written before the Jews existed, and Luke gives us a historical account, but God did not write oracles from God to man.</p>

God's Salvation

(In Adam we are condemned – In Christ we are saved)

By faith - the bible within the Bible

<u>Outline</u>	<u>Passage</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Key verse</u>	<u>Lesson</u>
4-5				
	4:1-22	Faith not works	4:12	5
	4:23-5:11	Faith brings joy	5:8	6
	5:12-21	Faith in Christ	5:19	7

Scripture	Commentary
<p>(10) ¹ What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, has found? ² For if Abraham were justified by works, he has [whereof] to glory; but not before God. ³ For what says the Scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for righteousness. ⁴ Now to him that works is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. ⁵ But to him that works not, but believes on him that justifies the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. ⁶ Even as David also describes the blessedness of the man, to whom God imputes righteousness without works, ⁷ [Saying], Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. ⁸ Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.</p> <p>(11) ⁹ [Comes] this blessedness then upon the circumcision [only], or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness. ¹⁰ How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision. ¹¹ And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which [he had yet] being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed to them also: ¹² And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which [he had] being [yet] uncircumcised. ¹³ For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. ¹⁴ For if they which are of the law [be] heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect: ¹⁵ Because the law works wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression. ¹⁶ Therefore [it is] of faith, that [it might be] by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham; who is the father of us all,</p> <p>(12) ¹⁷ (As it is written, I have made you a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, [even] God, who quickens the dead, and calls those things which be not as though they were. ¹⁸ Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, So shall your seed be. ¹⁹ And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about a hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sara's womb: ²⁰ He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God; ²¹ And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform. ²² And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.</p>	<p>^{1-5:} Abraham our father (to Jews)</p> <p>Old Testament truth (or shadow) works (4x) or, belief and faith (14x) righteousness (7x)</p> <p>belief justifies the ungodly faith counted for righteousness 3: Genesis 15:16</p> <p>^{6-8:} King David's blessings</p> <p>6: Impute - to attribute righteousness to a person or persons by the substitute of another person. (8, 11, 22)</p> <p>7-8: Psalm 32:1-2, penitent psalm</p> <p>^{9-12:} Our father Abraham (to all nations)</p> <p>9: faith reckoned for righteousness</p> <p>9-12: Circumcision a sign, a seal of the righteousness of faith (Genesis 17:20)</p> <p>11: righteousness imputed – put in them</p> <p>11-12: Spiritually Abraham is the father of all who believe in the old testament and New Testament</p> <p>^{13-16:} Not by the law – but by our faith</p> <p>13: righteousness of faith</p> <p>14: law works wrath</p> <p>works of the law vs the righteousness of the law</p> <p>16: of faith, by grace (Ephesians 2:8-9)</p> <p>16: faith of Abraham, father of us all</p> <p>^{17-22:} God makes something out of nothing</p> <p>17: God calls those things that be not (Genesis 17:10)</p> <p>18: Genesis 15:5</p> <p>19: Abraham not weak in faith (The apostles were weak in faith at Gethsemane-spirit is willing, but flesh is weak, Matthew 26:41)</p> <p>20: Abraham strong in faith 21: promise of God 22: imputed to him for righteousness</p> <p>Godhead: God-11x, Jesus-0x, Spirit-0x</p>

Romans 4:23-5:11 Faith brings joy	Lesson 6 of 20
Scripture	Commentary
<p>(13) ²³ Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; ²⁴ But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; ²⁵ Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.</p> <p>Romans Chapter 5</p> <p>(14) ¹ Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: ² By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.</p> <p>³ And not only [so], but we rejoice in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation works patience; ⁴ And patience, experience; and experience, hope: ⁵ And hope makes not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given to us.</p> <p>(15) ⁶ For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly. ⁷ For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die. ⁸ But God commends his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.</p> <p>⁹ Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. ¹⁰ For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life. ¹¹ And not only [so], but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the reconciliation.</p>	<p>4:23-5:1: We have peace with God</p> <p>Transfer statement from Abraham to us. New Testament truth (or substance).</p> <p>23-24: imputed – right “put in” for wrong 25: delivered, for our offenses Raised for our justification</p> <p>Romans 10:9-10, same pattern of death & life in Romans 6 -7 sanctification truths</p> <p>5:1 We have peace with God at the moment in space and time when we “repent and believe” in Jesus Christ. Later we learn about the peace of God, a result of obedience by faith (Philippians 4:7, Colossians 3:15). Wyman Fragment is TR indicative verb. “may” we have peace, is Vaticanus subjunctive verb.</p> <p>5:2: We rejoice in hope of the glory of God</p> <p>2: by Jesus who gives us access by faith into this grace where we stand. This is after being justified, for the present time.</p> <p>3-5: We rejoice in tribulation also: knowing that</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1) Tribulation works patience 2) Patience works experience 2) Experience works hope 3) Hope makes not ashamed (because the guilt of sin is removed) <p>5: Because the love of God - is shed abroad - in our hearts - by the Holy Spirit – which is given to us.</p> <p>6-8: Christ died for us</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1) when we were without strength, or helpless 2) when we were ungodly 3) When we were sinners <p>8: because God commends his love toward us (commend is to honor or recognize in a special way)</p> <p>9-11: to give us much more</p> <p>9-11: being justified by his blood (at our entry into salvation)</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1) saved from wrath (future tribulation – 1 Thessalonians 1:10, 5:9) 2) saved by his life (future kingdom of God – John 14) 3) joy in God (present emotion – Philippians 4:4) <p>10-11: Reconciled – referring back to the moment we began knowing Christ as our Savior, as spiritual babies in Christ. Reconciliation – the process of bringing sinners to God, this is our present ministry (2 Corinthians 5:18-21). 1 of 5 times translated atonement ^{KJV} from the original Greek. Reconcile – to turn an enemy into a friend.</p> <p>We, us, our–21x They, I, you–0x Godhead: God-7x, Jesus-11x, Spirit-0x</p>

Scripture	Commentary
<p>(16) ¹² Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:</p> <p>¹³ (For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. ¹⁴ Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.</p> <p>¹⁵ But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, [which is] by one man, Jesus Christ, has abounded to many. ¹⁶ And not as [it was] by one that sinned, [so is] the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is from many offences to justification.</p> <p>¹⁷ For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.)</p> <p>¹⁸ Therefore as by the offence of one [judgment came] upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one [the free gift came] upon all men to justification of life. ¹⁹ For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.</p> <p>²⁰ Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: ²¹ That as sin has reigned to death, even so might grace reign through righteousness to eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord.</p>	<p>¹²⁻¹⁴: Adam > sin > judgment > death</p> <p>14: Adam to Moses – less revelation, less accountability 14: similitude) - likeness in state and quality 14: figure – type of Jesus Christ, how? Made in likeness of God in moral conscience. In a similar human body.</p> <p>Sin – 10x (verses 12-21) Transgression – 1x (verse 14) Offence(s) – 6x (verses 15-20) Judgment -1x, condemnation - 2x (verse 16-18) Disobedience – 1x (verse 19) Death - 5x (verses 12-21)</p> <p>¹⁵⁻¹⁷: Christ > free gift > grace</p> <p>15: free gift - Ro 1:11, 5:5 15: gift by grace</p> <p>16: one sin bring judgment from a holy God, 16: many sins are justified by the free gift</p> <p>17: abundance of grace and gift of righteousness</p> <p>Gift – 5x (verses 15-17) Free – 2x (verses 15-16) Grace – 5x (verses 15-21) Justification – 2x (verses 16-18) Obedience – 1x (verse 19) Righteousness – 4x (verses 17-21) Life – 3x (verses 17-21)</p> <p>¹⁸⁻²¹: Christ > righteousness > life</p> <p>18: condemnation is before or after death, 1 Timothy 5:24-25, Hebrews 13:8</p> <p>19: were is past, shall is future 19: righteousness is imputed</p> <p>20: law of Moses. More revelation – more grace to obey.</p> <p>21: grace reigns through righteousness to eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord. The proper ending for the section on our salvation.</p> <p>One man Adam – 8x (beginning, verses 12 to 19) One man Christ – 4x (ending, verses 15-21) All - 4x, Many – 5x</p> <p>Godhead: God – 0x, Jesus – 6x, Spirit – 0x</p> <p>Note that the topics in chapters 1:18 to 5:11: creation, conscience, Scripture, works, joy, and Christ are not repeated and in a specific order, by God's wisdom. The groundwork of man's sin and our salvation from the penalty of that sin has been laid and need not be repeated. The last part of understanding man's sin and our salvation are the roles of Adam and Jesus Christ. Next we continue to be taught how to live for Him who died for us, beginning with the brokenness of the old man being crucified with Christ in Romans 6.</p>

The Believer's Sanctification



(or handling conflicts from within and without this body)

A crisis, a process & our experience



<u>Outline</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Passage</u>	<u>Lesson</u>
6-8	Sanctification		
	First: confront the conflicts & contrasts within our heart and mind		
1 st	Our identification with Christ	6:1-10	8-Part 1A
2 nd	Your consecration to God	6:11-23	9-Part 1B
3 rd	I use to walk after the law of sin	7:1-25	10-Part 2A
4 th	We can now walk after the law of the Spirit	8:1-17a	11-Part 2B
	Then: experience a consecrated & continual walk after the Spirit		
5 th	Our hope and help	8:17b-27	12-Part 3A
6 th	Our confidence to continue in the love of God	8:28-39	13-Part 3B
7 th	God's sovereignty	9:1-11:36	14-Part 3C

The Apostle Paul uses his personal experience in spiritual growth and is teaching us how to follow his example as he followed Christ, and continue on consistently, consumed for the glory of God. Another way to express it, Paul is instructing me in the process of how to deal with sin and self, so Christ lives in me. Finally consider the simple explanation of "working out our present salvation according to the whole counsel of God (Romans 16:25-27)." Use menorah to illustrate a 7- fold message.

Romans 6-8 in preview	<p>Going from knowledge to experience in our heart with sin (Ro 6) and the mind with self (Ro 7) and trust in the completeness of God's salvation both here, in the future and eternally (Ro 8).</p> <p>Context of parts 1-4. 1 – we, 2 – you, 3 – I, 4 to 7 – all. 1-4 contrasts and internal conflicts that are within our control, 5-7 are contrasts and external conflict that are outside our control.</p> <p>Our Sanctification: context of OT/NT, NT – forest, chapters 6-8 individual trees and branches or details. Other sanctification truths compliment Romans 6-8.</p> <p>6:1-8:39 Two verses quote Old Testament, 9:1-11:36. Thirty-one verses quote OT.</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <input type="checkbox"/> 6:1-10 We - sin nature – death – old man / resurrection. <input type="checkbox"/> 6:11-23 You - reckon – yield – doctrine – heart. <input type="checkbox"/> 7:1-6 Galatians – Hebrews. Religious system of Christianity or churchianity, philosophy, tradition, institutional or hierarchical control. <input type="checkbox"/> 7:7-25 I – Past before salvation to sinner (7-13), to law-keeper (14-22), to believer (23-25) Paul's experience as a young believer. <input type="checkbox"/> 8:1-17a Our walk after the Spirit of life in Jesus Christ. <input type="checkbox"/> 8:17b-27 Our hope and Helper. <input type="checkbox"/> 8:28-39 Our confidence to continue in the love of God. <input type="checkbox"/> 9:1-11:36 God's sovereignty, which leads into our service, 12:1-2
-----------------------	---

Romans 6:1-10		Our Identification with Christ		Part 1 of 7 (1A)	
vs	Our problem (sin-death)	Our solution (Christ-life)	Who	Notes	
(17)	¹ Shall we continue in sin	that grace may abound? God forbid! <i>(Certainly not! - NKJV)</i>	we-2	"grace" 1 John 2:12-14 Young man	
1	² How shall we that are dead to sin live any longer in it ?				
to	³ Don't ye know? As many of us as were baptized into Christ Jesus were baptized into his death?	<i>Personalize: Don't you know? That as you (Bill) were baptized into Christ Jesus, you were also baptized into his death?</i>	ye-1 us-1 His-1 Jesus-1	* 1 Corinth. 10:2, 12:13 Acts 2:38, 4:12	
3					
(18)	⁴ Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death	That like as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we should walk in newness of life.	we-2 Him-1 Christ-1 Father-1	"glory of the Father" 2 Cor 4:12	
4	⁵ If we have been planted together in the likeness of his death	certainly we shall also be in the likeness of his resurrection	we-2 His-2	Colossians 3:1-3	
to	that our old man is crucified with him , that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we not serve sin.	⁶ Knowing this, 	our-1 we-1 Him-1	"old man" Galatians 2:20	
6					
(19)	⁷ For he that is dead is freed from sin. ^{8a} Now if we be dead with Christ,	^{8b} we believe that we shall also live with him.	we-3 Christ-1 Him-1	"believe" Ephesians 1:3, 2:6	
7					
to	dies no more, death has no dominion over him.	⁹ Knowing that Christ, being raised from the dead, 	Christ-1 Him-1	"dominion" Ephesians 5:1-3	
10					
	¹⁰ For in that he died , he died unto sin once;	but in that he lives , he lives unto God.	He-4 God-1	Philippians 3:1-10	
Notes	Sin-7 Old man-1 (from Adam) Crucified-1 Baptized into His death-2 (buried) Death-2 Dead-3 Died-2 <u>Dies-1</u> Total: 11	Live-2 Lives-2 Life-1 Raised-2 <u>Resurrection-1</u> Total: 8 Clear yet not easy, but difficult. 1 st must understand, then desire, then receive, then maintain.	we-10 us-1 our-1 12 ye\you\ your-1 I\me\my-0 Godhead: God-2 Jesus-15 Spirit-0	* Baptized into Jesus Christ at the moment of salvation. Romans 4-5 "dead to sin & alive to God"	

Romans 6:11-23		Your Consecration to God		Part 2 of 7 (1B)
vs	Your sin condition	How to become free	Who	Note
(20) 11 to 12	¹² Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.	¹¹ Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed to sin , but alive to God through Christ Jesus our Lord .	ye-1 God-1 JC-1	"RECKON" Ro 6:23
(21) 13 to 18	¹³ Neither yield ye your members [as] instruments of unrighteousness to sin : ¹⁴ For sin shall not have dominion over you: ^{15a} What then? shall we sin , because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid . ¹⁶ Don't ye know? that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin to death ,	But yield yourselves to God, as those that are alive from the dead , and your members [as] instruments of righteousness to God. ^{15b} for ye are not under the law, but under grace. or of obedience to righteousness?	Ye-1 your-2 yourselves-1 God-2	"YIELD" Aorist tense – single decisive act "members"
	¹⁷ But God be thanked, that ye were the servants of sin ,	but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.	God-1 ye-2 you-1	"Obey doctrine from the heart" "servant/slaves"
	¹⁸ Being then made free from sin ,	ye became the servants of righteousness .	ye-1	
(22) 19 to 23	¹⁹ I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity to iniquity ; ²⁰ For when ye were the servants of sin , ye were free from righteousness . ²¹ What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death . ^{22a} But now being made free from sin ,	even so now yield your members servants to righteousness to holiness . ^{22b} And become servants to God, ye have your fruit to holiness , and the end everlasting life .	Your-3 ye-1	"YIELD" "members" "servant/slaves"
	²³ For the wages of sin is death ;	but the gift of God is eternal life through Christ Jesus our Lord .	God-1 JC-1	"gift" Ro 6:11
Notes	Sin-10 Free from sin - 2 Servants of sin - 3 dead-2 or death-3 members-4\body-2	Righteousness-4 Servants of God-3 Alive-2 Eternal life-2	ye\you\your-28 we\us\our-0 I\me\my-0 Godhead: God-5 Jesus Christ-2 Holy Spirit-0	

Romans 7:1-6		Married to our second husband - Christ		(links parts 1B and 2A)	
vs	Experience under the law	Experience under Christ	Who	Note	
(23)	¹ Don't ye know, brethren (for I speak to them that know the law)	How that the law has dominion over a man as long as he lives?		law of Moses-9	
1	² For the woman which has a husband is bound by the law to [her] husband so long as he lives;	but if the husband be dead , she is loosed from the law of [her] husband.	ye-3 brethren-2	husband \ he-8	
to	³ So then if, while [her] husband lives, she be married to another man , she shall be called an adulteress:	but if her husband be dead , she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man .	Ro 1:13, 7:4, 8:12 we-5 our-1	Quote: Genesis 2:24 Duet 24:1 Mal 2:16 MT 5:31-32, 19:5	
4	⁴ Wherefore, my brethren ,	ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ ; that ye should be married to another, [even] to him who is raised from the dead , that we should bring forth fruit to God .		----- Gal-Heb 1 Corinth Rev 1-3	
(24)	⁵ For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins , which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit to death .	⁶ But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in newness of spirit , and not [in] the oldness of the letter .	God-1 man-2 him-1 Christ-1 4 Holy Spirit-0		
7:7-25 I Use to Walk After the Law of Sin and Death			Part 3 of 7 (2A)		
(25)	⁷ What shall we say then? [Is] the law sin ? No, I had not known sin , but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said, "You shall not covet". ⁸ But sin , taking occasion by the commandment, worked in me all manner of coveting. For without the law sin was dead . ⁹ For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died . ¹⁰ And the commandment, which [was ordained] to life, I found [to be] to death . ¹¹ For sin , taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me , and by it slew [me]. ¹² Wherefore the law is holy , and the commandment holy, and just, and good . ¹³ Was then that which is good made death to me ? God forbid . But sin , that it might appear sin , working death in me by that which is good; that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful .		I-25 me-7 32	law of Moses-15 (10 commandments) Paul's longest mono-logue. The doctrine of sin in me, as a believer. Paul as a spiritual young man – not as a spiritual father.	
7	¹⁴ For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin .		we-2 us\our-0		
to	¹⁵ For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. ¹⁶ If then I do that which I would not, I consent to the law that [it is] good . ¹⁷ Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me. ¹⁸ For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwells no good thing: for to will is present with me; but [how] to perform that which is good I find not. ¹⁹ For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. ²⁰ Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwells in me.		ye\you\ your-0		
13			God-0 Jesus-0 H. Spirit-0		
14					
to					
20					
(26)	²¹ I find then a law , that, when I would do good, evil is present with me.	²² For I delight in the law of God after the inward man :	I-8 my-4 me-3 15	law of sin-4	
21	²³ But I see another law in my members , warring against the law of my mind , and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. ²⁴ O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death ?	 ^{25a} I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord . So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God ;	Godhead: God-3 Jesus Christ-1 Holy Spirit-0	law of God-2	
to	^{25b} but with the flesh the law of sin .			law of mind-2	
25					
Notes: sin-18 . died\dead\death-12 . law of Moses-24\law of sin-4 vs law of God-2\law of mind-2 . Synonyms: flesh-3\members-3\carnal-1\body-1 (outward physical man) vs inward spiritual man .					

Romans 8:1-17a		But now I walk after the law of the Spirit of life		Part 4 of 7 (2B)	
vs	after the flesh	after the Spirit	Who \ Note		
(27)	1 ^b who walk not after the flesh ,	1 ^a [There is] therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, 1 ^c but after the Spirit .	them-1	flesh-1, Spirit-1 in Christ Jesus-1 Eph 5:18	
1	has made me free from the law of sin and death .	2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus	me-1	"free" "law of Spirit of life" "law of sin & death" In Christ Jesus-1	
4	3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh ,	God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh , and for sin , condemned sin in the flesh :		"law" of Moses God-1, Jesus-1 flesh-3	
	4 ^b who walk not after the flesh ,	4 ^a That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us , 4 ^c but after the Spirit .	us-1	"law" of Moses flesh-1, Spirit-1 Gal 5:19-23	
(28)	5 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh ;	but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit .	they-2	flesh-2 Spirit-2	
	6 For to be carnally minded is death ;	but to be spiritually minded is life and peace .		"carnally minded" "spiritually minded"	
5	7 Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God , neither indeed can be.	9 But ye are not in the flesh , but in the Spirit , if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ , he is none of his. 10 And if Christ [be] in you, the body is dead because of sin ; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness . 11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwells in you.	they-1 ye-1 you-4 your-1	Godhead God-7 Christ-4 Spirit-6	
13	8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God .	12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtors ,		"law of God" flesh-2	
	not to the flesh , to live after the flesh .	but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body , ye shall live .	brethren-1	flesh-2	
	13 For if ye live after the flesh , ye shall die :	14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God , they are the sons of God .	ye-4	flesh-1, Spirit-1	
(29)	15 ^a For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear;	15 ^b but ye have received the Spirit of adoption , whereby we cry, Abba, Father . 16 The Spirit itself bears witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God : 17 ^a And if children, then heirs; heirs of God , and joint-heirs with Christ ;	ye-2 they-1 we-2 our-1	God-5 Christ-1 Holy Spirit-3	
14					
16					
Notes	Flesh-12 Synonyms: carnal-2 body-3 dead\die\death-7 sin-4	Holy Spirit-15 life & resurrection-6 in Christ Jesus-2 sons of God-1 adoption-1, abba-1 children of God-1 heirs of God-1 & joint-heirs with Christ-1	<input type="checkbox"/> I\me\my-1 <input type="checkbox"/> them\they-5 <input type="checkbox"/> we\us\our-3 brethren-1 <input type="checkbox"/> ye\you\your-13	Godhead: God-13 Jesus Christ-8 Holy Spirit-15	

Scripture	Commentary
<p>(30) ^{17b} if so be that we suffer together, that we may be also glorified together. ¹⁸ For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy [to be compared] with the glory which shall be revealed to us.</p> <p>¹⁹ For the earnest expectation of the creature waits for the manifestation of the sons of God. ²⁰ For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who has subjected [the same] in hope, ²¹ Because the creature itself also shall be freed from the bondage of corruption into the freedom of the glory of the children of God. ²² For we know that the whole creation groans and travails in pain together until now.</p> <p>²³ And not only [the creature], but ourselves also, which have the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, [to witness], the redemption of our body. ²⁴ For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man sees, why does he yet hope for? ²⁵ But if we hope for that we see not, [then] do we with patience wait for [it].</p> <p>(31) ²⁶ Likewise the Spirit also helps our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. ²⁷ And he that searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, because he makes intercession for the saints according to God.</p>	<p>^{1st} Conflict within our control (inside our heart, mind and body – Romans 6:1-8:17a). Victory brings peace.</p> <p>^{2nd} Conflict beyond our control (outside our body – Romans 8:17b-11:31)</p> <p><u>Now</u> suffering pain groaning <u>future</u> glory (joy) Hebrews 12:1-2 patience hope</p> <p>^{17b-18}. link between parts 4 & 5.</p> <p>2 Tim 2:12, 3:12, Ph 1:29, Ja 5:10-11, 1 Pe 2:19 suffering-2, glory-2, I reckon we-2, us-1</p> <p>¹⁹⁻²⁵. Our Hope</p> <p>creature – 4x. Not a past one-time act, but a living organism.</p> <p>waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God hope-1 freedom of the glory of the children of God.</p> <p>travails in pain – related to our & Christ’s suffering creation groans – earthquakes, tsunamis, volcanic eruptions, typhoons, hurricanes, lightnings, blizzards</p> <p>first fruits of the Spirit-1 groan within ourselves</p> <p>redemption of our body is our resurrection</p> <p>hope-5x</p> <p>patience wait for-1 Hebrews 11:1-3, 6 Faith, hope, love 1 Cor 13:13</p> <p>ourselves-3, our-1, we-5</p> <p>Emphasis on resurrection and return of Christ</p> <p>²⁶⁻²⁷. Our Helper</p> <p>Back to our present help from the Holy Spirit. Prayer from the heart Spirit-5 helps our infirmities makes intercession, groanings mind of the Spirit</p> <p>our-1, we-2, us-1, saints-1</p> <p>Godhead: God-3, Jesus Christ-2, Holy Spirit-6</p>

Romans 8:28-39	Our confidence to continue in the love of God	Part 6 of 7 (3B)
Scripture	Commentary	
<p>(32) ²⁸ And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to [his] purpose. ²⁹ For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate [to be] conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. ³⁰ Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified. ³¹ What shall we then say to these things? If God [be] for us, who [can be] against us? ³² He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? ³³ Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect? [It is] God that justifies. ³⁴ Who is he that condemns? [It is] Christ that died, yes rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.</p> <p>(33) ³⁵ Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? [shall] tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? ³⁶ As it is written, For your sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. ³⁷ No, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us. ³⁸ For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, ³⁹ Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.</p>	<p>Review Parts 1-5. Focus on conflict & contrast within: like a city without walls. Proverbs 25:28.</p> <p>28-34. Our Confidence</p> <p>Who has God called? Who will he call? 5 reasons why we love God. John 15:1</p> <p>foreknow – predestinate – * called – justified – glorified – now, Ephesians 2:6 Sit in heavenly places</p> <p>Focus on the ascended Christ.</p> <p>God with Christ freely gives us all things.</p> <p>Past freedoms form conflict and contrast within ourselves: 6:3, 18, 22 – freed from sin. 7:3 free from law. 8:2 free from the law of sin and death.</p> <p>³³⁻³⁴ The old man and flesh have been thoroughly dealt with in Romans 6:1-8:17a.</p> <p>Conflict beyond our control – from outside ourselves. Things on this earth.</p> <p>Christ intercedes for us as the Holy Spirit does</p> <p>35-39. to Continue in the love of God</p> <p>³⁵ Who? Nobody on earth while in this body. Vs 39</p> <p>³⁶ Psalm 44:2, Luke 9:23</p> <p>we are more than conquerors through Christ</p> <p>Conflict beyond our control – from outside ourselves. Most comprehensive and spiritual. Ephesians 6:17</p> <p>³⁹ Nor anything in heaven now or after we die</p> <hr/> <p>us\we\our\them-14 me\my\I-1, ye\you-0</p> <p>Godhead: God-17, Jesus-9, Holy Spirit-0</p> <p>Next: 9-11 concerns the conflict of the nation Israel and God's Sovereignty</p>	

Chart for Romans 6-8

Green = good, Red = evil, Blue = good or evil

Battles (sin problem) within our control (temptations)								
#1 Battle (6:1-10) - Our identification with Christ's death and resurrection. Victory (6:11-23) - Your consecration to God								
Romans	Who	Sin > Death Flesh/Carnal	Right > Life Holiness	Servant/Slave (doulos)	Free	Godhead	Key words / verse	
Part 1 6:1-10 1A. Our Identification With Christ	We/us/ our-12x	sin-7x crucified/ death/dead/ died/dies-11x (buried/old man/body)	live-2x, lives-2x life-1x raised-2x resurrection-1x Total: 8x	not serve sin (vs 6b) <i>Obedied doctrine from the heart, 17</i>	freed from sin (vs 7a)	God-2x Christ- 15x Spirit-0x	God forbid -vs1 Know ye not? Know this - old man - vs 6 Knowing that Christ - vs 9	
Part 2 6:11-23 1B. Your Consecration To God	Ye/you/ Your-28x	Sin-10x Dead or death-5x Members-4x Body-2x	Righteousness (vs 13,16,18-19 Alive-2x Holiness , vs19 Eternal life -2x (vs 22-23)	Servants of sin (vs 6,17,20) Servants of right/God-7	Free from sin (vs 18, 22) Ye were free from right(v20)	God-5x Christ-2x Spirit-0x	Reckon - vs 11 Yield --vs 13 & 19 (present)	
Battles (sin problem) within our control (temptations)								
#2 Battle (7:1-21) - law of sin and death / works of a religious system. Victory (7:22-25) My walk with Jesus Christ								
Romans	Who	Sin > Death Flesh/Carnal	Right > Life Holiness	Notes		Godhead	Key words / verse	
Part 3 7:1-6 Intro (Duet 22:22) 7:7-23 2A. law of sin & death	We/us/our- 6x -vs 4- 6x I/me/ my-47x	Sin-18x <i>Exceeding, 13b</i> Died/dead/ Death-12x flesh-3x body- 1x Members-3x	Raised from the dead, 4b Newness of spirit, 6a Inward man, vs 22	Paul's early experience as a believer Bible: lust -38x Concupiscence Desire-3 -2pos		Connector-7a 7b-13 14-21 <i>All manner of Con. vs8</i>	God-4x Christ-4x Spirit-0x	Law of: 25x Moses- 17x, Sin- 4x, God- 2x, Mind- 2x Know ye not, God forbid, vs7
Your choice: Therefore walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit (vs 1 and 4)								
Part 4 8:1-17a 2B. law of the Spirit of life	Ye/you/ Your-13x They/them- 5x	Sin-4x Flesh-12x Dead/die/ Death-7x vs 13 Spirit mortifies	Life and resurrection-6x Righteousness of the law fulfilled in us	We are debtors, vs 12 spirit of bondage to fear, vs 15	Free from the law of sin and death, vs 3 Heirs, vs 17a	God-13x Christ-8x Spirit- 15x	Spiritually minded is life and peace, vs 6, carnal mind, vs 7 Spirit of adoption, children, heirs,	
Battles beyond our control (trials)								
Consequences : I experience a more consistent and growing victory in Christ								
Part 5 8:17b-27 3A. Our Hope and our Help	We/us/ our-17x	Note: 3A. Our Hope (vs 19- 25) and Help (vs 26-27)	the sufferings of this present time , vs 18	Bondage of corruption, vs 21	freedom of the glory, vs 21	God-3x Christ-2x Spirit-6x	Reckon , vs 18 Hope-6x Prayer vs 26-27	
Part 6 8:28-39 3B. Our Confidence to continue	We/us/ Our-14x Them-5x	Note: 3B. Our Confidence (vs 28-34) to continue (vs 35-39) in the love of God	them he also glorified, vs 30 who is even at the right hand of God, vs 34	Sheep for the slaughter, vs 36	Freely give us all things, vs 32 *ascended Christ	God-17x Christ-9x Spirit-0x	Foreknow Predestinate Called Justified Glorified	
Part 7 9:1-11:36 3C. Our trust in a sovereign God	Israel-12x Romans 1-8, 0x Romans 12-16, 0x	Israel past (9), present (10), & future (11)	Note: A nation vs individual	Consistently consumed for the glory of God	Free gift Ro 5,3x. Ro 10:9-10, 13	God-83x Christ- 19x Spirit-1x	Romans 10:9-10, 17 Quotes Old Testament 35x, (prophets 20x)	
12-16 Practice		Service to God and others		Servants/ slaves			93 commands	

Romans 9-11,12:1-2	God's sovereignty & our service	Part 7 of 7 (3C)								
Scripture	Commentary									
<p>9:1-5 Introduction to chapters 9-11</p> <p>9:6-33 PAST ISRAEL - Old Testament</p> <p>6-14 Abraham, Isaac & Jacob - the fathers 15-24 Moses - the law 25-29 Hosea & Isaiah - prophets 30-33 Transition from Israel past to present</p> <p>10:1-11:10 PRESENT ISRAEL - New Testament</p> <p>1-5 Israel's zeal after law needs replaced by Christ 6-17 Call-hear, Evangelism (9-10, 13-15, 17) 18-21 All Israel heard 11:1-10 (6) A remnant by grace</p> <p>11:11-36 FUTURE ISRAEL - Christ's Return</p> <p>11-15 Israel's effect on the nations 16-24 Olive tree illustration 25-32 Mystery of Israel 33-36 Praise to God</p> <p>12:1-31 I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye^a present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, [which is] your reasonable service. ² And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.</p> <p>Next: A 6-part study on Our Service to God, government, saints and others in Romans 12-16?</p> <p>12:1-21 to God & others 13:1-14 to government & others 14:1-15:7 to weaker brethren 15:8-22 to the Gentiles 15:23-33 to brotherly prayer 16:1-27 to the saints</p>	<p>O.T quoted at least 31x. 6:1-8:39 only 2x</p> <p>9-11. God's Sovereignty</p> <p>God will have mercy on who he will have mercy... (Jacob & Esau, Moses & Pharaoh)</p> <p>9:11-24 The Potter and the clay.</p> <p>Jesus is the rock of offense and stumbling-stone to Israel</p> <p>Moses as a type of Christ, the Deliverer</p> <p>By faith, not works</p> <table border="0"> <tr> <td><u>Israel</u></td> <td><u>Gentiles</u></td> </tr> <tr> <td>offense</td> <td>riches of the world</td> </tr> <tr> <td>diminishing</td> <td>riches of the nations</td> </tr> <tr> <td>fullness</td> <td>life</td> </tr> </table> <p>Natural and wild branches.</p> <p>Godhead: God- 83, Jesus-19, Spirit-1</p> <p>12-16. Our Service or Servant-hood</p> <p>^a present in Greek is the aorist form, meaning one time. Other verbs in chapter 12 are continuous form, 35x.</p> <p>reasonable service</p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. be not <u>conformed</u> to this world 2. <u>transformed</u> by the <u>renewing</u> of your mind 3. <u>Prove</u> that which is the <p>Good - the right thing Acceptable - the right way Perfect - the right time will of God</p>		<u>Israel</u>	<u>Gentiles</u>	offense	riches of the world	diminishing	riches of the nations	fullness	life
<u>Israel</u>	<u>Gentiles</u>									
offense	riches of the world									
diminishing	riches of the nations									
fullness	life									

Romans Chapter 9

Israel Past

9:1-5 **Introduction**

(34) ¹ I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost, ² That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. ³ For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh: ⁴ Who are Israelites; to whom [pertains] the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service [of God], and the promises; ⁵ Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ [came], who is over all, God blessed forever. Amen.

Romans Chapter 9

9:6-14 *The Fathers – Abraham (Sara), Isaac (Rebecca), Jacob & Esau*

(35) ⁶ Not as though the Word of God has taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: ⁷ Neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, [are they] all children: but, In Isaac shall your seed be called. ⁸ That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed. ⁹ For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son. ¹⁰ And not only [this]; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, [even] by our father Isaac; ¹¹ **(For [the children] being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calls;)** ¹² It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. ¹³ **As it is written, Jacob I have loved, but Esau I have hated.** ¹⁴ What shall we say then? [Is there] unrighteousness with God? **God forbid.**

9:15-24 *The Law – Moses & Pharaoh*

(36) ¹⁵ For he says to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. ¹⁶ So then [it is] not of him that wills, nor of him that runs, but of God that shows mercy. ¹⁷ For the Scripture says to Pharaoh, Even for this same purpose I have raised you up, that I might show my power in you, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

¹⁸ **Therefore has he mercy on whom he will [have mercy], and whom he will he hardens.**

¹⁹ You will say then to me, Why does he yet find fault? For who has resisted his will? ²⁰ No but, O man, who are you that replies against God? **Shall the thing formed say to him that formed [it], Why have you made me thus?** ²¹ **Has not the potter authority over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel to honor, and another to dishonor?** ²² [What] if God, willing to show [his] wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

²³ **And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared to glory,** ²⁴ Even us, whom he has called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?

9:25-29 *The Prophets – Hosea and Isaiah*

(37) ²⁵ As he says also in Hosea, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved. ²⁶ And it shall come to pass, [that] in the place where it was said to them, Ye are not my people; there they will be called the children of the living God. ²⁷ Isaiah also cries concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: ²⁸ For he will finish the work, and cut [it] short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth. ²⁹ And as Isaiah said before, Except the Lord of Sabbath had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like to Gomorrhah.

9:30-33 *Transition from Israel Past to Israel Present*

(38) ³⁰ What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith. ³¹ But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, has not attained to the law of righteousness. ³² Wherefore? Because [they sought it] not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumbling stone; ³³ As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone and rock of offence: and whosoever believes on him shall not be ashamed.

Notes:

8) 9:1-33	Israel's past	9:3	Reject the Christ
9) 10:1-11:24	Israel's present	10:9-10, 17	Blind to the Christ
10) 11:25-33	Israel's future	11:25	Receive the Christ

10:1-5 ***The Jew Thinks they are Saved by their Zeal for God without Knowledge of Christ***

(39) ¹ Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. ² For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. ³ For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God. ⁴ For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to everyone that believes. ⁵ For Moses describes the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which does those things shall live by them.

10:6-17 ***The Jew and Gentile Know they are Saved by their Faith in the Gospel of Peace***

(40) ⁶ But the righteousness which is of faith speaks on this wise, Say not in your heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down [from above]:) ⁷ Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) ⁸ But what says it? The word is near you, [even] in your mouth, and in your heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; ⁹ That if you shall confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in your heart that God has raised him from the dead, you shall be saved. ¹⁰ For with the heart man believes onto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made onto salvation. ¹¹ For the Scripture says, Whosoever believes on him shall not be ashamed. ¹² For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich to all that call upon him. ¹³ For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. ¹⁴ How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher? ¹⁵ And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! ¹⁶ But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Isaiah says, Lord, who has believed our report? ¹⁷ So then faith [comes] by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.

Notes:

Sent – by God and man. Acts. The saints recognize God's calling. Seek and wait on the Lord's time. Our vocation sends us as tentmakers. (10:15)

Beautiful feet - Isaiah 52:7, Song of Songs 7:1, Acts 8:1, Ephesians 6:15. For all the individuals in the church in the NT (10:15).

10:18-21 ***The Jews Hear by Moses, Isaiah and in Acts, and still Oppose the Gospel of Peace***

¹⁸ But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words to the ends of the world. ¹⁹ But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses says, I will provoke you to jealousy by [them that are] no people, [and] by a foolish nation I will anger you. ²⁰ But Isaiah is very bold, and says, I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest to them that asked not after me. ²¹ But to Israel he says, All day long I have stretched forth my hands to a disobedient and opposing people.

Romans Chapter 11

11:1-10 ***Elijah and David Prophecy of a Remnant of Israel***

(41) ¹ I say then, Has God cast away his people? **God forbid.** For I also am a Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, [of] the tribe of Benjamin. ² God has not cast away his people which he foreknew. Don't ye know what the Scripture says of Elijah? how he makes intercession to God against Israel, saying, ³ Lord, they have killed your prophets, and digged down your altars; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. ⁴ But what says the answer of God to him? I have reserved to myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to [the image of] Baal. ⁵ **Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.** ⁶ **And if by grace, then [is it] no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if [it be] of works, then it is no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.** ⁷ What then? Israel has not obtained that which he seeks for; **but the election has obtained it, and the rest were blinded** ⁸ (According as it is written, God has given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear;) to this day. ⁹ And David says, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompense to them: ¹⁰ Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back always.

Israel Future

11:11-15 ***Israel's Effect on the Nations***

(42) ¹¹ I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? **God forbid:** but [rather] through their fall salvation [is come] to the ^a Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy. ¹² Now if the fall of them [be] the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their fullness? ¹³ For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify my office: ¹⁴ If by any means I may provoke to emulation [them which are] my flesh, and might save some of them. ¹⁵ For if the casting away of them [be] the reconciling of the world, what [shall] the receiving [of them be], but life from the dead?

^a Romans 9-11 concern Israel as a nation and the gentiles as a nation, not individuals.

11:16-24 ***Ignorance Concerning Israel Causes Pride*** (*The Natural and Wild Branches of the Olive Tree*)

¹⁶ For if the firstfruit [be] holy, the lump is also [holy]: and if the root [be] holy, so are the branches. ¹⁷ And if some of the branches be broken off, and you, being a wild olive tree, were grafted in among them, and with them partakes of the root and fatness of the olive tree; ¹⁸ Boast not against the branches. But if you boast, you bear not the root, but the root you. ¹⁹ **You will say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.** ²⁰ Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and you stand by faith. **Be not high-minded, but fear:** ²¹ For if God spared not the natural branches, [take heed] lest he also spare not you. ²² Behold therefore the goodness and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but toward you, goodness, **if you continue in [his] goodness: otherwise you also shall be cut off.** ²³ And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to graff them in again. ²⁴ For if you were cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and were grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural [branches], be grafted into their own olive tree?

Romans Chapter 11

11:25-32 ***The Mystery of Israel*** (for the future))

(43) ²⁵ For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this ^a mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fullness of the Gentiles be come in. ²⁶ And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: ²⁷ For this is my covenant to them, when I shall take away their sins. ²⁸ As concerning the gospel, [they are] enemies for your sakes: but as concerning the election, [they are] beloved for the fathers' sakes. ²⁹ For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance. ³⁰ For as ye in times past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief: ³¹ Even so have these also now not believed, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy. ³² For God has concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

^a called a *mystery*, because it had been, to the times of the apostles, concealed, and was then revealed fully for the first time, Ro 16:25; Col 1:26-27, 1 Co 15:51, 1 Timothy 3:9, 16, Mark 4:11, Eph 1:9, 3:3, Rev 1:20. Fullness - Lu 21:14, Dan 12:4.

QT Note on 11:1-25

Title: Ignorance Concerning Israel Causes Pride

Q1 – Since the olive tree represents the nation of Israel, who are the natural and wild branches of the olive tree?

A – The natural branches are the people of the nation of Israel, and the wild branches grafted into the olive tree are the gentile nations. All people of the earth are Jew or Gentile.

Q2 – What happens to the people who reject God’s plan for the nation of Israel?

A1 – They become high minded (11:20) or intellectual and proud; rather than fear God.

A2 – They experience the severe hand of God, rather than the good hand of God (11:22).

A3 – They become wise in their own conceits (11:25).

A4 – They can be either Jew or Gentile, saved or unsaved.

Q3 – Why is the plan of God for future Israel a mystery?

A – Because the mystery existed up until the time the Jewish people rejected Jesus Christ and continues. This truth is a mystery to the Jew and Gentile, unbeliever and believer. However, the believer that fears God and is meek the mystery is revealed.

Q4 – When is the fullness of the Gentiles (11:25)?

A – When the last person repents and believes in Jesus Christ and the body of Christ is complete (Lu 21:14, Dan 12:4).

Q5 – What are other mysteries revealed in the New Testament?

A – Read Romans 16:25; Colossians 1:26-27, 1 Corinthians 15:51, 1 Timothy 3:9, 16, Mark 4:11, Ephesians 1:9, 3:3, Revelation 1:20.

Application: I know and understand the mysteries of God because I study the Holy Scriptures and trust and obey. I am a wild branch and thankful for being grafted into the olive tree.

History: Israel still has a place in God’s future plan promoted by John Nelson Darby in the mid-1800s, later popular among the Jews after the pamphlet published in 1896 by Theodore Hertzl “The Jewish State” and then further illustrated by Baptist Clarence Larkin in Dispensational Truth published in 1918. Israel became a nation on 14 May 1948.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us have faith and understand the mysteries of God.

Romans Chapter 11

11:33-36 ***Glory to God for the Depth of the Riches of His Wisdom and Knowledge***

(44) ³³ O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out! ³⁴ For who has known the mind of the Lord? or who has been his counselor? ³⁵ Or who has first given to him, and it shall be recompensed to him again? ³⁶ For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom [be] glory forever. Amen.

QT Note:

Q1 – Why does Paul end chapters 1-11 covering doctrine with this conclusion?

A – Because he realizes it was not his own wisdom and knowledge to understand and write the systematic theology covered in Romans 1-11, but every thought sequence and every word was inspired by God.

Q2 – How does Romans 1-11 systematically declare the doctrines of our faith? Here are 2 divisions.

What are the 5 S's in Romans?

A1 - Sin: Romans 1-3

A2 - Salvation: 4-5

A3 - Sanctification: 6-8

A4 - Sovereignty: 9-11

A5 – Service: 12-16

What are the 7 witnesses in Romans?

A1 – Creation: 1:18-2:8

A2 – Conscience: 2:9-29

A3 – Scripture: 3

A4 – Jesus: 4-5

A5 – Growth: 6-8

A6 – Israel: 9-11

A7 – Love: 12-16

Application: I find no better way to end chapters 1-11 than Paul was inspired to write in 11:33-36. I cannot search his judgments, and his ways are past finding out. I do not know the mind of the Lord, nor am his counselor. Neither have I first given to him.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us say, "Of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory forever. Amen.

Romans 12-16

Our Service

(Practical application of Christ in us: to God, believers and non-believers)

daily - a process & our experience

<u>Outline</u>	<u>Passage</u>	<u>Topic</u>	<u>Key verse</u>	<u>Lesson</u>
12-16 Servants to				
	12:1-21	God, brethren, & all	12:3	15
	13:1-14	Government, neighbors & self	13:8	16
	14:1-15:7	Weaker brethren	14:17	17
	15:8-22	Witness to Gentiles	15:14	18
	15:23-33	Brotherly prayer	15:30	19
	16:1-27	Fellowship	16:20	20

The Apostle Paul's personal experience and knowledge of the circumstance at Rome must form the context for interpretation within the book to the Romans first, before going any further. It's logical sequential exhortation is detailed and has no loose ends. We can note a faithful spiritually growing congregation of believers at several locations of which houses are mentioned. There were problems with how to treat the weaker brethren that needed correction, which was probably related to the final exhortation to mark and turn away those who cause divisions and offenses. Were these saints? I believe so, but carnal who never progressed spiritually past Romans 6 in their personal experience.

Scripture	Notes
<p style="text-align: center;">We Worship God</p> <p>(45) ¹I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye ^a present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, [which is] your reasonable service. ²And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.</p> <p>^a present in Greek is the aorist form, meaning one time. Other verbs in chapter 12 are continuous form, 35x.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">We Serve the Body - with Gifts</p> <p>(46) ³ For I say, through the grace given to me, to every one that is among you, not to think of self more highly than they ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God has dealt to every one the measure of faith. ⁴ For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office: ⁵ So we, [being] many, are one body in Christ, and everyone members one of another. ⁶ Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophecy, [let us prophesy] according to the proportion of faith; ⁷ Or ministry, [let us wait] on [our] ministering: or they that teach, on teaching; ⁸ Or they that exhort, on exhortation: they that give, [let them do it] with simplicity; they that rule, with diligence; they that show mercy, with cheerfulness.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">We Serve the Brethren -with Love</p> <p>(47) ⁹ [Let] love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. ¹⁰ [Be] kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honor preferring one another; ¹¹ Not slothful in business; fervent in spirit; serving the Lord; ¹² Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; ¹³ Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality. ¹⁴ Bless them which persecute you: bless, and curse not ¹⁵ Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep. ¹⁶ [Be] of the same mind one toward another. Mind not high things, but condescend to those of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">We Serve Everyone - with Forgiveness</p> <p>(48) ¹⁷ Recompense to no one evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men. ¹⁸ If it be possible, as much as lies in you, live peaceably with all men. ¹⁹ Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but [rather] give place to wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says the Lord. ²⁰ Therefore if your enemy hunger, feed them; if they thirst, give them drink: for in so doing you shall heap coals of fire on their head. ²¹ Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.</p>	<p>Chapters 12-16 apply to our daily practice</p> <p>vs 1-2: for all believers - to God</p> <p>Memory verse. Key passage for Romans 12-16. Vs 1-2. Service = worship of God</p> <p>Contrast 1 of 7: 2 - not conformed, but transformed</p> <p>vs 1-21: 41 commandments, not opinions or options</p> <p>vs 3-8: for all believers – among saints</p> <p>3 - 5 are minor linking verses</p> <p>Romans 1:11 impart gift to establish saints</p> <p>6-8 <u>Four gifts</u> (57 AD) Prophecy – 1 Cor 12-14, Eph 4:11-13, 2:20 Deuteronomy 13 and 18 Ministry – 1 Peter 4:9-11 Teaching – 2 Tim 2:2 Exhortation – He 3:13, 1 Pe 5:1, Jude 3</p> <p>Giving – 2 Cor 9 Ruler - Philemon Merciful – Mt 5:7, James 3:17</p> <p>Gifts: 1 Cor 12-14 (56 AD), Eph 4:6-8 & 1 Pe 4:9-11 (60-62 AD)</p> <p>vs 9-16 for all believers – to saints</p> <p>9: dissimulation – without hypocrisy or genuine. Abhor – utterly detest, Cleave – glue.</p> <p>Contrasts 2-6 of 7: 9: Abhor evil; cleave to good 11: Not slothful; fervent in spirit 14: Bless ... and curse not 15: Rejoice ... weep 16: Mind not high things, but low</p> <p>16: renewed mind, law of the mind (Romans 7:25a, 15:6, Acts 20:19)</p> <p>vs 17-21: for all believers - to all people</p> <p>19-20: Proverbs 25:21-22, Matthew 5:44</p> <p>Contrast 7 of 7 21: overcome evil with good (evil from outside oneself, and within oneself – Ro 6-7)</p> <p>Godhead: God-6, Jesus-1, Holy Spirit-0</p>

Scripture	Notes														
<p>OUR SERVICE - TO OUR GOVERNMENT</p> <p>(49) ¹ Let every soul be subject to the higher authority. For there is no authority but of God: the authority that be are ordained of God.</p> <p>² Whosoever therefore resists the authority, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves condemnation. ³ For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil. Will you then not be afraid of the authority? do that which is good, and you shall have praise of the same: ⁴ For he is the minister of God to you for good. But if you do that which is evil, be afraid; for he bears not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to [execute] wrath upon him that practices evil. ⁵ Wherefore [ye] must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake. ⁶ For, for this cause pay ye tax also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.</p> <p>⁷ Render therefore to all their dues: tax to whom tax [is due]; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honor to whom honor.</p> <p>OUR SERVICE - TO OUR NEIGHBORS</p> <p>(50) ⁸ Owe no man anything, but to love one another: for he that loves another has fulfilled the law. ⁹ For this, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not murder, You shall not steal, You shall not bear false witness, You shall not covet; and if [there be] any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, You shall love your neighbor as thyself. ¹⁰ Love works no evil to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.</p> <p>OUR SERVICE - TO OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS</p> <p>(51) ¹¹ And that, knowing the time, that now [it is] high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.</p> <p>¹² The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armor of light. ¹³ Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. ¹⁴ But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to [fulfill] the lusts [thereof].</p>	<p>Review Romans 12:1-2 for context</p> <p>1-7 by all believers - to government (Proverbs 16) 1 Timothy 2:1-3, 2 Peter 2:10-11</p> <p>1-3: power – 5x Be subject to – rather than resist (Acts 5:29) judgment – condemnation ^{KJV}</p> <p>3-4: good – 3x, evil – 3x Same principles in Old and New Testaments in civil government</p> <p>4: Ministers = deacons or diakonos</p> <p>5: be subject to for wrath (from powers on earth) and conscience (from power in heaven) sake</p> <p>6-7: pay your taxes Tax, custom (tolls or tariffs), fear & honor.</p> <p>Same truth taught by Jesus when answering the Pharisee's question with a coin. Caesar & God both: Mt 22:21, Mk 12:17, Lu 20:25</p> <p>8-10: by all believers - to all (love one another)</p> <p>10 commandments – these 5 are horizontal: 6-adultery 7-murder, kill ^{KJV} 8-steal 9-lie 10-covet</p> <p>10 evil, ill ^{KJV} Law: 613-10-2-1 commandment "love your neighbor as yourself". Romans 8:4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.</p> <p>11-14: When & how to be right (Romans 6-8) Our salvation: future at our death or Christ's return. Time continues never to be repeated and toward eternity.</p> <p>Urgency in 5 contrasts for (when) here and now for believers:</p> <table border="0" style="width: 100%;"> <tr> <td style="vertical-align: top;"><u>Awake</u></td> <td style="vertical-align: top;"><u>Sleep</u></td> </tr> <tr> <td>Day</td> <td>Night</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Light</td> <td>Darkness</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Walk honestly</td> <td>rioting & drunkenness chambering & wantonness strife & envying (alcohol – sex – pride)</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Put on armor of light</td> <td>cast off the works of darkness</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Put on the Lord Jesus</td> <td>make no provision for the flesh</td> </tr> <tr> <td>Ro 6-8 life</td> <td>Rom 6-8 death</td> </tr> </table> <p>Desires = lusts ^{KJV}</p> <p>1-14: 28 commandments, not opinions or options vs 14 leads into 14:1-15:8 about weaker brethren</p> <p>Godhead: God-6 (vs 1-7), Jesus-1 (vs 14), Holy Spirit-0</p>	<u>Awake</u>	<u>Sleep</u>	Day	Night	Light	Darkness	Walk honestly	rioting & drunkenness chambering & wantonness strife & envying (alcohol – sex – pride)	Put on armor of light	cast off the works of darkness	Put on the Lord Jesus	make no provision for the flesh	Ro 6-8 life	Rom 6-8 death
<u>Awake</u>	<u>Sleep</u>														
Day	Night														
Light	Darkness														
Walk honestly	rioting & drunkenness chambering & wantonness strife & envying (alcohol – sex – pride)														
Put on armor of light	cast off the works of darkness														
Put on the Lord Jesus	make no provision for the flesh														
Ro 6-8 life	Rom 6-8 death														

Scripture	Notes
<p>(52) ¹Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, [but] not to doubtful disputations. ²For one believes that he may eat all things: another, who is weak, eats herbs. ³Let not him that eats despise him that eats not; and let not him which eats not judge him that eats: for God has received him. ⁴Who are you that judges another man's servant? to his own master he stands or falls. Yes, he shall be held up: for God is able to make him stand. ⁵One man esteems one day above another: another esteems every day [alike]. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. ⁶He that regards the day, regards [it] to the Lord; and he that regards not the day, to the Lord he does not regard [it]. He that eats, eats to the Lord, for he gives God thanks; and he that eats not, to the Lord he eats not, and gives God thanks. ⁷For none of us lives to himself, and no man dies to himself. ⁸For whether we live, we live to the Lord; and whether we die, we die to the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's. ⁹For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living. ¹⁰But why do you judge your brother? or why do you set at nothing your brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. ¹¹For it is written, [As] I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. ¹²So then everyone of us shall give account of himself to God. ¹³Let us not therefore judge one another anymore:</p> <p>(53) but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block or an occasion to fall in [his] brother's way. ¹⁴I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself: but to him that esteems anything to be unclean, to him [it is] unclean. ¹⁵But if your brother be grieved with [your] meat, now walk you not charitably. Destroy not him with your meat, for whom Christ died. ¹⁶Let not then your good be evil spoken of: ¹⁷For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. ¹⁸For he that in these things serves Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men. ¹⁹Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another. ²⁰For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but [it is] evil for that man who eats with offence. ²¹[It is] good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor [anything] whereby your brother stumbles, or is offended, or is made weak. ²²Have you faith? have [it] to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemns not himself in that thing which he allows. ²³And he that doubts is condemned if he eat, because [he eats] not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin.</p> <p>Romans Chapter 15</p> <p>(54) ¹We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please ourselves. ²Let everyone of us please [his] neighbor for [his] good to edification. ³For even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached you fell on me. ⁴For whatsoever things were written in the past were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.</p> <p>(55) ⁵Now the God of patience and comfort grant you to be likeminded one toward another according to Christ Jesus: ⁶That ye may with one mind [and] one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁷Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us to the glory of God.</p>	<p>Inward man dealt with in Romans 6-8. Now project outward toward:</p> <p>1-13a: Toleration among believers</p> <p>1: Not to brother who causes doubtful disputations 2-6: do not despise or judge a brother regarding food and days. 7-13: we all live or die onto the bear – pray for, be example to the Lord individually and not to judge one another for Christ judges us.</p> <p>13: Rather to judge that we put not a stumbling block or occasion to fall in my brother's way. Examples: Lord's Supper, Christmas, Easter, birthdays, eternal security (cultural).</p> <p>13b-23: Moderation among believers</p> <p>Unclean food. Leviticus 11.</p> <p>19: follow peace and edification of others, not strife or self. 21: Don't cause brother to stumble, be offended or made weak 22: Have faith by self – before God alone 23: condemned in Greek is Katakrisis; to judge against</p> <p>I must practice toleration, moderation and please believers, then I can continue to 15:8.</p> <p>15:1-7 Please others and not self bear – pray for, be example to 3: Psalm 69:9</p> <p>5-7: Receive One Another 6: One mind and one mouth – Acts 2:46, 4:32 14:1-15:7: 28 commandments.</p> <p>Godhead: God-21, Jesus-12, Holy Spirit-1 (vs 17 joy)</p>

Romans 15:8-21	Our Service – to the Gentiles	Lesson 18 of 20
Scripture	Notes	
<p>(56)⁸ Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises [made] to the fathers: ⁹ And that the Gentiles might glorify God for [his] mercy; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to you among the Gentiles, and sing to your name. ¹⁰ And again he says, Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with his people. ¹¹ And again, Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles; and praise him, all ye people. ¹² And again, Isaiah says, There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles hope. ¹³ Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, by the power of the Holy Ghost.</p> <p>(57)¹⁴ And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another. ¹⁵ Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly to you in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of God, ¹⁶ That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.</p> <p>(58)¹⁷ I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ in those things which pertain to God. ¹⁸ For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ has not worked by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and works, ¹⁹ In the power of signs and wonders, in the power of the Spirit of God; so that from Jerusalem, and round about to Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ. ²⁰ Yes, so I have strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation: ²¹ But as it is written, To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard shall understand.</p>	<p>Review Romans 12:1-2 for context</p> <p>8-13: The Gentiles Glorify God <u>Old Testament quotes</u> 9: 2 Samuel 22:50, Psalm 18:49 10: Deuteronomy 32:43 The end of Moses Song in 32:1-43. The history of Israel, their mistakes and to avoid repetition. 11: Psalm 117:1 12: Isaiah 11:10</p> <p>9-18: Gentiles – nations (not Israel), 9x. First time since 11:25 (1-3 sin, 9-11 sovereignty) 12: hope – trust^{KJV} 13: power – dunamis in Greek. Romans 8.</p> <p>14-22: Paul's Example in Ministry</p> <p>14: Our need in divine order is to be; full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, and able to admonish one another. Admonish may be translated instruct. 16: gospel of God, 19: gospel of Christ (both are the same) Never the gospel of the Holy Spirit. 16: sanctified – made holy, set apart for a special purpose, Romans 8:4. Past, present and future. A good minister desires to offer up other believers as acceptable to God.</p> <p>18: obedience is by word and works, 1 John 2:18, James. Not saved, but sanctified. 19: power & mighty – dunamis in Greek, sometimes translated mighty or miraculous. Hebrews 2:1-4. 19: Illyricum – present Yugoslavia, Acts 1:8. Acts 13-29. Matthew 28:18-20, not Mark 16:15-20.</p> <p>21: Isaiah 52:12</p> <p>Note: Beginning with Romans 12:1-15:7; leading up to Romans 15:8-21, Paul transfers from the individual walk to corporate walk; from the micro to macro picture; our internal relationships precede our external witness.</p> <p>I-12x, me-2, my-2, brethren-2x, you-6x, we-0x</p> <p>15:8-21: 0 commandments</p> <p>Godhead: God-8, Jesus-9, Holy Spirit-3 (vs 13 power, 16 sanctified, 19 power) Satan – 0</p>	

Scripture	Notes
<p>(59) ²² For which cause also I have been much hindered from coming to you. ²³ But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many years to come to you;</p> <p>²⁴ Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your [company]. ²⁵ But now I go to Jerusalem to minister to the saints. ²⁶ For it has pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.</p> <p>²⁷ It has pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister to them in carnal things. ²⁸ When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.</p> <p>²⁹ And I am sure that, when I come to you, I shall come in the fullness of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.</p> <p>(60) ³⁰ Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in [your] prayers to God for me; ³¹ That I may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judaea; and that my service which [I have] for Jerusalem may be accepted of the saints; ³² That I may come to you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.</p> <p>³³ Now the God of peace [be] with you all. Amen.</p>	<p>Review Romans 12:1-2 for context</p> <p>22-33: 4 commandments, not opinions or options</p> <p>22: Paul's desire to preach to the lost was greater than his need for fellowship. This is the linking verse to 15:23-33.</p> <p>23-29: Paul's Prayerful Planning</p> <p>1a) 23-24: Knowledge, confidence, time factor of many years. Future and general direction sure, but details and time not sure. 23b: Romans 1:8-17 24: Rome on way to Spain. Never hear of trip to Spain.</p> <p>2) 25-28a: Going with financial support from Macedonia and Achaia to saints in Jerusalem first. Romans 1:16</p> <p>1b) 28b-29: Paul is sure he will visit Rome on way to Spain. He was also sure to come in the "fullness of the blessing of the gospel." What an inspiring confidence and example that we too can walk in.</p> <p>Macedonia and Achaia: Contributions from Corinth: Paul is writing from Jerusalem: Paul going to soon Rome: Paul sure he is going to Spain: Paul's final destination to reach those who have not heard of Jesus Christ yet</p> <p>30-33: Paul's Lessons of Prayer (College in school of prayer)</p> <p>Two reasons to pray, how to pray, and four prayer requests</p> <p>30: Two reasons to pray that Paul is pleading for</p> <p>1) for the Lord Jesus Christ's sake 2) for the love of the Spirit</p> <p>How to pray: ye strive together in prayers (holy labor) to God (always to God) for me (Paul needed others prayers)</p> <p>Supplicatory prayer is the baseline and foundation of all other forms of prayer. Refer to Prayer Hand lesson. Prayer allows for mirco changes in God's providence, sovereignty and predestination. Providence has to do with space, while sovereignty and predestination with timing.</p> <p>31-32: Four prayer requests</p> <p>1) deliverance from unbelievers in Jerusalem 2) service may be accepted by saints in Jerusalem 3) Paul may go to Rome with Joy by the will of God and all be refreshed 4) the God of peace be with the saints at Rome</p> <p>33: Peace is an emotion that is from God, which is our privilege to have in this life. Paul's prayer for the saints at Rome.</p> <p>I-13x, me-2x, my-4x = 18x, saints-3x, brethren-1x, you-11x, we-0</p> <p>Godhead: God-8, Jesus-15, Holy Spirit-1 (verse 30, love of)</p>

Scripture	Notes
<p style="text-align: center;">Part 1 - Greetings from Paul to the Saints at Rome</p> <p>(61) ¹ I commend to you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the congregation which is at Cenchrea: ² That ye receive her in the Lord, as becomes saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she has need of you: for she has been a strength of many, and of myself also. ³ Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus: ⁴ Who have for my life laid down their own necks: to whom not only I give thanks, but also all the congregations of the Gentiles. ⁵ Likewise [greet] the congregation that is in their house. Greet my [well] beloved Epaphroditus, who is the first fruits of Achaia to Christ. ⁶ Greet Mary, who bestowed much labor on us. ⁷ Greet Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellow prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me. ⁸ Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord. ⁹ Greet Urbane, our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved. ¹⁰ Greet Apelles approved in Christ. Greet them which are of Aristobulus' [household]. ¹¹ Greet Herodion my countryman. Greet them that be of the [household] of Narcissus, which are in the Lord. ¹² Greet Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labor in the Lord. Greet the beloved Persis, which labored much in the Lord. ¹³ Greet Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. ¹⁴ Greet Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them. ¹⁵ Greet Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them. ¹⁶ Greet one another with a holy kiss. The congregations of Christ Greet you.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Part 2 - Warning (17-18) and Comfort (19-20)</p> <p>(62) ¹⁷ Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them. ¹⁸ For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple. ¹⁹ For your obedience is come abroad to all. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise to that which is good, and simple concerning evil. ²⁰ And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you. Amen</p> <p>(63) ²¹ Timothy my workfellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my countrymen, greet you. ²² I Tertius, who wrote [this] letter, greet you in the Lord. ²³ Gaius my host, and of the whole congregation, greets you. Erastus the treasurer of the city greets you, and Quartus a brother. ²⁴ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you all. Amen.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Doxology of Praise to God</p> <p>²⁵ Now to him that is able to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, ²⁶ But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: ²⁷ To God only wise, [be] glory through Jesus Christ forever. Amen. [Written to the Romans from Corinthus; [sent] by Phebe servant of the congregation at Cenchrea.]</p>	<p>¹⁻¹⁶ Compare to Old Testament list of David's mighty men, 2 Samuel 23. - Greet 27 individuals: 9 women & 18 men, - 1st two are women. <i>Inward versus outward</i> - Receive-honor-submit. - Labor-3x, helper-2x, beloved-3x. - in the Lord, in Christ, in Christ Jesus-10x.</p> <p>The New Testament Hall of Fame 1-2, 27 Phebe – deacon KJV 3-5a Priscilla & Aquila (wife) – helpers Tentmakers-1 Corinthians 18 and at Ephesus with Paul, 2 Timothy 4:19 (6x) 5b Epaphroditus – beloved & firstfruit 6 Mary – much labor 7 Andronicus & Junia – apostles know 8 Amplias - beloved 9 Urbane - helper Stachys - beloved 10 Apelles – approved, a slave Aristobulus – brother of Herod Agrippa I 11 Herodion –kinsman, Herod's free slave Narcissus – slave, then secretary of Claudius Caesar, became rich 12 Tryphena & Tryphosa-labor (twin sisters) Persis – labored much 13 Rufus – his mother & mine 14-15 (10 more by name) Julia, his sister</p> <p>16 Greet one another and the churches greet the church at Rome.</p> <p>¹⁷⁻¹⁸ Warning 17: divisions 14:1, offenses 14:20-21. Avoid – turn away, Galatians 3:20 Context: Acts 20:17-38 Paul with the Ephesian elders on his way to Rome</p> <p>¹⁹⁻²⁰ Comfort 19a: obedience, Romans 1:7 19b: wise to good, simple to evil – Matthew 10:16 and 1 John 3:18</p> <p>²¹⁻²⁴ Paul's friends greet Rome's saints 21 Lucius – Acts 13:1-3 21 Jason – Acts 17:5-10 21 Sosipater – Acts 20:4-6, Berean 17:10 22 Tertius – wrote for Paul 23 Gaius – Paul baptized in 1 Corinthians 1:14, possibly same Gaius in Acts 20:4 and 3 John 23 Erastus –treasurer of Corinth</p> <p>²⁵⁻²⁷ Praise to God Similar to doxology in Romans 11:33-36</p> <p>Doxology of praise to God in many Psalms, prayers, i.e., Matthew 6:13b, Ephesians 3:20-21, Revelation 5:9-10. Godhead: God-3, Jesus-18, Holy Spirit-0</p>

Paul quotes the Old Testament 74 times in the letter to the Romans. Similar to Hebrews and Revelation in regards to high quantity of Old Testament quotes. There are four different ways to quote the Old Testament: (1) literal prophecy & literal fulfillment (2) literal plus typical (3) literal plus application (4) summation. Examples are in the book *Israelology* by Fructenbaum.

There are four different ways (reasons) to quote the Old Testament

- (1) literal prophecy & literal fulfillment (LP&LF)
- (2) literal plus typical (L+T)
- (3) literal plus application (L+A)
- (4) summation (S)

Source: Septuagint (G), Masoretic (H) or Other (O)

New Testament Quotes of the Old Testament in the Book of Romans			
New Testament (71x)	Old Testament reference for direct quotation (75x-13x = 62x)	Allusion (13x)	Comments / Type of quotation L-Law, P-Prophets, W-Writings (L-21x, P-31x, W-23x)
Romans			
Sin (11x)	(17x)	(6x)	L-1, P-6, W-10
Rom 1:17	Hab 2:4		P
Rom 1:22	Jer 10:14	*	P
Rom 2:6	Pro 24:12	*	W
Rom 2:6	Psa 62:12	*	W
Rom 2:11	Deu 10:17	*	L
Rom 2:11	Job 34:19	*	W
Rom 2:24	Isa 52:5		P
Rom 2:24	Eze 36:20		P
Rom 3:4	Psa 116:11		W
Rom 3:4	Psa 51:4		W
Rom 3:8	Jer 17:6	*	P
Rom 3:10, 11, 12	Psa 14:1 &c		W
Rom 3:13	Psa 5:9		W
Rom 3:13	Psa 140:3		W
Rom 3:14	Psa 10:7		W
Rom 3:15-18	Isa 59:7, 8		P
Rom 3:18	Psa 36:1		W
Salvation (5x)	(5x)	(0x)	L-4, P-0, W-1
Rom 4:3	Gen 15:6		L
Rom 4:7, 8	Psa 32:1, 2		W
Rom 4:11	Gen 17:10		L
Rom 4:17	Gen 17:5		L
Rom 4:18	Gen 15:5		L
Sanctification (2x)	(3x)	(0x)	Romans 5-6 (0x) L-2, P-0, W-1
Rom 7:7	Exd 20:17		L
Rom 7:7	Deu 5:21		L
Rom 8:36	Psa 44:22		W
Sovereignty (31x)	(35x)	(6x)	L-9, P-20, W-6
Rom 9:7	Gen 21:12		L
Rom 9:9	Gen 18:10		L
Rom 9:12	Gen 25:23		L
Rom 9:13	Mal 1:2, 3		P
Rom 9:15	Exd 33:19		L
Rom 9:17	Exd 9:16		L
Rom 9:20	Isa 45:9	*	P
Rom 9:21	Jer 18:6	*	P
Rom 9:25	Hsa 2:23		P
Rom 9:26	Hsa 1:10		P
Rom 9:27, 28	Isa 10:22, 23		P
Rom 9:29	Isa 1:9		P
Rom 9:33	Isa 8:14		P
Rom 9:33	Isa 28:16		P

Rom 10:5	Lev 18:5		L
Rom 10:5	Eze 20:11		P
Rom 10:6, 7	Deu 30:12, 13	*	L
Rom 10:8	Deu 30:14		L
Rom 10:11	Isa 28:16		P
Rom 10:13	Joe 2:32		P
Rom 10:15	Isa 52:7		P
Rom 10:15	Nah 1:15		P
Rom 10:16	Isa 53:1		P
Rom 10:18	Psa 19:4		W
Rom 10:19	Deu 32:21		L
Rom 10:20, 21	Isa 65:1, 2		P
Rom 11:1	Psa 94:14	*	W
Rom 11:3	1Ki 19:10, 14		W
Rom 11:4	1Ki 19:18		W
Rom 11:8	Isa 29:10		P
Rom 11:8	Isa 6:9	*	P
Rom 11:9, 10	Psa 69:22, 23		W
Rom 11:26, 27	Isa 59:20, 21		P
Rom 11:34	Isa 40:13		P
Rom 11:35	Job 41:11	*	W
Service (12x)	(15x)	(2x)	L-5, P-5, W-5
Rom 12:9	Amo 5:15	*	P
Rom 12:16	Isa 5:21	*	P
Rom 12:16	Pro 3:7		W
Rom 12:19	Deu 32:35		L
Rom 12:20	Pro 25:21, 22		W
Rom 13:9	Exd 20:13, 17		L
Rom 13:9	Deu 5:16-21		L
Rom 13:9	Lev 19:18		L
Rom 14:11	Isa 45:23		P
Rom 15:3	Psa 69:9		W
Rom 15:9	Psa 18:49		W
Rom 15:10	Deu 32:43		L
Rom 15:11	Psa 117:1		W
Rom 15:12	Isa 11:1, 10		P
Rom 15:21	Isa 52:15		P

Chiastic structure

A receive (14:1-4)

B mind (14:5-16)

C peace (14:17a)

D edify (14:17b-20)

E weak (14:21)

F faith (14:22-23)

E weak (15:1)

D edify (15:2-3)

C comfort (15:4)

B mind (15:5-6)

A receive (15:7)

Romans 12:1-21 has 41 commandments (31 Do and 10 Do not)

We Worship God

¹ present your bodies a living sacrifice,
² **And be not conformed to this world:**
but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind,
prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.

We Serve Others - with Gifts

³ **not to think of self more highly than they ought to think;**
but to think soberly,
⁶ prophecy, [let us prophesy] according to the proportion of faith;
⁷ ministry, [let us wait] on [our] ministering:
teach, on teaching;
⁸ exhort, on exhortation:
give, [let them do it] with simplicity;
rule, with diligence;
show mercy, with cheerfulness.

We Serve Others – with Righteousness

⁹ **[Let] love be without dissimulation.**
Abhor that which is evil;
cleave to that which is good.
¹⁰ [Be] kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love;
in honor preferring one another;
¹¹ **Not slothful in business;**
fervent in spirit; serving the Lord;
¹² Rejoicing in hope;
patient in tribulation;
continuing instant in prayer;
¹³ Distributing to the necessity of saints;
given to hospitality.
¹⁴ Bless them which persecute you:
bless, and curse not
¹⁵ Rejoice with them that do rejoice,
weep with them that weep.
¹⁶ [Be] of the same mind one toward another.
Mind not high things,
condescend to those of low estate.
Be not wise in your own conceits.

We Serve Others - with Love

¹⁷ **Recompense to no one evil for evil.**
Provide things honest in the sight of all men.
¹⁸ live peaceably with all men.
¹⁹ **avenge not yourselves,**
²⁰ if your enemy hunger, feed them;
if they thirst, give them drink:
²¹ **Be not overcome of evil,**
but overcome evil with good.

Romans 13:1-14 has 28 commandments (14 Do and 14 Do not)

Verses 1-7 WE ARE SERVANTS TO OUR GOVERNMENT

¹ Let every soul be subject to the higher authorities.

² Whosoever therefore resists the authority, resists the ordinance of God:

³ Will you then not be afraid of the authority?

do that which is good,

⁴ But if you do that which is evil, be afraid;

⁷ Render therefore to all their dues:

tax to whom tax [is due];

custom to whom custom;

fear to whom fear;

honor to whom honor.

Verses 8-10. WE ARE SERVANTS TO OUR NEIGHBOR

Owe no man anything,

but to love one another:

⁹ You shall not commit adultery,

You shall not murder,

You shall not steal,

You shall not bear false witness,

You shall not covet;

You shall love your neighbor as thyself.

¹⁰ Love works no evil to his neighbor:

Verses 11-14 WE ARE SERVANTS TO RIGHTEOUSNESS

¹¹ now [it is] high time to awake out of sleep:

¹² cast off the works of darkness,

let us put on the armor of light.

¹³ Let us walk honestly,

not in rioting and drunkenness,

not in chambering and wantonness,

not in strife and envying.

¹⁴ put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ,

make not provision for the flesh,

Romans 14:1-15:7 has 28 commandments (11 Do and 17 Do not)

1-13a: Toleration among believers

- ¹ Him that is weak in the faith receive ye,
[but] not to doubtful disputations.
³ Let not him that eats despise him that eats not;
and let not him which eats not judge him that eats:
⁴ Who are you that judges another man's servant?
- ⁵ Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind.
¹⁰ But why do you judge your brother?
why do you set at nothing your brother?
¹³ Let us not therefore judge one another anymore:

13b-23: Moderation among believers

- but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block
or an occasion to fall in [his] brother's way.
- ¹⁴ to him that esteems anything to be unclean, to him [it is] unclean.
¹⁵ Destroy not him with your meat, for whom Christ died.
¹⁶ Let not then your good be evil spoken of:
- ¹⁹ Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace,
and things wherewith one may edify another.
²⁰ For meat destroy not the work of God.
²¹ [It is] good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor [anything] whereby your brother
stumbles,
or is offended,
or is made weak.
- ²² Have you faith? have [it] to thyself before God.
²³ And he that doubts is condemned if he eat, because [he eats] not of faith: for whatsoever is not
of faith is sin.

Romans Chapter 15

15:1-7 Please others and not self

- ¹ We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak,
and not to please ourselves.
- ² Let everyone of us please [his] neighbor for [his] good to edification.
- ⁴ we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.
- ⁵ be likeminded one toward another according to Christ Jesus:
- ⁶ ye may with one mind [and] one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.
- ⁷ Wherefore receive ye one another,

1 Corinthians (16-50, 1 hr) 2018

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16

12 Marks of a Carnal Christian or Congregation

Purpose: To reprove and correct the saints at Corinth (examining the Corinthians)

Key Words: Divisions and Carnal, don't ye know – 9x, puffed up - 6x

Key Passage: 1 Corinthians 10:1-11:1 Verse 10:13

Carnal Believers:

Scripture

- | | |
|---|-------------|
| 1) Cause division and contentions | 1:10-11 |
| 2) Remain babies in Christ longer than God's will | 3:1-3 |
| 3) Lack right judgment among brethren | 5:12b |
| 4) Lack desire to glorify God in our body | 6:18-20 |
| 5) Need understanding on the marriage relationship | 7:23-24 |
| 6) Cause weaker brethren to sin | 8:11-13 |
| 7) Are lazy to run & win their race | 9:24-25 |
| 8) Are ignorant of how Old Testament truths relate to them | 10:1-5 |
| 9) Tend to grow sick and weakly | 11:29-31 |
| 10) Lack priority in the relation of prophesy, love and spiritual gifts | 12:31, 14:1 |
| 11) Have women that are unruly and bossy in the congregation and home | 14:34 |
| 12) Some teach false doctrine to justify corporate or personal sin | 15:12 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
I Corinthians 7:5	Supplication	Seek God	Marriage relations	Fasting	Husband-wife
I Corinthians 11:3-16	Public prayer in congregation	Teach order of nature to angels (vs 8-10)		Obedience	God-Christ-man- woman order of subjection
I Corinthians 14:13-16	Prayer Thanks Teaching	In a known understood human language	Language unknown to the listeners	Need an interpreter and order	The least gift of the Spirit - to some

Outline I of 1 Corinthians

Background of Corinth: Large seaport and crossroads commercial city with a cosmopolitan population. The hill temple of Aphrodite had hundreds of female slaves for worship.

The Apostle Paul's Known Contacts with the Saints at Corinth							
Founding visit (2 nd missionary trip)	Writes his "former letter"	The Corinthian's 3 visits and letter to Paul	1st Corinthians written (3 rd missionary trip)	Paul's "painful visit" to Corinth	Paul's "severe letter" to Corinth by Titus	2nd Corinthians written	Paul's anticipated visit
Acts 18:1-18 (18 month stay)	1 Cor 5:9	1 Cor 7:1 Chloe	1 Cor 16:8 Acts 19:1-10 (Ephesus 3 yr stay)	2 Cor 2:1, 5-8, 7:12, 12:14, 13:1-2	2 Cor 2:3-4, 7:8-12, 12:18	Acts 19:23?	Acts 20:1-3
51-52 AD	?	?	54-56 AD	54-56 AD	54-56 AD	55-57 AD	?

Contents

1 Cor

1) Introduction	to all saints, "Our Lord Jesus Christ" 9x	1:1-9
2) Paul corrects problems from personal reports		1-6
	Lack of spiritual growth due to pride & divisions	1:10-4:21
	Lack of discipline in male-female relations	5-6 (7)
3) Paul corrects problems in reply to a letter		7-15
	Marriage counseling	7
	Food offered to idols	8:1-11:1
	Order in the congregation	11:2-14
	The resurrection	15
4) Farewell		16

Outline II of 1 Corinthians

1:1-10	Greeting
1-3	foolishness or wisdom (1:18)
4	Corinth pride contrasts Paul's brokenness
5-7	sin in body and spirit
8-11	sin in culture
12-14	sin in worship
15	hope of the resurrection
16	Farewell

LESSON: WE CAN LEARN FROM PAULS EXAMPLE FOR BLESSING AND THE CORINTHIAN BELIEVERS EXAMPLE FOR CURSE WITH THE GOAL TO GROW IN CHRIST

GROWING IN CHRIST: HELP OR HINDRANCE
BLESSING OR BURDEN
STEPPING STONE OR STUMBLING BLOCK

Outline III of 1 Corinthians

Body (soma in Greek) Life

1-4	Body divided (0x)
5-7	Body sins physically (12x)
8-11	Body sins spiritually (6x)
12-14	Body united (23x)
15	Body transformed (10x)
16	Body life (0x)

1 Corinthians Chapter 1

1:1-9 *Introduction: The Lordship of Jesus Christ Proclaimed*

(1) ¹ Paul, called an apostle of **Jesus Christ** through the will of God, and Sosthenes [our] brother, ² To the congregation of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified **in Christ Jesus**, called **saints**, with all that in every place call upon the name of **Jesus Christ our Lord**, both theirs and ours: ³ Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father, and the **Lord Jesus Christ**. ⁴ I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you **by Jesus Christ**; ⁵ That in everything ye are enriched **by him**, in all utterance, and [in] all knowledge; ⁶ Even as the testimony **of Christ** was confirmed in you: ⁷ So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of **our Lord Jesus Christ**: ⁸ Who shall also confirm you to the end, [that ye may be] blameless in the day of **our Lord Jesus Christ**. ⁹ **God is faithful**, by whom ye were called to the fellowship of his Son ^a **Jesus Christ our Lord**.

^a The Lord Jesus Christ is mentioned in every verse or 9x. Consider that the name Jesus is never stated alone in the 14 letters of the Apostle Paul except in the context of his death as the son of God, .i.e. 1 Thes 1:10, 4:14, Hebrews 2:9, 4:14, 6:20, 7:22, 10:19, 12:2, 12:24, 13:12. Peter, John, James, and Jude never mention the name of Jesus alone, except for one portion of Revelation in 14:2, 17:6, 19:10 and 20:4. This introduction is exemplary for all believers at all times.

1:10-16 *Reproof for Divisions among the Saints*

(2) ¹⁰ Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all **speak the same thing, and [that] there be no divisions among you; but [that] ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment**. ¹¹ For it has been declared to me of you, my brethren, by them [which are of the house] of Chloe, that **there are contentions among you**. ¹² Now this I say, that every one of you says, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. ¹³ Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul? ¹⁴ I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; ¹⁵ Unless any should say that I had baptized in my own name. ¹⁶ And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

1:17-30 *The Wisdom of God verses the Wisdom of the World*

(3) ¹⁷ For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect. ¹⁸ **For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but to us which are saved it is the power of God**. ¹⁹ For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. ²⁰ Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? ²¹ For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the **foolishness of preaching to save them that believe**. ²² For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: ²³ But we preach Christ crucified, to the Jews a stumbling block, and to the Greeks foolishness; ²⁴ But to them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. ²⁵ Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. ²⁶ For ye see your calling, brethren, how that **not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, [are called]**: ²⁷ But God has chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God has chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; ²⁸ And base things of the world, and things which are despised, has God chosen, [yea], and things which are not, to bring to nothing things that are: ²⁹ That no flesh should ^a glory in his presence.

(4) ³⁰ But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who is made to us wisdom from God: ^b righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption: ³¹ That, according as it is written, He that ^a glories, let him ^a glory in the Lord.

^a Boast(s)

^b Past salvation from penalty of sin, present sanctification from power of sin and future redemption from presence of sin.

1 Corinthians Chapter 2

2:1-16 *The Wisdom of this World vs the Wisdom of God*

(5) ¹ And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring to you the testimony of God. ² For I determined not to know anything among you, **save ^a Jesus Christ, and him crucified.** ³ And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling. ⁴ And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in **demonstration of the Spirit and of power:** ⁵ That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God. ⁶ Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nothing: ⁷ But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, [even] the hidden [wisdom], which God ordained before the world to our glory: ⁸ Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known [it], they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

^a Jesus Christ, and him crucified reflects on the person and work of Jesus Christ (John 5:36, Luke 9:23, 2 Cor 4:12).

Inspiration

(6) ⁹ But as it is written, Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them that love him. ¹⁰ But God has revealed them to us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, yes, the deep things of God. ¹¹ For what man knows the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knows no man, but the Spirit of God. ¹² Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

Illumination

¹³ Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Ghost teaches; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

Understanding

¹⁴ **But the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit** of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned. ¹⁵ **But he that is spiritual judges all things, yet he himself is judged of no man.** ¹⁶ For ^a who has known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But **we have the mind of Christ.**

^a Isaiah 40:13, Job. We can have intelligence, much information and speaking ability – but missing understanding or wisdom from above.

Notes: Ways outline 1 Corinthians 1-4.

1:1-1:9 Introduction

1:10-4:20 Divisions

The Triune God

Father – 50 times

Son – 24 times

Holy Spirit – 16 times (2:4-3:1 – 14 times)

1 Corinthians	Paul	Apollos	Peter	Christ
1:12	X	X	X	X
3:4-5-6	X	X		
3:22	X	X	X	
4:6	X	X		
16:12		X		

1 Corinthians Chapter 3

3:1-5 **The Character of Carnal Christians** (Romans 7:14)

(7) ¹ And **I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual, but as to carnal, [even] as to babes in Christ.** ² I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for thus far ye were not able [to bear it], neither yet now are ye able. ³ For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? ⁴ For while one says, I am of Paul; and another, I [am] of Apollos; are ye not ^a carnal? ⁵ Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

^a fleshly, after the manner of man.

3:6-15 **Rewards for a Wise Master Builder**

(8) ⁶ I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. ⁷ So then neither is he that plants anything, neither he that waters; but ^a God that gives the increase. ⁸ Now he that plants and he that waters are one: and **every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labor.** ⁹ For we are laborers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, [ye are] God's building. ¹⁰ According to the grace of God which is given to me, as a wise master builder, I have laid the foundation, and another builds thereon. But let every man take heed how he builds thereupon. ¹¹ For no man can lay another foundation, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. ¹² **Now if any ^b man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;** ¹³ **Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.** ¹⁴ **If any man's work abide which he has built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.** ¹⁵ **If any man's work shall be burned, he shall allow loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as through fire.**

^a John 15:5, I am the vine and ye are the branches

^b any man refers to teachers, 1 Cor 4:15, James 3:1, Hebrews 5, 2 Timothy 1:11.

3:16-23 **Our Precious Position in Christ**

(9) ¹⁶ ^a **Don't ye know** that ye are the temple of God, and [that] the Spirit of God dwells in you? ¹⁷ If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which [temple] ye are. ¹⁸ Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seems to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. ¹⁹ For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He takes the wise in their own craftiness. ²⁰ And again, The Lord knows the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. ²¹ Therefore let no man glory in men. **For all things are yours;** ²² Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; **all are yours;** ²³ **And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.**

^a Paul uses this correctional phrase 13x; 9x in 1 Corinthians 3:16; 5:6; 6:3,9, 15-16; 9:24; 2 Cor 13:5; 3x in Romans 6:3, 17; 7:1 and 1x in James 4:4

1 Corinthians Chapter 4

The Extreme Contrast between Spiritual Paul and the Carnal Brethren at Corinth

4:1-7 *Who Judges Who?*

(10) ¹ Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. ² **Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.** ³ But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment: yes, I judge not my own self. ⁴ For I know nothing by myself; yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judges me is the Lord. ⁵ Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and ^a then shall every man have praise of God. ⁶ And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and [to] Apollos for your sakes; that ye might **learn in us not to think [of men] above that which is written**, that no one of you be **puffed up for one against another.** ⁷ For who makes you to differ [from another]? and ^b what have you that you did not receive? now if you did receive [it], why do you boast, as if you had not received [it]?

^a Praise as given from a just God, according to our works and that which is written (the Bible).

^b Gifts or abilities that God gives each one according to His will. 1 Cor 1:7, James 1:17.

4:8-13 *Difficult Times for the Imitators of Christ*

(11) ⁸ ^a Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you. ⁹ For I think that God has set forth **us the apostles last**, as it were appointed to death: for we are made **a spectacle** to the world, and to angels, and to men. ¹⁰ We are **fools** for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are **weak**, but ye are strong; ye are honorable, but we are **despised**. ¹¹ Even to this present hour we both **hunger**, and **thirst**, and are **naked**, and are **buffeted**, and have **no certain dwelling place**; ¹² And labor, working with our own hands: **being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we allow it:** ¹³ **Being defamed, we entreat:** we are made as the **filth** of the world, [and are] the ^b **off scouring** of all things to this day.

^a Verses 8-13 shows the contrast of the spiritual and carnal people of God. This reminds me of the relationship of Jeremiah with God's people.

^b Off scouring – something brushed all around.

4:14-17 *Imitate Me and My Ways, which are in Christ*

(12) ¹⁴ I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn [you]. ¹⁵ For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet [have ye] not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus ^a I have begotten you through the gospel. ¹⁶ Wherefore I beseech you, **be ye ^b imitators of me.** ¹⁷ For this cause I have sent to you Timothy, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, **who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ**, as I teach everywhere in every congregation.

^a Paul led the Corinthians to repent and believe in Christ during his 18 months at Corinth, the founder of this new congregation of believers. He was their spiritual father; however, after he departed many teachers taught error.

^b Followers ^{KJV}

4:18-21 *We Have a Choice*

¹⁸ Now some are ^a **puffed up**, as though I would not come to you. ¹⁹ But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are **puffed up**, but the power. ²⁰ **For the kingdom of God is not in word, but in power.** ²¹ **What will ye? shall I come to you with a rod, or in love, and [in] the spirit of meekness?**

^a Puffed up (prideful) is used 6 times in the New Testament: 1 Cor 4:6, 18-19, 5:2, 13:4 and Colossians 2:18.

1 Corinthians Chapter 5

5:1-6a ***Judgment of a Gross Sin among the Congregation***

(13) ¹ It is reported commonly [that there is] fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. ² And **ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that has done this deed might be taken away from among you.** ³ For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, [concerning] him that has so done this deed, ⁴ In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁵ To deliver such an one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. ⁶ Your boasting is not good.

5:6b-8 ***An Old Testament Illustration of the Effect of Sin (leaven)***

Don't ye know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump? ⁷ **Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened.** For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: ⁸ Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened [bread] of sincerity and truth.

5:9-13 ***Compared to Equal Type of Sins for Cause of Dealing with and Separation***

⁹ I wrote to you in an letter not to company with fornicators: ¹⁰ Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world. ¹¹ But now I have written to you not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat. ¹² For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? ¹³ But them that are outside God judges. Therefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person.

1 Corinthians Chapter 6

6:1-8 ***Saints Must Judge Rightly Now to Prepare for the Future***

(14) ¹ Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the ^a unjust, and not before the saints? ² **Do ye not know** that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? ³ **Don't ye know** that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life? ⁴ If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the congregation. ⁵ **I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you? no, not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?** ⁶ But brother goes to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers. ⁷ Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. **Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather [allow yourselves to] be defrauded?** ⁸ No, ye do wrong, and defraud, and that [your] brethren.

^a Unrighteous, not being made right in Christ for salvation.

^b **Laws of Judgment among the Saints – within the congregation**

1 Corinthians 1-4 Divisions that are doctrinal and internal witness. Ministries should be complimentary, not competing.

1 Corinthians 5-7, 8-11 Divisions that are moral and external witness.

1 Corinthians 12-16 congregation body life.

Using Strong's Greek Dictionary and the Greek Majority Text: Vs 1

5111. tolmao *tol-mah'-o* 15x from tolma (boldness; the idea of extreme conduct); to venture (objectively or in act) by implication, to be courageous:--be bold, boldly, dare. 2 Corinthians 10:12 For we dare <tolmao> not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise.

1 Corinthians Chapter 6

4229. Pragma *prag'-mah* 11x from 4238; a deed:--business, matter, thing, work.

James 3:16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work <pragma>.

I John 3:18 Love one not in word, but in deed and truth. Ergon = deed (ergo – to work).

40. Hagios *hagios hag'-ee-os* 219x from hagos (an awful thing); sacred (physically, pure, morally blameless or religious, ceremonially, consecrated):--(most) **holy** (one, thing), saint. **Holy** Spirit, **holy** prophets, **holy** angel, **holy** Scriptures, **holy** place, **holy** kiss, law is **holy** (Romans 7:12), **saints**. Acts 7:33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off your shoes from your feet: for the place where you stand is **holy** <hagios> ground.

1) Matthew 18:15-17 Moreover if your brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained your brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto **the congregation**: but if he neglect to hear **the congregation**, let him be unto thee as a **heathen man** and a **publican**.

2) James 1:5-8 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that gives to all men liberally, and upbraids not; and it shall be given him. But let him **ask in faith**, nothing wavering. For he that wavers is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.

3) James 3:13-18 **Who is a wise man** and endued with knowledge among you? let him show out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom. But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

4) Luke 17:3-5 Take heed to yourselves: If your brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. And if he trespass against you seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; you shall forgive him. And the apostles said unto the Lord, **Increase our faith**.

Notes: Sermon on the mount, Matthew chapters 5-7, is contrast between old and new testaments, not of matters among the saints. "Therefore if thou bring your gift to the altar, and there remembers that your brother hath ought against thee; Leave there your gift before the altar, and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. 7:1-6 Judge not, mote, speck own eye. Cast not pearl before swine."

Personal judgment of self and other believers in this time of abundant grace brings eternal benefit. Judgments of Adam and Christ, by water and fire, of the Jews and Gentiles, of God and Christ are not in our control.

6:9-11 **Divine Inheritance Math** ($5 + 5 = 10$, $10 - 3 = 7$)

⁹ **Don't ye know** that the unrighteous shall not inherit the **kingdom of God**? Be not deceived: neither ^b fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, ^c nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with men, ¹⁰ Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the **kingdom of God**. ¹¹ And such were some of you: but **ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God**.

^b Pornos in Greek.

^c Nor abusers of themselves with women.

6:12-20 **The Body is for the Lord and the Lord for the Body**

(15) ¹² All things are lawful to me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but **I will not be brought under the power of any**. ¹³ Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. ¹⁴ And God has both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power. ¹⁵ **Don't ye know that your bodies are the members of Christ?** Shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of a harlot? **God forbid**. ¹⁶ What? **don't ye know** that he which is joined to a harlot is one body? for two, says he, shall be one flesh. ¹⁷ But he that is joined to the Lord is one spirit. ¹⁸ ^a **Flee fornication**. Every sin that a man does is outside the body; but he that commits fornication sins against his own body. ¹⁹ What? ^b **don't ye know** that **your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost**

1 Corinthians Chapter 6

[which is] in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? ²⁰ For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

^a As Joseph did with Potiphar's wife. As Job determined to do in his youth (Job 31:1). As pure as the love Isaac has for Rachael, a type of Christ and the. As young King Solomon had for the Shulamite woman in Song of Songs. As the Lord Jesus and Apostle Paul exemplified. As true believers must do to grow in Christ and not become carnal as the Corinthians, which includes the lust of the eye (Matthew 5:27-32).

^b Don't ye know is used 6 times for correction of carnal believers: chapter 6:2,3,9,15,16,19. 4 times in reference to now and 2 times looking to the future. This same term is used for exhortation of growing believers in Romans 6-7. This ignorance is different than when Jesus rebukes his disciples in Luke 9:55 "Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of" which was typical of before they received the Holy Spirit in Acts chapter 2. Now they know because they have been spiritually born and have an inheritance with God positionally, but are not living for Christ with their body or spirit. They are carnal believers.

Note: Temple in 6:19 is a specific temple, Greek "naos" used 46x. The same word temple also refers to a sacred place, like the temple mount where the temple resides, Greek "hieron" used 67x, Matthew 4:5.

1 Corinthians Chapter 7

Marriage Counseling Chapter

7:1-5 *Singles Deciding to Marry or Not*

(16) ¹ Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote to me: **[It is] good for a man not to touch a woman.** ² Nevertheless, [to avoid] fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband. ³ Let the husband render to the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife to the husband. ⁴ The wife has not authority of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband has not authority of his own body, but the wife. ⁵ Defraud ye not one the other, except [it be] with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to ^a fasting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

^a Fasting is omitted in the New International Version, New American Standard Bible, and American Standard Bible.

7:6-9 *Advice to Men on Whether to Marry*

⁶ **But I speak this by permission, [and] not of commandment.** ⁷ For I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man has his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that. ⁸ I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I. ⁹ But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

7:10-24 *Standards to Stay Married or Divorce (the effect on children and 2 illustrations)*

(17) ¹⁰ **And to the married I command, [yet] not I, but the Lord,** Let not the wife depart from [her] husband: ¹¹ But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to [her] husband: and let not the husband put away [his] wife. ¹² But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother has a wife that believes not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. ¹³ And the woman which has a husband that believes not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. ¹⁴ For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: ^a else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. ¹⁵ But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such [cases]: but God has called us to peace. ¹⁶ For what do you know, O wife, whether you shall save [your] husband? or know how you, O man, whether you shall save [your] wife?

^a The children are holy thru the saved parent.

1 Corinthians Chapter 7

(18) ¹⁷ But as God has distributed to every man, as the Lord has called everyone, so let him walk. And so ordain I in all churches. ¹⁸ Is any man called being **circumcised**? let him not become **uncircumcised**. Is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised. ¹⁹ Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God. ²⁰ Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called. ²¹ Are you called [being] a **servant**? care not for it: but if you may be made **free**, use [it] rather. ²² For he that is called in the Lord, [being] a servant, is the Lord's freeman: likewise also he that is called, [being] free, is Christ's servant. ²³ **Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the servants of men.** ²⁴ **Brethren, let every man, wherein he is ^a called, therein abide with God.**

^a At the moment of salvation and forward until the day of redemption.

7:25-38 *Advice to Virgins and Whether to Marry (to believing wives, 10-11)*

(19) ²⁵ **Now concerning virgins I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgment, as one that has obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.** ²⁶ I suppose therefore that this is good for the present distress, [I say], that [it is] good for a man so to be. ²⁷ Are you bound to a wife? seek not to be loosed. Are you loosed from a wife? seek not a wife. ²⁸ But and if you marry, you have not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she has not sinned. Nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you. ²⁹ But this I say, brethren, the time is short: it remains, that both they that have wives be as though they had none; ³⁰ And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not; ³¹ And they that use this world, as not abusing [it]: for the fashion of this world passes away. ³² But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried cares for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: ³³ But he that is married cares for the things that are of the world, how he may please [his] wife. ³⁴ There is difference [also] between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman cares for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married cares for the things of the world, how she may please [her] husband. ³⁵ And this I speak for your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

(20) ³⁶ But if any man think that he behaves himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the flower of [her] age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sins not: let them marry. ³⁷ Nevertheless he that stands steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but has authority over his own will, and has so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, does well. ³⁸ So then he that gives [her] in marriage does well; but he that gives [her] not in marriage does better.

7:39-40 *Advice on Death of Husband and Remarriage*

³⁹ The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband lives; but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord. ⁴⁰ But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment: and I think also that I have the Spirit of God.

1 Corinthians Chapter 8 Concerning Food Offered to Idols (8-10)

8:1-13 *Don't do things to Cause Your Weaker Brother to Sin*

(21) ¹ Now as concerning things offered to idols, **we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffs up, but charity edifies.** ² And if any man think that he knows anything, he knows nothing yet as he ought to know. ³ **But if any ^a man love God, the same is known of him.** ⁴ As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice to idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one. ⁵ For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,) ⁶ But to us [there is but] one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by him. ⁷ Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol to this hour eat [it] as a thing offered to an idol; and their conscience being weak is defiled. ⁸ But meat

1 Corinthians Chapter 8

commends us not to God: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worse. ⁹ But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling block to them that are weak. ¹⁰ For if any man see you which has knowledge sit at meat in the idol's temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols; ¹¹ And through your knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died? ¹² **But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.** ¹³ Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world stands, lest I make my brother to offend.

^a Barnabas, Paul's father in the faith was known in this way.

1 Corinthians Chapter 9

9:1-23 *Paul Minister's Freely to Win More to Christ & Not Harm His Testimony*

(22) ¹ Am I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord? ² If I be not an apostle to others, yet doubtless I am to you: for the seal of my apostleship are ye in the Lord. ³ My answer to them that do examine me is this, ⁴ Have we not authority to eat and to drink? ⁵ Have we not authority to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and [as] the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas? ⁶ Or I only and Barnabas, have not we authority to forbear working? ⁷ Who goes a warfare any time at his own charges? who plants a vineyard, and eats not of the fruit thereof? or who feeds a flock, and eats not of the milk of the flock? ⁸ Say I these things as a man? or says not the law the same also? ⁹ For it is written in the law of Moses, You shall not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treads out the corn. Does God take care for oxen? ¹⁰ Or says he [it] altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, [this] is written: that he that plows should plow in hope; and that he that threshes in hope should be partaker of his hope. ¹¹ If we have sown to you spiritual things, [is it] a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things? ¹² If others be partakers of [this] authority over you, are not we rather? **Nevertheless we have not used this authority;** but allow all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ. ¹³ Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live [of the things] of the temple? and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar? ¹⁴ Even so has the Lord ordained that they which preach the gospel should live of the gospel.

(23) ¹⁵ But I have used none of these things: neither have I written these things, that it should be so done to me: for [it were] better for me to die, than that any man should make my boasting void. ¹⁶ For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to boast of: for necessity is laid upon me; yes, woe is to me, if I preach not the gospel! ¹⁷ **For if I practice this thing willingly, I have a reward:** but if against my will, a dispensation [of the gospel] is committed to me. ¹⁸ What is my reward then? [Verily] that, **when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.** ¹⁹ **For though I be free from all [men], yet I have made myself servant to all, that I might gain the more.**

²⁰ And to the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law; ²¹ To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that I might gain them that are without law. ²² To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all [men], that I might by all means save some. ²³ And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I might be partaker thereof with [you].

9:24-27 *Running the Race we all can Win, or be a Castaway*

(24) ²⁴ **Don't ye know** that they which run in a race run all, but one receives the prize? **So run, that ye may obtain.** ²⁵ And every man that strives for the mastery is temperate in all things. Now they [do it] to obtain a corruptible **crown;** but **we an incorruptible.** ²⁶ I therefore so run, not as uncertainly; so fight I, not as one that beats the air: ²⁷ But I keep under my body, and bring [it] into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.

10:1-13 Israel is blessed in Moses (1-4) and cursed with falling to temptation (5-13)

(25) ¹ Moreover, **brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant**, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; ² And were all baptized to Moses in the cloud and in the sea; ³ And did all eat the same spiritual meat; ⁴ And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. ⁵ But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. ⁶ Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. ⁷ Neither be ye idolaters, as [were] some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. ⁸ Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. ⁹ Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. ¹⁰ Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. ¹¹ **Now all these things happened to them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.** ¹² Wherefore let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall. ¹³ **There has no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear [it].**

Note: First – Idolatry sin 10:7 (Ex 32:1-6), Second – Sexual sin 10:8 (Nu 25), Third – Tempt Christ 10:9 (Nu 21:4-9), Fourth – Speak against God’s appointed 10:10 (Nu 16:41) Temptation defined: a test where we can have victory or defeat (trials are from God - include tests, but tests are from the devil, the world, and self). Obstacles in the New Testament: First – pre-Pentecost Peter before Acts 2, second - Romans 7:, third – Old Testament examples like King David.

10:14-22 Mixing Christ with Devils: Wisdom in the Lord’s Supper (14-17) and Idolatry (18-22)

(26) ¹⁴ Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. ¹⁵ I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. ¹⁶ The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? ¹⁷ For we [being] many are one bread, [and] one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread. ¹⁸ Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? ¹⁹ What say I then? that the idol is anything, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is anything? ²⁰ But I [say], that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with demons. ²¹ **Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of demons: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord’s table, and of the table of demons.** ²² Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he?

Note: 10:22 - Do Not Tempt the Lord Jesus Christ.

10:23-11:1 A Pure Conscience: My Liberty in Relationships (23) & Another’s Conscience (24-33)

(27) ²³ All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not. ²⁴ Let no man seek his own, but every man another’s [wealth]. ²⁵ Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, [that] eat, asking no question for conscience sake: ²⁶ For the earth is the Lord’s, and the fullness thereof. ²⁷ **If any of them that believe not bid you [to a feast], and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.** ²⁸ But if any man say to you, This is offered in sacrifice to idols, eat not for his sake that showed it, and for conscience sake: for the earth is the Lord’s, and the fullness thereof: ²⁹ Conscience, I say, not your own, but of the other: for why is my liberty judged of another [man’s] conscience? ³⁰ For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? ³¹ **Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.** ³² Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the congregation of God: ³³ Even as I please all [men] in all [things], not seeking my own profit, but the [profit] of many, that they may be saved.

¹ Be ye imitators of me, even as I also [am] of Christ.

Note: Paul describes how to be victorious in temptation as sandwiched between 1 Cor 9:24-27 and 11:1.

1 Corinthians Chapter 11

11:2-10 **Vertical - Spiritual Authority & Order of God - Christ – Man – Woman** (angel witnesses)

(28) ² Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ^a traditions, as I delivered them to you. ³ But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God. ⁴ Every man praying or prophesying, having [his] head covered, dishonors his head. ⁵ But every woman that prays or prophesies with [her] head uncovered dishonors her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven. ⁶ For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered. ⁷ For a man indeed ought not to cover [his] head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. ⁸ For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. ⁹ Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man. ¹⁰ For this cause ought the woman to have authority on [her] head because of the angels. ¹¹ Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord. ¹² For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God. ¹³ Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray to God uncovered? ¹⁴ Does not even nature itself teach you, that, ^a if a man have long hair, it is a shame to him? ¹⁵ But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for [her] hair is given her for a covering. ¹⁶ **But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God.**

^a Here it means native sense of propriety (Ro 2:14) in addition to mere custom, but one that rests on the objective difference in the constitution of things. In the time of Homer, also, the Greeks were called by him, long-haired Greeks; and some of the Asiatic nations adopted the same custom. But the general habit among men has been different. Among the Hebrews, it was regarded as disgraceful to a man to wear his hair long, except he had a vow as a Nazarite (Nu 6:1-6; Jg 13:6; 16:17; 1Sa 1:11). Occasionally, for affectation or singularity, the hair was suffered to grow, as was the case with Absalom, (2Sa 14:26) but the traditional law of the Jews on the subject was strict. The same rule existed among the Greeks; and it was regarded as disgraceful to wear long hair. We must care for our time and culture, however not to be contentious.

Order When the Saints Come Together

(29) ¹⁷ Now in this that I declare [to you] I praise [you] not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worse. ¹⁸ For first of all, when ye come together in the congregation, I hear that there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it. ¹⁹ For there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.

^a Ordinances KJV. Always translated tradition, except in this verse.

Note: Consider context of Cause 11:2-19 and Effect 11:20-34, therefore chapters 12-14.

Instruction & Correction Concerning the Lord's Supper

²⁰ When ye come together therefore into one place, [this] is not to eat the Lord's supper. ²¹ For in eating everyone takes before [other] his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken. ²² What? have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the congregation of God, and shame them that have not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise [you] not. ²³ For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered to you, That the Lord Jesus the [same] night in which he was betrayed took bread: ²⁴ And when he had given thanks, he brake [it], and said, Take, eat: this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. ²⁵ After the same manner also [he took] the cup, when he had supped, saying, **This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink [it], in remembrance of me.** ²⁶ For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death until he come. ²⁷ Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink [this] cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. ²⁸ But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of [that] bread, and drink of [that] cup. ²⁹ For he that eats and drinks unworthily, eats and drinks damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. ³⁰ For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. ³¹ **For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.** ³² But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world. ³³ Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another. ³⁴ And if any man hunger, let him eat at home; that ye come not together to condemnation. And **the rest will I set in order when I come.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 12

Horizontal - A Call for Unity of Believers in the Midst of Pride, Sin and Division

(30) ^{1 a} Now concerning spiritual [gifts], **brethren, I would not have you ignorant.** ² Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away to these dumb idols, even as ye were led. ³ Wherefore I give you to **understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calls Jesus accursed:** and [that] no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. ⁴ Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same ^c Spirit. ⁵ And there are differences of administrations, but the same ^d Lord. ⁶ And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same ^e God which works all in all.

^{7 f} **But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.**

1. ⁸ For to one is given by the Spirit the **word of wisdom**;
2. to another the **word of knowledge** by the same Spirit;
3. ⁹ To another **faith** by the same Spirit;
4. to another the **gifts of healing** by the same Spirit;
5. ¹⁰ To another the **working of miracles**;
6. to another **prophecy**;
7. to another **discerning of spirits**;
8. to another ⁹ **diverse kinds of languages**;

^a Later in Biblical history, gifts are written about with no reference to languages. The languages cease in Romans 12:3-8, Ephesians 4:7-16, and 1 Peter 4:7-11. 1 Corinthians was wrote during Paul's 2nd missionary journey.

^b No Scripture teaches us to give up control of our minds and speak words we do not understand. Rather, we see what can happen if we speak what we do not understand. An interesting note is that 1 Corinthians chapters 12 to 14 begin and end addressing the ignorance of the congregation at Corinth as related to the gifts of languages and speaks of languages which is the least of gifts more than all the other gifts, why? Because of the ignorance of the congregation at Corinth (1 Corinthians 12:1 and 14:38). We can apply this to the church and languages speaking today.

Note: A comparison between the Old and New Testaments helps us realize how **important it is to understand with our mind.** The Old Testament says we are to love God "with all our heart, and with all our soul, and with all our might" (Deuteronomy 6:5). The New Testament says to love God with all our heart, all our soul, all our MIND, and all our strength (Mark 12:30, Luke 10:27). Our mind has a more significant role today. "LET this mind be in you which was also in Christ" (Philippians 2:5-11), "be transformed by the renewing of your mind" (Romans 12:1-2), and, "I press toward the call of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus, ... if you be otherwise minded God shall reveal this to you" (Philippians 3:14-15). This is a fundamental truth contrary to the teaching and process of languages as a personal prayer language. To speak in tongues you must not think - just let it come out. **Now get this: If you can't express yourself to God in known-understood, then we have the Holy Spirit.** "Likewise the Spirit also helps us in our weaknesses: For we do not know what we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. Now He who searches the hearts knows what the mind of the Spirit is, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God" (Romans 8:26-27). Praying in the Spirit is also exhorted in Ephesians 6:18 and Jude 20.

^c Holy Spirit

^d Son, Jesus Christ

^e Father

^f **Never for self-edification.** If the Apostle Paul spoke to them in languages it shall not profit the congregation, except there be an interpreter (1 Corinthians 14:5, 14:12, 14:17, 14:26 and 1 Peter 4:10).

Note: The congregation at Corinth is already "**puffed up**" (1 Corinthians 4:6, 18-19, 5:2, 8:1-2, 13:4, Colossians 2:18). To interpret that God gives a **gift to edify or "puff up" ourselves** does not align and is contrary with the basic principles of Christian growth. "**Puff up**" in Greek is translated "bellows", to blow up or **inflate one self, high-minded, pride, arrogant.** The opposite of puff up is "**edify**" that is translated, "the act of building a home" **build up others,** the Body of Christ. We are lively stones, built up a spiritual house (1 Peter 2:5).

⁹ 1 Corinthians 12:10-11, 28-30. **Languages is a gift to some and the least of gifts.** It is always at the end of the list. 1 Corinthians chapter 12 speaks of the gift of languages, a known-understood-foreign language with specific procedures. 1 Corinthians 14 speaks of the true and the counterfeit gift of languages. **Languages is clearly not a gift for all.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 12

11:11-20 **A Sovereign God Gives the Body of Christ the Spirit for Oneness**

(31) ¹¹ But all these works that one and **the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.** ¹² For as the body is one, and has many members, and all the members of that one body, **being many, are one body: so also is Christ.** ¹³ For **by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body,** whether [we be] Jews or Gentiles, whether [we be] slave or free; and **have been all made to drink into one Spirit.** ¹⁴ For the body is not one member, but many. ¹⁵ If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? ¹⁶ And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? ¹⁷ If the whole body [were] an eye, where [were] the hearing? If the whole [were] hearing, where [were] the smelling? ¹⁸ But now has **God set the members every one of them in the body, as it has pleased him.** ¹⁹ And if they were all one member, where [were] the body? ²⁰ But now [are they] many members, yet but one body.

11:21-27 **What the Body of Christ Must Do to Obey God**

²¹ And the eye cannot say to the hand, I have no need of you: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. ²² No, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary: ²³ And those [members] of the body, which we think to be less honorable, upon these we bestow more abundant honor; and our uncomely [parts] have more abundant comeliness. ²⁴ For our comely [parts] have no need: but **God has tempered the body together,** having given more abundant honor to that [part] which lacked: ²⁵ That there should be no schism in the body; but [that] the members should have the same care one for another. ²⁶ And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honored, all the members rejoice with it. ²⁷ **Now ye are the body of Christ,** and members in particular.

	<u>Individuals</u>		<u>Love & Hate</u>		<u>Body Life</u>
15-17	Foot-hand Ear-eye Eye-hearing Hearing-smelling	22-26	more feeble – are necessary less honorable – more abundant honor uncomely – more abundant comeliness more abundant honor - lacked	24	God has tempered the body together
				25	No schism in the body Same care for one another
				26	One member suffers, All the members suffer with it
21	Eye-hand Head- foot	21	I have no need of you I have no need for you		

John 13:34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. ³⁵ By this shall all [men] know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another. Romans 13:8, 14.

Summary: **What** is the solution to the problems of division, pride, and sin in chapters 1-11? 1 Corinthians 12:11-27 because we are one Spirit we are one body with many members. **How** to be one body is answered in chapter 13, as individuals loving one another, and chapter 14, How to be one in the ekklesia. Chapter 15, **Why** we must strive to be one as the ekklesia, because of our future resurrection.

Key words: one 13x: body10X/Spirit 3x body 18x, members & parts 22x, Inbetween 12:1-10 & 28-30 one 0x, body-0x, members & parts – 0x Chapter 12:1-10 and 28-31a cause division because gifts differ in Romans 12:3-8, Eph 4:7-16, and 1 Peter 4:7-11, and we lose sight of the sovereignty of God as clear in 12:11b, 12b, 18, 24, and 27.

12:28-31 **One of Four Lists of Gifts to Different Local Churches**

(32) ²⁸ And God has set some in the congregation, first apostle, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of languages. ²⁹ [Are] all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? ³⁰ Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with languages? do all interpret? ³¹ But covet earnestly the best gifts: and **yet show I to you a more excellent way.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 13

A More Excellent Way for Individuals and the Body of Christ

13:1-3 **Meaningless Love - If I do all these Good Things without Love, it Profits Me Nothing**
(what love is not)

(33) ¹ Though **I** speak with the language of men and of angels, and have not charity, **I** am become [as] sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. ² And though **I** have [the gift of] prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though **I** have all faith, so that **I** could remove mountains, and have not charity, **I** am nothing. ³ And though **I** bestow all my goods to feed [the poor], and though **I** give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profits **me** nothing.

13:4-7 **Meaningful Love - Fifteen Supernatural Qualities of Love**
(what love is)

(34) ⁴ Charity has long patience, [and] is kind; charity envies not; charity boasts not itself, is not proud, ⁵ Does not behave inappropriately, seeks not her own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; ⁶ Rejoices not in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; ⁷ Suffers all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

13:8-13 **Meanwhile Love - is More Consistent and Complete as We Mature in Christ**
(how love grows)

(35) ⁸ Charity never fails: but whether [there be] prophecies, they shall fail; whether [there be] languages, they shall cease; whether [there be] knowledge, it shall vanish away. ⁹ For **we** know in part, and **we** prophesy in part.

¹⁰ But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. ¹¹ When **I** was a child, **I** spoke as a child, **I** understood as a child, **I** thought as a child: but when **I** became a man, **I** put away childish things. ¹² For now **we** see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now **I** know in part; but then shall **I** know even as also **I** am known. ¹³ And now abides faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

Q1 – What does the gift of speaking in different languages (tongues) have to do with love? (1 Corinthians 13:31-13:1)

A – The Apostle Paul opens this chapter or change of theme addressing the least of the gifts - languages. Apparently, he is persuading them to correct an error in their beliefs. "Though I speak with the languages of angels, and have not love." The languages of angels is clearly not a personal prayer language. Here are a few times angels were used to speak the will of God (Genesis 16:9, 22:11, 31:11, Numbers 22:35, Judges 2:4, 6:12, 13:3, 1 Kings 13:18, II Kings 1:3, Zechariah 1:12-14, Matthew 1:20, 28:5, Luke 1:13, Acts 5:19, 12:7, Revelations 1:1, 22:6). **Angels always spoke in a clear, understandable, perfect language.**

Note: Our speech has limitations and our words need improvement. This is evidenced by the Apostle Paul when he requested the saints pray so that "utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make known the mystery of the gospel" (Ephesians 6:19). King Solomon, the most wise person on earth, "sought to find out acceptable words: and that which was written was upright, even words of truth" (Ecclesiastes 12:10). We must desire to speak as Ezra "caused the people to understand ... as he read distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading" (Nehemiah 8:1-12). Here in Nehemiah we see the cause (understanding the Scriptures) and effect (repentance and obedience to the Scriptures) of a true Biblical revival. There is nothing more precious than to speak the truth clearly and boldly so others understand with life-changing effects.

1 Corinthians Chapter 13

Q2 – What are the traits of love? (1 Corinthians 13:4-7)

A2 – Love has all the following 15 traits:

- 1 has long patience,
- 2 is kind;
- 3 envies not;
- 4 boasts not itself,
- 5 is not proud,
- 6 Does not behave inappropriately,
- 7 seeks not her own,
- 8 is not provoked,
- 9 thinks no evil;
- 10 Rejoices not in iniquity,
- 11 rejoices in the truth;
- 12 Suffers all things,
- 13 believes all things,
- 14 hopes all things,
- 15 endures all things.

Q3 - Why must love contain all 15 traits? (1 Corinthians 13:4-7)

A3 – The Biblical principle of love is altogether perfect (Song of Songs 5:16). God’s love is revealed the same way when Paul exhorts believers to practice the fruit (singular-all are one) of the Spirit contrasted with the works (plural is any one of the works) of the flesh in Galatians 5:19-25.

Q4 – Why do some versions omit the word “easily”? (1 Corinthians 3:5)

A4 - Easily is not in the original Greek text nor in context. Properly translated in Young’s Literal Translation, World English Bible, American Standard, and Spanish Reina Valera.

Q5 – Why does the translator use “her” when they could of used “his” or “its”? (1 Corinthians 13:5)

A5 – Because they were comparing “her” to the female trait of wisdom in Proverbs and Luke 7:35. 1 Corinthians 13 gives us wisdom about love.

Q6 – What are the 3 periods of time in this passage? (1 Corinthians 13:8-12)

A6 – The past is verses 8-9. The present is verses 10-12a. The future is verse 12b.

Q7 – What is perfect? (1 Corinthians 13:10a)

A7 – That which is perfect or mature is personal spiritual maturity (2 Corinthians 3:18). The 2 other interpretations do not fit the context: the Bible is completed and the eternal perfection when we go to be with our Lord Jesus Christ.

Q8 – What is partial? (1 Corinthians 13:10b)

A8 – Prophecies and knowledge shall vanish (slowly fade away) and languages shall cease (stop abruptly). From the accounts of the early Church Fathers, there is no evidence of the continuation of the sign of languages. Israel was judged when the city of Jerusalem was destroyed by the Gentile Roman Empire in 70 AD, therefore the gift of languages was no longer necessary as a sign of judgment and ceased. **Validation of this purpose for languages is clear in 1 Corinthians 14:21-22.**

Q9 – What is the relationship of faith, hope, and love? (1 Corinthians 13:13)

A9 – Faith and hope are in divine order and inferior to love.

Q10 – Why is the word gifts omitted? (1 Corinthians 14:1a)

A10 – Gifts is not in the original Greek text, therefore in brackets. Omit the word gift to fit the context. Paul is teaching us on spiritual living, not gifts.

Q11 – Why is prophesy replaced with speak with inspiration? (1 Corinthians 14:1b)

A11 – Substitute the word and idea of prophecy with “speak under inspiration” in the context and time of the early congregation in 1 Corinthians. This is for all believers as specified in Acts 1:8.

Application: I must stir my mind and others mind of the great truths of the love of God, the love of Jesus, and the love of the Holy Spirit, which are all supernatural and not of this world. I must understand love in my mind so I can better apply love from my heart by faith with wisdom from above.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us understand and practice love as Jesus Christ gave the best example and Paul teaches us in Philippians 3:12 “Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.”

14:1-5 It is Best to Prophesy the Gospel so all May Understand

(36) ¹ Follow after charity, and desire spiritual, but rather that ye may prophecy. (speak with inspiration)
² For he that speaks in an [foreign] language speaks not to men, but to God: for **nobody understands; howbeit in the spirit he speaks mysteries.** ³ But he that prophesies speaks to men [to] edification, and exhortation, and comfort. ⁴ He that speaks in an [foreign] language edifies himself; but he that prophesies edifies the congregation. ⁵ I would that ye all spoke with [foreign] languages, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesies than he that speaks with [foreign] languages, except he interpret, that the congregation may receive edifying.

Application: I will speak the truth with inspiration as I deny self and take up my cross daily to follow Christ (Luke 9:23).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us speak the truth of the Bible with inspiration.

Q1 - Why the detailed instruction on languages to the Corinthians in chapter 14?

A1 - 1 Corinthians 14:2-17 demonstrates that **UNDERSTANDING OF WHAT IS SPOKEN IS CRITICAL FOR GENUINE LANGUAGES.** The Corinthians are corrected for the manner they spoke in languages as follows: "no man understands ... speaking mysteries" (vs 2), "they edify themselves" (vs 4), they speak "as a trumpet with an uncertain sound" (vs 8), "speaking as a barbarian" (vs 11), "speaking into the air" (vs 12), "can't bless or say amen due to lack of understanding" (vs16), "be not children in understanding" (vs 20), and "visitors or unbelievers will say you are crazy" (vs 23). In other words, the languages speakers will be mocked as those "drunk with new wine" in Acts 2:13. The same results whether true or counterfeit languages are spoken and **nobody understands - they will mock you, think you are crazy or drunk. They are Biblically correct.** 1 Corinthians chapter 14 speaks of the true gift of languages and the counterfeit "gift" of languages.

A2 - The Corinthians were speaking true (known-understood-foreign language) and counterfeit (ecstatic speech or gibberish) languages in the congregation. **Speaking without your personal or another's understanding** is only speaking in mysteries, edifying yourself, speaking in the air, like a trumpet that nobody understands, as a barbarian, and crazy. The Bible tells me so! "Let God be true, but every man a liar; as it is written. That you might be justified in your sayings and might overcome when you are judged" (Romans 3:4).

A3 - "I would that you all spoke with languages" refers to the true gift that Paul had and must be done to **edify the congregation** (vs. 12, 26), **to be understood by all** (vs 15), **with an interpreter, if necessary** (vs. 13, 27-28), and **in order during the public meeting** (vs .27, 33, 40). **Prophecy or forth-telling the truth was much more desired than the true gift of languages** (vs 1, 3-5, 24-25, 39). Peter's 1st message was evidence of this in Acts 2:14-40 where 3000 were saved. How many were saved when the true gift of languages were spoken in Acts 2:2-13? Zero.

14:6-14 The Need for Clear, Understood Speech

(37) ⁶ Now, brethren, if I come to you speaking with [foreign] languages, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine? ⁷ And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped? ⁸ For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle? ⁹ So likewise ye, except ye utter by the language words easy to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air. ¹⁰ There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without signification. ¹¹ Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be to him that speaks a barbarian, and he that speaks [shall be] a barbarian to me. ¹² Even so, ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of being spiritual, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the congregation. ¹³ Wherefore let him that speaks in a [foreign] language pray that he may interpret. ¹⁴ For if I pray in a [foreign] language, my spirit prays, but my understanding is unfruitful.

14:15-20 Understanding What is Said is Essential

(38) ¹⁵ What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also. ¹⁶ Else when you shall bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupies the room of the unlearned say Amen at your giving of thanks, seeing he understands not what you say? ¹⁷ For you verily give thanks well, but the other is not edified.

1 Corinthians Chapter 14

¹⁸ I thank my God, I speak with [foreign] languages more than you all: ¹⁹ Yet in the congregation I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that [by my voice] I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an [foreign] language. ²⁰ Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.

Application: I will always speak the truth with clear understood speech, so others may be built up.
QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us speak the truth that is understood by the hearers.

Q1 – Why is Paul giving such a detailed account about speaking that can be understood by everyone?
A1 - Paul spoke in many known languages. He also spoke with the true gift more than the whole Corinthian congregation. As an Apostle and missionary, Paul used the gift of speaking known-understood-foreign languages frequently, for (1) the edification of the congregation by the saving of the unbeliever.

A2 - In the congregation, Paul said he would rather speak 5 words others can understand than 10,000 words in an [foreign] tongue. This [foreign] tongue is an imitation of the true gift of languages and a manifestation of pagan worship that entered the Corinthian congregation. 10,000 is the word *Murio* in Greek. *Murio* is an adjective signifying numberless. It is used in the indefinite sense in 1 Cor 4:15 & 14:19.

A3 - "Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men." The Corinthians were children in understanding the gift of languages. This strongly substantiates the wrong use of languages at Corinth and the purpose of the true gift of languages.

14:21-25 ***The Sign of Foreign Languages in Acts is a Sign of Judgment on God's People, not unbelievers***

(39) ²¹ in the law it has been written, that, `With other languages and with other lips I will speak to this people, and not even so will they hear Me, says the Lord;' ²² so that the languages are for a sign, not to the believing, but to the unbelieving; and the prophesy [is] not for the unbelieving, but for the believing, ²³ If, therefore, the whole assembly may come together, to the same place, and all may speak with languages, and there may come in unlearned or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad? ²⁴ and if all may prophecy, and any one may come in, an unbeliever or unlearned, he is convicted by all, he is discerned by all, ²⁵ and so the secrets of his heart become manifest, and so having fallen upon [his] face, he will bow before God, declaring that God really is among you.

Application: I will always speak the truth with clear understood speech, so others may be built up.

Q1 – Why is a foreign language a sign of judgment to believers in the Old Testament and in Acts?
A1 - This quote of the Old Testament prophecy of Isaiah 28:7-8 is **clearly a sign of judgment** on the nation of Israel. Isaiah 28:7-13 warned of the future judgment by the Babylonian empire fulfilled in 586 BC. Also, **languages or foreign languages are signs of judgment** in Genesis 11:9, Deuteronomy 28:49, and Jeremiah 5:15. In the book of Acts, the future judgment on the nation of Israel was fulfilled by the Roman Empire in 70 AD when Jerusalem was destroyed.

Q2 – Why is the gift of languages only for the unbeliever who enters the congregation?
A1 - Genuine languages is not for the believers, they are for the unbeliever. The gift of languages has no purpose in the congregation of God when everyone present is a believer. **When an unbeliever hears and understands the truth, the congregation is edified.** The incorruptible seed of truth is planted in the hearer of the Scriptures.

Q3 – Why are the foreign languages spoken in Acts a sign and not a gift?
A1 - The Jews always sought a sign (1 Corinthians 1:22, Matthew 16:1-4). The **sign** of the rainbow in Genesis and the sign of languages in Acts are both "signs" of God's grace in judgment. Languages are one of the sign gifts to confirm the message and spreading of the gospel by the Apostles (**Mark 16:20, Hebrews 2:4, 2 Corinthians 12:12**). God's people (Israel) rejected God's Son and deserved His wrath. In wrath God remembered mercy (Habakkuk 3:2) and the outward physical sign of mercy was languages, in known-foreign-understood languages. **Languages was a "sign to unbelievers," which clearly parallels the transition of the gospel from Jew to Gentile in the book of Acts.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 14

14:26-33 Guidelines to Speak and Help the Congregation or Be Silent

(40) ²⁶ How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you has a psalm, has a doctrine, has a language, has a revelation, has an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying. ²⁷ If any man speak in an [foreign] language, [let it be] by two, or at the most [by] three, and [that] by course; and let one interpret. ²⁸ But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the congregation; and let him speak to himself, and to God. ²⁹ Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge. ³⁰ If [anything] be revealed to another that sits by, let the first hold his peace. ³¹ For ye may all prophesy one by one, **that all may learn, and all may be comforted.** ³² And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets. ³³ **For God is not [the author] of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.**

Application: I will always honor God by speaking to edify the assembly of saints, or be silent. I will speak in order when to edify the assembly of saints or be silent.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us control what we speak, how we speak, and when to speak – or be silent.

Q1 – Why must we be careful not to allow foreign languages spoken when saints gather together?
A - 1 Corinthians 14:26-33. Speaking foreign languages in the congregation must be done with interpretation - how else could they know if the language that was spoken did curse or glorify God (1 Corinthians 12:1-3). The Holy Spirit moved the Apostle Paul to provide guidance on how to speak languages when the believers came together. "If any speak in an [foreign] language, let it be by two, or at the most three, and that by course; and let one interpret," *otherwise be silent.* **There was chaos when all spoke or prayed at the same time. If nobody had the gift of interpretation then the foreign speaker could be cursing God, nobody knew. When foreign languages were spoken in the congregation, this was the purpose and procedure.**

14:34-35 Guidance for Women Speaking in the Congregation

(41) ³⁴ Let your women keep silence in the congregations: for it is not permitted to them to speak; but [they are commanded] to be under obedience, as also says the law. ³⁵ And if they will learn anything, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the congregation.

Application: I must put my faith, thoughts and action in what the Scriptures say and not on the culture around me.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us understand the natural order and design of the creator. This helps us obey and trust in God, resulting in many blessings.

Q1 – What Scripture does the Bible believer refer to when considering the difference between men and women?

A - "Let your women" 1Ti 2:11-12 "under obedience" Eph 5:22; Tit 2:5; 1Pe 3:1 "says the law" Ge 3:16; Nu 30:3-12; Es 1:20 Ephesians 5:22-33 is the clearest validation of this doctrine and practice, and ties it all together.

A2 - This is a doctrinal consistency from the beginning with Eve formed from the rib of Adam (Genesis 1:26, Mark 1:10) until the ending when the dead and alive in Christ areas resurrected and we become like the angels, who are all male (Matthew 22:30).

14:36-40 Conclusion: Speaking must be proper and in order

(42) ³⁶ What? came the Word of God out from you? or came it to you only? ³⁷ If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that **the things that I write to you are the commandments of the Lord.** ³⁸ **But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.**

³⁹ **Wherefore, brethren, covet to prophesy, and forbid not to speak with [different] languages.**

⁴⁰ **Let all things be done properly and in order.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 14

Application: I understand that this conclusion is what is the most important. [1_Cor_14:36-40](#). Paul rebukes the spiritual pride at Corinth (14:36), and to those who will not obey his sound teaching, he says, "**let the ignorant remain ignorant.**" Languages may be spoken as a known-understood-foreign language "decently and in order," for the purpose and by the procedures clarified in 1 Cor 12-14. These things that Paul wrote to the congregation at Corinth "are the commandments of the Lord." This rebuke of ignorance is similar to "*receiving one who is weak in the faith, but not to doubtful disputations*" (Ro 14:1). Remember how this was a congregation of babies in Christ (3:1).

Q1 – Why is 1 Corinthians 14 disputed and divisive among believers?

A1 – To begin with, some believers do not study, understand, or teach the whole context of 1 Corinthians 12-14, then in relation to Acts and the rest of the Bible. **The conclusion is to let the ignorant be ignorant.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 15

The Resurrection Chapter of the Bible

15:1-11 *I say – the gospel*

(43) ¹ Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I say to you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; ² By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached to you, unless ye have believed in vain. ³ For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; ⁴ And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the Scriptures: ⁵ And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: ⁶ After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain to this present, but some are fallen asleep. ⁷ After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. ⁸ And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. ⁹ For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the congregation of God. ¹⁰ **But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which [was bestowed] upon me was not in vain; but I labored more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.** ¹¹ Therefore whether [it were] I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

15:12-19 *Some say – no resurrection*

(44) ¹² Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, **how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?** ¹³ But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen: ¹⁴ And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain. ¹⁵ Yes, and we are found false witnesses of God; because we have testified of God that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not. ¹⁶ For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised: ¹⁷ And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins. ¹⁸ Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished. ¹⁹ If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

15:20-34 *I say – yes a resurrection*

(45) ²⁰ But now is Christ risen from the dead, [and] become the first fruits of them that slept. ²¹ For since by man [came] death, by man [came] also the resurrection of the dead. ²² For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. ²³ But every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. ²⁴ Then [comes] the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. ²⁵ For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. ²⁶ The last enemy [that] shall be destroyed is death. ²⁷ For he has put all things under his feet. But when he says all things are put under [him, it is] manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. ²⁸ And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all. ²⁹ Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead? ³⁰ And why stand we in jeopardy every hour? ³¹ I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, ^a I die daily. ³² If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantages it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink; for tomorrow we die. ³³ Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. ³⁴ **Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak [this] to your shame.**

1 Corinthians Chapter 15

15:35-49 Some say – how are dead risen?

(46) ³⁵ But some will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? ³⁶ [You] fool, that which you sow is not quickened, except it die: ³⁷ And that which you sow, you sow not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other [grain]: ³⁸ But God gives it a body as it has pleased him, and to every seed his own body. ³⁹ All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one [kind of] flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, [and] another of birds. ⁴⁰ [There are] also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the [glory] of the terrestrial is another. ⁴¹ [There is] one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for [one] star differs from [another] star in glory. ⁴² So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: ⁴³ It is sown in dishonor; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: ⁴⁴ It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. ⁴⁵ And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam [was made] a quickening spirit. ⁴⁶ Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. ⁴⁷ The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. ⁴⁸ As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. ⁴⁹ And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

15:50-58 I say – victory in resurrection

(47) ⁵⁰ Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption. ⁵¹ **Behold, I show you a mystery;** We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, ⁵² In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. ⁵³ For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal [must] put on immortality. ⁵⁴ So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. ⁵⁵ O ^b death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory? ⁵⁶ **The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.** ⁵⁷ But thanks [be] to God, which gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. ⁵⁸ Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord.

^a Paul was in daily circumstances where his physical body was in danger of death by the hands of those who hated his message about Jesus Christ.

^b Greek *αἴδης Hades*, "hades," or place of the dead. It corresponds with the word translated from *שׁאול she'ol* which is either "grave, hell or pit" in context of *Old Testament passages*. *Hades* signification is the grave that leads to Gehenna for the unsaved, the region of departed spirits. Used 11x in the New Testament; Matthew 2x, Mark 2x, Acts 2x, 1 Corinthians 1x, Revelation 4x. Gehenna is used 12x and translated hell in context to eternal torment and fire, waiting for the lake of fire prepared for the devil and his angels in Revelation 20:14.

1 Corinthians Chapter 16

16:1-3 MONEY - Offering Request for the Saints in Jerusalem

(48) ¹ Now concerning the ^a **collection for the saints**, as I have given order to the congregations of Galatia, even so do ye. ² Upon ^b the first [day] of the week let everyone of you **lay by him in store, as [God] has prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.** ³ And when I come, **whomsoever ye shall approve by [your] letters**, them will I send to bring your **liberality** to Jerusalem.

^a Guide for giving under the New Covenant. Cross reference 1 Corinthians 9, 2 Corinthians 8-9 and Philemon 4. Paul did not want to know the quantity.

^b In Greek is sabbaton, which can be translated "one of sabbaths". Could it be monthly they were to collect instead of weekly? Same in Acts 20:7. John 20:1, 19.

16:4-12 MISSION - Planning Future Visits

(49) ⁴ And if it be appropriate that I go also, they shall go with me. ⁵ Now I will come to you, when I shall pass through Macedonia: for I do pass through Macedonia. ⁶ And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey whithersoever I go. ⁷ For I will not see you now by the way; but I trust to tarry a while with you, ^a **if the Lord permit.** ⁸ But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost. ⁹ For a great door and effectual is opened to me, and [there are] many adversaries. ¹⁰ Now if Timothy come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he works the work of the Lord, as I also [do]. ¹¹ Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come to me: for I look for him with the brethren. ¹² As concerning [our] brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come to you with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

^a not presuming the Lord's will for another person is a good example.

16:13-18 MINISTRY - Commendations

¹³ **Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, behave like men, be strong.** ¹⁴ Let all your things be done with charity. ¹⁵ I beseech you, brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and [that] **they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints,**) ¹⁶ That ye submit yourselves to such, and to everyone that helps with [us], and labors. ¹⁷ I am glad of the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied. ¹⁸ For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

16:19-24 MIXING - Farewell

(50) ¹⁹ The churches of Asia Greet you. Aquila and Priscilla Greet you much in the Lord, with the **congregation that is in their house.** ²⁰ All the brethren greet you. Greet ye one another with a holy kiss. ²¹ The salutation of [me] Paul with my own hand. ²² If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha. ²³ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you. ²⁴ My love [be] with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen. [The first [letter] to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus and Timothy.]

2 Corinthians (13-31, 40 min) 2018

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13

12 Marks of a Fully Mature Spiritual Father

Purpose: To reprove and correct the saints at Corinth, with some approval

Key Words: Comfort, glory, lightness or heaviness

Characters: Titus, Timothy, Paul & Corinthian saints and false apostles

The fully mature spiritual fathers' :

	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Lifestyle is not yes & no, but a strong, clear yes – in simplicity & godly sincerity	1:19-20
2) Words are a sweet flavor of death to some and life to others	2:15-16
3) Have children knowing & growing in glory as their credentials	3:2
4) Know how to die to self, so the life of Christ may develop in others	4:10-12
5) Persuade believers to prepare for the Judgment Seat of Christ	5:10-11
6) Teach the dangers of being friends with unbelievers & workers of darkness	6:14
7) Don't enjoy disciplining believers, but take the risk with love	7:8
8) Teach how to give money the right way by their & others example	8-9
9) Teach how to fight the spiritual warfare	10:3-6
10) With Godly jealousy desire to present believers as pure virgins to Christ	11:2-3
11) Glories in God's grace as their sufficiency in weakness and trials	12:9-10
12) Teach us to examine ourselves 1 st , then others; so we may be fully mature, of good comfort, of one mind and live in peace	13:5,11

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
II Corinthians 1:11	Supplication	Intercession for Paul's safety		Paul's need for help	Corinthian's prayers for Paul
II Corinthians 6:5	Supplication	Fastings Watchings	Suffering & persecution	Help for trials	Paul's experience. Includes prayer.
II Corinthians 8:4	Supplication	Receive money to help needy		Jerusalem saints needs	Macedonians prayers for Paul (petition)
II Corinthians 9:14	Supplication	Jerusalem's Thankfulness		Thanks for offerings	Jerusalem's prayers for Corinth believers
II Corinthians 11:27	Supplication	Fastings often Watchings often	Suffering & persecution	Help for trials	Paul's experience. Includes prayer.
II Corinthians 12:7-10	Supplication	Healing of Paul's thorn in the flesh	Prayed 3 times, answer NO	God's grace is sufficient	Paul's prayer for himself
II Corinthians 13:7	Supplication	Do no evil Do what is right	False apostles	Continued growth needs	Paul's prayer for Corinthian saints

Today's application: Examine ourselves: Am I in a natural, spiritual or carnal condition of mind and heart?

Examine your elders: Are they in a natural, spiritual or carnal condition of mind and heart?

Outline I of 2 Corinthians

Background. One year earlier in 1 Corinthians, the believers love God and the world, where Paul sorrows as God's love and jealousy in him caused him to reprove (scold) their divisions, contentions, and testimony within themselves and to the unbeliever. In this letter Paul rejoices in their sorrow with repentance toward God, however addresses another attack by false apostles (Jews mixing error into truth) and defends his apostleship. Three "mosts" in this book are:

1st Most revealing of Paul's personal life; wrote around the time of Acts 19. This may be titled "Pastoral Applications" relating to 1-2 Timothy & Titus.

2nd Most paradoxes about following (imitating) Christ.

3rd Most "seemingly" broken book of the New Testament, considering 3 visits and 4 letters.

Part 1) Comfort & Conciliation of the Saints

2 Cor
1-7

1:1-2	Greeting
1:3-11	Thanksgiving for comfort in affliction
1:12-2:4	Paul's desire to visit Corinth with lightness rather than heaviness
2:5-17	Congregational forgiveness of a repentant offender
3:1-4:6	Christ's exceeding glory compared to Moses' receding glory
4:7-6:10	Paul's fear of heaven – not hell, illustrated in trials & paradoxes for Christ
6:11-7:7	Appeal for large heartedness & consistency
7:8-16	Evidences of revival among the Corinthian

Part 2) Collection for the Jerusalem Believers

8-9

8:1-7	Example of the Macedonians (Philippi, Thessalonica, Berea)
8:8-15	Right motives for giving
8:16-24	Delegates to transfer collection
9:1-5	Paul's anticipated visit
9:6-15	Benefits of giving

Part 3) Credentials for Paul's Apostleship

10-13

10:1-18	Replies to charges against Paul (warfare strategy, cowardice, & commendation)
11:1-12:18	Claims made by Paul (justification, money, service & suffering, revelation, miracles & love)
12:19-13:10	Preparing for Paul's next visit (concerns & warnings)
13:11-14	Farewell (exhortation, salutation & benediction)

Related Discipleship Lesson

The saints enter into and enjoy (7:8-16)
the Young Man stage of the spiritual life (steps 5-7, of 2 Peter 1) and
are exhorted to continue on to full maturity (13:11-14).

2 Corinthians Chapter 11:1-2 **Greeting**

(1) ¹ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy [our] brother, to the congregation of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia: ² Grace [be] to you and peace from God our Father, and [from] the Lord Jesus Christ.

1:3-11 **Thanksgiving for Comfort in Affliction**

³ Blessed [be] God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort; ⁴ Who comforts us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God. ⁵ For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also abounds by Christ. ⁶ And whether we be afflicted, [it is] for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also allow: or whether we be comforted, [it is] for your consolation and salvation. ⁷ And our hope of you is steadfast, knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so [shall ye be] also of the consolation. ⁸ For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life: ⁹ But we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raises the dead: ¹⁰ Who delivered us from so great a death, and does deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver [us]; ¹¹ Ye also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift [bestowed] upon us by the means of many persons thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

1:12-24 **Paul's desire to Visit Corinth with Lightness rather than Heaviness**

(2) ¹² **For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-ward.** ¹³ For we write none other things to you, than what ye read or acknowledge; and I trust ye shall acknowledge even to the end; ¹⁴ As also ye have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as ye also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁵ And in this confidence I was minded to come to you before, that ye might have a second benefit; ¹⁶ And to pass by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia to you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judaea. ¹⁷ When I therefore was thus minded, did I use **lightness**? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be **yes yes, and no no**? ¹⁸ But [as] God is true, our word toward you was not yes and no. ¹⁹ For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, [even] by me and Silvanus and Timothy, was **not yes and no, but in him was yes.** ²⁰ **For all the promises of God in him are yes,** and in him Amen, to the glory of God by us. ²¹ Now he which establishes us with you in Christ, and has anointed us, is God; ²² Who has also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. ²³ Moreover I call God for a witness upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet to Corinth. ²⁴ Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

2 Corinthians Chapter 2

2:1-4 *The Pastor's Heart*

¹ But I determined this with myself, that I would not come again to you in **heaviness**. ² For if I make you sorry, who is he then that makes me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me? ³ And I wrote this same to you, lest, when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; having confidence in you all, that my joy is [the joy] of you all. ⁴ For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote to you with many tears; not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly to you.

2:5-11 *Congregational Forgiveness of a Repentant Offender (1 Cor 5)*

(3) ⁵ But if any have caused grief, he has not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all. ⁶ Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which [was inflicted] of many. ⁷ So that contrariwise ye [ought] rather to forgive [him], and comfort [him], lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. ⁸ Wherefore I beseech you that ye would confirm [your] love toward him. ⁹ For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things. ¹⁰ To whom ye forgive anything, I [forgive] also: for if I forgave anything, to whom I forgave [it], for your sakes [forgave I it] in the person of Christ; ¹¹ Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

2:12-17 *Concern for Timothy*

¹² Furthermore, when I came to Troas to [preach] Christ's gospel, and a door was opened to me of the Lord, ¹³ I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother: but taking my leave of them, I went from there into Macedonia. ¹⁴ Now thanks [be] to God, which always causes us to triumph in Christ, and makes manifest the savor of his knowledge by us in every place. ¹⁵ **For we are to God a sweet fragrance of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish:** ¹⁶ **To the one [we are] the fragrance of death to death; and to the other the fragrance of life to life. And who is sufficient for these things?** ¹⁷ For we are not as many, which corrupt the Word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

Outline of 2 Corinthians 3:1-7:16

Departing from a religious system (free, liberty, spirit, heart, truth) to a righteous system (Ro 6-8)

- 3:1-4:6 **Christ's** exceeding glory compared to Moses' receding glory
- 4:7-6:10 **Paul's** fear of heaven, not hell, illustrated in paradoxes and trials for Christ (5:10-11)
- 6:11-7:7 **Appeal** for large heartedness & consistency
- 7:8-16 **Evidences** of revival among the Corinthian believers

2 Corinthians Chapter 3

3:1-11 *The Holy Spirit Commends Us*

(4) ¹ Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some [others], letters of commendation to you, or [letters] of commendation from you? ² **Ye are our letter written in our hearts, known and read of all men:** ³ [Forasmuch as ye are] manifestly declared to be the ^a letter of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the **Spirit** of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. ⁴ And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: ⁵ Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think anything as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God; ⁶ Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the **spirit**: for the letter kills, but the **spirit** gives life. ⁷ But if the ministration of death, written [and] engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which [glory] was to be done away: ⁸ How shall not the ministration of the **spirit** be rather glorious? ⁹ For if the ministration of condemnation [be] glory, much more does the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory. ¹⁰ For even that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excels. ¹¹ For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remains is glorious.

3:12-18 *Christ's Exceeding & Increasing Glory Compared to Moses' Receding Glory*

(5) ¹² Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech: ¹³ And not as Moses, [which] put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: ¹⁴ But their minds were blinded: for until this day remains the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which [veil] is done away in Christ. ¹⁵ But even to this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. ¹⁶ Nevertheless when ^b it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away. ¹⁷ **Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.** ¹⁸ **But we all, with open face beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, [even] as by the Spirit of the Lord.**

^a Grace in the Old Testament contrasted to Abundant Grace in the New Testament

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. Outward | Inward |
| 2. Stone table of hard heart | Fleshy table of soft heart |
| 3. By letter of the law | By the Spirit |
| 4. Death | Life |
| 5. Glory faded | Glory exceeding |
| 6. Condemned | Righteous |
| 7. Temporary | Eternal |
| 8. Minds blinded (hid face) | Minds seeing (open faced) |
| 9. Bondage to the law | Liberty from the law |

^b "It" is plural in context; the people of Israel spoken of in Romans 11.

2 Corinthians Chapter 4

4:1-6 *The Light of Christ's Gospel*

(6) ¹ Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not; ² **But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the truth commending ourselves to every man's conscience in the sight of God.** ³ But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: ⁴ In whom the god of this world has blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine to them. ⁵ For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. ⁶ **For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, has shined in our hearts, to [give] the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.**

4:7-12 *Holy Living in our present body – described in Paradoxes*

(7) ⁷ But we have this **treasure in** ^a **earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.** ⁸ [We are] troubled on every side, yet not distressed; [we are] perplexed, but not in despair; ⁹ Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed; ¹⁰ Always bearing about in the ^b body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body. ¹¹ For we which live are always delivered to death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. ¹² **So then death works in us, but life in you.**

^a Paradoxes related to our present life; to know, understand and live by:

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Troubled on every side | yet not distressed |
| 2. Perplexed | but not in despair |
| 3. Persecuted | but not forsaken |
| 4. Cast down | but not destroyed |
| 5a. Bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus | that the life of Jesus might be made manifest in our body |
| 5b. Delivered to death for Jesus sake | that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh |
| 5c. Death works in us | but life in you |

^b Our earthen body is like common, ordinary, cheap clay that holds a precious treasure. If we drink out of a clean vessel it is refreshing; however if onion is used in the vessel, it is contaminated and the vessel needs to be broken and made anew. Our body goes from dust to dust as Adam was created from dust. Biochemical data: Our body contains 17 elements that return to the earth. Every 7 years our molecules are replaced, as 9 of 10 cells are bacteria. Dying or putting to death.

4:13-18 *Preparing for our Future Glory – described in Four Paradoxes*

(8) ¹³ **We having the same spirit of faith,** ^a **according as it is written, I believed, and therefore I have spoken; we also believe, and therefore speak;** ¹⁴ ^b Knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present [us] with you. ¹⁵ **For all things are for your sakes,** that the **abundant grace** might through the thanksgiving of many redound to the glory of God. ¹⁶ For which cause **we faint not;** but though our outward man perish, yet the inward [man] is renewed day by day. ¹⁷ For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, works for us a far more exceeding [and] eternal weight of glory; ¹⁸ While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal.

^a Psalm 116:10 is written in trial and affliction which Paul experienced, yet because he believes he spoke words of truth. This verse relates to Matthew 12:34 "out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaks." The words "It is written" is used 68 times in the New Testament referring to the Old Testament.

2 Corinthians Chapter 4

^b Paradoxes related to knowledge of our future resurrection:

1. Outward man **perish** yet inward man is **renewed** day by day
2. Light affliction is but for a **moment** works for us a far more exceeding and **eternal** weight of glory
- 3a. Look not at the things **seen** but at the things which are **not seen**
- 3b. Things seen are **temporal** but the things not seen are **eternal**

2 Corinthians Chapter 5

5:1-11a *Living in the Light of Christ's Judgment Seat*

(9) ¹ For **we know that if our earthly house of [this] tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.** ² For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven: ³ If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked. ⁴ For we that are in [this] tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life. ⁵ Now he that has worked us for the selfsame thing is God, who also has given to us the earnest of the Spirit. ⁶ Therefore [we are] always confident, knowing that, While we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord: ⁷ (For we walk by faith, not by sight:) ⁸ We are confident, [I say], and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord. ⁹ Wherefore we labor, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him. ¹⁰ **For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that everyone may receive the things [done] in [their] body, according to that he has practiced, whether [it be] good or bad.** ¹¹ **Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men;**

5:11b-17 *Paul's Good Conscience in the Lord*

(10) **but we are made manifest to God; and I trust also are made manifest in your consciences.** ¹² For we commend not ourselves again to you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that ye may have somewhat to [answer] them which glory in appearance, and not in heart. ¹³ For whether we be beside ourselves, [it is] to God: or whether we be sober, [it is] for your cause. ¹⁴ For the love of Christ constrains us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead: ¹⁵ And he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live to themselves, but to him which died for them, and rose. ¹⁶ Wherefore from now forward we know no one in this body: yes, though we have known Christ in this body, yet from now forward we know [him] no more. ¹⁷ **Therefore anyone in Christ is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.**

5:18-21 *The Ministry of Reconciliation (sanctification among the body of Christ)*

¹⁸ And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation; ¹⁹ To witness, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world to himself, not reckoning their trespasses to them; and has committed to us the word of reconciliation. ²⁰ Now we are ambassadors for Christ, as it were God begging [you] through us: we pray in Christ's place, be ^a ye reconciled to God. ²¹ For he has made him ^a sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

^a This is practical for the believers to be reconciled among themselves to God before they have a ministry of reconciliation before the lost world. Omit the you and ye from verse 20 and to be in verse 21 which are not in the original Greek and it fits the context.

2 Corinthians Chapter 6

6:1-3 *Salvation Past and Present*

¹ We then, [as] workers together [with him], beseech [you] also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain. ² (For he says, ^a I have heard you in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation I have helped you: behold, ^b now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.) ³ Giving no offense in anything, that the ministry be not blamed:

^a Quote from Isaiah 49:8.

^b In context - this salvation speaks of our sanctification or continual day by day salvation from the old man, not the initial salvation of the unbeliever. One must read Isaiah 49 for the context and interpretation.

Q1 – Where does God say “I have heard you in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation I have helped you”. (2 Cor 6:2a)

A1 – This is a quote from Isaiah 49:8.

Application: I must not let the emotions associated with trial or affliction hinder my speaking the truth. The Holy Spirit is powerful and helps me witness faithfully. (Acts 1:8, 2 Timothy 4:2).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help renew our inward man day by day, keep our eyes on eternal things, and fight the good fight of faith until our last heartbeat (1 Timothy 6:2, 2 Timothy 4:7).

6:4-10 *Trials, Traits, and Paradoxes to Help us be Ambassadors of Christ*

(11) ⁴ But in all [things] ^a approving ourselves as the ministers of God **in much patience**: in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses, ⁵ In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labors, in watchings, in fastings; ⁶ ^b By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned, ⁷ By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armor of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, ⁸ ^c By honor and dishonor, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and [yet] true; ⁹ As unknown, and [yet] well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed; ¹⁰ As sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and [yet] possessing all things.

^a Trials in much patience (vs 4-5): ^b form Godly traits by (vs 6-7): ^c through Paradoxes (vs 8-10):

- | | | |
|------------------|-------------------------------|---|
| 1. Afflictions | 1. Pureness | 1. honor & dishonor |
| 2. Necessities | 2. Knowledge | 2. Evil report & good report |
| 3. Distresses | 3. Long-suffering | 3. Deceivers & true |
| 4. Stripes | 4. Kindness | 4. Unknown & well known |
| 5. Imprisonments | 5. the Holy Spirit | 5. Dying & we live |
| 6. Tumults | 6. Love unfeigned | 6. Chastened & not killed |
| 7. Labors | 7. the word of truth | 7. Sorrowful yet always rejoicing |
| 8. Watchings | 8. the power of God | 8. Poor yet making many rich |
| 9. Fastings | 9. the armor of righteousness | 9. Having nothing & possessing all things |

Outward – in our body Inward – in our mind, heart & soul Inward & Outward – in this life

6:11-18 *Appeals for Large Heartedness and Separation*

(12) ¹¹ O [ye] Corinthians, our mouth is open to you, our heart is enlarged. ¹² Ye are not narrowed in us, but ye are narrowed in your own bowels. ¹³ Now for a recompense in the same, (I speak as to [my] children,) be ye also enlarged. ¹⁴ Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship has righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion has light with darkness? ¹⁵ And what concord has Christ with Belial? or what part has he that believes with an infidel? ¹⁶ And what agreement has the temple of God with idols? for ^a ye are the temple of the living God; as God has said, ^b I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

2 Corinthians Chapter 6

^{17 c} Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, says the Lord, and touch not the unclean [thing]; and I will receive you, ¹⁸ And will be **a Father to you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters**, says the Lord Almighty.

^a 1 Corinthians 3:16-17

^b Leviticus 11:44, Isaiah 52:11, 1 Pet 1:15-16

Verses 16-18 are full of Old and New Testament references. Ex 29:45, Lev 26:12, Jer 31:1, 32:38, Ez 11:20, 27, 26-27, 36:28, 37:27, Zec 8:8

2 Corinthians Chapter 7

7:1-5 ***Let us Cleanse Ourselves of all Filthiness of the Flesh and the Spirit***

(13) ¹ **Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the ^a fear of God.** ² Receive us; we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man. ³ I speak not [this] to condemn [you]: for I have said before, that ye are in our hearts to die and live with [you]. ⁴ Great is my boldness of speech toward you, great is my glorying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation. ⁵ For, when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; outside [were] fightings, within [were] fears.

^a Fear is phobos in Greek. It is used 44x in the New Testament. 4x in 2 Cor 7. 2 Cor 5:11 translated terror in KJV, but fear in several versions. 1 John 4:18 There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear: because fear hath torment. He that fears is not made perfect in love.

I prefer the word fear over terror because it fits the context, it is more understood today, and aligns with how the same Greek word is translated in the rest of the New Testament. However, the word terror fits better in the context relating to holiness and judgment of God.

7:6-11 ***Paul Rejoices when Repentance Refreshes the Corinthian Believers***

(14) ⁶ Nevertheless God, that comforts those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus; ⁷ And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more. ⁸ For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same letter has made you sorry, though [it were] but for a season. ⁹ Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive loss by us in nothing. ¹⁰ For godly sorrow works repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world works death. ¹¹ For behold this selfsame thing, that **ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it worked in you, yes, [what] clearing of yourselves, yes, [what] indignation, yes, [what] fear, yes, [what] vehement desire, yes, [what] zeal, yes, [what] revenge! In all [things] ye have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter.**

7:12-16 ***Paul Rejoices Because His Care in the Sight of God was Apparent to the Corinthians***

(15) ¹² Wherefore, though I wrote to you, [I did it] not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear to you. ¹³ Therefore we were comforted in your comfort: yes, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all. ¹⁴ For if I have boasted anything to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spoke all things to you in truth, even so our boasting, which [I made] before Titus, is found a truth. ¹⁵ And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, While he remembers the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him. ¹⁶ I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in everything.

2 Corinthians Chapter 8 *The Laws of Grace Giving (chapters 8-9) or "From Poverty to Riches"***8:1-9 Two Wonderful Examples from Macedonia and Jesus**

(16)¹ Now, brethren, we make known to you the ^a grace of God given in the congregations of Macedonia; ² that in a great trial of affliction the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty abounded to the riches of their liberality. ³ because to [their] ^b power, I witness, yes, and beyond [their] power [they were willing] of themselves; ⁴ Asking us with much entreaty that we would receive the grace, and [take upon us] the fellowship of the ministering to the saints. ⁵ And [this they did], not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and to us by the will of God. ⁶ Insomuch that we urged Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also. ⁷ Therefore, as ye abound in everything: [in] faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and [in] all ^c diligence, and [in] your love to us; see that ye abound in this grace also. ⁸ I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the diligence of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love. ⁹ For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.

^a Grace in Greek is charis; used 147x in the New Testament, 18x in 2 Cor, 10x in chapters 8-9 and 5x here. Occasionally charis is translated gift or thanks; depends on the translators, culture and context.

^b Power in Greek is dunamis, or explosive – life changing

^c Diligence in similar Greek words and superlatives in used 5 times in chapter 8.

8:10-15 Advice for Believers on How and Why to Give

(17)¹⁰ And herein I give [my] advice: for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be willing a year ago. ¹¹ Now therefore perform the doing [of it]; that as there was a readiness to will, so [there may be] a performance also out of that which ye have. ¹² For if there be first a willing mind, [it is] accepted according to what you have, and not according to what you don't have. ¹³ For [I mean] not that others be eased, and ye burdened: ¹⁴ But by an equality, [that] now at this time your abundance [may be a supply] for their poverty, that their abundance also may be [a supply] for your poverty: that there may be equality: ¹⁵ As it is ^a written, He that [had gathered] much had nothing over; and he that [had gathered] little had no lack.

^a Exodus 16:18 uses the same principles for God's example of giving to the congregation in the wilderness, which was around 5 million called-out ones. Now the same laws apply to the called-out ones in 3 geographic locations.

8:16-24 Advice for Leaders on How and Why to Separate Themselves from the Money

(18)¹⁶ But thanks [be] to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of ^a Titus for you. ¹⁷ For indeed he accepted the exhortation; but being more diligent, of his own accord he went to you. ¹⁸ And we have sent with him ^b the brother, whose praise [is] in the gospel throughout all the congregations; ¹⁹ And not [that] only, but who was also chosen of the congregations to travel with us with this grace, which is administered by us to the glory of the same ^c Lord, and [declaration of] your ready mind: ²⁰ Avoiding this, that anyone should blame us in this abundance which is administered by us: ²¹ Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men. ²² And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which [I have] in you. ²³ Whether [any do inquire] of Titus, [he is] my partner, and fellow helper concerning you: or our brethren [be inquired of, they are] the messengers of the congregations, [and] the glory of Christ. ²⁴ Wherefore show ye to them, and before the congregations, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

^a Titus is mentioned 14x in the New Testament, 9x in 2 Cor (chapter 2-1x, 7-3x, 8-3x, 12-1x, 13-1x), Gal-2x, 2 Tim-1x, and Titus-2x. In this paragraph Paul switches from the personal I to 3rd person us, we.

^b The brother is special and un-named. He is referred to 3x in 2 Corinthians 8:18, 22 and 12:18. This is a great honor.

^c Lord in verses 19 and 21 seem to refer to God, rather than Jesus Christ.

2 Corinthians Chapter 9

9:1-7 *Warning on How being Unprepared will cause other Believers and Ourselves Shame*

(19) ¹ For as touching the ^a ministering to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you: ² For I know the readiness of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that ^b Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal has provoked very many. ³ Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as I said, ye may be ready: ⁴ Lest happily if they of Macedonia come with me, and find you unprepared, we (that we say not, ye) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting. ⁵ Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before to you, and make up beforehand your kind gift, whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready, as [a] kind gift, and not as [of] covetousness. ⁶ But this [I say], He which sows sparingly shall also reap sparingly; and he which sows bountifully shall also reap bountifully. ⁷ Everyone according as he purposes in his heart, [so let him give]; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loves a ^c cheerful giver.

^a Ministering in Greek is diakonio, which can be translated serve, service, servants, minister, ministry or administrations, Diakonos is used 32x in the New Testament, 11x in 2 Corinthians and 8x in Acts. In 2 Corinthians diakonos is used in various contexts of which the context of chapter 9 is for the whole congregation of saints at Corinth.

^b Achaia is the province of which Corinth was the capitol. Macedonia was a province northeast of Macedonia on the way to Jerusalem. Paul anticipated to visit Corinth again; we are not sure if this ever happened.

^c Hilarious in Greek. Compared to the freewill offerings in the Law of Moses. The trespass offering was mandatory.

9:8-15 *The Blessings of Giving in His Will* (9 for self, 3 for God, and 2 from others)

(20) ⁸ And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all [things], may abound to every good work: ⁹ (As it is ^a written, He has dispersed abroad; he has given to the poor: his righteousness ^b remains forever. ¹⁰ Now he that supplies seed to the sower both supply bread for your food and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness;) ¹¹ Being enriched in everything to all bountifulness, which causes through us thanksgiving to God. ¹² For the proof of this service not only supplies the lack of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgiving to God; ¹³ While by the proof of this ministry they glorify God for your professed subjection onto the ^c gospel of Christ, and for [your] liberal partnership to them, and to all; ¹⁴ And by their ^d supplication, for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you. ¹⁵ Thanks [be] to God for his ^e unspeakable gift.

^a Psalm 112:9 is a Psalm of Praise, thanks and vindication related to personal prosperity. Note that only the first part of verse 9 is quoted. ¹ Praise ye the LORD. Blessed is the man [that] fears the LORD, [that] delights greatly in his commandments. ² His seed shall be mighty upon earth: the generation of the upright shall be blessed. ³ Wealth and riches [shall be] in his house: and his righteousness endures forever. ⁴ To the upright there arises light in the darkness: [he is] gracious, and full of compassion, and righteous. ⁵ A good man shows favor, and lends: he will guide his affairs with discretion. ⁶ Surely he shall not be moved forever: the righteous shall be in everlasting remembrance. ⁷ He shall not be afraid of evil tidings: his heart is fixed, trusting in the LORD. ⁸ His heart is established, he shall not be afraid, until he see [his desire] upon his enemies. ⁹ **a He has dispersed, he has given to the poor; his righteousness endures forever; his horn shall be exalted with honor.** ¹⁰ The wicked shall see [it], and be grieved; he shall gnash with his teeth, and melt away: the desire of the wicked shall perish.

^b Remains can be translated abide or endure; however, the context and literary rhyme deserve remain as the best translated word.

^c The Gospel of Christ is a continuous series of acts based on an initial experience. In this context gospel relates to the continual sanctification process God desires to work in us.

^d Supplication in Greek is dechysis; translated as prayer in some versions. However there is a distinction between prayer and supplication; where prayer is general and supplication is a specific character of prayer that humbles man before God.

Note Ephesians 6:18 where prayer and supplication are separate words.

^e The unspeakable gift refers to Christ and the work of Christ or grace in the believers loving one another in the financial way described in chapters 8-9.

Conclusion of chapters 8-9. Our physical riches are to help those in physical poverty and others spiritual riches and to help those in spiritual poverty. There are laws of the grace of giving that are to be understood so we may enjoy the blessings of obedience, rather than suffer the shame of disobedience. Reading chapters 10-13 will shed light on if the Corinthians continued in the spiritual revival indicated in chapter 7.

2 Corinthians Chapter 10**10:1-6 *A Pattern for Victory in our Spiritual Warfare***

(21) ¹ Now I Paul myself beseech you by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in presence [am] base among you, but being absent am bold toward you: ² But I beseech [you], that I may not be bold when I am present with that confidence, wherewith I think to be bold against some, which think of us as if we walked according to the flesh. ³ For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: ⁴ (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) ⁵ **Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;** ⁶ **And having in a readiness to ^a revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.**

^a *Avenge*

10:7-11 *Paul's Reply to Charge of being a Coward*

(22) ⁷ Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himself that he is Christ's, let him of himself think this again, that, as he is Christ's, even so are we Christ's. ⁸ For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, which the Lord has given us for edification, and not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed: ⁹ That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters. ¹⁰ For [his] letters, say they, are weighty and powerful; but [his] bodily presence is weak, and [his] speech contemptible. ¹¹ Let such an one think this, that, such as we are in word by letters when we are absent, such [will we be] also in deed when we are present.

10:12-17 *The Difference Between Self-commendation and the Lord's Commendation*

(23) ¹² For we dare not make ourselves of the number, or compare ourselves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves among themselves, are not wise. ¹³ But we will not boast of things without [our] measure, but according to the measure of the rule which God has distributed to us, a measure to reach even to you. ¹⁴ For we stretch not ourselves beyond [our measure], as though we reached not to you: for we are come as far as to you also in [preaching] the gospel of Christ: ¹⁵ Not boasting of things without [our] measure, [that is], of other men's labors; but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly, ¹⁶ To preach the gospel in the [regions] beyond you, [and] not to boast in another man's line of things made ready to our hand. ¹⁷ But he that glories, let him glory in the Lord. ¹⁸ For not he that commends himself is approved, but whom the Lord commends.

2 Corinthians Chapter 11

11:1-12 ***Paul's Position and Neglect of Money*** (speaking of is foolish) 11:1-12:12

(24) ¹ Would to God ye could bear with me a little in [my] folly: and indeed bear with me. ² **For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present [you as] a chaste virgin to Christ.** ³ **But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.** ⁴ **For if he that comes preaches another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or [if] ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with [him].** ⁵ For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chief apostles. ⁶ But though [I be] rude in speech, yet not in knowledge; but we have been thoroughly made manifest among you in all things. ⁷ Have I committed an offence in abasing myself that ye might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely? ⁸ I robbed other churches, taking wages [of them], to do you service. ⁹ And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied: and in all [things] I have kept myself from being burdensome to you, and [so] will I keep [myself]. ¹⁰ As the truth of Christ is in me, no man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia. ¹¹ Wherefore? because I love you not? God knows. ¹² But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

11:13-15 ***False Apostles Identified***

(25) ¹³ For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. ¹⁴ And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. ¹⁵ Therefore [it is] no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.

11:16-21 ***Paul's is Better than the False Jewish Apostles*** (speaking of is foolish)

¹⁶ I say again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool receive me, that I may boast myself a little. ¹⁷ That which I speak, I speak [it] not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly, in this confidence of boasting. ¹⁸ Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also. ¹⁹ For ye allow fools gladly, seeing ye [yourselves] are wise. ²⁰ For ye allow, if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour [you], if a man take [of you], if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face. ²¹ I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak. Howbeit whereinssoever any is bold, (I speak foolishly,) I am bold also.

11:22-33 ***An Example of Taking up the Cross and Denial of Self*** (speaking of is foolish)

(26) ²² Are they Hebrews? so [am] I. Are they Israelites? so [am] I. Are they the seed of Abraham? so [am] I. ²³ Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) I [am] more; in labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths often. ²⁴ Of the Jews five times received I forty [stripes] save one. ²⁵ Thrice I was beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been in the deep; ²⁶ [In] journeyings often, [in] perils of waters, [in] perils of robbers, [in] perils by [my own] countrymen, [in] perils by the heathen, [in] perils in the city, [in] perils in the wilderness, [in] perils in the sea, [in] perils among false brethren; ²⁷ In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness. ²⁸ Beside those things that are outside, that which comes upon me daily, the care of all the congregations. ²⁹ Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not? ³⁰ If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern my infirmities. ³¹ The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knows that I lie not. ³² In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king kept the city of the Damascenes with a garrison, desirous to apprehend me: ³³ And through a window in a basket I was let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

Note: 11:23 "in death oft" is context of 1 Cor 15:30-32, 2 Cor 1:7-10, 4:11, 6:4-5, and Romans 8:35-37.

2 Corinthians Chapter 12

12:1-6 **A Revelation of Paradise or 3rd Heaven** (*speaking of is foolish*)

(27) ¹ It is not expedient for me doubtless to glory. I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord. ² I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knows;) such an one caught up to the third heaven. ³ And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knows;) ⁴ How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter. ⁵ Of such an one will I glory: yet of myself I will not glory, but in my infirmities. ⁶ For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool; for I will say the truth: but [now] I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he sees me [to be], or [that] he hears of me.

12:7-12 **Grace Sufficient for Paul's Thorn in the Flesh** (*speaking of is foolish*)

(28) ⁷ And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. ⁸ For this thing I begged the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. ⁹ And he said to me, My grace is sufficient for you: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. ¹⁰ Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong. ¹¹ I am become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chief apostles, though I be nothing. ¹² Truly the signs of an apostle were worked among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

12:13-19 **One Last Time - The Wickedness of Personal Gain is Shunned**

(29) ¹³ For what is it wherein ye were inferior to other churches, except [it be] that I myself was not burdensome to you? forgive me this wrong. ¹⁴ **Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you: for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.** ¹⁵ And I will very gladly spend and be spent for you; though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved. ¹⁶ But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I caught you with guile. ¹⁷ Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent to you? ¹⁸ I desired Titus, and with [him] I sent a brother. Did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? [walked we] not in the same steps? ¹⁹ Again, think ye that we excuse ourselves to you? we speak before God in Christ: but [we do] all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

12:20-21 **Preparing for Paul's next visit** (*concerns & warnings*) 12:13-13:6

²⁰ For I fear, lest, when I come, I shall not find you such as I would, and [that] I shall be found to you such as ye would not: lest [there be] debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults: ²¹ [And] lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and [that] I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness and fornication and lasciviousness which they have committed.

2 Corinthians Chapter 13

13:1-6 **Paul Pleads to Examine our Salvation**

(30) ¹ This is the third [time] I am coming to you. In the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established. ² I told you before, and foretell you, as if I were present, the second time; and being absent now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that, if I come again, I will not spare: ³ Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you. ⁴ For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he lives by the power of God. For we also are weak in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you. ⁵ ^a Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Don't ye know your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates? ⁶ But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

^a We must examine ourselves in regards to practical sanctification. Not as the false apostles who were reprobates of the faith and not justified in salvation.

13:7-14 **Farewell** (*exhortation, salutation & benediction*)

(31) ⁷ Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we should appear approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates. ⁸ For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth. ⁹ For we are glad, when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, [even] your perfection. ¹⁰ Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present I should use sharpness, according to the authority which the Lord has given me to edification, and not to destruction. ¹¹ Finally, brethren, farewell. Be ^a perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and **the God of love and peace shall be with you.** ¹² Greet one another with a holy kiss. ¹³ All the saints Greet you. ¹⁴ The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, [be] with you all. Amen.

[The second [letter] to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, [a city] of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.]

^a Growing into full maturity.

Note: This is a beautiful way to end a long conversation. Whatever happened during Paul's 3rd visit to the Corinthians we know not.

Summary of 1-2 Corinthians: 12 Unique Lessons of eternal value for all believers

1. Beginning of each letter is positive for all believers. (1 Cor 1:1-9, 2 Cor 1:1-11)
2. Ending of each letter is positive for all believers. (1 Cor 16:13-24, 2 Cor 13:7-14)
 - a. Corrections, concerns, and comfort in between the beginning and ending.
3. The theme of 1 Corinthians is Correction. (identifiers of a carnal believer or congregation of believers)
4. The theme of 2 Corinthians is Comfort. (identifiers of a serving elder or under-shepherd in the faith)
5. The future of all believers at the Judgment Seat of Christ is declared stronger, clearer and more than in any other books. (1 Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10)
6. Most love in deed and truth expressed by Paul toward these believers; more than any others.
7. The name of Christ is used more frequently than any other book. (20% of total times from Acts through Revelation. Christ, Jesus Christ, Christ Jesus, Lord Jesus Christ used 103 of 530 times)
8. Most examples of the paradoxes of imitating Christ. (1 Cor 4:8-13, 2 Cor 4:7-18, 2 Cor 11:22-32)
9. Most teaching on money, more than any other books of the Bible. (1 Cor 9:1-19, 16:1-12, 2 Cor 8-9, 11:7-12, 12:13-19)
10. We must examine ourselves (2 Cor 13:5), others (2 Cor 10:1-6) and our leaders (2 Cor 11:12-).
11. We must love all genuine believers and address sin of individual and within the congregation of believers. Go back to points 1 and 2.
12. The Next Step. 1 Corinthians: Know ye not – 9x, go to Romans 6.

2 Corinthians : false apostles and brethren who lead back to the law, go to Romans 7, Galatians.

Old Testament cross-reference is the prophet Jeremiah or Haggai. Dependent on Paul's 3rd trip to Corinth. Did he go? What were the results?

Galatians (6-16, 20 min) 2020

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5 6

12 Reasons to Walk in the Spirit, not the flesh

Occasion: 1st of 14 letters from Paul in 48 AD, later expounded in Romans 7:1-8:14.

Purpose: Reproof & Correction (2 Timothy 3:16-17) of believing leaders & followers

Key verse: 3:3 Are ye so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made mature by the flesh?

- | | | | |
|-----------|-----------------|-------|--|
| 1) 1:1-5 | Greeting | 1:4 | to deliver us from this present evil world |
| 2) 1:6-10 | Purpose | 1:6-7 | realize that some pervert the gospel of Christ |

Chapters 1:11-2:21 **Paul Defends his "Sending" to the Gentiles**

- | | | | |
|--------------|--------------------------|------|---|
| 3) 1:11-2:10 | Independent of Jerusalem | 2:9 | so others perceive the grace of God on us |
| 4) 2:11-21 | Paul rebukes Peter | 2:20 | enable Christ to live in me by faith |

Chapters 3-5 **Paul Defends Justification & Sanctification by Faith (Doctrine, understand in mind)**

- | | | | |
|-----------------|------------------------------|------|---|
| 5) 3:1-5 | Arrested spiritual growth | 3:3 | begin by the Spirit –continue by the Spirit |
| 6) 3:6-29 | Abraham's faith example | 3:11 | receive the Spirit and live by faith |
| 7) 4:1-20 | Law before & Christ now | 4:6 | let God's Spirit live in my heart |
| 8) 4:21-31 | Abraham's 2 sons | 4:29 | be free by the Spirit, not a slave to the flesh |
| 9) 5:1-12 | Leaders cause others to fall | 5:1 | Christ made me free – no more a slave |
| 10) 5:13-26 | Contrast the Spirit & flesh | 5:16 | Choose to walk in the Spirit & not in the flesh |

11) Chapter 6:1-10 **Seven Directions to Walk in the Spirit (Application, from our heart)**

- | | |
|-----|---|
| 1 | I will restore my brother overtaken in a trespass (Matthew 6:14-15) |
| 2-3 | I will carry another's burden (1 Peter 5:1-4) |
| 4-5 | I will carry my own burden (Matthew 11:30, John 21:20-23, 1 Peter 1:6-9) |
| 6 | I will communicate with my teacher in the word (2 Peter 1:12-15, John 21:15-17) |
| 7-8 | I will hold onto the Spirit and not my flesh (2 Peter 1:8-11) |
| 9 | I will not grow tired of doing well (Matthew 26:36-46) |
| 10 | I will do good to all, especially the household of faith (1 Peter 1:22) |

12) 6:11-18 **Conclusion** 6:14 **I will glory in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ.**

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
<u>Galatians</u> 4:19	Supplication	Others growth in Christ			Paul for believers in Galatia

God – 32x, with Father 4x or Abba 1x. Jesus Christ – 47x (Christ 24x, Jesus Christ 8x, Christ Jesus 5x, Son – 4x, Lord Jesus Christ 3x, Lord 2x, Lord Jesus 1x). Holy Spirit – 15x.

Balance in Galatians: Law - 25x. Flesh – 16x, 10 related to law (chapters 3-6. 3:3, 4:23, 29, 5:13, 16-17, 19, 24, 6:8, 12) and 6x to body. Faith – 20x (chapter 3, 13x). Holy Spirit – 15x pneuma (chapters 1-2, 0x. 3-6, 15x). Conclusion: The works of the Law & our Flesh can be overcome by our Faith and the Holy Spirit (Christ in me).

Understanding for today: There are 3 groups of religious slave systems; legalism, emotionalism, and liberalism. Much depends on our raising up with family, church background and teacher when first saved. If you are caught up in the works of the flesh (hardware), seek to be set free by the power of Christ in you, to walk in the Spirit (software).

Galatians Chapter 1

1:1-5 Paul's Greeting

(1) ¹ Paul, an apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;) ² And all the brethren which are with me, to the churches of Galatia: ³ Grace to you and peace from God the Father, and [from] our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁴ Who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: ⁵ To whom [be] glory forever and ever. Amen.

1:6-10 Purpose of Letter - Warning to Believers

(2) ⁶ I marvel that ye are so soon removed from Him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: ⁷ Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. ⁸ But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. ⁹ As we said before, so say I now again, "If anyone preach any other gospel to you than that ye have received, let him be accursed." ¹⁰ For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

1:11-24 Preparation to Proclaim the Gospel to the Heathen

(3) ¹¹ But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. ¹² For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught [it], but by the revelation of Jesus Christ. ¹³ For ye have heard of my conduct in time past in the Jews' religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the congregation of God, and wasted it: ¹⁴ And profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in my own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers. ¹⁵ But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, and called [me] by His grace, ¹⁶ To reveal His Son in me, that I might preach Him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood: ¹⁷ Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me; but I went into **Arabia**, and returned again unto **Damascus**. ¹⁸ Then **after three years** I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abode with him **fifteen days**. ¹⁹ But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's brother. ²⁰ Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not. ²¹ Afterwards I came into the regions of **Syria and Cilicia**; ²² And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judaea which were in Christ: ²³ But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past now preaches the faith which once he destroyed. ²⁴ And they glorified God in me.

a. The period from the conversion of Paul until the 1st trip to Jerusalem. (Acts 9-12). Paul was converted on the road to Damascus. He entered Damascus and stayed there for an unknown amount of time (Acts 9:19). Paul went to Arabia for an unspecified period, and returned to Damascus afterward (Gal.1:17). The whole period from his conversion until his departure from Damascus is given as "3 years"(Gal.1:18). He went to Jerusalem at this time, and stayed for 15 days (Acts 9:26-29; Gal.1:18)

b. The period from the 1st visit until the 2nd visit to Jerusalem. After the 15 days at Jerusalem, Paul was sent away to avoid capture, and sailed from Caesarea to the regions of Syria and Cilicia (Acts 9:30; Gal.1:21). After a period ranging from 8 to 14 years, Paul traveled to Antioch with Barnabas and stayed for 1 year (Acts 11:25; Gal.1:21-2:1 see below). Paul then traveled to Jerusalem from Antioch, staying for a short time. This was in connection with the collection taken up in Antioch because of Agabus' vision (Acts 11:27-30; Gal.2:1). He then returned to Antioch.

c. The period from the 2nd until the 3rd visit to Jerusalem. After the relief visit (2nd visit) to Jerusalem, Paul returned to Antioch. Very soon afterwards, the 1st missionary journey began. Paul traveled from Antioch to Seleucia, then to Cyprus. Then he went to Pamphylia which lies to the north of Cyprus in modern-day Turkey. From there, he went to Galatia, as far as the city of Derbe. Then he went back through the same cities in the opposite direction. Finally, he sailed from Antioch of Pisidia to Antioch of Syria. This entire journey apparently lasted 6--9 months, concluding before the storms of winter would have stopped ship travel in the Mediterranean.

d. The period from the third trip to Jerusalem (the Jerusalem Council; Acts 15) until the last trip there. Paul traveled from Antioch to Jerusalem for the council, then back to Antioch. At that time, they began the 2nd Missionary Journey (Acts 15-17).

Note: Old Testament reference. 1:15, Jeremiah 5:1.

2:1-10 **The Council at Jerusalem** (Acts 15)

(4) ¹ Then ^a **fourteen years after** I went up again to Jerusalem with ^b Barnabas, and took ^c Titus with [me] also. ² And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, **but privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain.** ³ But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised: ⁴ And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privately to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage: ⁵ To whom we gave place by subjection, no, **not for a hour;** that the truth of the gospel might continue with you. ⁶ But of these who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it makes no matter to me: God accepts no man's person:) for they who seemed [to be somewhat] in conference **added nothing to me:** ⁷ But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as [the gospel] of the circumcision was to Peter; ⁸ (For He that worked effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles:) ⁹ And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we [should go] unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision. ¹⁰ Only [they would] that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

^a Galatians 1:18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and stayed. **I went up again.** Acts 15:2-4 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation.

^b **Barnabas.** Acts 4:36,37 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, Acts 11:25,30 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul..., Acts 12:25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled ..., Acts 13:2,50 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said..., Acts 14:12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius, because he ..., Acts 15:25,36-39 It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen ..., 1 Corinthians 9:6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working? Colossians 4:10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner salutes you, and Marcus, sister's.

^c **Titus.** 2 Corinthians 8:16,23 But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart Titus 1:4 To Titus, my own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, and peace,

2:11-21 **Paul Disputes with Peter** (Acts 15)

(5) ¹¹ But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. ¹² For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. ¹³ And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. ¹⁴ But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, "If you, being a Jew, live after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compel you the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?" ¹⁵ We [who are] Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles, ¹⁶ Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be **justified by the faith of Christ,** and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. ¹⁷ But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. ¹⁸ For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. ¹⁹ For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live to God. ²⁰ **I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me.** ²¹ **I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness [come] by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.**

Note: 2:16 Psalm 143:2

Galatians Chapter 3

3:1-5 *Salvation by Works of the Law or Hearing of Faith*

(6) ¹ O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been evidently set forth, crucified among you? ² This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? ³ Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? ⁴ Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if [it be] yet in vain. ⁵ He therefore that ministers to you the Spirit, and works miracles among you, [does he it] by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3:6-18 *By Faith Gentiles are the Children of Abraham*

(7) ⁶ Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. ⁷ Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. ⁸ And the Scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham, [saying], "**IN YOU SHALL ALL NATIONS BE BLESSED.**" ⁹ So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. ¹⁰ For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, "Cursed is everyone that continues not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them." ¹¹ But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, [it is] evident: for, "**THE JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH.**" ¹² And the law is not of faith: but, The man that does them shall live in them. ¹³ Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, "**CURSED IS EVERYONE THAT HANGS ON A TREE:**" ¹⁴ That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. ¹⁵ Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though [it be] but a man's covenant, yet [if it be] confirmed, no man disannuls, or adds thereto. ¹⁶ Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He says not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to your seed, which is Christ. ¹⁷ And this I say, [that] the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was **four hundred and thirty years after**, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. ¹⁸ For if the inheritance [be] of the law, [it is] no more of promise: but God gave [it] to Abraham by promise.

Note: Six quotes or references from the Old Testament. 3:8, Gen 12:3. 22:18. 3:10, Deu 27:26. 3:11, Hab 2:4. 3:12, Lev 18:5. 3:13, Deu 21:23. 3:17, Gen 15:18.

3:19-25 *The Law as our Schoolmaster / the Law is no Longer our Schoolmaster*

(8) ¹⁹ Wherefore then [serves] the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; [and it was] ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. ²⁰ Now a mediator is not [a mediator] of one, but God is one. ²¹ [Is] the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. ²² But the Scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. ²³ But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up to the faith which should afterwards be revealed. ²⁴ Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster [to bring us] to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵ But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

3:26-29 *Assurance of Salvation by Faith in Christ Jesus*

²⁶ For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. ²⁷ For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. ²⁸ There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. ²⁹ And if ye [be] Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

Galatians Chapter 4

4:1-7 ***By the Spirit I am a Heir of God***

(9) ¹ Now I say, [That] the heir, as long as he is a child, differs nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; ² But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. ³ Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: ⁴ But **when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,** ⁵ To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. ⁶ And because ye are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. ⁷ Wherefore you are no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then **a heir of God through Christ.**

4:8-18 ***Do not go back to Bondage (8-12, 16-18) and Paul's Eye Illness (13-15)***

(10) ⁸ Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service to them which by nature are no gods. ⁹ But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? ¹⁰ **Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.** ¹¹ I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labor in vain. ¹² Brethren, I beseech you, be as I [am]; for I [am] as ye are: ye have not injured me at all. ¹³ Ye know how through **infirmity of the flesh** I preached the gospel unto you at the first. ¹⁴ And **my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected;** but received me as an angel of God, [even] as Christ Jesus. ¹⁵ Where is then the blessedness ye spoke of? for I bear you record, that, if [it had been] possible, ye would have **plucked out your own eyes,** and have given them to me. ¹⁶ Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth? ¹⁷ They zealously affect you, [but] not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect them. ¹⁸ But [it is] good to be zealously affected always in [a] good [thing], and not only when I am present with you.

4:19-31 ***The Slave Woman (Agar) of the Flesh and the Free Woman (Sarah) of the Spirit***

(11) ¹⁹ My little children, of whom I ^a travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, ²⁰ I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. ²¹ Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law? ²² For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. ²³ But he [who was] of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. ²⁴ Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage, which is Agar. ²⁵ For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answers to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. ²⁶ But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. ²⁷ For it is written, "**REJOICE, [YOU] BARREN THAT BEAR NOT; BREAK FORTH AND CRY, YOU THAT TRAVAIL NOT: FOR THE DESOLATE HAS MANY MORE CHILDREN THAN SHE WHICH HAS A HUSBAND.**" ²⁸ Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise. ²⁹ But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him [that was born] after the Spirit, even so [it is] now. ³⁰ Nevertheless what says the Scripture? "Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman." ³¹ So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

^a We travail or labor that Christ be formed in others by:

1st – personal testimony

2nd – Work

3rd – prayer

4th – good works (His, not mine)

This is more natural as we grow in Christ, 1 John 2:12-14.

Note: Old Testament references. 4:22, Genesis 16:15. 4:27, Isaiah 54:1. 4:30, Genesis 21:10. Quotes from the movie, The Last Samurai. "From the moment they wake then devote themselves to the perfection of whatever they do," "too many minded" or "one-minded."

Galatians Chapter 5

5:1-14 **Liberty to Love One Another**

(12) ¹ Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. ² Behold, I Paul say unto you, "that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing." ³ For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. ⁴ Christ is become of no effect to you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace. ⁵ For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. ⁶ For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision; but **faith which works by love.** ⁷ Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? ⁸ This persuasion [comes] not of Him that calls you. ⁹ A little leaven leavens the whole lump. ¹⁰ I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be none otherwise minded: but **he that troubles you shall bear his judgment**, whosoever he be. ¹¹ And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet allow persecution? then is the offence of the cross ceased. ¹² I would they were even cut off which trouble you. ¹³ For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; **only [use] not liberty for an occasion to the flesh**, but by love serve one another. ¹⁴ For all the law is fulfilled in one word, [even] in this; **"YOU SHALL LOVE YOUR NEIGHBOR AS THYSELF."** /Lev 19:18/

5:15-18 **Liberty Contrasts the flesh with the Spirit** (Romans 7:1-8:17a) Law-3x, flesh-6x, Spirit-7x

(13) ¹⁵ But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another. ¹⁶ [This] I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. ¹⁷ For the flesh lusts against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. ¹⁸ But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

5:19-26 **The Believer's Choice: The Works of the Flesh or the Fruit of the Spirit**

(14) ¹⁹ Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are [these]; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, ²⁰ Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, ²¹ Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told [you] in time past, that they which practice such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. ²² But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, ²³ Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law. ²⁴ And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. ²⁵ If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

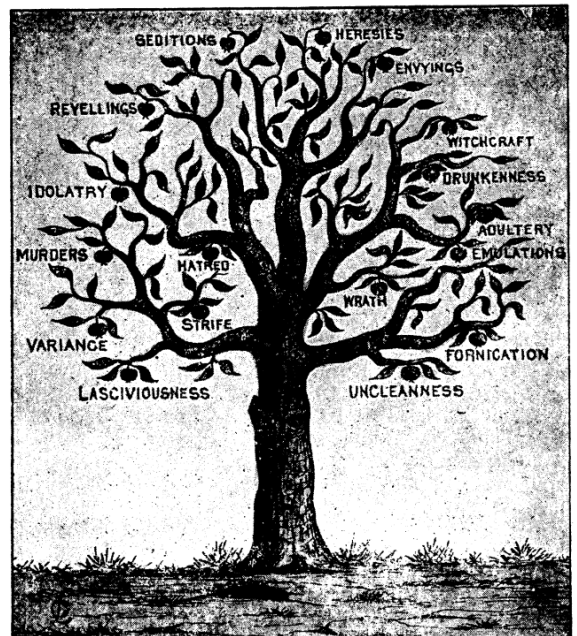
Linking verse from 5:19-21 to chapter 6:1

²⁶ Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

Notes on 5:13. Occasion is used 6x in New Testament by Paul; Ro 7:8, 7:11; 2 Cor 5:12, 11:12; Gal 5:13, and 1 Tim 5:14.

The chiastic structure of 5:15-26

- 15 one another (spirit or flesh)
- 16 walk in the spirit
- 17-23 contrast (Romans 6-8)
- 24 his grace and our faith
- 25 If we live in the spirit
- 26 one another (spirit or flesh)



The Natural Man bringing Forth the "Works of the Flesh." GAL. 5: 20-21.

www.swordsearcher.com

Galatians Chapter 6

6:1-5 *Carry One Another's Burden*

(15) ¹ Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering yourself, lest you also be tempted. ² Carry ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ. ³ For if anyone think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceives himself. ⁴ But let everyone prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another. ⁵ For everyone shall bear his own burden.

6:6-10 *We Will Reap What We Sow*

⁶ Let him that is taught in the word communicate to him that teaches in all good things. ⁷ Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man sows, that shall he also reap. ⁸ For he that sows to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that sows to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. ⁹ And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. ¹⁰ As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good to everyone, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

6:11-18 *Final Teachings*

(16) ¹¹ Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with my own hand. ¹² As many as desire to make a fair show in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should allow persecution for the cross of Christ. ¹³ For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh. ¹⁴ But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. ¹⁵ For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. ¹⁶ And as many as walk according to this rule, peace [be] on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God. ¹⁷ From henceforth let no man trouble me: for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus. ¹⁸ Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with your spirit. Amen.

[To [the] Galatians written from Rome.]

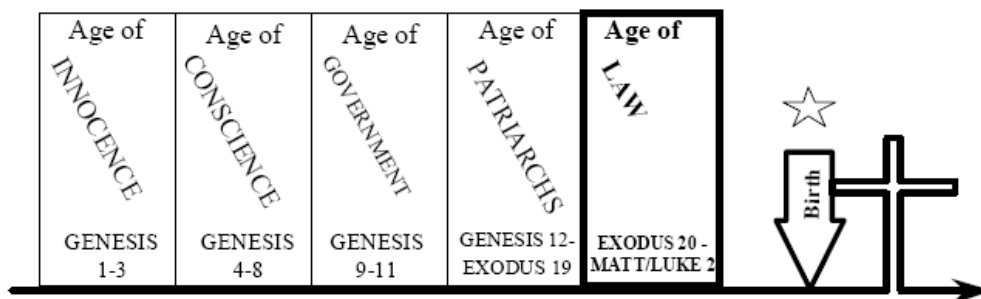
Notes:

Chapter 6:1-10 Seven Directions to Walk in the Spirit (Application, from our heart)

- 1 I will restore my brother overtaken in a trespass (Matthew 6:14-15)
- 2-3 I will carry another's burden (1 Peter 5:1-4)
- 4-5 I will carry my own burden (Matthew 11:30, John 21:20-23, 1 Peter 1:6-9)
- 6 I will communicate with my teacher in the word (2 Peter 1:12-15, John 21:15-17)
- 7-8 I will hold onto the Spirit and not my flesh (2 Peter 1:8-11)
- 9 I will not grow tired of doing well (Matthew 26:36-46)
- 10 I will do good to all, especially the household of faith (1 Peter 1:22)

Age of Law

[5]



Title: My Choice – Walk in the Spirit or Walk after the flesh (not both at the same time)

Text: Galatians 5:13-25

Occasion: 1st of 14 letters from Paul, later expounded in Romans 7:1-8:14

¹³ For, **brethren**, ye have been called to **liberty**; only [use] not liberty for an occasion to the **flesh**, but by love serve one another. ¹⁴ For all the **law** is fulfilled in one word, [even] in this; You shall love your neighbor as thyself. ¹⁵ But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

¹⁶ [This] I say then, **Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.** ¹⁷ For the **flesh** lusts **against** the **Spirit**, and the **Spirit** **against** the **flesh**: and these are **contrary** the one to the other: so that ye **cannot** do the things that ye would. ¹⁸ But if ye be led of the **Spirit**, ye are not under the **law**.

19 - 21 Now the **works** of the flesh are manifest, which are [these]; (17 each, separate, 3 groups)

Adultery: Outward - Sexual relations outside of husband and wife.

Fornication: Outward - (Greek is porneia) Sexual relations outside of marriage.

Uncleanness: Outward - All sorts of filthiness, natural or unnatural. The opposite of personal purity.

Lasciviousness: Inward - Manner of life style; sexual thoughts, desires & conversations.

Idolatry: Outward - Image worship or something you put before God.

Witchcraft: Outward - (Greek is pharmakeia) medication or magic. Witch, warlock, shama.

Hatred: Inward - Hostility or being an enemy toward another.

Variance: Outward - Strife, quarrel, or debate. Contention in NKJV.

Emulations: Inward - Jealousy for one's personal advantage.

Wrath: Outward - Outburst of anger.

Strife: Outward - Continual proneness to quarrel or contend.

Seditions: Outward - Divisions relating to secular matters. Divisions in NKJV.

Heresies: Inward - Dangerous errors in doctrine, in the mind.

Envyings: Inward - Another's good is our grief, ill will toward another.

Murders: Outward - Slaughter, executing private revenge, unjust.

Drunkenness: Outward - Given to drinking intoxicants, other than for health needs.

Revelings: Outward - Orgies, out of control in public, an excess in eating.

and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told [you] in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. Romans 13:9-13 has a similar list. Do in Hebrew is "prasso" for practice, habitual, repeatedly. 38x, 19x by Luke. See Phil 4:9. Also "poieo" for occasional, used 519x, see Gal 5:17. Wisdom: eyes & ears > heart > mind > words > acts > habits > lifestyle.

22 - 23 But the **fruit** of the **Spirit** is (9 altogether, if missing one it is not the fruit of the Holy Spirit)

Love: The root and source of the other 8. Agape love. Many times the first of top quality.

Joy: Inward Emotion - with the hope of heaven, supernatural. **Not** circumstantial happy.

Peace: Inward Emotion - the peace of God that guards our hearts. **Not** circumstantial peace.

Longsuffering: Inward - Patience in suffering while doing right. **Not** for doing wrong.

Gentleness: Outward - Kindness toward others.

Goodness: Outward - Doing what is right, honest and for the benefit of others. **Not** our benefit.

Faith: Inward - Faith or trust of God to provide and protect according to His will. **Not** faithful.

Meekness: Inward - Consistent restraint from using power or position, putting others first. **Not** humility.

Temperance: Inward - Self-control, balance, not given to impulse or extremes. In public & private.

against such there is no law. ²⁴ And they that are Christ's have **crucified the flesh** with the affections and lusts.

²⁵ If we live in the **Spirit**, let us also **walk in the Spirit**.

Ephesians (6-14, 20 min) 2020

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

Doctrine: 1 2 3

Practice: 4 5 6

12 Helps to Speak the Truth in Love

Purpose: To give direction for growing believers to continue on

Key passage: Ephesians 6:10-18

Key verse: Ephesians 5:2

Background: This letter is written to a specific congregation at a specific time that was growing in Christ. Ephesians compliments the letter to the Colossians.

Scripture

Part 1 – We Sit with Christ as

1:1-3:31

- 1) we know God has chosen us in Christ before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before God in love: 1:4
- 2) God has raised [us] up together and made [us] **sit** together in heavenly [places] in Christ Jesus: 2:6
- 3) we are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; 2:19-20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner [stone];
- 4) we **pray** to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; 3:16

Part 2 – We Walk with Christ as

4:1-6:9

- 5) we **walk worthy** of the vocation wherewith we are called, with all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. 4:1-3
- 6) we henceforth **walk not** as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind 4:17
- 7) we follow of God, as dear children; ² And **walk in love**, as Christ also has loved us, and has given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling fragrance 5:1-2
- 8) we were sometimes darkness, but now [are ye] light in the Lord **walk as children of light:** 5:8

Part 3 – We Stand with Christ as

6:10-21

- 9) we are strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might and ¹¹ Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to **stand against the wiles of the devil.** 6:10-11
- 10) we take to ourselves the whole armor of God, that we may be able to withstand in the evil day, and **having done all, to stand.** ¹⁴ **Stand** therefore 6:13-14
- 11) we pray in the Spirit, and watching with perseverance and supplication for all saints; 6:18
- 12) we are public with our affairs and practice. 6:21

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Ephesians 1:15-23	Supplication	Spiritual Growth	Carnal / James 4:3	Love	Paul for Ephesians
Ephesians 3:13-21	Supplication	Spiritual Growth	Carnal / James 4:3	Love of Christ	Paul for Ephesians
Ephesians 5:20	Thanks	Thanks to God	Unthankful	Trust	
Ephesians 6:18-20	Supplication	Saints / Boldness	Lack of Armor	In the Spirit	Eph 6:10-20

Ephesians Chapter 1

1:1-14 *Our Position in Christ*

(1) ¹ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: ² Grace [be] to you, and peace, from God our Father, and [from] the Lord Jesus Christ. ³ Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly [places] in Christ: ⁴ According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶ To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. ⁷ In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; ⁸ Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; ⁹ Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: ¹⁰ That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; [even] in him: ¹¹ In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will: ¹² That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ. ¹³ In whom ye also [trusted], after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, ¹⁴ Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of his glory.

1:15-23 *Paul's Sanctification Prayer for the Body of Christ*

(2) ¹⁵ Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love to all the saints, ¹⁶ Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; ¹⁷ That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: ¹⁸ The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, ¹⁹ And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, ²⁰ Which he worked in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set [him] at his own right hand in the heavenly [places], ²¹ Far above all principality, and authority, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: ²² And has put all [things] under his feet, and gave him [to be] the head over all [things] to the congregation, ²³ Which is his body, the fullness of him that fills all in all.

Ephesians Chapter 2

2:1-10 *God's Great Love for Us*

(3) ¹ And you [has he quickened], who were dead in trespasses and sins; ² Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the authority of the air, the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience: ³ Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. ⁴ But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, ⁵ Even when we were dead in sins, has quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) ⁶ And has raised [us] up together, and **made [us] sit together in heavenly [places] in Christ Jesus:** ⁷ That in the ages to come he might show the exceeding riches of his grace in [his] kindness toward us through Christ Jesus. ⁸ For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: [it is] the gift of God: ⁹ Not of works, lest any man should boast. ¹⁰ For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them.

Ephesians Chapter 2

2:11-22 *Uniting Jews and Non-Jews*

(4) ¹¹ Wherefore remember, that ye [being] in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; ¹² That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: ¹³ But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made near by the blood of Christ. ¹⁴ For he is our peace, who has made both one, and has broken down the middle wall of partition [between us]; ¹⁵ Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, [even] the law of commandments [contained] in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, [so] making peace; ¹⁶ And that he might reconcile both to God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: ¹⁷ And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were near. ¹⁸ For through him we both have access by one Spirit to the Father. ¹⁹ Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; ²⁰ And are ^a built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner [stone]; ²¹ In whom all the building fitly framed together grows to an holy temple in the Lord: ²² In whom ye also are built together for a habitation of God through the Spirit.

^a This foundation was laid once for all, or the whole period of the household of God, from Acts 2 to Revelation 4. The apostles are the 12 apostles, of which Judas was replaced by Paul. The prophets were after the prophets to help the early ekklesia before the Scriptures were completely revealed, until 100 AD with the book of Revelation. There are neither apostles nor prophets today, as there is no need for another cornerstone to be laid, which is Jesus Christ.

Scriptural understanding: (1) Eph 2:20, (2) 1 Cor 3:10, (3) 1 Cor 4:11. Gifts: Ro 12, 1 Cor 12, Eph 4, 1 Pe 4. 12 Apostles: Acts 1, Rev 21:14. Prophets: 1 Cor 14 proclaim gospel, OT and NT, Heb 2:4.

Ephesians Chapter 3

3:1-13 *Paul's Ministry*

(5) ¹ For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles, ² If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward: ³ How that by revelation he made known to me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words, ⁴ Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ) ⁵ Which in other ages was not made known to the sons of men, as it is now revealed to his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit; ⁶ That the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel: ⁷ Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given to me by the effectual working of his power. ⁸ To me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ; ⁹ And to make all [men] see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world has been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: ¹⁰ To the intent that now to the principalities and authorities in heavenly [places] might be known by the congregation the manifold wisdom of God, ¹¹ According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: ¹² **In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.** ¹³ Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

3:14-21 *Paul's Sanctification Prayer for the Congregation*

(6) ¹⁴ For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵ Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, ¹⁶ That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man; ¹⁷ That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love, ¹⁸ May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; ¹⁹ And to know the love of Christ, which passes knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fullness of God. ²⁰ Now to him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us, ²¹ To him [be] glory in the congregation by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

Ephesians Chapter 4

4:1-16 *How to walk worthy of the Lord*

(7) ¹ I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye **walk worthy** of the vocation wherewith ye are called, ² With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love; ³ Endeavoring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace. ⁴ [There is] one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling; ⁵ One Lord, one faith, ^a one baptism, ⁶ One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all. ⁷ But to every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

^a This baptism is clearly of the Holy Spirit at the moment salvation begins in the context of verses 3 to 6.

(8) ⁸ Wherefore he says, **WHEN HE ASCENDED UP ON HIGH, HE LED CAPTIVITY CAPTIVE, AND GAVE GIFTS TO MEN.** ⁹ (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? ¹⁰ He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.) ¹¹ And he gave some ^a apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, some ^b shepherds, some teachers; ¹² For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ: ¹³ Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ: ¹⁴ That we [henceforth] be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, [and] cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive; ¹⁵ But **speaking the truth in love**, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, [even] Christ: ¹⁶ From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplies, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, makes increase of the body to the **edifying of itself in love.**

Note: "He led captivity captive" quotes Psalm 68:18 and the triumphal victory over death. Jesus Christ led all the Old Testament saints in Abraham's Bosom (Luke 16:22) from the place of the dead, Shoel, to paradise (Luke 23:43). Jesus never went to the temporary waiting place or hell, which is heresy.

^a Apostles and prophets are first mentioned of gifts to man because they are the foundation of the church (Ephesians 2:20, Hebrews 2:1-4). ^b Shepherds is pastors ^{KJV}. Shepherd is "poimen" in Greek. Used 17 times in New Testament. 16 times referring to Jesus Christ and 1 time referring to man (Ephesians 4:11). Clearly evangelists reach the unsaved and shepherds (reach the saved) and teachers (teach truth to the saved). All spiritual leaders must be fathers (1 John 2:12-14) and therefore elders and co-laborers, whereas the distinction between clergy and laity dissolves. The Tyndale translation is chosen as the best rendering from the original Greek.

4:17-32 *Live as God's People*

(9) ¹⁷ This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, ¹⁸ Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: ¹⁹ Who being past feeling have given themselves over to lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. ²⁰ But ye have not so learned Christ; ²¹ If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: ²² That ye put off concerning the former conduct the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; ²³ And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; ²⁴ And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness. ²⁵ Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbor: for we are members one of another. ²⁶ Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: ²⁷ Neither give place to the devil. ²⁸ Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labor, working with [his] hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needs. ²⁹ Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace to the hearers. ³⁰ And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed to the day of redemption. ³¹ Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamor, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: ³² And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake has forgiven you.

5:1-20 *Imitate God*

(10) ¹ Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; ² And walk in love, as Christ also has loved us, and has given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling fragrance. ³ But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becomes saints; ⁴ Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. ⁵ For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. ⁶ Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things comes the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. ⁷ Be not ye therefore partakers with them. ⁸ For ye were sometimes darkness, but now [are ye] light in the Lord: walk as children of light: ⁹ (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) ¹⁰ Proving what is acceptable to the Lord. ¹¹ And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. ¹² For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. ¹³ But all things that are reprov'd are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever does make manifest is light. ¹⁴ Wherefore he says, Awake you that sleep, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give you light. ¹⁵ See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, ¹⁶ Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. ¹⁷ Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. ¹⁸ And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but ^a be filled with the Spirit; ¹⁹ Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; ²⁰ Giving thanks always for all things to God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;

^a The saved in the New Testament have the added privilege and duty of being filled with the Holy Spirit continually as conditions for filling are complied with.

5:21-33 *Directions to Wives and Husbands*

(11) ²¹ Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God. ²² Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands, as to the Lord. ²³ For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the congregation: and he is the savior of the body. ²⁴ Therefore as the congregation is subject to Christ, so [let] the wives [be] to their own husbands in everything. ²⁵ Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the congregation, and gave himself for it; ²⁶ That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, ²⁷ That he might present it to himself a glorious congregation, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. ²⁸ So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself. ²⁹ For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the congregation: ³⁰ For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹ For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined to his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. ³² This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the congregation. ³³ Nevertheless let everyone of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife [see] that she reverence [her] husband.

6:1-4 *Directions to Children and Parents*

(12) ¹ Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. ² Honor your father and mother; (which is the first commandment with promise;) ³ That it may be well with you, and you may live long on the earth. ⁴ And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

6:5-9 *Directions to Servants and Masters*

⁵ Servants, be obedient to them that are [your] masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as to Christ; ⁶ Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart; ⁷ With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men: ⁸ Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man does, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether [he be] slave or free. ⁹ And, ye masters, do the same things to them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

6:10-20 *Standing in the Armor of God*

(13) ¹⁰ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. ¹¹ Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the ^a wiles of the devil. ¹² For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against ^b principalities, against authorities, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high [places]. ¹³ Wherefore take to you the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. ¹⁴ Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; ¹⁵ And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; ¹⁶ Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. ¹⁷ And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God: ¹⁸ Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints; ¹⁹ And for me, that utterance may be given to me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel, ²⁰ For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

^a Methods, in Greek "methodia" denotes a deceitful scheme.

^b 4 levels of demons: (1) Principalities – 5 star generals, (2) powers – colonels and commanders, (3) rulers of the darkness of "this" world or "age" we live in – leader of wide influence, and (4) spiritual wickedness in the heavens – buck privates, not in the 3rd heaven where God is, but in the lower heaven.

6:21-24 *Final Greetings*

(14) ²¹ But that ye also may know my affairs, [and] how I practice, Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things: ²² Whom I have sent to you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and [that] he might comfort your hearts. ²³ Peace [be] to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. ²⁴ Grace [be] with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in ^a **incorruption**. Amen. [To [the] Ephesians written from Rome, by Tychicus.]

^a Sincerity KJV. From Greek and better translated for context in Darby Bible.

Ephesians 6:10-24



2 Peter 1:19-21 (vision)

Note: The 7th article binds the others together. Our personal prayer life and how it benefits from the Body of Christ (other believers)

vs 19-20: Mathew 28:18-20 (the Great Comission)

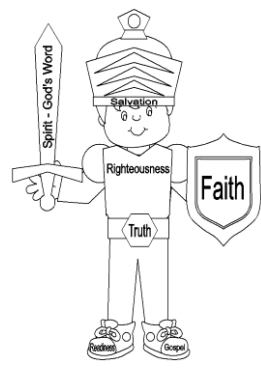


vs 18: John 15:7, Luke 11:1-13 James 4:7-10, 5:13

Note: The next 3 items are for defensive (shield) and offensive (sword) warfare; as we keep on the first 3 articles and live by faith

vs 17b: Colossians 3:16, 2 Peter 1:19-21, 1 John 2:14, 2 Timothy 4:2

Put on the whole armor of God!



vs 17a: Romans 12:1-2, 2 Corinthians 10:3-6, Philipians 2:5-8

Note: The putting on of the first 3 articles of clothing reflect our character as we learn how to sit and walk in Jesus Christ

vs 16: Romans 10:17, Hebrews 11:6

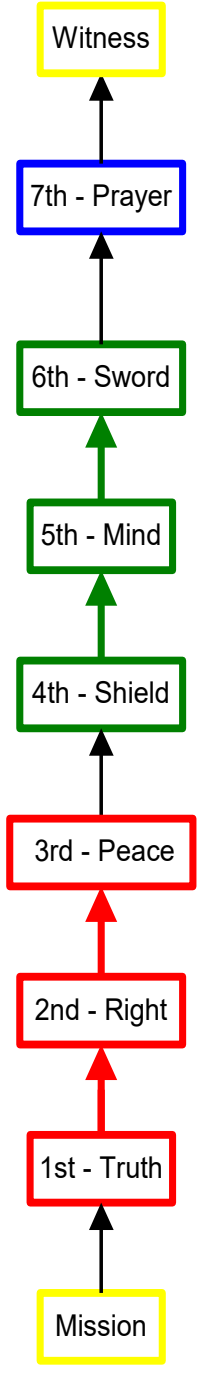
vs 15: Mathew 5:9, Colossians 3:15



vs 14b: Romans 8:4

vs 14a: 2 Peter 1:5, 1 John 2:21

vs 10-13: We are in a spiritual warfare that requires spiritual armour, protection and weapons



Spiritual laws of the 3 positions in Ephesians: Sit in 1:1-3:21, Walk in 4:1-6:9, Stand in 6:10-24

PAUL'S PRAYERS FOR THE EPHESIAN CONGREGATION

Eph 1:15-16 (Introduction) Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the **Lord Jesus**, and love to all the saints, Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

Eph 1:17-18 (Prayer) That the **God of our Lord Jesus Christ**, the **Father of glory**, may give to you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of **him**: the eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that you may know what is the hope of **his** calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of **his** power to us-ward who believe,

Eph 1:19-21 (conclusion) according to the working of **his** mighty power, which **he** worked in **Christ**, when **he** raised **him** from the dead, and set **him** at **his** own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And has put all things under **his** feet, and gave **him** to be the head over all things to the church, which is **his** body, the fullness of **him** that fills all in all.

Father -10 (God, Father, him, his)
 Son - 8 (Lord Jesus , Christ, him, his)
 Spirit - 0

Congregation-9 (your, you, saints, us-ward, church, body)
 Paul -6 (I, my, saints, us-ward)
 Love -1 Glory -1 Heart -0

* Exceeding greatness, mighty power, far above. ** Wisdom, revelation, knowledge, understanding, enlightened. *** When he raised him from the dead and set at his own right hand in heavenly places.

Eph 3:14–15 (Introduction) For this cause I bow my knees to the **Father of our Lord Jesus Christ**, of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

Eph 3:16–19 (Prayer) That **he** would grant you, according to the riches of **his** glory, to be strengthened with might by **his** **Spirit** in the inner man; That **Christ** may dwell in your hearts by faith; that you, being rooted and grounded in love, May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of **Christ**, which passes knowledge, that you might be filled with all the **fullness of God**.

Eph 3:20 -21 (Ending) Now unto **him** that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us, to **him** be glory in the church by **Christ Jesus** throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

Father -7 (Father, God, he, his, him)
 Son -3 (Christ-2, Christ Jesus)
 Spirit -1 (Spirit in the inner man, in us)

Church -9 (family, saints, congregation, you, your, we, us)
 Paul -4 (I, we, us, saints, family, congregation)
 Love -2 Glory -1, Heart -1

* Filled, fullness, exceeding abundantly above, power, strengthened, might
 ** Comprehend, passes knowledge. *** We, us, us-ward – Romans 6

Philippians (4-12, 14 min) 2018

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4

12 Points of Discipleship

(lesson 1 of 5)

Background: Paul was in jail in Rome. The unveiling of Discipleship.

<u>Discipline</u>	<u>Passage Title</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Prayer/Love	Let's fellowship in the gospel	1:1-11
2) Love/Witness	How to handle envy, strife and conflict (within the congregation)	1:12-30
3) Love	Let's be likeminded in the fellowship of the Spirit	2:1-4
4) Obedience	Let the mind of Christ Jesus be in you	2:5-11
5) Obedience	Let's be obedient so we may rejoice in the day of Christ	2:12-18
6) Love	Let's rejoice in likeminded leadership (caring, servants and examples)	2:19-30
7) Wisdom	Let's not have confidence in our flesh	3:1-9a
8) Wisdom	Let's have confidence in the faith of Christ	3:9b-16
9) Wisdom	Let's follow heavenly and not earthly examples (in the congregation)	3:17-21
10) Scripture	How sound doctrine and practice produce joy and peace	4:1-9
11) Love	How to receive and give financially	4:10-20
12) Love	Let's salute every saint in Christ Jesus	4:21-23

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Philippians 1:3-6 (4)	Supplication	Continued fellowship in the Gospel		Thanks (vs 3) Praise (vs 6)	Paul for Philippian believers
Philippians 4:6	Supplication			Thanksgiving	

THE UNVEILING OF DISCIPLESHIP IN 5 LESSONS FROM PHILIPPIANS

<u>Lesson</u>	<u>Focus</u>	<u>P-word</u>	<u>Illustration</u>	<u>Related Scripture</u>
1 st Discipleship	Relationship	Position	Discipleship Wheel	Romans 1-5, 2 Timothy 2:2
<u>Cause:</u> 2 nd Thoughts	Mind	Path	Apologia – defense/answer	Romans 6-7, Titus 3:5
3 rd All (pas)	24/7	Pattern	*Ac 22:1; 25:16; 1Co 9:3; 2Co 7:11; Php 1:7,17; 2Ti 4:16; 1Pe 3:15 Follow me, mark them	Romans 8
4 th Rejoice in the Lord		Providence	Paul / Philippians	Romans 9-11
<u>Effect:</u> 5 th Love	Heart	Practice	increasing	Romans 12-16
Eternal friendship				Philemon

12 Steps to Mental Health

(lesson 2 of 5)

Key verse: 3:10. Reference is Strong's Greek Dictionary

5426 phroneo *fron-eh'-o* See Greek 5424. **to exercise the mind**, i.e. entertain, (mentally) disposed (more or less earnestly in a certain direction); intensively, to interest oneself in (with concern or obedience):--set the affection on, care(-ful). Used in 9 verses / New Testament 27 verses. Philippians 17x, Romans 8-1x & 12-15-10x, Corinthians 3x, Galatians 2x, Acts 1x, Col 1x, Matthew 16:23/Mark 8:33 "he rebuked Peter, saying, get thee behind me Satan: for you mind not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men."

<u>Step</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) think of you, because I have you in my heart. Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:	1:7, 2:5
Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in anything ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this to you. Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, Let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.	3:15-16
3) I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.	4:2
4) Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, think on these things. ginosko ghin-oc'e'-ko. A prolonged form of a primary verb; to "know" (absolutely). Used in 5 verses / New Testament 208 verses.	4:8
5) Ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened to me further the gospel.	1:12
6) But ye know the proof of him, that, as a son with the father, he has served with me in the gospel.	2:22
7) That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death;	3:10
8) Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand. 1492. eido i'-do. a primary verb; to see (literally or figuratively); by implication, (in the perfect tense only) to know:--be aware, (have) know(-ledge), be sure. Used in 8 verses / New Testament 625 verses.	4:5
9) But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defense of the gospel.	1:17
10) Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.	4:9
11) I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: everywhere and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.	4:12
12) Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no congregation communicated with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.	4:15

12 Evidence of Excellency in Character (all & every)

(lesson 3 of 5)

Key verse: 4:13, 4:19

Reference is Strong's Greek Dictionary

pas (31x)

including all the forms of declension; apparently a primary word; all, any, every, the whole:--all (manner of, means), alway(-s), any (one), X daily, + ever, every (one, way), as many as, + no(-thing), X thoroughly, whatsoever, whole, whosoever.

pantote pan'-tot-eh; (4x) every when, i.e. at all times:--alway(-s), ever(-more).

<u>Step</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) I thank my God upon every remembrance of you, Always in every prayer of mine for you all	1:3-4
2) in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.	1:7
3) your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and in all judgment;	1:9
4) Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.	2:12
5) Do all things without murmurings and disputings:	2:14
6) no man will naturally care for you. For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's.	2:21
7) I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ	3:8
8) Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.	3:21
9) Rejoice in the Lord always: and again I say, Rejoice. Let your moderation be known to all men. The Lord is at hand.	4:4-5
10) I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: everywhere and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.	4:12
11) I can do all things through Christ which strengthens me.	4:13
12) But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.	4:19

Lesson: The last 2 passages of all , 4:13 and 4:19, come after the rest of the book. This is a divine order of inspiration in which we can learn the pattern, progress and promises of discipleship.

12 Reasons to Rejoice

(lesson 4 of 5)

Who is rejoicing? (18x) I, my, mine (Paul) – 8x. Ye - you all, your, brethren (Philippians) – 8x (Paul & Philippians) together – 2x. Synonyms: Joy, Boast(ing)

REJOICE (11x) chaïro, khah'-ee-ro (P)Paul – 5x, (Ph)Philippians -6x
a primary verb; to be "cheer"ful, i.e. calmly happy or well-off; impersonally, especially as salutation (on meeting or parting), be well:--farewell, be glad, God speed, greeting, hall, joy(- fully), rejoice.

<u>Reason</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) <u>every</u> <pas> way, whether in pretense, or in truth, Christ is preached; and I <chaïro> therein do rejoice <chaïro> , yes, and will rejoice <chaïro> .	1:18
* Bill's Paraphrase: Christ is preached; and (I) rejoice. In this (I) rejoice, yes, and will rejoice.	
2) Yes , and if I be offered <spendo> upon <epi> the sacrifice <thusia> and service of your faith, I joy <chaïro> , and <u>rejoice with <sugchaïro></u> you <u>all</u> <pas>.	2:17
3) For the same cause also do <chaïro> ye joy <chaïro> , and <u>rejoice with <sugchaïro></u> me. * Bill's Paraphrase: For the same cause also rejoice; all of you rejoice and rejoice with me.	2:18
4) Finally, my brethren, rejoice <chaïro> in the Lord <kurios>. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe. (Gk – safe is secure, sure, confident)	3:1
* Lord-687x in NT, Lord God 120x in Mt-Mk-Lu, Rev. Not in John 11:27, 20:28. Lord refers to Jesus	2:11
5) Rejoice <chaïro> in the Lord <kurios> always: and again I say, Rejoice <chaïro> .	4:4
JOY (5x) chara, khar-ah' (P)Paul – 3x, (Ph)Philippians – 2x cheerfulness, i.e. calm delight:--gladness, X greatly, (X be exceeding) joy(-ful, -fully, -fulness, -ous)	
6) Always in every <pas> prayer of mine for you all <pas> making request with joy <chara>	1:4
7) And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all <pas> for your furtherance and joy <chara> of faith	1:25
8) Fulfil ye my joy <chara> , that ye be likeminded, having the same love <agape>, being of one accord, of one mind.	2:2
9) Receive him therefore in the Lord <kurios> with all <pas> gladness <chara> ; and hold such in reputation:	2:29
* Gladness: Translations with joy – Darby, Spanish RV (gozo), WEB, Wycliffe, YLT	
10) Therefore, my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my joy <chara> and crown, stand fast in the Lord <kurios>, my dearly beloved.	4:1
BOAST (2x) kauchaomai, kow-khah'-om-ahee (to boast); to vaunt; (in a good or a bad sense):--(make) boast, glory, joy, rejoice. God-47x, Jesus-23c, Holy Spirit-1x.	
11) That your rejoicing (boasting) may be more abundant <u>in Jesus Christ</u> for me by my coming to you again. * Rejoicing: Translations – Darby, YLT, SRV (gloria), (all translate boasting), Wyc (thanking ?)	1:26
12) Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoice (boast) <u>in the day of Christ</u> , that I have not run in vain, neither labored in vain.	2:16
* Rejoice: Translations – Darby, WEB, SRV (gloriarme), Wycliffe (glorie) (all translate boast)	

12 Evidence of Love

(lesson 5 of 5)

<u>Evidence</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy, For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now;	1:4-5
2) to <u>think</u> this of you all, because I have you in my heart . For God is my witness,	1:7-8a
3) the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear .	1:14
4) in lowliness of mind let us esteem each other better than ourselves .	2:3
5) Timothy : For I have no man likeminded, who will naturally care for your state. For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's. (2:19-24)	2:20-21
6) Epaphroditus : For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick. (2:25-30)	2:26
7) To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you [it is] safe. Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.	3:1-2
8) Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample.	3:17
9) I beseech Euodias , and beseech Syntyche , that they be of the same mind in the Lord.	4:2
10) I entreat you also, true yokefellow , help those women which labored with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and [with] other my fellow laborers , whose names are in the book of life.	4:3
11) How to receive : Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, [therewith] to be content. (4:10-19)	4:11
12) Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you. All the saints salute you	4:21-22
4:23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you all. Amen.	

Note: By knowledge and wisdom from God Paul became all things to all men that he may win some. This is evident when comparing the letter to the Romans, which is western world block, sequential logic; to the letter to the Philippians, which is eastern world thematic, interwoven, natural logic. As a Roman and Hebrew he could adjust himself to his audience. Even though the language of the New Testament is Greek, the underlying culture transcends the language, when mixed with diligence to live and spread the gospel (Matthew 20:16-20).

1:1-2 Paul's Greeting

(1) ¹ Paul and Timothy, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the ^a overseers and ^b deacons: ² Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father, and [from] the Lord Jesus Christ.

1:3-6 Prayer for the Philippians

³ I thank my God upon every remembrance of you, ⁴ Always in every prayer of mine for you all making request with **joy**, ⁵ For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day until now; ⁶ Being confident of this very thing, that ^c he which has begun a good work in you will perform [it] until the day of Jesus Christ:

^a Overseer in Darby Bible. Bishop ^{KJV}. Greek – episkopos. ^b Ministers in Darby Bible. Also translated servants. Greek – diakonos. Elder – presbuteros. Pastor or shepherd - poimen. ^c Romans 8:29, predestined to be conformed to the image of Christ.

1:7-11

(2) ⁷ Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart; inasmuch as both in my bonds, and in the defense and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

⁸ For God is my witness, how greatly I long after you all in the bowels of Jesus Christ. ⁹ And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and [in] all judgment; ¹⁰ That ye may approve things that are excellent; that ye may be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ; ¹¹ Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God.

1:12-20 Paul Advances the Gospel

¹² But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things [which happened] to me have fallen out rather to the furtherance of the gospel; ¹³ So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other [places]; ¹⁴ And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear. ¹⁵ Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and strife; and some also of good will: ¹⁶ The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds: ¹⁷ But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defense of the gospel. ¹⁸ What then? notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretense, or in truth, Christ is preached; and [I] **rejoice**, in this [I] do **rejoice**, yes, and will **rejoice**. ¹⁹ For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, ²⁰ According to my earnest expectation and [my] hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but [that] with all boldness, as always, [so] now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether [it be] by life, or by death.

1:21-30

(3) ²¹ For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. ²² But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labor: yet what I shall choose I know not. ²³ For I am in a straight between two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: ²⁴ Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you. ²⁵ And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your furtherance and **joy** of faith; ²⁶ That your **boasting** may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me by my coming to you again. ²⁷ Only let your conversation be as it becomes the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that **ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the gospel**; ²⁸ And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God. ²⁹ For to you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to ^a allow for his sake; ³⁰ Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear [to be] in me.

^a Hebrews 12:1-4

Philippians Chapter 2

2:1-18 **How to Be a Joyful Light with Each Other** (in a dark world)

Be Humble Minded

(4)¹ If [there be] any consolation in Christ,
if any comfort of love,
if any fellowship of the **Spirit**,
if any bowels and mercies,

² Fulfill ye my **joy**,
that ye be ^a **likeminded**,
having the same **love**,
being of one accord,
of **one mind**.

³ Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in **lowliness of mind** let us **esteem each other better** than ourselves. ⁴ Look not every man **on his own things**, but every man also on the **things of others**.

And Follow Christ Jesus (James 4:7-10)

(5)⁵ **Let this mind be in you**, which was also in Christ Jesus: ⁶ Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: ⁷ But made himself of **no reputation**, and took upon him the form of a **servant**, and was made in the likeness of men: ⁸ And being found in habit as a man, he **humbled** himself, and became **obedient unto death**, even the death of the cross.

Knowing the God Rewards in the Future

⁹ Wherefore God also hath **highly exalted** him, and given him a name which is **above every name**:
¹⁰ That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; ¹¹ And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Due to Our Obedience Now

(6)¹² Wherefore, my beloved, **as ye have always obeyed**, not as in my presence only, but **now much more in my absence**, **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling**. ¹³ For it is God which works in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. ¹⁴ Do all things without murmurings and disputings:
¹⁵ That ye may be **blameless** and **harmless**, the sons of God, without ^a rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation,

^a Censure – to disdain, disapprove, not accept

Due to Our Witness now (Ephesians 6:10-24)

among whom ye **shine as lights in the world**; ¹⁶ Holding forth the word of life;

Guarantees Our Joy in the Future and Now

that I may **rejoice in the day of Christ**, that **I have not run in vain, neither labored in vain**.

¹⁷ Yea, and if I be ^a poured forth upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I **joy**, and **rejoice** with you all. ¹⁸ For the same cause also do ye **joy**, and **rejoice** with me.

^a As the drink offering, always real wine in the Old testament

Philippians Chapter 2

2:19-30 *Timothy and Epaphroditus Will Come*

¹⁹ But I trust in the Lord Jesus to send Timothy shortly to you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state. ²⁰ For I have no man likeminded, who will naturally care for your state. ²¹ For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ's. ²² But ye know the proof of him, that, as a son with the father, he has served with me in the gospel. ²³ Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me. ⁴ But I trust in the Lord that I also myself shall come shortly. ²⁵ Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother, and companion in labor, and fellow soldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants. ²⁶ For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick. ²⁷ For indeed he was sick near to death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow. ²⁸ I sent him therefore the more carefully, that, when ye see him again, ye may **rejoice**, and that I may be the less sorrowful. ²⁹ Receive him therefore in the Lord with all **joy**; and hold such in reputation: ³⁰ Because for the work of Christ he was near to death, not regarding his life, to supply your lack of service toward me.

Philippians Chapter 3

3:1-16 *Continual Growing in Christ, by Faith*

(7) ¹ Finally, my brethren, **rejoice** in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you [it is] safe. ² Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision. ³ For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and boast in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. ⁴ Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinks that he has whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more: ⁵ Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, [of] the tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of the Hebrews; as concerning the law, a Pharisee; ⁶ Concerning zeal, persecuting the congregation; concerning the righteousness which is in the law, blameless. ⁷ But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. ⁸ Yes doubtless, and I count all things [but] loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them [but] dung, that I may win Christ,

(8) ⁹ And be found in him, not having my own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith: ¹⁰ That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable to his death; ¹¹ If by any means I might attain to the resurrection of the dead. ¹² Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus. ¹³ **Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but [this] one thing [I do], forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth to those things which are before,** ¹⁴ **I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.** ¹⁵ **Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in anything ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this to you.** ¹⁶ Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.

3:17-21 *Imitate Paul*

(9) ¹⁷ Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensample. ¹⁸ (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, [that they are] the enemies of the cross of Christ: ¹⁹ Whose end is destruction, whose God [is their] belly, and [whose] glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.) ²⁰ For our conversation is in heaven; from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: ²¹ Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like to his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things to himself.

Philippians Chapter 4

4:1-3 *Paul's Advice*

(10) ¹ Therefore, my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my **joy** and crown, so stand firm in the Lord, [my] dearly beloved. ² I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord. ³ And I entreat you also, true yokefellow, help those women which labored with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and [with] other my fellow laborers, whose names are in the book of life.

4:4-9 *Rejoice in the Lord*

⁴ **Rejoice** in the Lord always: [and] again I say, **Rejoice**. ⁵ Let your moderation be known to all men. The Lord is at hand. ⁶ Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known to God. ⁷ And the peace of God, which passes all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. ⁸ **Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if [there be] any virtue, and if [there be] any praise, think on these things.** ⁹ Those things, which ye have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me, practice: and the God of peace shall be with you.

4:10-19 *Paul Says Thank You*

(11) ¹⁰ But I **rejoiced** in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me has flourished again; wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity. ¹¹ Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am, [therewith] to be content. ¹² I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: everywhere and in all things I am instructed both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to ^a allow need. ¹³ I can do all things through Christ which strengthens me. ¹⁴ Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction. ¹⁵ Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no congregation communicated with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only. ¹⁶ For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again to my necessity. ¹⁷ Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account. ¹⁸ But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things [which were sent] from you, an odor of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God. ¹⁹ But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

^a Some versions translate the Greek into suffer. Allow is more accurate contextually and helpful to understand spiritually for Christ likeness.

4:20-23 *Farewell*

(12) ²⁰ Now to God and our Father [be] glory for ever and ever. Amen. ²¹ Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you. ²² All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Caesar's household. ²³ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you all. Amen. [To [the] Philippians written from Rome, by Epaphroditus.]

Colossians (4-16, 13 min) 2020

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book**

1 2 3 4

12 Exhortations to be Hid with Christ in God

Purpose: Doctrine & Instruction for the believers at Colosse. Congregation about 5 yrs. old. 60-62 AD

Key verse: 3:3

Key Words: Death – Resurrection 5x, Mystery 4x, Head – Body 3x, Beguile 2x, Reward 2x

The Godhead: Father 26x, Son 65x, Holy Spirit 1x

Background: False ideas and practices are entering a young body of believers and taking away from the sufficiency of their position and walk in Christ. Replacing the real thing with weak substitutes. This is a young congregation, 3-5 years old.

<u>Theme</u>	<u>Key Verse</u>	<u>Warning (W) & Teaching (T)</u>	1:28	<u>Scripture</u>
DOCTRINE: 1:1-2:3				
1) Greeting to faithful brethren	1:2	Prison letters: Eph-Phil-Col-Philemon		1:1 - 2
2) Christ the Lover	1:8	(T) The Holy Spirit enables us to love		1:3 - 8
3) Christ the Preeminent	1:18	(T) The head-body relation, mystery 2x		1:9 - 18
4) Christ the Reconciler	1:20	(T) to Present me holy, unblameable & ...		1:19 - 23
5) Christ in you, the hope of glory	1:27	(T) Mystery hid before, revealed to saints		1:24 - 2:3
PRACTICE: 2:4-4:18 (beguile in 2:4 & 2:18 = delude or deceive)				
6) Christ – not philosophy\tradition	2:8	(W) We are complete in Christ		2:4 - 10
7) Christ – not religious system	2:18	(W) Buried then risen, head-body relation		2:11 - 23
8) Christ – not disobedience	3:6	(W) Put off the old man – on the new man		3:1 - 11
9) Christ in all things	3:17	(T) Choose to “put on” 17 things		3:12 – 17
10) Christ in the home	3:24	(T) Right rewarded, wrong not rewarded		3:18 - 4:1
11) Christ in prayer and wisdom	4:2	(T) Speak the mystery of Christ, time		4:2 - 6
12) Greeting to specific brethren	4:12	Epaphras labors in prayer with purpose		4:7 - 18

Prayers of the Bible

(note the order of 1-2 for them, 3 instruction, 4 request, and 5 example)

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
Colossians 1:3	Supplication Thanks	Love of saints Wisdom / Others		1-Prayer for Colossians	Paul & Timothy
Colossians 1:9-13	Supplication, 9-11 Thank/praise, 12-18	Wisdom / Others		2-Prayer for Colossians	Paul & Timothy
Colossians 4:2	Supplication Thanks	Continue		3-Continue in prayer And more	Exhort Colossian brethren to pray
Colossians 4:3-4	Supplication	Speak mystery of salv. & sanct.		4-Prayer request by Paul & Timothy	Colossian brethren
Colossians 4:12	Supplication Fervent labor	Christ formed in others		5-Prays for Colossian brethren	Epaphras the servant of Christ

Colossians Chapter 1

1:1-8 *Honoring the Saints at Colosse*

(1) ¹ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy [our] brother, ² To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ which are at Colosse: Grace [be] to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. ³ We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you, ⁴ Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love [which ye have] to all the saints, ⁵ For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel; ⁶ Which is come to you, as [it is] in all the world; and brings forth fruit, as [it does] also in you, since the day ye heard [of it], and knew the grace of God in truth: ⁷ As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow servant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ; ⁸ Who also declared to us your love in the Spirit.

1:9-18 *Prayer of intercession (9-11), thanks (12-14), and praise (15-18)*

(2) ⁹ For this cause we also, since the day we heard [it], do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; ¹⁰ That ye might walk worthy of the Lord to all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; ¹¹ Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, to all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; ¹² Giving thanks to the Father, which has made us fit to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: ¹³ Who has delivered us from the authority of darkness, and has translated [us] into the kingdom of his dear Son: ¹⁴ In whom we have redemption ^a through his blood, [even] the forgiveness of sins: ¹⁵ Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: ¹⁶ For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether [they be] thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or authorities: all things were created by him, and for him: ¹⁷ And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. ¹⁸ And he is the head of the body, the congregation: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all [things] he might have the preeminence.

^a the text "through his blood" is missing in the Alexandrian family of Greek manuscripts. Of course we are redeemed though his blood and not through any earthly institution or series of rituals or works.

1:19-22 *The Saints Positional Holiness*

(3) ¹⁹ For it pleased [the Father] that in him should all fullness dwell; ²⁰ And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things to himself; by him, [I say], whether [they be] things in earth, or things in heaven. ²¹ And you, that were sometime alienated and enemies in [your] mind by wicked works, yet now has he reconciled ²² In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight:

1:23-27 *The Saints Practical Holiness (the riches of the mystery of Christ in me)*

(4) ²³ If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and [be] not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, [and] which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister; ²⁴ Who now rejoice in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh for his body's sake, which is the congregation: ²⁵ Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God which is given to me for you, to fulfill the Word of God; ²⁶ [Even] the mystery which has been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints: ²⁷ To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

1:28-29 *The Mature Believer's Labor to Present Others Perfect in Christ Jesus*

²⁸ Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom; that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus: ²⁹ Whereunto I also labor, striving according to his working, which works in me mightily.

False Religious Systems Exposed

2:1-3 *Paul's Burden for the Believers*

(6) ¹ For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and [for] them at Laodicea, and [for] as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; ² That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; ³ In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

2:4-12 *Beware of Religious Philosophy, Traditions of Men, and the Rudiments of this World*

(7) ⁴ And this I say, lest **any man should beguile you with enticing words.** ⁵ For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the steadfastness of your faith in Christ. ⁶ As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, [so] walk ye in him: ⁷ Rooted and built up in him, and established in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. ⁸ **Beware lest any man spoil you** through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. ⁹ For in him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. ¹⁰ And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and authority: ¹¹ In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: ¹² Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with [him] through the faith of the operation of God, who has raised him from the dead.

2:13-15 *The Believer's Practical Victory Over Sin, Principalities and Powers*

(8) ¹³ And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, has he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses; ¹⁴ Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross; ¹⁵ [And] having spoiled principalities and authorities, he made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

2:16-23 *Beware of Religious Legalism, Spiritualism, and Pride*

(9) ¹⁶ Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of a holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath [days]: ¹⁷ Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. ¹⁸ **Let no man beguile you of your reward** in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, ¹⁹ And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increases with the increase of God. ²⁰ Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, ²¹ (Touch not; taste not; handle not; ²² Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? ²³ Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honor to the satisfying of the flesh.

Colossians Chapter 3

3:1-4 **Positional Truths for all Believers**

(10) ¹ If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sits on the right hand of God. ² Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. ³ For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God. ⁴ When Christ, [who is] our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

Practical Truths for all Believers

3:5-9 **Eleven Behaviors for Believers to PUT OFF**

(11) ⁵ Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry: ⁶ For which things' sake the wrath of God comes on the children of disobedience: ⁷ In the which ye also walked some time, when ye lived in them.

⁸ But now ye also put off all these; anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth. ⁹ Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

3:10-17 **Eleven Behaviors for Believers to PUT ON**

(12) ¹⁰ And have put on the new [man], which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him: ¹¹ Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond [nor] free: but Christ is all, and in all. ¹² Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved: bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, longsuffering; ¹³ Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also [do] ye.

¹⁴ And above all these things [put on] charity, which is the bond of perfectness. ¹⁵ And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful. ¹⁶ Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord. ¹⁷ And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, [do] all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

3:18-21 **Right Family Behavior**

(13) ¹⁸ Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. ¹⁹ Husbands, love [your] wives, and be not bitter against them. ²⁰ Children, obey [your] parents in all things: for this is well pleasing to the Lord. ²¹ Fathers, provoke not your children [to anger], lest they be discouraged.

3:22-4:1 **Right Work Behavior**

(14) ²² Servants, obey in all things [your] masters according to the flesh; not with eye service, as men pleasers; but in singleness of heart, fearing God: ²³ And whatsoever ye do, do [it] heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men; ²⁴ Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. ²⁵ But he that does wrong shall receive for the wrong which he has done: and there is no respect of persons.

^{4:1} Masters, give to [your] servants that which is just and equal; knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

Colossians Chapter 4

4:2-6 *Right Community Behavior*

(15) ² Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving; ³ Withal praying also for us, that God would open to us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds: ⁴ That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak. ⁵ Walk in wisdom toward them that are outside, redeeming the time. ⁶ [Let] your speech [be] always with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

4:7-18 *Right Brotherly Behavior*

(16) ⁷ All my state shall Tychicus declare to you, [who is] a beloved brother, and a faithful minister and fellow servant in the Lord: ⁸ Whom I have sent to you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts; ⁹ With Onesimus, a faithful and beloved brother, who is [one] of you. They shall make known to you all things which [are done] here. ¹⁰ Aristarchus my fellow prisoner salutes you, and Marcus, sister's son to Barnabas, (concerning whom ye received commandments: if he come to you, receive him;) ¹¹ And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only [are my] fellow workers to the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort to me. ¹² Epaphras, who is [one] of you, a servant of Christ, salutes you, always laboring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God. ¹³ For I bear him record, that he has a great zeal for you, and them [that are] in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis. ¹⁴ Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas, greet you. ¹⁵ Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the congregation which is in his house. ¹⁶ And when this letter is read among you, cause that it be read also in the congregation of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the [letter] from Laodicea. ¹⁷ And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which you have received in the Lord, that you fulfill it. ¹⁸ The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace [be] with you. Amen. [Written from Rome to Colossians by Tychicus and Onesimus.]

1 Thessalonians (5-17, 12 min) 2021

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5

12 Preparations for the Rapture of the Church

Purpose: Spiritual growth during persecution while waiting for the rapture of the Church

Key Words: Love, Witness, Suffering, Holiness, Brethren 24x, Prayer 6x

A congregation is prepared as: (we/our includes local churches and individual believers) Scripture

- 1) our work of faith and labor of love, and patience of hope is evident to many 1:3
- 2) we are examples to all who believe in our area, and the word is spread and our faith is known 1:7-8
- 3) we wait for God's Son from heaven, which delivered us from the wrath to come 1:10
- 4) we walk worthy of God, who has called us unto his kingdom and glory 2:12
- 5) we are the hope, joy & crown of rejoicing for our elders in the presence of Christ at his coming 2:19-20
- 6) we establish our hearts unblameable in holiness before God when Christ comes with His saints 3:13
- 7) we don't sorrow for those who sleep in Jesus, who God will bring with Jesus 4:13-14
- 8) we shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air 4:17-18
- 9) we know that the day of the Lord comes as a thief in the night 5:2
- 10) we don't sleep as others, but watch with sobriety 5:6
- 11) we know God has not appointed us to wrath; whether we wake or sleep, we shall be with Jesus 5:9-10
- 12) the God of peace sanctify us wholly; blameless for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ 5:23

Prayers of the Bible

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
I Thessalonians 1:2	Thanks Supplication	Good testimony of believers		Prayer for Thessalonians	Paul, Silas & Timothy
I Thessalonians 3:9-13	Thanks Supplication	Hearts unblameable	John 15:7	Night & day pray exceedingly	Paul, Silas & Timothy
I Thessalonians 5:17	Conversation Pray w/o ceasing	Walk in love	Inconsistency	Daily with Morning Prayer	Exhort Thes believers to pray
I Thessalonians 5:25	Supplication	Love for one another	Un-Faithfulness	Prayer Request by Paul & others	Thessalonian believers

Background: Paul's 2nd missionary journey in Acts 16-18. One of the 7 churches the Apostle Paul wrote to. The 7 churches Paul wrote unto are different than the 7 churches that Jesus Christ wrote unto in Revelation 2-3. Different in content, time, and location (except Ephesus). Paul had just been jailed in Phillipi, had a vision to go to Macedonia. Thessalonica is the capital of this Roman province, a major city of commerce and trade with 200K, He is run out after 1-2 months (Acts 17:1-9). At Athens Paul sends Timothy to Thessalonica. Timothy returns to meet Paul early during his 18 months at Corinth (Acts 18:5), where he writes First Thessalonians around 52 A.D. and Second Thessalonians around 1 year later.

1 Thessalonians

1. 1:1-10 Salvation
2. 2:1-3:9 Sanctification of Pastors
3. 3:10-4:12 Sanctification of believers & 2 sins
4. 4:13-5:11 Rapture of Church, wrath & prerapture
5. 5:12-5:28 Sanctification of believers, specifics

2 Thessalonians

6. 1:1-4 Sanctification of believers
7. 1:5-2:12 Return of Christ, rapture & wrath
8. 2:13-3:18 Sanctification of believers & 1 sin
9. 1 & 2 Thes Rapture Readiness self-assessment

1 Thessalonians Chapter 1

1:1-10 **Introduction (1-2) Salvation and our Gospel: Past, Present, & Future (3-10)**

(1) ¹ Paul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians [which is] in God the Father and [in] the Lord Jesus Christ /S2/: Grace [be] to you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ /S2/. ² We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers /S2/;

³ Remembering without ceasing your

1. work of faith, and /S1, past salvation – work is ergo, 1 Thes 5:13, 2 Thes 1:11, 2:17. Faith 15x./
2. labor of love, and /S2, present sanctification – labor is trouble and toil, 1 Thes 2:9, 3:5, 2 Thes
3. patience of hope /R2, future return of Christ. Hope – certain, 1 Thes 2:19, 4:13, 5:8, 2 Thes 2:16/ in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father;

⁴ Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God /S2/. ⁵ For our gospel came not unto you in word only /S2/,

1. but also in power, /S1, past salvation – dynamis or dynamite, 2 Cor 5:17/
2. and in the Holy Ghost, /S2, present sanctification, John 15:5 /
3. and in much assurance; /R2, future return – certain confidence, Hebrews 6:11 to the end/ as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake /S2/.

(2) ⁶ And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord /S2/, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost /S2/:

⁷ So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia /S2/. ⁸ For from you sounded out the Word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad; so that we need not to speak anything /S2/.

⁹ For they themselves show of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and

1. how ye turned to God from idols /S1, past salvation – each believer/
2. to serve the living and true God; /S2, present sanctification – serve God first, then others/
3. ¹⁰ And to wait for His Son from heaven, /R2, future/ whom He raised from the dead, [even] Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come. /R2, 2:16, 5:9, after in the clouds/ tribulation as prophesied in Dan 9:20-27 and Rev 6-19, and eternal separation from God/

Notes: Brethren used 24x. 70x in the whole New Testament, and in Galatians 7x. Galatians was written earlier than 1 and 2 Thessalonians. Galatians in Acts 15 is before Thessalonians in Acts 17.

Legend

S1-Salvation	(one day, individuals, 1 Thes 1:1-10)
S2-Sanctification	(daily, individuals & local church)
R1-Prerapture	(times & season, the church, global)
R2-Rapture	(one day, the church, 1 Thes 4:13-5:11) * R2 – bride of Christ
R3-Post rapture	(7 years of deception then wrath, global, Jerusalem, 2 Th 1:7-2:12)
	* R3 – Judgment Seat of Christ then Marriage Supper of Christ
R4-Return	(one day, Jesus to Jerusalem, global)
R5-Reign	(1000 years, Christ in Jerusalem, global)
R6-Eternity	(R6a - in Hell, R6b - in Heaven, New Jerusalem)

Chapter	Father	Son	Holy Spirit	Notes
1:1-10	12	13	2	Holy Spirit, after initial salvation. LJC-1:1-3, Lord 1:10
2:1-3:9	16		11	0
3:10-4:12	11		14	1 3:8
4:4:13-5:11	1		14	0
5:12-28	<u>3</u>		<u>10</u>	<u>1</u> 5:19
	43		62	4

1 Thessalonians Chapter 2

2:1-3:9 **Sanctification of Ministry for Paul, Silvanus, and Timotheus** (we, us, our)

2:1-2 **Sanctification of Ministry** **Persecution at Philippi & Thessalonica**

(3) ¹ For yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain: ² But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God /[sanctification-return](#)/with much contention.

2:3-6 **Sanctification of Ministry** **Seven Ministry Sins**

³ For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile: ⁴ But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel /[salvation](#)/, even so we speak; not as pleasing men, but God, which tries our hearts. ⁵ For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness; God is witness: ⁶ Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor [yet] of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

[Gospel](#) 4x (salvation) – 1:15, 2:4, 2 Thes 1:8, 2:13, 76x.

[Gospel of God](#) 3x (sanctification and return) – 2:2, 8-9; 7x Ro 1:1, 15:16, 2 Cor 11:7, 1 Pe 4:17.

[Gospel of Christ](#) 1x (sanctification of the ascended Christ) – 3:2; 11x here and now, Mark 1:1, Ro 15:29, 2 Cor 4:4, Phil 1:27 – also gospel of the kingdom in Matthew 3x & Mark 1:1.

2:7-13 **Sanctification of Ministry** **Spiritual Mother and Father who Travail and Labor** (Gal 4:19)

(4) ⁷ But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherishes her children: ⁸ So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls /[as Moses and Paul](#)/, because ye were dear unto us. ⁹ For ye remember, brethren, our labor and travail: for laboring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached to you the gospel of God. ¹⁰ Ye are witnesses, and God [also], how holily /[1x](#)/ and justly and unblameably /[5:23 2x in NT](#)/ we behaved ourselves among you that believe: ¹¹ As ye know how we [exhorted](#) and [comforted](#) and [charged](#) every one of you, as a father [does] his children, ¹² That ye would walk worthy of God, who has * called /[6x – 1 Thes 4:7, 5:24. 2 Thes 1:11, 2:4, 2:14. Ro 8:29-30 foreknow > predestinate > called > justified > glorified](#)/ you unto *His kingdom and glory /[Heb 12:1-4](#)/. ¹³ For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the Word of God which ye heard of us, ye received [it] not [as] the word of men, but as it is in truth, the Word of God, which effectually works also in you that believe. /[Did not need to search the Scripture as the Bereans – Acts 17:11. doctrine, reproof, correction, instruction in righteousness 2 Tim 3:16-17](#)/

2:14-16 **Sanctification of Ministry** **Persecution of Brethren (14-15a) and Wrath on Persecutors (15b-16)**

(5) ¹⁴ For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God which in Judaea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen /[S. Maryland, lewd fellows of the baser sort Acts 17:5](#)/, even as they [have] of the Jews: ¹⁵ Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men: ¹⁶ Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway /[in all ways](#)/: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

2:17-20 **Sanctification of Ministry** **Reunion in Heaven** (Acts 17:1-9)

(6) ¹⁷ But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time in presence, not in heart, endeavored the more abundantly to see your face with great desire. ¹⁸ Wherefore we would have come to you, even I

1 Thessalonians Chapter 2

Paul, once and again; but Satan hindered us /deceiver with insidiousness and stratagem. Not self-old man Ro 7, not this world 1 John, not others/.¹⁹ For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? [Are] not even * ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at His coming? /in the clouds 1 Thes 4:17, 1 Cor 15/ ²⁰ For ye are our glory and joy.

Titles of the Devil: Satan 1 Thes 2:18, Tempter 3:5, Man of sin and son of perdition.

2 Thes 2:3, mystery of iniquity 2:7, Wicked 2:7, Satan 2:9

Character of the Devil: Hinders 2:18, Tempted 3:5, deceive thru man

1 Thessalonians Chapter 3

3:1-5 *Sanctification of Ministry*

Paul Sends Timotheus to Thessalonica in their Afflictions

(7)¹ Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone; ² And sent Timotheus, our brother, and minister of God, and our fellow laborer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith: ³ That no man should be moved by these afflictions /a state of pain, distress, or grief/: for yourselves know that we are appointed /Acts 9:16, 14:22/ thereunto. ⁴ For verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know. ⁵ For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labor be in vain /not tribulation which God allows to sanctify us, yet trials may lead us into temptations to sin/.

3:6-9 *Sanctification of Ministry*

Timotheus Returns with Good News

(8)⁶ But now when Timotheus came from you to us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we also [to see] you: ⁷ Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distress by your faith: ⁸ For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord. ⁹ For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God;

3:10-4:12 *Sanctification of the Brethren at Thessalonica*

(9)¹⁰ Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith? ¹¹ Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way to you. ¹² And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all [men], even as we [do] toward you: ¹³ * To the end /R2/ He may establish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father /R2/, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints /R2/.

1 Thessalonians Chapter 4

4:1-8 *Sanctification*

Exhortation to Continue in Holiness (1-3a) and not Uncleanness (3b-8, sin #1)

(10)¹ Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort [you] by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk and to please God, [so] ye would **abound more and more**. ² For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus. ³ For this is the will of God, [even] your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: ⁴ That every one of you should know how to **possess his vessel in sanctification and honor** /honor or dishonor, 2 Tim 2:20/; ⁵ Not in the lust of passion, even as the Gentiles which know not God: ⁶ That no [man] go beyond and defraud his brother in [any] matter: because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you and testified. ⁷ For **God has not called us to uncleanness, but to holiness**. ⁸ He therefore that despises, despises not man, but God, who has also given to us his **Holy Ghost**.

1 Thessalonians Chapter 4

4:9-12 **Sanctification**

Love One Another (9-10) and Unemployment (11-12, sin #2)

(11) ⁹ But as concerning brotherly love ye need not that I write to you: for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one another. ¹⁰ And indeed ye do it toward all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more;

¹¹ And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, as we commanded you; ¹² That ye may walk honestly toward them that are outside, and [that] ye may have lack of nothing.

4:13-5:11 **Return of Christ - Comfort about Christians Who Have Died** (1 Corinthians 15)

S1-2, S2-22, R1-8, R2-10, R3-6, R4/5/6-0

4:13-18 **Rapture of the Church – The Dead are Caught Up Before the Living in Christ**

S1-1, S2-5, R2-7

(12) ¹³ But I would not have you to be ignorant /S2/, not understood, 2 Thes 2:2, Ro 11:25 Israel future (chapters 9-11), 1 Cor 10:1 lessons from OT (8-11), 1 Cor 12:1 gifts (chapters 12-14), 1 Tim 1:9-13 ignorant in unbelief, 2 Peter 3:16 Paul's prophecies wrestled with to their own destruction (chapter 3 /, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not /S2/, even as others which have no hope /confident expectation/. ¹⁴ For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again /S1/, even so them also which sleep in Jesus /S2/ will God bring with Him /R2/. ¹⁵ For this we say unto you by the Word of the Lord /S2/, that we which are alive [and] remain unto the coming of the Lord /R2/ shall not prevent them which are asleep /S2/. ¹⁶ For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God /R2, 1st trump is the law of Moses for Israel in Exodus 19. This trump is the rapture of the church in Revelation 4, not part of the 7 trumpets in Rev 9-13 /: and the dead in Christ shall rise first /R2/: ¹⁷ Then we which are alive [and] remain shall be "caught up" together /R2, harpazo - carry away by force, with violence/ Matthew 11:12, Acts 8:39, 2 Cor 12:4, Jude 1:23, Rev 12:5/ with them in the clouds /R2/, to meet the Lord in the air /R2/: and so shall we ever be with the Lord /R2/. ¹⁸ Wherefore comfort one another with these words /S2/.

1 Thessalonians Chapter 5

Contrasts of Thief or Watching, Drunk or Sober, Night or Day, Dark or Light

5:1-5 **Post Rapture Wrath on Them who are of the Night (Global)**

S2-7, R1-2, R2-2, R3-4 (vs3)

(13) ¹ But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you /S2/.

² For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord /R2, Is 61:1-2, Acts 2:20, 1 Cor 5:5, 2 Cor 1:14, 2 Peter 3:10/ so comes as a thief in the night /R2, 5:4/. ³ For when they shall say, Peace and safety /R1, R3/; then sudden destruction comes upon them /R3/, as travail upon a woman with child /R3, Israel Mt 24:8, Mt 24-25/; and they shall not escape /R3/. ⁴ But ye, brethren, are not in darkness /S2/, that that day should overtake you as a thief /S2, R1, 5:2, us /. ⁵ Ye are all the children of light /S2, Genesis 1:3-5, 186k mi/s, DNA for each body, 5:23/, and the children of the day /S2/: we are not of the night /S2/, nor of darkness /S2/.

5:6-11 **Pre Rapture Readiness, Watch and Be Sober**

S1-1, S2-10, R1-6, R2-1, R3-2

1 Thessalonians Chapter 5

(14) ⁶ Therefore let us not sleep /S2/, as others; but let us watch and be sober /S2/. ⁷ For they that sleep /R1/, sleep in the night /R1/; and they that be drunken /R1/ are drunken in the night /R1/. ⁸ But let us, who are of the day /S2/, be sober /S2/, putting on the breastplate of faith /S2/ and love /S2/; and for a helmet, the hope of salvation /S2, R1, Is 59/. ⁹ For God has not appointed us to wrath /R1, R3/, but to obtain salvation /R3/ by our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁰ Who died for us /S1/, that, whether we wake or sleep /S2/, we should live together with Him /R2/. ¹¹ Wherefore comfort yourselves together /S2/, and edify one another /S2/, even as also ye do.

Day is defined in four ways: (1) A literal 24-hour day, (2) A literal day or night, (3) A period of time more than a day, (4) A spiritual moral day and light in contrast to an immoral night and darkness.

Awake or asleep: Believers are physically living or dead. Heb 9:27." It is appointed unto man to die, but after this the judgment". Believers are spiritually awake or asleep, spiritually, or physically sober or drunk. Unbelievers are spiritually asleep and drunk.

5:12-28 **Sanctification**

Twenty Seven Specific Works (2 Tim 3:16-17)

1st Toward pastors, teachers, and deacons, and each other; first in your local church

(15) ¹² And we beseech /plead, 4:1, 3x in NT/ you, brethren, to know them which labor among you /S2/, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish /caution or reprove gently, 5:14 warn, Romans 15:14/ you /S2/; ¹³ And to esteem them very highly in love for their work's sake /S2/. [And] be at peace among yourselves /S2/.

2nd Toward believers; first each other in your local church first, then other believers in your local churches

¹⁴ Now we exhort /call nearby-Greek parakaleo, 4:1, 10x in 1-2 Thes – exhort, comfort, beseech/ you, brethren, warn them that are unruly /S2-spiritually, 1 Thes 4:3b-8, 4:11-12/, comfort the feebleminded /S2-mentally/, support the weak /S2-physically/, be patient toward all [men] /S2/. How to treat the weak - Romans 14:1-15:6. ¹⁵ See that none render evil for evil to any [man] /S2/; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourselves /S2/, and to all /S2/ [men].

3rd Toward God and Jesus Christ

¹⁶ Rejoice evermore /S2/. ¹⁷ Pray without ceasing /S2/. ¹⁸ In everything give thanks /S2/: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you /S2/.

4th Toward the Holy Spirit and other believers in your local church

¹⁹ Quench not the Spirit /S2/. ²⁰ Despise not prophecies /S2, proclaim the gospel/. ²¹ Prove all things /S2, test/; hold fast that which is good /S2/. ²² Abstain from all appearance of evil /S2/.

5:23-28 **Sanctification**

Capstone (5:23-24) **and Final Instructions** (25-27)

(17) ²³ And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly /S2/; and [I pray God] your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless /S2/ unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ /R2 – rapture of the church, those dead in Christ first, then we which are alive in Christ/. ²⁴ Faithful is He that calls you, who also will do [it]. /S2/ ²⁵ Brethren, pray for us /S2, 4th prayer in 1 Thes – 1st two from Paul, Silas, and Timothy, 3rd by Thes, 4th for "us"/. ²⁶ Greet all the brethren with a holy kiss /S2, uniquely acknowledge in a pure manner, depends on culture/. ²⁷ I charge /command, 3x, Mark 5:7, Acts 19:13/ you by the Lord that this letter be read to all the holy brethren /S2/. ²⁸ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you /S2, trademark ending of Paul's 14 letters/. Amen.

2 Thessalonians (3-9, 7 min) 2021

Bible TOC [Next / Previous Book](#)

[Gems](#)

1 2 3

12 Trainings for the Return of Christ

<u>A congregation is trained as:</u> (we/our is local churches and individual believers)	<u>Scripture</u>
1) our FAITH GROWS exceedingly	1:3a
2) our LOVE of every one toward each other ABOUND	1:3b
3) we ENDURE persecution & tribulation; our suffering is counted worthy of the kingdom of God	1:4-5
4) we REST with Paul, Silas & Timothy until the Lord Jesus returns and we are glorified with His saints	1:7-10
Lesson on prayer 1:11-12	
5) we are not soon shaken in mind, or TROUBLED by spirit or word, since the day of Christ is near	2:2
6) we are NOT DECEIVED by any person because of the falling away from faith in Christ	2:3
7) we are chosen by God to salvation through SANCTIFICATION of the spirit and belief of the truth	2:13
8) we stand firmly and hold sound doctrine and are established in every good WORD and WORK	2:15-17
Lesson on prayer 3:1-2	
9) the Lord is faithful, who establishes and keeps us from evil	3:3
10) the Lord directs our hearts into the love of God, and patient waiting for Christ	3:5
11) we withdraw ourselves from those who walk disorderly, and follow Paul, Silas, and Timothy	3:6-7
12) we demonstrate high work ethics and admonish others as brothers	3:8-15

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
II Thessalonians 1:11-12	Supplication	Continual grace for Believers	Persecution	Good testimony	Paul, Silas & Timothy
II Thessalonians 3:1-2	Supplication	Delivery from wicked men	Un-Faithfulness	Prayer request by Paul & others	Thessalonian believers

Legend

S1-Salvation	(one day, individuals, 1 Thes 1:1-10)
S2-Sanctification	(daily, individuals & local church)
R1-Prerapture	(times & season, the church, global)
R2-Rapture	(one day, the church, 1 Thes 4:13-5:11) * R2 – bride of Christ
R3-Post rapture	(7 years of deception then wrath, global, Jerusalem, 2 Th 1:7-2:12) * R3 – Judgment Seat of Christ then Marriage Supper of Christ
R4-Return	(one day, Jesus to Jerusalem, global)
R5-Reign	(1000 years, Christ in Jerusalem, global)
R6-Eternity	(R6a - in Hell, R6b - in Heaven, New Jerusalem)

2 Thessalonians Chapter 1

1:1-6 focus on sanctification. S2-13, R1-2, R6b-2

1:1-2 **Introduction** (1 Thes 1:1)

(1) ¹ Paul, Silas, and Timothy, unto the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ /S2/; ² Grace to you, and peace /S2/, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ /S2/.

1:3-4 **Thanks for and Glory in the Testimony of the Believers** (similar to 1 Thes 1:2-3)

³ We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, /S2, Why do they thank God/ because that your faith grows exceedingly /S2/, and the charity of every one of you all toward each other abounds /S2/; ⁴ So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God /1 Thes 2:19-20, R6b/ for your patience /S2, Job/ and faith /S2/ in all your persecutions /S2/ and tribulations /S2/ that ye endure /S2/:

Notes:

1. "Thanks" for believers expressed in Romans, 1 Corinthians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, 1 & 2 Thessalonians. Thanks is not expressed by Paul in 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Hebrews, 1 & 2 Timothy, and Titus.

2a. The believers faith and love increase due to persecution, tribulations, and trouble. Same as in 1 Thes 3:10-4:12. Increase and abound, abound more and more, increase more and more, perfect, unblameable, holiness.

2b. The believers faith and love decrease due to the sins of uncleanness and laziness (1 Thes 3:10-4:3a and 4:9-10)

1:5-6 **Righteous Judgment and Vengeance** (not in 1 Thes – more Truth)

⁵ [Which is] a manifest token of the righteous judgment of God /S2/, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God /S2, R6b/ for which ye also suffer: ⁶ Seeing [it is] a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you /R1/;

Notes:

1. "Them" are the unbelievers that persecute and trouble the Thessalonian believers. This passage covers then and all time from Acts 2 to Revelation 4. The same spiritual laws are in effect today.

2. "Recompense" is to wages for our works. Used in 6 verses: Luke 14:14, Romans 11:35, 12:19, 1 Thessalonians 3:9, 2 Thessalonians 1:6 and Hebrews 10:30. Sin is death and righteousness is life, or a crown in 1 Thes 2:19.

3. It is important to understand the difference between trials or tribulation (things God allows for our purification) and temptations that can lead to sin. External persecution causes personal trials to diminish.

<u>Chapter</u>	<u>Father</u>	<u>Son</u>	<u>Holy Spirit</u>	<u>Notes</u>
1:1-6	9	6	0	Son – 1:2 Lord Jesus Christ
1:7-2:12	6	21	1	God, Lord. spirit 2:3b-12 (R3) (R6a)
2:13-3:17	<u>6</u> 21	<u>21</u> 48	<u>1</u> 2	Holy Spirit – 2:13
1 Thes	43	62	4	

2 Thessalonians Chapter 1

1:7-2:12 Return of Christ S1-1, S2-15, R1-1, R2-6, R3-15, R4-7, R5-0, R6a-5, R6b-0

1:7-10 **Return of Jesus - Vengeance on Unbelievers & Admired by Believers**

/S1-1, S2-2, R4-7, R6a-3 (vs 9)/

(2) ⁷ And to you who are troubled rest with us /S2, 1:5-6/, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His /LSB/ mighty angels /R4/, ⁸ In flaming fire /R4, Rev 1/ taking vengeance on them /R4/ that know not God /R4/, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ /R4/: ⁹ Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction /R6a, darkness, emptiness/ from the presence of the Lord /R6a/, and from the glory of His power /R6a/; ¹⁰ When He shall come to be glorified in His saints /R4/, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed /S1/) in that day. /R3, R3-R4?, eternal security for true believers, Rev 22:20 He that testifies these things says, surely I come quickly. Even so, some Lord Jesus/

1:11-12 **Sanctification of Believers – In General** (Prayer for God's Glory)

/S2-8/

(3) ¹¹ Wherefore also we pray always for you /S2/, that our God would count you worthy /1 Thes 2:12/ of [this] calling /S2/, and fulfill all the good pleasure of [his] goodness /S2/, and the work of faith /S2, Gk:ergon/ with power /S2, Gk:dynamis/: ¹² That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you /S2/, and ye in Him /S2, John 15, Gal 2:20, Song of Songs 2:15, 6:3, 7:10/, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ. /S2/

2 Thessalonians Chapter 2

2:1-3a **Rapture of the Church – After Deception and Falling Away**

/S2-6, R1-1, R2-4/

(4) ¹ Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ /R2/, and [by] our gathering together unto Him /R2/, ² That ye be not soon shaken in mind /S2/, or be troubled /S2/, neither by spirit /S2/, nor by word /S2/, nor by letter as from us /S2/, as that the day of Christ is near /R2, present. Day of the Lord in all modern Bibles/. ³ Let no man deceive you by any means /S2, R1, twist truth, mix error with truth/: for [that day shall not come] /R2/, except there come a falling away first, /R1, Rev 3:14-22 church of Laodicea. R3-love of many shall grow cold/

2:3b-12 **Post Rapture Wrath (Global**

/S2-4, R2-2, R3-16, R4-3, R6a-2 (2 Peter 3, Romans 11)/

(5) and that man of sin be revealed /R3, R4/, the son of perdition /R3/; ⁴ Who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God /R3/, or that is worshipped /R3/; so that he as God sits in the temple of God /R3/, showing himself that he is God /R3, Daniel 11:36/. ⁵ Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things /S2, 3x, 3:17/? ⁶ And now ye know what withholds /S2, 5:7, 1 Thes 5:21/, that he might be revealed /R3/ in his time /R3/. ⁷ For the mystery of iniquity does already work /S2, R3/: only He who now lets [will let] /S2/, until He be taken out of the way /R2/. ⁸ And then shall that Wicked be revealed /R3/, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth /R4/, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming /R4, Isaiah 11:4/: ⁹ [Even him], whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders /R3, John 2:23-25/, ¹⁰ And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish /R6a/; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved /R1, R3/. ¹¹ And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion /R3/, that they should believe a lie /R1, R3/: ¹² That they all might be damned /R6a/ who believed not the truth /R3/, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. /R3/

2 Thessalonians Chapter 2

2:13-3:18 **Sanctification and One Sin** (we/us/our-35x, I/me/my-3x 2:5, 3:17)

FIRST: 2:13-17 *The Called are Established in Every Good Word and Work* /S1-10, S2-11, R2-4/

(6) ¹³ But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you /S2, 1:3/, brethren beloved of the Lord, because God has from the beginning /S1, Gen 1/ chosen you to salvation /S1, His choice/ through sanctification of the Spirit /S1/ and belief of the truth /S1/: ¹⁴ Whereunto He called /S1, Romans 8:29-30 golden chain/ you by our gospel /S1, John 3/, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ /R2/. ¹⁵ Therefore, brethren, stand fast /S2/, and hold the traditions /S2, 3:6, teachings & manner of life/ which ye have been taught /S2/, whether by word /S2/, or our letter /S2/. ¹⁶ Now our Lord Jesus Christ Himself, and God, even our Father, which has loved us /S1/, and has given [us] everlasting consolation /S1, R2/ and good hope /S1, R2/ through grace /S1, R2/, ¹⁷ Comfort your hearts /S2/, and establish you in every good word /S2, establish 3:3/ and work /S2/.

Q – Is the tradition, word and letter of Paul, Timothy, and Silas the same today?

A– Yes, and the good words and works are the same also.

Application: I give thanks when I see the fruit of my labor in Christ worked in other believers from my tradition and teaching.

2 Thessalonians Chapter 3

3:1-5 ***The Pastors Prayer Request (1-2) & Command (3-5)***
/S2-16, R2-1/

(7) ¹ Finally, brethren, pray for us /S2, 1 Thes 5:25/, that the Word /logos, inspiration / of the Lord may have [free] course /S2, Hebrews 12:1, run - 19 of 20x, changed words by translators due to context, 1 Thes 2:13, 2 Tim 3:16-17/, and be glorified /S2, not actors-emotions-charisma-smooth speech/, even as [it is] with you /S2+/: ² And that we may be delivered from unreasonable /S2/ and wicked men /S2/: for all have not faith /S2/. ³ But the Lord is faithful /S2, 1 Thes 5:24/, who shall establish you /S2/, and keep you from evil /S2/. ⁴ And we have confidence in the Lord concerning you /S2+/, that ye both do /S2+/, and will do the things which we command you /S2, 3:6, 10, 12. 1 Thes 4:11-sin 2/. ⁵ And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God /S2/, and into the patient waiting for Christ /S2, R2 in the clouds Acts 1:11/.

Q – Should a pastor or teacher request this same prayer to the believers today?

A– Yes, the free course of the Holy Scriptures spoken in truth and sound doctrine is the same today.

Application: I must consistently let the Lord direct my heart into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ. Then I must remind other believers of the same.

3:6-16 ***The Sin of Unemployment (Lev 19:11-18)***
/S2-17, R2-1/

(8) ⁶ Now we command you /S2, 1 Thes 5:12-13/, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that walks disorderly /S2, 3:8, 11. 1 Thes 4:11-12, break rank in behavior or words and works/, and not after the tradition which he received of us /S2, 1 Thes 2:1-3:9, 5:12-13/. ⁷ For yourselves know how ye ought to follow us /S2, 3:9/: for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you /S2, 1 Thes 2:10, 5:12-13/; ⁸ Neither did we eat any man's bread for free; but worked with labor and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you /S2, 1 Thes 2:9, or muzzle ox in 1 Cor 9:9, 1 Tim 5:18/: ⁹ Not because we have not authority /power/, but to make ourselves an ensample unto you to follow us /S2/. ¹⁰ For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat /S2/.

2 Thessalonians Chapter 3

¹¹ For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies /S2, 1 Thes 4:11-12/. ¹² Now them that are such we command and exhort /S2, 1 Thes 5:14, Ro 12:8 gift/ by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work /S2, 1 Thes 4:11-12/, and eat their own bread /S2, 1 Thes 4:11-12/. ¹³ But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing /S2/. ¹⁴ And if any man obey not our Word by this letter, note that man, and have no company with him /S2/, that he may be ashamed /S2, 1 Thes 4:4, 2 Tim 2:20, R2+/. ¹⁵ Yet count [him] not as an enemy, but admonish [him] as a brother /S2/. ¹⁶ Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means /S2, 1 Thes 5:23/. The Lord [be] with you all /S2/.

Work for Jews and saved is honorable. Greeks in Macedonia had slaves work. Thess is capitol. Pastors paid at other times (1 Cor 9:9, 1 Tim 5:18, do not muzzle ox – those who labor. Man works before and after the fall, Gen 2:15. Love gives – does not receive. The sin, and the command and exhortation for action is transparent and known to all the local church.

Application: This is different from the extreme moral sin and doctrinal sin evident in Acts 5, Matthew 18 and others parts of the New Testament. The end goal is the same - reconciliation and unity of the saints.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us deal with our own sin first, then deal with the sins of other believers in such a way that all grow in Christ because it is done in love and with the goal of reconciliation.

3:17-18 **Farewell Grace**

/S2-2/

(9) ¹⁷ The salutation of Paul with my own hand, which is the token in every letter: so I write /S2, 2:5/.

¹⁸ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you all /S2/. Amen.

Notes:

"the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you" (1) This is a token or trademark of the Apostle Paul. (2) Why does this phrase not end 2 Cor, Eph, 1 Tim, and 2 Tim? (3) Hebrews 13:25 ends with "Grace be with you all. Amen." indicating Paul as the author. (4) John ends with Revelation 22:21 "The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen." (1 Cor 10:11)

Establish: 1 Thes 3:2, 3:13, 2 Thes 2:17, 3:3 set fast, resolutely in a certain direction, face is like a flint stone.

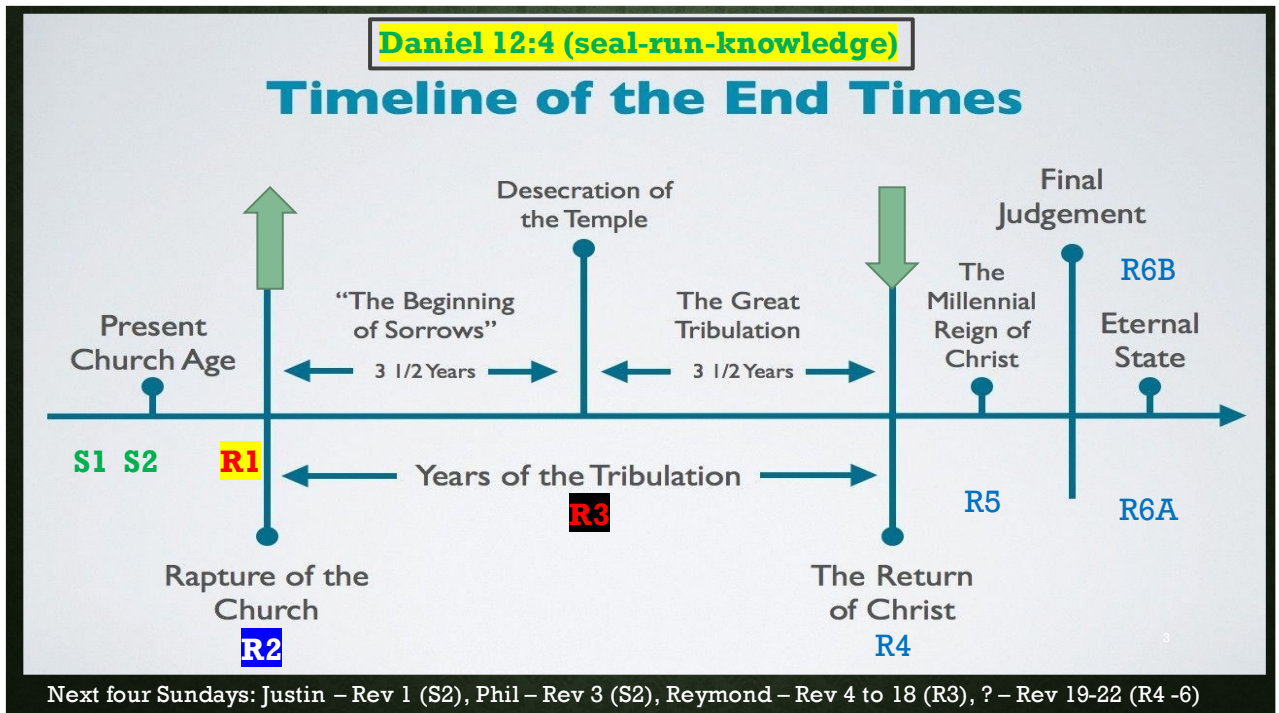
Ergon – work of faith. 1 Thes 1:3, 5:13, 2 Thes 1:11, 2:17

Ergazomai – work. 1 Thes 4:11, 2 Thes 3:10, 3:12 (toil, labor for)

Kopos – labor of love. 1 Thes 1:3, 2:9, 3:5, 2 Thes 3:8 (toil, pain, reduce strength, weariness –renewed by Holy Spirit)

Ponder on the Post Rapture saints: Rev 12:11, 17, 14:12 – Mt 24, Mk 13, Lu 21

Blood of the Lamb, Testimony of Jesus, Obey Commandments



1 Timothy (6-14, 16 min) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4 5 6

12 Commands from a Master Discipler

<u>Master disciplers commands to:</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Instruct Some to Teach No Other Doctrine	1:1-4
2) Charity from a Pure Heart by Sound Doctrine	1:5-11
3) Correct Saints walking after the flesh	1:12-20
4) Pray for all in Authority Lifting up Holy Hands	2:1-8
5) Godly Women	2:9-13
6) Qualifications of the Elders	3:1-7
7) Qualifications of the Deacons	3:8-13
<i>for Behavior Based Truth (the Mystery of Godliness)</i>	3:14-16
8) Discern Seducing Spirits and Doctrines of Demons	4:1-5
9) the Elders (good ministers)	4:6-16
10) Relate to Elder and Younger Men, Elder and Younger Women and Widows	5:1-16
11) Elders that Rule Well	5:17-25
12) New Testament Slaves, Masters, Money, and being a Man of God	6:1-12
<i>for Consistency in Christian Perfection (maturity)</i>	6:13-21

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
1 Timothy 2:1-8	Supplication Prayer	Leaders/Authority	Laziness in Prayer	W/o wrath & doubting	Jesus is mediator
1 Timothy 4:5 (1-5)	Prayer	Sanctify food		Word of God	Grace for meal

Notes on differences between 1 and 2 Timothy

1 Timothy

62-64 AD After stay Ephesus, from Phillipi
 Man 9x, (NT) Anthropos 559x
 Woman 9x (NT) 240x
 Elder women 1x, presbyterios (only 1x)
 Sister 1x
 Widow 8x, (NT) 25x
 Work woman 0x

2 Timothy 3:10

66-67 AD from 2nd imprisonment in Rome, last ltr
 Man 5x, no man 3x, implied 2x
 Woman 0x
 Elder Woman 0x
 Sister 0x
 Widom 0x
 Workman 1x (NT) 16x

1:1-4 *Instruct Some to Teach No Other Doctrine*

(1) ¹ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Savior, and Lord Jesus Christ, [which is] our hope; ² To Timothy, [my] own **son in the faith**: Grace, mercy, [and] peace, from God our Father and Jesus Christ our Lord. ³ As I begged you to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that you might **charge some that they teach no other doctrine**, ⁴ Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: [so do].

Q – Why do most of Paul’s letter end with “the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen”?

A1 – This is a token or trademark of the apostle Paul.

A2 – This is not always because 2 Cor, Eph, 1 Tim, and 2 Tim do not end this way.

A3 – Hebrews 13:25 ends with “Grace be with you all. Amen.” indicating Paul as the author.

A4 – The apostle John ends Revelation 22:21 “The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.”

Application: I must be careful to Biblically balance my understanding and faith to apply New Testament doctrine into my daily life for spiritual growth. The doctrine of grace and love must balance the doctrine of justice and holiness.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us know the vital character of the Lord of peace (Jesus) and peace within that only God gives us. By study of the Holy Scriptures and prayer our minds are enlightened by the Holy Spirit to unlearn error and learn sound doctrine. (1Ti 1:10; 2Ti 4:3; Tit 1:9; Tit 2:1)

1:5-11 *Charity from a Pure Heart by Sound Doctrine*

(2) ⁵ **Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and [of] a good conscience, and [of] faith unfeigned:** ⁶ From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling; ⁷ Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. ⁸ But we know that **the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;** ⁹ **Knowing this,** that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers, ¹⁰ For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is **contrary to sound doctrine;** ¹¹ According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

Q – Why is the law good and not for the righteous?

A – The 10 commandments of the law of Moses is to show people their sin and need for repentance and forgiveness.

The law for the true believer is life-giving because we can obey the law by the grace of God and our faith.

Application: I am thankful for the law of Moses in the 10 commandments and the law of liberty from sin by the amazing grace of God. (Romans 7-8)

1:12-20 *Correct Saints Walking after the Flesh*

(3) ¹² And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who has enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry; ¹³ Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: but I obtained mercy, because I did [it] ignorantly in unbelief. ¹⁴ And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁵ This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners; of whom I am chief. ¹⁶ Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show forth all longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting. ¹⁷ Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, [be] honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen. ¹⁸ This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies which went before on you, that you by them might **war a good warfare;** ¹⁹ Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck: ²⁰ Of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander; **whom I have delivered to Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.**

Q – Were Hymenaeus and Alexander carnal believers walking after the flesh?

A – Yes, their doctrine and/or morality in their daily life and works blasphemes the truth.

Application: I know there are degrees of sin in the believer’s life. I know that calling out a believer’s sin should always lead to repentance, learning, and reconciliation among believers.

1 Timothy Chapter 2

2:1-8 *Pray for all in Authority Lifting up Holy Hands*

(4) ¹ I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, [and] giving of thanks, be made for all men; ² For kings, and [for] all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. ³ For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Savior; ⁴ Who will have all men to be saved, and to come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁵ **For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;** ⁶ Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time. ⁷ Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, [and] lie not;) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity. ⁸ I will therefore that men **pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.**

Q – How often must we pray for those in authority?

A1 – The frequency is not specified. The same as how often should we pray for the peace of Jerusalem, or various ways to begin and end our prayers, and the content of our prayers.

A2 – Paul requests all believers pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting. This is a firm direction and should be part of our daily prayer life. Discipleship in our personal prayer life is missing in many churches.

Application: I discipline and prioritize my own life around prayer. Then as I am mature in this discipline I can teach others how to pray.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture help us learn how to pray and be led by the Holy Spirit to pray as we ought. This helps us continual spiritual growth onto maturity and use as an ambassador of Christ in the will of God.

2:9-15 *The Role of Godly Women*

(5) ⁹ In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with braided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array; ¹⁰ But (which becomes women professing godliness) with good works. ¹¹ Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection. ¹² **But I allow not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.** ¹³ For Adam was first formed, then Eve. ¹⁴ And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression. ¹⁵ Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they **continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.**

Q – What are the qualities of a Godly woman?

A1 – She must be adorned inwardly with good works from a pure heart, mind, and tongue (1 Tim 2:9-10).

A2 – She must learn in silence with all subjection in the assembly of saints and at home (1 Tim 2:11-12).

A3 – She must understand that from the beginning Eve was deceived, not Adam. Therefore this doctrine is not cultural only for the times of the early church, but from the Garden of Eden until Christ returns and there is no female or male. As long as women give birth to sons and daughters this rule applies (1 Timothy 2:13-14).

A4 – She should continue in faith and love and holiness with sobriety. Sobriety is in the mind and emotions (1 Timothy 2:15-16).

Q2 - Can any woman become a Godly woman?

A - Yes, any Bible believing woman can mature into a Godly woman.

Application: I understand the God designed distinctions and compliments of man and woman. I must teach my wife so we can be an example to our children, community, and the congregation. They my wife and I can teach others by example and doctrine these spiritual laws of our creator.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture help us know the spiritual and moral laws of God as a matter of rule and principle to live by.

1 Timothy Chapter 3

Qualities for Leaders of God's People

3:1-7 *Qualifications for the Elder* (*episkope - 4x; episkopos - 7x*)

(6) ¹ This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a overseer, he desires a good work. ² An elder then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behavior, given to hospitality, apt to teach; ³ **Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;** ⁴ **One that rules well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;** ⁵ **(For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the congregation of God?)** ⁶ Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil. ⁷ Moreover he must have a good report of them which are outside; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

Q – What are the qualities of an elder?

A1 – He must desire a good work. Desire is to stretch oneself or reach out after. (1 Tim 3:1).

A2 – He must be blameless, husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behavior, given to hospitality, apt to teach (1 Tim 3:2).

A3 – not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of money but patient, not a fighter, not covetous (1 Tim 3:3).

A4 – He must rule his own house to take care of the saints (1 Tim 3:4)

A5 – He must not be a novice and have a good report of them that are not believers (1 Tim 3:5-6).

Q2 – Can any man become an elder?

A – No, only those able to teach or with a gift or ministry for the spiritual growth of believers.

Q3 –What is an overseer or elder?

A1 – A believer that has matured in Christ to become a spiritual father able to help spiritual children grow in the faith.

A2 – In the New Testament the term elder is the most frequent for a congregation leader, and then a plurality of elders like the Presbyterian form of congregation government. Elder is Greek episkope used 11 times in the New Testament.

Application: I believe what the Bible says about the term and role of the elder.

3:8-13 *Qualifications for the Deacon* (*diakonos- 29x*)

(7) ⁸ Likewise [must] the ^a deacons [be] grave, not double tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre; ⁹ **Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.** ¹⁰ **And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being [found] blameless.** ¹¹ Even so [must their] wives [be] grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things. ¹² Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well. ¹³ For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

Q1 – What is the major difference between a deacon and an elder?

A – The elder must be ready to teach and engages in a spiritual growth ministry. The deacon serves and prevents division among believers by being filled with the Holy Spirit and wisdom.

Q2 – Can any man become a deacon?

A – Yes, any Bible believing man can mature into a deacon. Women are also called deacons or servants/helpers.

Deacon is diakonos in Greek, used 29 times in the New Testament. The two offices in the New Testament congregation are elder and deacon.

Application: I believe what the Bible says about the term and role of the deacon and understand the differences between an elder and deacon. See 1 Timothy 3:13 that declares "they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus."

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture help us understand that the office of deacon and elder complement one another.

3:14-16 *The Qualities of Behavior Based Truth* (*the Mystery of Godliness*)

(8) ¹⁴ These things write I to you, hoping to come to you shortly: ¹⁵ But if I tarry long, that you may know how you ought to behave thyself in the ^a house of God, which is the congregation of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth. ¹⁶ And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness:

God was manifest in the flesh,

(John 1:14; 1John 1:2)

justified in the Spirit,

(Mt 3:16; Joh 16:8-9; Ro 1:4; 1Pe 3:18; 1Jo 5:6)

seen of angels,

(Mt 4:11; Lu 2:13; Eph 3:10; 1Pe 1:12)

preached to the Gentiles,

(Acts 10, 15)

believed on in the world,

(Acts 13:46, Col 1:6)

received up into glory.

(Luke 24:51, Acts 1:9)

4:1-5 ***Discern Seducing Spirits and Doctrines of Demons***

(9) ¹ Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of demons; ² Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; ³ Forbidding to marry, [and commanding] to abstain from meats, which God has created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. ⁴ For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving: ⁵ For it is sanctified by the Word of God and prayer.

Q – Who can discern seducing spirits and doctrines of demons?

A – Every true believer who is growing in Christ, every elder that serves well, and some may have the gift of discernment.

Application: I am thankful for being able to discern seducing spirits and doctrines of demons, and teach others the same discernment.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer give us wisdom to discern properly and when to teach others.

4:6-16 ***Commands for a Good Minister***

(10) ⁶ If you put the brethren in remembrance of these things, you shall be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine, whereunto you have attained. ⁷ But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise thyself [rather] to godliness. ⁸ For bodily exercise profits little: but godliness is profitable to all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. ⁹ This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptation. ¹⁰ For therefore we both labor and allow reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Savior of all men, specially of those that believe. ¹¹ These things command and teach. ¹² Let no man despise your youth; but be you an example of the believers, in word, in conduct, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity. ¹³ Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. ¹⁴ Neglect not the gift that is in you, which was given you by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. ¹⁵ Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that your profiting may appear to all. ¹⁶ Take heed to thyself, and to the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this you shall both save thyself, and them that hear you.

Q – Why is Godliness profitable in this life and the life to come?

A – Imitating Jesus Christ to the best of our ability 24/7 all true believers should strive for and attain by the grace and mercy of God.

Application: I must be an example to believers, in word, in doctrine, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer give us take care of ourselves and sound doctrine continually so we can save ourselves and those that hear me from the power of sin.

1 Timothy Chapter 5

5:1-16 *Relate with Elder and Younger Men, Elder and Younger Women and Widows*

(11) ¹ Rebuke not an elder, but entreat [him] as a father; [and] the younger men as brethren; ² The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity. ³ Honor widows that are widows indeed. ⁴ But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to show piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God. ⁵ Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusts in God, and continues in supplications and prayers night and day. ⁶ But she that lives in pleasure is dead while she lives. ⁷ And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless. ⁸ But if any provide not for his own, and especially for those of his own house, he has denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel. ⁹ Let not a widow be taken into the number under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man, ¹⁰ Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work. ¹¹ But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to grow wanton against Christ, they will marry; ¹² Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith. ¹³ And withal they learn [to be] idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not. ¹⁴ I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. ¹⁵ For some are already turned aside after Satan. ¹⁶ If any man or woman that believes have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the congregation be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

Q – Why is the family relationship compared to how non-family believers relate with one another?

A – Because we can learn from the nuclear family relationships and realize that the spiritual family relationship is equally important.

Application: I must treat all true believers that I come in physical nearness with as my spiritual family.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us direct the paths of our life under the lead of the Holy Spirit to meet and treat other believers in a Godly manner.

5:17-25 *Elders that Rule Well*

(12) ¹⁷ Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine. ¹⁸ For the Scripture says, You shall not muzzle the ox that treads out the corn. And, The laborer is worthy of his reward. ¹⁹ Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses. ²⁰ Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear. ²¹ I charge [you] before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that you observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. ²² Lay hands suddenly on no one, neither be partaker of other's sins: keep thyself pure. ²³ Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake and your often infirmities. ²⁴ Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some [men] they follow after. ²⁵ Likewise also the good works [of some] are manifest beforehand; and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

Q1 – What type of reward is the elder that rules well worthy of?

A – Honor, respect, and recognition here on earth and eternally in heaven. There is no inclination from Paul's testimony, the New Testament, or the context that money is involved.

Q2 – Why is sin addressed so all the believers may learn to fear?

A – Elders are not to prefer any and do all things without partiality, especially relating to sin – even with other elders.

Q3 – Why are elder to abstain from wine except for medicinal purposes?

A – To sustain a clear mind for discernment and wisdom from above for themselves and others.

Application: I hate the church organization that is not Bible based with transparency as Paul instructs in this passage. I will never drink wine or any alcohol except for medicinal purposes. I believe in complete abstinence for all believers who are growing in Christ and desire living a Godly and holy life.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us understand and apply the truths of following Jesus Christ in a clear way and not fall for man's philosophies or traditions.

6:1-12 *New Testament Slaves, Masters, Money, and being a Man of God*

(13) ¹ Let as many slaves as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honor, that the name of God and [his] doctrine be not blasphemed. ² And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort. ³ If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, [even] the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; ⁴ He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof comes envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, ⁵ Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself. ⁶ But godliness with contentment is great gain. ⁷ For we brought nothing into [this] world, [and it is] certain we can carry nothing out. ⁸ And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. ⁹ But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and [into] many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. ¹⁰ For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. ¹¹ But you, O man of God, flee these things; and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. ¹² Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto you are also called, and has professed a good profession before many witnesses.

Q – Where are the slaves and masters today?

A – Everywhere you have an employee/employer relationship. Slaves may be voluntary or involuntary, it depends on the culture and times. However the Biblical principles of the believers slave and master relationship are the same as always.

Application: I will follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, and meekness. I will fight the good fight of faith. I will have a good profession before many witnesses.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us know when to withdraw from friendship of those who teach another gospel and justify their sin, and instruct others to also. (1 Timothy 6:3-5)

6:13-21 *Command for Consistency in Christian Perfection (maturity)*

(14) ¹³ I give you charge in the sight of God, who quickens all things, and [before] Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; ¹⁴ That you keep [this] commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: ¹⁵ Which in his times he shall show, [who is] the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; ¹⁶ Who only has immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach to; whom no man has seen, nor can see: to whom [be] honor and power everlasting. Amen. ¹⁷ Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who gives us richly all things to enjoy; ¹⁸ That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate; ¹⁹ Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life. ²⁰ O Timothy, keep that which is committed to your trust, avoiding profane [and] vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called: ²¹ Which some professing have erred concerning the faith. Grace [be] with you. Amen. [The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chief city of Phrygia Pacatiana.]

Q1 – What commandment is the elder Timothy to keep? (1 Tim 6:14)

A – Paul's commandment in 1 Timothy 6:11-12 "But you, man of God, flee these things (1 Tim 6:3-10); and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness. Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses."

Q2 – What degree of perfection keeps this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until Christ's return? 1 Tim 6:14

A1 – without spot is morally in relation to sin (Jas 1:27; 1Pe 1:19; 2Pe 3:14)

A2 – unrebukable is blameless in God's court (1Ti 3:2; 1Ti 5:7)

A3 – Perfection is the highest degree of Christ-likeness or maturity we can attain. To daily be fully ripened fruit that is not hard or soft in relation to obedience to God and personal sin. To daily put off the old man and put on the new man.

A4 – Riches and love of this world has potential and actual negative influence to our Christian perfection. (1 Tim 6:6)

Application: I am convinced that the best time to daily put off the old man and put on the new man is first thing in the morning. This conviction is from Biblical evidence, patterns, and personal experience. I will teach others to strive and give diligence to Christian perfection. This is the mindset and heart of the sweetest fellowship of saints.

2 Timothy (4-14, 11 min) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3 4

12 Rewards of a Master Discipler

<u>Master disciplers</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) Greatly desire to see disciples - mindful of their tears, and filled with joy	1:4
2) Remember the unfeigned faith in disciples	1:5
3) Hold fast the form of sound words, to teach disciples in faith and love	1:13-14
4) Teach among many witnesses, to commit to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others	2:2
5) Know that if we be dead with Christ, we shall also raise with Him	2:11
6) Flee from youthful lusts: and follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with the pure hearted	2:22
7) Fully share their doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience	3:10-13
8) Have confidence and continuance in the eternal things they instruct and others learn	3:14
9) Teach disciples to be men of God that are fully mature, thoroughly furnished to all good works	3:16-17
10) Fight the good fight, finish their course, keep the faith, and love the return of Jesus Christ	4:7-8
11) Are able to stand alone, forgiving others, then strengthened by the Lord	4:16-18
12) Are examples of love among the family of God	4:19-22

[Prayers of the Bible](#)

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
II Timothy 1:3 (3-6)	Prayers	For Timothy		Pure conscience	Night & Day

1:1-5 Discipleship's True Marks Between Saints and In the Family

(1) ¹ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus, ² To Timothy, [my] dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, [and] peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. ³ I thank God, whom I serve from [my] forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of you in my prayers night and day; ⁴ Greatly desiring to see you, being mindful of your tears, that I may be filled with joy; ⁵ When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in you, which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois, and your mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in you also.

Q1 – Why does Timothy have tears? (2 Tim 1:4)

A1 – Timothy has Godly sorrow for the life of Christ to be formed in other saints. Timothy's overwhelming burden is the same as Paul's for other saint's sins and repentance. (Galatians 4:19)

A2 – This is contrary to the self justification of sin and stagnant spiritual growth in Romans 7 that Paul expresses one time at a particular point in his life, "he does what he should not, and does not do what he should." (Romans 7:14-21)

Q2 – Where are the men in Timothy's family?

A – They are not mentioned because the mother and grand-mother are the spiritually significant people in Timothy's life. This is a lesson that exalts the role of Godly women in forming their children.

Application: I understand serving God with a pure conscience and desire to pray for my Timothy day and night because we share the extreme burden and joy to see other saints let Christ be formed in them.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us grow onto maturity in Christ similar to Timothy and many other saints.

1:6-14 Discipleship's Instruction to Press Forward in Our Holy Calling

(2) ⁶ Wherefore I put you in remembrance that you stir up the gift of God, which is in you by the putting on of my hands. ⁷ For God has not given us the spirit of ^a fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind. ⁸ Be not you therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be partaker of the afflictions of the gospel according to the power of God; ⁹ Who has saved us, and called [us] with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began, ¹⁰ But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, who has abolished death, and has brought life and immortality to light through the gospel: ¹¹ Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. ¹² For the which cause I also allow these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed to him against that day. ¹³ Hold fast the form of sound words, which you have heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁴ That good thing which was committed to you keep by the Holy Ghost which dwells in us.

Q – Why the contrast of the spirit of timidity with the spirit of power, love and a sound mind? (2 Tim 1:7)

A1 – By faith and obedience to the Scriptures we put off our timid self so we can put on power, love, and a sound mind. Timidity is in relation to knowing and sharing the things of God.

A2 – Fear in the KJV is from the Greek phobos. However in this one instance the Greek word deilia is used which Strong's concordance translates as timidity. Darby translates cowardice. I select timidity as the best word due to relatedness and contrast to power, love and a sound mind. The one syllable word flows better with the poetic majesty of the KJV.

Application: I know that the Holy Spirit has transformed me from a timid person in the things of God. The spiritual growth has replaced the timidity with a mind that is confident in what I think, say, and do. The spiritually growing believer will experience this more consistently and encourage other believers in the same direction.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us grow from a life of timidity into a life of power, love and a sound mind.

2 Timothy Chapter 1

1:15-18 *Discipleship's Transparency - the Coldness of Many Believers and the Warmth of One*

(3) ¹⁵ This you know, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. ¹⁶ The Lord give mercy to the house of Onesiphorus; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain: ¹⁷ But, when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found [me]. ¹⁸ The Lord grant to him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministered to me at Ephesus, you know very well.

2 Timothy Chapter 2

Be Diligent

2:1-7 *Discipleship's Transparency - the Coldness of Many Believers and the Warmth of One*

(4) ¹ You therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. ² And the things that you have heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit you to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also. ³ Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. ⁴ No man that wars entangles himself with the affairs of [this] life; that he may please him who has chosen him to be a soldier. ⁵ And if a man also strive for masteries, [yet] is he not crowned, except he strive lawfully. ⁶ The husbandman that labors must be first partaker of the fruits. ⁷ Consider what I say; and the Lord give you understanding in all things.

Q – What is the labor that deserves taking first of the fruit? (2 Timothy 2:6)

A1 – The labor is the sorrow and suffering of denying self, taking up our cross daily, and following Jesus. (Luke 9:23)

A2 The fruit is the rest and rewards in heaven and partially on earth. The fruit has nothing to do with gain or money.

Application: I thank God for His Word and the preciousness of letting it speak to my heart as I understand in my mind. Today's passage is interpreted in the context of 2 Timothy 1. This is a war and I chose not to entangle myself with the affairs of this life.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us to endure hardness as a good soldier of Christ Jesus.

2:8-13 *Discipleship's Care for Spiritual Strength, Consistency, and Teaching*

(5) ⁸ Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my gospel: ⁹ Wherein I allow trouble, as an evil doer, [even] to bonds; but the Word of God is not bound. ¹⁰ Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus with eternal glory. ¹¹ [It is] a faithful saying: For if we be dead with [him], we shall also live with [him]: ¹² If we allow, we shall also reign with [him]: if we deny [him], he also will deny us: ¹³ If we believe not, [yet] he abides faithful: he cannot deny himself.

2:14-18 *Discipleship's Charge to Study the Scriptures and Shun Profane and Vain Babblings*

(6) ¹⁴ Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord that they strive not about words to no profit, [but] to the subverting of the hearers. ¹⁵ **Study to show yourself approved to God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.** ¹⁶ But shun profane [and] vain babblings: for they will increase to more ungodliness. ¹⁷ And their word will eat as does a canker: of whom is Hymenaeus and Philetus; ¹⁸ Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some.

2:19-21 *Discipleship's Seal of Honor or Dishonor*

(7) ¹⁹ Nevertheless the foundation of God stands sure, having this seal, The Lord knows them that are his. And, Let everyone that names the name of Christ depart from iniquity. ²⁰ But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honor, and some to dishonor. ²¹ If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel to honor, sanctified, and meet for the master's use, [and] prepared to every good work.

2 Timothy Chapter 2

22-26 *Discipleship's Instruction to Flee from Youthful Lusts to a Pure Heart*

(8) ²² Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. ²³ But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes. ²⁴ And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle to all [men], apt to teach, patient, ²⁵ In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; ²⁶ And [that] they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

Q – Are all believers to flee from youthful lusts?

A – Yes, and if the believers do not flee they cannot follow righteousness, faith, charity and peace with those who call on the Lord with a pure heart.

Application: I must teach others who oppose themselves with patience and meekness. I believe the context applies for both unbelievers and believers that oppose themselves and need to repent as connected in 2 Timothy 2:22-24 and 2:25-26.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us understand when the New Testament refers to both believers and unbelievers.

2 Timothy Chapter 3

1-9 *Discipleship's Description of Ungodly Living (23 traits)*

(9) ¹ **This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come.** ² For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, ³ Without natural affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, ⁴ Traitors, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; ⁵ Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: **from such turn away.** ⁶ For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with diverse lusts, ⁷ Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. ⁸ Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith. ⁹ But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest to all [men], as theirs also was.

Q – When are the last days?

A – From the times of Christ's coming to earth over 2000 years ago as the Lamb of God until His future return to earth as the King of Kings. As we get closer to the return of Christ ungodliness will increase.

Application: I expect the world to become more ungodly as the time of Christ's return draws nearer.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us compare the previous and next Bible passage to understand the context and application.

3:10-17 *Discipleship's Description of Godly Living (9 traits)*

(10) ¹⁰ But you have fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, longsuffering, charity, patience, ¹¹ Persecutions, afflictions, which came to me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me. ¹² Yes, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall allow persecution. ¹³ But evil men and seducers shall grow worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived. ¹⁴ But continue in the things which you have learned and has been assured of, knowing of whom you have learned them; ¹⁵ And that from a child you have known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise to salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. ¹⁶ **All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:** ¹⁷ **That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished to all good works.**

Q – Why does this passage begin and end with reference to the Holy Scriptures?

A – Because the Bible is where we learn how to obey and seek God, and all things that follow.

Application: I believe that the Bible produces faith and faith produces feelings. The feelings are the fruit of the Holy Spirit (Galatians 5:22-23).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us strive for, attain, and sustain living Godly lives.

2 Timothy Chapter 4

4:1-8 *Discipleship's Reward of the Crown of Righteousness*

(11) ¹ I charge [you] therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; ² **Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all ^a longsuffering and doctrine.** ³ For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts they will heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; ⁴ And they shall turn away [their] ears from the truth, and shall be turned to fables. ⁵ But watch in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of your ministry. ⁶ For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand. ⁷ I have fought a good fight, I have finished [my] course, I have kept the faith: ⁸ Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but to all them also that love his appearing.

Q – Why use the word longsuffering in 2 Tim 4:2?

A – Makrothumia in Greek, makro is long or far and thumos is a form of passionate wrath, used 14x in the New Testament. This is much different than patience which is hupomone in Greek, which is endurance with hope. Patience in the KJV and Spanish translations, also in Hebrews 6:12.

Application: I believe the crown of life is possible for every believer. I can know how to earn crowns and be confident in what crowns I have by study and obedience to the Holy Scriptures.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us strive for, attain, not lose crowns that we can cast our earned crowns before the feet of our Lord Jesus Christ when we appear before him at his return.

4:9-15 *Discipleship's Transparency of Relationships and Basic Needs*

(12) ⁹ Do your diligence to come shortly to me: ¹⁰ For Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed to Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia. ¹¹ Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with you: for he is profitable to me for the ministry. ¹² And Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus. ¹³ The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when you comes, bring [with you], and the books, [but] especially the parchments. ¹⁴ Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works: ¹⁵ Of whom be you ware also; for he has greatly withstood our words.

Q –Why did Demas forsake Paul? (vs 10)

A – Because saint Demas loved this present world more than denial of self and daily taking up his cross to follow Jesus. The comforts, business, and acceptance of this present world can draw saints away from their crowns and hinder spiritual growth.

Application: I see the basics of New Testament Christianity in the apostle Paul by his taking back of Mark who is ready to serve as a co-laborer now. (vs 11) This is true reconciliation between saints. I know the same applies today for getting back to the basics of clothing for protection of the body from the elements and writings to renew the mind. (vs 13)

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us trust the Lord with those who do evil against us when we do good. (vs 14-15)

4:16-18 *Discipleship's Example of Standing Alone Except for God*

(13) ¹⁶ At my first answer no man stood with me, but all [men] forsook me: [I pray God] that it may not be laid to their charge. ¹⁷ Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and [that] all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion. ¹⁸ And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve [me] to his heavenly kingdom: to whom [be] glory for ever and ever. Amen.

4:19-22 *Discipleship's Love for the Family of God*

(14) ¹⁹ Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. ²⁰ Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus I have left at Miletum sick. ²¹ Do your diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greets you, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren. ²² The Lord Jesus Christ [be] with your spirit. Grace [be] with you. Amen. [The second [letter] to Timothy, ordained the first elder of the congregation of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.]

Titus (3-8, 7 min) 2022

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

1 2 3

12 Steps to Order in the Ekklesia

Purpose: Letter by the Apostle Paul to a mature elder regarding order in the ekklesia.

Key Words: works 8x (good 6x, not good 2x), sound 5x (doctrine and faith lead to speech), doctrine 4x, God our Savior 3x (more than in Timothy and Jude), Holy Spirit 1x.

Key Passage: 2:7-8

<u>The steps of order are:</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) vision: proclaim the truth according to the commandment of God our Savior	1:1-3
Titus' Assignments at Crete – create order and dismiss disorder	
2) mission: set in order the things that are wanting, and appoint elders in every city	1:4-9
3) guiding principles: for selection of elders (what disqualifies and qualifies) Linking verse 9 "to exhort and convince the contrarians (opposers)	
4) opposers are unruly, vain talkers, deceivers, \$, mind & conscience defiled	1:10-16
5) rebuke sharply - that they may be sound in the faith (carnal believers)	
6) Promote sound doctrine to: older men, older women, young men and servants	2:1-10
7) Pattern of good works, sound doctrine & speech – those contrary are ashamed	2:7-8
8) Sound doctrine for all (past, present & future) purify, zealous, speak with authority	2:11-15
9) Be subject to authority – gentle, meek to all; not as we used to be	3:1-3
10) because God our Savior did this for us – be careful to maintain good works	3:4-8
10) avoid unprofitable discussion, when to reject opposers	3:9-11
11) learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, not be unfruitful	3:12-14
12) greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.	3:15

Discussion:

(1) Why no prayers mentioned in Titus?

Already developed in mature elder. No need to mention in any form. Already known.

(2) Why no witness mentioned in Titus?

Witness will naturally follow good works and sound doctrine, faith and speech.

New Testament congregation government. **Elder** in Greek is presbuteros - 67x, **Presbytery** – 3x (2 OT/1 NT), group of elders. **Teacher** in Greek is didaskalos – 57x, **teach** – 91x. **Deacon** in Greek is diakoneo - 32x as **servant or minister** (diakonos – 37x) in various ways. **Bishop** is episkopos in Greek, translated as overseers - 7x, 1 x for Jesus. **Evangelist** – 3x,

Pastor in Greek is poimen - 17x (16 for Jesus or shepherd, 1 for man in Eph 4:11). **Preacher** – 4x, **Preach** is kerusso in Greek, proclaim publicly –60x. **Apostle** – 90 x, always the 12 (Ephesians 2:20). **Reverend** – 0x, **Father** – 0x (Matthew 23:9 – reproof), **Prophet** – 131 OT/Jesus, 12 NT

Prayers of the Bible None.

Titus Chapter 1

1:1-4 *God is Exalted by the Elect's Faith*

(1) ¹ Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness; ² In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began; ³ But has in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed to me according to the commandment of God our Savior; ⁴ To Titus, [my] own son after the common faith: Grace, mercy, [and] peace, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ our Savior.

Q – Who are the elect?

A – They are the people God has chosen before the world began.

Application: I learn from Paul identifying himself as a servant before an apostle. No matter what my gift, ability, or position I am elect to serve God and other people first. My faith is up toward God and God's grace mercy and peace is down toward me.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us understand the primacy of God our Savior and non-breakable link and subordination of the Lord Jesus Christ our Savior.

1:5-9 *God is Exalted by the Elders Setting Things in Order*

(2) ⁵ For this cause left I you in Crete, that you should set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed you: ⁶ If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of riot or unruly. ⁷ For an elder must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; ⁸ But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; ⁹ Holding fast the faithful word as he has been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the opposers.

1:10-16 *God is Exalted by Clear Discernment of False Teachers Professing to Know God*

(3) ¹⁰ For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision: ¹¹ Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy gain. ¹² One of themselves, a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are always liars, evil beasts, lazy gluttons. ¹³ This witness is true. Wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith; ¹⁴ Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth. ¹⁵ To the pure all things are pure: but to them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled. ¹⁶ They profess that they know God; but in works they deny [him], being hateful, and disobedient, and every good work is disapproved.

Titus Chapter 2

2:1-10 **God is Exalted by Sound Doctrine and Personal Holy Relationships**

(4) ¹ Speak the things which are sound doctrine: That the **aged men** be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience. ³ The **aged women** likewise, that [they be] in behavior as becomes holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things; ⁴ That they may teach the **young women** to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children, ⁵ [To be] discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the Word of God be not blasphemed. ⁶ **Young men** likewise exhort to be sober minded. ⁷ In all things showing yourself a pattern of good works: in doctrine [showing] incorruptness, gravity, sincerity, ⁸ Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you. ⁹ [Exhort] **servants** to be obedient to their own masters, [and] to please them well in all [things]; not answering again; ¹⁰ Not ^a to steal, but showing all good trustworthiness; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Savior in all things.

Q – Is the master-servant relationship still applicable today?

A1 – Definitely yes. Because the aged man and women over the younger man and women is still applicable today.

A2 – Definitely yes. Because the principles of master and slave relationships and behavior is the same as employer/employee, manager/staff, captain/team, government/citizen.

Application: I must show a pattern of good works, incorrupt doctrine, seriousness, sincerity; as well as sound speech that cannot be condemned by those contrary.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us understand and do what is right whether aged men and women, young men and women, servants and masters.

2:11-15 **God is Exalted in our Salvation, Sanctification, and Redemption**

(5) our SALVATION 11 For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men,
our SANCTIFICATION 12 Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;
our REDEMPTION 13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Savior Jesus Christ; 14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity,
our SANCTIFICATION and purify to himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.
15 These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise you.

Q – Are there degrees of purity? (Titus 2:14)

A – No, we either have purity or impurity as believers. The spiritual growing process teaches us to be pure for greater periods of time because we prevent sin and repent quicker. As believers our heart is either pure with obedience of every thought captive or impure with disobedience or sin, beginning in our thoughts.

Application: I have learned the balance of looking back to my initial salvation, looking up-around-within at my present day by day sanctification, and looking forward to my future redemption.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us to consistently have the 3 looks of past-present-future.

Titus Chapter 3

3:1-8 God is Exalted in our Good Works

(6) ¹ Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and authorities, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work, ² To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, [but] gentle, showing all meekness to all men. ³ For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving diverse lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, [and] hating one another. ⁴ But after that the kindness and love of God our Savior toward man appeared, ⁵ **Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;** ⁶ Which he shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; ⁷ That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life. ⁸ [This is] a faithful saying, and these things I will that you affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God might be careful to maintain good works. These things are good and profitable to men.

3:9-11 God is Exalted by Avoiding Unprofitable and Vain Talk

(7) ⁹ But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain. ¹⁰ A man that is a heretic after the first and second admonition reject; ¹¹ Knowing that he that is such is subverted, and sins, being condemned of himself.

3:12-15 God is Exalted as We Learn to Maintain Good Works

(8) ¹² When I shall send Artemas to you, or Tychicus, be diligent to come to me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter. ¹³ Bring Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting to them. ¹⁴ And let ours also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful. ¹⁵ All that are with me greet you. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace [be] with you all. Amen.

Q – How do we learn to maintain good works?

A – Discipleship between elder and younger believers. Men with men and women with women. Diligence is one factor we need to maintain good works.

Application: I know our Lord Jesus desires for me to learn to maintain good works for the glory of God so I am fruitful. I will know and greet those who love in the faith.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us desire for others to learn to maintain good works that last forever. They are not the works of man, self, or religion. They are the works that are led of the Holy Spirit, obedient to the Holy Scriptures, and glorify God.

Philemon (1-4, 3 min) 2022

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

12 Evidence of Brotherly Love (John 15:13-15, 1 John 3:18, 1 Peter 1:22)

(reduced to 3: love, prayer, and trust)

Text: 10th of 14 letters by the Apostle Paul. 1st of 4 personal letters, a personal letter between two older believers and one younger believer; between three men: 2 in prison (an old and young man) and one free. Onesimus in verse 10 is the central character of the letter, "profitable" in Hebrew.

Purpose: Instruction in righteousness and doctrine/love (2 Timothy 3:16-17) not reproof, nor correction

Key Words: Love 4-agape. Beloved 3x-agapetos. Fellow 4x. Bowels 3x. God 2x, Jesus 11x, Spirit 0x.

Verse	<u>My good works are</u>	Scripture	<u>Brotherly Love Qualities</u>
A. Love			
¹	to Philemon our dearly beloved,	1	Love one another
¹	and fellow-laborer,	1	Work together
B. Prayer			
⁴	making mention of you always in my prayers	4	Pray for each other
⁶	communication of your faith may become effectual	6	Desire effective life for Jesus
⁷	great joy and consolation in your love	7	Joy in their love
C. Trust			
⁹	Yet for love's sake I rather beseech [you]	9	Motivated by love
¹⁴	But without your mind would I do nothing;	14	Total honor for another
¹⁷	receive him as myself.	17	Trust my judgment
²¹	Having confidence in your obedience	21	Absolute confidence in
²¹	you will do more than I say.	21	Trust to follow through & more
B. Prayer			
²²	I trust that through your prayers	22	Pray for each other
A. Love			
²⁵	The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with your *spirit. Amen.	25	Acknowledge God's grace

Prayers of the Bible

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
Philemon 1:4	Supplication	Philemon's good works		Brotherly love for Philemon	Paul
Philemon 1:22	Supplication	Paul's good works and lodging		Brotherly love for Paul	Philemon

*spirit is pneuma in Greek 350x. Whether capital S is used is up to the translator. Spirit in verse 25 has to do with our human spirit, or conscience.

Philemon

1:1-3 **Greeting** (Love)

(1) ¹ Paul, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy [our] brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellowlaborer, ² And to [our] beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellowsoldier, and to the church in your house: ³ Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Notes: house congregation in Colosse, Col 4:9, 17. Later Philemon became an elder of Colosse and died as a martyr under Nero. It is evident from the letter that Philemon was a man of property and influence. Archippus became an elder and was martyred by the Roman emperor Nero with Philemon. Also Paul and Peter were executed by Nero. Apphia is probably Philemon's wife and Archippus his son.

1:4-7 **Paul Commends Philemon** (Prayers of Paul for Philemon)

(2) ⁴ I thank my God, making mention of you always in my prayers, ⁵ Hearing of your love and faith, which you have toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints; ⁶ That the communication of your faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus. ⁷ For we have great joy and comfort in your love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by you, brother.

1:8-21 **Paul's Request about Philemon's Criminal Slave, Onesimus** (Trust)

(3) ⁸ Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin you that which is convenient, ⁹ Yet for love's sake I rather beseech [you], being such an one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ. ¹⁰ I beseech you for my son Onesimus, whom I have born in my bonds: ¹¹ Which in time past was to you unprofitable, but now profitable to you and to me: ¹² Whom I have sent again: you therefore receive him, that is, mine own bowels: ¹³ Whom I would have retained with me, that in your behalf he might have ministered to me in the bonds of the gospel: ¹⁴ But without your mind I would do nothing; that your benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly. ¹⁵ For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that you should receive him forever; ¹⁶ Not now as a slave, but above a slave, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto you, both in the flesh, and in the Lord? ¹⁷ If you count me therefore a partner, receive him as myself. ¹⁸ If he has wronged you, or owes anything, put that on my account; ¹⁹ I Paul have written with my own hand, I will repay: albeit I do not say to you how you owe unto me even your own self besides. ²⁰ Yes, brother, let me have joy of you in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord. ²¹ Having confidence in your obedience I wrote to you, knowing that you will also do more than I say.

1:22 **Paul's Preparing to Leave Jail** -(Prayers of Philemon for Paul)

²² But withal prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

Notes: Paul led Onesimus and Philemon to salvation through repentance toward God and personal faith in Jesus Christ. All the unsaved who come to Christ are as Onesimus, Romans 5:8. Slavehood: 60% of the Roman empire were slaves, Col 4:1 The providence of God, knowing you are in His will no matter where or when. Roman law and not Moses law is followed for the treatment of slaves. Probably theft is crime.

1:23-25 **Farewell** (Love)

(4) ²³ There greet you Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus; ²⁴ Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, Luke, my fellow laborers. ²⁵ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with your spirit. Amen.

[Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus, a servant.]

Philemon

Notes: Being a fellow-laborer with Mark lost in Acts 15:38 is restored. Demas fellow-laborer status is later forsaken in 2 Timothy 4:10 as Demas forsook Paul for love of this world. Epaphras, Aristarchus, and Luke remain good and solid loving relationships.

Epaphras – Colossians 1:17, 4:12. Demas – II Timothy 4:10. Ending with grace as a trademark at the end of all 14 of Paul’s letters.

Three fellows of fellowship: Fellowlaborer – 1b and 24b are first and last. Fellowsoldier – 2a, and fellowprisoner – 23a are inbetween 1b and 24b, fellowlaborer.

Bowels = emotions/moved deep within, like when we eat and digest nutritious food when we are hungry (heart used today). Beloved = loved by many.

Application: Examine myself; how am I doing with my brother (individual tree) in love, prayer, & trust?

GEMS

1a. Five-part series on the enemy of the congregation uses the five one-chapter books of the Bible.

#1 Discern the enemy - inside the Church	Jude	Forest - Genesis to Rev.
#2 Discern the enemy - outside the Church	Obadiah	Forest - Genesis to Rev.
#3 Overcome the Enemy – in the universal Church	2 John-love & truth	Forest - New Testament
#4 Overcome the Enemy – in the local Church	3 John-truth & love	Trees - New Testament
#5 Overcome the Enemy – in the individual believer	Philemon-friendship	Tree - New Testament

1b. "For in the true nature of things, if we rightly consider, every green tree is far more glorious than if it were made of gold and silver" by *Martin Luther*. "Can't see the forest for the trees" common saying. "We can see the Forest and the Tree(s)" by *Bill Heath*.

2. Background of Paul’s writings to 2 people groups, 7 local churches, and 3 persons: (born 5 AD, school of Gamaliel 15-20 AD, saved 34 AD).

During his 3 missionary journeys described in Acts 13 to 27 the order and approximate dates are:

Galatians	49 AD	2 nd Missionary Journey	Acts 18:1-17	Corinth
1 Thessalonians	51 AD	2 nd Missionary Journey	Acts 18:1-17	Corinth
2 Theseslonians	52 AD	2 nd Missionary Journey	Acts 18:1-17	Corinth
1 Corinthians	55 AD	3 rd Missionary Journey	Acts 19:1-41	Ephesus
2 Corinthians	56 AD	3 rd Missionary Journey	Acts 20:1	Macedonia
Romans	57 AD	3 rd Missionary Journey	Acts 20:2	Greece

Philemon is written when Paul is aged and a prisoner on house arrest for two years in Rome, 60 to 62 AD, where he wrote 4 letters (Acts 28:30-31):

Ephesians	61 AD	
Philippians	61 AD	
Colossians	62 AD	
Philemon	62 AD	He writes to the local church in Colossae that is in Philemon’s home.

After release from his first Roman imprisonment Paul writes:

Titus	64 AD	
1 Timothy	64 AD	63-66 AD, Hebrews

Around age 65, Again Paul is in a Roman prison and was executed by the Roman Emperor Nero.

2 Timothy	67 AD	
-----------	-------	--

Hebrews (13-37, 45 min) 2021

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book**

Gems

1 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13

12 Reasons to Continually Look at Jesus

Key verse: 12:1-3 Looking onto Jesus. Doctrine in chapters 1-11 culminate in 12, for application in 13.

Purpose: Reproof & Correction (2 Timothy 3:16-17)

Characters: Angels, Moses, Abraham, Melchizedek (several in Hebrews 11)

Key Words: faith 31x, let us 13x, better 12x, perfect 10x (fully mature), fall 4x (come short of)

Doctrine

	OLD(I looking back)	NEW (looking at Jesus)
	"better than"	
1)	Prophets 1:1-3 (1:2)	Jesus' word is "better than" those of the prophets
2)	Angels 1:4-2:18 (1:4)	Jesus' is "so much better than" the angels 2:17-18 prayer
3)	Moses 3:1-6 (3:3)	Jesus is "worthy of more glory than" Moses
4)	Rest 3:7-4:13 (4:1)	Jesus' rest is "superior to" Israel's rest in Canaan
	"a better"	
5)	High Priest 4:14-8:6 (4:14)	Jesus is the personal, permanent "Great" High Priest 4:14-16 prayer 5:12-6:12 Reproof & Correction for growth of believers
6)	Covenant 8:6-13 (8:6)	Jesus is mediator of a "better" covenant & better promise
7)	Tabernacle 9:1-11 (9:11)	Jesus is a "greater and more perfect" tabernacle
8)	Sacrifice 9:12-10:18 (9:23)	Jesus eternal sacrifice is "superior" to the Old Covenant
9)	Faith 10:19-11:40 (11:40)	Jesus provides for a "better" faith where we may mature
	"Preparing for Eternity" (looking forward)	
10)	Father's Discipline 12:1-17 (9)	Heavenly father's discipline is "better" than earthly father
11)	Mount Sinai 12:18-24 (22)	Heavenly Jerusalem (Mt Zion) is "opposite" & better
12)	Shakable 12:25-29 (27)	New Jerusalem is "unshakably" better (vs 28-29)

Application (looking at the present)

13:1-6 (1)	Let brotherly love continue
13:7-17 (13)	Let us go forth to him outside the camp, . . .
13:18-25 (18)	Pray for us ... Grace be with you all. Amen.

Prayers of the Bible

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
Hebrews 2:17-18	Supplication	Reconcile sins		Merciful and faithful	Our prayer to Christ our High Priest
Hebrews 4:14-16	Supplication	"Let us" hold fast our profession-14		"Let us" have confidence-16	Our prayer to Christ our High Priest
Hebrews 5:7	Supplication	God's help Jesus feared		Strong crying & Tears	Jesus prayer before being crucified
Hebrews 11:6	Supplication			Faith & Diligence	Our need in prayer
Hebrews 13:15	Praise				"Let us" offer the sacrifice of praise
Hebrews 13:18	Supplication	For Paul to visit them			Paul's request to Hebrew believers

Five Warnings against drawing back:

"Let us" (13x) continue on from:

1:1-10:18 *Supremacy of Christ over the 3 Pillars of Judaism (**Doctrine** to understand)*

	1:1-3	Christ is superior	Shadow to Substance	
	1:4-2:18	Supreme to angels		
1 st	2:1-4 (2:1)	Relating to angels		
	3:1-4:13	Supreme to Moses		
2 nd	3:7-4:13	Relating to Moses	"Let us" fear to come short of His rest (4:1)	
	(3:12)		"Let us" labor to enter into that rest (4:11)	
	4:14-10:18	Supreme to Priesthood	Aaron to Melchisedec	
3 rd	5:11-6:12	Relating to the priesthood	"Let us" go on to maturity (6:1)	
	(6:6)			
	6:13-20	Superior promise		
	7:1-28	Superior priesthood		
	8:1-13	Superior Covenant		
	9:1-10	Superior Tabernacle	The Holy Place to the Most Holy Place	
	9:11-10:18	Superior sacrifice		
10:19-13:25 <i>Appropriation of the Son in the Believer (Practice from the heart - choice)</i>				
	10:19-25	Superior blood	"Let us" draw near with a true heart (10:22)	
			"Let us" hold fast (10:23)	
			"Let us" provoke one another (10:24)	
4 th	10:26-39 (26)	Relating to willful sin & drawing back		
	11:1-40	A Life of Faith		
	12:1-2	Witnesses	"Let us" lay aside every weight (12:1)	
			"Let us" run with patience the race (12:1)	
5 th	12:3-29 (17)	Relating to a father & place	"Let us" have grace (12:28)	
	13:1-6	Social holiness		
	13:7-17	Ministry holiness	"Let us" go forth outside the camp (13:13)	
	13:18-25	Personal holiness		

2 Great Lessons

1. The new covenant is superior to and eclipses the old covenant.
2. Differences and Similarities of the old and new covenant. Shadows of Jesus in the old.

Different Interpretations – which do you believe?

1. Written to believers (emphasis on personal holiness, in Christ, each day, in daily life. This effects our rewards and crowns when we go to heaven). This view is correct.

The unbelieving Jews who went back to their past religious system. Hebrews 4:1, 6:6, 10:26 and 12:15 are unbeliever's coming short of God's abundant grace.

2. Written to believers which includes those who went away from the gospel. The view is inaccurate, leading to teaching believers can fall away or lose their salvation.

1. The chiasmic structure of [Hebrews](#)

Bible TOC

		<u>Passage</u>	<u>Notes</u>	
A	Prophets & Angels	1:1-2:18		
	B Moses	3:1-6	The law-giver	
	C Rest	3:7-4:13	Sabbath (holy days)	
	D Priesthood	4:14-10:37	* Ceremonial laws	6:3
	C Faith	10:38-12:11	Patience and rest	
	B Mount Sinai	12:18-29	Moral laws	
A	Angels & Prophets	13:1-25		

* The ceremonial laws consisted of time (holy days, old covenant), people (priesthood), place (tabernacle/temple) practice (animal sacrifices). Today they are replaced by the new covenant by Jesus Christ, a much better promise. All believers are priests before the Great High Priest, 1 Peter 2:9.

2. Hebrews 5:11-6:12

A	Results of laziness	5:11-14
	B Foundation doctrines	6:1-6
A	Results of diligence	6:7-12

3. Eternal Salvation cannot be lost (the unbelieving Jews in the Church) Galatians

Hebrews 2:1-4 . Hebrews 3:7-4:13 . Hebrews 5:11-6:12 . Hebrews 10:19-39 . Hebrews 12:1-29 .

1. Hebrews 2:3a How shall we escape, **if** we neglect so great salvation;
2. Hebrews 3:14 For we are made partakers of Christ, **if** we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end; **Note: One has to be a believer in order to hold fast, to not fall away.**
3. Hebrews 6:6 **If** they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put [him] to an open shame. **Note: A good analogy would be the difference between marrying someone and just going out on a few dates with them.**
4. Hebrews 10:26 For **if we** sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,.
5. Hebrews 12:17 For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. **Note: In context of the history of Jacob and Esau.**

John Calvin addresses this problem of "falling away" in his *Institutes of the Christian Religion*.

He writes that, "experience shows that the reprobate are sometimes affected in a way so similar to the Elect." In fact, they can "truly feel the efficacy of the Gospel," and there is no reason why the Lord could not allow the reprobate "some taste of His grace," or "irradiate their minds with some sparks of His light." However, this is only what is called a "temporary faith." Calvin writes further, "Not that they truly perceive the power of spiritual grace and the sure light of faith; but the Lord--the better to convict them, and leave them without excuse--instills into their minds such a sense of His goodness as can be felt without the Spirit of adoption." Calvin states that the unsaved person in this situation lays hold to the "shadow" instead of the "substance."

Hebrews Chapter 1

1:1-3 *Jesus' Words are "Better than" those of the Prophets*

(1) ¹ God, who at sundry times and in diverse manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, ² Has in these last days spoken unto us by [his] Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; ³ Who being the brightness of [his] glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

Q – What is significant with the introduction letter of the Apostle Paul to the Hebrew followers of Christ?

A – It exalts the person of Jesus Christ from the beginning to the end of time, setting the platform for the rest of the letter.

Application: I know that Jesus is the final prophet, priest, and king – past, present, and future. This knowledge comes from the Bible, my faith, and God's grace.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer gives comfort and hope as we follow Jesus.

1:4-14 *Jesus is "Much Better" than the Angels*

(2) ⁴ Being made so much better than the angels, as he has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. ⁵ For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day I have begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? ⁶ And again, when he brings in the first begotten into the world, he says, And let all the angels of God worship him. ⁷ And of the angels he says, Who makes his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. ⁸ But to the Son [he says], Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of your kingdom. ⁹ You have loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, [even] your God, has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows.

¹⁰ And, You, Lord, in the beginning has laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of your hands: ¹¹ They shall perish; but you remain; and they all shall grow old as does a garment;

¹² And as a vesture you shall fold them up, and they shall be changed: but you are the same, and your years shall not fail. ¹³ But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make your enemies your footstool? ¹⁴ Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

Q1 – What qualities of Jesus should the truth believer follow?

A – To love what is right, and hate iniquity. The result is God's anointing with the oil of gladness above others. (1:9)

Q2 – Why is it important for a follower of Jesus to have a firm understanding of Jesus' role in the creation and destruction of the earth and heavens? (1:10-12)

A – Because this understanding helps us not be entangled with the things of this life since we are only pilgrims passing through.

Application: I know that Jesus is much better than the angels. I trust my past, present, and future salvation to Jesus, and when needed in the eyes of God, the angels minister to me.

Q3 – What is a role of the angels today? (1:14)

A – The angels are ministering spirits, sent to minister for the true believers today.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us keep both eyes on Jesus above as we live our daily lives. Keeping both eyes on Jesus more and more consistently is a result of maturing in the faith.

Hebrews Chapter 2

2:1-4 *Warning for Hebrews Who Neglect Salvation by Christ Alone*

(3) ¹ Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. ² For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward; ³ How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation; which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed to us by them that heard [him]; ⁴ God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders, and with diverse miracles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?

Q1 – What is important for the Hebrew believers and all believers to not drift away from?

A – Obedience to the Holy Scriptures. We must intently and diligently listen to the Holy Scriptures because we are held accountable for our disobedience. (2:1-2). Not to mix new with old.

Q2 – Why was it important for God to use miracles to confirm the apostles' salvation that Jesus began to speak when he was a man. (2:3-4)

A – Because God uses signs to give evidence of a new dispensation with humanity. This is the same as with Moses/Aaron and the Law, Elijah/Elisha and the prophets in the Old Testament. The next dispensation is in the future with the rapture of the body of Christ before the time of the tribulation or 70th week of Daniel. 1 Cor 11:11-27.

Application: I know the salvation of Jesus is better than the signs, wonders, miracles and gifts of the early church.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help understand the similarities and differences between the times of the early church in Acts and today.

2:5-9 *Jesus Died for Us and God Crowned Him (not angels) with Glory and Honor*

(4) ⁵ For to the angels has he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak. ⁶ But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man, that you are mindful of him? or the son of man, that you visit him? ⁷ You made him a little lower than the angels; you crowned him with glory and honor, and did set him over the works of your hands: ⁸ You have put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing [that is] not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him. ⁹ But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honor; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

Q – When and why was Jesus made lower than the angels?

A – When Jesus was conceived He became lower than the angels and made a man so He could identify with our sins, and die for every man, knowing God would crown Him with glory and honor.

Application: I know that Jesus died for me and was crowned with glory and honor.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer gives us strength from the person and purpose of the Lord Jesus Christ.

2:10-18 *Jesus is a Merciful and Faithful High Priest*

(5) ¹⁰ For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons to glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. ¹¹ For both he that sanctifies and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, ¹² Saying, I will declare your name to my brethren, in the midst of the congregation will I sing praise to you. ¹³ And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold I and the children which God has given me. ¹⁴ Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; ¹⁵ And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. ¹⁶ For verily he took not on [him the nature of] angels; but he took on [him] the seed of Abraham. ¹⁷ Wherefore in all things it behooved him to be made like to [his] brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things [pertaining] to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people. ¹⁸ For in that he himself has suffered being tempted, he is able to help them that are tempted.

Q – Why is suffering good for the believer?

A – Because following Jesus who suffered is part of our sanctification and makes us one.

Application: I rejoice because Jesus helps me when I am tempted.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us understand the difference between positional sanctification at the time of our initial salvation and practical sanctification in our daily life because of our merciful and faithful high priest.

Hebrews Chapter 3

3:1-6 *Jesus is "Worthy of More Glory" than Moses*

(6) ¹ Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus; ² Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses [was faithful] in all his house. ³ For this [man] was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who has built the house has more honor than the house. ⁴ For every house is built by some [man]; but he that built all things is God. ⁵ And Moses verily was faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after; ⁶ But Christ as a son over his own house; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm to the end.

Q – What can I learn from the life of Moses?

A – Moses was faithful in all his house, a servant, and for a testimony of things spoken after.

Application: I am part of the house of Christ (the body of Christ, the bride of Christ, the ekklesia or called-out ones), which is worthy of more glory than the house of Moses (the nation of Israel, the Hebrew nation).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us understand the difference between the Old Testament promises to the Hebrews and the better New Testament promises to the followers of Christ.

3:7-19 *Jesus' Rest is "Superior" to Israel's Rest in the Wilderness*

(7) ⁷ Wherefore (as the **Holy Ghost says,** " ^a **Today if ye will hear his voice,** ⁸ **Harden not your hearts,** as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness: ⁹ When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years. ¹⁰ Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do always **err in [their] heart;** and they have **not known my ways.** ¹¹ So I swore in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.)"

^a Numbers 13-14 when the 12 spies were sent to survey the promised land. Fear and unbelief entered the hearts of ten spies, then all the people. Moses repeats the judgment of God at the end of his life in Deuteronomy 1:35.

¹² **Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.** ¹³ But exhort one another daily, while it is called **Today; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.** ¹⁴ For **we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast to the end;** ¹⁵ While it is said, "**Today if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.**" ¹⁶ For some, when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses. ¹⁷ But with whom was he grieved forty years? [was it] not with them that had sinned, whose carcasses fell in the wilderness? ¹⁸ And to whom swore he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not? ¹⁹ So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

Q – How can we compare Israel's rest in the Old Testament with Jesus' rest in the New Testament?

A1 – Israel's rest was a literal physical promise for the nation of Israel to inherit the promises to Abraham. This rest was not fulfilled due to their unbelief, yet the promise was fulfilled in the book of Joshua.

A2 – Jesus' rest is a literal spiritual promise for the body of Christ and each individual believer. The saints have a choice to enter into that rest or live in unbelief. (Hebrews 4:11, Philippians 3:14, in context of 3:1-21, 1 Corinthians 3:11-15)

A3 – Conclusion: Moses rest for God's chosen people is a type of Jesus' rest for God's elect people today.

Application: I know I entered into Jesus' rest the day I repented of my sin and believed in Jesus as my savior. I know Jesus' rest is available for me to experience day by day as part of my sanctification. I know that Jesus' total rest is assured when I die or am raptured. I know that the contest of Jesus' rest in Hebrews 3-4 is for the believer's growth in Christ and daily life; not heaven in the future. This rest is a choice based on the Holy Scriptures, obedience, and faith.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us understand the difference between the Old Testament promises to the Hebrews and the better New Testament promises to the followers of Christ.

Hebrews Chapter 4

4:1-10 *Jesus' Rest Begins and Continues in the Believer Today*

(8) ¹ Let **us** therefore **fear**, lest, a **promise being left [us] of entering into his rest**, any of you should **seem to come short of it**. ² For to us was the gospel preached, as well as to them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard [it]. ³ For **we** which have **believed do enter into rest**, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world. ⁴ For he spoke in a certain place of the seventh [day] on this wise, And **God did rest the seventh day from all his works**. ⁵ And in this [place] again, If they shall enter into my rest. ⁶ Seeing therefore it remains that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: ⁷ Again, he limits a certain day, saying in ^a David, Today, after so long a time; as it is said, **Today if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts**. ⁸ For if ^b Joshua had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day. ⁹ ^c **There remains therefore a rest to the people of God**. ¹⁰ **For he that is entered into his rest, he also has ceased from his own works, as God [did] from his**.

Q – How can we come short of Jesus' rest in this life?

A1 – Understand that the book of Hebrews is written to Hebrew believers and applicable to all believers.

A2 – Understand that God never abandoned his chosen people, the nation of Israel, saved from bondage in Egypt by Moses. The same as He never leaves his chosen people, the ekklesia, saved from bondage in sin by Jesus.

A3 – Understand that Jesus' rest begins at salvation and continues in our daily sanctification or daily salvation as we fear coming short of entering his rest (4:1). This is a life of faith and good works based on obedience to the Holy Scriptures (4.2).

Application: I know that Hebrews 4:1-3 applies to my daily rest in Jesus and do his good works. Hebrews 4:4-9 speaks of my initial salvation on July 6, 1976. Hebrews 4:10 ties my life before my initial salvation to my initial and continual daily salvation.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us understand the difference between our own works before and after salvation; as well as diligently desire to be used for good works that glorify God.

4:11-16 *Jesus' Rest Comes from the Word of God and Prayer*

(9) ¹¹ ^a ^b **Let us labor therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief**. ¹² For the Word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. ¹³ Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened to the eyes of him with whom we have to do. ¹⁴ Seeing then that **we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God**, let us hold fast [our] ^c confession. ¹⁵ For we have not a high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as [we are, yet] without sin. ¹⁶ Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we ^d may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

^a Spiritual rest for the believer in this life. Have you been robbed, thinking of your own littleness as the Hebrews, who entered not into Canaan due to unbelief in the promises of God? Make the decision today, harden not your hearts, take up your cross and steadfastly follow Christ until the end.

^b Isaiah 28:12, 30:15 (past), Matthew 11:28-30, John 15, John 19:30 (It is finished), Ephesians 2:6, Hebrews 4 (present), and Rev 14:13 (future)

^c Profession ^{KJV}

^d will, not maybe. "father, may I?" "Yes, you may."

Q – How do we labor to enter into Jesus' rest?

A – The believer's labor of studying the Word of God (4:12-13) and prayer (4:14-16).

Application: I know that personal daily time the first thing each morning seeking God in the Word and Prayer gives me rest for that day.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us enter into His rest. This spiritual rest of sitting with Christ in heavenly places helps us have a consistent good witness.

Hebrews Chapter 5

5:1-10 *Jesus is a High Priest Forever After the Order of Melchisedec*

(10) ¹ For every high priest taken from among men is ordained for men in things [pertaining] to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins: ² Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity. ³ And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins. ⁴ And no man takes this honor to himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron. ⁵ So also Christ glorified not himself to be made a high priest; but he that said unto him, You are my Son, today I have begotten you.

⁶ As he also says in another [place], "You are a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec." ⁷ Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears to him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; ⁸ Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; ⁹ And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him; ¹⁰ Called of God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

Q1 – What is the best way to learn obedience?

A – By suffering (5:8).

Q2 – When and why did Jesus have fear (5:7)?

A – When death was near because He had a body and emotions like a normal person

Application: I must have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way as I follow Jesus. (5:2).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us enter into His rest. This spiritual rest of sitting with Christ in heavenly places helps us have a consistent good witness.

5:11-14 *Warning to Followers of Christ who Lack Spiritual Growth*

(11) ¹¹ Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing. ¹² For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which [be] the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. ¹³ For everyone that uses milk is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. ¹⁴ But strong meat belongs to them that are of full age, [even] those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

Q1 – How is a believer dull of hearing? (5:11)

A – By not growing spiritually in Christ they hear but do not understand for application to their daily life. The baby in Christ can stay a baby their whole life. They need to be taught again the first principles of the public written Word of God, or milk.

Q2 – What is the strong meat of the truth? (5:14)

A – The strong meat is the whole counsel of God understood with the mind and obeyed by faith from a pure heart.

Application: I must have compassion on the dull of hearing believer. I know that their senses are not exercised to discern good and evil. They lose the blessings of God in this life and eternal rewards.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us discern between good and evil, more and more clearly and consistently as we mature in Christ.

Hebrews Chapter 6

6:1-3 *Exhortation to Hebrew Followers of Christ for Spiritual Growth*

(12) ¹ Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on to perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, ² Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. ³ And this will we do, if God permit.

Q – Why are these six doctrines of Christ important to go on to perfection?

A1 – Because they are the basic doctrines that will lead us from milk to meat of the doctrines of Christ.

A2 – These are past doctrines at our initial salvation (repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God), present doctrines for our daily salvation, (the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands), and future doctrines for our salvation after death (resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment).

A3 – Perfection defined. The Hebrew word *teleiotes* is used two times in the Bible, Hebrews 6:1 and Colossians 3:14. The context helps us understand the word. Perfection is the state of completeness morally in this context. Spiritual mature fathers in the faith, such as Paul and many have matured on to perfection. Please understand that only Christ is totally perfect all the time. Saints are to strive for and desire to be an example of this perfection (Philippians 3:1-21).

Application: I must go onto perfection and disciple my family and other believers to go on to perfection. I cannot help others go before my personal perfection in Christ. I will have compassion as Paul did for the spiritual growth and perfection of those believers not growing in Christ.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us continue on to perfection in the doctrines and character of Christ.

6:4-12 *Warning to Hebrew Followers of Christ who Grow in Sin and are Lazy*

(13) ⁴ For [it is] impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, ⁵ And have tasted the good Word of God, and the powers of the world to come, ⁶ If they shall fall away, to renew them again to repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put [him] to an open shame. ⁷ For the earth which drinks in the rain that comes oft upon it, and brings forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receives blessing from God: ⁸ But that which bears thorns and briars is rejected, and is near to cursing; whose end is to be burned. ⁹ But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. ¹⁰ For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labor of love, which ye have showed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister. ¹¹ And we desire that every one of you do show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope to the end: ¹² **That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and ^a long suffering inherit the promises.**

Q – How do I know that Hebrews 6:4-12 speaks to born again followers of Christ?

A1 – They were once enlightened to the truth of salvation (6:4a).

A2 – They have tasted of the heavenly gift of salvation (6:4b).

A3 – They are made partakers of the Holy Spirit of salvation (6:4c).

A4 – They are beloved with things that accompany salvation (6:9).

Q2 – What is the character of the follower of Christ that Paul warns us about?

A1 – They fall away from following Christ (6:6)

A2 – They increase in sin instead of decrease in sin (6:8). Sin is thorns and briars from the fall of Adam.

A3 – They are lazy (6:12a)

Q3 – What is the character of the follower of Christ that Paul encourages?

A1 – Their work and labor of love shown toward the name of Christ and to the saints (6:10).

A2 – They show diligence to the full assurance of salvation to the end of their life (6:11).

A3 – They are followers of saints through faith and long suffering to inherit the promises of Christ (6:12b)

Hebrews Chapter 6

Application: I must warn some saints and encourage other saints of the judgment fire of Christ (1 Corinthians 3:11-15, Jude 20-23). I must discern which saints need warning and which saints deserve encouragement.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us know where we stand with Christ in this life and warn or encourage other saints.

6:13-20 *The Promises for Hebrew Followers of Christ are Better than the Promises to Abraham*

(14) ¹³ For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself, ¹⁴ Saying, Surely blessing I will bless you, and multiplying I will multiply you. ¹⁵ And so, **after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.** For men verily swear by the greater: and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife. ¹⁷ Wherein God, willing more abundantly to show to the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed [it] by an oath: ¹⁸ That by two immutable things, in which [it was] impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us: ¹⁹ Which [hope] we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and steadfast, and which enters into that within the veil; ²⁰ Where the forerunner is for us entered, [even] Jesus, made a high priest forever after the order of Melchisedec.

Q – Who did Abraham worship?

A – Melchisedec the high priest and king of Salem.

Application: I know Jesus is the anchor of my soul.

Hebrews Chapter 6

IS DRINKING ALCOHOL SINFUL FOR THE BELIEVER?

It is a sin to drink alcohol, more alcohol - more sinful. A little alcohol – less sinful. Your love is better than wine (referring to a personal relationship with our King Jesus Christ), Song of Songs 1:2.

Eight self-justifications, refutes, and conclusion follow:

Self-justification #1: The New Testament says we can drink wine if sick, 1 Timothy 5:23.

Refute: Yes - you give little wine to a sick person. Are you sick in your stomach? If not - no wine is approved.

Self-justification #2: Jesus made new wine at the marriage feast.

Refute: This is in the Old Testament after the people were drunk with old wine, and even if the new wine was alcoholic - Scripture is silent on His partaking.

Self-justification #3: There is nothing wrong with a little wine.

Refute: This is like saying there is nothing wrong with a little sin. Use the Holy Scriptures to justify your faith.

Self-justification # 4: The only time wine is prohibited in the New Testament is with John the Baptist under the Nazarene vow.

Refute: Again - you are in the Old Testament until the death of Christ on the cross. Are you like the disciples in their unbelief before Acts 2 or after Acts 2. Jesus refused wine at the cross, then later accepted to fulfill prophecy.

Self-justification #5: Can you show me a New Testament verse that prohibits drinking alcohol?

Refute: Can you show me a New Testament verse that encourages the drink of alcohol? Titus 1:7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre.

Self-justification #6: You should not judge or condemn other believers.

Refute: Trying to help you prepare for the righteous judgment of Jesus Christ, 2 Cor 5:10:11, 2 Cor 3:10-15. 1 Corinthians 10:6 And having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. I hope the Scriptures do not offend.

Self-justification #7: I'm not a Bishop.

Refute: If Paul commands a bishop to drink no wine, he would be a hypocrite if he drank, and even imply Jesus Christ drank wine. I chose to follow Paul who said to follow Christ, Phil 3:12. Also to follow Peter who followed Christ, 1 Peter 2:21. Lastly to not become a stumbling block to weaker brothers, Ro 14:10-23. The Spirit of Christ in me is much better than wine, even a little wine, Song of Songs 1:2.

Self-Justification #8: We have liberty in Christ.

Refute: Believers are a royal priesthood and should not drink any alcohol or wine when they worship God (Leviticus 10:9, Ezekiel 44:21)

Application: I know the altar of true worship is perfect, complete and worthy of my greatest attention and continual faith. (Hebrews 11:1-3, 6)

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us discern and not compromise the true worship at the altar of God in heaven.

Conclusion: A born again believer can drink a little wine as a young and growing believer. Women can drink a little wine. Mature men that are in a position of spiritual leadership must abstain from any wine. Titus 1:7. Sin comes in many forms and degrees and each sin has its associated Scripture and character. We must learn to prevent sin and sin less and less as we grow into full maturity.

The Priestly Order of Melchisedec

7:1-10 *Jesus is Better than the Tithe to Abraham*

(15) ¹ For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; ² To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation King of righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, which is, King of peace; ³ Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like to the Son of God; abides a priest continually. ⁴ Now consider how great this man was, to whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils. ⁵ And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham: ⁶ But he whose descent is not counted from them received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises. ⁷ And without all contradiction the less is blessed of the better. ⁸ And here men that die receive tithes; but there he [receives them], of whom it is witnessed that he lives. ⁹ And as I may so say, Levi also, who receives tithes, paid tithes in Abraham. ¹⁰ For he was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

Q1 – How are the Son of God and Melchisedec the same? (7:1-3)

A1 – Priest of the most high God

A2 – Victorious king over the enemy

A3 – King of Righteousness

A4 – King of peace

A5 – Without earthly father, mother, or children

A6 – No beginning of days

A7 – No end of life

A8 – Remains a priest continually

Q2 – Who are the Levites and priests in the New Testament?

A1 – Every follower of Christ is a priest today.

A2 – The priest today is no longer required to worship God with sacrifices, special places, or limited to a specific day or people group. Worship of God today is in Spirit and truth. (1 Peter 2:9, John 4:23-24)

Q3 – Is the tithe a doctrine for the New Testament follower of Christ?

A1 – No. We are to give with a joyful heart that which we have reserved.

A2 – No. The follower of Christ learns through spiritual growth in Christ that 100% belongs to God.

A3 – No. It is a free will offering, a whole burnt offering that is expected of the follower of Christ.

A4 – No. The tithe in the Old Testament was temporary and looking for better things to come through the Son of God who is better than Melchisedek.

Application: I know that I must give everything and glorify God in everything. I know to give to the widow, orphan and poor. I much prefer to educate the sheep of God to give joyfully from the heart and the tithe is a good beginning point but not legalistic. I prefer churches that have a box to put their offering in rather than passing the offering plate because it is evidence of maturity, time saving, and shows trust in God to provide for the needs.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us tithe our money in the New Testament way and purpose.

Hebrews Chapter 7

7:11-28 *Jesus our High Priest is a Better Hope and Testament than the Levites*

(16) ¹¹ If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law,) what further need [was there] that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron? ¹² For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law. ¹³ For he of whom these things are spoken pertains to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar. ¹⁴ For [it is] evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood. ¹⁵ And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there arises another priest, ¹⁶ Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life. ¹⁷ For he testifies, You are a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec. ¹⁸ For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof. ¹⁹ For the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope [did]; by the which we draw near to God. ²⁰ And inasmuch as not without an oath [he was made priest]: ²¹ (For those priests were made without an oath; but this with an oath by him that said unto him, The Lord swore and will not repent, You are a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec:) ²² By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament. ²³ And they truly were many priests, because they were not permitted to continue by reason of death: ²⁴ But this [man], because he continues ever, has an unchangeable priesthood. ²⁵ Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come to God by him, seeing he ever lives to make intercession for them. ²⁶ For such a high priest became us, [who is] holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; ²⁷ Who needs not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this he did once, when he offered up himself. ²⁸ For the law makes men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath, which was since the law, [makes] the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

Q – Why are some religious leaders called priest today?

A – Because they follow the Old Testament system and do not understand the *precious* priestly role of Jesus or how all who are saved are priests.

Application: I enjoy the power of an endless life day by day with the Son who is holy, undefiled, and separate from sinners.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us understand how to come to God through Jesus the only eternal high priest. 1 Peter 2:9, Hebrews 4:14-16.

Hebrews Chapter 8

8:1-5 *Jesus our High Priest Represents Us in a Better Tabernacle*

(17) ¹ Now of the things which we have spoken [this is] the sum: We have such a high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; ² A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. ³ For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore [it is] of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. ⁴ For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law: ⁵ Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, says he, [that] you make all things according to the pattern showed to you in the mount.

Q – Why is the tabernacle of Moses compared to the tabernacle of Jesus Christ?

A – Because the design and furniture are earthly duplicates of the eternal spiritual reality of holy worship. Note that there is no music in Moses tabernacle. The basics of holy worship are the same today.

Application: I must not forget the basics of holy worship learned from the tabernacle of Moses. I feel ashamed and convicted for not worshipping God because I am too busy or tired. I repent and renew my worship life.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us approach God each morning using the same pattern of worship as the tabernacle of Moses and more since the curtain between the holy place and most holy place was torn after Jesus died on the cross. Now we have complete access to the most holy place.

8:6-13 *Jesus Makes the New Covenant Better than the Old Covenant that Vanished*

(18) ⁶ But now has he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. ⁷ For if that first [covenant] had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. ⁸ For finding fault with them, he says, Behold, the days come, says the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: ⁹ Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, says the Lord. ¹⁰ For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, says the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: ¹¹ And they shall not teach every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the great. ¹² For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. ¹³ In that he says, A new [covenant], he has made the first old. Now that which decays and waxes old is ready to vanish away.

Q – Does the New Covenant apply to Israel or the Ekklesia?

A1 – Both, To the Ekklesia now and to Israel in the future during the millennial reign of Christ on the earth.

A2 – The millennialist believes Christ returns to rule on earth for 1000 years in the future, the amillennialist believes the church replaces Israel in history, the Bible teaches both are true.

A3 – The New Covenant has limitations due to the choices of believers while the New Covenant in the future with Israel is when Christ rules on earth with a rod of iron.

Application: I believe going into the presence of God is available to all believers in the New Covenant, which is from Acts 2 until the rapture of the Ekklesia. I can say the same as the gentile Ruth said to Naomi the Jew, your people shall be my people and your God shall be my God (Hebrews 11:10-12).

Hebrews Chapter 9

9:1-14 Christ is the Greater and More Perfect Tabernacle (Tent) of the Living God

(19) ¹ Then verily the first [covenant] had also ordinances of divine service, and a earthly sanctuary. ² For there was a tabernacle made; the first, wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the showbread; which is called the sanctuary. ³ And after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all; ⁴ Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant; ⁵ And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly. ⁶ Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service [of God]. ⁷ But into the second [went] the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and [for] the errors of the people: ⁸ The Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing: ⁹ Which **was a figure for the time then present**, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience; ¹⁰ [Which stood] only in meats and drinks, and diverse washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed [on them] until the time of reformation. ¹¹ But Christ being come a high priest of good things to come, by **a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands**, that is to say, not of this building; ¹² Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption [for us]. ¹³ For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of a heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifies to the purifying of the flesh: ¹⁴ How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

9:15-22 Christ's Death Gives the World a Better New Testament

(20) ¹⁵ And for this cause **he is the mediator of the new testament**, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions [that were] under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. ¹⁶ For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator. ¹⁷ For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator lives. ¹⁸ Whereupon neither the first [testament] was dedicated without blood. ¹⁹ For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people, ²⁰ Saying, This is the blood of the testament which God has enjoined to you. ²¹ Moreover he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry. ²² And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

9:23-28 Christ Fulfills the Old Testament Patterns of Things in Heaven

(21) ²³ [It was] therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these. ²⁴ **For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, [which are] the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us:** ²⁵ Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest enters into the holy place every year with blood of others; ²⁶ For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world has he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. ²⁷ And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment: ²⁸ So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and to them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin to salvation.

Hebrews Chapter 10 1-6 **Christ Fulfills the Old Testament Shadow of Things in Heaven**

(22) ¹ For the law having a shadow of good things to come, [and] not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. ² For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. ³ But in those [sacrifices there is] a remembrance again [made] of sins every year. ⁴ For [it is] not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. ⁵ Wherefore when he comes into the world, he says, Sacrifice and offering you would not, but a body have you prepared me: ⁶ In burnt offerings and [sacrifices] for sin you have had no pleasure.

10:7-18 **Christ Fulfills the Old Testament Shadow of Things in Heaven**

(23) ⁷ Then said I, Look, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do your will, O God. ⁸ Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and [offering] for sin you would not, neither had pleasure [therein]; which are offered by the law; ⁹ Then said he, Look, I come to do your will, O God. He takes away the first, that he may establish the second. ¹⁰ By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once [for all]. ¹¹ And every priest stands daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: ¹² But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins forever, sat down on the right hand of God; ¹³ From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. ¹⁴ For by one offering he has perfected forever them that are sanctified. ¹⁵ [Whereof] the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us: for after that he had said before, ¹⁶ This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them; ¹⁷ And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more. ¹⁸ Now where remission of these [is, there is] no more offering for sin.

10:19-25 **A Call for Prayer, Purity, Faith, Love and Good Works**

(24) ¹⁹ Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, ²⁰ By a new and living way, which he has consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; ²¹ And [having] a high priest over the house of God; ²² Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. ²³ Let us hold fast the profession of [our] faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;) ²⁴ And let us consider one another to provoke to love and to good works: ²⁵ Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting [one another]: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

10:26-30 **Religious Hebrews Who Sin Willfully Show the Blood of Christ as Unholy**

(27) ²⁶ For if we sin willfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sins, ²⁷ But a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. ²⁸ He that despised Moses' law died without mercy under two or three witnesses: ²⁹ Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God, and has counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and has done despite to the Spirit of grace? ³⁰ For we know him that has said, Vengeance [belongs] to me, I will recompense, says the Lord. And again, The Lord shall judge his people.

10:31-39 **Warning to Not Draw Back to Religious Pattern of Good Works**

(28) ³¹ [It is] a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God. ³² But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions; ³³ Partly, While ye were made a gazing-stock both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly, While ye became companions of them that were so used. ³⁴ For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in yourselves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance. ³⁵ Cast not away therefore your confidence, which has great recompense of reward. ³⁶ For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise. ³⁷ For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry. ³⁸ Now **the just shall live by faith:** but if [any man] draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him. ³⁹ But we are not of them who draw back to perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul.

Hebrews Chapter 11 The Eternal Hall of Old Testament Faith

11:1-6 Faith Defined and Diligence Rewarded

(29) ¹ Now **faith** is the **substance** of things **hoped for**, the **evidence** of things **not seen**. ² For by **it** the elders obtained a **good report**. ³ **Through faith** we understand that the worlds were framed by the **Word of God**, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. ⁴ By faith Abel offered to God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaks. ⁵ By faith ^a Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God. ⁶ But **without faith** [it is] impossible to please [him]: for he that comes to **God** must **believe that he is**, and [that] **he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him**.

^a Enoch (prophet of 2nd Coming) Gen 5:24, Jude 1:14 (Moses & Elijah)

11:7-22 Faith Recognized from Noah to Joseph

(30) ⁷ By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith. ⁸ By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing where he went. ⁹ By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as [in] a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: ¹⁰ For he looked for a city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God. ¹¹ Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised. ¹² Therefore sprang there even of one, and him **as good as dead**, [so many] as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. ¹³ These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. ¹⁴ For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. ¹⁵ And truly, if they had been mindful of that [country] from where they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. ¹⁶ But now they desire a **better [country], that is, a heavenly**: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he has prepared for them a city. ¹⁷ By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten [son], ¹⁸ Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall your seed be called: ¹⁹ Accounting that God was able to raise [him] up, even from the dead; from where also he received him in a figure. ²⁰ By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. ²¹ By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, [leaning] upon the top of his staff. ²² By faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones.

^a Noah (preacher of righteousness) ^b Sarah (1st woman mentioned by name, besides Eve)

11:23-31 Faith Recognized from Moses to Rahab

(31) ²³ By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw [he was] a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment. ²⁴ By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; ²⁵ Choosing rather to allow affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; ²⁶ Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect to the recompense of the reward. ²⁷ By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible. ²⁸ Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. ²⁹ By faith they passed through the Red sea as by dry [land]: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned. ³⁰ By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. ³¹ By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

Hebrews Chapter 11

11:32-40 *Faith Recognized from Gideon and Many More*

(32) ³² And what shall I ^a more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and [of] Barak, and [of] Samson, and [of] Jephthae; [of] David also, and Samuel, and [of] the prophets:

^a Many judges and kings not mentioned – Deborah, Saul, and Solomon

33-35a. Who through faith: (Protection and Provision)

1. subdued kingdoms, (Joseph, David, Daniel)
2. worked righteousness, (Ruth, Isaiah, Ezra)
3. obtained promises, (Hezekiah)
4. stopped the mouths of lions, (Daniel)
5. Quenched the violence of fire, (Elijah)
6. escaped the edge of the sword, (Elijah and Elisha) Opposite # II.9
7. out of weakness were made strong, (Jeremiah)
8. waxed valiant in fight, (Nehemiah)
9. turned to flight the armies of the aliens. (Jehosophat and Josiah)
10. Women received their dead raised to life again: (Elisha)

35b-38. Who through faith (Suffering and Sorrow)

1. and others were tortured,
 - a. not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection:
2. And others had trial of cruel mockings
3. and scourgings,
4. yea, moreover of bonds (Joseph)
5. and imprisonment: (Jeremiah)
6. They were stoned, (Zechariah)
7. they were sawn asunder, (Isaiah)
8. were tempted, (Jonah)
9. were slain with the sword:
10. they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins;
11. being destitute,
12. afflicted,
13. tormented;
 - a. (Of whom the world was not worthy:)
14. they wandered in deserts,
15. and in mountains,
16. and in dens
17. and caves of the earth. (Obadiah)

³⁹ And **these all**, having obtained a good report through faith, ^a received not the promise:

⁴⁰ **God** having ^b provided some **better thing for us**, that **they without us** should not be made perfect.

^a of the Messiah's reign on the earth. ^b Salvation by the death and resurrection of His Son.

QT Note:

Q1 – What are two more common factors in each life of faith?

A – Faith results in protection and provision or suffering and sorrow.

Q2 – Who is not recognized for a life of faith in this time period?

A – Deborah, Saul, and Solomon.

Application: I know that my faith results in protection and provision, or suffering and sorrow.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer is necessary to increase our faith whether we experience protection and provision, or suffering and sorrow.

Hebrews Chapter 12

12:1-4 *The Call to Personal Holiness*

(33) ¹ Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, **let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which does so easily entangle**, and **let us** run with patience the race that is set before us, ² **Looking** to Jesus the author and finisher of [our] faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. ³ For **consider him** that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. ⁴ Ye have not yet resisted to blood, striving against sin.

QT Note:

Q1 – Who is the great cloud of witnesses?

A – The Old Testament faithful in Hebrews 11 who chose to obey God.

Q2 – What actions should follow our faith in God?

A1 – Let us lay aside every weight

A2 – Let us lay aside the sin

A3 – Let us run with patience the race that is set before us

A4 – Let us look to Jesus the author and finisher of faith

12:5-17 *Directions for Personal Holiness*

(34) ⁵ And **ye have forgotten** the exhortation which speaks to you as to children, My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are rebuked of him: ⁶ For whom the Lord loves he ^a **chastens, and scourges** every son whom he receives. ⁷ If ye endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chastens not? ⁸ But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.

^a Chasten is correction and scourge is severe beating with whip.

⁹ Furthermore we have had **fathers of our flesh** which corrected [us], and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection to the **Father of spirits, and live?** ¹⁰ For they verily for a few days chastened [us] after their own pleasure; but he for [our] profit, that [we] might be **partakers of his** ^a **holiness.** ¹¹ Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to them which are ^b exercised thereby.

¹² **Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees;** ¹³ And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is ^c lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed.

¹⁴ Follow peace with all people, and **holiness**, without which no one shall see the Lord:

¹⁵ **Looking diligently lest any man** ^a **fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble [you], and thereby many be defiled;** ¹⁶ **Lest there [be] any fornicator, or profane person, as** ^a **Esau**, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. ¹⁷ For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

^a Hustereo in Greek 16x, only here translated "fail". It means to be inferior; generally, to fall short (be deficient):--come behind (short), lack, suffer need, (be in) want. 1 of 4 difficult passages along with Hebrews 4:1, 6:6 and 10:26. Q1 – What are the hindrances to practice personal holiness?

QT Note:

A1 – Becoming weary and faint in our minds due to contradictions from unbelievers (12:3).

A2 – Not striving against sin (12:4).

A3 – Despising the correction of the Lord (12:5).

A4 – Fainting when rebuked by the Lord (12:6).

Hebrews Chapter 12

Q2 – What are the requirements to practice personal holiness?

A1 – Endure the correction of the Lord (12:7).

A2 – Give reverence and subjection to the Father of spirits and live (12:9).

A3 – Follow peace with all people (12:14).

A4 – Follow personal holiness (12:14).

Q3 – What are the promises for practicing personal holiness?

A1 – Our father in heaven corrects us for our spiritual profit (12:10a).

A2 – Our father in heaven corrects us so we can partake in his holiness (12:10b).

A3 – The peaceful fruit of righteousness (12:11).

Q4 – What are the warnings for not practicing personal holiness?

A1 – Lift up our hands and feeble knees, make straight paths for our feet so the lame are not turned out of the way, but rather be healed (21:13)

A2 – Looking diligently, so we do not come short of the grace of God (12:15a).

A3 – Looking diligently, so any root of bitterness spring up and trouble us, and thereby many be defiled (12:15b).

A4 – Looking diligently, for fornicators or profane persons like Esau who find no place of repentance (12:16-17).

12:18-24 ***Mount Sinai Law is Inferior to Mount Zion Grace***

(35) ¹⁸ For ye are not come to the ^a **mount** that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor to blackness, and darkness, and tempest, ¹⁹ And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which [voice] they that heard ^b entreated that the word should not be spoken to them anymore: ²⁰ (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart:

²¹ And so terrible was the sight, [that] Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:)

²² But ye are come to ^a **mount Zion**, and to the city of the living God, the ^b heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

²³ To the general congregation and congregation of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and

to the spirits of just persons made ^c perfect, ²⁴ And

to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and

to the ^d blood of sprinkling, that speaks better things than [that of] Abel.

12:25-29 ***How to Live for the Kingdom of Heaven that cannot be Shaken***

²⁵ See that ye refuse not him that speaks. For if they escaped not who refused him that spoke on earth, **much more** [shall not] we [escape], if we turn away from ^b him that [speaks] from heaven:

²⁶ Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he has promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. ²⁷ And this [word], Yet once more, signifies the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.

²⁸ Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, **let us** have **grace**, whereby we may **serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear:** ²⁹ **For our God is a consuming fire.**

13:1-17 Love (13:1) and Prayer (13:18)

(36) ¹ Let brotherly love continue. ² Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained ^a angels unawares. ³ Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; [and] them which allow adversity, as being yourselves also in the body. ⁴ Marriage is honorable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. ⁵ [Let your] conduct [be] without covetousness; [and be] content with such things as ye have: for He has said, **I will never leave you, nor forsake you**. ⁶ So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me. ⁷ Remember them which **rule over you**, who have spoken unto you the Word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conduct. ⁸ **Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and today, and forever.**

⁹ ^b Be not carried about with diverse and strange doctrines. For [it is] a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein. ¹⁰ We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle. ¹¹ For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned **outside the camp**. ¹² Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with **His own blood**, suffered **outside the gate**. ¹³ Let us go forth therefore to him **outside the camp**, bearing His reproach.

¹⁴ For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. ¹⁵ By Him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of [our] lips giving thanks to His name. ¹⁶ But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased. ¹⁷ Obey them that have the **rule over you**, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.

^a Angels could be translated "ministers" which allows for human ministers of the Word of God.

^b There is a single and sane doctrine of Christ which leads to consistent growth in Christ; Jude 1:3.

13:18-25 Prayer Requested (18-19) and Prayer Given (20-21)

(37) ¹⁸ Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly. ¹⁹ I beg [you] the more earnestly to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner. ²⁰ Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that **Great Shepherd of the sheep**, through the **blood** of the everlasting covenant, ²¹ **Make you ^a perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in His sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom [be] glory for ever and ever. Amen.**

Application: I know that those I let rule over me in the Word of God will have faith that follows as I consider the outcome of their behavior. I know that brotherly love is the first command of personal holiness. May I pray for others (13:20-21).

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us have a good conscience and live honestly (13:18). Prayer supports fellowship also (13:19).

13:22-25 Typical Farewell of the Apostle Paul

²² And I beseech you, brethren, allow the word of exhortation: for I have written a letter to you in few words. ²³ Know ye that [our] brother Timothy is set at liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you. ²⁴ Salute all them that have the **rule over you**, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you. ²⁵ Grace [be] with you all. Amen.

[Written to the Hebrews from Italy, by Timothy.]

^a "Perfect" is complete, repaired, fixed – not "mature or fully ripe" as in John 15. They are different words in the original Greek language.

1. What is the Holy Place?
2. What is the Most Holy Place?
3. What was the difference between the two places in the Old Testament?
4. There is no tabernacle today. How does this apply to the New Testament?
5. All people are in one of four locations in relation to the tabernacle in the wilderness. Where are you?
 - a. (1) Outside the curtains
 - b. Inside the curtains
 - i. (2) At the alter or laver
 - ii. (3) In the Holy Place
 - iii. (4) In the Most Holy Place

Three ways Christ was concealed in the Old Testament & revealed in the New

Shadow –	Law of Moses (procedures, 613 commandments)	Law of Christ, Romans 7-8
Type –	Moses (person)	Jesus Christ our deliverer
Figure –	Tabernacle (things)	The Lord Jesus Christ, "I am"

Three pillars of Judaism compared to three pillars of Christendom

Angels –	God (cannot see)	Supernatural
Moses –	Jesus (leader)	Politics / Polity
Priesthood –	Holy Spirit (today in the church age from Acts 2 to rapture)	Acts 1:8

Changes to know, understand and apply for proper interpretation of Scripture

Covenants (5):

Unconditional: Noahic, Abrahamic, Palestinian, and Davidic (when and how fulfilled?)
 Conditional: Mosaic or Law (if you obey – blessing, or disobey – cursing)

Testaments (2): 1st and 2nd (major chronological/theological sub-division of the Bible)

Old (animal sacrifices) and New (God's son sacrifice). The ceremonial laws were fulfilled in Christ. The ceremonial laws include the sacrificial, priestly, tabernacle and special holy day systems.

Dispensations (7 or 9 or 12) many views, of which I choose 12: (minor chronological/theological sub-divisions of the Bible. Progressive revelation of God to man, which require more accountability and grace.

Past

1. In the beginning (Genesis 1-5)
2. Innocence – Garden of Eden before man's disobedience
3. Conscience – In Adam's sin and continues
4. Noahic & Government (Genesis 6-11)
5. Abrahamic – Jewish people & land (Genesis 12-50)
6. Mosaic (Law) (Exodus – Joshua)
7. Theocracy – Judges and Kings
8. Captivity or Gentile Kings (until John the Baptist)

Present

9. Gospel (Apostle Paul) – the Ekklesia, the body of Christ (Matthew - Revelation 3)

Future

10. Tribulation – 70th week of Daniel 9:24-27 (Revelation 4-18)
11. 1000 – Israel's hope (Revelation 19-20)
12. New Jerusalem – the New Testament Believer's hope (Revelation 21-22:5)

Hebrews 5:11-6:12 **Leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on to perfection**
(Hebrews 6:1a)

(Working out our salvation in fear – Hebrews 10:31, Philippians 2:12-13)

References: Parenthesis between teaching on the priesthood, 4:14-10:37. Melchisedec was a type of Jesus Christ in the Old Covenant, 5:1-8:6. Genesis 14:18-20 and Psalm 110:4. God – 7x, Jesus – 3x, Holy Spirit – 1x.

Hebrews 5:11-14 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing. For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat. For everyone that uses milk is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe. But strong meat belongs to them that are of ^a full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

Hebrews 6:1 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto ^a perfection;

- not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, (past and present unfruitfulness)
 - 2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and (present, baptisms = washings is error)
 - of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. (future)

3 And this we will do (go on unto perfection), if God permit. 4 For it is ^a impossible for those who were once: (past)

- enlightened, and (John 1:12)
 - have tasted of the heavenly gift, and (John 3:16, Ephesians 2:8-9)
 - were made partakers of the Holy Spirit, 5 And (Acts 15:8, Titus 3:5)
 - have tasted the good Word of God, and (Hebrews 1:1-3)
 - the powers of the world to come, (1 Peter 1:3-5)

6 If they shall fall ^b aside, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to a public shame.

7 For the earth which drinks in the rain that comes often upon it, and brings forth herbs fit for them by whom it is tilled, receives blessing from God: 8 But that which bears thorns and briers is ^c rejected, and is near unto cursing; whose end is to be burned. 9 But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. 10 For God is not unrighteous to forget, your work and labor of love which ye have shown toward his name, in that ye have ^d ministered to the saints, and do ^d minister. 11 And we desire that every one of you do show the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end: 12 That ye be not ^e slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

^a adunatos *ad-oo'-nat-os* unable, i.e. weak (literally or figuratively); passively, impossible:--could not do, impotent. Only by faith, labor and obedience to the doctrines of Christ are we blessed of God.

^b away ^{KJV} *parapipto par-ap-ip'-to* to fall aside. Aside (para) is different than away. It depends on your doctrinal predisposition on the interpretation. Remember the context and it can only have one interpretation. God call us to repent unto "initial" salvation. We knowingly choose to seek and submit to His will for our sanctification (our rest and faith) or daily salvation. Please do not mix that teaching which belongs to our initial salvation and that which belongs to our continuous daily salvation, or sanctification. Romans 7:1-8:17a, Galatians.

^c adokimos *ad-ok'-ee-mos* unapproved, i.e. rejected; by implication, worthless (literally or morally) John 15:1-17 relates to fruit, 1 Corinthians 3:15, 5:10. 2 Peter 1 supports the need of diligence to fruitful. This fruit concerns character and maturity in Christ. Show me by your life.

^d diakoneo *dee-ak-on-eh'-o* to be an attendant, i.e. wait upon (menially or as a host, friend, or (figuratively) teacher); serve
Acts 6:1-4

^e nothros *no-thros'* sluggish, i.e. (literally) lazy, or (figuratively) stupid:--dull, slothful.

2 Peter 1:5 And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue;

Yellow – counsel for stagnant believers , Blue – comfort for growing believers, Green – key points

James (5-12, 16 min) 2019

Bible TOC **Next / Previous Book**

1 2 3 4 5

12 Reasons Why the Bible is Difficult to Believe

(Christians make it difficult for others to believe in the Bible. Why?)

Text: The Letter by the church leader James (1/2 brother of Jesus Christ, same mother – different fathers) is after the Council at Jerusalem in Acts 15, around 50 AD.

Purpose: Reproof & Correction

Key Words: Temptation – sin (tongue, riches) – wisdom (faith & prayer)

<u>Problem</u>	<u>Scripture</u>	<u>Solution</u>
1) Believers lack wisdom	1:5-8	Get wisdom for Temptations
2) We deceive ourselves	1:22	Stop it
3) Religion (history & present): Selfishness	1:27	Love Others
4) We respect people for the wrong reasons	2:1-4	Love all the same
5) Old Testament: changes in the New Testament	2:8	Study the Bible
6) The words others hear us speak	3:9-12	Stop it, Be slow to speak
7) Hypocrisy in our personal experience	3:16	Get wisdom from above
8) Christianity (history & present): War & Fighting	4:1-2	Don't be selfish
9) God does not answer my prayers	4:3-4	Learn how to pray
10) Our boasting or pride	4:13-16	Stop it
11) Why does God permit suffering	5:7-11	Be an example
12) The miracles of the Bible	5:17-18	Prayers of Faith

Prayers of the Bible

Scripture	Form	Aid	Hindrance	Comment	Who prays
<u>James</u> 4:1-5	Prayer		Own lusts	Have not, ask not	Payer is not answered
James 4:7-10	Supplication	Intercessory	Joy, Laughter	Jesus Christ, Sorrow	Season
James 5:13-18	Intercession	Afflicted / Healing	Love of the World	Righteousness	Effective, Fervent

Key Passage to overcome personal sin and be lifted up by God: James 4:7-10

Challenge & Application: What is my personal temptation? What plan do I have for victory over my temptation?

Note: The above are Internal difficulties originating from the lives of Christians and Christianity. Also there are external difficulties that originate from unbelievers of non-christians, such as: Jesus Christ is the only way to God, Science, Man's philosophies and traditions, and why are there so many Bibles.

James Chapter 1

1:1-8 ***Temptations Overcome by Faith and Wisdom***

(1) ¹ James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting. ² My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into various ^a **temptations**; ³ Knowing [this], that the trying of your **faith** works **patience**. ⁴ But let patience have [her] perfect work, that ye may be ^b perfect and entire, wanting nothing. ⁵ If any of you lack **wisdom**, let him ask of God, that gives to all [men] **liberally**, and ^c **upbraids not**; and it shall be given him. ⁶ But let him ask in **faith**, nothing wavering. For he that wavers is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. ⁷ For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord. ⁸ A ^d **double minded** man is unstable in all his ways.

^a putting to proof (by experiment (of good), experience (of evil), discipline or provocation); by implication, adversity:--temptation, try.

^b of full age, mature, fully ripe, father (1 John 2:12-14).

^c Shames; disgraces, reproaches.

^d opposite of single minded and sober-minded.

1:9-11 ***The Poor is Exalted and the Rich made Low***

(2) ⁹ **Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted:** ¹⁰ But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away. ¹¹ For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withers the grass, and the flower thereof falls, and the grace of the fashion of it perishes: so also shall the rich man fade away in his ways.

1:12-16 ***The Crown of Life vs Lust Conceives Sin and Continual Sin Brings Forth Death***

¹² **Blessed is the man that endures temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord has promised to them that love him.** ¹³ Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, **neither tempts he any man:** ¹⁴ **But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.** ¹⁵ **Then when lust has conceived, it brings forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, brings forth death.** ¹⁶ Do not err, my beloved brethren.

1:17-18 ***Our Birth from Above is Secure***

¹⁷ Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the **Father of lights**, with whom is no variableness, **neither shadow of turning.** ¹⁸ Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his ^a creatures.

^a 1 Corinthians 15:23, 2 Corinthians 5:17

1:19-21 ***Sins Overcome by Receiving the Word with Meekness***

(3) ¹⁹ Wherefore, **my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath:** ²⁰ For the wrath of man works not the righteousness of God. ²¹ Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to ^a save your souls.

^a Save our soul from the blemishes of sin. Make whole and complete in Christ. Holy living.

1:22-25 ***Hear and Do the Word, and be Blessed***

²² But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, **deceiving your own selves.** ²³ For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like to a man beholding his natural face in a glass: ²⁴ For he beholds himself, and goes his way, and straightway forgets what manner of man he was. ²⁵ But whoso looks into the **perfect law of liberty**, and continues [therein], he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be **blessed in his deed.**

James Chapter 1

1:26-27 ***Vain and Pure Religion***

²⁶ If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man's religion is vain. ²⁷ Pure religion and **undefiled before God and the Father** is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, [and] to **keep himself unspotted from the world.**

James Chapter 2

2:1-13 ***Respect of the Rich Over the Poor is Sin that Must be Judged***

(4) ¹ My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, [the Lord] of glory, with respect of persons. ² For if there come to your ^a synagogue a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; ³ And ye have respect to him that wears the gay clothing, and say to him, Sit you here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand you there, or sit here under my footstool: ⁴ Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? ⁵ Hearken, my beloved brethren, Has not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he has promised to them that love him? ⁶ But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? ⁷ Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? ⁸ **If ye fulfill the royal law according to the Scripture, You shall love your neighbor as thyself, ye do well:** ⁹ But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. ¹⁰ For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one [point], he is guilty of all. ¹¹ For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if you commit no adultery, ^b yet if you kill, you are become a transgressor of the law. ¹² **So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.** ¹³ **For he shall have judgment without mercy, that has showed no mercy; and mercy rejoices against judgment.**

^a Greek word *sunagoge*, which is translated as "synagogue" in all 56 other places. Congregation ^{KJV}.

^b Matthew 5:21-22 "whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council:" Raca means worthless or empty. The Council or Sanhedrin is 71 elders ruling over Israel. All men grounded in Scripture and of a good reputation in the community, 30 years old or more.

2:14-26 ***Faith Without Works is Dead***

(5) ¹⁴ What [does it] profit, my brethren, though a man say he has faith, and have not works? can faith save him? ¹⁵ If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, ¹⁶ And one of you say to them, Depart in peace, be [ye] warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what [does it] profit? ¹⁷ Even so faith, if it has not works, is dead, being alone. ¹⁸ Yes, a man may say, You have faith, and I have works: show me your faith without your works, and I will show you my faith by my works. ¹⁹ You believe that there is one God; you do well: the ^a demons also believe, and tremble. ²⁰ But will you know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? ²¹ Was not **Abraham our father** justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? ²² See you how faith worked with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? ²³ And the Scripture was fulfilled which says, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. ²⁴ Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. ²⁵ Likewise also was not **Rahab the harlot** justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? ²⁶ For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

^a to have a demon, Greek is echei daimonion.

James Chapter 3

3:1-12 *The Power of Our Words*

(6) ¹ My brethren, be not many teachers, knowing that we shall receive the greater judgment. ² For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a ^a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body. ³ Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body. ⁴ Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor lists. ⁵ Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasts great things. Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindles! ⁶ And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defiles the whole body, and sets on fire the course of nature; and it is set on fire of hell. ⁷ For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind: ⁸ But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.

^a Perfect in Greek is teleios, used in MT 19:21 (for salvation), 1 Cor 13:10 (Scripture), Ro 12:2, James 1:4 (refers to timing or patience), 1 Cor 14:20, Eph 4:13, Phil 3:15, Col 1:28, 4:12, Heb 5:14 (full age, spiritual fathers), 1 John 4:18 (love of God and man casts out fear).

⁹ Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith ^a curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God. ¹⁰ Out of the same mouth proceeds blessing and cursing. ¹¹ My brethren, these things ought not so to be. ¹² Does a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh.

3:13-18 *The Difference between Wisdom from Above or Below*

(7) ¹³ Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him show out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

Fake Wisdom Produces Evil Works

¹⁴ But if ye have bitter ^b envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. ¹⁵ This wisdom descends not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. ¹⁶ For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work.

True Wisdom Produces Good Works

¹⁷ But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. ¹⁸ And the fruit of ^c righteousness is sown in ^d peace of them that make peace.

Note: Wisdom from above leads to One Mindedness.

(Acts 2:46, 4:32, Job 23:13, Ro 12:16, 15:6, 2 Cor 13:11, Phil Ph 2:2, 1 Pet 3:8)

^a to curse is to doom. We are to love and pray for – MT 5:44, LU 6:28, Ro 12:14

^b Envy is zelos or heat is Greek, also translated zeal. It can be used in the positive or negative pending the context.

^c Full of doing right as expressed in Ephesians 6:14 for the breastplate of righteousness and several times in Romans 6 and 10.

^d from Greek: quietness, rest, set at one again; MT 5:9, MT 5:1-11 is 9 blessings.

Q1: Why can't true wisdom and false wisdom mix?

A1: Because a little bit of fake makes the source and whole matter fake – the same for what comes out of our mouth at all times to all people or only what we know within ourselves and we are careful who hears or sees (James 3:9-12, 14-16).

A2: The believers wisdom begins in the heart at the beginning of salvation and makes us of one mind as we mature in Christ. The mantra for believers walking in the works of the flesh vs the fruit of the Spirit (Galatians 5:13-26) is the song "Human" (I'm only human, don't put the blame on me), and Peter's example before Acts 2 of "The spirit is willing but the flesh is weak".

James Chapter 3

A3: Believers in the truth of God understand true wisdom in themselves by the indwelling Holy Spirit and within others that have the same indwelling Holy Spirit, or new life in Christ (2 Corinthians 5:17) and renewing of their mind (Romans 12:1-2).

Q2: What happens if a true believer mixes false wisdom with true wisdom?

A1: The true believer is a babe or young believer and learning how to have wisdom from above. Their heart will convict them onto repentance (1 John 1:9). We all go through this time of temptations as we grow in Christ. However we learn to sin less and less as we learn how to love God back with the love he shows toward us.

A2: The true believer may continue in the sin which will lead to loss of the joy of the Lord and possibly early death because lust causes sin and sin leads to death (James 1:15). This is spiritual and possibly physical death, but not eternal death (Acts 5:1-11, 1 Corinthians 5 and 2 Corinthians 7)

Application: I know we have all the resources to mature in Christ until we are spiritual fathers and mothers (1 John 2:12-14), and rest in the wisdom from above in a consistent daily manner. We need each other to encourage so we may accomplish God's will and good works with an abundant entry into heaven (2 Peter 1). I know wisdom begins in my heart and must control my mind and other believers minds as we mature in Christ.

QT hint: Daily time in prayer and Scripture help us enjoy the wisdom from above.

James Chapter 4

4:1-5 *The Friend of the World is Enemy to God*

(8) ¹ From ^a where [come] wars and fightings among you? [come they] not ^b from here, [even] of your ^c **lusts** that war in your members? ² Ye **lust**, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not. ³ Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume [it] upon your **lusts**. ⁴ Ye adulterers and adulteresses, don't ye know that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a **friend of the world** is the enemy of God. ⁵ ^d Do ye think that the Scripture says in vain, ^e The spirit that dwells in us **lusts** to envy?

^a Whence ^{KJV}.

^b Hence ^{KJV}.

^c Intense desire, pleasures or greatly longing for. Sinful sense of Greek word is translated lust. Any area of temptation. Same word also used for good desires.

^d From Genesis and law to Acts 2.

^e Our own spirit. Focus on "Do you think the Scripture say in vain?"

4:6-10 *Resist the Devil, Draw Near to God and He will Draw Near to You*

(9) ⁶ ^a But he gives more grace. Wherefore he says, God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble. ⁷ ^b **Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.** ⁸ **Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Cleanse [your] hands, [ye] sinners; and purify [your] hearts, [ye] double minded.** ⁹ **Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and [your] joy to heaviness.** ¹⁰ **Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.**

^a God through Jesus Christ and salvation offered today. Christ came full of grace and truth. We are in Christ by the Holy Spirit given to us in our personal Pentecost. Linking words from 8:1-5.

^b Climax of 3:1 to 4:5 and even from James 1:1.

James Chapter 4

4:11-12 **Stop Slandering**

(10) ¹¹ **Speak not evil one of another, brethren.** He that speaks evil of [his] brother, and judges his brother, speaks evil of the law, and judges the law: but if you ^a judge the law, you are not a doer of the law, but a judge. ¹² There is ^b one lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy: who are you that judge another?

4:13-17 **Don't Brag about Future Plans**

¹³ Go to now, ye that say, Today or tomorrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: ¹⁴ Whereas ye know not what [shall be] on the next day. For what is your life? It is even a vapor, that appears for a little time, and then vanishes away. ¹⁵ For that ye [ought] to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. ¹⁶ But now ye rejoice in your boastings: all such rejoicing is evil. ¹⁷ **Therefore to him that knows to do good, and does [it] not, to him it is sin.**

^a The law is good and holy which we cannot judge, Romans 7:12-13; or in the context of James, the law of liberty.

^b God.

James Chapter 5

5:1-6 **Warnings to the Rich Brethren**

(11) ¹ Go to now, [ye] rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon [you]. ² Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. ³ Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days. ⁴ Behold, the hire of the laborers who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, cries: and the cries of them which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabbath. ⁵ Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been ^a indulged; ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter. ⁶ Ye have condemned [and] killed the just; [and] he does not resist you.

^a Wanton ^{KJV}.

5:7-12 **Patience is Encouraged & Don't Take Oaths**

⁷ Be patient therefore, brethren, to the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waits for the precious fruit of the earth, and has long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. ⁸ Be ye also patient; establish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draws near. ⁹ Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge stands before the door. ¹⁰ Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of ^a suffering affliction, and of ^a long suffering. ¹¹ Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy. ¹² But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yes be yes; and [your] no, no; ^b lest ye fall into condemnation.

^a Suffering affliction is translated from the Greek kakopatheia used only 1x in the Bible, which can be translated hardship.

^a Patience in the KJV and Spanish translations, also in Hebrews 6:12, used 14x. Makrothumia in Greek, makro is long or far and thumos is a form of passionate wrath. This is much different than patience which is hupomone in Greek, which is hopeful endurance.

^b For fear that.

James Chapter 5

5:13-18 *Dealing with Sin by Prayer*

(12) ¹³ Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms. ¹⁴ Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the congregation; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: ¹⁵ And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. ¹⁶ **Confess [your] ^a faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be ^b healed.** The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much. ¹⁷ Elijah was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months. ¹⁸ And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

5:19-20 *Help for Those Who Wander*

¹⁹ **Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him; ²⁰ Let him know, that he which converts the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.**

^a Faults due to weakness and ignorance regarding how to handle temptation. Falling into temptation, which is also translated offense, trespass and sin in other passages.

^b Healed is made whole, which can be physically, spiritually or both. The context will determine how to interpret.

1 Peter (5-12, 6 min) 2018

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5

12 Lessons to Be Holy

Purpose: To teach us how to be holy and love one another

Themes: Our glory and suffering – others are precious, and fear God

Key Passage: Which comes first? Love or holiness, 1 Peter 1:22 or 1 Peter 1:16

Background: Simeon was his name at birth before given his spiritual name Peter. (Mt 16:18. Little stone is Petros or Peter, large rock is Petra and represent Jesus Christ). He was a fisherman whose brother Andrew introduced him about Jesus. He traveled with his wife (Mk 1:30, 1 Cor 9:5). He lived in Bethsaida then Capernaum. His disciple and spiritual son was Mark, who wrote the Gospel of Mark. This book was written around 64 AD, 30 years after Acts 2.

I am holy:

Scripture

- | | |
|---|------|
| 1) by sanctification of the Holy Spirit, obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ | 1:2 |
| 2) by trials that are more precious than gold; preparing us for glory at the return of Jesus Christ | 1:7 |
| 3) Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy (Leviticus 11:44, 20:7-8, 26) | 1:16 |
| 4) through the Spirit to unfeigned love of the brethren; with a pure heart without ceasing | 1:22 |
| 5) as lively stones, built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices | 2:5 |
| 6) when I do well, and suffer, then take it patiently, this is acceptable with God | 2:20 |
| 7) as a wife in subjection to her husband; if he is disobedient, he may change by my lifestyle | 3:1 |
| 8) as a husband, giving honor to his wife, the weaker vessel, and heirs together of grace | 3:7 |
| 9) as above all things I have fervent love for the brethren: for love covers the multitude of sins | 4:8 |
| 10) when I allow God's judgment to begin at the house of God, among the brethren | 4:17 |
| 11) when I as a younger, submit to the elder. Yes, all of you] be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resists the proud, and gives grace to the humble. | 5:5 |
| 12) as I am sober, vigilant; because my adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour | 5:8 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
I Peter 3:7	Prayers	Honor wife		Knowledge Wife weaker vessel	Heirs together of the grace of life
1 Peter 4:7	All	Victory over satan		Be sober	Watching in prayer

Today's application: Peter never lost his salvation, but did lose his discipleship. In salvation Jesus is number one of many. In discipleship Jesus is number one of one. Love as agape and phileo, repeated 3x, feed my sheep. John 21:15-17. Peter's life teaches us holiness as John's life teaches us love. We need to be both holy and loving. Find your balance.

1 Peter Chapter 1

1:1-9 *Our Great Salvation*

(1) ¹ Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia, ² Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, to obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace to you, and peace, be multiplied.

³ Blessed [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy has begotten us again to a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, ⁴ To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fades not away, reserved in heaven for you, ⁵ Who are kept by the power of God through faith to salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. ⁶ Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: ⁷ That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perishes, though it be tried with fire, might be found to praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ: ⁸ Whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see [him] not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory: ⁹ Receiving the end of your faith, [even] the salvation of [your] souls.

1:10-12 *Salvation the Prophets and Angels Desire to Know*

(2) ¹⁰ Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace [that should come] to you: ¹¹ Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

¹² To whom it was revealed, that not to themselves, but to us they did minister the things, which are now reported to you by them that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into.

1:13-21 *Our New Way of Life*

(3) ¹³ Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; ¹⁴ As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: ¹⁵ But as he which has called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conduct; ¹⁶ **^a Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.** ¹⁷ And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judges according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning [here] in fear: ¹⁸ Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, [as] silver and gold, from your vain conduct [received] by tradition from your fathers; ¹⁹ But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot: ²⁰ Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you, ²¹ Who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God.

1:22-25 *Love Each Other*

²² Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit to unfeigned love of the brethren, [see that ye] love one another with a ^b pure heart ^c without ceasing:

²³ Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of God, which lives and abides forever. ²⁴ For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withers, and the flower thereof falls away: ²⁵ But the Word of the Lord endures forever. And this is the

^a Holiness taught in Leviticus and 1 Peter complement one another with Testament distinctions in the office of priest. Leviticus 11:44, 20:7-8, 26, Exodus 21:7-8. Moses is on the same "holy ground." 1 Peter 2:9. John 4:24 "worship in Spirit and truth." Romans 6:17.

^b Pure heart is an addition to love one another as commanded in the writings of John 17 times.

^c Fervently ^{KJV}. Same word in Greek used one other time in Acts 4 where disciples prayed "without ceasing" or "intently" for Peter in jail. Acts 12:5, 1 Peter 4:8.

1 Peter Chapter 2

2:1-10 *Our Priestly Calling*

(4) ¹ Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, ² As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby: ³ If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. ⁴ To whom coming, [as to] a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, [and] precious, ⁵ Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. ⁶ Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believes on him shall not be confounded. ⁷ To you therefore which believe [he is] precious: but to them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, ⁸ And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, [even to them] which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. ⁹ But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should show forth the virtues of him who has called you out of darkness into his marvelous light: ¹⁰ Which in time past [were] not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

Note: Virtues is praises in the KJV. Virtue is arête in Greek. Webster 1828 Dictionary - The radical sense is strength, from straining, stretching, extending. This word is used only 5x in the New Testament. Ph 4:8, 1 Pe 2:9, 2 Pe 1:3, 1:5 (2x). 4x by Peter who knew the pathway to virtue better than any other NT writer.

2:11-12 The Responsibilities of Individual Believers

(5) ¹¹ Dearly beloved, I beseech [you] as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul; ¹² Having your conduct honest among the Gentiles: that, whereas they speak against you as evildoers, they may by [your] good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

2:13-17 *Everyone is Precious*

¹³ Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king, as supreme; ¹⁴ Or to governors, as to them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. ¹⁵ For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: ¹⁶ As free, and not using [your] liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God. ¹⁷ Honor all [men]. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.

2:18-25 *My Master is Precious*

¹⁸ Servants, [be] subject to [your] masters with all fear; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward. ¹⁹ For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. ²⁰ For what glory [is it], if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and allow [for it], ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God. ²¹ For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: ²² Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: ²³ ho, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed [himself] to him that judges righteously: ²⁴ Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live to righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. ²⁵ For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls.

1 Peter Chapter 3

3:1-6 My Wife is Precious

(6) ¹ Likewise, ye wives, [be] in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conduct of the wives; ² While they behold your chaste conduct [coupled] with fear. ³ Whose adorning let it not be that outward [adorning] of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel; ⁴ But [let it be] the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, [even the ornament] of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price. ⁵ For after this manner in the old time the holy women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection to their own husbands: ⁶ Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

3:7 My Husband is Precious

⁷ Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.

3:8-12 My Brethren are Precious

(7) ⁸ Finally, [be ye] all of one mind, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, [be] pitiful, [be] courteous: ⁹ Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing. ¹⁰ For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile: ¹¹ Let him eschew evil, and do good; let him seek peace, and ensue it. ¹² For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears [are open] to their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

3:13-17 My Suffering for Doing Good

¹³ And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good? ¹⁴ But and if ye allow for righteousness' sake, happy [are ye]: and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled; ¹⁵ ^a But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and [be] ready always to [give] an answer to every man that asks you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear: ¹⁶ Having a good conscience; that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evildoers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conduct in Christ. ¹⁷ For [it is] better, if the will of God be so, that ye allow for well doing, than for evil doing.

^a But sanctify <hagiazo> the Lord God in your hearts <kardia>: and be ready always to give an answer <apologia> to every man that asks you (for the word or account of hope) "a reason <logos> of the hope" that is in you with meekness and fear: logos is used in 315 verses in different translations, pending the context and translator.

3:18-32 Noah's Ark (water) like Answer of a Good Conscience toward God (no water)

¹⁸ For Christ also has once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit: ¹⁹ By which also he went and preached to the spirits in prison; ²⁰ Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. ²¹ The like figure whereunto [even] baptism does also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ: ²² Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God; angels and authorities and powers being made subject to him.

1 Peter Chapter 4

4:1-8 Follow Christ's Example

(8) ¹ Forasmuch then as Christ has suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that has suffered in the flesh has ceased from sin; ² That he no longer should live the rest of [his] time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God. ³ For the time past of [our] life may suffice us to have worked the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revelings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries: ⁴ Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of [you]: ⁵ Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead. ⁶ For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit. ⁷ But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch to prayer. ⁸ And above all things have ^a fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

^a Intense

4:9-11 My Mutual Love of the Brethren

(9) ⁹ Use hospitality one to another without grudging. ¹⁰ As every man has received the gift, [even so] minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. ¹¹ If any man speak, [let him speak] as the oracles of God; if any man minister, [let him do it] as of the ability which God gives: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

4:12-19 The Divine Relationship Between Our Trials and Temptations

(10) ¹² Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to ^a tempt you, as though some strange thing happened to you: ¹³ But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that, when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. ¹⁴ If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy [are ye]; for the spirit of glory and of God rests upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified. ¹⁵ But let none of you allow as a murderer, or [as] a thief, or [as] an evildoer, or as a busybody in other men's matters. ¹⁶ Yet if [any man allow] as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf. ¹⁷ For the time [is come] that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if [it] first [begin] at us, what shall the end [be] of them that obey not the gospel of God? ¹⁸ And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear? ¹⁹ Wherefore let them that allow according to the will of God commit the keeping of their souls [to him] in well doing, as to a faithful Creator.

Q1: How do trials and temptation relate in verse 12?

A1: We see the link between trials and temptations as trials or tribulation allowed from above cause suffering and are also temptation to sin. Your version of the may incorrectly say "try", while the King James Version translates the same Greek word into temptation through the New Testament. In this case the KJV uses "try" where "tempt" is clearer in today's English and consistency.

A2: However temptations from below are not related to trials from above. The temptations may cause sin or disobedience. The clarity in discerning a temptation which cannot come from above, and a trial which is only from above is key to spiritual growth and discipleship. As John the Baptist said, "I must decrease so he may increase" applied in our personal lives as my decrease of yielding to temptation and sinning enables my increase in partaking in the sufferings of Christ through trials allowed from above. Job, the oldest book in the Bible, Romans 6-8, and much more Scripture teach us this divine law.

Application: I have learned the difference of temptation from trials. Temptations occur frequently when I was a young believer, and still occur frequently. As I grow in Christ my fall into temptation is prevented and repented of more quickly. Trials are welcome as I know that they are from above and my faith in God above are for eternal victory and glory.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us discern the difference between temptation and trials in ourselves and other Christ followers, then understand the role of each and how to be victorious in temptations and trials.

1 Peter Chapter 5

5:1-4 *Eight Sure Indicators of a Mature Elder*

(11) ¹ The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed: ² Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight [thereof], not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; ³ Neither as being lords over [God's] heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

⁴ And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fades not away.

Q1 – Who is an elder?

A1 – An elder is an older and senior Christ follower. In Greek presbuteros signifies a plurality of mature believers leading others. Some call this a pastor, others minister or reverend.

Q1 – What are the eight sure indicators we should look for in those we subject ourselves to?

A1 – Feed the flock – teaching and discipleship

A2 – Taking the oversight – assuming charge and responsibility for other believers

A3 – Not by constraint – against your own will, desire, or needs

A4 – But willingly – with zeal and a good conscience toward man and God

A5 – Not for filthy lucre – let your decision be of a pure heart and not be polluted by money or gain in any form

A6 – But of a ready mind – their personal mind that is not forced by others

A7 – Neither as being lords over heritage – they are not yours to control or benefit from in any form

A8 – But being examples to the flock – an example in personal lifestyle and 24/7

Application: I will look for these eight indicators in the leader I follow. I will use these eight commandments in my personal life to mature in Christ and lead others.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us discern what to look for in the character of those we follow and ourselves.

5:5-11 *Resisting the Devil*

(12) ⁵ Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves to the elder. Yes, all [of you] be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resists the proud, and gives grace to the humble.

⁶ Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

⁷ Casting all your care upon him; for he cares for you. ⁸ Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walks about, seeking whom he may devour: ⁹ Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

¹⁰ But the God of all grace, who has called us to his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle [you]. ¹¹ To him [be] glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

5:12-14 *Conclusion*

¹² By Silvanus, a faithful brother to you, as I suppose, I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand. ¹³ The [congregation that is] at Babylon, elected together with [you], salutes you; and [so does] ^a Mark my son. ¹⁴ Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. Peace [be] with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

^a Mark is the son of Peter as Timothy is the son of Paul.

2 Peter (3-10, 10 min) 2018

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3

12 Helps and Hindrances to Grow in Christ

Purpose: To teach us what helps and hinders our and others growth in Christ

Theme: Remember these things (1:12, 13, 15, 3:1) as our mind links to holy living

Key Passage: Grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ (2 Pet 3:18)

Background: Peter at first shares an excellent way to grow in Christ, then teaches us the hindrances by false knowledge and lastly encouragement. The three parts – good news 1st, then bad news, and to conclude the final good news. Not like the Old Testament prophets who said the bad news first, then gave the good news for hope in the future.

I grow in Christ as I:

Scripture

Part 1 Diligently Pursue True Knowledge

1:1-15

- 1) with a like precious faith through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ 1:1
- 2) giving all **diligence**, add to my **faith virtue**; and to virtue **knowledge**; 1:5-7
- ⁶ And to knowledge **self-control**; and to temperance **patience**; and to patience **godliness**;
- ⁷ And to godliness **brotherly kindness**; and to brotherly kindness **charity**
- 3) so I'm neither barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ 1:8
- 4) so I'll never stumble and have an abundant entrance into the everlasting kingdom 1:10

Part 2A Beware of Fables

1:16-21

- 5) by not following cunningly devised fables, but the power and coming of our Jesus Christ 1:16

Part 2B Beware of False Teachers

2:1-22

- 6) by not following false teachers, who privately bring in damnable heresies (doctrine) 2:1
- 7) by not being vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked in their daily lifestyle 2:7-8
- 8) by their blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings as they feast with you 2:13

Part 2C Beware of Scoffers

3:1-10

- 9) by knowing that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own desires 3:3

Part 3 Grow in Personal Purity (holiness)

3:11-18

- 10) by knowing this world shall be dissolved, and living holy and godly 3:11
- 11) by being diligent and found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless. 3:14
- 12) by not being unlearned and unstable, causing me to * wrestle with the Scriptures of Paul 3:16

* As part 2 is from outside the Body of Christ, 3:16 is from inside the Body of Christ; referring to extremes in the doctrines of: 1) predestination or freewill, 2) worship, 3) gifts, 4) money, 5) sanctification, 6) Israelology, and 7) ekklesia government.

Prayers of the Bible None.

Today's application: That our fervent desire (lust) may be to continually grow in the grace and knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

2 Peter Chapter 1

1:1-3 *Three Great Commonalities*

(1) ¹ Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained **like precious faith** with us through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ: ² Grace and peace be multiplied to you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, ³ According as his divine power has given unto us all things that [pertain] to life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that has **called us to glory and virtue**: ⁴ Whereby are given to us **exceeding great and precious promises**: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

1:5-7 *Nine Steps to Climbing the Stairway into Heaven*

(2) ⁵ And beside this, giving all ^a **diligence**, (12x Greek – sponde. Mk 6:25, Lu 1:39, etc. speed with carefulness) add to your **faith**

virtue; (moral purity – truth - excellence)

and to virtue **knowledge**; (of the truths in the Bible, Hosea 4:6)

⁶ And to knowledge **self-control**; (balance, moderation, boasting, KJV Temperance)

and to self-control **patience**;

and to patience **godliness**; (2 Tim 2:3. consistency, stability with visible character or sense of holiness and discernment)

⁷ And to godliness **brotherly kindness**;

and to brotherly kindness **charity**. (agape love, selfless sacrificing love, John 3:16, 1 John 3:16)

1:8-11 *Three Great Goals*

⁸ For if **these things** be in you, and abound, they make [you that ye shall] **neither [be] barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ**. ⁹ But he that lacks **these things** is blind, and cannot see afar off, and has forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. ¹⁰ Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do **these things, ye shall never fall**: ¹¹ For so an **entrance shall be ministered to you abundantly** into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

1:12-15 *Remember these things (3x, vs 1b-11) – I'm Dying Soon (3x): Peter's Swan Song*

(3) ¹² Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in **remembrance** of **these things**, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth. ¹³ Yes, I think it right, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting [you] in **remembrance**; ¹⁴ Knowing that shortly I must put off [this] my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ has showed me. ¹⁵ Moreover I will endeavor that ye may be able after my decease to have **these things** always in **remembrance**.

1:16-21 *False & True Prophecy Determined by the Prophet's Interpretation*

(4) ¹⁶ For we have not followed **cunningly devised fables**, ^a when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of his majesty. ¹⁷ For he received from God the Father honor and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. ¹⁸ And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount. ¹⁹ We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as to a **light that shines in a dark place**, ^b until the day dawn, and the ^c day star arise in your hearts: ²⁰ Knowing this first, that **no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation**. ²¹ For the prophecy came not in old time by the **will of man**: but **holy men of God spoke [as they were] moved by the Holy Ghost**.

^a Matthew 17:1-5

^b the 2nd Coming of Jesus Christ as King of Kings

^c morning star, dawn, Revelation 22:16

Climbing the Stairway "into Heaven"

The 2nd Epistle of Peter, Chapter 1:1-21 (KJVish)
 (vs 1a) Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ,



(vs 8-9) **Three PROMISES**

If these things (vs 5-7) be in YOU, and abound,
 1. **YE shall be neither barren nor unfruitful** in the *knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ,
 BUT he that **lacks these things (vs 5-7) is blind**, and **cannot see far off**
 and has **forgotten that he was purged from his old sins**.

(vs 10-11) Wherefore the **rather, brethren**, give DILIGENCE to make your calling & election sure: for **IF YE DO these things (vs 5-7)**

2. **YE shall never fall**
 3. **abundantly ministered to YOU an entrance "into Heaven"**

(vs 12-15, 3x) I will always put YOU in remembrance of these things (vs 5-7). I must soon die.

(vs 16-18) cunningly devised fables/coming of Jesus Christ/eye witnesses - Apostles

(vs 19-21) prophecy/holy men of God moved by the Holy Ghost



Job 38:22

2
FAITH
 (228x)

3
VIRTUE
 (5X)

arete
 2 Pet 1:3, Phil 4:8

4
**KNOW-
 LEDGE** (29x)

gnosis - intimate "growth"
 1 Pet 3:7, 2 Pet 3:18
 1 Tim 6:20, Lu 1:77, 11:52

5
**TEMPER-
 ANCE** (4X)

egkrateia - self control
 Acts 24:25, Gal 5:23

6
PATIENCE
 (32x)

hypomone
 Heb 12:1, Jam 5:11
 Luke 8:15

7
**GODLI-
 NESS** (15x)

eusebeia, 2 Pet 1:3, 3:11, 1 Tim 9x, 2 Tim 3:10

8
**BROTHERLY
 KINDNESS** (6x)

Philadelphia, philos - friend
 1 Pet 1:22, 3:8
 Rom 12:10, 1 Thes 4:9

9
CHARITY
 (30x/86x)

agape
 1 Cor 13, Gal 5:22
 (charity - 30x, love - 86x)

(vs 1b-4) **Three COMMONALITIES**

1. to THEM that have obtained like precious faith with US through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ. Grace and peace be multiplied unto YOU through the *knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, According as His divine power has given unto US all things that pertain to life and godliness, through the *knowledge of Him that has
2. called US to glory and virtue: Whereby are
3. given unto US exceeding great and precious promises: that by these (vs 1b-4a) YE might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

(vs 5-7) And beside this (vs 1b-4), **GIVING - ALL - DILIGENCE, ADD to YOUR**

pistis
 Gal 5:22, Heb 11:1-12:13

*epignosis - general knowledge "saved"
 2 Peter 2:20, Heb 10:26-31

paraeisphero
 1 Tim 6:7

spoude
 Rom 12:8, 2 Co 7:11

epichoregeol
 2 Pet 1:11 ministered

2 Peter Chapter 2

2:1-9 **False Teachers Today Follow Pattern of Old Testament False Prophets**

(5) ¹ But there were ^a false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privately shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. ² And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. ³ And through covetousness they will with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingers not, and their damnation slumbers not. ⁴ For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to ^b hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved to judgment; ⁵ And spared not the **old world**, but saved ^c **Noah** the eighth [person], a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; ⁶ And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; ⁷ And delivered just ^c **Lot**, vexed with the filthy conduct of the wicked: ⁸ (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed [his] righteous soul from day today with [their] unlawful deeds;) ⁹ **The Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust to the day of judgment to be punished:**

^a There are no prophets today, only teachers. Christ was the last prophet of the Testament sense. The prophets in the early church were temporary for a specific purpose as part of the foundation of the church, along with the 12 Apostles, Ephesians 2:20. Although one may say and think they are a prophet they are in reality a false teacher.

2 Peter Chapter 2

^b from Tartarus (the deepest abyss of Hades); according to the word used in Greek mythology, to incarcerate in eternal torment. Only spoken directly of 1 time in Bible. Referred to in Jude 1:6 and Genesis 6:1-4.

^c <u>Noah</u> (blessing)	<u>Lot</u> (curse)	Differences
World	Sodom & Gomorrah	
Judged by water	Judged by fire & sulphur	
Old world	Present world	
Angels	- supernatural Men – natural	
Deceptive words	Filthy conversation	
Pride of life	Desire of flesh and eyes	
Righteous	Righteous	Similarities
God's person	God's person	
Father of family	Father of family	
Wife and children	Wife and children	
Future	- through sons Future – through daughters	

2:10-14 *More Ways of False Teachers*

(6) ¹⁰ **But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous [are they], self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.**

¹¹ Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. ¹² But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, **speak evil of the things that they understand not;** and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; ¹³ And **shall receive the reward of unrighteousness,** [as] they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots [they are] and blemishes, **sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you;**

¹⁴ **Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls:** a heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children:

2:15-22

(7) ¹⁵ Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of **Balaam** [the son] of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; ¹⁶ But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb donkey speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. ¹⁷ These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved forever. ¹⁸ For when they speak great swelling [words] of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, [through much] wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error. ¹⁹ While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. ²⁰ For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. ²¹ For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known [it], to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them. ²² But it is happened to them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire.

2 Peter Chapter 3

3:1-6

(8) ¹ This second letter, beloved, I now write to you; in [both] which **I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance:** ² That ye may be mindful of the words which were ^a **spoken before by the holy prophets,** and of the commandment of ^a **us the apostles of the Lord** and Savior: ³ Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, ⁴ And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as [they were] from the beginning of the creation. ⁵ For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: ⁶ Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished:

^a This seems to clarify the sequence and links to Ephesians 2:20, 3:5 which are a priority sequence (Jesus-Apostles-Prophets), not historical sequence.

3:7-14 New Heavens and Earth Replace Old, Judged by Fire

(9) ⁷ But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved to fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. ⁸ But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹ The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is **longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.** ¹⁰ But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the **heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.** ¹¹ [Seeing] then [that] all these things shall be dissolved, what manner [of persons] ought ye to be in [all] **holy conduct and godliness,** ¹² Looking for and hasting to the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat? ¹³ Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for ^a new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwells righteousness. ¹⁴ Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, **be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless.**

3:15-18 Warning about being Led Away and Exhortation to Grow in Grace & Knowledge

(10) ¹⁵ And account [that] the **longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given to him has written to you;** ¹⁶ As also in all [his] letters, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable ^a wrest, as [they do] also the other Scriptures, to their own destruction. ¹⁷ Ye therefore, **beloved,** seeing ye know [these things] before, beware lest ye also, being **led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness.** ¹⁸ But grow in grace, and [in] the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. To him [be] glory both now and forever. Amen.

^a Twist, distort or pervert. This caution is the summation of the whole letter of Peter.

End Note: 2 Peter focuses on helps and Hindrances to grow in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ of which we should discern as follows:

Helps to grow in Christ (instruction)	Hindrances to grow in Christ (destruction)	
1:1-21	1:16a	Mostly helps
	2:1-22	All Hindrances
3:1-2, 3:9-15, 3:18	3:3-8, 3:16-17	Mixture of helps and Hindrances

2 Peter 3:15-16 refers to Galatians, 1 and 2 Corinthians, Hebrews, and parts of Romans, 1 and 2 Timothy.

1 John (5-16, 20 min) 2020

Bible TOC

Next / Previous Book

Gems

1 2 3 4 5

12 Evidence of Walking in the Light, Love and Life

Background: We must consider the person and family of John who wrote 5 of the 27 books of the New Testament. James the greater (older) of the sons of thunder, his parents Zebedee and Salome. James and John are possibly first cousins of Jesus (Luke 3:23, Heli). John is the disciple Jesus loved (John 20:2), like Daniel the prophet (Daniel 10:11). Peter, James and John were the inner circle. James was the first apostle martyred in Acts 12:1 and John the last Apostle living. 1 John is the most general letter written in the New Testament; to all believers of all times. Written between 85-95 A.D.; most likely after the book of Revelation.

Purpose: To have right knowledge for spiritual growth and look forward to the Judgment Seat of Christ. Along with exposing the false doctrines of the gnostics, those who justified sin in the body as separate from sin in the spirit. The gnostics special knowledge leads to many gnostic gospels and antichrist beliefs.

Theme: Directions to walk in the Light, Love and Life and not walk in the Dark, Hate, and Death.

Thesis Statement: "These things write we unto you, that your joy may be full", 1:4 and "whatever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, [even] our faith", 5:4

Key words as contrasts: Light-5x - Dark-5x, Love-33x - Hate-5x, Life 8x - Death 3x, Truth/true 15x - Lie/liar/deceive/error/false 13x

Other key words: love(s,ed,beloved) - 47x (first 2:5), all - 26x (first 1:7, all or nothing), **know - 25x (gnostic error)**, sin(s) - 22x, if -17x, write - 14x (grapho), brethren-11x, commandment-7x, fellowship - (4x chapter 1;), walk 3x (1:6,7; 2:6), antichrist-3x (only in 2:18, 22, 4:3 & 2 John 7).

I have fellowship with the Apostles, Father, Son, and the brethren as I:

Scripture

Part 1 Know Him which is from the beginning

1:1-4

1) which is the Word of life

1:1

2) which is eternal life

1:2

Part 2 Walk in the Light and not in the Dark

1:5:2:14

3) as I abide in Jesus and walk as he walked

2:6

4) as I love my brother and then there is no occasion for stumbling

2:10-11

5) Grow from a little child to a young man to a father; spiritually in Christ

2:12-14

Part 3 Walk in Love and Not Hate

2:15-5:9

6) so we have confidence and not shame when Jesus returns to earth and judges us

2:28

7) as we have hope of his return and purify myself, as Jesus is pure

3:3

8) as we love the brethren, rather love not the brother

3:14

9) as we love not in word and tongue, but in deed and truth

3:18

10) as we test the spirits, whether they are of God

4:1

11) as our love for our brother matures, so we have boldness in the day of judgment

4:17

Part 4 Walk in Life and not Death

5:10-21

12) so life and not death work in me

5:12

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
I John 3:19-23	All	Prayer answered. For self.		Keep His Commandment	Commandments: 613-10-2-1
I John 5:14-17	Supplication	Sin onto death. For others.	Sin		Pray for Pray not for

1:1-5a Fellowship with the Apostles, Father and Son Makes Our Joy Full

(1) ¹ That which was **from the beginning**, which ^a we have **heard**, which we have **seen** with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the **Word of life**; ² (For the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear **witness**, and show unto ^b you that eternal life, which was with the **Father**, and was **manifested** unto us;) ³ That which we have seen and heard **declare** we unto you, that ye also may have **fellowship** with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His **Son Jesus Christ**. ⁴ And these things **write** we unto you, that **your joy** may be **full**. ⁵ This then is the **message** which we have heard of Him, and declare unto you,

Q1 – Which beginning is this? (1 Jn 1:1)

A – In genesis when all things were created by God with Jesus Christ “from the beginning”. Bible student: The Greek word arche is used 9x in 1 John. Beginning can mean in creation (1st Adam) or new life in Christ (2nd Adam) depending on the context. In this case the context is clearly creation, as in John 1:1-3, Revelation 1:8 and Genesis 1:1-2.

^a we – us - our: the Apostle John and the other Apostles who lived when Jesus was on the earth as a man. Used 29 times in chapter 1. A significant cross reference is Ephesians 2:20 (19-21). 1 John is a master discipler letter to all of us. II and III John use “I” which are personal letters.

^b you – ye – your: substitute your name, for us who live today and have never seen Jesus Christ

1:5b-10 Fellowship with Jesus and One Another to Walk in the Light

(2) that God is **light**, and in Him is no **darkness** at all. ⁶ If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we **lie**, and do not the **truth**: ⁷ But if we **walk** in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the **blood** of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all ^a **sin**. ⁸ If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. ⁹ If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to **forgive** us [our] sins, and to **cleanse** us from all **unrighteousness**. ¹⁰ If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His **word** is not in us.

^a **sin is a key word used in 1 John 22x**. Sin is disobedience to what God has revealed to us in the Bible. Remember the three incorrect justifications believers today use to justify sin – Old Testament believers like King David, the pre-pentecost apostles, and Romans 7:14-25. A popular 4th justification of sin is later in 1 John. We do sin, however as we grow spiritually mature we sin less severely, less frequently, and learn to prevent sin at the temptation stage and not let sin grow (James 1:15, Ephesians 4:26, Proverbs 10:12, 17:9, 1 John 1:9, 1 Peter 4:8, 1 John 4:7-8). Many times and less and less, my sin is my problem – not the sin of others.

Note: After the introduction of the purpose of John’s letter in verses 1-5a, then the statement of fact regarding light and darkness, and finally the conditional “if” used 4 times in verses 6-10 which leads to the ultimate purpose and direct discipleship of John’s letter in chapter 2 verse 1.

1 John Chapter 2**2:1-11 Walking in the Light and Love without Stumbling**

(3) ¹ **My little children**, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any one sin, we have an **advocate** with the Father, Jesus Christ the **righteous**: ² and He is the **propitiation** for our sins and not for ours only, but also for [the sins of] the whole **world**. ³ And hereby we do **know** that we know Him, if we **keep** His **commandments**. ⁴ He that says, I know Him, and keeps not His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. ⁵ But whoso keeps His word, in him verily is the **love** of God **perfected**: hereby know we that we are in Him. ⁶ He that says he **abides** in Him ought himself also so to walk, even as He walked. ⁷ **Brethren**, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning. The old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning. ⁸ Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in Him and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now **shines**. ⁹ He that says he is in the light, and **hates** his brother, is in darkness even until now. ¹⁰ He that loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no occasion of **stumbling** in him.

1 John Chapter 2

¹¹ But he that hates his brother is in darkness, and walks in darkness, and knows not where he goes, because that darkness has **blinded** his eyes.

Q1 – What is propitiation? A – Satisfies justice we deserve by covering our sins as if never done.

Q2 – Can dark and light co-exist within the believer? (2 Corinthians 4:4)

A – Yes, there are degrees of dark and light, or hate and love. The key word is walk. Only those we spend individual quality time with and God know. Although some are very apparent immediately. The intensity of our walk in the light will determine the intensity of our love for the brethren.

Application: I strive daily to walk in the light and love as Jesus did.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer helps us to walk in the light alone and with others who walk in the light.

2:12-14 ***Four Stages of Discipleship for Spiritual Growth***

(4) ¹² I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake.

¹³ I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known Him [that is] from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have **overcome** the **wicked one**.

I write unto you, children, because ye have known the Father. ¹⁴ I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known Him [that is] from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are **strong**, and the Word of God abides in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

Note:	<u>Spiritual person</u>	<u>Stage</u>	
	Little Children (vs 12)	New Converts	1 Corinthians 3:1
	Children (vs 13)	Basic Disciples	Hebrews 5:11-14
	Young Men (vs 13-14, 3 qualities)	Ministering Disciples	Romans 6-7
	Fathers (vs 13-14, the same)	Disciple Makers	Romans 8

Q – How do we discern where we are in the four stages of spiritual growth of Christ-likeness?

A1 – We can only understand the stages we have passed through already.

A2 – We cannot understand something we have not experienced, neither can we teach others.

A3 – The daily life of a person will give witness to their stage of spiritual growth.

2:15-17 ***Love Not the World***

(5) ¹⁵ Love not the world, neither the things [that are] in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him. ¹⁶ For all that is in the world, the **lust** of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the **pride** of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. ¹⁷ And the world passes away, and the lust thereof: but he that does the will of God abides forever.

Q – Can love of the world and the love of God co-exist within the believer?

A1 – Yes, we can only understand the contrast as we love God more and more. As the love of God increases in the believer the love of the world diminishes.

A2 – We cannot understand something we have not experienced, neither can we teach others.

A3 – The daily life of a person will give witness to their love of this world or love of God. There are degrees as we spiral upward or downward.

A4 – The love of the world is sin in three areas: Desires of our body and eyes, and pride. These three areas of sin are the same in Genesis, Matthew, and 1 John. This world is reflected in our culture and times, and interconnected with our old man in Adam.

2:18-29 ***The Holy Spirit enables Confidence When Jesus Returns***

(6) ¹⁸ Little children, it is the **last time**: and as ye have heard that **antichrist** shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time. ¹⁹ They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would [no doubt] have **continued** with us: but [they went out], that they might be made manifest that they were not all of us.

1 John Chapter 2

²⁰ But ye have an **unction** from the Holy One, and ye know all things. ²¹ I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth. ²² Who is a liar but he that **denies** that Jesus is the Christ? He is antichrist, that denies the Father and the Son. ²³ Whosoever denies the Son, the same has not the Father: [(but) he that **acknowledges** the Son has the Father also]. ²⁴ Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father. ²⁵ And this is the promise that he has promised us, eternal life. ²⁶ These [things] I have written unto you concerning them that seduce you. ²⁷ But the anointing which ye have received of Him abides in you, and ye need not that anyone **teach** you: but as the same anointing teaches you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it has taught you, ye shall abide in Him. ²⁸ And now, [little] children, abide in Him; that, when He shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before Him at His coming. ²⁹ If ye know that He is righteous, ye know that everyone that does righteousness is **born** of Him.

Q – How long is the antichrist around?

A – Antichrist refers to the time of John to the present that includes many antichrists, then in the future referring to the antichrist. Only John uses the title antichrist(s), 4 times in 1 John and 1 time in 2 John. See Revelation 13.

Application: I must continue abiding in Christ until I die. I will have confidence and not be ashamed when Jesus Christ returns and stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ for my works. See Ephesians 5:25-27, sin is compared to spots, wrinkles, and blemishes.

1 John Chapter 3

3:1-3 *Personal Purity for the Return of Christ*

(7) ¹ Behold, what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knows us not, because it knew Him not. ² Beloved, now we are the sons of God, and it does not yet **appear** what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as he is. ³ And everyone that has this hope in Him **purifies** himself, even as He is pure.

Note: 3:1-3 connects with 2:28-29. We keep pure (without the wrinkles, spots or blemishes on our white clothing of righteousness – Ephesians 5:22-33) by not continuing in sin (3:4-10). This is not alternating between good and bad..

3:4-10 *Continual Sin is of the Devil*

(8) ⁴ Whosoever commits sin **transgresses** also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law. ⁵ And ye know that He was manifested to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin. ⁶ Whosoever abides in Him sins not: whosoever sins has not seen Him, neither known Him. ⁷ [Little] children, let no man deceive you: he that does righteousness is righteous, even as He is righteous. ⁸ He that commits sin is of the **devil**; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. ⁹ Whosoever is born of God does not commit sin; for His **seed** remains in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. ¹⁰ In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever does not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loves not his brother.

Note: The antichrist and the devil are of the same source, nature, and destiny. The antichrist is addressed in 1 John 2:18-19 as a spirit and in the Tribulation as a person, while the devil relates to sin at all times, whether by idols, love of this world, the old man or self. Doing right is doing good, not just the absence of doing evil. As we walk after the Spirit we will not fulfill the lust of the flesh (Romans 8:1, 8:4, Galatians 5:19-23) or abide in Jesus (John 15:1-5) and Jesus destroys the works of the devil! Righteousness without love makes us a religious Pharisee, and love without righteousness makes us a partner of evil.

1 John Chapter 3

3:11-18 ***Love One Another in Deed & Truth***

(9) ¹¹ For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. ¹² Not as **Cain**, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous. ¹³ Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you. ¹⁴ We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loves not [his] brother abides in death. ¹⁵ Whosoever hates his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him. ¹⁶ Hereby perceive we the love [of God], because He laid down His life for us: and we ought to lay down [our] lives for the brethren. ¹⁷ But whoso has this world's good, and sees his brother have need, and shuts up his bowels [of compassion] from him, how dwells the love of God in him? ¹⁸ My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in ^a truth.

Note: Mostly, God calls us to lay down our lives piece by piece, little by little in small, but important ways every day. Love one another – 2:7, John 13:34. Cain – Genesis 4:5-9, Hebrews 11:4.

^a Truth according to what is written in the Bible, which includes being honest and telling the truth.

3:19-24 ***Our Heart Leads Personal Prayer***

(10) ¹⁹ And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our **hearts** before him. ²⁰ For if our heart **convict** us, God is greater than our heart, and knows all things. ²¹ Beloved, if our heart convict us not, [then] have we **confidence** toward God. ²² And whatsoever we **ask**, we **receive** of Him, because we keep His commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in His sight. ²³ And this is His commandment, That we should believe on the **name** of His Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as He gave us commandment. ²⁴ And he that keeps His commandments dwells in Him, and He in him. And hereby we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit which He has given us.

(Spirit - 1st of 5x in 1 John. Pneuma can be with a capital S or small s, depending on context. Charisma – Anoint/Uncion 3x, Jn 2:20, 27 Noun Initial-continual for all believers for teaching us- another office or function of the Spirit; pneuma. Only used in 1 John. Romans 8:16)

Note: "Sometimes our heart condemns us, but, in doing so, it gives a wrong verdict, and then we have the satisfaction of being able to take the case into a higher court, for God is greater than our heart, and knows all things."

Q – How do we know when does God convicts our hearts? (Do not think on Jeremiah 17:9, but Acts 2)

A1 – We can harden our hearts to sin, which is very dangerous in respect to personal blessing and eternal reward.

A2 – The peace of God diminishes in our heart, mind, and feelings caused by an impure heart.

Application: I know in my heart I have confidence toward God. I must guard my heart. I must be sensitive to the conviction by the Spirit in me for immediate repentance and cleansing by the blood of Jesus. See lesson on prayer in 1 John 5:14-15 and John 15:7.

1 John Chapter 4

4:1-6 ***Test the Spirits*** (they are of Christ or antichrist)

(11) ¹ Beloved, believe not every spirit, but test the spirits whether they are of God: because many **false prophets** are gone out into the world. ² Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: ³ And every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that [spirit] of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already it is in the world. ⁴ Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. ⁵ They are of the world: therefore they speak of the world, and the world hears them. ⁶ We are of God: he that knows God hears us; he that is not of God hears not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

Q – Are false prophets and false teachers interchangeable titles?

A – Yes, 1 Cor 14:1 (prophecy), Eph 2:20 (old testament sense), and 2 Pet 2:1 (false teachers).

1 John Chapter 4

Note: Test the spirits as King Jehosophat asked King Ahab to hear another prophet, Micaiah (1 Kings 22).

Application: I know when I followed false teachers I had pride and experiences for a season. Although I and others were deceived by the web of lies mixed with the truth of the Holy Scriptures, God delivered me as Lot from Sodom.

4:7-16 ***Love is Perfected*** (with one another, "love" is inspired 26x)

(12) ⁷ Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and everyone that loves is born of God, and knows God. ⁸ He that loves not knows not God; for God is love. ⁹ In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. ¹⁰ Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son [to be] the propitiation for our sins. ¹¹ Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. ¹² No man has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwells in us, and His love is perfected in us. ¹³ Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit. ¹⁴ And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son [to be] the Savior of the world. ¹⁵ Whoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwells in him, and he in God. ¹⁶ And we have known and believed the love that God has to us. God is love; and he that dwells in love dwells in God, and God in him.

Q1 – What is propitiation? A – When Jesus Christ took our place for the penalty of sin, which is death.
Q2 – Who, what when, where, why, and how is the Holy Spirit given to us? A – discuss and know!

Note: Dwell is used 5x and instead of and after abide 13x. Both dwell and abide are the same in Greek. The translators use different words due to the context. Using dwell at this point in 1 John comes after abide used in chapters 2-3. Dwell is more familiar and loving. This reveals the insight and wisdom of the translators. Selecting the best word within the options and poetic style are two strengths of the KJV. Similar to the words unction and charity.

4:17-21 ***Judgment and Fear*** (future and present exhortation, Romans 12:6-8)

(13) ¹⁷ Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of **judgment**: because as He is, so are we in this world. ¹⁸ There is no **fear** in love; but perfect love casts out fear: because fear has torment. He that fears is not made perfect in love. ¹⁹ We love him, because He first loved us. ²⁰ If anyone say, I love God, and hates his brother, he is a liar: for he that loves not his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen? ²¹ And this commandment we have from Him, That he who loves God love his brother also.

Note: Fear not is addressed 28x in the New Testament. My two favorites are 2 Timothy 1:7 "God has not given and Mathew 10:28 "Fear not them which kill the body . . ."

Perfect is to make complete, experientially complete in Christ (Col 2:10), be fully ripe as a fruit, to press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus (Philippians 3:14), and do things with excellence. Study the word perfect in the New Testament for the accurate definition of the word, used 43x.

Q – Is the day of judgment the same for all saints?

A1 – No, some will have boldness and some will have fear. Boldness and fear are opposites. We have boldness as we love God and our brother as Jesus does. We have fear when we do not love God and our brother as Jesus did.

A2 – There are degrees of boldness and fear which are evident in this life and at the judgment seat of Christ. Boldness is the opposite of fear. The day of judgment is when believers stand before the judgment seat of Christ.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us love one another the same way as God and Jesus love us.

1 John Chapter 5

5:1-5 **Everyone who is Born of God Keeps His Commandments (1-3) Overcomes the World (4-5)**

(14) ¹ Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God: and everyone that loves Him that begat loves him also that is born of Him. ² By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep His commandments. ³ For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments: and His commandments are not grievous. ⁴ For whatever is born of God overcomes the world: and this is the victory that overcomes the world, [even] our faith. ⁵ Who is he that overcomes the world, but he that believes that Jesus is the Son of God?

Notes: verses 1-3 conclude the love theme of chapter 4. What are God's commandments? to believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, 1 John 3:23. Overcome is used 7x in 1 John 2:12-14 (2x), 4:4, 5:4-5 (3x), to the 7 churches in Rev 2-3, and John 16:33. The word spirit is used 7x in 1 John 4:1-6.

The victory or overcomer (same Greek word) that overcomes is our faith – faith as defined in Hebrews 12:1-3, Romans 14, and Galatians 5:22-23.

5:6-13 **The Witnesses (6-9) to Believe in Jesus Christ for Eternal Life (10-13)**

(15) ⁶ This is He that came by water and blood, [even] Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. ⁷ For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. ⁸ And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one. ⁹ If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son. ¹⁰ He that believes on the Son of God has the witness in himself: he that believes not God has made Him a liar; because he believes not the record that God gave of His Son. ¹¹ And this is the record, that God has given to us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. ¹² He that has the Son has life; [and] he that has not the Son of God has not life. ¹³ These things I have written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

Q1 – Why is part 1 John 5:7-8 missing 25 words in most modern translations? A – Use of the Alexandrian Greek, not Antioch texts.

Q2 – How do we interpret 1 John 5:8?

A – The water witness was at Jesus' baptism, with focus on the person of Christ when God spoke and Holy Spirit descended upon him – not the act of water baptism. The blood witness was at the death of Jesus on the cross. Witness is 11x in 1 John 5, Marty-reo 1:2, 4:14, **5:6, 5:7, 5:8, 5:9, 5:10**; Marty-ria **5:9 (3x), 5:10 (2x), 5:11**; Acts 1:8 Marty-s

Q3 – When is it wrong to use 1 John 5:12-13?

A – When used as a manipulative tool to coerce somebody to believe they are saved when they say the sinner's prayer. This is when the Spirit is not drawing and there is not a genuine repentance and conversion.

Application: I know the history of the two families of manuscripts and teach others by personal witness and as the Holy Spirit leads. I must testify, be a witness, and bear record of the truth that Jesus is the Son of God. John 16:5-15 "reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment." 1 John gives us a balanced view of Jesus Christ as fully God and fully man.

5:14-21 **Pray (14-15) about Others Sin (16-19) and know the True God (20-21)**

(16) ¹⁴ And this is the confidence that we have in Him, that, if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us: ¹⁵ And if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him. ¹⁶ If anyone know his brother sin a sin [which is] not unto death, he shall ask, and He shall give him life for them that sin not unto death.

1 John Chapter 5

There is a sin unto death: **I do not say that he shall pray for it.** ¹⁷ All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death. ¹⁸ We know that whosoever is born of God sins not; but he that is born of God keeps himself, and that wicked one touches him not. ¹⁹ [And] we know that we are of God, and the whole world lies in wickedness. ²⁰ And we know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him that is true, and we are in Him that is true, [even] in His Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. ²¹ Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

Q1 – What is the sin unto death that we are commanded to not pray for in 1 John 5:16? 1 Cor 11:27-34, Acts 5, 1 Cor 5.

A – The sin unto death is spiritual and sometimes premature physical death, but not eternal death. This is written to advise the believer how to handle certain patterns of sin committed by other believers. John 3:20-21 and Luke 11:1-13 with ask and give.

Q2 – How does the person born of God keep himself from sin in 1 John 5:18? 1 John 3:6? The active tense of the verb sin implies habit, continuity, & unbroken sequence.

A – By obeying His commandments God keeps his heart and mind from sin. Wicked one in 1 John 2:12, 14. Overcomes the world (includes self & devil)

Q3 – What is an idol that the child of God must keep away from in 1 John 5:21?

A – Idols in context of 1 John are inward: lust of the flesh, eyes and pride of life and love of this world. Eph 5:5, Col 3:5.

Application: I know that to not pray for a child of God because of their hardened heart (stubborn or rebellion) is for the glory of God. I know that idol prevention is inward to me and outward to others. It is putting anything, anyone, or any feeling before God.

GEMS in 1 John

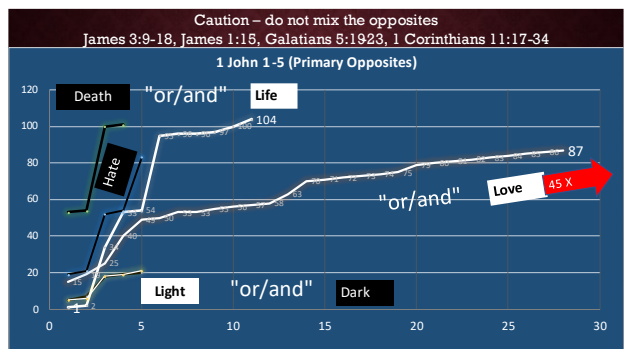
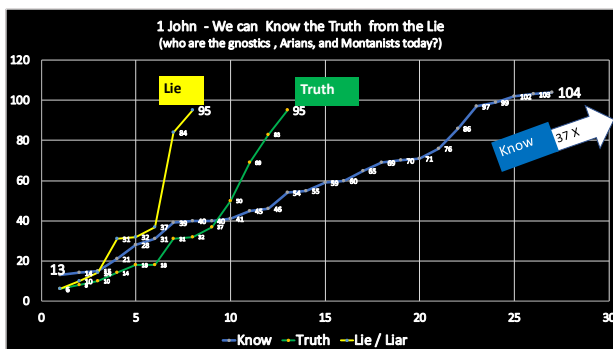
Bible TOC

The Apostle John is Unique from the other 11 Apostles

1. Only apostle whose parents are named (Zebedee and Salome)
2. John and James could be the cousins of Jesus (Matthew 27:56)
3. John and brother James named "Sons of Thunder" (Boanerges)
Boanerges Mark 3:167, or sons of God's voice
4. James the first apostle killed (Acts 12:2), John died last
5. Penned five books: John, Revelation, I, II, III John
6. James, John, and Peter are the inner three disciples
7. Beloved disciple (John 21:21 -24) is like Daniel (Dan 10:11, 19; Ez 14:14). Why?
8. 1 John is the most general of the New Testament letters
9. 1, 2, 3 John are possibly written after Revelation

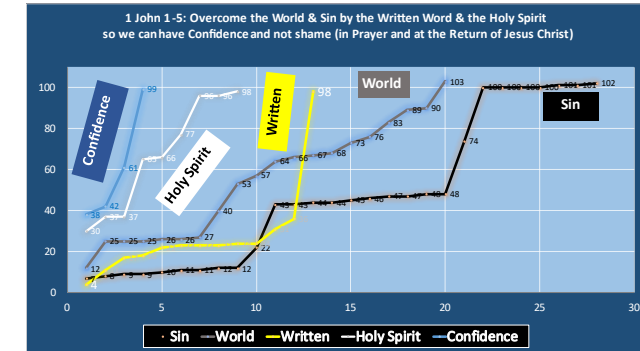
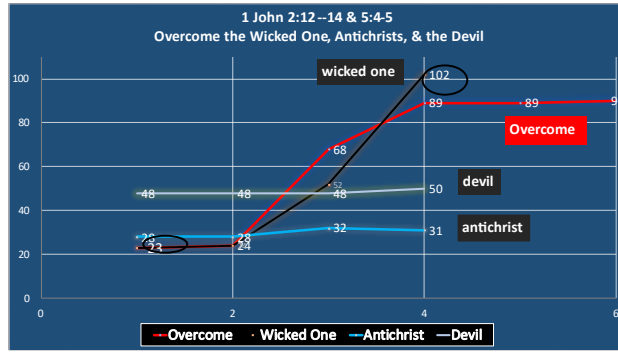
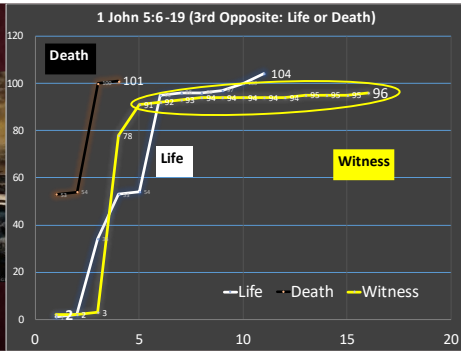
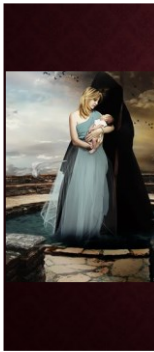
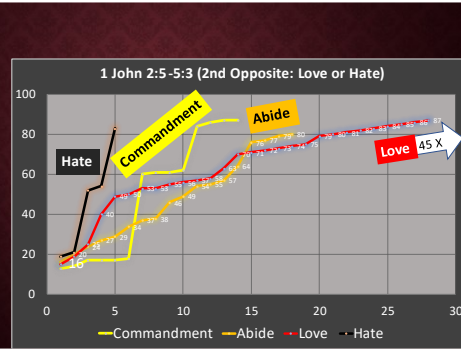
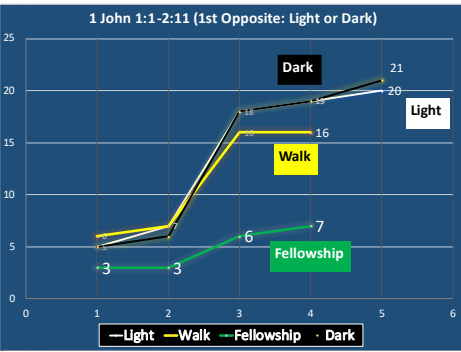
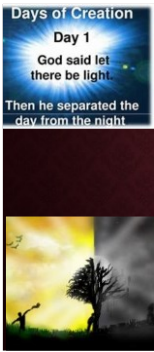
BALANCING OUR TIME AND THOUGHTS WITH THE WORDS OF 1 JOHN

Chapter	God (He, His, Him)	Jesus (He, His, Him)	Spirit (and, and, Spirit)	Total	Us-We (I, my, you, your)	Character	Total	Devil/Them/they Character	Time
1	12	7	0	19	42	36	97	6	6%
2	30	23	4	57	113	87	257	29	11%
3	24	20	1	45	88	59	220	22	10%
4	41	13	1	55	53	48	156	29	18%
5	36	22	1	59	46	81	130	20	15%
Totals	143	85	8	236	342	311	861	86 =	10%
Time	61%	36%	3%	40%	60%	God writes to us more (60%) than of himself (40%)			



GEMS in 1 John

Bible TOC



Victory Over Sin (Light + Love = Life) 1 John Scatter Plot Data

5	15	1	5	19	53	1	3	6	16	13	7	5	13	1	2	4	2	12		
7	19	2	6	21	54	17	3	7	20	13	8	6	14	3	2	11	2	25		
18	25	34	18	52	100	17	6	16	24	14	9	8	17	3	29	17	3	25		
19	40	53	19	54	101	23	7	16	27	15	9	10	17	5	38	18	78	25		
20	49	54	21	83		24		21	29	21	10	14	17	5	41	22	91	26		
50	95					34	Heb	34	28	11	18	18	17	41	23	92	26			
2 Cor	53	96	wick	anti	liar	34	10	Eph	37	31	11	18	60	18	41	23	93	27		
4:2-4	53	96	ed	christ	6	48	24-25	2:10	38	31	12	31	61	34	44	23	94	40		
shine	55	97	one	28	10	51	ordain	46	39	12	32	61	34	47	24	94	53			
18	56	100	23	28	14		blood	4:1	49	40	22	37	62	50	49	24	94	57		
	57	104	24	32	31	31	crea	7	worth	53	40	43	50	84	51	71	31	94	64	
Apos	58	eter	51	31	32	32	tion	90	4:17	54	41	43	69	86	67		36	94	66	
tles	63	nal	52	4	37	John	90	gentle	57	45	44	83	87	69	conf	98	95	67		
1:1-5a	70		102		84	1:1-14	92	5:2	64	46	44	95	87	69	ident	95	68			
we	71	John	5	devil	95	Gen	4	love	76	54	45				99	bold	gre	95	73	
our	72	(44x)			8	11:3		5:8	77	55	45		Spirit	spirit	100	pray	ater	96	76	
1	73	3:15	they	48			for	child	79	59	46	30	64	de	42	67	over	83		
1	74	3:16	29	48	deceive	John	give	light	80	60	47	37	64	de	61	93	come	89		
1	75	3:36	29	50	seduce	13:17	9	5:16	dwell	65	47	37	65	dare	3	23	90			
1	79	3:36	29	4	love	22	circum	69	69	48	63	66	3	99	3	24	103			
2	80	4:10	29	36	one	2	spec.	joy	70	48	65	66	5	4						
2	81	4:11	29	them	46	ano		full	71	74	77	5	mess		vict.	68	John			
3	82	4:14	29	36	3	ther	heart	confess	4	76	100	96		age	ask	ary	89	prince		
3	83	5:29	29	68			59	9	1	86	100	96	keep	5	61	89	89	12:31		
3	84	11:25	64	2	fear		59	33		97	100	98	13	50	98	1	90	14:30		
3	84	10:10	68		81		60	65	strong	99	100	9	61		99		6	16:11		
4	85	20:31	68	81		3	66	24	102	101			86	99	Faith					
5	86		10		81		78	1	103	101	John	87		100	89		Luke			
86					81		5	104	102	16:7-15	105	4	1					10:18		
87		not			4	not		not	not	not	5	not								
LIGHT	LOVE	Dark	Hate	Begin	Fellow	Walk	Abide	Know	Sin	Truth	Comm	Hear	Mani	Writ	Witt	World				
5	46	11	5	5	4	9	4	5	18	37	31	14	14	16	11	13	16	20		
> or +	> or =	> or =	> or +	> or =	> or +	ning	ship	gnosis	(verse 1)	and	voice	fest	ten	miss	lust					
God-Father/Holy One		64	13	1	78	59%	total	4:19 omits Him		ments	2nd			record	2					
Son/Jesus-Christ (name, 4x)		23	12	10	45	34%	132	1:7, 5:3 omit Christ			coming			testify	pride					
Spirit/function-anoint		6	1	2	9	7%	teach	1 John 5:78, omits 25 words			judge			martyr	1					

1	1-10	10	1:1-5a, 5b10	2
2	11-39	29	2:1-11, 12:14, 15:17, 18:29	4
3	40-63	24	3:1-3, 4:10, 11:18, 19:24	4
4	64-84	21	4:1-6, 7:16, 17:21	3
5	85-105	21	5:1-5, 6:13, 14:21	3
	verses	105	passages	16

Commandment to love one another				
Jesus	Matthew 5:19	Mt 22:3640		
James	James 2:8	royal law		
John	John 13:17	love one another		
Peter	1 Peter 1:22	with pure heart/eviently or consistent		
see	hor-ah'o	7 stare at	1:1, 1:2, 1:3, 3:6, 4:20, 5:16	
see	op'tomahee	1 2nd coming	3:02	
see	theoma'i	2 aware	4:12, 4:14	
		10 three (3)	4	

advocate	1	believe	7	#REF!
cleanse	2	believe not	3	436
give/grace	7			#REF!
perfect	5	Saviour	1	#REF!
propitiation	1	brother	11	
righteousness	8	brethren	4	562
understand	1	beloved	5	126
Word-2 / words	7	children	11	22%
	32	little 9)	42	dev: 1
Devil/J		born-begotten	10	4:9 omits
		seed (pema)	1	3:9

deny (Jesus is the Christ)	3	specific sins	0
destroy (works of devil)	1	Lord	0
error (spirit of)	1	gospel/grace	0
false (prophecs)	1	peace-mercy	0
dots (keep your self from)	1	praise-thanks	0
unrighteousness	2	worship	0
TOTAL	#SPILL!	trust - patience	0

2 John (1-4, 2 min) 2020

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

12 Universal and Local Church Evidence of Walking in Love and Truth

Background: It is a family letter – a widowed woman, her children and nephew and niece. The second letter is from Ephesus before being exiled to the island of Patmos, 90-95AD. Prayers: None. It is about the WALK.

Key Passage: 1:8

I seek and recognize truth and love as I:

Scripture

Part 1 Say hello

1:1-3

- | | |
|---|------|
| 1) to whom I love in the truth | 1:1a |
| 2) for all they that have known the truth | 1:1b |
| 3) For the truth's sake, which dwells in us | 1:2a |
| 4) and shall be with us forever | 1:2b |

Part 2 Recognize truth

1:4-6

- | | |
|---|-----|
| 5) I rejoiced greatly that I found of your children walking in truth | 1:4 |
| 6) love one another | 1:5 |
| 7) this is love, that we walk after his commandments | 1:6 |

Part 3 Recognize deception

1:7-11

- | | |
|--|-----|
| 8) many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh | 1:7 |
| 9) Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have worked for | 1:8 |
| 10) but that we receive a full reward | 1:8 |

Part 4 Say goodbye

1:12-13

- | | |
|--|------|
| 11) speak face to face, that our joy may be full | 1:12 |
| 12) children of your elect sister greet you. Amen. | 1:13 |

A. GREETING

- Compare: 1. The elder to (Lady-YLT and Gaius) whom I love in the truth
2. I rejoiced greatly to (see Lady or hear Gaius) who walk in the truth

Contrast: 2 John-God the Father, the Lord Jesus Christ, truth in us
3 John-God-0x / Jesus-0x / Holy Spirit-0x

B. BODY OF LETTER – Commendation then **Warning**

- Compare: 1. John rejoices for (Lady and Gaius)
2. They WALK in **love and truth** (Lady/Univ church) or **truth and love** (Gaius/local church)

Contrast:	2 John	3 John
Deceivers, lose reward, doctrine of Christ		Diotrephes, pre-eminence, Evil deeds & words
Unsaved – do not let into your home or bless		Saved – in church, pride (several levels and forms)
	* weak prayer life, not broken at the foot of the cross	

C. SALUTATION

- Compare: 1. Many things to write, but not with ink and pen
2. I trust to see you and speak face to face
3. Greet others (by name)

[Prayers of the Bible](#) None in II John

2 John

1:1-3 **John Loves the Elect Lady** (and all believers)

(1) ¹ The elder to the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not only I, but also all they that have known the truth; ² For the truth's sake, which dwells in us, and shall be with us forever. ³ Grace be with you, mercy, [and] peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

Q – Who is the elect lady and her children?

A – The elect lady is a specific woman who John the elder wrote this letter. History and context indicate this is not Mary, the mother of Jesus, nor Mary, the sister of Jesus, nor allegorical for the church. Youngs's Literal Translation -Kyria.

1:4-6 **John Rejoices for the Elect Lady** (and all believers); **a continual reminder**

(2) ⁴ I rejoiced greatly that I found of your children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father. ⁵ And now I beseech you, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment to you, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another. ⁶ And this is love, that we walk after his ^a commandments. This is the commandment, That, as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

^a "Love one another" is an underlying theme in all of John's writings. Love one another was first commanded in Leviticus as part of the law of Moses. It would include the core 10 commandments that Christ fulfilled, not abolished. In the context of Second John this is more likely referring to the commandment to love one another repeated 10 X in John 13-17. Walking in the truth (Jesus) enables us to fulfill "love one another" with a pure heart consistently, 1 Peter 1:21-22. To love one another as Jesus loves us is supernatural. As we walk and love one another in truth, we rejoice.

1:7-11 **John Warns the Elect Lady** (and all believers) **Agnostics, traveling false teachers**

(3) ⁷ For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist. ⁸ ^a Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have labored, but that we receive a full reward. ⁹ Whosoever transgresses, and abides not in the doctrine of Christ, has not God. He that abides in the doctrine of Christ, has both the Father and the Son. ¹⁰ If there come any to you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: ¹¹ For he that bids him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.

^a Important passage for the doctrine of rewards, part of the doctrine of Christ: we can lose them and receive partial or no rewards. Believers are saved, yet so as by fire (1 Cor 3:14-15). Parable of talents.

1:12-13 **John Loves the Elect Sister**

(4) ¹² Having many things to write to you, I would not [write] with paper and ink: but I trust to come to you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full. ¹³ The children of your **elect sister** greet you. Amen.

Q1 – What is the best interaction for fellowship?

A – Face to face. Other forms of communication fulfill a purpose.

Q2 – Who is the elect sister?

A – The genetic sister of the elect lady, a real person – not the church. The children greet their aunt.

Application: I rejoice in face to face communications and allow for other methods of communication when face to face is not possible. I understand that DEDUCTIVE Bible study helps me know the elect lady is a special person to John, a Mary-like woman. Let our words and actions earnestly pursue truth and love. Truth without love is hypocrisy, love without truth is empty. God's love results in grace (given what we don't deserve) and mercy (not given what we do deserve).

3 John (1-4, 2 min) 2020

Bible TOC Next / Previous Book

Gems

12 Micro Evidence Walking in the Truth

Purpose: A letter about a personal relationship with other believers based on truth and love

Theme: Truth and love toward each other are expressed, as well as what hinders our growing in the truth of Jesus Christ and love for one another. Truth – 6x, Love – 2x.

Key Passage: 1:4

Background: Every mom listening can be Lady in 2 John and every man listening can be Gaius in 3 John. Both Lady and Gaius are not recognized by their position in or out of church, nor by their appearance or gifts, but by their walk, their daily faithful walk in love and truth, and truth and love. What a wonderful way to finish the Bible before Jude and Revelation.

I walk in the truth I:

Scripture

Part 1 Say hello

1:1-2

1) to whom I love in the truth

1:1

2) with desire of prosperity and health for others, as their soul prospers

1:2

Part 2 Recognize truth

1:3-8

3) by rejoicing greatly when hearing of others walking in the truth

1:3

4) have no greater joy than to hear my children walk in the truth

1:4

5) see faithfulness to brethren and strangers

1:5

6) Take nothing of unbelievers

1:7

Part 3 Recognize error

1:9-12

7) Discern leaders who love preeminence

1:9

8) Remember malicious words of those who reject messengers of the truth

1:10

9) follow not that which is evil, but that which is good

1:11

10) am witness of those who have a good report of all and of the truth itself

1:12

Part 4 Say goodbye

1:13-14

11) speak face to face

1:13

12) desire peace on others and greet friends by name

1:14

Prayers of the Bible

None. It is about our WALK based on truth (6x) and love (2x). However, for a good walk and healthy soul, our prayer life must be healthy.

3 John

1:1-2 *John Loves Gaius*

(1) ¹ The elder to the well-beloved Gaius, whom I love in [the] truth. ² Beloved, I wish above all things that you may prosper and be in health, even as your **soul** prospers.

Note: The financial and physical welfare of others should be of concern to us. However much more important is their soul or their spiritual vitality. The difference between our soul and spirit, Hebrews 4:12. Consider souls prospering in your personal prayer list. /1 Tim 4, 4x. Vaticanus omits the 3 pastoral letters, plus Genesis 1-48 and all of Revelation/ /not a pastor or missionary, but a mature believer

1:3-8 *John Rejoices for Gaius*

(2) ³ For I rejoiced greatly, when [the] brethren came and **testified** of the truth that is in you, even as you walk in the truth. ⁴ I have no greater joy than to hear that **my children** walk in truth.

⁵ Beloved, do faithfully whatsoever you do to the brethren, and to strangers; ⁶ Which have **borne witness** of your charity before the congregation: whom if you bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, you shall do well: ⁷ Because that for his name's sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles. ⁸ We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

Q – What truth is greatly rejoiced in?

A – In the truth of Christ. Acts 4:12. The truth includes salvation and walking with Christ for Lord.

Application: I rejoice greatly when I hear and see brethren walking in the truth. /itinerant preachers rcvd support from other believers, or themselves, or both/

1:9-10 *John Warns Gaius (and the local church)*

(3) ⁹ **I wrote** to the congregation: but **Diotrephes**, who loves to have the preeminence among them, **receives us not**. ¹⁰ Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he does, **prating** against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither does he himself receive the brethren, and forbids them that would, and casts them out of the congregation.

Note: Diotrephes was judged because his life was a contradiction to the truth of the Gospel. The gospel that saves us daily from our old man, our culture, and philosophy, Ro 6-8/ church is congregation.

1:11-12 *John Commends Demetrius*

¹¹ Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but [follow] that which is good. He that does good is of God: but he that does evil has not seen God. ¹² **Demetrius** has good **report** of all, and of the truth itself: yes, and we bear **record**; and ye know that our record is true.

Q – Is Diotrephes a leader in the local congregation? Have you known a Diotrephes? They must be center stage, they brag of their accomplishments, they brag about how the Lord has used them, they brag about who they know, etc. They are proudful.

A – Yes. He has the ability and resources where he thinks he that must be first. A "Christian" leader that casts out brethren because of personal differences (not moral nor doctrinal) in an unbiblical manner is following the ways of Diotrephes because he/she loves preeminence. This is an important passage to understand church government.

1:13-14 *John Loves Gaius*

(4) ¹³ I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write to you: ¹⁴ But I trust I shall shortly see you, and we shall speak face to face. Peace to you. [Our] friends salute you. Greet the friends by name.

Q – What is the best interaction for fellowship?

A – Face to face. Hear-write-phone-internet. And by name.

Application: I love continual fellowship with God the Father, Jesus the Son, and the Holy Spirit. I also love fellowship with other believers as we serve our God and others. /hospitality and support/

Jude (1-4, 4 min) 2020

Bible TOC [Next / Previous Book](#)

Gems

12 Helps to Present Ourselves Faultless

Purpose: Prepare believers to stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ and receive rewards and crowns after their death and before Christ returns to reign on the earth. Jude is a preface to Revelation, written around 65 AD.

Theme: Recognize the apostate in the local church (tares among the wheat - Judas is an example) and how to present ourselves faultless (1-3, 20-25) It is written, the apostasy will increase.

2 Thessalonians 2:2 "That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. 2 Thessalonians 2:3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;"

Key Passage: Christian: ²⁴ Now to him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present [you] faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy. Jewish: *the Apostate Trinity* ¹¹ Woe to them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the ^b error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the ^c opposing of Core.

Background: The writer Jude, a brother of James (Matthew 13:55) the same writer of the book of James. What identifies Jude is not his position, but this letter, the most condensed spiritual survey of the Bible that exists. Jude is deep in Old Testament (warnings) and New Testament (encouragements), where his Jewish roots blend into the "faith once delivered onto the saints."

I can present myself faultless at the Judgment Seat of Christ as I:

Scripture

- | | |
|--|-----|
| 1) Take the role of a servant-leader | 1a |
| 2) Take confidence in my eternal position of being "sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, called" | 1b |
| 3) Help other believers build up their most holy faith | 20a |
| 6) Pray in the Holy Spirit | 20b |
| 7) Keep myself in the love of God (1 John) | 21a |
| 8) Look for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to eternal life | 21b |
| 9) On some have compassion, making a difference (for the lost) | 22 |
| 10) On others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh (for the saved) (verse 10-11) | 23 |
| <u>As I do all the above I will:</u> | |
| 11) be presented faultless before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy | 24 |
| 12) Give praise to the only wise God our Savior, glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen. | 25 |

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES * Comments
Jude 1:20	All	God's Will			In the Holy Spirit

Jude

12 Helps to Prevent Falling

<u>I can prevent falling in this earthly body as I:</u>	<u>Scripture</u>
1) DO <u>Beware</u> of ungodly men turning the grace of God into lasciviousness	4
2) DO Remember our initial salvation and understand the loss of unbelief Note: OT – nation vs NT – individuals (Hebrews 3:16-19)	5
3) DO <u>Remember</u> the judgment of the fallen angels and Sodom and Gomorrah	6-7
4) DO NOT <u>despise</u> dominion and speak evil of dignitaries (but pray for them)	8
5) DO <u>Keep simple faith</u> concerning the devil (don't give him your time)	9-10
6) DO <u>Avoid</u> the way of Cain (religion, or false priest)	11a
7) DO <u>Avoid</u> the error of Balaam (money-sex, or false prophet)	11b
8) DO <u>Avoid</u> the opposing of Core (politics, or false king)	11c
9) DO <u>Beware</u> of deceivers among the believers	12-13
10) DO NOT <u>murmur, complain</u> , walk after my own desires, or speak for personal advantage for man's admiration	14-16

As I prevent all the above I will:

11) DO Remember there shall be mockers who walk after themselves	17-18
12) DO <u>Recognize</u> those who separate themselves, having not the Holy Spirit	19

vs. 11: Idolatry of vs. 11 is inward (Ephesians 5:5, Colossians 3:5, 1 John 5:21)

Comparisons:

<u>Jude</u>	<u>2 Peter</u>	<u>Revelation</u>	<u>OT Shadows</u>	<u>NT Substance</u>
1-3	1	2-3	Joshua	Ro 6 spiritual - present
4-19	2	6-18	Judges	Ro 7 carnal/natural-present
20-25	3	19-22	Ruth	Ro 8 spiritual - future

Compare to the book of James. The letter of James is a paradox to his brother Jude's writing. Both are inspired.

James explains "good works" as evidence of a saving faith, where Jude explains "evil works" as evidence of an apostate faith.

Keep our full reward (1-3, 20-25) or let deception take away our full reward (4-19) Colossians 2:16-21.

Mercy is not getting what we deserve and grace is getting what we do not deserve. This is a letter of mercy. Mentioned at the beginning and end. Grace is not mentioned – trademark of the apostle Paul.

Old Testament comparison: Obadiah is one chapter. In our spiritual warfare another tactic of the enemy. Apostates – imposters. Separate the wheat from the chaff. Not I'm ok – You're OK. The Lord separates at the end. The local church should separate wheat from tares – Christ will in the future. Wisdom – Judas was an apostate.

Outline of Jude

Vs.	F-S-H	Good	QUALITIES	Evil	QUALITIES
1-3	F1, S2	Jude, brother of James, them	¹ 1 - sanctified, 2 - preserved, 3 - called (Mk 6:3)		
2		You	² Mercy , peace and love		
3		Beloved , saints it was needful	³ Common salvation, earnestly contend for the faith		
4	F2, S1			Certain men	¹ Crept in unaware, ordained to condemnation, turning grace into lasciviousness (2 Peter 2)
5	F1	Remind you 1 Cor 10:1-6	⁴ (Exodus) saved the people out of Egypt	1 - Israel	(Numbers) afterward destroyed them that believed not .
6-13	F1		(Genesis)	2 - Angels	² Everlasting chains, darkness, judgment of the great day
7			(Genesis)	3 - Sodom & Gomorrah	³ Sexual immorality, eternal fire
8			(Genesis)	These	⁴ Dreamers, defiled, reject authority, speak evil of dignitaries
9	F1	Michael the archangel	(Deuteronomy) <i>body of Moses</i>	Devil	⁵ Disputed . How? Why?
10				These, they	⁶ Speak evil, naturally like brute beasts, corrupt
11			(Genesis, Numbers)	1- Cain 2- Balaam 3 - Korah	⁷ Way Woe to them Profit Rebellion
12			Ephesians 4:12-15	These, they	⁸ Spots, clouds w/o water, w/o fear, serve self, 2x dead (Rev 12:4) puffed up, w/o fruit
13				They	⁹ Raging waves, shame, wandering stars, reserved blackness of darkness forever
14-15	S1	Enoch – 7th from Adam	⁵ (Genesis) 1 st prophecy of 2 nd coming of Jesus		
15	S1	Saints (holy angels)	⁶ Execute judgment		Ungodly – 4x (also vs 1, 18) Men, deeds, committed, lusts
16				These	¹⁰ Grumblers, complaining, Flattery
17	S1	beloved, apostles	Remember ye		
18-19		They, you		Their	¹¹ Mockers, last time, own ungodly lusts
19	H1			These	¹¹ Have not the spirit. Sensual , divisions
20-21	H1	Beloved	⁷ Building yourselves up, praying in the Holy Spirit		
21	F1, S1	Yourselves	⁸ Keep in the love of God, looking for mercy		
22-23		Some	⁹ Have compassion		
23		Others	¹⁰ Save with fear, pulling out of fire, hating defiled flesh		
24-25	F2	You (2 Pet 1:10-13)	¹¹ Keep from stumbling, present faultless with exceeding joy		
25	F1	Our only wise God	¹² be glory, majesty, dominion, power, now &		

Legend: Green – go, Yellow – caution, Red – stop. Blue – key verse. F-S-H: Father-Son-Holy Spirit

Jude

1:1-3 **Assurance of the Believer**

(1) ¹ Jude, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are ^a sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, [and] called: ² **Mercy to you, and peace, and love, be multiplied.** ³ Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write to you of the **common** salvation, it was needful for me to write to you, and exhort [you] that ye should earnestly ^b **contend** for the faith which was **once** delivered to the saints.

^a This is the 1st of several trilogies in the book of Jude. Vs. 1: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, vs. 2: mercy, peace, and love, vs. 3: exhort, contend, once. Although the trilogy in verse 3 is sublime, it reveals how the natural mind thinks in one direction, which seems right, but is changed by the wisdom and inspiration of God to express what is "needful." **The word contend is in the sense of standing up for, not being unseen or unheard, or living and dying for the truth by denying self and taking up the cross.**

^b wrestle or struggle for. In defensive or offensive posture against the apostate church in vs 4-19.

1:4 **Apostate Described** (*apostle similar to 2 Peter 2*)

(2) ⁴ For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly, turning the grace of our God into ^a lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

^a lasciviousness – moral looseness. Ephesians 5 clarifies this for the New Testament believer.

1:5-7 **Apostate Old Testament History**

⁵ I will therefore put you in **remembrance**, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord, ^a having saved the people out of the land of **Egypt**, afterward destroyed them that believed not. ⁶ And ^b the **angels which kept not their first estate**, but left their own habitation, he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness to the judgment of the great day. ⁷ Even as ^c **Sodom and Gomorrah**, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

^a Hebrews 4 - Delivered by God. On Earth–Congregation of Called-out Ones. In the wilderness, 1 Cor 10.

^b Angels - Worshipers of God. Gen 6:1-4 or Is 14:12-15 / Ezl 28:11-19. In Heaven – Fallen Angels, 2 Pe 2:14. From Rev 12:4, we know that angels, likely a third of them, followed after Satan. Not asexual.

^c Sodom & Gomorrah – Blessed of God. Gen 15. Prosperous. On Earth – Followers of Other Gods. City.

1:8-10 **Apostate Supernatural** (*8 is linking verse*)

⁸ Likewise also these [filthy] dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

⁹ Yet **Michael the archangel**, when contending with the devil he disputed about the **body of Moses**, did not dare to bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke you. ¹⁰ But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

1:11 **Apostate Trinity**

(3) ¹¹ Woe to them! for they have gone in the ^a **way of Cain**, and ran greedily after the ^b **error of Balaam** for reward, and perished in the ^c **opposing of Core**.

^a Cain had **anger** due to jealousy. The root of unbelief caused bitterness that grew until division and death. Unforgiving. Genesis 5. Works of own way (religion) vs. faith in God's way (relation). / not

Jude

physical idolatry, but moral from the heart idolatry / Hebrews 12:15 Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble *you*, and thereby many be defiled;

^b Balaam had **greed** for personal gain. He prophesied of Messiah's birth. Numbers 22-24. Some truth at times came out of him. To mix truth and error is a common device of false Christians. i.e. Joel Osteen, Joyce Meyers, and others.

^c Core had **envy**. He wanted prominence and power over Moses. Numbers 16. The earth swallowed up his family.

1:12-13 *Apostate Ways*

¹² These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds [they are] without water, **carried about of winds**; trees whose fruit withereth, **without fruit**, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; ¹³ Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; **wandering stars**, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

^d Without fear, without rain, without fruit – 3 qualities that begin with the lack of the fear of the Lord.

^e Clouds without rain, trees without fruit, raging waves – 3 earthly illustrations. Then the fallen angels as wandering stars.

1:14-16 *Apostate Old Testament Prophecy*

¹⁴ **Enoch** also, the **seventh from Adam**, prophesied of these, saying, "Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of his ^f saints, ¹⁵ To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard [speeches] which ungodly sinners have spoken against him." ¹⁶ These **are murmurers, complainers**, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaks great swelling [words], having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

^f Saints = holy angels in context of the whole Bible (compare De 33:2; Da 7:10; Zec 14:5; Mt 25:31; Heb 12:22).

1:17-19 *Apostate Described*

¹⁷ But, beloved, **remember** ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; ¹⁸ How that ⁹ they told you there should be **mockers in the last time**, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. ¹⁹ These be they who separate themselves, sensual, **having not the Spirit**.

⁹ Paul in 2 Timothy 3:1-9, Peter in 2 Peter 2-3.

1:20-25 *Assurance of the Believer with 4 looks*

(4) ²⁰ But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, ²¹ **Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to eternal life.** ²² And of some have compassion, making a difference: ²³ And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh. ²⁴ Now to him that is able to ^a keep you from falling, and to present [you] faultless before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy, ²⁵ To the only wise God our Savior, [be] glory and majesty, dominion and authority, both now and ever. Amen.

^a The great F. B. Meyer remarks about the expression "kept by Jesus," saying, "Kept is the keynote of this Epistle. It occurs in Jude 1:1; 1:6; 1:21, and in another form in Jude 1:24." ⁷ Indeed, the Lord makes a great promise in this last verse, that he is perfectly able to keep us from falling and preserve us through the end of the age.

The Four Looks: Vs 20-21 Inward (trinity) Vs 22-23 Outward (lost-saved) Vs 24 Forward Vs 25 Upward

Revelation (22-53, 1.25 hr) 2019

Bible TOC

Previous Book

Gems

Church: 1 2 3 After Rapture: 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18

Return of Jesus Christ: 19 20 New Jerusalem: 21 22 (22:6-21 Church)

12 Blessings from God and His people

Key phrases: "Faithful and true" 3:14, 19:11, 21:5, 22:6. "Blessed" 7x, "blessing" 3x.
 "Testimony of Jesus" 9x, 1:2, 1:9, 6:9, 11:7, 12:11, 12:17, 19:10 (2x), 20:4

We are blessed as we:

Scripture

- 1) **Read, hear** and **keep** those things written in this prophecy (22:14, John 13:17) 1:3
- 2) Have an ear that **hears** what the Holy Spirit says (7x) 2-3
- 3) Are **overcomers** and given eternal promises (7x) 2-3
- 4) Say praise to the **Lamb** that is worthy (7 words) 5:12
- 5) Say praise to our **God** forever and ever (7 words) 7:12
- 6) Die in the Lord and rest from our **labor**; and our **works** follow us (1 Cor 3:11-14) 14:13
- 7) **Watch** for his return and keep our garments white, therefore not ashamed (Eph 5) 16:15
- 8) Are **called** unto the marriage supper of the Lamb (3:20, Mt 22:2-14, 1 Cor 11:17-34) 19:9
- 9) Take part in the **first resurrection** (Hebrews 6:1-2) 20:6
- 10) **See** the holy city, new Jerusalem, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband 22:2
- 11) **Keep** the sayings of the prophecy of this book (Revelation) 22:7
- 12) **Do** his commandments and have the right to the **tree of life** (12) (1:3, 22:7, 22:2) 22:14

Prayers of the Bible

SCRIPTURE	FORM(S)	PURPOSE	HINDRANCES	AIDS	WHO / TYPES
Revelation 3:20	Conversation	Communion On Earth		Open Door of Heart	Definition of Prayer
Revelation 4:8-9	Praise Worship	In Heaven			4 Creatures
Revelation 4:10-11	Praise Worship	In Heaven			24 Elders
Revelation 5:8	Prayers Worship	In Heaven		Bowls of incense	Prayers of saints
Revelation 5:11-12	Praise Worship	In Heaven			Angels
Revelation 5:13	Praise Worship	In Heaven			Every Creature
Revelation 5:14	Praise Worship	In Heaven			24 Elders
Revelation 8:1-6	Prayers	In Heaven, 7 th seal		Bowl filled with fire	Prayers of all saints
Revelation 11:15-17	Praise Worship	In Heaven		Fell on faces	24 Elders
Revelation 19:1-26	Praise Worship	In Heaven			

Rev 1:3. Blessed to read, hear, and keep those things written Chapters 1-3, 21-22 are for the churches. Chapters 3-20 are for Israel.

Outline I of Revelation "The revealing, unveiling, unfolding"

Background. This is the culminating book of the Bible, which is the most orderly and based on the other 65 books. It gives us an eternal sense of fear in chapters 1-3 and hope in chapters 20-22. Everything that begins in Genesis – ends in Revelation. Some examples follow:

Gen	Beginning	Rev	Ending	Notes
1:1	Heaven created	21:1	Heaven passes away	First heaven where the birds fly and we breathe
1:1	Earth created	21:1	Earth passes away	New earth
1:2	Seas created	21:1	No more seas	Always represented sin of mankind
1:5	Night began	21:25	No more night	Christ is the light
1:16	Sun created	21:23	No need for sun	Christ is the sun
2:10	Rivers for Garden of Eden	22:1	River for New Jerusalem	Trees with leaves for the healing of the nations
2:18	Marriage of 1 st Adam	19:7	Marriage of Last Adam	We are the Shulamite woman, engaged now
3:7	Sin entered	21-22	End of sin	No more presence of sin
3:14	Curse begun	22:14	No more curse	Satan and his angels judged
3:19	Death entered	21:4	No more death	Satan and his angels judged
3:24	Tree of life guarded	22:14	Tree of life access	To perfect what not perfected on earth
9:11	Judgment by water	20:15	Judgment by fire	To the earth (2 Peter 3:10)
11	Babylon made	17-18	Babylon destroyed	The tale of 2 cities
14:18	Old Jerusalem	21-22	New Jerusalem	The tale of 2 cities

O.T. Comparisons: All of the O.T., especially the 17 prophetic books.

Prophecy is sealed in Daniel (12:3), mystery in Matthew 13 and unsealed in Revelation (22:10)

	<u>Revelation</u>
Part 1) Things which you have seen and the things which are (1:19)	1-3
Introduction & the glorified Christ is described (1:19 "things you have seen")	1
A four-fold view of the inspection report of the churches (1:19 "things which are")	2-3
1 st Then 2 nd Present (all congregations-my congregation), 3 rd personally,	
4 th Future periods of time in the history of the church. See Gems .	
Part 2) Things which shall be hereafter (1:19)	4-22
The throne in heaven	4
The Lamb on the throne	5
The seven seals judgment (4 horsemen)	6
6+1 (144,000 & great multitude)	7
The seven trumpet judgments	8-9
6+1 (The mighty angel and 2 witnesses)	10-11
The woman, dragon & 2 beasts	12-13
144,000 & 3 angels	14
The seven bowl judgments	15-16
Religious Babylon (woman on the beast)	17
Commercial Babylon	18
The return of Christ and his millennial reign	19-20
The New Jerusalem	21-22:5
Epilogue	22:6-21

DIVINE NUMBERS IN THE REVELATION			
Seven (completeness)	Scripture	Twelve (Govt)	Scripture
Fold Spirit	1:4 (Isaiah 11:2)	Elders (2x12=24)	4:4, 10 ; 5:8-10, 14; 7:11; 19:4
Churches	1:11, 20	Israel 12x12=144)	7:1-8
Candlesticks (churches)	1:12, 20; 2:1	Stars (12)	12:1
Stars (angels)	1:16, 19, 20 (2x); 2:1	New Jerusalem	
Lamps-Spirits	4:5	Gates (3x4=12)	21:12-13, 21
Seals – Lamb of God	5:1, 6:1-8:1	Foundations (12)	21:14, 19-20
Horns, eyes, Spirits	5:6	City (12K)	21:15-16
Trumpets – Angels	8:2-11:19	Walls (144 cubit)	21:17-18
Heads with Crowns	12:3 (great red dragon)	Fruit (12)	22:2
Bowls – Angels	15:1-18:24	Names of Christ (24)	chapters 1-3
Beatitudes (blessed)	1:3; 13:14; 16:15; 19:9; 20:6-7; 22:7,14		
Other Numbers			
Two Witnesses	11:1-14	Ten Horns	12:3 (great red dragon)
Three unholy godhead	12:3-13:18; 19:19-20:15 (dragon – devil - Satan, beast - antichrist, false prophet)		
Four Beasts	4:6-9; 5:8-10, 14; 6:1; 7:11; 19:4	Four Horses	6:2-8

Revelation Chapter 1

Part 1 Jesus Christ (Present and Future)

1:1-3 God uses Angels, Jesus, and the Written Word to Bless Us

(1) ¹ The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto Him, to show to His servants things which must shortly come to pass; and He sent and signified [it] by His angel unto His servant John: ² Who bare record of the Word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw. ³ Blessed is he that reads, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

Q1 – Is God using angels more than other books of the Bible significant (53 times, Acts with 20 x)?

A1 – Yes, because Revelation tells us future things directly from God through angels and Jesus, and without prophets. This last book of the 66 books of all Bible was the last book canonized by the early church. It must be interpreted literally like the rest of the Bible, except through the eyes of the Apostle John in his time.

Q2 – Is God referring to the "testimony of Jesus Christ" only in the book of Revelation significant (5 times, 9x, 1:2, 1:9, 12:17, 19:10 (2x))? (Revelation 1:2)

A1 – Yes, because this book is inspired, preserved, and profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, and for instruction in righteousness (2 Timothy 3:16).

Q3 – Is the promise of blessing to everyone who reads, hears, and keeps the written words significant? (Rev 1:3)

A1 – Yes, because anyone can read Revelation as well as any book of the Bible, however only the born-again believer hears and believes the words as the only truth from the God of Heaven.

A2 – Yes, we are blessed as we read, hear, and keep the words written in the book of Revelation. This is the only book has such a promise. Blessed is used 7 times (1:3; 13:14; 16:15; 19:9; 20:6-7; 22:7,14).

Application: I must read, hear, and most important, keep the words written in the book of Revelation to be blessed. I trust that the angels, Jesus, and the written word will bless.

1:4-20 I AM Speaks to Israel (4-8) then to the Seven Churches (9-20) (seven is 12x)

(2) ⁴ John to the seven churches which are in Asia: Grace [be] unto you, and peace, from Him which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven Spirits /Is 11:2/ which are before His throne; ⁵ And from Jesus Christ, [who is] the faithful witness, [and] the first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth. To Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood, ⁶ And has made us kings and priests to God and His Father; to Him [be] glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. ⁷ Behold, He comes with clouds; and every eye shall see Him, and they [also] which pierced Him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen. ⁸ **I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, says the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.**

Note: Almighty speaks of God 44x in the OT and 10x in the NT, Rev 9x. See 2 Cor 6:14-18 for application today. God speaks first to Israel (1:4-8) then to the gentiles (1:9-11)

(3) ⁹ I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the Word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ. ¹⁰ I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet, ¹¹ Saying, **I AM Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What you see, write in a book, and send [it] to the seven churches which are in Asia; to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea.**

1:12-20 The Description of the Risen Christ Ready to Reign as a Judicial King

(4) ¹² And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden lampstands; ¹³ And in the midst of the seven lampstands [one] like to the Son of Man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the chest with a golden girdle. ¹⁴ His head and [His] hairs [were] white like wool, as white as snow; and His eyes [were] as a flame of fire; ¹⁵ And His feet like to fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and His voice as the sound of many waters. ¹⁶ And He had in His right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and His countenance

Revelation Chapter 1

was as the sun shines in His strength. ¹⁷ And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying to me, **Fear not; I am the first and the last:** ¹⁸ **I [am] He that lives, and was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of Hades and of death.** ¹⁹ **Write the things which you have seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter;** ²⁰ **The mystery of the seven stars which you saw in My right hand, and the seven golden lampstands. The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven lampstands which you saw are the seven churches.**

Note: 1 Cor 15:55 grave - body, hades in Greek - soul, grave - body, hades now - hell future.

Revelation Chapter 2

The 7 Letters to the 7 Churches (Past, Present & Future - personal and local church)

2:1-7 1st Church of 7 is Ephesus, + / -, Acts 18-20

(5) ¹ **To the angel of the congregation of Ephesus write; These things says he that holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden lampstands;** ² **I know your works,** and your labor, and your patience, and how you cannot bear them which are evil: and you have tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and has found them liars: ³ **And has borne, and has patience, and for my name's sake has labored, and has not fainted.** ⁴ **Nevertheless I have [somewhat] against you, because you have left your first love.** ⁵ **Remember therefore from whence you are fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come to you quickly, and will remove your lampstand out of his place, except you repent.** ⁶ **But this you have, that you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.** ⁷ **He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches;** To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

Q1 - What is unique to the church at Ephesus?

A1 - The name Ephesus means "let go or relax" and it represents the early church from 50-150 AD.

Q2 - What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1 (1:16)?

A1 - He that holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; (2:1)

Q3 - What works are commended? Nine works are commended by the fruit inspector in verses 2-3 and 6.

A1 - I know your works, and your labor, and your patience, and how you cannot bear them which are evil: and you have tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and has found them liars: And has borne, and has patience, and for my name's sake has labored, and has not fainted. (false apostles in 2 Corinthians 11, Acts 20)

A2 - But this you have, that you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. (Acts 18, letter to the Ephesians). The deeds of the Nicolaitans are their rule over the laity.

Q4 - What works need correction?

A1 - Nevertheless I have somewhat against you, because you have left your first love. Remember therefore from when you are fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto you quickly, and will remove your candlestick out of his place, except you repent.

A2 - Our candlestick is removed by physical death as spoken of in James 1:13-15 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempts he any man: But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it brings forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bring forth death. This is not losing your salvation, but losing your good works at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

Application: I have ears that hear and look forward to being an overcomer and eating of the tree of life. (Revelation 22:2, 14, Genesis 2:9, 16-17, 3:1-8). I will not lose my first love and help others with the same.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us apply the Scripture to ourselves first, then our local church, and our times.

Revelation Chapter 2

2:8-11 **2nd Church of 7 is Smyrna, +**

(6) ⁸ And to the angel of the congregation in Smyrna write; These things says the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; ⁹ **I know your works**, and tribulation, and poverty, (but you are rich) and [I know] the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan. ¹⁰ Fear none of those things which you shall allow: behold, the devil shall cast [some] of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be faithful to death, and I will give you a crown of life. ¹¹ He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches; He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.

Q1 – What is unique to the church at Smyrna?

A – The name Smyrna means “myrrh or bitter” and it represents the early church from 150-312 AD, or the anti-nicene fathers.

Q2 – What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1 (1:18)?

A – The first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; (2:8)

Q3 – What works are commended? Being faithful to God, which includes everything in verses 9-10.

A1 – I know your works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but you are rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan. Fear none of those things which you shall allow: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be you faithful unto death, and I will give you a crown of life

A2 – Tribulation 10 days: Roman Emperors: Nero 64 AD to Diocletian 310 AD, last 10 years most fierce persecution. Possibly 10 emperors that persecuted the Christ followers.

A3 – This church is rich inwardly and toward God. This is the persecuted church with martyrs of all time.

Q4 – What works need correction?

A – None. This is a church that blesses God. We should look for and be part of this type of church.

Application: I have ears that hear and am an overcomer that is not hurt by the second death (Rev 2:11).

2:12-17 **3rd Church of 7 is Pergamos, - / +**

(7) ¹² And to the angel of the congregation in Pergamos write; These things says he which has the sharp sword with two edges; ¹³ **I know your works**, and where you dwell, [even] where Satan's seat is: and you hold fast my name, and has not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwells. ¹⁴ But I have a few things against you, because you have there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to commit fornication. ¹⁵ So have you also them that hold the **doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate**. ¹⁶ Repent; or else I will come to you quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. ¹⁷ He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knows saving he that receives [it].

Q1 – What is unique to the church at Pergamos?

A1 – The name Pergamos means “mixed marriage” and it represents the early church from 312-605 AD, or the Nicene fathers.

Q2 – What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1? (1:16)

A1 – He which has the sharp sword with two edges; (2:12)

Q3 – What works are commended? (2:13)

A1 – You dwell where Satan's seat is: and you hold fast my name, and has not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwells.

A2 – Pulpit Commentary “The repetition of “where Satan dwelleth” emphasizes this point, like the repetition of “repent” in ver. 5. It rather confirms the view that by “Satan's throne” is meant the judgment throne where the martyrs were condemned.”

A3 – On March 12, 2000, Pope John Paul II ADMITTED the Roman Catholic Church KILLED the Christians.

Revelation Chapter 2

Q4 – What works need correction? (2:14-16)

A1 – But I have a few things against you, because you have there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. So hast you also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto you quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. (Nicolaitans – rule over the laity)

A2 – As Balaam went against God's people in Numbers 22-25 so the Roman Empire government church opposed the true church of small groups of believers at various locations and times.

A3 – Commentator and Baptist Pastor John Gill wrote, "in this period of time, through their opposition to the popes of Rome; for Antipas is the contraction of Antipater, and is the same with Antipapas, or Antipappas, which signifies one that is against the pope, an opposer of that holy father; and so intends all those that made head against him, upon his rising and revelation, and when he assumed the power he did to himself; such as the Waldenses and Albigenses particularly, who set themselves against him, openly declared that the pope was antichrist, and that his government was tyrannical, and his doctrines the doctrines of devils, abominable and fabulous."

Application: I have ears that hear and am an overcomer that will eat the hidden manna and will receive a white stone with a new name written which no man knows except for me. (Revelation 2:17).

2:18-28 4th Church of 7 is Thyatira, -, +

(8) ¹⁸ And to the angel of the congregation in Thyatira write; These things says the **Son of God**, who has His eyes like to a flame of ^a **fire**, and his feet are like fine **brass**; ¹⁹ **I know your works**, and charity, and service, and faith, and your patience, and your works; and the last [to be] more than the first.

²⁰ Notwithstanding I have a few things against you, because you allow that woman **Jezebel, which calls herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed to idols.** ²¹ And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.

²² Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. ²³ And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searches the reins and hearts: and I will give to every one of you according to your works.

²⁴ But to you I say, and to the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. ²⁵ But that which ye have [already] hold fast till I come. ²⁶ And he that overcomes, and keeps My works to the end, **to Him will I give authority over the nations:** ²⁷ **And He shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter they will be broken to shivers:** even as I received of My Father. ²⁸ And I will give him the morning star.

²⁹ He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

^a Fire and brass are symbols of Judgment, similar to chapter 1.

Q1 – What is unique to the church at Pergamos?

A1 – The name Thyatira means Daughter between 605-1519 AD

Q2 – What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1? (1:13-15)

A1 – The Son of God, who has his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; (2:18)

A2 – Eyes of fire that judge and purify, feet of brass representing right judgment.

Q3 – What works are commended?

A1 – Charity, and service, and faith, and your patience, and your works; and the last works more than the first. (2:19) The last works in this period of time are the works of known leaders like John Wycliff, and John Huss, and other small groups of Christ followers like the Lloards, Waldenses, and Albigenses.

A2 – as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. But that which ye have [already] hold fast till I come. (2:24-25) Some churches have deceptive doctrines that come from the depths of Satan. This is a great burden which Jesus understands and asks us to stand firm until we die or He returns.

Note: Rev 26b-27a. vs 26b-Ps 2:8, Rev 3:21, 20:4.

vs 27a-Ps 2:9, Rev 12:5, 19:15, Is 30:14, Jer 19:11.

Revelation Chapter 2

Q4 – What works need correction?

A1 – Notwithstanding I have a few things against you, because you allow that woman Jezebel, which calls herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed to idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searches the reins and hearts: and I will give to every one of you according to your works. (2:20-23)

A2 – Jezebel is a wicked leader of the church which represents the popery. Even the false teachers are judged according to their works. Many Protestants suffered torture or death due to being called a heretic because they would not follow the false teachings of the Roman Empire and pope controlled church.

A3 – Many ancients wrote that Jezebel was the wife of the pastor at the church of Thyatira (John Wesley Commentary).

A4 – The pastor of local church allowed the false doctrines of the culture of the day to be taught. Pastors must protect the sheep from manmade systems of religion.

Application: I have ears that hear and am an overcomer and keep my works unto the end, have power over the nations: And I shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter they will be broken to shivers: even as I receive of my Father. And I will receive the morning star. (2:26-29). My last works at the end of my life will greater than the works when I first entered the new life in Christ. (2:19) I will help others mature in Christ as I mature in Christ.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us apply the Scripture to ourselves first, then our local church and our times.

Revelation Chapter 3

3:1-6 **5th Church of 7 is Sardis, -, +**

(9) ¹ And to the angel of the congregation in Sardis write; **These things says he that has the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know your works, that you have a name that you live, and are dead.**

² **Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found your works perfect before God.** ³ **Remember therefore how you have received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore you shall not watch, I will come on you as a thief, and you shall not know what hour I will come upon you.** ⁴ **You have a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.** ⁵ **He that overcomes, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.** ⁶ **He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.**

Q1 – What is unique to the church at Sardis?

A1 – The name Sardis means Escaping One between 1520-1749 AD. This represents the Reformation through the 1st Great Awakening. Governments, kings, and some doctrines kept a complete break-away from the Catholic Church. One doctrine is being saved by infant baptism, which is the reason why Jonathan Edwards was voted out of his church.

Q2 – What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1? (1:4)

A1 – He that has the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; (3:1)

Q3 – What works are commended?

A1 – You have a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy. (3:4)

Note: Defiled garments represents believers that do not grow spiritually and stay children in the faith.

Q4 – What works need correction?

A1 – that you have a name that you live, and are dead. ² Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, for I have not found your works mature before God. (3:1b-2)

Revelation Chapter 3

Note: God's design for every believer is that their works are mature from growing in Christ all our days until Christ's return or our death.

A2 – Remember therefore how you have received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore you shall not watch, I will come on you as a thief, and you shall not know what hour I will come upon you. (3:3)

Note: This is a call for all believers who are not mature in Christ or not growing spiritually, to repent of their sin.

Application: I have ears that hear and am an overcomer who shall be clothed in white raiment; and my name will not be blotted out of the book of life, and I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. (3:5-6)

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us apply the Scripture to ourselves first, then our local church and our times.

3:7-13 6th Church of 7 is Philadelphia, +

(10) ⁷ And to the angel of the congregation in Philadelphia write; **These things says he that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens, and no man shuts; and shuts, and no man opens;** ⁸ **I know your works:** behold, I have set before you an open door, and no man can shut it: for you have a little strength, and has kept my word, and has not denied my name. ⁹ Behold, I will make them of the **synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews**, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you. ¹⁰ Because you have kept the word of my patience, I also will keep you from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. ¹¹ Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which you have, that no man take your crown. ¹² Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, [which is] new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God: and [I will write upon him] my new name. ¹³ He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

Q1 – What is unique to the church at Philadelphia?

A1 – The name Philadelphia means Brotherly Love between 1750-1900 AD. This represents the time of the second great awakening and the great missionary movement of the U.S.

Q2 – What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1? (1:18)

A1 – He that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens, and no man shuts; and shuts, and no man opens; (3:7)

Q3 – What works are commended?

A1 – I know your works: behold, I have set before you an open door, and no man can shut it: for you have a little strength, and have kept my word, and have not denied my name. Because you have kept the word of my patience, I also will keep you from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which you have, that no man take your crown. (3:8, 10-11)

Note: It is important to know that others can take away our crown if we let them.

Q4 – What works need correction?

A1 – Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you. (3:9)

Note: The commentator Matthew Poole says "Those which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie: For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision which is of the flesh; but he is a Jew, which is one inwardly, &c., Ro 2:28-29. By this term also he may mean all false and hypocritical professors, who would make themselves the church, the only church of God, but are far enough from it, hating, maligning, and opposing those who would keep stricter to the rule of the gospel.

Revelation Chapter 3

Application: I have ears that hear and am an overcomer, so I will be a pillar in the temple of my God, and I shall go no more out: and God will write His name upon me, and the name of the city of my God, [which is] new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God: and He will give me a new name. (3:12-13) The overcomer passages build up my hope for what is ahead.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us apply the Scripture to ourselves first, then our local church and our times.

3:14-22 **7th of 7 is Laodicea, /-**

(11) ¹⁴ And to the angel of the congregation of the Laodiceans write; These things says the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; ¹⁵ **I know your works**, that you are neither cold nor hot: I would you were cold or hot. ¹⁶ So then because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of my mouth. ¹⁷ Because you say, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and know not that you are wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: ¹⁸ I counsel you to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed, and [that] the shame of your nakedness does not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye-salve, that you may see. ¹⁹ As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. ²⁰ Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. ²¹ To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. ²² He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says to the churches.

Q1 – What is unique to the church at Philadelphia?

A1 – The name Laodicea means Justice of the People between 1900 to present. (3:14)

Q2 – What is the title of Jesus referred from Revelation 1? (1:5)

A1 – the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; (3:14)

Q3 – What works are commended?

A1 – None.

A2 – Only if we have ears to hear: I counsel you to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed, and [that] the shame of your nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye-salve, that you may see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. (3:18-19) See Job 42:5-6, ⁵ I have heard of you by the hearing of the ear: but now my eye sees you. ⁶ Wherefore I abhor [myself], and repent in dust and ashes.

Q4 – What works need correction?

A1 – I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot: I would you were cold or hot. So then because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of my mouth. Because you say, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and know not that you are wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: (3:15-17)

A2 - There is a real danger to be lukewarm as we approach the return of Jesus Christ to reign on earth.

Application: I know Jesus loves me. I must work to buy gold and white raiment, and anoint my eyes with eye-salve. I must be zealous to repent, because the culture within this church age tends to be lukewarm. I have ears that hear and am an overcomer, Jesus will grant me to sit Him in His throne, even as He also overcame, and set down with His Father in His throne. (3:18-22)

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us apply the Scripture to ourselves first, then our local church and our times.

Revelation 1:9 "the isle that is called Patmos"

The 7 Churches of Asia

Pergamos
Thyatira
Sardis
Smyrna
Philadelphia
Ephesus
Laodicea

THE ISLE OF PATMOS

Patmos

(1) Historical local churches & individuals. (2) Prophetic, universal church periods of time from Ephesus to Laodicea. (3) Present local churches and individuals.

Time and Place

94-96 A.D., The Apostle John in political exile

81-96 A.D. Roman Emperor Domitian

Island of Patmos

Did the Apostle John spend his last years in Ephesus?

When did John write 1, 2, 3 John?

Revelation Chapter 4

4:1-11 The 24 Elders and 4 Beasts at the Throne of God

During the Seven Year Tribulation after the Church is "Forcibly Taken Up"



(12) ¹ After this I looked, and, behold, **a door was opened in heaven**: and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me; which said, **Come up here**, and I will show you things which must be **hereafter**. ² Immediately I was **in the spirit**: and, behold, a **throne** was set **in heaven**, and [one] sat on the throne. ³ And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and [there was] a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an emerald. ⁴ And round about the throne [were] four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold. ⁵ And out of the throne proceeded lightnings and thunderings and voices: and [there were] seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God. ⁶ And before the throne [there was] a sea of glass like to crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, [were] four beasts full of eyes before and behind. ⁷ And the first beast was like **a lion**, and the second beast like **a calf**, and the third beast had a face as **a man**, and the fourth beast was like **a flying eagle**.

(13) ⁸ And the four beasts had each of them six wings about [him]; and [they were] full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying,

"Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come. "

⁹ And when those beasts give glory and honor and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who lives for ever and ever, ¹⁰ The four and twenty **elders fall down before him** that sat on the throne, and worship him that lives for ever and ever, and **cast their crowns before the throne**, saying,

¹¹ "You are worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power: for you have created all things, and for your pleasure they are and were created."

Revelation Chapter 5

5:1-14 The Lamb and the Book with 7 Seals

(14) ¹ Then I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne **a book** written within and on the backside, **sealed with seven seals**. ² And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof? ³ And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. ⁴ And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. ⁵ And one of the elders says to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to ^a open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

^a This same book was shut by the Prophet Daniel (Daniel 12:4) and later eaten by the Apostle John (Rev 10:7-11)

(15) ⁶ And I beheld, and, look, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having **seven horns and seven eyes**, which are the **seven Spirits of God** sent forth into all the earth. ⁷ And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne. ⁸ And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four [and] twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odors, which are the prayers of saints. ⁹ And they sung a new song, saying,

"You are worthy to take the book, and to open its seals: because you was slain, and did purchase us to God by your blood out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation; ¹⁰ And has made us to our God, kings and priests: and we shall reign over the earth."

Revelation Chapter 5

(16) ¹¹ And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands; ¹² Saying with a loud voice,

**“Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power,
and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor,
and glory, and blessing.”**

¹³ And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying,

**“Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, [be] to him that sits on the throne,
and to the Lamb for ever and ever.”**

¹⁴ And the four beasts said, **“Amen.”**

And the **twenty four elders** fell down and worshipped him that lives forever and ever.

Revelation Chapter 6 The Lamb Opens 6 of 7 Seals (Four of the Five Horses in Revelation)

6:1-2 *The 1st Seal Opened (Judgment by the Antichrist)*

(17) ¹ And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see. ² And I saw, and behold a **white horse**: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given to him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

6:3-4 *The 2nd Seal Opened (Judgment by removing Peace)*

³ And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see. ⁴ And there went out another horse [that was] **red**: and [power] was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given to him a great sword.

6:5-6 *The 3rd Seal Opened (Judgment by Famine)*

(18) ⁵ And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and look a **black horse**; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. ⁶ And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and [see] you hurt not the oil and the wine.

6:7-8 *The 4th Seal Opened (Judgment by Death)*

⁷ And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see. ⁸ And I looked, and behold a **pale horse**: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hades followed with him. And authority was given to them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

6:9-11 *The 5th Seal Opened (Martyrdom)*

(19) ⁹ And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the Word of God, and for the testimony which they held: ¹⁰ And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, do you not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? ¹¹ And **white robes** were given to every one of them; and it was said to them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they [were], should be fulfilled.

Revelation Chapter 6

6:12-17 *The 6th Seal Opened (Judgment by geological catastrophes)*

(20) ¹² And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, look, there was a **great earthquake**; and the **sun became black** as sackcloth of hair, and the **moon became as blood**; ¹³ And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, even as a fig tree casts her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind. ¹⁴ And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. ¹⁵ And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every slave, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks of the mountains; ¹⁶ And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sits on the throne, and from the **wrath of the Lamb**: ¹⁷ For the **great day of his wrath is come**; and who shall be able to stand?

Revelation Chapter 7

7:1-17 *The 144,000 Jews Sealed*

(21) ¹ And after these things I saw **four angels** standing on the **four corners of the earth**, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree. ² And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,

³ Saying, **Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.** ⁴ **And I heard the number of them which were sealed: [and there were] sealed a hundred [and] forty [and] four thousand of ^a all the tribes of the children of Israel.**

- ⁵ Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.
- ⁶ Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Nephthalim were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Manasseh were sealed twelve thousand.
- ⁷ Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.
- ⁸ Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand.
Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

^a The tribe of Dan is not here.

(22) ⁹ After this I beheld, and, look, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and languages, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; ¹⁰ And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sits upon the throne, and to the Lamb. ¹¹ And all the angels stood round about the throne, and [about] the elders and the four beasts, and **fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God**, ¹² Saying,

"Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honor, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen."

(23) ¹³ And one of the elders answered, saying to me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they? ¹⁴ And I said unto him, Sir, you know. And he said to me, These are they which came out of **great tribulation**, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. ¹⁵ Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sits on the throne shall dwell among them. ¹⁶ They shall hunger no more, neither thirst anymore; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. ¹⁷ For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them to **living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.**

8:1-6 The 7th Seal Opened (1) then 7 Angels ith 7 Trumpets (2-6)

(24) ¹ And when he had opened the **seventh seal**, there was **silence in heaven about the space of half a hour**. ² And I saw the **seven angels** which stood before God; and to them were given **seven trumpets**. ³ And **another angel came** and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given to him **much incense, that he should offer [it] with the prayers of all saints** upon the golden altar which was before the throne. ⁴ And the smoke of the incense, [which came] with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel's hand. ⁵ And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast [it] into the earth: and there were voices, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake. ⁶ And the **seven angels which had the seven trumpets** prepared themselves to sound.

8:7 The 1st Trumpet Sounded

(25) ⁷ The **first angel** sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

8:8-9 The 2nd Trumpet Sounded

⁸ And the **second angel** sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood; ⁹ And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

8:10-11 The 3rd Trumpet Sounded

(26) ¹⁰ And the **third angel** sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters; ¹¹ And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

8:12 The 4th Trumpet Sounded

¹² And the **fourth angel** sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

8:13 The last 3 Voices of the Trumpets - warning of 3 woes

¹³ And I beheld, and heard an **angel flying through the midst of heaven**, saying with a loud voice,

Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabitants of the earth by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are yet to sound!

9:1-12 The 5th Trumpet Sounded (1st Woe)

(27) ¹ And the **fifth angel** sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven to the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. ² And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. ³ And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and to them was given authority, as the scorpions of the earth have authority. ⁴ And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. ⁵ And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he strikes a man. ⁶ And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. ⁷ And the shapes of the locusts [were] like to horses prepared to battle; and on their heads [were] as it were crowns like gold, and their faces [were] as the faces of men. ⁸ And they had hair as the

Revelation Chapter 9

hair of women, and their teeth were as [the teeth] of lions. ⁹ And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. ¹⁰ And they had tails like to scorpions, and there were stings in their tails: and their authority was to hurt men five months. ¹¹ And they had a king over them, [which is] the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue has [his] name Apollyon. ¹² One woe is past; [and], behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

9:13-21 **The 6th Trumpet Sounded (2nd Woe)**

(28) ¹³ And the **sixth angel** sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, ¹⁴ Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, **Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.** ¹⁵ And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the third part of men. ¹⁶ And the number of the **army of the horsemen [were] two hundred thousand thousand:** and I heard the number of them. ¹⁷ And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone: and the heads of the horses [were] as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire and smoke and brimstone. ¹⁸ By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths. ¹⁹ For their authority is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails [were] like to serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt. ²⁰ And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship ^a demons, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk: ²¹ Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

^a to have a demon, Greek is echei daimonion.

Revelation Chapter 10

10:1-6 **The 7th Angel with the Little Book begins to Sound Trumpet 7**

(29) ¹ And I saw **another mighty angel** come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud: and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire: ² And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and [his] left [foot] on the earth, ³ And cried with a loud voice, as [when] a lion roars: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices. ⁴ And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, **Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.**

(30) ⁵ And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth lifted up his hand to heaven, ⁶ **And swore by him that lives for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer:**

10:7-11 **John Eats the Book**

(31) ⁷ But in the days of the voice of the **seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound**, the mystery of God should be finished, as he has declared to his servants the prophets. ⁸ And the voice which I heard from heaven spoke to me again, and said, **Go [and] take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which stands upon the sea and upon the earth.** ⁹ And I went to the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said to me, **Take [it], and eat it up; and it shall make your belly bitter, but it shall be in your mouth sweet as honey.** ¹⁰ And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter. ¹¹ And he said to me, **You must prophesy again before many peoples, and nations, and languages, and kings.**

11:1-14 The 2 Witnesses

(32) ¹ And there was given me a reed like to a rod: and the angel stood, saying, **Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.** ² **But the court which is outside the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given to the Gentiles: and the holy city they will tread under foot forty [and] two months.** ³ **And I will give [power] to my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred [and] threescore days, clothed in sackcloth.** ⁴ **These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.** ⁵ **And if any man will hurt them, fire proceeds out of their mouth, and devours their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.** ⁶ **These have authority to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.** ⁷ **And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascends out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.**

(33) ⁸ **And their dead bodies [shall lie] in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.** ⁹ **And they of the people and kindreds and languages and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and a half, and shall not allow their dead bodies to be put in graves.** ¹⁰ **And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another; because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.** ¹¹ **And after three days and a half the Spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them.** ¹² **And they heard a great voice from heaven saying to them, "Come up here."** **And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them.** ¹³ **And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.** ¹⁴ **The second woe is past; [and], behold, the third woe cometh quickly.**

11:15-19 The 7th Trumpet Sounded (3rd Woe)

(34) ¹⁵ And the **seventh angel** sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying,

"The kingdoms of this world are become [the kingdoms] of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever."

¹⁶ And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, **fell upon their faces**, and worshipped God, ¹⁷ Saying,

"We give you thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which are, and was, and are to come; because you have taken to you your great power, and has reigned."

¹⁸ And the nations were angry, and your wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that you should give reward to your servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear your name, small and great; and should destroy them which destroy the earth. ¹⁹ And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

12:1-17 **Interlude from 7th Trumpet to 7 vials in chapter 16**

Two Signs

(35) ¹ And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a **woman** clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: ² And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. ³ And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a **great red dragon**, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. ⁴ And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. ⁵ And she brought forth a **man child**, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up to God, and [to] his throne. ⁶ And the **woman** fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred [and] threescore days.

(36) ⁷ And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, ⁸ And prevailed not; neither was their place found anymore in heaven. ⁹ And the **great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan**, which deceives the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. ¹⁰ And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. ¹¹ And **they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives to the death.**

(37) ¹² Therefore rejoice, [ye] heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the **devil** is come down to you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has but a short time. ¹³ And when the **dragon** saw that he was cast to the earth, he persecuted the **woman** which brought forth the **man** [child]. ¹⁴ And to the **woman** were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the **serpent**. ¹⁵ And the **serpent** cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the **woman**, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. ¹⁶ And the earth helped the **woman**, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the **dragon** cast out of his mouth. ¹⁷ And the **dragon** was angry with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which **keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.**

Theme by Frequency: Woman – 20x, Child – 5x and Jesus – 2x, Dragon – 28x

Doctrines: Woman – Israel, Mary or Church, Child – 1st or 2nd Coming,

Dragon – Past (Creation), Present (Jesus 1st Coming), Future (Final during great tribulation period)

Revelation Chapter 13

The Dragon, Beast, and False Prophet

13:1-11 **A Beast from the Sea**

(38) ¹ And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. ² And the **beast** which I saw was like to a leopard, and his feet were as [the feet] of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the **dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority**. ³ And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. ⁴ And **they worshipped the dragon which gave authority to the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like to the beast?** who is able to make war with him? ⁵ And there was given to him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and authority was given to him to continue forty [and] two months. ⁶ And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. ⁷ And it was given to him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and authority was given him over all kindreds, and languages, and nations. ⁸ And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. ⁹ If any man have an ear, let him hear. ¹⁰ He that leads into captivity shall go into captivity: he that kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

Revelation Chapter 13

13:11-18 ***A Beast from the Earth***

(39) ¹¹ And I beheld ^a **another beast coming up out of the earth**; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon. ¹² And **he exercises all the authority of the first beast before** him, and causes the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. ¹³ And he does great wonders, so that he makes fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, ¹⁴ And deceives them that dwell on the earth by [the means of] those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make **an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live**. ¹⁵ And he had power to give life to the image of the beast, that the **image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed**. And he causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a **mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads**: ¹⁷ And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. ¹⁸ **Here is wisdom. Let him that has understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore [and] six.**

^a Another Beast Rev 19:20

Revelation Chapter 14 *The 144,000 and 5 Angels*

14:1-5 ***A New Song***

(40) ¹ And I looked, and, look, a Lamb stood on the mount Zion, and with him a hundred forty [and] four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads. ² And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: ³ And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred [and] forty [and] four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. ⁴ These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goes. These were redeemed from among men, [being] the first fruits to God and to the Lamb. ⁵ And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

14:6-8 ***The Harvest of the Earth***

(41) ⁶ And I saw **another angel fly** in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people, ⁷ Saying with a loud voice, **Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters**. ⁸ And there **followed another angel**, saying, **Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication**.

14:9-13 ***The Worship and Mark of the Beast (Anti-christ)***

(42) ⁹ And the **third angel followed them**, saying with a loud voice, **If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive [his] mark in his forehead, or in his hand**, ¹⁰ **The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb**: ¹¹ **And the smoke of their torment ascends up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receives the mark of his name**. ¹² **Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus**.

Revelation Chapter 14

(43) ¹³ And **I heard a voice from heaven** saying to me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yes, says the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors; and their works do follow them.

14:14-20 **Christ Shall Reign Forever**

(44) ¹⁴ And I looked, and behold a white cloud, and upon the cloud [one] sat like to the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle. ¹⁵ And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, **Thrust in your sickle, and reap: for the time is come for you to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.** ¹⁶ And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped. ¹⁷ And **another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven**, he also having a sharp sickle. ¹⁸ And another angel came out from the altar, which had authority over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, **Thrust in your sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.** ¹⁹ And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast [it] into the great winepress of the wrath of God. ²⁰ And the winepress was trodden outside the city, and blood came out of the winepress, even to the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand [and] six hundred furlongs.

Revelation Chapter 15

15:1-8 **Seven Angels with Seven Plagues**

(45) ¹ And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God. ² And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire: and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, [and] over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God. ³ And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, **Great and marvelous are your works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are your ways, you King of saints. ⁴ Who shall not fear you, O Lord, and glorify your name? for [you] only are holy: for all nations shall come and worship before you; for your judgments are made manifest.**

(46) ⁵ And after that I looked, and, behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened: ⁶ And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles. ⁷ And one of the four beasts gave to the seven angels seven golden bowls full of the wrath of God, who lives for ever and ever. ⁸ And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

16:1-11 Angels 1 to 5 Pour out their Vials of Wrath

(47) ¹ And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth. ² And the **first** went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and [upon] them which worshipped his image. ³ And the **second angel** poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead [man]: and every living soul died in the sea. ⁴ And the **third angel** poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood. ⁵ And I heard the angel of the waters say, **You are righteous, O Lord, which are, and was, and shall be, because you have judged thus.** ⁶ **For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and you have given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.** ⁷ **And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are your judgments.**

(48) ⁸ And the **fourth angel** poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given to him to scorch men with fire. ⁹ And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which has authority over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory. ¹⁰ And the **fifth angel** poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their languages for pain, ¹¹ And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

16:12-16 The 6th Angel and The Unholy Trinity (the Devil, Anti-christ, & false prophet)

(49) ¹² And the **sixth angel** poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared. ¹³ And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs [come] out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. ¹⁴ For they are the spirits of demons, working miracles, [which] go forth to the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. ¹⁵ Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watches, and keeps his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. ¹⁶ And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

16:17-21 The 7th Angel Pours of his Vial into the Air

(50) ¹⁷ And the **seventh angel** poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, **It is done.** ¹⁸ And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, [and] so great. ¹⁹ And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give to her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath. ²⁰ And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found. ²¹ And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, [every stone] about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

Spiritual Babylon

17:1-7 *The Woman a Great City and the Great Harlot*

(51) ¹ And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying to me, Come hither; I will show to you the judgment of the great whore that sits upon many waters: ² With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication. ³ So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. ⁴ And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: ⁵ And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. ⁶ And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. ⁷ And the angel said to me, **Wherefore did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns.**

17:8-13 *The Beast is the Antichrist*

(52) ⁸ **The beast that you saw was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.** ⁹ **And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits.** ¹⁰ **And there are ^a seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, [and] the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must continue a short space.** ¹¹ **And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goes into perdition.** ¹² **And the ten horns which you saw are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive authority as kings one hour with the beast.** ¹³ **These have one mind, and shall give their power and authority unto the beast.**

^a The seven kingdoms over Israel are: Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Medio-persia, Greece, Rome (two legs) and revived Rome (10 toes are 10 kings) in Daniel 2:32-34. The next event is the return of Jesus Christ to reign on earth in Revelation 19.

17:14-18 *The Victory of the Lamb of God*

(53) ¹⁴ **These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are ^a called, and chosen, and faithful.** ¹⁵ **And he says to me, The waters which you saw, where the whore sits, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and languages.** ¹⁶ **And the ten horns which you saw upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.** ¹⁷ **For God has put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.** ¹⁸ **And the woman which you saw is that great city, which reigns over the kings of the earth.**

^a For many are called, but few [are] chosen, Matthew 22:14. This is where Jesus speaks about going out and inviting people to the marriage feast in the context of Matthew 22:1-14. A fuller context is Matthew 13-26 with many references to the kingdom of heaven which includes bot Jew and Gentile in Revelation 19:1-10 when the kingdom of heaven is on earth during the 1000 year reign of Christ.

18:1-8 **Commercial Babylon Falls**

(54) ¹ And after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great authority; and the earth was lightened with his glory. ² And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, **Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of demons, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.** ³ For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

(55) ⁴ And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, **Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.** ⁵ For her sins have reached to heaven, and God has remembered her iniquities. ⁶ Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double to her double according to her works: in the cup which she has filled fill to her double. ⁷ How much she has glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she says in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. ⁸ Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judges her.

18:9-24 **Babylon's Destruction is Mourned**

(56) ⁹ And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning, ¹⁰ Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is your judgment come. ¹¹ And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buys their merchandise anymore: ¹² The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble, ¹³ And cinnamon, and odors, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. ¹⁴ And the fruits that your soul lusted after are departed from you, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from you, and you shall find them no more at all. ¹⁵ The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, ¹⁶ And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls! ¹⁷ For in one hour so great riches is come to nothing. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, ¹⁸ And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What [city is] like to this great city! ¹⁹ And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate. ²⁰ Rejoice over her, [you] heaven, and [ye] holy apostles and prophets; for God has avenged you on her.

(57) ²¹ And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast [it] into the sea, saying, **Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.** ²² And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in you; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft [he be], shall be found anymore in you; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in you; ²³ And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in you; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in you: for your merchants were the great men of the earth; for by your sorceries were all nations deceived. ²⁴ And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

19:1-10 **Five Heavenly Announcements Before the Return of Jesus Christ to Earth**
The Great Tribulation Saints Praise God (6:3-18:24)

(58) ¹ And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying,

**“Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honor, and power, to the Lord our God:
For true and righteous [are] his judgments: for he has judged the great whore,
which did corrupt the earth with her fornication,
and has avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.”**

³ And again they said,

“Alleluia. And her smoke rose up for ever and ever.”

The Heavenly Creatures Praise God

⁴ And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, **“Amen; Alleluia.”**

An Angel Commands all God’s Servants to Praise God

(59) ⁵ And a voice came out of the throne, saying,

“Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.”

All God’s Servants Respond (1st mention of church since Rev 2-3)

⁶ And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying,

**“Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigns.
⁷ Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to him:
for the marriage of the Lamb is come,
and his wife has made herself ready.”**

⁸ And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

An Angel Speaks with John about the Marriage Supper of the Lamb (Luke 14)

⁹ And he says to me, **Write, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he says to me, These are the true sayings of God.** ¹⁰ And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said to me, **See [you do it] not: I am your fellow-servant, and of your brethren that have the testimony of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.**

Q1 – Who is wearing fine line that is clean and white? (19:8)

A1 – All the saints from the time of Abel in Genesis 4:4 until the return of Jesus Christ to earth in Revelation 19:11. This includes the saints before and after Jacob (Israel), the New Testament saints, and the Great Tribulation saints.

Q2 – How does the saints white clothing in this life effect the white clothing when Christ returns? (19:8)

A1 – Our spiritual growth and works are the same as we bring to our body’s death (Hebrews 9:27) and judged for rewards and crowns, or lack of rewards or crowns, by Christ before the marriage supper of the Lamb.

A2 – Supporting verses are “But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood and of earth; and some to honor, and some to dishonor” (2 Timothy 2:20). Also see 1 Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10, and Revelation 2-3.

Q3 – Why is the angel John’s fellow-servant and of his brethren? (19:10a, 22:9)

A1 – Because an army of angels minister to John, his fellow-servants and his brethren; the same as for saints today. “Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?” (Hebrews 1:14, Hebrews 11:1-12:3)

Revelation Chapter 19

Q4 – Why is the testimony of Jesus the spirit of prophecy? (19:10b)

A1 – The prophecies in the Hebrew Bible, the life of Christ, the New Testament, and especially Revelation prove the testimony of Jesus and the only Son of God who has told us all things before they come to pass. This is one reason for the saints boldness and confidence in the present life; because of the future knowledge of a better place on earth and in heaven.

Application: I am blessed as I read, hear and keep the words in the book of Revelation. In the above passage all things come together for the future that awaits all true believers. It encourages me to guard my heart and live a holy life to glorify my God.

QT hint: Daily time in Scripture and prayer help us apply the Scripture to ourselves first, then our local church and our times.

19:11-16 **The Word of God (Christ) on a White Horse**

(60) ¹¹ And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called **Faithful and True**, and **in righteousness he does judge and make war**. ¹² His eyes [were] as a flame of fire, and on his head [were] many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. ¹³ And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. ¹⁴ And the armies [which were] in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. ¹⁵ And out of his mouth goes a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treads the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. ¹⁶ And he has on [his] vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.



19:17-21 **Armageddon (17-18, 21) and the Beast and False Prophet thrown into the Lake of Fire (19-20)**

(61) ¹⁷ And I saw an **angel standing in the sun**; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the ^a fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, **Come and gather yourselves together to the supper of the great God**; ¹⁸ **That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all people, free and slave, both small and great.**

¹⁹ And I saw the **beast**, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against Him that **sat on the horse**, and against His army. ²⁰ And the **beast** was taken, and with him the **false prophet that worked miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image**. These both were cast alive into a Lake of Fire burning with brimstone. ²¹ And the ^b remnant were **slain with the sword of Him that sat upon the horse, which [sword] proceeded out of His mouth**: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

^a The marriage supper of the lamb and the supper of the great God are with opposite results.

^b The armies were slain by the sword out of Christ's mouth that smite the nations (19:15). The power of God's spoken word at Genesis 1-2 during creation is the same as the word spoken in slaying the armies at Armageddon – immediate results. There is no compromise with unbelieving science and we must reject the lie of evolutionary creation. The 7 days creation are 7 literal 24-hour days.

Note: vs 20 "Lake of Fire" is 1st of 4x in Rev 19-20 in KJV, NKJV, ESV, CSB, and LSB. Rev 19:20 and 20:10 are poorly translated from Greek in the NIV. Lake of Fire repeated 2x in NIV 20:14 – scribal error?

20:1-6 **Satan is Bound and Christ Reigns on the Earth with the Saints for 1000 Years**

(62) ¹ And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. ² And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, ³ And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. ⁴ And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given to them: and [I saw] the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received [his] mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. ⁵ But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. ⁶ Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no authority, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

20:7-10 **The Battle with God at the End of 1000 Years (the final judgment of the devil)**

(63) ⁷ And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, ⁸ And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. ⁹ And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. ¹⁰ And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

20:11-15 **The Great White Throne where the Books are Opened, and Works Judged**

(64) ¹¹ And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. ¹² And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is [the book] of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. ¹³ And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and Hades delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. ¹⁴ And death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵ And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

Revelation 20:11-22:15, Character of those Prohibited from entry into Heaven					James 3:14-15	Gal 5:19-21
21:18	21:27	22:11	22:15	Notes	1 Cor 6:9-11	
Fearful		Unjust	Dogs	1 st	Fornicators	Adultery
Unbelieving					Idolaters	Fornication
Abominable	Abominable				Adulterers	Uncleanness
Murderers			Murderers	4 th	Effeminate	Lasciviousness
Whoremongers	Defiles	Filthy	Whoremongers	3 rd	Abusers of themselves with mankind	Idolatry
Sorcerers			Sorcerers	2 nd	Thieves	Witchcraft
Idolaters			Idolaters		Covetous	Hatred
Liars	Lies		Lie		Drunkards	Variance
Lake burns with fire & brimstone	Not enter	Let him be	Outside		Revilers	Emulations
Rev 20:11-15	The Books were opened – dead judged by works, cast into the lake of fire, 2 nd death. Sea, death & hell delivered up the dead.			Another Book was opened – book of life	Extortioners	Wrath
Great White Throne					Such were some of you	Strife
End times in New Testament. Mt 24, Mk 13, Lu 17 and Lu 21, 2 Peter 2-3, 2 Tim 3, Jude, 1 and 2 Thessalonians						Seditions
Revelation 21-22, Character of those Allowed entry into Heaven					Ja 3:13,17-18	Gal 5:22-23
22:1-2, 17 Pure river, the water of life. Tree of life, healing of nations	righteous	21:27 Written in the Lamb's book of life			Wise-know	Love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance
	holy	22:1-2 New Heaven, new earth, new Jerusalem			Good conversation-meekness of wisdom	
		22:12 reward every man according to their works			Pure, peaceful, gentle, full of mercy & good fruits	
		22:19 book of life				
Note: compare and contrast, use scientific method for spiritual eternal laws. Sin and ability variables. Spirit and wisdom constants.						

21:1-4 ***Our Inheritance with the Lord Jesus Christ and God in New Jerusalem***

(65) ¹ And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first Heaven and the first earth were passed away /2 Peter 3:11-14/; and there was no more sea. ² And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. ³ And I heard a great voice out of Heaven saying, **Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, [and be] their God.** ⁴ **And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be anymore pain: for the former things are passed away.**

21:5-8 ***I AM Speaks to He that Overcomes*** (Revelation 20:11-15, Great White Throne)

(66) ⁵ And He that sat upon the throne said, **Behold, I make all things new.** And He said unto me, **Write: for these words are true and faithful.** ⁶ And He said unto me, **It is done. I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.** ⁷ **He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be My son.** ⁸ **But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.**

21:9-21 ***An Angel Describes the Architecture of New Jerusalem*** (12 used 7x, size of the moon)

(67) ⁹ And there came to me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, **Come hither, I will show you the bride, the Lamb's wife.** ¹⁰ And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from God, ¹¹ Having the glory of God: and her light was like to a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; ¹² And had a wall great and high, [and] had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are [the names] of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: ¹³ On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. ¹⁴ And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. ¹⁵ And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. ¹⁶ And the city lies foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. ¹⁷ And he measured the wall thereof, a hundred [and] forty [and] four cubits, [according to] the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. ¹⁸ And the building of the wall of it was [of] jasper: and the city was pure gold, like to clear glass. ¹⁹ And the foundations of the wall of the city [were] garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; ²⁰ The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. ²¹ And the twelve gates [were] twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

21:22-27 ***The Temple & Light are the Glory of God & the Lamb*** (Rev 20:11-15 Great White Throne)

(68) ²² And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. ²³ And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. ²⁴ And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honor into it. ²⁵ And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. ²⁶ And they shall bring the glory and honor of the nations into it. ²⁷ And there shall in no wise enter into it anything that defiles, neither [whatsoever] works abomination, or [makes] a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

Notes on the saints being heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ: Ro 8:16-19, 2Cor 4:17, Gal 4:7, Eph 1:11, 14, 18, Col 3:24, Heb 1:14, 9:15-17, 11:10, 12:28, Ja 2:5, 1 Pe 1:4, 3:7, the context of 3:1-7, verses 1-6 speak of the wife.

22:1-5 **Our Inheritance with the Lord Jesus & God in the New Jerusalem** (cont. from chapter 20)

(69) ¹ And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. ² In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, [was there] the tree of life, which bare twelve [manner of] fruits, [and] yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree [were] for the healing of the nations. ³ And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and His servants shall serve Him: ⁴ And they shall see His face; and His name [shall be] in their foreheads. ⁵ And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God gives them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

Notes: (1) vs 1, Ps 1:3. (2) vs. 2 Why leaves-all manner of healing. (3) vs. 3-4, Who are his servants? All saints from all ages or dispensations. (4) vs. 6, shortly, quickly, or suddenly.

22:6-21 **Last Words to the Bride of Christ – the Ekklesia**
(key words: come-7x, this book-7x, quickly-5x, prophecy-4x)

The bride is called to: (1) serve, vs. 6 (2) worship, vs. 9 (3) works, vs. 12, and (4) witness, vs. 17-18

22:6-11 **The Angel Says**

(70) ⁶ And he said unto me, **These sayings are faithful and true:** and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent His angel to show to His servants the things which must shortly be done. ⁷ **Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this book.** ⁸ And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which showed me these things. ⁹ Then says he to me, **See [you do it] not: for I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God.** ¹⁰ And he says to me, **Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.** ¹¹ **He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.**

Notes: (1) vs. 8-10, The angels are our fellow-servants, servants of God. (2) vs. 10, Daniel 12:4 But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, *even* to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. (context of Daniel 12:4) The seal began to open in the late 1800s and early 1900s (church of Philadelphia) in the U.S.A and England: John Darby, Clarence Larkin, Scofield Bible, H.A. Ironside, and in Israel: **Eliezer Ben-Yehuda (revival of the Hebrew language)** and **Theodore Hertzl** (political leader of Zionism) (3) vs. 11, Heb 9:27.

22:12-16 **Jesus Says** (individual reward according to work)

(71) ¹² **And, behold, I come quickly; and My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be.** ¹³ **I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.** ¹⁴ Blessed are they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. ¹⁵ For outside are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loves and makes a lie. ¹⁶ **I Jesus have sent My angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I Am the root and the offspring of David, [and] the bright and morning star.**

Notes: (1) vs 12, Reward & work. Further references to the judgment seat of Christ where our works are judged: 1 Corinthians 3:11-15, 2 Corinthians 5:10-11, 2 Timothy 2:19-21, Hebrews 10:22-25, 1 Thessalonians 5:23, Ephesians 5:21-33 (2) vs 14, churches – 1st mention since Rev 3, with the Holy Spirit in verse 17. (3) vs 15, Define dogs as gentiles in Luke 16. (4) vs 16a, churches – first mention of the church since Revelation 3, go along with the Spirit in vs 17a. (5) sure mercies of David, Acts 13:4 Tabernacle of David Acts 15:16 (Amos 9:11-12, reign of Christ on earth).

Bright and morning star: Rapture – day star arise in your hearts, 2 Peter 1:19-21

22:17-21 **The Spirit and the Bride say** (individual accountability)

(72)¹⁷ And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. ¹⁸ For I testify to every man that hears the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add to these things, God shall add to him the plagues that are written in this book: ¹⁹ And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and [from] the things which are written in this book. ²⁰ He which testifies these things says, **Surely I come quickly.** Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. ²¹ The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ [be] with you all. Amen.

Notes: (1) vs 16-17, the first mention of the church with the Holy Spirit since Rev 1-3. (2) vs 17 and 20, Come is 5-fold: And the Spirit and the bride (together) say, Come. And let him that hears (individual believer) say, Come. And let him that is thirsty (individual seeker) come. And whosoever will (all people), let him take the water of life (22:1) freely (21:6). He which testifies these things says, Surely (Lord Jesus) I come quickly. Amen. Even so, (all saints) come, Lord Jesus. (3) vs 18-19, applies to the book of Revelation. Similar to Duet 4:2, "Do not add to what I command you and do not subtract from it, but keep the commands of the LORD your God that I give you."

Revelation - I AM Alpha and Omega

1:8 I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending

To Israel. Why? Context of 1:4-8 the "Almighty" (2 Cor 6:14-18).

1:11 I AM Alpha and Omega, the first and the last (1 Cor 15:45).

To the local churches. Why? Context of 1:9-11

1:17 I Am the first and the last

To the local churches. Why? Context of 1:12-20.

1:18 **I am** alive for evermore, Amen.

Note: "I am" is imperative "I AM"
or declarative "I Am" related to imperative
or declarative "I am"



Revelation - I AM Alpha and Omega

21:6 I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end

To overcomer. Why? Context of 21:1-7, and 21:8 (lake of fire)

22:13 I AM Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last

To believer. Why? Context of 22:12-14 and 16, and 22:15 (outside)

22:16 I Am the root and offspring of **David**, the bright and morning **star**

To each local church. Why? Context of 22:12-16 and 17-21.



Revelation chapter 22

22:9 **I am** your fellow servant, and of your brethren the prophets, and of them that keep the sayings of this book: worship God.

22:6-21 Jesus's last words "in the churches"

Key verse – 1:3 Blessed is he that *reads*, and they that **hear** the **words of this prophecy**, and **keep** those things which are **written** therein: for the **time is at hand**.

Common to all churches: Intro (includes aspect of Jesus character) "To the angel of the church of ... write ... **I know your works**,"

Church = Ekklesia in Greek. Rev 1-3, 18x. and 22:6-12, 1x. Includes a promise to the overcomer to the true believer, "He that *has* an ear, let him hear what the Spirit says *to* the churches."

4 perspectives of application: Historically, Individually, all churches & prophetic.

CHURCHES	COMMENDATION & CORRECTION	HISTORY
<p>(1) of Ephesus (Rev 2:1-6) Permitted 50-100 AD</p>	<p>Commendation - say they are apostles, and are not, and liars: ...and has not fainted. ... you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans, that I hate. Correction - you have left your first love. Remember from when you are fallen, and repent, and do the first works;</p>	<p>Apostolic. Book of Acts. Jerusalem council – 50. Rome burnt – 64. Jerusalem sacked by emperor Titus – 70. Masada - 73 Polycarp 65-100 Josephus 90 – Jewish historian. From Pentecost to death of Apostle John. 33 – 100</p>
<p>(2) in Smyrna (Rev 2:7-11) Myrrh or bitter 101-311</p>	<p>Commendation - I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, but are the synagogue of Satan. behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: CORRECTION – NONE.</p>	<p>Persecuted & Underground: Ante-Nicene Fathers & Writings. Polycarp – link from apostle John. Justin Martyr 110-165. Ps 116:15 Irenaeus 178, "Against Heresies" Bishop. Cainite Gnostics refuted. Catacombs. Weaknesses: Origen, Montanists, Tertullian, From Emperor Nero to 313 -Constantine tolerance.</p>
<p>(3) in Pergamos (Rev 2:12-17) Marriage 312-606</p>	<p>Commendation - you dwell, even where Satan's seat is: and you hold fast my name, and has not denied my faith, where Antipas was my faithful martyr Correction - hold the doctrine of Balaam, ... also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent</p>	<p>325 AD. Council of Nicea. 300 bishops. Nicene Creed. Battle Arianism. 367 – New Testament canonized. Post-Nicene Fathers & Writings. Eusebius 339 – bishop & historian Jerome, Ambrose, Chrysostom. Augustine vs Pelagian. From Roman Emperor Constantine to 1st Pope. Church Free – part of Govt.</p>
<p>(4) in Thyatira (Rev 2:18-29) Paganism or labor 607-1517</p>	<p>COMMENDATION – NONE. I know your works, charity, service, faith, patience, and your works; and the last is more than the first. Correction - Jezebel, calls herself a prophetess, gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. I will kill her children; and all the churches shall know that I search the reins and hearts: ... depths of Satan</p>	<p>Dark Ages or Middle Ages: 500-1500 AD Pagan doctrines proliferate. Inquisitions: 1233 – 1633, medieval & Spanish – to fight heresy & Jews Crusades: 1095 - 1272 (9) Over Jerusalem with Moslems Bible in Latin – only clergy have Bible. Donatists, Paulicians, Waldenses ... Fibonacci – Divine proportion or phi, 1.618. Gutenberg 1450 Wycliffe Burnt 1384, Huss Executed 1418, Luther's 95 Thesis 1517</p>

CHURCHES	COMMENDATION & CORRECTION	HISTORY
<p>(5) in Sardis</p> <p>(Rev 3:1-6)</p> <p>Escaping Ones</p> <p>1518-1730</p>	<p>Commendation - you have a name that lives, and are dead. Be watchful, and strengthen the things that remain: your works are not perfect before God.</p> <p>Correction - Remember therefore how you have received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. A few in Sardis have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.</p>	<p>Reformation: Luther vs Erasmus, Tyndale, Calvin 1564 vs Arminius, Knox (Presbyterian), Foxes Book of Martyrs 1563, King James, John Bunyan</p> <p>Renaissance of literature, science, art, music & architecture.</p> <p>Isaac Newton: Biblicist (Arian) 1642 AD,</p> <p>Matthew Henry 1714</p> <p>Mary Dyer (Quaker) hung by Puritans in Boston, 1660 AD</p>
<p>(6) in Philadelphia</p> <p>(Rev 3:7-13)</p> <p>Brotherly Love</p> <p>1730-1900</p>	<p>Commendation - behold, I have set before you an open door, and no man can shut it: for you have a little strength, and has kept my word, and has not denied my name... I will keep you from temptation</p> <p>CORRECTION – NONE.</p>	<p>1st Great Awakening: Edwards, Whitfield & Wesley 1730-40s</p> <p>2nd Great Awakening: Finney & Edwards 1820-30</p> <p>Darby 1830, C.H. Spurgeon, Sheldon, Moody, Baptists</p> <p>Welsh Revival 1903 "War on the Saints"</p> <p>Missions Movement: William Carey, Hudson Taylor, ... 1890-1900s</p>
<p>(7) the Laodiceans</p> <p>(Rev 3:14-22)</p> <p>People's Rights</p> <p>1900 to Present</p>	<p>COMMENDATION – NONE. You are neither cold nor hot:</p> <p>Correction - So then because you art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew you out of my mouth. Because you say, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and know not that you art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: be zealous, and repent.</p>	<p>1900 – Evolution to deny the witness of creation (Ro 1:19-20)</p> <p>Scofield, Watchman Nee, Vernon McGee, K.P. Yohannan, G. W. Carver</p> <p>1947 – Dead Sea Scrolls discovered (Isaiah – 100% Masoretic Text)</p> <p>1948 – Israel a nation.</p> <p>1967 – Jerusalem to Israel. Baptist vs Pentecostal</p> <p>1960 – Freedom to deny the witness of conscience (Ro 2:11-16) Abortion.</p> <p>2000 – Knowledge to deny the Biblical Christ (Da Vinci Code) 1 Thes 5:1-6 Homosexuality, transvestites.</p>

NAME OF CHURCHES	TITLES OF JESUS (Repeat of Rev 1)	COMMENDATION	CORRECTION	PROMISES TO THE OVERCOMER
(1) Ephesus Let go or relax (Rev 2:1-7) 50-150 AD	He that holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; (1:16)	I know your works, and your labor, and your patience, and how you cannot bear them which are evil: and you have tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and has found them liars: And has borne, and has patience, and for my name's sake has labored, and has not fainted. (false apostles in 2 Corinthians 11, Acts 20)		Tree of life (Genesis 2:9, Rev 22:2)
(2) Smyrna Myrrh or bitter (Rev 2:8-11) 150-312 AD	The first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; (1:18)	I know your works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but you art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan. Fear none of those things which you shall allow: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be ye faithful unto death, and I will give you a crown of life. (Roman Emperors: Nero 64 AD to Diocletian 310 AD, last 10 years most fierce persecution. Possibly 10 emperors that persecuted Believers)	NONE	Second death
(3) Pergamos Mixed Marriage (Rev 2:12-17) 312-605 AD	He which has the sharp sword with two edges; (1:16)	I know your works, and where you dwells, even where Satan's seat is: and you hold fast my name, and has not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwells.		Hidden manna, white stone-new name
(4) Thyatira Daughter (Rev 2:18-29) 605-1519 AD	The Son of God, who has his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; (1:13-15)	I know your works, and charity, and service, and faith, and your patience, and your works; and the last to be more than the first. (1 Corinthians 13, 2 Peter 1:19) NO COMMENDATION		Power, rule with rod of iron, morning-star
(5) Sardis Escaping one (Rev 3:1-6) 1520-1749 AD	He that has the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; (1:4)	I know your works, that you have a name that you lives, and are dead. Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found your works perfect before God. (Reformation, Age of Enlightenment or Renaissance)		White clothing, book of life
(6) Philadelphia Brotherly Love (Rev 3:7-13) 1750-1900 AD	He that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens, and no man shuts; and shuts, and no man opens; (1:18)	I know your works: behold, I have set before you an open door, and no man can shut it: for you have a little strength, and has kept my word, and has not denied my name. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you. Because you have kept the word of my patience, I also will keep you from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.	NONE	Pillar in temple of God, New Jerusalem, new name
(7) Laodiceans Justice of the people (Rev 3:14-22) 1900-1960 AD 1960-present	the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; (1:5)	I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot: I would you were cold or hot. NO COMMENDATION		Sit with me in my throne

CHURCHES	CORRECTION	PROMISES TO THE OVERCOMER
<p>(1) Ephesus</p> <p>Let go or relax</p> <p>(Rev 2:1-7)</p> <p>50-150 AD</p>	<p>Nevertheless I have somewhat against you, because you have left your first love. Remember therefore from whence you are fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto you quickly, and will remove your candlestick out of his place, except you repent. But this you have, that you hate the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate. (Acts 18, letter to the Ephesians)</p>	<p>To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. Rev 22:2b and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. (22:14, Genesis 2:9, 16-17, 3:1-8)</p>
<p>(2) Smyrna</p> <p>Myrrh or bitter</p> <p>(Rev 2:8-11)</p> <p>150-312 AD</p>	<p>NONE</p>	<p>He that overcomes shall not be hurt of the second death.</p>
<p>(3) Pergamos</p> <p>Mixed Marriage</p> <p>(Rev 2:12-17)</p> <p>312-605 AD</p>	<p>But I have a few things against you, because you have there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. So hast you also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto you quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. (Nicolaitans – rule over the laity)</p>	<p>To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knows saving he that receives it.</p>
<p>(4) Thyatira</p> <p>Daughter</p> <p>(Rev 2:18-29)</p> <p>605-1519 AD</p>	<p>Notwithstanding I have a few things against you, because you suffers that woman Jezebel, which calls herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searches the reins and hearts: and I will give unto everyone of you according to your works. But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. But that which ye have already hold fast till I come.</p>	<p>And he that overcomes, and keeps my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter they will be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. And I will give him the morning star.</p>
<p>(5) Sardis</p> <p>Escaping one</p> <p>(Rev 3:1-6)</p> <p>1520-1749 AD</p>	<p>Remember therefore how you have received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore you shall not watch, I will come on you as a thief, and you shall not know what hour I will come upon you. You have a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.</p>	<p>He that overcomes, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.</p>
<p>(6) Philadelphia</p> <p>Brotherly Love</p> <p>(Rev 3:7-13)</p> <p>1750-1900 AD</p>	<p>NONE</p>	<p>Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which comes down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.</p>
<p>(7) Laodiceans</p> <p>Justice of the people</p> <p>(Rev 3:14-22)</p> <p>1900-1960 AD 1960-present</p>	<p>So then because you art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew you out of my mouth. Because you say, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and know not that you art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: I counsel you to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed, and that the shame of your nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.</p>	<p>To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.</p>

The RD Bible promotes spiritual growth in Christ over a lifetime by providing order and simplicity that is flexible. The RD Bible is divided into 3275 passages designed to complement daily morning prayer for 9-year cycles. Each book has an introduction, outline and 12 points that capture the theme. Some books have 3 levels of Questions & Answers covering content, context and concise words; which help understand the concepts of truth, and finally gems unique to each book.

The RD Bible is hyperlinked in Microsoft Word. Move your cursor to the upper right of this page, [Bible TOC](#). It will show a hand to activate the link. The RD Bible Table of contents and each book front page display the book title (chapters-daily quiet time sections, time to read) last year studied, then page number. You may take advantage of word processing which allows you to modify and personalize notes in a free Bible that is not copyright.

RD Scheduling: Begin in the Gospels through the New Testament, then go through the Old Testament from Genesis to Revelation, or any sequence desired. Also, you may read 3 RD passages a day for 3 years or 9 a day for 1 year. The New Testament passages take exactly 3 years and the Old Testament 6 years and 22 days.

Journaling documents your daily RD by forms. It is good to begin with the discipline of forms for your journal and change to freeform or direct input to the RD Bible. The forms consist of: Title-Content (Read & Meditate)-Application-Interpretation. The title should be personal choice and may come last or change over time. This is a style of Inductive Bible Study.

Bible History: Additions to the original manuscripts are chapters in the 14th century, verses in the 16th century, notes in the 17th century (marginal notes in the Geneva Bible), section titles in the 19th century (the Scofield Bible), and many specialty Bibles in the 20th century until present. Truly Daniel 12:3 is being fulfilled as knowledge is increased. This is a specialty Bible designed for use with daily prayer and meditation.

DEVELOPMENT

1. This specialty Bible is based on the verbal, plenary view of inspiration of the original Scriptures by holy men as they were moved by the spirit; along with the providential preservation of the Scriptures by Israel and the Church with belief that the Bible consists of 66 books by 40 writers over a period of 2000 years with 1 author.

2. The Evidence Bible by Ray Comfort was one example for this simplified KJV. An exception is "ye" which is plural for many, not the modern English "you". An interesting fact is that Ray Comfort changed to using the New King James Version (NKJV) as the source in 2011. A great source for the preservation and superiority of the Majority Text is *The Gospel of John, Logos 21* by Executive Editor of the New King James Version. Dr. Farstad taught NT Greek at Dallas Theological Seminary and wrote *The Greek New Testament According to the Majority Text* that leaned strongly back to the Textus Receptus.

While these are good works I choose to continue with the RD Bible for reasons of translation into a language for those which use English as a Second Language (ESL), such for the Japanese, and the utility of adding personal notes that are an inheritance to my family and future generations.

3. Translation guides: Personal study and prayer with obedient living, Scofield or the Thompson Chain Reference "guided" section titles. Chapter breaks are noted when they are not correct. Brackets around words not in the original language are removed when not beneficial. To replace obsolete words; Webster's Dictionary, the Open Bible, or original Hebrew and Greek language, plus Swordsearcher Bible software.

4. Fontology: Scripture is black Verdana 9. Words in red of Jesus Christ & God. Words in gold of angels. Capital first letter for trinity pronouns. OT Scripture quoted in NT are Amasis MT Pro Medium. Notes are green

Rightly Dividing Bible Use

Bible TOC

4. Summary of changes:

- a. Verbs: "est" removed (singular), "eth" (plural), "dst" changed to "d", "t" changed to "ed" removed. Changed "Thou hast" to "You have."
- b. Spelling changes: remove extra "u" and all obsolete spellings; "unto" to "to" 8975 times.
- c. Changed Obsolete words when better to understand or make more clear. Not to dumb down or make less clear. i.e. replaced victual and victuals with food. New Testament - replaced "conversation" with "conduct". Replaced "without" with "outside" when context is easier to understand.
- d. Added hyphens to double words to facilitate ESL readers. Changed harkened to listened.
- e. Changed translated word when culture of translators weakens; Church to Congregation or local church except where the universal church is the context, Presbyteros to Elder. William Tyndale was burnt at the sake for such translations into English.
- f. Reversed "have I" & "have we" to "I have" & "we have"; "is it" to "it is", when it is a declaration. This simple reversal methodology makes it easier for people who have English as a second language read and understand the text. Then it may aid in the translation of the original languages into a foreign language.
- g. Replaced Ghost with Spirit, ghost with spirit. Sometimes replaced man with neutral when original language and context can mean either male or female or anyone.
- h. When words were added to the original inspired Scripture by the translators, [put those words in brackets] the context and comparison with the Darby, KJ2000, World English Bible or Young's Literal Translations are used.
- i. Compound separate words like for ever to forever, except when used in context of for ever and ever.
- j. **Words of Christ in the New Testament and words of God in the Old Testament are in red.**
- k. Words omitted or changed from the King James Version are after careful study with the understanding that the Textus Receptus is from the original inspired and preserved. The KJV is the best version of the Bible available today. The Simple Bible printed in 2022 is easier to understand. The KJVER has post tribulation comments, so not recommended.
- l. Changes: Ensample is for an internal witness to a group, example is for those external to everyone. Names in the Old Testament are spelled the same in the New Testament.
- m. Unto shows giving something to somebody and to shows direction to something. Kept the same.
- n. "Tongue(s)" and "unknown tongues" changed to "language(s)".
- o. All epistles (15x) are letters (9x) but not all letters are epistles. In English the context determines which is used from the same Greek (epistole). An epistle is doctrinal, didactic, and instructional.
- p. OT: Hell, grave, and pit translated to Hebrew Shoel 65x. NT: Hell translated to Greek Hades 11x.
- q. Capitalized references to the Bible: Scripture, Holy Scripture, Word of God, and Word of the Lord.
- r. NT: Replaced "dunamis-power" w/ "exousia-authority" 70x & "dunamis-virtue" w/ "dunamis-power" 2x.
- s.
- t.

Heath, W. (2014). *Discipleship Bible*. Yokosuka, Japan. (2016) 3rd draft. Brandywine, Maryland (2020) Updates, corrections, changes for future: